# CONTENTS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>INTRODUCTION</td>
<td>vii</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ADVISORY BOARD</td>
<td>ix</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ACKNOWLEDGMENTS</td>
<td>xi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>OBITUARIES</td>
<td>xiii</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TEXT</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HOW TO USE THE INDEX</td>
<td>455</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>INDEX</td>
<td>457</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
The study of biography has always held an important, if not explicitly stated, place in school curricula. The absence in schools of a class specifically devoted to studying the lives of the giants of human history belies the focus most courses have always had on people. From ancient times to the present, the world has been shaped by the decisions, philosophies, inventions, discoveries, artistic creations, medical breakthroughs, and written works of its myriad personalities. Librarians, teachers, and students alike recognize that our lives are immensely enriched when we learn about those individuals who have made their mark on the world we live in today.

*Encyclopedia of World Biography Supplement, Volume 23,* provides biographical information on 200 individuals not covered in the 17-volume second edition of *Encyclopedia of World Biography (EWB)* and its supplements, Volumes 18, 19, 20, 21, and 22. Like other volumes in the *EWB* series, this supplement represents a unique, comprehensive source for biographical information on those people who, for their contributions to human culture and society, have reputations that stand the test of time. Each original article ends with a bibliographic section. There is also an index to names and subjects, which cumulates all persons appearing as main entries in the *EWB* second edition, the Volume 18, 19, 20, 21, and 22 supplements, and this supplement—more than 8,000 people!

*Articles.* Arranged alphabetically following the letter-by-letter convention (spaces and hyphens have been ignored), articles begin with the full name of the person profiled in large, bold type. Next is a boldfaced, descriptive paragraph that includes birth and death years in parentheses. It provides a capsule identification and a statement of the person’s significance. The essay that follows is approximately 2,000 words in length and offers a substantial treatment of the person’s life. Some of the essays proceed chronologically while others combine biographical data to a paragraph or two and move on to a consideration and evaluation of the subject’s work. Where very few biographical facts are known, the article is necessarily devoted to an analysis of the subject’s contribution.

Following the essay is a bibliographic section arranged by source type. Citations include books, periodicals, and online Internet addresses for World Wide Web pages, where current information can be found.

Portraits accompany many of the articles and provide either an authentic likeness, contemporaneous with the subject, or a later representation of artistic merit. For artists, occasionally self-portraits have been included. Of the ancient figures, there are depictions from coins, engravings, and sculptures; of the moderns, there are many portrait photographs.

*Index.* The *EWB Supplement* index is a useful key to the encyclopedia. Persons, places, battles, treaties, institutions, buildings, inventions, books, works of art, ideas, philosophies, styles, movements—all are indexed for quick reference just as in a general encyclopedia. The index entry for a person includes a brief identification with birth and death dates and is cumulative so that any person for whom an article was written who appears in the second edition of *EWB* (volumes 1–16) and its supplements (volumes 18–23) can be located. The subject terms within the index, however, apply only to volume 23. Every index reference includes the title of the article to which the reader is being directed as well as the volume and page numbers.

Because *EWB Supplement, Volume 23,* is an encyclopedia of biography, its index differs in important ways from the indexes to other encyclopedias. Basically, this is an index of people, and that fact has several interesting consequences. First, the information to which the index refers the reader on a particular topic is always about people associated with that topic. Thus
the entry “Quantum theory (physics)” lists articles on people associated with quantum theory. Each article may discuss a person’s contribution to quantum theory, but no single article or group of articles is intended to provide a comprehensive treatment of quantum theory as such. Second, the index is rich in classified entries. All persons who are subjects of articles in the encyclopedia, for example, are listed in one or more classifications in the index—abolitionists, astronomers, engineers, philosophers, zoologists, etc.

The index, together with the biographical articles, make *EWB Supplement* an enduring and valuable source for biographical information. As school course work changes to reflect advances in technology and further revelations about the universe, the life stories of the people who have risen above the ordinary and earned a place in the annals of human history will continue to fascinate students of all ages.

*We Welcome Your Suggestions.* Mail your comments and suggestions for enhancing and improving the *Encyclopedia of World Biography Supplement* to:

The Editors
*Encyclopedia of World Biography Supplement*
Gale Group
27500 Drake Road
Farmington Hills, MI 48331-3535
Phone: (800) 347-4253
ADVISORY BOARD

John B. Ruth
Library Director
Tivy High School Library
Kerrville, Texas

Judy Sima
Media Specialist
Chatterton Middle School
Warren, Michigan
ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

Photographs and illustrations appearing in the Encyclopedia of World Biography Supplement, Volume 23, have been used with the permission of the following sources:

**AFP/CORBIS:** Alain Resnais, Donald Rumsfeld


**ARCHIVE PHOTOS, INC.**: Al Pacino

**ARCHIVES OF THE HISTORY OF AMERICAN PSYCHOLOGY, THE UNIVERSITY OF AKRON:** Christine Ladd-Franklin

**ARTE PUBLICO PRESS:** Lola Rodriguez de Tio

**JERRY BAUER:** Louise Erdrich, Jamaica Kincaid

**BEINECKE LIBRARY, YALE UNIVERSITY:** Jean Toomer

**BETTMAN/CORBIS:** Tenley Albright, Margaret Lucas Cavendish, Leadbelly, William Murray, Oscar Peterson, Mark Spitz

**CORBIS:** Amy Beach, Jakob Bernoulli, Lucrezia Bori, Georg Brandes, Clare of Assisi, Frances Benjamin Johnston, Alice Neel, Paul V, Arno Penzias, Mary Edwards Walker

**CORBIS SYGMA:** Alfonso Garcia Robles, Meryl Streep, Mitsuko Uchida

**CRISTIE’S IMAGES/CORBIS:** Benedict XIV

**CHRIS FELVER:** Gerhard Richter

**FISK UNIVERSITY LIBRARY:** Charlemae Hill Rollins

**FRANK DRIGGS COLLECTION/GETTY IMAGES:** Ernesto Lecuona

**GETTY IMAGES:** Xavier Cugat, David Geffen, Ellen Gleditsch, Dorothy Height, Guy Lombardo, Roman Polanski

**THE GRANGER COLLECTION, NEW YORK:** Claudio Arrau, Isabella Bird, Innocent IV, Pauline Johnson, Matilda Sissieretta Joyner, Henrietta Swan Leavitt, Marianne North, Samuel Romilly, Mary Church Terrell, Theodore Newton Vail

**CAROLINA HERRERA:** Carolina Herrera

**DAVID HO:** David Ho

**HULTON/ARCHIVE, GETTY IMAGES:** Jane Campion, Clement I, Kyung Wha Chung, Marie-Olympe de Gouges, Ludwig Holberg, Gjergj Kastrioti-Skanderbeg, Khalid bin Abdul Aziz Al-Saud, Horace Liveright, William Oughtred, Sandor Petofi, Bertel Thorvaldsen, Vigilius

**HULTON DEUTSCH COLLECTION/CORBIS-BETTMAN:** Yousuf Karsh, Mike Leigh, Alan Charles MacLaurin Mackerras, Gilbert Murray, Paul Signac

**THE KOBAL COLLECTION:** Elinor Glyn

**LIBRARY OF CONGRESS:** Gertrude Atherton, Mary Austin

**PHOTO RESEARCHERS, INC.:** Sophia Jex-Blake

**REUTERS NEW/MESIA INC./CORBIS** Patrick Roy

**UNIVERSITY OF OKLAHOMA, WORLD LITERATURE TODAY AND GIL JAIN:** Luisa Valenzuela
UPI/BETTMAN: Kateri Tekakwitha, Mary Lou Williams
JACK VARTOOGIAN: John Lee Hooker
YALE UNIVERSITY OFFICE OF PUBLIC AFFAIRS: Sidney Altman
The following people, appearing in volumes 1-22 of the Encyclopedia of World Biography, have died since the publication of the second edition and its supplements. Each entry lists the volume where the full biography can be found.

AGNELLI, GIOVANNI (born 1920), Italian industrialist, died in Turin, Italy, on January 24, 2003 (Vol. 1).

BALAGUER Y RICARDO, JOAQUIN (born 1907), Dominican president, died of heart failure in Santo Domingo, Dominican Republic, on July 14, 2002 (Vol. 1).

BANZER SUAREZ, HUGO (born 1926), Bolivian president, died of a heart attack in Santa Cruz, Bolivia, on May 5, 2002 (Vol. 1).

BELAUNDE TERRY, FERNANDO (born 1912), Peruvian president, died of complications following a stroke in Lima, Peru, on June 4, 2002 (Vol. 2).

BERIO, LUCIANO (born 1925), Italian composer, died in Rome, Italy, on May 27, 2003 (Vol. 2).

BRINKLEY, DAVID (born 1920), American journalist, died due to complications following a fall in Houston, Texas, on June 11, 2003 (Vol. 8; group entry entitled “Huntley and Brinkley”).

CELA Y TRULOCK, CAMILO JOSE (born 1916), Spanish author, died of heart disease in Madrid, Spain, on January 17, 2002 (Vol. 3).


CHARGAFF, ERWIN (born 1905), Austrian biochemist, died of natural causes in New York, New York, on June 20, 2002 (Vol. 3).

EBAN, ABBA (born 1915), Israeli statesman, diplomat, and scholar, died near Tel Aviv, Israel, on November 17, 2002 (Vol. 5).

FRANKENHEIMER, JOHN (born 1930), American filmmaker, died of complications following a stroke in Los Angeles, California, on July 6, 2002 (Vol. 22).

GADAMER, HANS-GEORG (born 1900), German philosopher, classicist, and interpretation theorist, died in Heidelberg, Germany, on March 14, 2002 (Vol. 6).

GALTIERI, LEOPOLDO FORTUNATO (born 1926), Argentine president, died of heart and respiratory ailments in Buenos Aires, Argentina, on January 12, 2003 (Vol. 6).

GARDNER, JOHN W. (born 1912), American educator, public official, and political reformer, died in Palo Alto, California, on February 16, 2002 (Vol. 6).

GOULD, STEPHEN JAY (born 1941), American paleontologist, died of cancer in New York, New York, on May 20, 2002 (Vol. 6).

HAMPTON, LIONEL (born 1908), American jazz musician, died of natural causes in New York, New York, on August 31, 2002 (Vol. 22).

HEYERDAHL, THOR (born 1914), Norwegian explorer, anthropologist, and author, died of cancer in Colla Micheri, Italy, on April 18, 2002 (Vol. 18).

ILLICH, IVAN (born 1926), American theologian, educator, and social critic, died in Bremen, Germany, on December 2, 2002 (Vol. 8).

JENKINS, ROY HARRIS (born 1920), British politician and author, died in Oxfordshire, England, on January 5, 2003 (Vol. 8).

JORDAN, JUNE (born 1936), Jamaican-American poet and activist, died of breast cancer in Berkeley, California, on June 14, 2002 (Vol. 8).

LEBED, ALEXANDER IVANOVICH (born 1950), Russian general and politician, died in a helicopter accident in Siberia, Russia, on April 28, 2002 (Vol. 18).

LIPPOLD, RICHARD (born 1915), American sculptor, died in Roslyn, New York, on August 22, 2002 (Vol. 9).
LUNS, JOSEPH (born 1911), Dutch political leader, died after a long illness in Brussels, Belgium, on July 17, 2002 (Vol. 10).

MARCUS, STANLEY (born 1905), American businessman, died in Dallas, Texas, on January 22, 2002 (Vol. 19).

MAULDIN, BILL (born 1921), American cartoonist, died of pneumonia in Newport Beach, California, on January 22, 2003 (Vol. 10).


MINK, PATSY TAKEMOTO (born 1927), American politician, died of pneumonia in Honolulu, Hawaii, on September 28, 2002 (Vol. 18).

MOYNIHAN, DANIEL PATRICK (born 1927), American politician, died of complications following abdominal surgery in Washington, D.C., on March 26, 2003 (Vol. 11).

NE WIN (born 1911), Burmese political leader, died in Yangon, Myanmar, on December 5, 2002 (Vol. 11).

NOZICK, ROBERT (born 1938), American philosopher, died of stomach cancer in Cambridge, Massachusetts, on January 23, 2002 (Vol. 11).


RAWLS, JOHN (born 1921), American political philosopher, died of heart failure in Lexington, Massachusetts, on November 24, 2002 (Vol. 13).

REBER, GROTE (born 1911), American radio astronomer, died in Tasmania, Australia, on December 20, 2002 (Vol. 21).


ROGERS, FRED (born 1928), American television host, died of stomach cancer in Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania, on February 13, 2003 (Vol. 18).

ROSTOW, WALT WHITMAN (born 1916), American educator, economist, and government official, died in Austin, Texas, on February 13, 2003 (Vol. 13).


SNEAD, SAM (born 1912), American golfer, died from complications following a stroke in Hot Springs, Virginia, on May 23, 2002 (Vol. 21).

SOELLE, DOROTHEE (born 1929), German theologian, political activist, and feminist, died in Goeppingen, Germany, on April 27, 2003 (Vol. 14).

TODD, REGINALD STEPHEN GARFIELD (born 1908), Zimbabwean politician, died from complications following a stroke in Bulawayo, Zimbabwe, on October 13, 2002 (Vol. 18).

UNITAS, JOHNNY (born 1933), American football player, died of a heart attack in Baltimore, Maryland, on September 11, 2002 (Vol. 20).


WEAVER, PAT (born 1908), American television executive, died of pneumonia in Santa Barbara, California, on March 15, 2002 (Vol. 19).


WILDER, BILLY (born 1906), American film director, screenwriter, and producer, died of pneumonia in Beverly Hills, California, on March 27, 2002 (Vol. 21).

WILLIAMS, TED (born 1918), American baseball player, died of cardiac arrest in Inverness, Florida, on July 5, 2002 (Vol. 19).

ZINDEL, PAUL (born 1936), American author and playwright, died of cancer in New York, New York, on March 27, 2003 (Vol. 18).
Abraham

The patriarch Abraham (c. 1996 BC–1821 BC) started with humble beginnings as a son of Ur. Abraham is now regarded as one of the most influential people in all of history. The world’s three largest monotheistic religions—in fact possibly monotheism itself—found their beginnings with him. Over 3 billion people in the modern world cite Abraham as the “father” of their religion. Abraham was promised by his God descendants as numerous as the stars of the sky, but today two branches of his family, the Jews and the Muslims, continue to battle for his birthright.

Birth of a Patriarch

In the Torah, Abraham’s story is found in Lekh Lekha. In the Bible, it is the same, in Genesis, but is also commented on in the New Testament. In the Koran, Abraham can be found mentioned throughout, revered as one of the great prophets of the Muslim faith. In all three holy books, and in all three faiths, Abraham is revered as a father and a founder. The Bible calls him “our spiritual faith.” Archaeology knows him as literally impossible to trace. History calls him the father of monotheism and originator of a great battle—spanning centuries—for pride and a little place: the land of Israel.

Abraham was born Abram, son of Terah, at the beginning of the second millennium BC in Ur, the capital of Mesopotamia at the height of its splendor as a highly developed ancient world. According to Jewish tradition, he was the son of an idol maker and smashed all of his fathers idols—except one—in a story that foreshadows his devotion to one God. The Koran tells of a time when Abram confronts his father about his idol worship and is condemned to burn in a furnace by King Nimrod of Babylon, but God protected him. His family left Ur—in modern day Iraq—to travel northwest along the trade route and the Euphrates River to the city of Haran. Abram settled down in Haran—in modern day Israel—with his family. He married Sarai and entered into a lifelong partnership with her. At the time, Haran—as well as all the neighboring cities and countries—was a land devoted to polytheism.

Abraham’s Calling

Abram was in Haran at age 75 when he got the call from God to leave his home and family behind and follow God into a strange land that He would give him. Time quoted Thomas Cahill, author of The Gifts of the Jews, calling the move “a complete departure from everything that has gone before in the evolution of culture and sensibility.” Abram took his wife, his nephew, Lot, and his possessions and departed. Abram moved south into the land of Canaan, a land inhabited by a warrior people called the Canaanites. He settled temporarily in Shechem and Beth-el. God told Abraham his descendants would inherit the Canaanite land.

Egyptian Layover

A famine in the land forced Abram and his people to move on to Egypt. Fearful that Pharoah would kill Abram for his beautiful wife, Abram asked Sarai to pretend she was his sister instead. Pharoah noted Sarai and took her as a concubine. For this, God struck the Pharoah with a plague and revealed Sarai’s true identity. Angry with Abram, Pharoah...
returned Sarai and asked them to leave Egypt. Abram left with carts of wealth.

Renewal of Abraham’s Calling

Abram returned to Canaan with Lot and Sarai, but Lot and Abram had a dispute over grazing land for their herds. Breaking with tradition, Abram allowed Lot—the younger of the two—to choose the land he would take. Lot chose the fertile plain to the east, and Abram took the hills to the west. Lot’s land included the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah. After Abram was again settled, God came to Abram and renewed his promise; that Abram would inherit for his descendants all the land he could see in every direction.

Lot moved to Sodom and was captured when local tribes attacked the city. Abram—who had grown wealthy and distinguished—armed his men and pursued Lot’s kidnappers, regaining Lot and his possessions. Again God affirmed his promises to Abram, Abram now being well advanced in years and without offspring. God reaffirmed that He would give the land from the Nile to the Euphrates to Abram’s descendants, but only after they had spent 400 years as slaves.

The First Son

With God having more than once affirmed his promise of numerous progeny to Abram, Sarai made a suggestion. In the ancient world, it was a custom to offer a substitute to bear a child to ensure the continuation of the family. Sarai offered her Egyptian handmaid, Hagar, to Abram to bear them a child. Abram consented, and at the age of 86 Hagar bore him a son, Ishmael.

The Second Son

Thirteen years after the birth of Ishmael, God once again appeared to Abram and renewed His covenant with Abram through the sign of circumcision and even expanded the promises: if Abram would “walk before [the LORD] and be upright” then God would make Abram the “father of a multitude of nations.” God changed Abram’s name to Abraham, which means “the father of many nations,” and He changed Sarai’s name to Sarah, meaning “princess.” God also revealed that the promises would not come to Abraham through Ishmael, but through another son that would be born to Sarah in a years’ time. Abraham laughed at this seemingly absurd promise, because Abraham was 99 at the time and Sarah was 89. When Abraham laughed, God said the boy’s name would be Isaac, which means “he laughs.”

God came again to speak to Abraham, in the guise of a traveler with companions (who were two angels). They were on their way to Sodom to destroy the city for its wickedness. Abraham boldly bargained with God on behalf of Lot, and because of Abraham’s favor, God relented: if there were just ten righteous people in Sodom, God would not destroy it. During God’s and the angels’ visit, Abraham served them Bedouin hospitality: a goat, water, and other food. Later, God could not find even ten righteous in Sodom, but spared Lot’s family by warning them to leave before he destroyed the city. Lot’s wife was turned to a pillar of salt when she turned to view Sodom as she fled.

A year later, Sarah gave birth to Isaac. Sarah grew increasingly jealous of Hagar and Ishmael, and Abraham relented to allow Sarah to send them out into the wilderness. God saved Hagar and Ishmael and promised Ishmael would also father a great nation through 12 sons, assumed by tradition to be the 12 Arab tribes. According to Christian and Jewish scripture, God stipulated, though, that the covenant would flow through Isaac’s line. In Talmudic tradition, Ishmael was later down-played, cast as a bully to younger brother Isaac. According to the Koran, Hagar and Ishmael made a journey to Mecca where they build a home and Abraham often visited them.

The Offering

According to Judaism and Christianity, Isaac is the son whom the offering story is about. According to Islamic interpretation, Ishmael is the son in the story. Either way, Abraham was asked in a test of faith by God to take one of his sons onto Mount Moriah and sacrifice him as a burnt offering. At the time, children were often sacrificed as burnt offerings to a variety of deities. Abraham submitted, despite the fact that he “loved” his son. He took the son up on the mountain and prepared to sacrifice him. At the last moment, God told him to stay his hand and a ram appeared in the bushes. Abraham and his son slayed the ram as an offering, instead. God reiterated His promises to Abraham again, at this point, and made the covenant binding. Because Abraham had faith in the One God, God showed Himself different from other gods who desired human sacrifice and
started His history with a people: the Jews or the Muslims. Christianity also lays claim to this story as the foreshadowing of the sacrifice of Jesus Christ.

Death of a Patriarch

After Sarah died, two things happened. The Koran tells the story of Abraham and Ishmael making a journey to retrieve the Kaaba—Islam’s great shrine—from the sands. Also, Abraham sent a servant to find a suitable wife for Isaac among Abraham’s relatives. The servant returned with Rebekah and Rebekah married Isaac and had Esau and Jacob. The Jewish covenant would pass down through Jacob, who would have twelve sons who would become the twelve tribes of Israel. Likewise, Jacob’s sons would include Joseph and Judah, and the birthright would continue through Joseph and the scepter through Judah, which is important for the establishing of Jesus Christ in the line of the covenant.

Abraham married Keturah and had six more sons. Abraham died at 175 years old and was buried in a cave in Hebron with Sarah, before he could inherit the land of Canaan. Both Isaac and Ishmael attended the funeral.

His Descendants Today

The five repetitions of daily Muslim prayer begin and end with reference to Abraham. Several rituals during the haj—the Muslim pilgrimage to Mecca—throw back to Abraham’s life. The Jews feature the story of Abraham nearly sacrificing Isaac during their New Year celebrations. Christian children around the world sing “Father Abraham had many sons. . . . And I am one of them and so are you.” Pope John Paul II spent a lifetime dreaming of walking the steps of Abraham’s journey and has a special place in his heart for the Biblical Abraham.

There has been a trend in the 1990s and 2000s to use Abraham as a figure and tool for reconciliation. Interfaith activists have scheduled Abraham lectures, Abraham speeches, and Abraham “salons” worldwide. Bruce Feiler’s Abraham: A Journey to the Heart of Three Faiths was published to a welcome reception. David Van Biema in Time notes, “It is a staple premise of the interfaith movement, which has been picking at the problem since the late 1800s, that if Muslims, Christians, and Jews are ever to respect and understand one another, a key road leads through Abraham.” But Biema also says, “He is like a father who has left a bitterly disputed will” and points out that Abraham’s story has at its core a theme of exclusivity.

The Israeli settler movement is largely fueled by the concept that Abraham’s covenant with God grants the Jewish people the Holy Land. Meanwhile, Christians misused passages on Abraham written by Paul in the New Testament to encourage anti-Semitism and possibly the Crusades. There are also discrepancies about which of his sons did what. The Muslims and Jews have two totally different stories on which son was exalted and inherited the birthright. The Koran also claims that Abraham was the first Muslim, not a Jewish prophet. Biema says, “His story constitutes a kind of multifaith scandal, a case study for monotheism’s darker side.” Tad Szulc says in National Geographic, “The important thing, we are told, is to assess the meaning and legacy of the ideas Abraham came to embody. He is most famously thought of as the father of monotheism. . . . The stories do, however, describe his hospitality and peaceableness and, most important, his faith and obedience to God.”

Books


Periodicals

Asia Africa Intelligence Wire, October 21, 2002.
Bible Review, April 2002.
National Geographic, December 2001.

Online


Tenley Emma Albright

In 1953, American figure skater Tenley Albright (born 1935) became the first “triple crown winner” ever, as she captured the World, North American, and United States ladies figure skating titles. However, she faced her ultimate challenge as she competed with a serious foot injury in the 1956 Olympic Games. Despite her pain, she skated away with the top prize, becoming the first American woman to win a gold medal in Olympic figure skating.

As Sports Illustrated for Women selected the top 100 female athletes of all time, writer Richard Deitsch reflected, “Few skaters have ever combined athleticism and artistic grace as successfully as Tenley Albright.” Barbara Matson of the Boston Globe added, “Albright’s athletic story is one of courage and strength of spirit. . . . She is [number one] in the celebrated history of American women in Olympic figure skating.”

Early Years

Tenley Emma Albright was born on July 18, 1935, in Newton Centre, Massachusetts, the daughter of Hollis, a prominent Boston surgeon, and Elin (Peterson) Albright. She
also had a younger brother, Niles. She received her first pair of ice skates at the age of eight. The *Boston Globe*'s Matson noted, "Like many New Englanders, [Albright] skated on a flooded backyard at first, but as her love for the sport grew and her talent began to show, she headed to the Skating Club of Boston for lessons."

Although Albright was hard-working and devoted when it came to academics, she was unsure how serious she was about ice skating. As noted in *Great Women in Sports*, "Albright had to be persuaded to put the same amount of concentration into her skating. After a stern lecture by her coach, Maribel Vinson, the youngster decided to buckle down. . . ."

In a 1991 interview with the Academy of Achievement, Albright reflected, "I like to think that I was good in the compulsory figures. That wasn’t the part I enjoyed. The jumps, the spins, the dance steps, the choreography, and especially that feeling [of] trying to fly, was what I really liked. . . ." Guided by her coach, Albright hoped the results would soon follow. Instead she would soon face a potentially life-changing illness.

**Diagnosed with Polio**

Illness almost ended Albright’s career before it began. In 1946, she contracted polio, an extremely serious viral disease that often leaves its victims partially paralyzed. In the Academy of Achievement interview, Albright recalled, "When I came down with polio, at first nobody knew whether I ever would walk again or not."

Reflecting back on her illness, Albright noted that she really was not scared about being sick. She recalled in the Academy of Achievement interview, "The fear I had was staying in the hospital overnight. I couldn’t imagine anything worse." She continued, "But no one told me how serious it was. In fact, they took the sign ‘polio’ off my door, hoping I wouldn’t realize how sick I was. Looking back, I don’t think I ever knew how sick I was, because it never occurred to me that I couldn’t and wouldn’t get better."

Albright recovered and was soon released from the hospital. Since she was still weak, the doctors encouraged her to return to ice skating, feeling that the exercise would improve her strength. The doctors were correct in their assessment; just four months after her polio attack, Albright won her first important competition: the Eastern Juvenile Skating Championship.

**Won Olympic Silver**

As noted in her profile on Hickoksports.com, "In her early teens, Tenley Albright had two ambitions: To become a surgeon, like her father, and to win a gold medal in figure skating." Albright worked hard and was soon winning more competitions. At age 13, Albright won the U.S. Ladies Novice championship, and at age 14, she won the U.S. Ladies Junior title.

In the Academy of Achievement interview, Albright reflected on her determination and noted, "If you don’t fall down, you aren’t trying hard enough, you aren’t trying to do things that are hard enough for you. So, falling down is part of learning for whatever you do, and it certainly is for skating."

To the surprise of many, Albright made the 1952 Olympic figure skating team. In the *United States 1952 Olympic Book—Quadrennial Report*, it was noted, "From the foregoing, it will be seen that our skaters placed very well in this difficult competition." The book added that Albright "skated brilliantly to gain second place in the ladies’ event."

Winning the silver medal at the Winter Olympics was considered quite an accomplishment for Albright, as she had never been the United States national champion. She won that title a month after the Olympics, winning the first of five consecutive national championships. A year later, at the age of 17, Albright became the first American woman to win the World Championship in ladies figure skating.

**Prepared for Her Shot at Gold**

Albright’s daily routine included getting up before four a.m. each day, so she could practice before breakfast, and then going to school in Cambridge, Massachusetts. And while waiting her turn to skate at competitions, Albright did her homework.

Her dedication to her studies paid off. In 1953, she entered Radcliffe College as a pre-med student, with the intention of following in her father’s footsteps and becoming a surgeon. She continued her demanding schedule, still rising by four a.m. each morning to practice before classes. Generally, she skated seven hours per day and successfully
balanced her training and school. Her dedication on the ice also paid off. She successfully defended her national title in 1954 and 1955 and won a second World Championship in 1955.

In her athlete profile from the U.S. Olympic Committee Web site, Albright talked about the demands of competition. She recalled, “When I was competing, we were outdoors. So despite all my preparation, I never knew whether I would be skating in a snowstorm or whether it would be raining or windy. I’ve learned to expect the unexpected.”

Although Albright continued to excel and win titles, a talented rival, American skater Carol Heiss, emerged. In her interview with the Academy of Achievement, Albright noted, “And anyone who has won anything knows what it’s like not to win. And I remember the day when I kept on hearing ‘Well, someone has to lose.’ And it occurred to me . . . someone has to win, too. So you might as well give it a good hard try.” Recognizing that Heiss was a tough competitor, Albright decided to take a leave of absence from school in order to focus and train for the 1956 Olympics.

Olympic Gold Medal

The stage was set. Cortina d’Ampezzo, Italy, was the host city of the 1956 Winter Olympics. The town had been selected to host the Winter Olympics in 1944, but World War II led to the cancellation of the games.

These Winter Olympics were also special in that they were the first to be internationally televised. In The History of the Olympics, Martin Tyler and Phil Soar noted, “Millions of people watched on television, and 13,000 gaily expectant onlookers packed the newly built stands . . . for the opening of the seventh Winter Olympics . . . ”

“The road to an Olympic gold medal in figure skating is never easy,” noted Frank and Clare Gault, in Stories from the Olympics—From 776 B.C. to Now. But if Albright was feeling the pressure, she did not show it. In her Academy of Achievement interview, Albright noted, “I didn’t work on skating to be the best woman skater on the planet. What appeals to all of us is to do something that is a challenge.”

Albright was facing two major challenges in Cortina. Heiss was a fierce competitor and also wanted Olympic gold. In addition, Albright suffered an injury two weeks before the competition. As noted in Great Women in Sports, Albright fell on the ice and seriously hurt her foot, cutting her right ankle to the bone. Her father came to Italy and repaired her ankle, but many believed this injury would take Albright out of the running for the top prize. However, Gault and Gault noted in Stories from the Olympics—From 776 B.C. to Now. “She was determined not to miss another chance at the Olympic gold medal.”

Albright had worked too hard for too long to give up. As noted in Great Women in Sports, Albright stated, “The one thing I want to be able to do after it’s over is say that was my best. It’s better to lose that way than to win with something less than that.” After the compulsory figures, Albright and Heiss were in first and second place respectively, and their scores were very close. That meant Albright’s final program had to be free of mistakes in order to win.

It came down to the free skate. Tyler and Soar noted in The History of the Olympics that Albright “presented a wonderfully delicate programme, dramatically timed to Tales of Hoffman in a seemingly effortless, graceful style, ending splendidly with a rapid cross-foot spin.” Gault and Gault added, “Despite her handicap, she skated a flawless program and won her long-sought prize.”

Albright had become the first American woman to win an Olympic gold medal in ladies figure skating.

In the Academy of Achievement interview, Albright remembered receiving her gold medal. She recalled, “When I was standing on the podium, outdoors in the mountains with the spotlights in the night they gave out the Olympic gold medal, I could hardly believe it. I suddenly felt as if I knew everybody in the United States.”

Retired From Skating to Attend Medical School

Shortly after winning her gold medal, Albright’s hometown had a parade for their Olympic champion. Yet, she had little time to celebrate her victory, as more competitions quickly followed. Heiss won the World Championship, but Albright responded by winning the U.S. Championship a month later. However, it appeared that Heiss would now be the leading woman on the ice.

After winning her gold medal, Albright enrolled in summer school in order to catch up with her classmates and graduate on time. Within the year, Albright retired from competitive skating, having turned down lucrative offers to skate professionally and earned her bachelor’s degree from Radcliffe. She entered Harvard Medical School in the fall of 1957. She was one of only six women in a class of 130 students. From the late 1900s into the turn of the century, figure skating, especially professional figure skating, has become quite a lucrative spectator sport. As noted in Great Women in Sports, Albright “the consummate amateur . . . has never received a single paycheck from her skating.”

In her Academy of Achievement interview, Albright reflected on starting medical school. She said, “Once again, I felt like a real beginner. And I’ll never forget those first few months.” She continued, “But I found myself very anxious to get to working with patients. And it took me a while to understand that we weren’t going to just start right in there.” But according to the Academy of Achievement Web site, Albright soon realized that “the discipline and dedication she learned on the road to becoming a world champion figure skater helped prepare her for her career in medicine.”

Career as a Physician and Researcher

Albright graduated from medical school and followed in her father’s footsteps, becoming a surgeon. She practiced medicine in Boston and was involved in blood plasma research at the Harvard Medical School. In addition, Albright also served her community and tried to help others. She served on the Board of Directors of the American Cancer Society and chaired the National Library of Medicine Board of Regents. Albright also led international efforts to eliminate polio when she was a member of the World Health Assembly.
Awards, Honors, and Family Life

Albright married and had three daughters: Lilla Rhys, Elin, and Elee. Talking about how skating relieved some of her daily stresses, Albright told WomenSports magazine, “It almost alarms me how free I feel on the ice. I don't think about the hospital or the groceries or the kids—I'm just in touch with myself. It's exciting when your whole body is moving in synchronous motion.”

Albright divorced and later remarried in 1981. She and her second husband, Gerald W. Blakeley, Jr., settled in the Boston area. She retired from her medical practice in the 1990s.

Since stepping out of the limelight of ladies figure skating, Albright has received many honors. In 1976, Albright was inducted into the U.S. Figure Skating Hall of Fame, the World Figure Skating Hall of Fame, and the Hall of Sports—Academy of Achievement. She was named to the Olympic Hall of Fame in 1988 and was named one of the “100 Greatest Female Athletes” by Sports Illustrated for Women in 2000. In addition, her alma mater inducted her into the Harvard University Hall of Fame, and she has served on the U.S. Olympic Committee and the International Olympic Committee.

Books


Periodicals

WomenSports, January 1975.

Online


Pedro Almodovar

Spanish film director Pedro Almodovar (born 1949) was a leader of New Spanish Cinema in the post-Franco era. Known for films such as Women on the Verge of a Nervous Breakdown, Almodovar was praised for his insightful depiction of women. After a creative downturn in the 1990s, a mature Almodovar emerged at the end of the decade and into the 2000s, with films like All About My Mother.

Almodovar was born on September 25, 1949 (some sources say 1951), in Calzada de Calatrava, La Mancha, Spain. This is a small village in a remote part of Spain. Almodovar moved with his family to Extremadura, Spain, when he was eight. There, his father ran a local gas station and made wine at home. The family included his mother, Francisca Caballero, two sisters, and one brother.

Almodovar showed promise as a writer from an early age. When he was about ten years old, he won a prize for an essay he wrote about the immaculate conception. Almodovar had a very intensely Roman Catholic upbringing, which he wanted to escape.

Moved to Madrid

The day after Almodovar finished high school in 1968, he moved to Madrid, Spain. Because he could not afford college, he supported himself by holding a number of odd jobs. He sold books and made jewelry. Eventually, he found a real job to support himself. From 1970 to 1981, Almodovar was employed by the national phone company, first as a clerk then as an administrator. Though he really did not fit in, he needed the steady income.

While Almodovar had a number of legitimate jobs, he also had a creative side. In the late 1960s and early 1970s, he wrote comic strips and articles for underground publications such as Star, Vibora, and Vibraciones. In the 1970s, he contributed to other newspapers like El País, Diario 16, and La Luna. For La Luna, Almodovar had a cartoon character
Patti Diphusa that he did under a pseudonym. He also wrote a soft-porn novel and some X-rated comics.

Within a few years, Almodóvar moved into arts and theater. He joined an avant garde theatre group, Los Golíardos, and did some acting. There he met actors and actresses who would later be stars in his films, such as Carmen Maura and Antonio Banderas.

**Made Early Movies**

From about 1974 through 1978, Almodóvar began to experiment with films, making super-8 shorts. In 1978, he made a feature length movie in super-8, _F—, F—, F—me, Tim_. Later that year, he made his first feature in 16mm format, _Salome_.

In 1980, Almodóvar made his first feature film that received commercial release, _Pepi, Luci, Bom and Other Girls on the Heap_ was filmed on 16mm that was blown up to 35mm for release. It was funded by friends and made for about $60,000. The story focused on women from northern Spain who were in the big city. As with many of his most popular films, _Pepi, Luci, Bom_ featured a colorful style and many characters that lived on the fringes of society.

**Emerged as Leader of New Spanish Cinema**

In the early 1980s, Almodóvar began making low budget feature films that were supported by government funds and other producers’ money. In 1981, he directed his first feature, _Labyrinth of Passion_, for which he also composed and performed the score. This complex movie about love was Almodóvar’s first starring Banderas, who would become a film star in America in the 1990s.

Almodóvar began getting some early international notice with his third feature, _Dark Habits_ (1983). This was his first feature that was popular outside of Spain. The plot attacked the hypocrisy of the Roman Catholic Church in black comic fashion. The story focused on nuns who put on fake miracles to fund their cocaine and heroin habits.

In 1984, Almodóvar had his first international hit, _What Have I Done to Deserve This?_ This was another black comedy/satire-type movie about a dysfunctional family. Slightly based on his own past, the story had such characters and plot strands as a cleaning woman with an addiction to speed and a Madrid housewife who sells her son to a homosexual dentist. The housewife also kills her husband and makes soup with his remains that she serves to the police.

As Almodóvar continued to make such films, he was recognized as the leader of New Spanish Cinema and the head of La Movida (The Movement), the post-Franco Spanish pop culture scene. General Francisco Franco had been the fascist dictator of Spain for three and a half decades before his death in 1975. While much of Almodóvar’s work was a reaction against the repressive culture of Franco, he ignored the dictator’s existence in his films. Almodóvar had been influenced by American directors like Billy Wilde and Preston Sturges, who had done irreverent comedies decades earlier.

Though Almodóvar was gay, he did not think of himself as a gay filmmaker. Many of his films concerned universal passions and concerns and featured women at their center. He was often praised for his insightful depiction of women. While Almodóvar used a narrative structure that appealed to American audiences, his films were permissive and irreverent, international and democratic. They had mainstream appeal, despite their sometimes disturbing use of satire.

In 1985, Almodóvar formed his first production company, El Deseo, with brother Agustin. The following year he directed _Matador_, which had at its center two characters for whom killing equals sex. Retired bullfighting star Diego and Maria, a lawyer, are linked because of their shared desire. This film bucks many conventions and showed how Almodóvar’s movies are full of interesting details.

Almodóvar directed his first big budget film in 1987, _Law of Desire_. This marked the first time Almodóvar produced his own movie, which he would do many times in the future, but the film still received much state money. _Law of Desire_ was a love story with a triangle of homosexual and transsexual love at its center, again starring Banderas. Almodóvar was criticized for depicting unprotected gay sex in the movie.

**Had American Hit with Women on the Verge**

One of biggest hits of Almodóvar’s career came in 1988 with _Women on the Verge of a Nervous Breakdown_. Starring Maura and Banderas, the farce was more conservative than his previous movies but attracted a wider audi-
ence. The plot focused on the lives of out-of-control, lonely, abandoned women in a 48-hour period. Maura played Pepa, a self-important soap opera star who is dumped by her lover via answering machine. Interesting consequences come into play after she tries and fails to kill herself. The film was inspired by the one-person play *The Human Voice* by Jean Cocteau.

*Women on the Verge* was the highest grossing film in Spain in 1988 and one of the best successes in Spanish box office history. The feminist film was also the highest grossing foreign film in the United States in 1989. In the United States, it did $7 million in ticket sales and was nominated for an Academy Award as best foreign film. American critics like Vincent Canby of the New York Times praised the film. He wrote, “In *Women on the Verge of a Nervous Breakdown*, Mr. Almodovar sets out to charm rather than shock. That he succeeds should not come as a surprise. The common denominator of all Almodovar films, even the one that winds up in an ecstatic murder-suicide pact, is their great good humor.”

Almodovar was less conservative on his follow-up to *Women on the Verge*. 1990’s *Tie Me Up! Tie Me Down!* The plot focused on the kidnapping of a woman, a porn and horror flick actress named Marina. She is taken by Ricki, a recently released mental patient who was obsessed with her and wants her to fall in love with him. Marina is also admired by the director of her films. *Tie Me Up!* becomes a love story as Marina does fall for Ricki.

*Tie Me Up!* was rated X in the United States. Critics were also not as kind, with many regarding it as inferior to *Women on the Verge*. Despite this potential problem, the film attracted $4 million in box office in the United States.

In the early 1990s, Almodovar made two wacky movies that did not do nearly as well at the box office. In 1991, he did *High Heels*, a comic melodrama which was not particularly successful. More filmgoers were offended by *Kika* (1993), which featured characters dying for love. The title character was a woman who never changes her loving attitude no matter what happens to her. Some audiences were offended by a rape scene that was played for laughs. Critics were not positive in their reviews. Shawn Levy wrote in *Film Comment*, “*Kika* is so filled with coincidences, contrivances, and unforeseeable interlockings that it feels like an entire season’s worth of a primetime soap opera played in two hours on a bullet train...”

Up to this time, Almodovar’s movies had been very comic in nature. But in 1995, he created *The Flowers of My Secret*, which seriously addressed the idea of self-revelation. While the story focused on women, specifically a romance writer whose marriage is failing, it is much less comic. The writer can no longer write romances, so she starts writing under her own name. The film grossed about $1 million in the United States.

**Addressed Franco Regime**

With his next major film, Almodovar achieved several firsts in his career. *Live Flesh* (1998) was loosely based on the novel of the same name by Ruth Rendell. This was the first time Almodovar did a film based on another’s material. He also addressed the issue of Franco which had previously been taboo for him.

*Live Flesh* was a crime drama with elements of noir. It was not as stylized as his previous features but still had violent love, a common element of his movies. The story focused on five people linked by a murder and how it affected their lives over a number of years. *Live Flesh* played well in Spain, in part because it was topical about the potential of the current government.

**Won Awards with All About My Mother**

Almodovar retained his serious attitude for his next movie, *All About My Mother* (*Todo Sobre Mi Madre*; 1999). This was the first film in what many critics considered the mature Almodovar era. The film was a melodrama, with comedic elements, about a nurse named Manuela. Her teenage son Estaban dies when he is hit by a car, and she searches for his father, a transvestite. Her desperation and life changes form the core of the story. *All About My Mother* won more awards than any other of Almodovar’s films, including the director’s prize at the Cannes Film Festival and the best foreign language film at the Academy Awards.

The mature Almodovar continued to push his boundaries. In 2002, he wrote and directed *Talk to Her* (*Hable Con Ella*), a romantic comedy. The film was set in a hospital where two women were in a coma: Lydia, a bullfighter, and Alicia, a dancer. Both have male caretakers who become friends. For the first time in one of his films, the primary characters were men. This film received much critical praise and was nominated for a British Academy Award for best original screenplay. Almodovar was nominated for an Academy Award for best director for *Talk to Her* and his screenplay for the film was nominated for the writing (original screenplay) Academy Award. Almodovar walked away from the 2003 Academy Awards with the Oscar for writing (original screenplay) for *Talk to Her*.

As a filmmaker, Almodovar retained his own unique vision of Spanish life and the kind of characters he chose to depict, but grew past his own limits. He told *Time International* in 1999, “I’ve been making movies for the past 20 years—and, really, the same kind of movie. Sometimes I was accused of being scandalously modern, sometimes an opportunist. But now critics have realized that whatever it is I do, it is authentic. They see how close I feel to the characters in the margin. Characters at the margin of life are at the center of my movies.”

**Books**


**Periodicals**


*Film Comment*, May-June 1994.
Sidney Altman

Research by molecular biologist Sidney Altman (born 1939) has helped unravel many of the mysteries surrounding deoxyribonucleic acid (DNA), the chemical at the heart of the cells of all living things that controls their structure and purpose. For their discovery—in independently conducted studies—that ribonucleic acid (RNA) serves not only as a transmitter of genetic information but also acts as an agent of change in living cells, Altman and Thomas R. Cech in 1989 were awarded the Nobel Prize in Chemistry.

Altman’s discovery of catalytic RNA has shaken the very foundations of the biosciences, altering their central principle. Even more significantly, it has had a profound impact on our understanding of how life on earth began and developed. Scientists have known that the flow of genetic information from DNA to protein requires enzymes and other proteins. Altman’s discovery has gone a long way toward answering one of the most puzzling questions confronting bioscientists who have long sought to determine which was the first biomolecule-DNA or protein? In light of Altman’s research, it now appears that RNA molecules were the first biomolecules to contain both the genetic information and play a role as biocatalysts. His discovery of catalytic RNA has also given gene technology researchers a new tool with the potential for creating a new defense against infection. In 1997 Altman himself experimented with a method to combat bacteria’s resistance to antibiotics by inserting artificial genes in bacteria to make them more sensitive to ampicillin and chloramphenicol, two widely used antibiotics.

Showed an Early Interest in Science

Altman was born on May 8, 1939, in Montreal, Quebec, the second son of poor immigrant parents. His father, Victor, worked in a grocery store in the city’s Notre Dame de Grace neighborhood, where Altman grew up. His mother, Ray Arlin, had worked in a textile mill before marrying Victor but looked after the home and her children by the time Sidney was born. Altman’s parents instilled in him an appreciation for the value of hard work. As he wrote in his autobiographical profile on the Nobel Prize Web site, “It was from them that I learned that hard work in stable surroundings could yield rewards, even if only in infinitesimally small increments.” As a boy, he liked sports and writing, but his greatest love was reading. An avid reader as a boy, Altman possessed a broad taste in books, including novels, sports books, and books about science. His early interest in science was sparked by two events, “the first being the appearance of the A-bomb,” he recalled in his autobiographical profile. “While I was growing up, Einstein was presented as a worthy role model for a young boy who was good at his studies. I added various writers of fiction and stars of ice hockey and baseball to my pantheon.”

After graduating from West Hill High School in Montreal, Altman headed off to the United States to study physics at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology (MIT). He’d originally planned to attend McGill University in Montreal, but when a high school friend suggested that they apply together to attend MIT, Altman agreed. As it turned out, Altman was accepted, but his friend was not. Although
Altman’s father’s grocery business had prospered during Sidney’s high school years, there was some concern in the Altman household about their ability to meet the expenses of Sidney’s schooling at MIT. On top of that, Altman himself was not really sure he wanted to go to MIT. However, after a few weeks at his new college, any doubts he may have had were dispelled. According to his profile in Science.ca, Altman found he enjoyed living away from home, on top of which he was very much impressed by the caliber of his fellow students. During his final semester at MIT, Altman took an introductory course in molecular biology, a subject that by then had begun to generate a great deal of excitement in the scientific community. The course familiarized Altman with nucleic acids and molecular genetics, laying the groundwork for his future encounters with these subjects. In 1960 he graduated from MIT and worked for the next two years as a teaching assistant in the Department of Physics at Columbia University.

In 1962 Altman moved to the University of Colorado Medical School to work as a research assistant under Leonard S. Lerman and to study molecular biology. As an assistant to Lerman, he worked mainly on research into the replication of the T4 bacteriophage, a substance that infects bacterial cells in much the same way that a virus infects human cells. In 1967 Altman earned his Ph.D. in biophysics from the University of Colorado and went to work briefly as a research assistant in molecular biology at Vanderbilt University. Later in 1967 he won a grant from the Damon Runyon Memorial Foundation for Cancer Research that allowed him work as a research fellow in molecular biology at Harvard University. For the next two years, he worked under noted biochemist Matthew Meselson, continuing his research into the genetic structure of the T4 bacteriophage. In 1969, with the help of Lerman, Altman won a fellowship to work in the Cambridge, England, laboratory of Sydney Brenner and DNA co-discoverer Francis Crick.

Made an Important Discovery

It was while working at the Brenner and Crick lab that Altman made an important discovery that helped to lay the groundwork for his later discovery of catalytic RNA. While working on mutant cells with malfunctioning tRNA (transfer RNA), Altman tried an experiment to see if he could isolate a special type of RNA called precursor-RNA. He took a glass plate (to which a thin layer of gel had been applied to one side) and put on it a few drops of material that had been prepared from the mutant cells. The glass plate was then placed into a strong electrical field. According to Altman’s profile at Science.ca, “This technique, called electrophoresis, is a standard method for separating chemical compounds. The electric field causes different compounds to move across the gel at different speeds.” Altman then waited for several hours and laid photographic film on top of the gel. “Tiny amounts of radioactive tracer atoms in the RNA emit X-rays that will leave characteristic bands on the film,” his profile at Science.ca continued. When the film was taken to the darkroom to be developed, Altman knew within minutes that he had discovered the first radiochemically pure precursor to a tRNA molecule, the first step on the path to the discovery of catalytic RNA.

Altman stayed on for another year at Brenner and Crick’s lab, before returning to the United States in 1971 to accept a post as an assistant professor in Yale University’s biology department. A year later, he married Ann Korner, with whom he had two children, Daniel and Leah. In 1975 Altman was promoted to associate professor at Yale. Three years later he attracted wide attention in molecular biology circles when he published the results of an experiment conducted by one of his graduate students. The experiment demonstrated that the RNase P enzyme was at least partially made up of RNA, which meant that RNA played an integral role in the enzyme’s activity. This finding contradicted the widely held belief among molecular biologists that enzymes were made up of protein, not nucleic acids.

In 1980 Altman was made a full professor at Yale. A year later, Thomas Cech of the University of Colorado independently published a study with conclusions very similar to those of Altman. Cech reported that his research had shown that the precursor RNA from the protozoan Tetrahymena were reduced to their final size as tRNA without the assistance of protein, suggesting that the precursor RNA catalyzed this transformation itself. Cech’s findings lent considerable weight to Altman’s earlier conclusions about the role of RNA in the activity of the RNase P enzyme. Further buttressing the findings of both Altman and Cech was research into the catalytic activity of RNase P conducted by Cecilia Guerrier-Takada, a colleague of Altman’s at Yale. Guerrier-Takada’s studies discovered catalysis even in the control experiments that used the RNA sub-unit of RNase P (the M1 RNA) but which contained no protein. Her findings laid the groundwork for a finding by Altman that the M1 RNA displayed all the classical properties of a catalyst, especially since it remained unchanged by the reaction. This finding by Altman removed any remaining doubt that RNA could function as an enzyme.

Won Nobel Prize for Discovery

In 1984 Altman, who was now chairman of Yale’s biology department, became a naturalized American citizen, although he retained his Canadian citizenship. A year later he was named dean of Yale College, a post in which he served for the next four years. As dean, he helped to win an expanded role for science education in all of Yale’s curricula. The crowning glory of Altman’s career in scientific research came in 1989 when he and Thomas Cech were jointly awarded the Nobel Prize in Chemistry for their independent studies demonstrating the catalytic ability of RNA. It is hard to overestimate the importance of their discovery, which proved conclusively that nucleic acids were the building blocks of life, acting as both genetic codes and enzymes. According to Notable Scientists: From 1900 to the Present, in presenting the award to Altman and Cech, the Nobel Academy described their discovery as one of “the two most important and outstanding discoveries in the biological sciences in the past 40 years,” the other being the discovery by Crick and James D. Watson of DNA’s double-helix structure. The findings of Altman and Cech about the catalytic properties of RNA have provided geneticists with a strong foundation for research into possible medical applications. It seems reasonable to believe that if RNA enzymes
can cut additional sequences of tRNA from a strand of precursor tRNA, medical professionals could possibly use RNA enzymes to cut infectious RNA from the genetic system of someone infected with a viral disease.

A member of the National Academy of Sciences, the American Society of Biological Chemists, and the Genetics Society of America, Altman also received the Rosenstiel Award for Basic Biomedical Research in 1989. In 1991 he was selected to present the DeVane lecture series at Yale on the topic: “Understanding Life in the Laboratory.” In a 1997 address to incoming freshmen, posted on Yale University’s Web site, Yale President Richard C. Levin offered this quote from Altman on the joys of discovery: “When I was a post-doc, I did an experiment that resolved a problem that I had been working on for a year or more. When I saw the result, there was not only the feeling of relief you get when you stop banging your head against a wall, but, more important, I then understood some of the puzzling results that had been published by others in the years before. The feeling of great satisfaction at having solved my problem as well as having illuminated others kept me floating on air for weeks.”

Books

Periodicals
Maclean’s, October 21, 1991.

Online

Roberto Arlt

After failing out of primary school and educating himself mainly on the streets of Buenos Aires, Roberto Arlt (1900–1942) would grow to distinguish himself as an important Argentine short story writer, novelist, playwright, and journalist. Equally criticized for his rough use of language and praised for his innovative approach to Spanish, Arlt left his mark on Argentina. Despite dreams of becoming a successful inventor, and his entrance into journalism only to support his creative writing career financially, his Aquafuertes portenas newspaper column (later in book form) would become one of the classics of Argentine literature. In the words of the International Dictionary of Theatre, “Arlt incorporates ideas and techniques to create his own unique literary world of bizarre dream sequences and nightmarish characters, fueled by a strong social conscience.”

Early Life

Arlt was born Roberto Godofredo Christophersen Arlt on April 2, 1900, to a German immigrant, glass-blower and postcard artist, Karl, and an Italian homemaker, Catalina (maiden name, lobstraibitzer) in the Flores Barrio (the District of Flowers) in Buenos Aires, Argentina. (There is dispute over Arlt’s exact birthday between April 2, 7, and 26). German was the language used in the home, and Arlt’s parents, who immigrated in their thirties, never gained full usage of Spanish. Arlt had two sisters and both died from tuberculosis. One died at a very young age, and the other, Lila, died in 1936.

The Arlt family was poor, and Karl Arlt traveled to the provinces for months at a time to work, but never succeeded in improving his family’s economic situation. Karl Arlt was a tyrant who abused his children. Arlt attended several schools as a child, but was expelled somewhere between the ages of eight and ten and was discarded as useless. He learned mainly on the streets and in the library, where he passed most of his time. In the library, he read Russian authors Maxim Gorky, Leo Tolstoy, and fyodor Dostoevsky. He published his first short story between the ages of 14 and 16 in Revista Popular and left home in 1916.

He attended the Naval School of Mechanics from 1919 to 1920 and served in the Argentine armed forces in Córdoba during the same period. To make ends meet, Arlt was employed as a book store clerk, an apprentice to a tinsmith, a painter, a mechanic, a vulcanizer, a brick factory manager, a newspaper manager, and a port worker. He never did too well at any of these jobs. He spent much of his free time in the taverns, especially the café La Punalada, and shady spots of Buenos Aires, making acquaintances with the seedy patrons who would later populate his writing.

Journalist

Between 1914 and 1916, the same time he was starting his fiction writing career, Arlt began writing for newspapers: Ultima Hora, Critica (Critical) (in 1927), and Don Goyo (beginning in 1926). He interned with writer and journalist Ricardo Guiraldes from 1925 to 1927 and published with Guiraldes’s magazine, Prow. Much later he wrote for El mundo (The World).
Arlt began his journalistic work as a way to make money and to introduce himself into Argentine literary circles. It turned out to be more than that. His daily columns for El mundo, “Aquafor in portenas” (“Porteno Etchings”), appeared from 1928 to 1942 (compiled first in book form in 1936) and earned him nation-wide fame. In the column, he shared his opinions about society, economics, and politics. His journalism proved to be his most popular offering to society. On the day his column appeared each week, El mundo sold twice as many copies. In 1935, he was sent to Spain by El mundo as a correspondent, where he wrote his Spanish Etchings. It was one of the few times in his life that Arlt left Buenos Aires. Arlt wrote for El mundo until he died. His articles in Don Goyo have also been published in collections.

**Novelist**

Arlt presented his first short story, Jehovah in 1916. He wrote part of his first novel as a column, “Las ciencias ocultas en la ciudad de Buenos Aires” (“The Occult Sciences in the City of Buenos Aires”), when he was 19. He published his first novel, El jugate rabiso (The Rabid Toy), in 1926. El Poder de la Palabra online cited El jugate rabiso as “one of the best Argentine novels. . . . [With a] flood of autobiographical and picaresque characters, [it] expresses anguish and violence with the rough, most alive linguistic support.” El jugate rabiso found little acceptance in critical circles, but was given much attention by the youth of Buenos Aires.

In 1929, Arlt published Los siete locos (The Seven Madmen), which was to be his only English language success and his most notable novel. None of his other works have been translated into English. Los siete locos won a municipal award, but the critics read it as a realistic book and criticized it for bad grammar and craftsmanship. The book was meant to be experimental and expressionistic. Los lanzallamas (The Flame Throwers) was the sequel novel to Los siete locos. Both Los siete locos and Los lanzallamas were influenced by Dostoevsky. Both reveal the underside of Buenos Aires life, with its delinquents, prostitutes, and ruffians. They have been credited with portraying the epitome of the alienated man in modern society. Arlt’s first three novels are sometimes considered a trilogy. In 1931, Arlt published El amor brujo (Love of the Sorcerer), his last novel.

Arlt’s writing style was innovative. He was the first novelist to use language from lower- and middle-class Spanish, including the language of thieves (lunfardo), the language of Beunos Aires (porteños), vulgarity, foreign language, Castilian Spanish, scientific language, and lyricism. He also regularly wrote using the informal form of “you” “vos.” He broke the literary rules of tradition at every turn and populated his work with the unpleasant and grossly urban. Arlt was quoted in Contemporary Authors speaking to the stuffy, literary traditions of his time, “Today, amid the babble of an inevitably crumbling social edifice, it is impossible to linger over embroidery.” He also cited the new and changing ideas of people as being a reason to reject the censures of “linguistic purity.” Arlt assumed that language was ever changing, even living.

He published two short story collections, El jorabadito (The Little Hunchback) in 1933 and El creador de goteras (The Gorilla Breeder) in 1941. El jorabadito was Arlt’s favorite of all his books. El creador de goteras contained 15 of his short stories. The short stories reinforced Arlt’s style, continuing the use of confused chronology, fragmentation, chaos, and “warped personalities” in a downward-spiraling society. After Arlt wrote his fourth novel, he discovered theater, a medium he then dedicated his career to.

**Playwright**

Prueba de amor (Test of Love) and El fabricante de fantasmas (The Ghost Manufacturer) were Arlt’s first dramatic endeavors. His story Trescientor millones (The Three Hundred Million) was populated with more of Arlt’s grotesque characters. It incorporated a theme that would run through his plays, the tension between reality and illusion (also present in Saverio el cruel and El fabricante de fantasmas). Trescientor millones, Saverio el cruel, and El fabricante de fantasmas were the most significant of his plays. In all three, Arlt is said in International Dictionary of Theatre to: “[present] the fantasy world as bewitching in contrast to dull, prosaic reality. Nevertheless, to enter the realm of the imagination is to lose control and ultimately to encounter madness and death.” Some of Arlt’s other plays and play collections include Escenas de un grotesco, La isla desierta (The Desert Island), Africa, La fiesta del hierro, El desierto entra en la ciudad, La juega de los polichinelas, and Un hombre sensible. His plays contain an indebtedness to Dostoevsky and continue portrayal of the grotesque and madness and also continue Arlt’s social criticism.

**Further Success**

Arlt’s work influenced later Spanish writers Gabriel Garcia Marquez and Jorge Luis Borges. His work has met with favor and respect since the 1960s. Contemporary Authors stated, “His books have been enthusiastically accepted by Argentine writers who see in Arlt a proponent of anti-literary and anti-establishment writing.” Arlt’s short stories, novels, journalism, and plays have been joined and printed in collections by influential publishing houses. In 1984, The Seven Madmen was translated to English.

**Other Facets**

Arlt’s dream was to become distinguished as an inventor, but he continuously met with failure. He formed the ARNA society, an inventing business with Pascual Naccarati and installed a small chemistry laboratory in Lanús, Argentina. Arlt secured a patent for reinforced rubber, but it failed commercially.

Arlt married Carmen Antinucci in 1923 and they had a daughter, Mirta, that same year. Antinucci secretly suffered from tuberculosis when she married Arlt, and he never quite forgave her for not telling him. The couple stayed in Córdoba because of her health and she died in 1929. Arlt married Elizabeth Shine in 1939. She gave birth to a child.
soon after his death. Arlt died of a heart attack on July 26, 1942, in Buenos Aires, Argentina.

**Books**

*Contemporary Authors, The Gale Group, 2000.*


**Online**


---

**Lance Armstrong**

Lance Armstrong (born 1971) will certainly be remembered for being an outstanding athlete and four-time winner of the Tour de France, but he will touch more lives through the Lance Armstrong Foundation and the Race for the Roses charity bike ride, which raise money for cancer research and assistance.

**A Good Mother**

Lance Armstrong was born in Plano, Texas, on September 18, 1971. His biological father moved out when he was a baby, and he and his mother were on their own. When he was three-years-old, his mother was remarried to a man named Terry Armstrong. Terry Armstrong also formally adopted Lance. There was very little money, but his mother worked hard to provide him with a good life. When he was seven-years-old, she worked out a deal with the local bike store and bought him a Schwinn Mag Scrambler.

He was a child who like to do things on his own and in his own way. “I have loved him every minute of his life, but God, there were times when it was a struggle,” his mother told the *New Yorker. “He has always wanted to test the boundaries.”

Armstrong was athletic from the beginning. He enjoyed biking and swimming but did not do as well with football. In the fifth grade he won a distance running race. A few months later he joined the local swim club where he quickly advanced. He would ride his bike ten miles to early morning practices, then ride to school, and ride back again to swim in the afternoons.

**Armstrong Began Competing**

As a young teenager, Armstrong saw an advertisement for a junior triathlon called IronKids, that combined biking, swimming, and running. Armstrong won and loved it. He began competing regularly in swimming, biking, and running events, sometimes separately and sometimes combined. In his mid-teens, his mother and Terry Armstrong divorced and it was just the two of them again.

In 1987, when he was sixteen-years-old, he was invited to the Cooper Institute in Dallas, Texas. The Cooper Institute was a leader in fitness and aerobic conditioning research. Armstrong was given a VO2 Max test to measure the amount of oxygen his lungs consumed during exercise. His levels were the highest ever recorded at the clinic.

**Opportunities Knocked**

At age sixteen, Armstrong became a professional triathlete. He became the national rookie of the year in spring triathlons, and both he and his mother realized that he had a serious future. Soon it became clear that he would become a cyclist. He began training with more experienced riders and was beginning to make money in races. He began traveling farther to races that were more prestigious. During his senior year in high school, he qualified to train with the U.S. Olympic team in Colorado Springs, Colorado, and to travel to Moscow, Russia, to ride in his first international race.

After graduation in 1989, he was named to the U.S. National Cycling team and started working with Chris
Carmichael who began coaching him. Through Carmichael he learned that winning races involved strategy and tactics, as well as strength and speed. In 1991, he became the U.S. National Amateur Champion. The following year he rode in the 1992 Olympic games in Barcelona, Spain, and finished 14th. Immediately following the Olympic games, he turned professional. He placed last in his first professional race, but two weeks later he took second place in a World Cup race in Zürich, Switzerland. A man named Jim Ochowicz, who signed him with the Motorola cycling team, was watching him.

Armstrong had a good year in 1993, winning ten titles. He became the 1993 World Champion in Oslo, Norway. He was also the U.S. PRO Champion and won a stage of the Tour de France, although he later was unable to finish the race. In 1994, he won the Thrift Drug Triple Crown. He was steadily making a name for himself in the cycling world.

In 1995, during the Tour de France, his friend and teammate Fabio Casartelli was killed during a high-speed descent. The team decided to keep riding in his honor after Casartelli’s wife paid them a visit and asked them to go on. Once again, Armstrong won a stage in the race. That year he came in 36th place, and it was his first time to finish the esteemed race.

The following year, 1996, started out well. Armstrong won his second Tour DuPont and had several career victories. He signed a two million dollar contract with the French cycling team, Cofidis. He had a new Porsche and a new home in Austin, Texas. However, during the Tour de France he was forced to drop out after being diagnosed with bronchitis. He rode for the 1996 U.S. Olympic team in Atlanta, Georgia, but was disappointed with a twelfth-place finish.

Cancer

Shortly after his 25th birthday he began coughing up blood. On October 2, 1996, he was diagnosed with testicular cancer that had spread to his abdomen, lungs, lymph nodes, and brain. The following day he underwent surgery to remove one of his testicles. “At that point, he had a minority chance of living another year,” Craig Nichols, his principal oncologist told the New Yorker. “We cure at most a third of the people in situations like that.”

Standard treatment for the brain tumors is radiation, but its effects can result in a slight loss of balance. “Not enough to affect the average person, but certainly enough to keep someone from riding a bicycle down the Alps,” said medical oncologist Lawrence Einhorn in the August 9, 1999, issue of Sports Illustrated. “We chose surgery instead of radiation for Lance. It’s slightly riskier, but he had only two tumors and they were in a position where a surgeon could get to them.”

Armstrong also chose a non-traditional route for his chemotherapy. The usually prescribed drug, bleomycin, normally produces fewer side effects of nausea and vomiting. However, bleomycin also could slightly diminish lung capacity, so Armstrong was given ifosamide, “taking the short-term discomfort for the long-term gain,” said Einhorn.

During treatment, especially between rounds of the chemotherapy, Armstrong kept riding his bike as much as he could. “Why did I ride when I had cancer?” Armstrong asks rhetorically in his autobiography, It’s Not About the Bike. “Cycling is so hard, the suffering is so intense that it’s absolutely cleansing. You can go out there with the weight of the world on your shoulders, and after a six-hour ride at a high pain threshold, you feel at peace.”

While undergoing chemotherapy, Armstrong began talking with doctors about launching a charitable foundation to raise awareness about cancer. He and some cycling friends also came up with the idea of starting a charity bicycle race around Austin, Texas, and decided to call it the Ride for the Roses. The Foundation began to give him a new feeling of purpose.

Love And Marriage

A month after his chemotherapy treatment ended, while he still had no hair, or even eyebrows, he met Kristin Richard at a press conference announcing the launch of the Lance Armstrong Foundation and the Ride for the Roses. She was an account executive for an advertising and public relations firm assigned to help promote the event, and everyone called her Kik (pronounced “Keek”). After the first Ride for the Roses was over, they began finding excuses to see one another. “I got to know Lance when he was standing on the edge between life and death,” Kristen said in the December 16, 2002, issue of Sports Illustrated. “It was awesome to be part of. I felt he showed me the view from that cliff. That bonds two people. And if you get to come back from that edge, it changes your life. You never want to miss out on anything fun or beautiful or scary again.” The two were married on May 8, 1998.

During the same period, Armstrong was attempting to make a comeback into cycling. His first attempts did not go well. He would tire easily and get depressed. “In an odd way, having cancer was easier than recovery—at least in chemo I was doing something instead of just waiting for it to come back,” he wrote in his autobiography. It did not help his morale when he could not find a team to take him on. His previous contract with Cofidis had been renegotiated while he was undergoing treatment. He was considered a bad public relations risk. He considered himself very lucky when the newly formed United States Postal Service team accepted him.

Better Than Ever

In 1998, he became determined to overcome the difficulties and get back to riding competitively. In the last half of the year, he won the Tour de Luxembourg, the Rheinland-Pfalz Rundfahrt in Germany, and the Cascade Classic in Oregon. By 1999, he decided he was ready to try the Tour de France again. He spent the spring training in Europe through the Alps and the Pyrenees. The Tour de France is a three-week ride through the villages of France, up and down the mountains, with a new stage each day. He knew he would have to train hard to endure the strenuous course. The New Yorker reported “Armstrong now says that cancer was the best thing that ever happened to him. Before
bmeting ill, he didn’t care about strategy or tactics or teamwork—and nobody (no matter what his abilities) becomes a great cyclist without mastering those aspects of the sport. ” When the time came for the race, Armstrong was ready. He came out strong on the very first day. Soon he was wearing the yellow jersey that indicates the leader on a regular basis. He rode strong, all the way to the Champs-Elysees in Paris, winning the Tour de France on his first attempt after surviving cancer. Then, he won it again a year later. The following year, in the July 30, 2001, issue of Sports Illustrated, Rick Reilly wrote, “Unless the Eiffel Tower falls on him, Armstrong will become the fifth man to win the Tour de France three times in a row.” Sure enough, he won. Then, he did it again in 2002.

Cycling is a big part of Armstrong’s life, but it is not his whole life. The Ride for the Roses has grown larger each year and has become an entire weekend event, including a rock concert called Rock for the Roses. The Lance Armstrong Foundation has grown to provide information, services, and support for cancer patients through education, research grants, and community programs. The 2002 Ride for the Roses raised $2.7 million and drew 20,000 people.

Armstrong says that having cancer completely changed the way he looked at life. “I thought I knew what fear was, until I heard the words you have cancer,” he stated in the Buffalo News. “My previous fears, fear of not being liked, fear of being laughed at, fear of losing my money, suddenly seemed like small cowardices. Everything now stacked up differently, the anxieties of life—a flat tire, losing my career, a traffic jam—were reprioritized into need versus want, real problem as opposed to minor scare. A bumpy plane ride was just a bumpy plane ride, it wasn’t cancer.”

Armstrong and Kristen now have three children, son Luke and twin daughters Isabelle and Grace. They live in Austin, Texas, but also own a home in Nice, France.

“Lance Armstrong is more than a bicyclist now, more than an athlete,” wrote Rick Reilly in Sports Illustrated where Armstrong was named “Sportsman of the Year.” “He’s become a kind of hope machine.”

Books

Periodicals
New Yorker, July 15, 2002.
PR Week, October 14, 2002.

Online

Lillian Hardin Armstrong

American musician Lillian “Lil” Hardin Armstrong (1898–1971) ranks alongside Jelly Roll Morton and James P. Johnson as one of the great early jazz pianists. “I was just born to swing, that’s all,” she once said. “Call it what you want, blues, swing, jazz, it caught hold of me way back in Memphis and it looks like it won’t ever let go.” Armstrong’s statement, ironically, was portentous. After a distinguished fifty-year musical career, she died on stage, at a memorial concert for Louis Armstrong.

Armstrong was born on February 3, 1898, in Memphis, Tennessee. She received piano and organ lessons as a child in Memphis and served as a pianist and organist in church and in her school. Her mother and grandmother hated popular music and considered the blues vulgar. In fact, she was beaten for having a copy of W. C. Handy’s “St. Louis Blues.” Later, she recalled playing “Onward Christian Soldiers” in church one day “with a definite beat,” somewhat to the consternation of her minister.

Armstrong received her formal music training at Fisk University, the Chicago College of Music (earning a teacher’s certificate in 1924), and the New York College of Music (earning a diploma in 1929). She left Fisk in 1917 when her family moved to Chicago, and her professional career began there with a job as a “song-plugger” at Jones’s Music Store on South State Street.

At Jones’s Music Store, Armstrong learned and demonstrated all the music available at the store and was billed as “The Jazz Wonder Child.” It was here that she met Jelly Roll Morton, probably the greatest jazz pianist of the era. Their encounter has become legendary among jazz historians. Armstrong and Morton traded renditions of standards of the day, and he demonstrated his heavy, foot-stomping style. She took this as an important lesson. From that day forward, she played with a heavy-handed, aggressive rhythmic style that became her trademark throughout her career.

Armstrong was well known and respected by her peers. Compliments by musicians were typically like those of George “Pops” Foster, the great bass player, who referred to her as “a great piano player and a great musician.” In her day the piano was the centerpiece of the rhythm section, charged with maintaining the beat and fundamental chord structure to free the clarinet, trumpet, or cornet soloists for their flights of fancy. The piano was not necessarily a focus for solo playing, as Armstrong herself attests: “It wasn’t the style during the King Oliver days for the pianist to play many solos. Sometimes I’d get the urge to run up and down the piano and make a few runs and things, and Joe [‘King’ Oliver] would turn around and look at me and say, ‘We have a clarinet in the band.’ “

Her four-beat, solid style guaranteed Armstrong’s acceptance among her peers and a good following among
devotees. As a pianist, her early jobs included accompanying singers, among them the blues great Alberta Hunter. Armstrong was also a good organizer and led her own band for many years. Her other talents included arranging, composing, and singing.

Armstrong’s career in jazz extended more than fifty years and centered in Chicago and New York. She got her first playing jobs through contacts made at Jones’s Music Store. Her first major band experience was with the Original New Orleans Creole Jazz Band, playing at the De Luxe Cafe. The band included Lawrence Duhé on clarinet, Sugar Johnson and Freddie Keppard on cornets, Roy Palmer on trombone, Sidney Bechet on clarinet and soprano saxophone, Tubby Hall on drums, Jimmy Palao on violin, Bob Frank on piccolo, and Wellman Braud on bass. It is about this band that Armstrong told one of her most famous tales: When she asked in what key they were playing their first number, they told her, “‘Key, we don’t know what key. Just when you hear two knocks, start playing.’ So I just hit everything on the piano, so whatever key they was in, I would be in it too. Oh, after a second I could feel what key they were playing, because at that time I don’t think they used over five chords. In fact, I’m sure they didn’t.”

The Original New Orleans Creole Jazz Band played in a pure, swinging New Orleans style and was quite successful. The audience frequently contained some of the leading musicians and stars of the day, including Bill “Bojangles” Robinson, the vaudeville team of Walker and Williams, Eddie Cantor, Al Jolson, and Sophie Tucker. King Oliver and Johnny Dodds came over one evening to hear the band and invited Armstrong to join their band, King Oliver’s Creole Jazz Band, playing at the Lincoln Gardens (later the Royal Gardens). In 1922, Louis Armstrong joined them, and the full complement of Oliver’s band then included Oliver and Louis Armstrong on cornets, Honoré Dutrey on trombone, Johnny Dodds on clarinet, Baby Dodds on drums, Bill Johnson on banjo, and Armstrong on piano. This band, of course, has become one of the most famous in all of jazz history and formed the nucleus for Louis Armstrong’s Hot Five and Hot Seven recording sessions.

Armstrong Called Major Figure in Jazz Field

It must have been quite a heady experience for a young woman in her first few engagements to be playing with the jazz greats of her day who brought the pioneering New Orleans style of traditional jazz to Chicago. It is certainly a testament to Armstrong’s talent and ability. Moreover, she was apparently the first woman to enter the jazz field as a major figure and retain that stature and acceptance throughout her career.

Becoming friends almost from the day he joined the band, she and Louis Armstrong were married in 1924. Lil Armstrong eventually “encouraged Louis to leave Oliver and join Fletcher Henderson in New York. It was she who helped Louis Armstrong to become a better music reader and it was she, with her formal training and broad knowledge of musical form, who realized his enormous talent.” In New York with Henderson, when Louis Armstrong played at the Roseland Ballroom, Lil Armstrong was not satisfied seeing that her husband was not given featured billing. She organized a band in Chicago and brought him back to the Dreamland, where he was featured as “The World’s Greatest Trumpet Player.” His other ventures included the recording sessions with his Hot Five and Hot Seven from 1925 through 1928. From this point Louis Armstrong’s career took off like a rocket. The Armstrong marriage followed the course of their careers: fused at first, but then divergent, and they were divorced in 1938.

Lil Armstrong’s subsequent experiences were diverse. She played with many bands, including those of Oliver, Freddie Keppard, Elliot Washington, Hugh Swift, and Louis Armstrong. She led and played in an all-woman swing group called the Harlem Harlecoren from about 1932 to 1936. The group included such notables as Alma Scott (Hazel Scott’s mother) on reeds, Leora Mieux (Fletcher Henderson’s wife) on trombone, and Dolly Hutchinson on trumpet. She also led her own group out of Buffalo, remnants of Stuff Smith’s band, including Jonah Jones and George Clarke, from 1933 to 1935. She fronted this band “wearing slinky white gowns, top hat, and wielding a baton.” This was, of course, during the depth of the Great Depression, and it is a testament to Armstrong’s talent and skill that she was able to get jobs and keep the band together.

Armstrong worked as a session pianist for Decca Records in the late 1930s and appeared in the Broadway shows Hot Chocolate (1929) and Shuffle Along (1933). While at Decca, she recorded under the name Lil Hardin with soloists and a pick-up band that included numerous stars of the day, among them Red Allen, Chu Berry, Buster Bailey, and Jonah Jones.

She returned to Chicago in the 1940s and continued her career with several long engagements at local clubs, including The Three Deuces. She made several tours, including one to Europe in 1952. She was coaxed out of semi-retirement to play at a memorial concert for Louis Armstrong in 1971 and died on stage on August 27.

Books
Claudio Arrau

Musical genius, prodigy, and boy wonder are some of the words most often used to describe Claudio Arrau (1903–1991). Regarded by many music critics as a master interpreter and impassioned artist, Arrau enjoyed a stellar, if sometimes unorthodox, career that spanned over 80 years. Arrau was born on February 6, 1903, in Chillan, Chile. His father died less than 12 months after he was born, but his mother, an amateur pianist, recognized and nurtured his musical genius and became his first teacher.

Chilean legend says that Arrau could read music before he could read words. He made his formal performing debut in Chile at the age of five, playing selections composed by Wolfgang Amadeus Mozart, Ludwig van Beethoven, and Frederic Chopin. It became clear long before he reached ten years of age that his talents surpassed those of the available teachers and that his musical education would require the molding of a master mentor. In 1912 Arrau was sent to study with Martin Krause at the Stern Konservatorie in Berlin at the expense of the Chilean government.

It was through Krause that Arrau was first linked to the music of Beethoven in what would prove to be a profound lifelong musical and spiritual connection. Arrau’s life was threaded to the composer’s through a direct line of four teachers: Beethoven taught Karl Czerny, who taught Franz Liszt, who taught Krause. Once Arrau left Chile, Krause was his only teacher.

Young Arrau’s introduction to the European concert scene came early. He performed before royalty and in salons and in 1914, at the age of 11, made his formal recital debut in Berlin, marking the official start of his career as a solo pianist. In 1922 he made his London debut in a recital with Dame Nellie Melba and the violinist Branslaw Huberman.

Life in Berlin provided Arrau with the opportunity to bathe in the richness of European culture. Arrau considered it the duty of every great artist to become not only proficient in his or her field of expertise, but also to know as much as possible about all art—painting, sculpture, literature, and theater. He collected Etruscan and pre-Columbian art and was knowledgeable about European classic literature. Arrau felt that his appreciation of the wide range of arts and culture helped inform his interpretations of the music he played. Arrau’s concert schedule, which over the course of his life took him all around the globe, enabled him to indulge in his interest in the world around him. Whether in Europe, America, Australia, South Africa, Israel, India, or Japan, the young pianist studied the local art and culture and collected artifacts.

Martin Krause died in 1918, when Arrau was in his late teens, an event that deeply shook the young musician. Arrau was further rocked in 1923 and 1924 by a disastrous U.S. reception on his first tour there. Performing with the Boston Philharmonic and the Chicago Symphony, Arrau found that U.S. acceptance of his style and work came slowly. Mourndful about the loss of his mentor and concerned about maintaining his career, Arrau experienced a period of emotional, artistic, and financial insecurity. He eventually found a psychological and spiritual mentor in Jungian analyst Dr. Hubert Abrahamsohn, with whom he remained close throughout his life.

Arrau adhered to Carl Jung’s notion of the “collective unconscious” in which the psychologist posits that the same universal aspects of human experience lie dormant in all people, clothed in symbolism, waiting to be exposed, felt, and lived. Arrau willingly underwent analysis throughout his life because he believed that if he could tap into his unconscious he could set in motion powerful creativity. He remained humble within this context, acknowledging his creativity as something available to all humans, his talent a gift.

Arrau’s accomplishments and the honors he received throughout his career were myriad. In 1927 he won the International Prize for Pianists in Geneva, which helped build his early reputation as a Bach pianist. This link to the composer became firmly established in 1935 when Arrau...
completed the entire cycle of Johann Sebastian Bach’s keyboard works. After completing the cycle, though, he decided that the harpsichord was the most appropriate instrument on which to play Bach’s works and chose not to play them again. He did, however, find this cyclical approach to composers’ works satisfying. For example, he played a cycle of Beethoven’s works in Mexico City in 1938 and later did the same with compositions by Mozart and Franz Schubert.

Arrau married soprano Ruth Schneider in 1940 and shortly thereafter left Germany to live in New York City. He and his wife had children after moving to the United States. Although he lived there for years, he did not become a naturalized U.S. citizen until 1979.

Arrau’s Mastery Acknowledged

In 1991, New York Times music critic Donal Henahan called Arrau’s musical contributions “exemplary,” noting in particular his detailed interpretations of Beethoven. “Arrau played a great deal of 19th-century music with great virtuosity and insight, but also with a well-tailored refinement that prompted critics early in his career to characterize his style as ‘aristocratic,’ a somewhat misleading label that stuck with him.”

But Arrau was not merely a traditionalist. In fact, his musical taste and affinities varied greatly. Although primarily considered a Beethoven specialist, he also played the modern music of Arnold Schoenberg, Igor Stravinsky, and Ferruccio Busoni before they achieved fame in their own right. Whatever the composition, music critics found that Arrau’s playing was marked by a thoughtfulness and consideration of detail not often evident in others’ work.

Arrau was also regarded by many as a man of particularly sensitive and passionate temperament. He found it difficult, and often emotionally painful, to live up to the expectations thrust upon him by the public, the artistic and financial communities, and himself. Because he was so focused on his emotional life, he was considered by some to be temperamental. He would on occasion cancel performances if he felt that his spiritual affinity to a piece was out of balance.

In addition to his musical talents, Arrau was a man of great political passion and conscience. On one occasion he performed a benefit concert that raised $190,000 in contributions for Amnesty International’s campaign for the release of political prisoners around the world. In addition, he refused to play in his native Chile for years in protest against the Marxist government of Salvador Allende and later that of the right-wing military dictatorship of Augusto Pinochet. He did return to his homeland in 1981, though, arriving to a hero’s welcome. The Chilean government declared a day of national mourning when he died. A nephew reported at the time that Arrau had claimed that, while his mind and intellect belonged to Germany, his heart was still with Chile.

Although Arrau was a dedicated teacher for many years, in his later life he became disillusioned with teaching because he saw a trend in the musical world towards placing an emphasis on technique rather than the personal development of the artist. He was committed to the notion that a pianist not only had to know myriad aspects of culture to be a well-rounded artist, but also must know him or herself emotionally. Arrau felt that many of his students were unwilling to take such steps. Still, he found comfort in having chosen and adhered to his own personal path of growth and exploration.

Arrau gave up performing after his wife died in 1989. He had been scheduled to perform a recital, his first in three years, when he died on June 9, 1991, in Murzzuschlag, Austria, at the age of 88 after undergoing intestinal surgery. He is best remembered for his personalized interpretations of the work of some of the greatest piano masters of all time, as well as his willful artistic spirit.

Books


Periodicals


John David Ashcroft

U.S. Attorney General John Ashcroft (born 1942) was one of the most powerful members of President George W. Bush’s cabinet. Ashcroft served as a state attorney general, Missouri governor, and U.S. senator prior to becoming U.S. attorney general. His conservative social views made him a controversial figure in the Bush administration.

Religious Upbringing

Ashcroft’s paternal grandfather emigrated to the United States from Northern Ireland at the beginning of the twentieth century. Shortly after arriving, he was severely burned in a gasoline explosion and almost died. He thereafter dedicated his life to full-time Christian evangelism. Eventually he joined the Assembly of God Church.

Robert Ashcroft followed his father into the ministry. On May 9, 1942, while Robert and his wife, Grace, were living in Chicago, their son John was born. The Ashcrofts later moved to Springfield, Missouri, to be closer to the headquarters of the Assembly of God.

Robert Ashcroft served as president of three colleges affiliated with the Assembly of God. According to an article that appeared in the New Yorker in 2002, he began each day with a prayer that included the words, “Keep us from accident, injury, and illness. But most of all keep us from
“evil.” As attorney general, Ashcroft would continue his father’s practice of morning group prayer.

**Scholastic Achievements**

As a student at Hillcrest High School in Springfield, Ashcroft was president of his class. He also played basketball and was captain and quarterback of the football team, and he earned a football scholarship to Yale University. At Yale, a knee injury kept him out of intercollegiate football, though he did well in intramural sports. Following his graduation with honors from Yale in 1964, Ashcroft attended the University of Chicago Law School on a scholarship.

While at the University of Chicago, Ashcroft met his future wife, Janet Roede, another law student. They were married in 1967. After graduating from law school, Ashcroft took his wife back to Springfield, where he opened a law practice. He also began teaching at Southwest Missouri State University.

**Political Head Start**

While still an undergraduate, Ashcroft had worked as a summer intern for his congressman. When the congressman declined to seek re-election in 1972, Ashcroft ran as a replacement candidate in the Republican Party primary, but lost the bid for the nomination with nearly 45 percent of the vote. Soon after, the 30-year-old Ashcroft was asked to fill an unexpired term as state auditor. However, Ashcroft failed to win election to the office two years later.

Missouri’s attorney general John Danforth then hired Ashcroft as a legal assistant. (One of the other junior lawyers in Danforth’s office was future Supreme Court Justice Clarence Thomas.) In 1976, when Danforth ran for the United States Senate, Ashcroft was elected to replace him as attorney general.

As Missouri’s attorney general, Ashcroft made a single appearance before the United States Supreme Court, arguing a set of state statutes, including one that required all second-trimester abortions to be performed in a hospital. Ashcroft won re-election as attorney general in 1980, and he was selected chairman of the non-partisan National Association of Attorneys General.

**Governor of Missouri**

In 1984, Ashcroft ran successfully for governor of Missouri. As governor, he balanced eight consecutive state budgets. He also served as chairman of the Education Commission of the States. *Fortune* magazine named him one of the top ten education governors, and he made Missouri one of the best managed states financially. In 1991, he was elected chairman of the non-partisan National Governors Association.

But as Missouri’s governor, Ashcroft also drew attention for opposing abortion rights and school desegregation. He attempted to appoint a task force to tighten Missouri’s restrictive abortion law after the Supreme Court upheld the state’s law in 1989. And a year later, he proposed limiting the number of abortions a woman could have to one.

Term limits prevented Ashcroft from seeking re-election in 1992, so in 1993 he ran for chairman of the Republican National Committee. But after meeting opposition from pro-choice Missouri Republicans, he abandoned the race. When Senator Danforth announced that he would not seek re-election in 1994, Ashcroft successfully ran for the open seat.

**U.S. Senator**

During his single six-year term in the Senate, Ashcroft served on the Senate Judiciary Committee and as chairman of the Constitution Committee. He sponsored seven proposed constitutional amendments, none of which won Congressional approval. The amendments would have banned abortions, prohibited burning the American flag, allowed line-item vetoes, required a balanced federal budget, required a super-majority vote in Congress for tax increases, established term limits for federal office holders, and made it easier to pass a constitutional amendment.

Ashcroft also attempted to abolish the National Endowment for the Arts for funding projects he considered indecent. He also blasted “activist” judges and opposed the appointment of David Satcher as Surgeon General because Satcher had a record of supporting abortion rights. A member of the National Rifle Association, Ashcroft also opposed nearly all gun control legislation. During the Monica Lewinsky scandal, Ashcroft was the first senator to call on President Clinton to resign if the allegations of misconduct proved true. Ashcroft’s voting record in the Senate won him 100 percent approval ratings from the American Conserva-
tive Union and the Christian Coalition, and zero ratings from the Americans for Democratic Action, the League of Conservation Voters, and the National Organization for Women.

Ashcroft toyed with the idea of seeking the 2000 Republican presidential nomination, but instead focused on re-election to the Senate. Ashcroft’s opponent Mel Carnahan died in a plane crash three weeks before the 2000 election. State officials decided it was too late to reprint the ballots, so Ashcroft officially ran against a dead man. After Carnahan posthumously won the election, his widow agreed to accept the Senate appointment. Ashcroft did not challenge that arrangement, even though his defeat seemed to place him on the threshold of political oblivion.

Attorney General

President-elect George W. Bush resurrected Ashcroft’s career on December 22, 2000, when he nominated Ashcroft to be U.S. attorney general. Ashcroft’s nomination ran into major opposition in the Senate over his conservative religious and political beliefs, including his opposition to abortion. Ashcroft was confirmed, but the 42 votes against him in the Senate was the largest number ever cast against an attorney general’s confirmation. Following the contentious confirmation, Ashcroft vowed to renew the war on drugs, reduce violence due to firearms, and combat discrimination.

In the war on terrorism that followed the September 11, 2001, attacks on the United States, Ashcroft was accused of creating an atmosphere in which any opposition to his policies was seen as unpatriotic, if not subversive. Under policies put in place by the Bush administration, suspected terrorists were to be held on the slightest of charges to keep them off the streets. In the past, even organized crime figures or suspected spies had been granted their liberties until they actually committed crimes.

Ashcroft, along with Colin Powell and Donald Rumsfeld, emerged as one of the most powerful members of Bush’s cabinet. Ashcroft became the administration’s persona for the war on terrorism and took a number of controversial steps in its pursuit—including detaining over 1,000 people on charges not made public, deciding to monitor selected attorney-client conversations, and setting in place plans to try alleged war criminals in military tribunals.

Ashcroft continued to pursue his faith-based agenda as attorney general, even though he stated that he did not believe religious doctrine can or should be imposed. When he took over as attorney general in 2001, Ashcroft introduced faith-based prayer sessions in which up to 30 participants studied Bible passages and prayed. Ashcroft’s sessions drew criticism for posing a conflict between church and state, until meetings with President Bush in the wake of the terrorist attacks pre-empted the prayer meetings.

In 2002, Ashcroft told Jeffrey Toobin of the New Yorker, "[T]here are standards that are moral and spiritual and eternal that I want to live up to. And people who win the battle write the history, and they may or may not get it right. I want to do what’s right in God’s sight."

Not surprisingly, Ashcroft’s presumption that he would be able to interpret God’s wishes for others drew criticism. He caused a stir when he had curtains erected around two twelve-foot art deco statues in the Justice building, one of which portrayed a partially unclad figure, prompting charges of prudishness and intolerance from his critics. And he gave no sign that he was prepared to compromise on his views about abortion—his Justice Department asked a federal appeals court to uphold a law banning "partial birth" abortions.

Political Phoenix

Ashcroft established a well-deserved reputation for turning defeat into victory. He told Toobin: “When I lost the race for Congress, I became state auditor. When I lost the race for state auditor, I became attorney general. When I lost the race for national committee chairman, I became a United States senator. When I lost the race for senator, I became the Attorney General.”

By April 2002, Ashcroft enjoyed a 76 percent approval rating, according to a Gallup poll. Although Ashcroft stated that he had retired from electoral politics, some analysts saw him as a successor to Vice-President Dick Cheney should Cheney’s health become a problem before the 2004 election.

Personal

Ashcroft was the author of Lessons from a Father to His Son. He was the co-author with his wife Janet (who taught law at Howard University) of two college law textbooks. The Ashcrofts have three children, a daughter and two sons, and one grandchild. Ashcroft enjoyed spending holidays on his 150-acre farm on the outskirts of his hometown of Springfield.

Ashcroft also enjoyed playing the piano. In 2003, he told The American Enterprise, “I play the piano almost every day, because it’s a way to express ideas and to experiment. I also play the guitar a little bit, and the mandolin a little bit. Music, as I see it, is the study of relationships—tonal relationships—and in all of life, nothing is more important than relationships.” Ashcroft is also an accomplished baritone; in the Senate, he was known as one of the Singing Senators, along with Trent Lott, Jim Jeffords, and Larry Craig.

Not without a sense of humor, Ashcroft told Toobin in the New Yorker, “There are only two things necessary in life—WD-40 and duct tape. . . . WD-40 for things that don’t move that should, and duct tape for things that do move but shouldn’t.”

Periodicals

New Yorker, April 15, 2002.

Online

Gertrude Atherton

American author Gertrude Atherton (1857–1948) wrote many novels and other works set in California, primarily in San Francisco. Many of her works consider themes related to the West, social ideas, and women.

Atherton was born Gertrude Horn on October 30, 1857, in San Francisco, California, the only child of Thomas L. Horn and Gertrude Franklin Horn. Her father was a businessman with a tobacco and cigar business from Connecticut, while her mother was a Southern belle who had been born in New Orleans. Atherton’s mother married Thomas Horn mostly for his money.

The Horns had a tough marriage that ended in divorce when Atherton was two. Until the divorce, Atherton lived in relative wealth. After the divorce, her parents both remarried and she had one half-brother and two half-sisters. Immediately following her parents’ divorce, Atherton lived on a ranch owned by her maternal grandfather, Stephen Franklin, in San Jose, California. He was a relative of Benjamin Franklin and worked as a newspaper editor and secretary of the Bank of California. Atherton credits her grandfather with introducing her to serious literature, and she read books in his library while growing up. She lived there from 1859 to 1865, until her mother married to a man she did not like, John Frederick Uhlhorn. They returned when Uhlhorn left the family in 1870.

Though Atherton was well read because of her readings in her grandfather’s library, she did not receive much in the way of a formal, organized education. She began writing on her own when she was 14 years old. Atherton did attend St. Mary’s Hall School in Benicia, California. When she was 17 years old, she was a student at the Sayre Institute in Lexington, Kentucky. Atherton was sent there because it was thought she might have tuberculosis and need treatment. She did not finish her education there, but returned home. Atherton was a very difficult child, and she later admitted that she tried to be.

Married Atherton

When Atherton returned to California from Kentucky, she found that her mother was dating a man 14 years younger than her. George H. Bowen Atherton was a wealthy heir. George Atherton decided he was more attracted to daughter than mother and asked the 17-year-old-girl to marry him. Atherton agreed, and they eloped in early 1876. Because of the marriage, Atherton’s relationship with her mother ended.

The marriage was not particularly successful. The couple lived at Fair Oaks, the Atherton estate. Atherton’s life was run by her mother-in-law, who was a Chilean aristocrat, and her husband, who did not support her ambitions to write. George Atherton was very jealous. He did not even like Atherton to read on her own. Though the marriage produced two children, George Goñi (who died at age six) and Muriel Florence, Atherton was bored there. She allowed her children to be raised by her mother-in-law.

Wrote First Novel

On the sly while living at Fair Oaks, Atherton wrote her first novel, The Randolphs of Redwood. This work was based on a local scandal in society. It was first published in serial fashion in the San Francisco-based publication Argonaut in 1882. Its publication created a family scandal in part because of the sexually suggestive scenes, though it was published in the periodical anonymously. The Randolphs was later published as a novel in 1899 under the title A Daughter of the Vine. Despite the objections of her husband and his family, Atherton continued to write by herself, primarily at night. Her output included another novel as well as stories.

Atherton was freed from her life at Fair Oaks when her husband died in 1887 while sailing on a Chilean warship. He died of a kidney hemorrhage. After his death, Atherton left California and traveled to New York City. She then went to Europe on several occasions, traveling to England, France, and Germany. Atherton moved back to California in 1890.
Became Prolific Author

Atherton's widowhood allowed her time to write and do research. When she returned to California, she began doing many interviews and research on California. Many of her works from this time period feature strong heroines and are often set in her native state. They include: *What Dreams May Come* (1888), a story about reincarnation that was ignored by critics; *Hermia Suydam* (1889), which focuses on the love life of a single woman and was harshly criticized for being immoral; *Los Cerritos* (1890), her first novel set in California, specifically a French Convent; *The Doomswoman* (1892), set in California in the Spanish period, this novel explores the conflict between Mexican and American cultures in a tragic love story; and *Before Gringo Came* (1894), about Old California and the missions.

Writing novels was not Atherton's only profession. She also wrote a weekly column for the *San Francisco Examiner* called "A Woman in Her Variety." There, she found a mentor in American author Ambrose Bierce, who praised *The Doomswoman*. When Atherton went east again to New York City in 1892, she also did some journalism work to make money.

Journalism was never Atherton's primary focus. She continued to write novels. It was in this time period that she wrote *Patience Sparhawk and Her Times*. But because Atherton could not secure a publisher, she moved to England in 1895. During her four years in that country, she published six novels.

Published *Patience Sparhawk*

*Patience Sparhawk* was published in London in 1897 and proved to be Atherton's first novel of significance. She was appreciated first as an author in Europe, where this book was popular. This was the first novel that introduced what became known as the new Western-American woman—a character featured in three other novels by Atherton. The story focuses on a woman who lived in the West in the 1890s who tried to succeed and overcome her low birth to be self-reliant and passionate. The novel offers Atherton's take on the argument about how much heredity versus environment affects a person.

Atherton also received critical acclaim for *The Californians* (1898), another novel that explores the themes of man versus woman and of nature. It also reflects conflicts with which Atherton was very familiar. In it, a woman tries to fight an oppressive Spanish society, *American Wives and English Husbands* (1898)—which was later republished as *Transplanted* in 1919—also features an independent woman, an American from California who marries an English gentleman. The novel explores the tensions in their marriage and different civilizations. This novel also attracted attention and received critical praise.

Returned to the United States

In 1899, Atherton returned to the United States and immediately began working on a novel about politics in the United States. She did research in Washington, D.C., observing the political process and meeting President William McKinley. The novel was published in 1900 as *Senator North*, and the main character was based on Eugene North, and the main character was based on Eugene Hall of Maine. The novel reflects the political tensions of the time.

Atherton became as famous in the United States as she was in Europe with the 1902 publication of her fictionalized biography of Alexander Hamilton, *The Conqueror*. This was one of the first biographical novels. To write it, Atherton did much research, reading hundreds of books and traveling to the British West Indies where Hamilton was born. Though the book received mixed reviews, it sold a million copies.

Between 1903 and 1910, Atherton lived in San Francisco and Munich, Germany. She lost much in terms of papers in the San Francisco earthquake and fire in 1906. Strong women still figured prominently in her books. In *Ancestors* (1907), she wrote about a woman who is financially independent and who has a friendship with a rich British aristocrat, bringing them together with values and friendship instead of expected love. Atherton believed that *Tower of Ivory* (1910), a study of genius set in Munich, was her best novel, though most critics disagreed.

Atherton wrote a number of works about women's rights and the early feminist movement. They include *Julia France and Her Times* (1912), which was originally a play. In the novel, the title character, France, is a suffrage campaigner in England. Atherton took on other social issues. In 1914, she published *Perch of the Devil*, which is set in Butte, Montana, during the War of the Copper Kings.

Covered World War I

During World War I, Atherton returned to Europe to cover the conflict for the *New York Times*. While there, she also did charity work related to the war. Two novels came out of the experience: *The Living Present* (1917) and *The White Morning* (1918). In *The White Morning*, she explores the idea of German women revolting against Kaiser Wilhelm.

By the early 1920s, Atherton was in her sixties and underwent a treatment to rejuvenate older women by using radioactive x-rays to stimulate their ovaries and other sex glands. She used the experience as the basis for her bestselling novel *Black Oxen* (1923), which relates the story of the doctor who did these treatments, Dr. Eugen Steinach. *Black Oxen* also concerns romantic elements and was later adapted for film.

By this point in her life, Atherton primarily lived in San Francisco. Though she lived in California, she wrote a number of works about ancient Greece. In 1927, she published the fictionalized biography of Pericles and Aspasia entitled *The Immortal Marriage*. Like her other historical works, it contains many authentic details. Atherton also wrote *The Jealous Gods* (1928) about the Athenian general Alcibiades and *Dido, Queen of Hearts* (1929), about Dido, the woman reputed to have founded Carthage.

Two of Atherton’s later novels return to her early themes. In *The House of Lee* (1940), she wrote about California and three generations of aristocratic women who...
face changes in money and social standing. *The Horn of Life* (1942) focuses on self-reliant women who marry for common interests and the character of the man, instead of money.

Atherton also reflected on herself later in her career. In 1932, she published an autobiography, *Adventures of a Novelist*. While she omitted some facts about her life, she also recounted her way of being different. While *My San Francisco: A Wayward Biography* (1946) was mostly about the city in which she was born, it also had many autobiographical elements.

Over the course of her writing career, Atherton published more than 56 books, mostly novels. Her best years were in the 1890s and early 1900s when she was regarded as one of the best women authors in the United States. Generally though, critics had a mixed view of Atherton. Many believed that she wrote too much without care, while others praised her use of realism, women characters as heroines, and what was going on in California in her time period.

One observer, Grant Overton, wrote in *The Women Who Make Our Novels* in 1928, “Almost without exception her fiction has been made the vehicle for ideas—not single, dominating ideas but casual, highly incisive judgments on everything under the sun. She lards her narratives with opinions, but it is not thereby rendered more tender. . . . Aristocratic in all her attitudes, she prefers frankness and is not afraid of coarseness.”

Atherton was still writing near her death. She had a stroke about a month before she died on June 14, 1948, in San Francisco. As Brian St. Pierre wrote in the *San Francisco Chronicle*, “Though poorly educated and ill-prepared for much of a life, Atherton made herself, by sheer force of will and hard work, into a force to be reckoned with. Luck had nothing to do with her success . . . .”

**Books**


**Periodicals**


---

**Mary Hunter Austin**

American author Mary Hunter Austin (1868–1934) primarily wrote fiction and essays, with many of her works focusing on Native American culture. The novel *The Land of Little Rain* (1903) was her best known work.

**Early Traumas and Inspiration**

Austin was born on September 9, 1868, in Carlinville, Illinois, the fourth of six children born to George and Susannah (Graham) Hunter. George Hunter was a lawyer who emigrated from Yorkshire, England, in 1851. Austin’s mother was of Scotch-Irish and French descent.

A veteran of the Civil War who had reached the rank of captain, George Hunter was ill for much of his daughter’s young life with malaria that he had contracted in the conflict. He died when she was ten years old. A short time after, Austin’s most supportive and understanding sister, Jennie, died of diphtheria. These deaths greatly affected Austin’s life. Her mother ignored her, did not understand her, and was far more concerned with her older brother. Thus, from an early age, Austin looked to herself for support.
At the age of five, she had a spiritual experience that led to her formulating her own private religion. She also communicated with an inner, deeper personality that she called the "Inknower," "Genius," or "I-Mary." Austin later said that she drew from this part of herself when she wrote. She was often in a trance when she wrote.

From an early age, Austin had wanted to be a writer, but writing became her life after her father and sister died. She began writing poems at ten, immersed herself in academics and was a good student.

In 1884, Austin entered Blackburn College in Carlinville to study art and later changed her major to science. She also spent some time at the State Normal School in Bloomington, Illinois, in 1885. In 1888, she graduated from Blackburn College with a degree in science.

After Austin graduated, she moved to California with her mother and brother Jim. The family settled on a desert homestead near the San Joaquin Valley. Austin grew to love the desert. She taught school in Mountain View, California, but would spend much time alone in the desert at night. She was also friendly with those who were not part of white society, such as Native Americans and Chinese laborers in the area.

Difficult Family Life

In May 1891, Austin married Stafford Wallace Austin, who was a teacher and grape grower. He later became the manager of an irrigation project that failed, causing the couple many hardships. Adding to their challenges was that their daughter, Ruth, was born with mental disabilities.

Because of her husband's failures, including his inability to keep another job as a superintendent of schools, Austin had to return to teaching, and soon she also began to look to writing for income. The family moved between desert towns in California. Austin taught at the Methodist Academy in Bishop from 1895 to 1897, the Lone Pine School in 1897, and the Normal School in Los Angeles in 1899. Eventually, Austin put her daughter in an institution because she could not care for her.

Austin often wrote stories and poems for the amusement of her students. In 1892, she sold her first short story and soon began contributing to the magazine Overland Monthly. Many of her early works were about Native Americans and the desert. She had been taking notes and writing sketches since moving to the desert.

The Land of Little Rain

In 1903, Austin published her first book, The Land of Little Rain, which became a classic and her best known work. It consisted of 14 sketches that focused on the Mojave Desert and the Native Americans who lived there. Many essays concerned the battle between life and death. The book gave her instant fame.

While Austin was becoming a successful writer, her marriage failed. Her husband was not compassionate and could not support her intellectually, physically, or financially. She left her husband in 1903 or 1905 and divorced him in 1914.

During this period she was described by a visitor quoted by Grant Overton in The Women Who Make Our Novels: "Mrs. Austin has an Indian-like solemnity, a pervading shyness. All that she says has a certain value. She speaks seldom. Her utterance is rather slow and her remarks are usually grave. The desert has cloistered her."

Beginning in 1904, Austin lived in Carmel, California, where she built a home. At different times, Austin also lived in an artist colony there, as well as in Los Angeles and Greenwich Village in New York City. She associated with bohemian authors such as Jack London.

Austin began writing about one book a year. She published The Basket Woman (1904) about Paiute Indian legends. In 1905, Isidro, a romantic novel about missions in California, went to press. One of her more successful books was The Flock (1906). This follow-up to The Land of Little Rain focused on sheep herding and sheep raising in the desert Southwest. An underlying theme of the book was how people abused the land.

Austin's failed marriage also served as source material. In 1908, she published the novel Santa Lucía, a book about women and marriage. In this novel, she argued against the conventions of the day, in particular the taboo against wives working outside the home and the mandate that husbands should take charge of family finances even if they were not equipped to do so.

Traveled to Italy for Cure

In 1910, Austin traveled to Italy because she was told by a doctor that she was dying of breast cancer. There, she studied prayer techniques under the tutelage of the Roman Catholic church. Austin believed that her prayers cured her cancer.

Austin resumed writing, and two works were directly influenced by her experience in Italy. They were Christ in Italy: Being the Adventures of a Maverick among Masterpieces (1912) and The Man Jesus: Being a Brief Account of the Life and Teachings of the Prophet of Nazareth (1915).

On her way back to the United States, Austin stopped in London. There she learned that she had a wide audience that included such authors as W.B. Yeats, George Bernard Shaw, and H.G. Wells.

When Austin returned to the United States, she first went to New York, where her drama The Arrow Maker was being prepared for staging. This play was produced in the spring of 1911. It was about an ambitious Paiute medicine woman. Austin wrote another play, Fire, also about Native Americans, which was produced in Carmel in 1912.

Published Woman of Genius

From 1912 to 1924, Austin split her time between New York and California, though she lived primarily in New York City. In 1912, she published what many believed was her best novel, A Woman of Genius. This work, which featured some autobiographical elements, was about women having to choose between marriage and career. As in many of her books about women, Austin also explored how and why women were subjugated by men. This early feminist novel
led to Austin later being embraced by the women’s movement of the 1970s.

Austin continued to address social issues, though in a heavy-handed manner, with *The Ford* (1917) and No. 26 *Jayne Street* (1920). The latter explored the idea of an equal marriage. Many critics preferred her books about Native Americans.

**Active in New Mexico**

After recovering from a nervous breakdown, Austin in 1924 moved to New Mexico, where she built an adobe which she named La Casa Querida. That same year, she published *The Land of Journeys’ Ending*, a collection of sketches about New Mexico and Arizona. Austin became an activist while living in Santa Fe and Taos, New Mexico. She was involved in conserving the arts and handicrafts of Native Americans. In 1927, she was a representative for New Mexico at the Seven States Conference concerning the proposed Boulder Dam and related water diversion problems.

Late in her career, Austin published a number of different kinds of works. In 1928, she published her only collection of poetry, targeted at children, entitled *The Children Sing in the Far West*. Four years later, she published her autobiography, *Earth Horizon*. Writing in the third person, Austin covered the whole of her life and philosophies, including her experiences with God, her love of the Southwest, her difficult family life, and feminism. In 1934, she published *One-Smoke Stories*, a collection of short stories and sketches about Native American legends and folk tales, many with Southwestern themes.

**Lasting Impact**

In all, Austin published 32 books and over 250 articles. Most were about Native Americans and their heritage and nature but others dealt with such topics as socialism, feminism, and issues of the day. Austin was also a lecturer and public speaker. She spoke in a number of places about Native Americans, including her ideas about the sources of their poetic rhythms. She was also a social activist who was part of the suffrage and birth control movements and a socialist sympathizer.

While beginning a new novel, Austin suffered a heart attack and died in her sleep on August 13, 1934, in Santa Fe. She was cremated and her ashes set in a cave in the mountains.

Austin did not live the typical life of a woman of her era and that was reflected in her writing. Stacy Alaimo wrote in *Studies in American Fiction*: “Austin sought in nature a place that was not domesticated and that did not domesticate women. . . . No utilitarian ground, Austin’s land pulsates spiritually, aesthetically, and erotically. Sometimes Austin celebrates the borderland as a place to think beyond the confines of gender; sometimes she couples women and nature through mutual strength and resistance to male domination. Often, by picturing the land as a mistress, Austin creates a feminine land that counters domestic ideology and conjoins women and nature not as victims but as powerful allies.”

**Book**


**Periodicals**


Henk Badings

A prolific composer of more than 600 works, Henk Badings (1907–1987) is one of the best known figures in twentieth-century Dutch music. A favorite of critics and avant garde theorists, Badings wrote many works in the traditional diatonic scale but is most famous for his electronic and microtonal music. The Russian composer, conductor, and pianist Nicolas Slominsky described Badings’s musical style in David Ewen’s book *Composers Since 1900: A Biographical and Critical Guide* as “romantic modernism . . . in his melodic material he often uses a scale of alternating whole tones and semitones.”

Hendrik Herman Badings was born on January 17, 1907, in Bandung, Java, Indonesia, to Dutch parents. His mother and father died when he was eight years old, and he was sent back to the Netherlands to live with a guardian. Although he studied violin and exhibited obvious talent, he was forbidden to pursue a career in music. Instead, Badings studied geology and mining technology at the Technical University of Delft. He graduated with honors in 1931 and began to work as a lecturer, assistant, and researcher in the school’s paleontology and historic geology department.

**Composed First Symphony**

Badings’s interest in music had never abated, however, and he had continued to study independently. Shifting his focus from performance to composition, he wrote his first piece, a violin concerto, in 1928. During his later years at Delft, he studied briefly with the famous Dutch performer, critic, and composer Willem Pijper. Although their musical styles were completely different, Pijper influenced his young pupil sufficiently to write his First Symphony in 1930. The composition was premiered by the Concertgebouw Orchestra in Amsterdam while Badings was still a university student.

The work generated a great deal of public interest, especially since the composer was a virtual unknown. His Second Symphony, which followed two years later, was equally well received. His Third Symphony, composed in 1934, is one of his best known orchestral works and one that helped establish his international reputation as a composer. In that same year Badings took teaching posts at both the Rotterdam Music Conservatory and the Amsterdam Music Lyceum. He became a co-director of the Amsterdam school in 1937, when he was given the job of overhauling the school’s teaching methods.

In the 1930s, while Badings was composing his first symphonies, he also produced smaller works, such as the *Largo en Allegro* in 1935 and the Symphonic Variations a year later. During this period his music was “predominantly elegiac, with generally dark orchestral colours and thick harmonies,” according to Stanley Sadie in *The New Grove Dictionary of Music and Musicians*. David Ewen remarked on Badings’s “serious, tragic overtones” during this period of composition. Even his famous Third Symphony is characterized by music Ewen calls “tragic and sparse . . . [that] seems to herald the coming war in a similar fashion to Vaughan Williams’s Symphony no. 4 of the same year.”

Beginning in 1941 the mood of his music began to lift, and he produced lighter, more playful pieces that are exemplified by his 1941 ballet *Orpheus en Euridike* and the
comic opera *Liefde's list* (Love's intrigues) in 1944. He composed smaller works during this period as well, including the well-known String Quartet no. 3.

**Accused of Nazi Collaboration**

During the German occupation of the Netherlands, Badings was installed as head of the State Music Conservatory in the Hague. Being given such a prominent position earned him much enmity, however, and many viewed his acceptance of the job as proof of his Nazi sympathies. According to Mark Morris in the *Guide to 20th-Century Composers*, the Nazis themselves lauded him as “the very model of a Nationalist Socialist artist.” In 1946 Badings was convicted of collaboration and banned from all professional associations and activities for two years. David Even in *Composers Since 1900* says he was “completely exonerated” of these charges in 1947. Less enthusiastic, *Baker’s Biographical Dictionary of Musicians* states cryptically instead that he “was permitted to resume his career.” Whether or not he was wrongly accused, the stigma of whispered Nazi collaboration continued to hang over him and protests accompanied the premieres of his works for many years afterward.

**Experimented with Alternative Tonalties**

From the earliest days of his career Badings was fascinated with alternative tonalities, exploring music based on hexatonic (six-note) and octatonic (eight-note) scales. (Western music is based on the diatonic scale, with seven notes per scale in a familiar series of whole and half steps.) Despite these avant-garde leanings, much of his work is surprisingly melodic and traditional, marked by counterpoint and conventional thematic structure.

Despite the social and political turmoil of the 1940s, Badings produced some of his most important works during this decade. His third and fourth violin concerti debuted in 1944 and 1946, respectively; his Fourth Symphony premiered in Rotterdam in 1947. His Fifth Symphony, written in 1948 to commemorate the 60th anniversary of the Concertgebouw Orchestra, demonstrates his increasing interest in polytonal (nontraditional) compositions. Whether or not he was wrongly accused, the stigma of whispered Nazi collaboration continued to hang over him and protests accompanied the premieres of his works for many years afterward.

**Composed Electronic Music**

Bading’s interest in polytonal (nontraditional) composition led him to explore electronic music beginning in the early 1950s, although he continued to write more conventional orchestral pieces as well. His radio opera *Orestes*, first broadcast in 1954, combines musique concrète (the earliest type of electronic music, which uses recorded sounds that are altered and distorted) and acoustic instruments. The opera won the Prix Italia in 1954 and was later broadcast in an English translation by the BBC. His opera *Salto mortale* (Death leap), which won the Salzburg Award in the International Competition of Television Societies in 1959, was the first to use an entirely electronic score. Even calls Martin Korda, *D.P. Badings’s 1960 opera, his “most successful use of electronic sounds . . . [Set in a] displaced persons’ camp . . . Badings uses electronics to suggest the nightmarish quality of a hallucination. Loudspeakers throughout the auditorium helped make the audience acutely conscious of the experience of terrifying unreality.”

In 1951 Badings developed and expanded his theories in *Tonaliteitsproblemen in de nieuwe muziek* (Tonality problems in new music), a paper published by the Flemish Academy of Sciences. He began to compose his most ambitious pieces yet, using a 31-tone octave first proposed by the seventeenth-century Dutch scientist Christian Huygens. In this musical system the whole tones are divided into fifths, each of which is called a dièse. Several of these microtonal pieces were composed for a unique 31-tone organ that had been designed by the Dutch physicist Adriaan Fokker; *Reeks van kleine klankstukken in selectieve toonsystemen* (Series of small sound pieces in selected tone systems for 31-tone organ) and *Suite van kleine klankstukken* (Suite of small sound pieces) were both composed in 1954.

Working with the Philips Company in Eindhoven, Badings helped establish an electronic music studio in 1956. The studio became part of the University of Utrecht in 1961, with Badings retained as its director. This was his first academic foothold since 1946, and he taught acoustics and information theory at the university for 16 years. In that same year he began a 10-year stint as a professor of composition at the Staatliche Hochschule für Musik in Stuttgart, Germany. His international work as a visiting professor took him to the University of Adelaide, Australia; Point Park College, Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania; and South Africa.

In 1959 Badings began to use computers to both compose and analyze music. His *Toccata 1* and *Toccata 2*, for example, were based on a series of electronically generated tones. By using computers to study the mathematical relationships between notes and applying it to Haydn’s works, he also developed a method of dating musical compositions based on the probabilities inherent in their tonalities and harmonies.

**Won Prizes and Critical Acclaim**

Badings’s music was almost always commissioned and was usually a critical success as well. In addition to the Prix Italia and Salzburg Awards, he won a string of honors that began with the Sienese Accademia Chigiana Prize for his Piano Quintet in 1952; the Paganini Prize, awarded for two violin sonatas in 1953; and his Double Piano Concerto, which won the Marzotto Prize in 1954. He earned a second Prix Italia in 1971 for the oratorio *Ballade van die bloed-dorstige Jagger* (Ballad of the bloodthirsty hunter); the Sweelinck Prize, awarded by the Dutch government, for lifetime achievement in 1972; a medal of arts, sciences, and letters from the Académie Française in 1981; and a posthumous award for the best European choral composition in 1988.

Badings lived in Maarheeze, the Netherlands, for the last 15 years of his life. He died there on June 26, 1987.
Mildred Bailey

One of the first female singers to make a name for herself in the American pantheon of jazz, Mildred Bailey (1907–1951) managed to capture the subtleties of the era’s African American blues and ragtime music. Bailey early on developed her own unique way to underline the meaning of the words she sang. She performed with some of the finest musicians of the swing era—including Benny Goodman, Paul Whiteman, Coleman Hawkins, and Red Norvo, her husband for most of the 1930s. Plagued by health problems for much of her life, she died when she was only 44 years old in 1951.

Many jazz lovers had a hard time reconciling Bailey’s high, dulcet tones with her rather corpulent body. During the hey-days of the Swing Era, she and Norvo, her husband at the time, were dubbed “Mr. and Mrs. Swing.” Influenced by the stylings of Ethel Waters, Connie Boswell, and Bessie Smith, she developed a uniquely soft yet swinging delivery that delighted nightclub audiences wherever she appeared throughout the United States. Although she is perhaps best remembered for her work in jazz, Bailey enjoyed a good deal of success in popular music as well. Although she appeared with some of the most successful bands of the Swing Era, she ended her career as a solo performer, drawing thousands of appreciative fans to her appearances at some of New York City’s most popular jazz clubs.

Began Performing at an Early Age

Bailey was born Mildred Rinker on February 27, 1907, in Tekoa, a small town in eastern Washington state, close to the border with Idaho. While she was still quite young, Bailey moved with her mother and three brothers to nearby Spokane. Her mother, who was part Native American, schooled Bailey and her brothers in Native American traditions, and the family often visited relatives on the Coeur d’Alene Indian Reservation in nearby Idaho. Bailey learned music from her mother and began performing at an early age, playing the piano and singing in movie theaters in the early 1920s. Her interest in jazz was shared by older brother Al and a neighborhood friend, Harry Lillis (Bing) Crosby. In writing the liner notes for one of her early albums, Crosby recalled, as quoted in Dictionary of American Biography: “Mildred Bailey gave me my start. She took off Hollywood for newer and broader fields, and a year or so later, Al and I followed her there. She introduced us to Marco [Wolff], at that time a very big theatrical producer, and we were on our way—with a lot of her material, I might add. She was mucha mujer, with a heart as big as Yankee Stadium.”

By the mid-1920s, Bailey, who had married and divorced at an early age, retaining nothing of her first husband but his last name, was headlining at a club in Hollywood, performing a mixture of pop, vaudeville standards, and
early jazz tunes. In quick succession she worked as a “song demonstrator,” toured with the dance revue of Fanchon and Marco Wolf, and was a solo vocalist on Los Angeles radio station KMTR. Bailey’s first big break came when she sent a demo record to popular bandleader Paul Whiteman. The bandleader had already hired Crosby and Bailey’s older brother, Al Rinker, to appear with his band as the “Rhythm Boys.” Impressed with Bailey’s vocal stylings, Whiteman hired her to sing with his band, making her one of the first female singers to be featured with a major dance orchestra. In 1932 Bailey gained added fame when she recorded Hoagy Carmichael’s “Rockin’ Chair,” written especially for her. It became Bailey’s signature song and earned her the moniker “The Rockin’ Chair Lady.”

Bailey developed a relationship with jazz xylophonist Red Norvo (Kenneth Norville) not long after he joined the Whiteman band in 1931. Shortly thereafter the couple was married. Not long after they were wed, Norvo left Whiteman to start his own band and Bailey went off on her own to build a career for herself as a radio vocalist. Norvo’s band soon ran into trouble and appeared likely to break up. Bailey offered to join the group as vocalist in an effort to prevent disbandment. Some of the finest work of Bailey’s career came from her collaboration with Norvo. Working together, the couple came to be known as “Mr. and Mrs. Rhythm.” One of the most memorable of their collaborations was on the album Smoke Dreams.

In a review of Smoke Dreams (reissued by Definitive Records in 1999) that appears on the Songbirds web site, Jeff Austin wrote: “The Red Norvo Orchestra with Mildred Bailey had an unmistakable sound, with Bailey’s feather-light vocals paralleled by the delicacy and grace of Norvo’s xylophone, all couched in light, ever-swinging arrangements by the likes of Eddie Sauter. The title track, ‘Smoke Dreams,’ epitomizes what made Bailey/Norvo different than anyone else. Legend very credibly has it that, subsequent to Sauter’s being the object of a Bailey rage, he fashioned for her an arrangement that would be any other singer’s worst nightmare, riddled with ear-bending dissonance that might have permanently traumatized most other lady band singers. Undaunted, Bailey sails serenely through the din—and one is left wondering what other band (save, perhaps, for Stan Kenton ten years later) might have attempted a chart so avant-garde.”

**Bailey and Norvo Divorced**

Other songs closely identified with Bailey during her years with Norvo’s band include “I’ve Got My Love to Keep Me Warm” and “Weekend of a Private Secretary.” Although they remained close friends, Bailey and Norvo realized by the end of the 1930s that their marriage was no longer working and divorcing. They continued to work together from time to time, however. About 1940, economic pressures forced Norvo to reduce the size of his group, freeing Bailey to once again pursue her solo career. Through the first half of the 1940s she was backed on her recordings by some of the era’s finest musicians, including Johnny Hodges, Mary Lou Williams, Teddy Wilson, Roy Eldridge, Coleman Hawkins, Bunny Berigan, Artie Shaw, Benny Goodman, and Tommy and Jimmy Dorsey. Having performed with scores of African American musicians throughout her career, Bailey took an extremely enlightened view of race relations and at one point in her career had sung at a benefit in Harlem’s Savoy Ballroom to aid the Scottsboro Boys.

Famed record producer John Hammond worked with Bailey on a number of her recordings in the late 1930s and early 1940s. In his liner notes for the three-LP retrospective album, Mildred Bailey: Her Greatest Performances (1962), which are discussed on the Songbirds Web site, Hammond asserted: “Mildred was resentful that she was not a commercial success, and there was always a battle between us over the kind of accompaniment she should have on records.”

Taking sharp issue with Hammond’s observations is reviewer Austin. In his review of Bailey’s All of Me (reissued by Definitive in 1999), Austin wrote: “This idea has been recycled time and again in biographical material about Bailey. Not only is it probably untrue, it casts her in a slightly pathetic light. Hammond’s remark is particularly strange when one considers that commercial success in terms of hit records had infinitely less to do with accompaniment than with material. Any singer wanting to hit it big on jukeboxes would not have recorded such a wealth of unusual songs by Willard Robison. . . . More importantly, documentary evidence exists in interviews about Bailey with Bing Crosby, Johnny Mercer (both of whom knew a great deal about commercialism), and her brother Al, that Bailey resolutely wouldn’t compromise on material, and simply wasn’t interested in doing what it took to make herself a commercial entity. According to Crosby, she frankly didn’t want to work all that hard.”

**Superstardom Eluded**

Whatever the reasons may have been, superstardom eluded Bailey. The singer blamed her plumpness for her lack of commercial success, while others suggested that it was really Bailey’s temper and sharp tongue that were her undoing. There’s plenty of evidence that Bailey felt especially bitter towards better-looking female vocalists, many of whom she felt lacked her talent. Throughout her life, Bailey blamed her obesity on a glandular condition, although many of her friends attributed it instead to her great love of food.

Bailey continued to perform and record until the mid-1940s. She appeared on Benny Goodman’s Camel Caravan radio program and was given her own radio program for a brief period in the mid-1940s. However, mounting health problems forced her to step away from her career by mid-decade. A long-time diabetic, Bailey also suffered from a heart condition and hardening of the arteries. With her two pet dachshunds, she retired to a farm in upstate New York, returning to the New York City club circuit now and again for a solo engagement. She was a particular favorite at the Café Society. Bailey got some financial help from composer Jimmy Van Heusen, who arranged to split her medical bills with Frank Sinatra and longtime friend Bing Crosby. Finally, by the early 1950s, Bailey’s health had deteriorated to such an extent that she was forced to give up performing alto-
together. On December 12, 1951, Bailey died penniless at Poughkeepsie Hospital in Poughkeepsie, New York.

**Enjoyed Resurgence in Popularity**

A unique talent in almost every respect, Bailey will long be remembered as one of the great jazz stylists of her time. Although her singing—swinging, straightforward, and delivered with superb diction—was very much of her time, it remains fresh and sparkling. Perhaps Bailey’s career was best summed up by jazz musician Loren Schoenberg in his review of The Complete Columbia Recordings of Mildred Bailey (released by Mosaic on CD in 2002) for National Public Radio’s (NPR’s) Jazz Reviews. Schoenberg wrote: “Mildred Bailey was one of the greatest jazz singers in the Swing Era. Yet today her name is unknown, largely because the great majority of recordings have been out of print for decades. Like Louis Armstrong, Mildred Bailey could transform the most hackneyed Tin Pan Alley trite into something beautiful and, at times, profound.” Of Bailey’s rendition of the 1938 tune, “I Can’t Face the Music,” Schoenberg wrote that “the phrasing is worthy of Maria Callas or of Armstrong. However, Bailey had something that Armstrong never had—a genius for an arranger. Eddie Sauter was one of the most original arranger/composers to emerge . . . in the 1930s.”

Late in the 20th century and in the early years of the new millennium, Bailey’s work enjoyed a resurgence in popularity as a number of her recordings of the 1930s and 1940s were reissued on compact disc. She received another posthumous honor in September 1994 when the U.S. Postal Service issued a 29-cent stamp bearing her image as part of the Pop, Jazz, and Blues Legends series. Bailey’s vocal style has often been likened to that of jazz great Billie Holiday, whom Bailey, husband Red Norvo, and record producer John Hammond discovered singing in a small club in New York City. Bailey’s influence is also seen in the work of Bing Crosby and Tony Bennett. Sadly, Bailey’s low self-esteem, body image problems, and failing health prematurely crippled her career and kept her from developing into the superstar she so richly deserved to be. 

**Books**


**Online**


**Amy Beach**

The best known woman composer of her time period and the first in the United States, Amy Beach (1867–1944) did not just create small pieces, but large orchestral works, and other complex compositions were part of her repertoire. She was the first American woman to write a symphony, and this was especially important because she received all her training in the United States.

Born Amy Marcy Cheney on September 5, 1867, in Henniker, New Hampshire, Beach was the only child of Charles Abbor Cheney and Clara Imogene (Marcy) Cheney. Her father was a mathematician and businessman who worked in paper manufacturing business that his father owned, who later had his own paper importing business. Her mother was a musician, a singer, and pianist.

Beach exhibited talent from an early age. She began singing tunes on pitch and with accuracy when she was a year old and she had also taught herself to read by the time she was three. The Cheney family moved to the Boston, Massachusetts, area in 1871, and it was at this time that Beach began composing her own melodies, mainly waltzes.

**Began Piano Lessons**

When Beach was six years old, she started taking formal piano lessons with her mother as her first teacher. Within a year, Beach was playing Ludwig van Beethoven and Frederic Chopin; she gave her first recital by the time she was seven. Beach went on to have a number of good teachers as a young piano student. They included Carl Baermann (who was a student of Franz Liszt) and Ernst Perabo. Beach’s innate sense of harmony and form helped her to achieve in her studies. Although her parents were advised that she would benefit from studying at a European conservatory—rather than in the United States—they chose to keep her home.

As with her musical training, Beach’s academic education was also home-centered. Her mother taught her at home for six years. She then attended a private school run by W. L. Whittemore. Beach particularly enjoyed natural science and languages like French and German. While she was encouraged academically, it was within the limits of what was expected of young women in this time period.

Though Beach became known as a composer, she only took one class in music theory. When she was 15 years old, she took a harmony course taught by Junius Welch Hill. Also in this time period, she wrote her first published piece, a song to the poem of Henry Wadsworth Longfellow “The Rainy Day.”

**Gave First Recitals**

In October 1883, Beach gave her first significant public recital at the Boston Music Hall. For the event, she played Ignaz Moschelese’s *G Minor Concerto* with the orchestra.
and as a soloist. She also performed Chopin’s *Rondo in E-flat*. Between 1883 and 1885, Beach gave several more recitals in Boston.

One of Beach’s last public recitals was with the Boston Symphony Orchestra; she played Chopin’s *F Minor Concerto*. In addition to her recitals, she appeared as a soloist with the Theodore Thomas Orchestra and the Boston Symphony Orchestra. For all her public appearances, Beach generally received many positive reviews.

**Married Dr. Beach**

On December 2, 1885, Beach was married to Dr. Henry Beach, who was 24 years her elder and a widower. Dr. Beach was a surgeon and professor at Harvard. He had followed her career from the time she was a child in part because he was also a musician, albeit on an amateur level.

After the marriage, Beach did not perform in public except for charity functions. Any time she performed, her fees were donated to charity. She did this at the request of her husband, who wanted her to be a wife and not a concert pianist. Upon her marriage, Beach was known publicly as Mrs. H. H. A. Beach.

**Focused on Composing**

Dr. Beach did not want his wife to perform, but he did encourage her musical career. It was at his suggestion that she began composing. He did not encourage her to formally study the subject of composition believing that it might inhibit her originality. It was because of these restrictions that Beach became a virtually self-taught composer.

To begin her training, Beach studied music theory, counterpoint, musical form, and instrumentation on her own. She studied Bach’s fugues by writing out her version of one of his works then comparing it to the original. Beach taught herself orchestration by writing notations of themes she heard at concerts, looking at the original score, and then putting the versions side by side.

Beach’s first works were poems that she liked, set to her original music. While she would continue to do these kinds of pieces throughout her career, Beach would do much larger and more complex pieces including major orchestral works, as well as choral works, chamber works, church music, and cantatas.

**First Major Work Performed**

In 1892, after three years of labor, Beach’s first major work was performed, *Mass in E-flat major*, numbered Opus 5. It was for chorus, vocal quartet, soloists, orchestra, and organ. The mass was performed by the Handel and Haydn Society with the Boston Symphony Orchestra. This marked the first time a composition written by a woman was performed by these groups. It was received positively.

That same year, Beach had her second work performed, an aria entitled *Eilende Wolken*, for contralto and orchestra, based on Friedrich von Schiller’s *Mary Stuart*. Beach was asked to write this for Mrs. Carl Alves, who had been the alto soloist for the premiere of *Mass in E-flat major*. The first performance of *Eilende Wolken* was given by the Symphony Society of New York. Again, this was the first work arranged by a woman to be performed by this group.

Women remained the focus of Beach’s next major work. She was commissioned to write a piece for the dedication for the Women’s Building at the World’s Columbia Exposition in Chicago. *Festival Jubilate* (Opus 17) was written for chorus and orchestra and premiered in 1893.

**Wrote First Symphony**

In 1896, Beach wrote the *Gaelic Symphony* (also known as the *Symphony in E-minor*), which was the first symphony ever written by an American woman and the first symphony written by a woman and performed by an American orchestra. It was based on Gaelic themes. After its premiere at the Boston Symphony, it was performed throughout the United States. An article by David Wright in the *New York Times* quoted Boston composer George Whitefield Chadwick as writing that the symphony was: “full of fine things, melodically, harmonically, orchestrally, and mighty well built besides.”

Beach wrote a number of other significant works in the late 1890s and first decade of the 1900s. In 1897, the *Sonata in A-minor* for violin and piano premiered. Beach herself played in the first performance with Franz Kneisel. At the 1900 premier of the *Piano Concerto in C-sharp minor* (opus 454), Beach also performed, this time with the Boston Symphony. Beach received worldwide fame with her 1899 composition to the Robert Browning poem “The Year’s at
the Spring” (opus 44, number 1). Another frequently performed work was her Quintet for Pianoforte and Strings (opus 67), an instrumental piece.

While Beach was becoming an established and respected composer, she was also concerned with struggling musicians. Before her husband’s death, she had events in her home every Wednesday in which she encouraged and introduced young musicians to the elite of Boston’s society: social, musical, and artistic.

Death of Husband Changed Career

After Dr. Beach’s death in 1910, Beach spent a few years in Europe, from 1911 to 1914. There, she did much performing and composing, both to acclaim. Beach’s goal in travelling to Europe was to become an established solo performer as well as composer. She found much praise, especially in Germany. In Leipzig and Berlin, her Gaelic Symphony was performed to much commendation.

When World War I broke out, Beach was forced to return to the United States in 1914. The year after she returned, she moved to New York City, which remained her home base for the rest of her life. After her return, she toured as a pianist and continued composing.

Beach’s years played out with her touring in the winter and practicing and composing in the summer. She spent her summers at her cottage in Cape Cod, Massachusetts, until 1921, when she began spending her summers as a fellow in the MacDowell Colony in Peterborough, New Hampshire. Many of her compositions in this time period were played at New York’s St. Bartholomew’s Episcopal Church, where she was essentially the composer in residence.

Beach still composed other types of works, however. In 1916, she wrote a work commissioned by the Chamber Music Society of San Francisco. This was called Theme and Variations for Flute and String Quartet (opus 80). In 1932, she wrote her first opera, Cabildo, a chamber opera in one act; Nan Bagby Stephens wrote the opera’s libretto, and it premiered in February 1945 in Athens, Georgia. In 1938, she wrote Piano Trio (Opus 150), which was a arrangement for piano, violin, and piano.

All but three of Beach’s numbered works were published—an amazing accomplishment for a composer of American origin. She composed approximately 300 total works, including 128 songs for poems. Many of her songs for poems were popular, especially the three by Browning which were set to music, “Ecstasy,” “Ah, Love, but a Day,” and “The Year’s at the Spring.” Stylistically, she was influenced by romanticism, especially early in her career, and such French composers as Brahms and Debussy. Beach was also among the first to be influenced by the idea of creating an American-style of music and using folk music as source material, including ideas from Native Americans, African Americans, and Alaskan Inuits.

During her lifetime, Beach received much acclaim in the United States as the country’s foremost woman composer. However, some critics thought that she was too sentimental. She was also criticized for her reliance on chromatics. Others believed she had great technical skills and was very lyrical, she was also praised for her use of altered chords and enharmonic modulations.

Beach died of a heart ailment in New York City on December 27, 1944. She was a very generous person, even in death. In her will, she donated the royalties from her work to the MacDowell Colony. Although interest in the composer faded after her death, there was a revival of interest in her work in the late 1990s as feminists realized how innovative she was. As Michael Anthony in the Star Tribune wrote, “Late in her long, productive life as a pianist and composer, Amy Beach, who died in 1944, said that being a woman hadn’t held her back as a musician.”

Books


Periodicals


Benedict XIV

Pope Benedict XIV (1675–1758) was one of the most eminent popes of his century and considered by his contemporaries one of Europe’s leading learned minds of the day. His 17-year pontificate was remarkable for several advancements in canon law, in which he was an expert, and reforms that revealed his scholarly, progressive mind. When he was still a cardinal, he wrote a treatise on parapsychological phenomena that helped establish firm guidelines for the canonization of saints.

Bolognese Heritage

Born Prospero Lorenzo Lambertini in the city of Bologna on March 31, 1675, the future Pope Benedict XIV was the son of a senator, Marcello Lambertini, in that city. The Lambertinis were an esteemed family in Bologna but, by the time of this second son’s birth, had suffered financial hardships because of flooding on their
estates. A promising student at an early age, Benedict went to Rome at the age of 13 in 1688 to study at the Clementine College, which had been established by Pope Clement VIII to educate young Italian men of a devout nature. At the age of 16 he was invited by the rector of the college to deliver a discourse, in Latin, on the Trinity. Word of his remarkable intellect reached the new pope, Innocent XII, who invited him for a private meeting and granted him a stipend that allowed him to enter the University of Rome. Beginning in 1692 Benedict studied theology, canon law, and civil law there. He earned his doctorate two years later, at the age of 19, in the faculties of theology and law.

Benedict initially held a post as an advocate in Rome’s ecclesiastical courts and became a priest at the age of 23, in 1698. The following year he became an assistant to an Auditor of the Rota, one of the secret tribunals within the church that handled serious ecclesiastical matters. In this capacity Benedict first became familiar with the intricacies of the canonization process, which at the time was a type of hearing in which a prosecutor, called the advocatus diaboli, or devil’s advocate, challenged evidence presented that the deceased holy person in question had led an exemplary life and that miracles could be attributed to his or her piety.

**Advanced through Church Ranks**

In 1702, Benedict was named to the devil’s advocate post himself and held it for more than twenty years. He became one of the ablest holders of the office, famous in Rome for the zeal, clarity, and wit that he deployed in hearings. He held other posts concurrently, including serving in the Congregation of Rites and as a consultant on canon law. In 1724, Pope Benedict XIII made him archbishop of Theodosia “in partibus,” a term denoting that the city had been conquered by Muslims and its Christian hierarchy ousted, but a titular head remained. He was made a cardinal in 1728, and his characteristically wry sense of humor was evident in a letter he wrote to a friend, musing, “One must have a very firm belief in the Pope’s infallibility to think he has made no mistake over my promotion,” according to his biographer, Renée Haynes, in *Philosopher King: The Humanist Pope Benedict XIV.*

In 1731 Pope Clement XII named Benedict archbishop of Bologna, a cause for great celebration in his native city. He spent the next nine years there, during which time he wrote extensively when not busy with administrative matters. He finished his *De beatificatione servorum Dei et canonizatione beatorum (Of the Beatification of the Servants of God, and of the Canonization of the Blessed),* which set forth important ground rules for judging miracles. Benedict admitted that miracles attributed to the grace of God were possible, but should be distinguished from those that were the result of otherwise explainable natural phenomena. He wrote that there were three kinds of paranormal phenomena: from God, from the Devil, and neutral. He wrote extensively on the miracles and incidents of sudden healing attributed to past saints throughout the ages. In a superstitious age, he assured readers that such phenomena as comets and shooting stars are entirely natural and not evidence of the supernatural.

**Witty Remark Taken Seriously**

In February of 1740 Clement XII died, and Benedict was summoned to Rome to take part in the top-secret conclave of cardinals to elect a successor from among themselves. The conclave remained deadlocked for many months, and so one day he rose and told his colleagues, according to the *Catholic Encyclopedia,* “If you wish to elect a saint, choose Gotti; a statesman, Aldobrandini; an honest man, elect me.” An old friend of his, Cardinal Aquaviva, formally proposed Benedict’s name, and he was elected unanimously—save for his own vote. Surprised, he accepted, as he told the conclave, “for three reasons; so as not to resist God’s will; so as not to be ungrateful for your kindness; and so as to finish our assembly, which has lasted so long that I think it is giving scandal to the world at large,” according to Haynes in the *Philosopher King* biography.

Taking the name Benedict in honor of the pope who had made him archbishop, he was crowned in St. Peter’s Basilica on August 22. Upon taking office, he eschewed formality in his meetings with other prelates and politicians and did not practice nepotism, which was common in his era and beyond. Popes often gave munificent offices and appointments to nephews in their family; instead the new pope wrote to his nephew and told him not to come to Rome unless invited—and the invitation never came. He reduced the papal household expenses and ordered that granaries be built in every town and village in the Papal States to alleviate hunger among the poor. In Rome, he liked
to explore the city on foot, as he had done in Bologna, and was known to wander into some of its more dangerous neighborhoods and genially chat with denizens.

A Progressive Pontiff

In ecclesiastical matters, Benedict issued his first important decree regarding the matter of the Eastern-rite churches, which had been split from the Roman church for some centuries. His 1742 bull *Etsi pastoralis* prohibited any attempts to Latinize them. He established four academies in a bid to make the holy men of Rome more learned: one for Roman history, another sacred history and ecclesiastical learning, another on the history of the Councils, and the fourth on the liturgy. He himself lectured at one of them every Monday. In his native city, Bologna, he endowed its university and embellished its cathedral.

In a more pressing matter of the day, Benedict weighed in with a strong opinion on the matter of anti-Semitism. At the time, Jews were gaining more social and economic rights—once they were prohibited from owning land or growing their own food—and were no longer relegated to the ghettos of the medieval era. Anti-Semitism remained strong in some places in Europe, however, and the bishops of Poland sent a letter of complaint to Benedict that asked for new edicts against Jews there. Benedict replied in his encyclical *A quo primum* that none were necessary and reminded them that St. Bernard had cautioned against singling out the Jews for persecution, for “they are eminent reminders for us of the Lord’s suffering.” On the matter of usury, or charging interest on a loan, Benedict established a commission of cardinals to deal with the topic. It had been prohibited for Christians since the early Middle Ages, and by papal decree officially since Pope Clement V in 1311. Because of this prohibition, some great Jewish banking fortunes had arisen. The pope’s 1745 commission issued their recommendations to maintain the ban. The Pope then wrote the encyclical *Vix pervenit* that same year. It noted that not all interest is usurious, and that scholars should decide the matter.

Decreed Superstitious Habits

Regarding Islam, Benedict formally prohibited Christians from using Muslim names, which had become common in some places like Serbia as a means to avoid certain taxes. In other realms of his empire Benedict warned against the rise of fanatical cults, confirming the decrees of his predecessors that priests—save for the Fate bene Fratelli order—were forbidden to practice pharmacy and issued the 1741 bull *Dei miseratione* on marriage practices. Divorces had become more common, and Benedict warned the judges responsible for the grants of dissolution of Christ’s words, “Whom God hath joined, let no man put asunder.” Benedict implemented a “defender of marriage” for each diocese, charged with the duty of adjudicating all such divorce cases. A 1748 bull *Magna nobis admirationis* set parameters for marriages between Catholics and Protestants, conceding that they were permissible if both parties agreed that the children of such unions were to be brought up in the Catholic faith. Elsewhere, the pope agreed to reduce the number of holidays of obligation, which some bishops had argued were keeping the poor from working and thus brought hardship to their families. Benedict also ordered that all churches in the Papal States should be cleaned and renovated and, following his duties as bishop of Rome, undertook the same in that city; under this decree the mosaics of St. Paul’s Basilica were repaired.

In administrative matters, Benedict established a formal college of consistorial advocates, as he had once been, designed to provide advice to the pontiff. One of his more lasting achievements, however, was to end a controversial practice of the Jesuit missionaries in South America. There they had established *reducciones*, or reductions, which were settlements established for the local Native Americans in order to convert them to a Christianized, European way of life. They were often sites of cruelty, which led to uprisings and martyrdoms of the Jesuit priests. Benedict’s *Immensa pastorum principis* disbanded these in Paraguay and Argentina. The pope also stepped in and issued orders regarding conflicts between Jesuit and Capuchin missionaries in India and China. He reached a 1753 concordat with King Ferdinand VI of Spain that rescinded the monarch’s right to name archbishops and bishoprics in his country. An *Apostolicum* issued that same year sent missions to England, which had emerged from a long and bitter war between Catholics and Protestants in the previous century.

Friendly with Voltaire

Benedict was well respected throughout Europe, during an era when the Catholic Church was declining in influence as Protestantism and the ideas of the Enlightenment took hold. He corresponded with famed French philosopher and author François Marie Arouet de Voltaire, who dedicated a 1744 play, *Mahomet*, to Benedict. The pope was roundly excoriated in some quarters for his links to the maverick French intellectual, whose name was symbolic with the Enlightenment, an important movement of the eighteenth century that stressed secular thought over spiritual dogmatism. Benedict also endured criticism from the superiors of religious orders for frequently granting requests from monks, priests, and nuns to be freed of their religious vows. In other matters, he regularly chastised members of the clergy who came to him with petitions that certain religious objects be granted his blessing. “This just shows,” he wrote, according to Haynes’s *Philosopher King*, “how religion is dishonoured by intolerable abuses, and how it is that people dare to traffic in holy things.”

The pope’s health worsened in 1758, after a long battle with gout, and he died on May 3, 1758, in Rome. A year before his death, the English author Horace Walpole wrote an inscription for a bas-relief portrait of Benedict honoring him as, according to *Philosopher King*, “Prospero Lambertini/Bishop of Rome/By the name of Benedict XIV/Who, though an absolute Prince/reigned as harmlessly/as a Doge of Venice./He restored the luster of the Tiara/By those arts alone/by which He attained it/,his Virtues/,Beloved by Pa-pists/esteemed by Protestants/a priest without insolence or interest/a Prince without favourites/a Pope without nepo-tism/an Author without vanity/in short a Man/whom nei-ther Wit nor Power/could spoil.
“The Son of a favourite Minister, but One who never courted a Prince, nor worshipped a Churchman, offers in this free Protestant Country, This deserved Incense to the Best of the Roman Pontiffs.”

Books


Online


Joseph Bernier

Joseph Bernier (1852–1934) led expeditions to the farthest reaches of Canada’s Arctic wilderness in the early twentieth century. Bernier had once dreamed of reaching the North Pole and planting the Canadian flag there, but instead plied the Hudson Bay and Arctic Sea waters in his durable ship, the *Arctic*, and proclaimed Canadian sovereignty over the scattered islands and Inuit communities in the region. He made some dozen trips before his final 1925 voyage, establishing important political, social, and economic ties to the region for Canada and awakening interest in its northernmost territories.

Seafaring Family

Bernier, born on January 1, 1852, in L’Islet, Quebec, was French Canadian by birth. He grew up in L’Islet, a town on the St. Lawrence River, outside of Quebec City. His family’s origins in the area dated back to 1656, and he came from a long line of shipbuilders and sailors. Several of them, including Bernier’s father, earned the designation capitaine au long cours, or deep-sea captain. Bernier himself made his first ocean voyage when he was still a toddler with both parents on the *Zillah*. The vessel was captured by his father and traveled as far as Malta on a mission to bring supplies to British forces during the Crimean War.

Bernier was schooled in L’Islet, but was indifferent to his studies save for the subject of geography. He showed far more interest in his father’s line of work, which came to involve sailing newly-constructed ships to England for sale there. Around 1864, when Bernier was 12, his father built a ship of his own and named it the *Saint-Joseph* in his son’s honor. On this vessel Bernier learned the rigors of the seafaring life firsthand, serving as a lowly apprentice on several ocean crossings. A terrible case of seasickness was cured by his father’s rather harsh method: the 13-year-old was tied to the front of the ship as it pitched and rolled through rough waters for two hours.

Became Ship Captain

At the age of 17, Bernier was made the *Saint-Joseph’s* captain by his father, making him purportedly the youngest ocean-going captain in Canadian history. His father built a second ship, the *Saint-Michel*, and he served as captain of that after 1870. Around this time he married Rose Caron, a native of L’Islet. He spent the next two decades in the same line of work as his father, sailing ships to England and acting as a sales agent. In all, he made 269 Atlantic crossings during his lifetime. In 1895, he was offered a position as governor of the Quebec jail and accepted it. He read avidly during this time, meeting and questioning whaling captains and traders who had ventured into Canada’s northernmost areas. He dreamed of sailing there and perhaps even reaching the North Pole. He began lecturing on the topic and soon won the support of the Quebec Geographical Society. Realizing he needed to provide for his family before embarking upon such a journey, which might stretch nearly two years in duration, he learned of a steamship that had run aground off the coast of Newfoundland. He hired a salvage company and managed to free her, took her to Montreal for refitting, and sold the vessel at auction for $30,000.

Still, Bernier estimated that an Arctic expedition would cost at least $150,000 and realized he needed government support. Beginning in 1900 he traveled to Ottawa and petitioned Prime Minister Wilfrid Laurier regularly, but Laurier was uneasy about committing funds for a project that seemed foolhardy at best. The islands and fjords of Canada’s northernmost regions—much of it recently in the possession of the Hudson Bay Trading Company—were littered with the carcasses of ships that had become icebound or met with other trouble. The most famous of these was the 1845 expedition led by British explorer Sir John Franklin in search of the elusive Northwest Passage—the commercial sea route from the Atlantic to the Pacific. Franklin and his 129 men became icebound, and no word was heard from them for eight years. More than 40 search parties were sent out to find them, and the highly publicized expedition and resulting tragedy served to highlight the dangers of the treacherous cold and ice of the lands in Canada north of the Arctic Circle.

Argued for North Pole Expedition

Bernier was undaunted, however. Lecturing frequently in order to drum up public support, as Laurier had suggested, he was fond of telling audiences the tale of an American ship, the *Jeanette*, which became frozen in the ice near Wrangel Island off the coast of Siberia in 1879. When the ice moved, so did the ship, in a northwesterly direction, and finally parts of it were found on the eastern coast of Greenland. Bernier told his rapt listeners that the discovery meant that the ship’s parts traveled across the Arctic Sea around the North Pole. He believed that if a vessel was strategically placed, it would drift near enough
the Pole so that a sled voyage could be made there to stake a claim. To date, only the Norwegian explorer Fridtjof Nansen, attempting to use this drift method, had come close to the Pole on a 1896 voyage.

With support from the Canadian government still unforthcoming, Bernier was dismayed to learn that an American, Robert E. Peary, was trying to reach North Pole on foot via Greenland. In 1903 diplomatic relations between Canada and the United States soured briefly over what became known as the Alaska Boundary Dispute, and members of a British commission sided with the American claims and a strip of land in British Columbia was handed over to the United States. The public outcry in Canada was strong, and it ignited a nationalist fervor to claim the Pole. Thus in 1904 the Canadian Parliament enacted legislation that granted Bernier's planned expedition a sum of $200,000.

Plan Thwarted

Bernier, though in his late 50s by then, eagerly prepared for the arduous voyage. He found a German vessel that had made a trip to the Antarctic, the Gauss, and had it refitted and rechristened the Arctic. Then, Bernier was sent word that the planned expedition was to be postponed, and that he and his ship—which technically belonged to the Canadian government—were to be sent to the northern end of Hudson Bay with a Canadian North West Mounted Police officer. The officer conducted a criminal investigation of a ship captain in the area suspected of selling alcohol to the Inuit, which was against the law at the time. Bernier told a newspaper reporter some years later that he believed the Canadian government called off his North Pole quest when it learned that Peary was about to make another try.

There could serve another purpose to such a trip northward, Bernier believed: Canada could stake claims on the scattered islands of the Arctic Circle. Some of them had been claimed by Franklin’s party, but the British government granted Canada sovereignty over them in 1880. Bernier was a proponent of the Sector Theory, which held that Canada should possess the right to all territory from its mainland to the North Pole. Customarily a government would send settlers to such places, but the forbidding Arctic climate discouraged this prospect. Finally winning approval for his voyage, Bernier gathered a learned crew of metal workers, botanists, meteorologists, and other professionals, along with experienced sailors, and set out on his first expedition in July of 1906.

Staked Claims in Arctic

Bernier’s Arctic sailed through Lancaster Sound and the Prince of Wales Strait. It crossed the Arctic Circle on August 11, 1906, and at Albert Harbor the captain hired two Inuit men, Monkeysaw and Cameo, to accompany them further. Bernier landed by Blot and Somerset Islands, making an official Canadian claim on both. At Beechey Island he found a rock left behind by the Franklin party, and built a cairn over the inscription. Bernier’s explorations of the islands found other evidence of the ill-fated Franklin expedition, and some of the items were brought back for deposit in the National Archives of Canada.

In all, Bernier made another eleven trips to the Arctic over the next 19 years. His three before 1909 established Canadian sovereignty on the islands of the region. He officially claimed the last of these, Banks and Victoria, for Canada on Dominion Day of 1909. He gathered his crew for a ceremony that day, erecting a cairn and a plaque; with that act, Canada now claimed all territory from the Yukon in the west to Baffin Land, which was adjacent to Greenland, and all land north of that to the Pole.

Friendly with Inuit

During World War I, Bernier’s ship made mail runs and carted supplies to the European front. After the war, he began making trips to Inuit communities like Pond Inlet, where he set up a trading post. Over the next few years he worked to establish a foothold for Canadian government administration of the region. After being deputized a special fisheries officer in Ottawa, he issued permits to whalers and fishermen in the area. He also helped establish Royal Canadian Mounted Police posts. During all of his trips, Bernier made copious notes and from these a wealth of scientific information about navigation, weather, and plant life in the region was gleaned. One member of his party studied the Inuit tongue, Inuktitut, and made a dictionary.

Bernier’s missions were forgotten for many years, but the Inuit who met him during his expeditions remembered him fondly even generations later. He treated these hearty, indigenous people with respect and often plied them with questions about how to survive the cold. He even adopted their dress and always invited them aboard the ship to see its marvels. Generous supplies of pilot biscuits, or hardtack, that he left behind helped stave off hunger during the lean winter months in some places. One of his crew members was his wife’s nephew, Wilfrid Caron, who decided to stay behind at Pond Inlet. Caron married an Inuit woman, with whom he had children, and Caron descendants lived in the area still at the onset of the twenty-first century.

Bernier’s wife Rose died in 1917, and in 1919 he married Alma Lemieux. His last trips to the Eastern Arctic were the first annual patrols of seas by the Canadian government, between 1922 and 1925. After he retired, he settled in the Quebec community of Lévis and continued to lecture. He died of a heart attack on Christmas Eve of 1934 at the age of 82. He is still remembered by many Inuit communities in Nunavut, as this area of Canada has been called since 1999, and often referred to by his Inuit name, which means white bear. “Kapitaikallak helped in a big way,” a resident, Nutaraq Cornelius, was quoted as saying by Nunatsiaq News writer Jane George. “He taught us about rifles. He showed us that by using the binoculars we can see things from far away.” Still, confusion over official Canadian policies remained. “People did not understand that the land had been claimed by the government,” Cornelius pointed out. “Inuit learned about this much later. He had warned the people of the change that is coming in the following years. . . . It’s true, these events happened a long time ago. But even after these many, many years, you can still see the Kapitaikallak isn’t forgotten today. We still remember him. We know about him.”
Jakob Bernoulli

Swiss mathematician Jakob Bernoulli (1654–1705) devoted his career to the study of calculating complex numerical formulas. Sometimes called Jacques or James Bernoulli to distinguish him from other prominent family members, he was the first in a long line of Bernoulli mathematicians that furthered the discipline greatly during the Age of Reason. He and his younger brother Johann engaged in a spirited, if not sometimes malicious, professional rivalry. Both, noted in an essay in DISCovering World History, “contributed to these sometimes-peevish arguments and mild polemics that nevertheless broadened the scope of calculus.”

Earned Theology Degree

Jakob Bernoulli was born in Basel, Switzerland, on January 6, 1654. The Bernoulli family was originally of Belgian origin and had been spice merchants in the Spanish Netherlands for some time before 1583. In that year, Bernoulli’s druggist grandfather moved the family to Basel, Switzerland, to escape after anti-Protestant religious persecution by a Roman Catholic ruling dynasty. In Basel, Bernoulli’s father Nikolaus held civil posts on the town council and served as a magistrate after marrying a woman from a prominent banking family in the city.

As a young man, Bernoulli studied at the University of Basel, where he followed his father’s wishes and earned a degree in philosophy in 1671 and then a theology degree five years later. Disinclined to enter the ministry, he studied mathematics and astronomy in his spare time. In 1676, he found work as a tutor in another Swiss city, Geneva, and then lived two years in France, during which time he studied the works of mathematician and philosopher René Descartes. Around this time, Bernoulli began his Meditationes, a scientific diary. He traveled to the Netherlands in 1681 and then on to England; as he had in France, he came to know prominent mathematicians of the day and began what would become a lifelong correspondence. Among them were Anglo-Irish physicist Robert Boyle, often referred to as the father of modern chemistry.

Settled in Basel

Initially, Bernoulli was fascinated by the relationship of mathematics to the cosmos, and his first scientific papers dealt with gravity and the path of comets. He formulated a theory on the origins of comets, which later proved incorrect. Back in Basel by 1682, Bernoulli published his De gravitate aetheris, a treatise on the theory of gravity, which caused a stir in learned European circles at the time. In the city of his birth, he taught mechanics at the university after 1683 and conducted experiments in the field as well. He began publishing his findings in two top European journals of scientific study at the time, Journal des sc¸avans and Acta eruditorum, the latter published out of Leipzig, Germany. He was offered a position in the church at one point, but declined it. In 1684 he married Judith Stupanus, with whom he had a son and a daughter.

Bernoulli’s pamphlet on parallels of logic and algebra appeared in 1685, again furthering his reputation, and in 1687 he was offered a post at the University of Basel as a professor of mathematics. He retained the job for the rest of his life. He began to delve into the works of Gottfried Wilhelm von Leibniz, a German philosopher and mathematician who enjoyed great prominence during this era. Primarily a philosopher known for his views on consistent rationalism, Leibniz was also an eminent mathematician who devised the first calculating machine, though it did not function well due to mechanical difficulties. Around 1676 Leibniz developed his fundamental principles of calculus, the branch of mathematics that investigates continuously
changing quantities. In a 1684 issue of *Acta eruditorum*, Leibniz published his theories on the differential calculus, which involves the study of the limit of a quotient as a denominator nears zero. Leibniz called this process “infinitesimal calculus,” a term that denoted quantities smaller than any definable finite quantity, yet still larger than zero; the “infinitesimal” part was later abandoned.

Influenced by Leibniz

Bernoulli worked studiously from Leibniz’s findings. “Misunderstood by most of his colleagues, Leibniz’s discovery nevertheless attracted a small following of mathematicians who realized the tremendous analytical power of calculus,” asserted an essay in *Notable Mathematicians*. “Among Leibniz’s followers, Bernoulli was among the first who completely grasped the essence of calculus, and he proceeded, in numerous contributions to *Acta eruditorum*, to develop the foundations of calculus.” Bernoulli also worked on Leibniz’s quandary over the isochronous curve, and he wrote an important treatise in 1687 on geometry that determined a way to divide any triangle into four equal parts with two perpendicular lines.

Bernoulli’s long and illustrious career was marred by the rivalry with his younger brother, Johann, who also became an eminent mathematician in his day. Again, their father had strongly discouraged Johann’s interest in this science, and the younger Bernoulli duly studied the more practical discipline of medicine at the University of Basel in the early 1680s; at the time, however, he also studied mathematics under his brother. Johann took a post as professor of mathematics at the University of Gröningen in the Netherlands in 1694, and the antagonism between the two intensified over the years. Their arguments usually centered around mathematical riddles that were then standard methods for scientists of the day to exchange ideas throughout Europe. A scholar would devise a problem, solve it, and then send it out for others to solve under deadline.

Declared Superiority of His Work

In 1689, Bernoulli published his *Treatise on Infinite Series*, later known as the “Bernoulli inequality,” but its proof had been conducted by Johann. “With uncharacteristic fraternal affection, Jakob even prefaced the argument with an acknowledgement of his brother’s priority,” wrote William Durham in *Journey Through Genius*. The brothers also argued most vociferously over the riddle of the catenary curve, a term used to denote a line similar to a chain, fixed at two points, and hanging under its own weight. The riddle asked mathematicians to solve the equation for the curve. A generation before, the Italian astronomer, mathematician, and physicist Galileo had believed it to be a parabola, or a plane curve made up from all points equidistant from a given fixed point and a given fixed line. This proved false, and Bernoulli attempted to use calculus to solve it. He explored the possibilities in a 1690 paper, but his brother solved it before he finished. Johann delivered a Wounding version of events, according to a source quoted in Durham’s book. “The efforts of my brother were without success; for my part, I was more fortunate, for I found the skill (I say it without boasting, why should I conceal the truth?) to solve it in full. . . . It is true that it cost me study that robbed me of rest for an entire night . . . but the next morning, filled with joy, I ran to my brother, who was still struggling miserably with this Gordian knot without getting anywhere, always thinking, like Galileo, that the catenary was a parabola. Stop! Stop! I say to him, don’t torture yourself any more to try and prove the identity of the catenary with the parabola, since it is entirely false.”

Another famous quandary for the brothers Bernoulli involved the brachistochrone problem (from the Greek term meaning “shortest time”). In 1696, Johann published a riddle in *Acta Eruditorum* which invited others to determine the curve of quickest descent between two given points A and B, assuming that B does not lie right beneath A. Johann believed it was a cycloid curve, but his proof was wrong. “Jakob solved the problem using a detailed but formally correct technique,” explained the essay in *DISCovering World History*. “Johann recognized that the problem could be rephrased in such a way that existing solutions could be adapted to the solution of this problem: Johann solved the problem in a more ingenious way, but Jakob recognized that his approach could be generalized.”

The brothers disputed one another’s works in the pages of leading scientific publications during their respective careers. Bernoulli, however, was more critical by nature and often entered into vituperative battles with his superiors at the University of Basel as well. “Each became the other’s fiercest competitor in mathematical matters, until their attempts at one-upmanship seem, in retrospect, almost comical,” noted Dunham in *Journey Through Genius*.

Intrigued by Mollusk Shell

Bernoulli was fascinated by the mathematical properties of curves, especially the logarithmic spiral, a figure similar to the chambered nautilus mollusk shell in nature with its perfectly symmetrical spirals. It is also referred to as a *spira mirabilis*, or “wonderful spiral.” As the essay in *Notable Mathematicians* explained, “Bernoulli noticed that the logarithmic spiral has several unique properties, including self-similarity, which means that any portion, if scaled up or down, is congruent to other parts of the curve.” He was so intrigued by its shape that he requested his tombstone sport the motif, along with the Latin phrase *Eadem mutata resurgo* (Though changed, I arise again the same). Bernoulli died on August 16, 1705, in Basel, Switzerland. His brother succeeded him in his post as professor of mathematics at the University of Basel.

One of Bernoulli’s best known works was published posthumously in 1713: *Ars conjectandi* (*The Art of Conjecture*), which involves probability theory. Described as “a highly innovative work” in an essay in *World of Scientific Discovery*, the tome “discussed what came to be known as the Bernoullian numbers and the Bernoulli theorem, and analyzed games of chance according to variations in players dexterity, expectation of profit, and other variables.” It ensured as an important tract on probability theory well into the modern age. A street in Paris’s Eighth Arrondissement is
named in his honor. His nephew, Johann’s son Daniel, formulated the Bernoulli principle, which involves the speed and properties of liquid or gas.

Books

Online

Albert Jeremiah Beveridge

When he entered the U.S. Senate in 1899 at age 36, Albert Jeremiah Beveridge (1862–1927) was hailed as one of America’s most influential young leaders. An advocate of U.S. imperialism overseas, he foresaw the growth of America as a world power during the early twentieth century. Over the course of his political career, Beveridge became a supporter of progressive social policies, working to enact pure food, child labor, and tariff reform laws. His later work as a historian won him wide acclaim.

A brilliant orator and charismatic political leader, U.S. Senator Albert J. Beveridge first rose to fame in 1898 as a fervent exponent of American expansion overseas. His efforts to secure a colonial presence for the United States were rooted in a deeply-held nationalism and faith in big business. Over time, though, Beveridge evolved into a critic of America’s political and business elites, joining with like-minded Republican reformers to help spearhead the Progressive movement of the early 1900s. After leaving the Senate, he embarked upon a second career as a historian, authoring highly-regarded biographies of John Marshall and Abraham Lincoln.

Outstanding Young Orator

Born on a farm in Highland County, Ohio, on October 6, 1862, Beveridge was the only child of Thomas Henry Beveridge (a farmer and Union soldier) and his second wife, Francis Parkinson Beveridge. In 1865, the family moved to another farm in Moultrie County, Illinois, where the son grew up under harsh conditions. By age 14, he was working as a railroad hand and, a few years later, managed a logging crew. Determined to rise above his poor beginnings, Beveridge studied the classical works of Plutarch and Caesar, winning him financial sponsorship to Indiana’s Ashbury College (now DePauw University). While still an undergraduate, he won local renown as a political orator, stumping for Republican presidential candidate James G. Blaine in 1884. Even in his early speeches, Beveridge’s fervent nationalism and support for a strong Federal government were evident.

Beveridge went on to earn a law degree in 1887. That same year, he moved to Indianapolis and married fellow Ashbury student Katherine Langsdale. Specializing in civil cases, he quickly became a leading member of the Indiana bar, at times facing ex-President Benjamin Harrison as opposing counsel. Beveridge continued to rise in Republican Party circles as well, speaking widely during the 1892 and 1896 presidential campaigns. His well-reasoned orations emphasized short, incisive phrases and contrasted with the more ornate speechmaking styles of the era. By age 30, he was considered one of the leading political orators in the United States.

In 1898, Beveridge gained national fame as a persuasive advocate of U.S. colonial expansion following the Spanish-American War. His appeals to his country’s sense of overseas destiny had a visionary quality to them. Beveridge saw control of Cuba and the Philippines as pivotal to American commercial expansion in the twentieth century. In his famous 1898 “March of the Flag” speech, he ridiculed the idea of that Spain’s former possessions could govern themselves. “Shall we turn these people back to the reeking hands from which we have taken them?” he asked. “Shall we save them from these nations to give them the self-rule of tragedy? It would be like giving a razor to a babe and telling it to shave itself.”
U.S. Senator at Age 36

Such bold declarations helped to advance Beveridge's political career. In 1899, he outmaneuvered several veteran office-holders to become the Republican choice for U.S. Senator from Indiana. His election at age 36 made him one of the youngest members in American history. From the start, Beveridge stood out from his colleagues as a brash, independent voice. A few months prior to taking his Senate seat, he traveled to the war-torn Philippines to witness conditions first-hand. He quickly became an important voice in American foreign policy, gaining far more attention than most freshman Senators. His eloquence in urging America to accept its place as a world power took on a messianic tone. “We will not renounce our part in the mission of our race, trustee, under God, of the civilization of the world,” he told his fellow senators in a January 9, 1900, speech. “And we will move forward to our work, not howling out regrets like slaves whipped to their burdens, but with gratitude for a task worthy of our strength, and thanksgiving to Almighty God that He has marked us as His chosen people, henceforth to lead in the regeneration of the world.”

While Beveridge’s self-dramatizing manner rankled some Republican elders, he was valued as a firm supporter of conservative economic policy and overseas expansion. Many predicted great things for him, including the presidency. Recalling Beveridge’s early days in the Senate, journalist William Allen White wrote in his 1946 autobiography: “He was an eager young man. . . . His ambition was obvious and sometimes a bit ridiculous, but always innocent and shameless like a child’s indecencies. His was a warm personality, gentle, kindly.”

In the early 1900s, Beveridge gradually began to move away from his uncritical support of American big business. A long-time believer in an activist federal government, he now sought to direct its powers towards regulation of industry and commerce. Following his re-election in 1905, he worked in the Senate to revise tariff laws and bolster the Interstate Commerce Commission’s power to fix railroad rates. He was especially prominent in support of meat inspection and child labor laws, bringing him the opposition of meat packing and manufacturing interests. Beveridge began to critique the excessive influence of big business in politics as well. “I do not object to capital,” he wrote in a 1906 magazine article. “I defend it—only let it attend to its own business. And public life and special legislation for its own benefit are not its business. . . .”

Progressive Leader

In these and other battles, Beveridge had a sometimes fitful ally in the emerging Progressive movement, working to spur on Roosevelt to support reformist legislation. Aided by Robert M. LaFollette of Wisconsin, Jonathan P. Dolliver of Iowa, Moses Clapp of Minnesota, and other Senate insurgents, he attacked the entrenched power of the Republican Old Guard and its close association with big business. His battles with the autocratic Senator Nelson W. Aldrich of Rhode Island were especially bitter. Despite this, he remained loyal to his party and campaigned vigorously for Republican presidential nominee William H. Taft in 1908. He became disillusioned, however, when Taft supported the Payne-Aldrich tariff bill, which progressives viewed as an attempt to block meaningful tariff reform. Beveridge’s clashes with the Old Guard leadership alienated him from Indiana’s more conservative Republicans, leading to his defeat for re-election in 1911.

Though out of the Senate, Beveridge remained a force in politics, supporting Roosevelt’s bid for the 1912 Republican presidential nomination and subsequent candidacy as the leader of the newly-formed Progressive (or “Bull-Moose”) Party. He delivered the keynote address at the party’s national convention in Chicago, declaring in favor of “social brotherhood as against savage individualism . . . mutual helpfulness instead of a reckless competition.” Beveridge ran as the Progressive nominee for governor of Indiana that fall. In the end, though, both he and Roosevelt were defeated.

Beveridge devoted much of the next two years to making the Progressives a viable party. He campaigned extensively for its candidates and made an unsuccessful bid for his old Indiana U.S. Senate seat as the party’s nominee in 1914. Two years later, though, Roosevelt effectively ended the Progressive Party by refusing to accept its presidential nomination. Beveridge returned to the Republican fold that year, though he supported Democrat Woodrow Wilson’s anti-interventionist stance in World War I, as well as many of Wilson’s domestic policies. He spoke out against suppression of political dissidents after the U.S. entered the war in 1917. Most of all, he actively opposed American participation in the League of Nations, denouncing it as a surrender of national sovereignty.

Won Acclaim as Historian

In 1922, Beveridge ran for the U.S. Senate in Indiana once again, winning the Republican primary but losing to Democrat Samuel M. Ralston in the general election. Turning away from active politics, he devoted himself almost exclusively to writing history for the remainder of his life. His career as an author began back in 1903 with the publication of The Russian Advance, a study of international politics. What Is Back of the War (1915) collected a series of interviews with European leaders and drew some criticism for its supposedly pro-German tilt. The Life of John Marshall (four volumes, 1916–1919) is regarded as his most important work. Benefiting from careful research, this biography of the great U.S. chief justice showed its author to be a graceful, meticulous prose stylist and discerning historian. Both critically and commercially successful, The Life of John Marshall won the Pulitzer Prize in 1920.

For his next literary subject, Beveridge turned to Abraham Lincoln. Sifting through long-unseen documents and letters, he found many of his own long-held political beliefs altered in the process. Ultimately, Beveridge stripped away the hero-worship surrounding Lincoln and found him to be a complex, imperfect politician and human being. He was still in the process of rewriting his manuscript when he died of a heart attack at his Indianapolis home on April 27, 1927. Though left incomplete, his Abraham Lincoln, 1809–1858
(two volumes, 1928) was a substantial contribution to Lincoln scholarship.

A truly independent political mind, Beveridge adhered to a strongly nationalistic faith that embraced both liberal social reforms and aggressive foreign policy. He was remembered by his contemporaries for his intense energy and self-confidence, especially at the start of his political career. Wrote journalist Mark Sullivan in his memoirs: “At all times, in every circumstance, Beveridge had a sense of responsibility for the United States, concern that it should be well managed, care that no ill should befall it.”

Books

Leech, Margaret, In The Days of McKinley, Harper & Brothers, 1959.

Isabella Bird

Isabella Bird (1831–1904) was an English traveler who made a remarkable series of journeys at the end of the 19th century. Bird was born in the English county of Yorkshire on October 15, 1831. Her father was an Anglican clergyman and her mother was the daughter of a clergyman. Bird was a small woman and suffered from several ailments during her childhood. In 1850 she had an operation to remove a tumor from her spine. The operation was only partially successful, and she suffered from insomnia and depression. Her doctor recommended that she travel, and in 1854 her father gave her 100 pounds and told her she was free to go wherever she wanted. She used it to travel to North America and stayed for several months in eastern Canada and the United States. On her return she used the letters she had written to her sister, Hennie, as the basis for her first book, The Englishwoman in America.

Hawaii and the Rocky Mountains

Bird’s father died in 1858 and she and her sister and mother moved to Edinburgh in Scotland, where she lived for the rest of her life. She took other short trips during the following years, including three to North America and one to the Mediterranean. However, the turning point in her life came in 1872 when she traveled to Hawaii.

She had taken a ship from San Francisco headed for New Zealand, but decided to get off in Hawaii and stayed there for six months. During that time she learned how to ride a horse astride, which ended the backaches she suffered from riding sidesaddle, and she climbed up to the top of Hawaii’s volcanic peaks. Later, she wrote about her pleasure in “visiting remote regions which are known to few even of the residents, living among the natives, and otherwise seeing Hawaiian life in all its phases.” She recorded her happy visit in Six Months in the Sandwich Islands, published in 1875.

Leaving Hawaii, Bird went to the west coast of the United States. From San Francisco she traveled alone by horse to Lake Tahoe and then to the Rocky Mountains and Colorado. During that trip she had many adventures, including riding alone through a blizzard with her eyes frozen shut, spending several months snowed in a cabin with two young men, and being wooed by a lonely outlaw. All these tales she told in her book A Lady’s Life in the Rocky Mountains, published in 1879.

Japan

From San Francisco Bird went to Japan, where she hired a young Japanese man of 18 to be her translator. They traveled together to the northern part of Hokkaido, the northernmost part of the country, where she stayed among members of the Ainu tribe, the original, non-Japanese, inhabitants of the islands. Her experiences formed the basis for her book Unbeaten Tracks in Japan, published in 1880. From Japan she traveled to Hong Kong, Canton, Saigon, and
Singapore. From Singapore she traveled among the Malay states of the Malayan Peninsula for five weeks.

When Bird returned to England she was famous for her books about Hawaii and the Rocky Mountains. However, shortly after her return her sister died from typhoid. Bird married the doctor who had taken care of her, Dr. John Bishop, in 1881. They were happy together, but he died only five years after the marriage.

India and the Middle East

Following Bishop's death, Bird set out again on her travels. In 1888 she left for India. While there she established the Henrietta Bird Hospital in Amritsar and the John Bishop Memorial Hospital in Srinagar. She traveled to Kashmir and to Ladakh in the far north on the border with Tibet. During her travels one of her horses lost its footing while crossing a river. The horse drowned and Bird suffered two broken ribs. On her return to Simla in northern India she met up with Major Herbert Sawyer who was on his way to Persia. The two traveled together through the desert in midwinter and arrived in Tehran half-dead. After depositing the major at his new duty station, Bird set out alone and spent the next six months traveling at the head of her own caravan through northern Iran, Kurdistan, and Turkey.

On her return to England, Bird spoke out against the atrocities that were being committed against the Armenians in the Middle East and met with Prime Minister William Gladstone and addressed a Parliamentary committee on the question. By this time she was extremely well known in her native land and was made a fellow of the Royal Scottish Geographical Society and the first woman fellow of the Royal Geographical Society. However, she was not happy being still and in 1894 she set out again.

Bird traveled first to Yokohama in Japan and from there into Korea. She spent several months in that country and then was forced to leave at the outbreak of the Sino-Japanese War that was to lead to the occupation of Korea by Japan. She went to Mukden in Manchuria and photographed Chinese soldiers headed for the front. She then went back into Korea to view the devastation of the war. From Korea she went to the Yangtze River in China in January 1896. She traveled by sampan up the river as far as she could go and then went overland into the province of Sichuan. There she was attacked by a mob that called her a "foreign devil" and trapped her in the top floor of a house, which they then set on fire. She was rescued at the last minute by a detachment of soldiers. At another place she was stoned and knocked unconscious. She then traveled into the mountains bordering Tibet before returning home in 1897.

Back in Britain she wrote The Yangtze Valley and Beyond, which was published in 1900. She made her last trip to Morocco in 1901. On her return she became ill and died in Edinburgh on October 7, 1904.

Further Reading


Bonnie Blair

Speed skating champion Bonnie Blair (born 1964) is the most highly decorated American Winter Olympic athlete in history with six medals. She holds five gold medals, for the 500-meter and 1,000-meter events, as well as a bronze medal for the 1,000-meter event. Since her retirement from competition in 1995 at the age of 31, she has turned her stellar Olympic performances into a successful career as a motivational speaker and corporate spokesperson.

Learned to Skate at Two

Bonnie Kathleen Blair was born on March 18, 1964, in the Hudson River town of Cornwall, New York, and grew up in Champaign, Illinois. She was the youngest of six children, all of whom learned to skate at an early age. Blair herself was introduced to the sport when she was just two years old. She was so small at the time that her parents could not find skates that fit her, so she had to wear shoes under her skates. By the time she was four years old, Blair was racing, and she loved it, competing against her older brothers and sisters and others in elementary and junior high school. Blair later ran on her high school track team, where, she later claimed, she did not stand out among her peers. She ran wherever her coach decided he was missing a body—on the long jump, high jump, short distances, and relays. She also tried her hand at gymnastics for a while.

Blair's introduction to competitive skating was as a pack racer on short tracks where she competed against many people in one race. She was 16 years old when she began Olympic-style racing, which pits only two racers against each other in a competition based on time. In her teens, Blair began to apply herself to the sport of speed skating as she never had before, largely at the encouragement of her friend Dave Silk, who competed on the men's U.S. team. "He's the hardest worker on the team," Blair told Angus Phillips in the Washington Post, "and he got me into that, too. In Champaign, I'd miss a workout or two. But Dave gave me real direction."

Competed Internationally at 18

In 1982, when Blair was 18 years old, her trainers wanted to take her to Europe to compete outside of the United States for the first time. She agreed to go, but she lacked the backing to finance the trip. So, the police department in Champaign stepped in to raise money for her trip, holding a series of raffles and bake sales. Also, Jack Sikma, a
professional basketball player for the Milwaukee Bucks, donated $1,500 for her trip.

Blair’s European trip had the desired effect, sharpening her skills for more competition. The year following her return from Europe, she won the 1983 U.S. indoor speed skating championship, a title she won again in 1984. Also in 1984, Blair competed at the Winter Olympics held in Sarajevo, Yugoslavia. She did not win any medals, but it proved a valuable experience for her. In 1985, Blair won the North American indoor speed skating championship, and in 1986, she again won the U.S. indoor title. Now a world-class speed skater, Blair went on to set a world speed skating record in 1987, racing 500 meters in 39.43 seconds.

Won First Olympic Gold Medal

Blair won her first gold medal at the 1988 Winter Olympics held in Calgary, Canada. Her win in the 500-meter event broke the world record, which had been set only minutes before by the East German skater Christa Rothenburger. With a new world record of 39.1 seconds, Blair became the first American woman since 1976 to win a gold medal in speed skating. Also at the 1988 Olympics, Blair won the bronze medal for the 1,000-meter event.

At the Olympics, Blair was cheered on by her large extended family, including her parents, her brother Chuck, her sister Mary, along with Mary’s husband and children, her sister Susie, her brother Rob and his wife and child, her sister Angela, and her uncle Lennie, along with the friends of all of her family members.

Blair would in later years recall that first Olympic gold medal victory as the high point of her career. “That’s not to say I didn’t have other great memories,” she told Paula Parrish in the Rocky Mountain News, “but I think that had the biggest impact.” And, as she told Barbara Matson in the Boston Globe, “Crossing that [finish] line was the happiest moment of my life.”

Continued Olympic Winning Streak

No longer a relative unknown, Blair was considered a favorite when she headed to the 1992 Winter Olympics held in Albertville, France. She surpassed her 1988 Olympic performance, taking home the gold medal not only in the 500-meter event, but in the 1,000-meter race as well. To win the 500-meter event, Blair beat Chinese skater Ye Qiaobo by 18 hundredths of a second. In winning the 1,000-meter event, Blair again beat Ye, this time by a mere two hundredths of a second. It was the first time a woman had won two Olympic gold medals for the 500-meter event in two successive Winter Olympics. Her stellar performance at the 1992 Olympics also earned Blair the Sullivan Award as the Best Amateur Athlete in the United States. Blair dedicated her successes in Albertville to the memory of her father, who had died on Christmas Day 1989.

With her gold medals and winning personality to match, Blair captured the imagination of the American public, becoming a media darling and a favorite among fans. She became almost as well known for her entourage of family and friends—a group deemed the Blair Bunch that had grown to more than 60 people by 1994—who went with her to each of her Olympic competitions to cheer her on from the stands.

Now unquestionably a star, in 1994 Blair went on to her third Winter Olympics, which were held in Lillehammer, Norway. There she won two more gold medals, for both the 500-meter and the 1,000-meter races. It was another first for a female athlete—no other woman had ever won five Olympic gold medals for individual events. Her total of six Olympic medals (five gold and a bronze) also made her the most successful American Winter Olympian in history. To celebrate, she climbed into the stands, still wearing her skates, to hug her family and friends.

This victory was bittersweet for Blair, since she knew it was to be the last Olympics in which she would compete. She was grateful for all of her successes, however, and for all the wonderful memories they gave her. Most of all, she told Karen Rosen in the Atlanta Journal and Constitution in 1998, “I’m really grateful for VCRs so I can go back and relive it.”

Retired in 1995

Blair competed as a speed skater one more season following her last Olympic win. During this last season, she shattered her world record time for the 500-meter sprint—twice. Her final, record-breaking time for the 500-meter sprint was 38.99 seconds. After this, at the age of 31, she felt she was ready to retire from competitive skating. “I just thought it was the right time,” she said of her retirement to
Heather McCabe in the Houston Chronicle. “It was a nice ending.”

Following her retirement from competitive skating, Blair remained extremely active, both in her sport and outside of it. She went to work coaching the U.S. women’s speed skating team, based in Milwaukee, Wisconsin. She and her husband, fellow speed skater Dave Cruikshank, made their home in Milwaukee, and Blair kept up a heavy travel schedule, flying to different cities around the country to meet various corporate endorsement obligations. Blair has also become an accomplished motivational speaker, addressing audiences on such topics as “Achieving Your Personal Best.” She has also made television commercials for such major corporations as McDonald’s and AT&T. She counts herself lucky in being able to maintain such an active retirement, noting that not all Olympic gold medalists have been as fortunate.

After the turn of the twenty-first century, Blair still found herself involved in speed skating, even though she no longer competed. Instead, she skated vicariously through her husband, who competed in international events. Cruikshank had skated in four Olympics by 1998, and he narrowly missed qualifying for the U.S. team for the 2002 Olympics. Blair later credited her husband’s continuing involvement in the sport with helping her to make the transition from competition to civilian life.

**Stayed in the Public Eye**

At the beginning of the 2002 Winter Olympics, Blair again took the spotlight when she became the last torch-bearer on the Wisconsin segment of the Olympic torch run in January. She skated twice around the Pettit National Ice Center for a cheering crowd of ten thousand fans before lighting the Olympic caldron set up at the Center. Blair was touched by the adulations of the crowd, saying that she had never heard any group of spectators cheer so hard for her.

In addition to her ongoing endorsement commitments, Blair serves as a sports commentator on the ABC television network and sits on the board of directors of the U.S. speed skating team. Blair has also been involved in the American Brain Tumor Association’s efforts to combat this little-understood disease; in 1987, Blair’s brother Rob was diagnosed with brain cancer that was deemed terminal. Ten years later, however, doctors were able to remove about half of the tumor, giving Blair and her family hope for a cure.

Encased in a glass tabletop in her house, Blair’s gold medals have become part of her daily landscape. “The kids eat cereal on top of it,” she told Parrish, “but it’s got a heavy top, so nothing gets underneath.” Blair lives in Delafield, Wisconsin, with her husband and their son Grant and daughter Blair.

**Periodicals**

- **Sports Illustrated for Women**, February 2002.

**Online**


**Lucrezia Bori**

Opera singer Lucrezia Bori (1887–1960), known for years as the grande dame of the Metropolitan Opera, was one of its most beloved sopranos. In 19 seasons, more than 600 performances, and 29 roles with the company, her grace, style, and musicality made her a critically acclaimed and enormously popular star. Her artistic integrity, personal dignity, and lack of temperamental behavior also made her one of opera’s most gracious figures. Following an illustrious stage career, her tireless dedication to fundraising efforts for the Metropolitan Opera earned her the nickname “the opera’s Joan of Arc.”

Bori was born Lucrecia Borja y González de Riancho on December 24, 1887, in Valencia, Spain, the daughter of a well-to-do army officer. She was a descendant of Renaissance Italy’s powerful Borgia family; her name in Italian, in fact, was Lucrezia Borgia. Her family, however, insisted she change it for the stage. Bori made her first public appearance at a benefit concert in Valencia at age six. After a convent education, Bori at 16 decided to become a singer and went to Milan, Italy, for coaching. She made her professional debut at the Teatro Adriano in Rome on October 31, 1908, as Micaela in Carmen. Bori was subsequently hired by the Italian opera house La Scala the following season, where the promising young artist so enchanted German composer Richard Strauss that he insisted she sing the role of Octavian in the local premier of his Der Rosenkavalier in 1911.

**Premiered at the Metropolitan Opera**

Bori’s long association with the Metropolitan Opera began in 1910 in Paris, when she was invited to replace an indisposed colleague as Manon in Puccini’s Manon Lescaut with the touring New York company. After an enthusiastic response to her portrayal, two more performances were added and quickly sold out. Her first American appearance was in the same role at age 24, opposite the legendary Italian tenor Enrico Caruso, performed on the opening night of the Metropolitan Opera’s 1912–1913 season in New York. A critic of that era quoted in the Record Collector praised Bori’s performance as an “exquisite exhibition of legato singing” and “exquisite diction, impeccable intonation and moving pathos.”
As Bori was enjoying the peak of her success, her career took a fateful and dramatic turn. Nodules on her vocal chords required delicate throat surgery in 1915, followed by five years of lonely convalescence. In a New York Times article she described her harrowing period of recovery, during which she once forced herself to be absolutely silent for two months. "I felt," she said, "as must those stricken with blindness just as the sun of spring flooded the world." Her discipline and courage were instrumental in her triumphant comeback to the Met in 1921, and her career flourished in the 15 years that followed.

Bori was known for her remarkably clear, true voice and dramatic prowess, capable of expressing passion as well as vulnerability and whimsical charm. Some of Bori's most famous roles included Mimi in La Bohème; Norina in Don Pasquale; Juliette in Roméo et Juliette; and Violetta in La Traviata, among others. Of her recordings, critic C. J. Luten wrote in Opera News: "Not everyone takes to her somewhat acidulous voice, but who can resist what she does with it? She radiates vivacity in Juliette's waltz . . . and in the Norina-Malatesta duet from Don Pasquale. Her legato, long line and pathetic accent . . . are masterful."

Bori's farewell performance at the Met, on March 29, 1936, was a moving tribute to a brilliant career still in its prime. After singing selections from La Traviata and Manon, the audience stood and cheered for 20 minutes in homage, with women weeping and men stamping their feet. Bori was later quoted in the New York Times: "I have no illusions about the length of time a singer may sing. I want to finish while I am still at my best."

**Ensured Met's Survival Through Fundraising Work**

Bori's "second career" with the Metropolitan Opera began in the early 1930s, when the company's survival seemed threatened by the Depression. In addition to a demanding singing schedule, Bori took on many outside engagements as the head of fundraising committees, including writing letters, meeting with benefactors, and traveling. In 1933, she was praised by Paul D. Cravath, then president and chairman of the Met board, who told the New York Times that Bori "did more than anyone else to make opera at the Metropolitan . . . a financial possibility." In 1935, she became the first active artist and the first woman elected to the board of directors of the Metropolitan Opera. In 1942, she was elected president of the Metropolitan Opera Guild.

On May 2, 1960, Bori suffered a cerebral hemorrhage. She died in New York on May 14 at age 71, and funeral rites were held at St. Patrick's Cathedral. Bori, who never married, is buried in the Borja family plot in Valencia. Her will provided for the establishment of the Lucrezia Bori Foundation for charitable, educational, and literary purposes.

**Periodicals**


---

**Georg Brandes**

Georg Brandes (1842–1927) was an influential Danish literary critic whose interpretations of such writers as Henrik Ibsen, August Strindberg, and Bjørnstjerne Bjørnson are credited with bringing Scandinavian literature into the mainstream of European culture. Similarly, his analyses of major nineteenth-century German, French, and English authors, including John Stuart Mill and Friedrich Nietzsche, also served to alleviate the cultural gap that separated Danish readers from the central currents of European thought. According to Neil Christian Pages in Scandinavian Studies, "Brandes was without exaggeration the most influential European literary critic and commentator at the close of the nineteenth and the beginning of twentieth century. . . . A prolific scholar, biographer, and essayist, Brandes’s pan-European approach transgressed literary and national boundaries combining art and political activism in an astute manner."
Literature and Social Reform

Brandes was born to Jewish parents in Copenhagen, Denmark, on February 4, 1842. By all accounts an excellent student, he studied law and philosophy at the University of Copenhagen and early on developed an antireligious point of view. After completing a master’s degree in 1864 he continued his studies, taking a doctorate in aesthetics and publishing his dissertation, *Den franske æsthetik i vore dage*, in 1870. During this period he produced the collection of essays *Æsthetiske studier* (1868), which presented theoretical discussions of comedy and tragedy, and he translated John Stuart Mill’s *The Subjection of Women* into Danish. Brandes maintained that literature should serve to reform society through confronting controversial social issues, and his early work was strongly influenced by the German philosopher G.W.F. Hegel and the French critic Hippolyte Taine, who sought to apply the methods of scientific investigation to the interpretation of literature and culture. In describing Brandes’s critical perspective, biographer Bertil Nolin wrote that to Brandes “literature was a weapon in an ideological debate, an instrument for the continuous change of values and social situations.”

During 1870 and 1871 Brandes traveled outside Denmark, meeting with Mill (whose *Utilitarianism* he would translate in 1872), and with the Norwegian playwright Henrik Ibsen, the author of *Peer Gynt* (1867), whose works embodied the realistic ideals Brandes advocated. Returning to Denmark he began lecturing at the University of Copenhagen on the relationship between literature and cultural progress and published these lectures in *Emigrantlitteraturen* (*The Emigrant Literature*, 1872); *Den romantiske skole i Tydaliland* (*The Romantic School in Germany*, 1873); *Reaktionen i Frankrig* (*The Reaction in France*, 1874); *Naturalismen i England* (*Naturalism in England*, 1875), the first volumes of his monumental survey of European literature; and *Hovedstrømninger i det nittende aarhundredes litteratur* (*Main Currents in Nineteenth-Century Literature*, 1872–1890). Featured in *The Emigrant Literature* are analyses of French writers who were influenced by time spent outside their homeland, including Vicomte de Chateaubriand, who fled to London during the Reign of Terror and served later governments as ambassador to Rome, and the novelist Madame de Staël (1766–1817), who was banished from Paris by Napoleon after the publication of *Delphine* (1802), a novel sympathetic to divorce, Protestantism, and the British. Brandes’s consideration of French literature is continued in *The Reaction in France*, offering considerations of the political agitator and former priest Félicité de Lamennais, who predicted the rise of a revolutionary working class, and the Romantic writer Victor Hugo, among others. In *Naturalism in England* Brandes considered the works of such poets as William Wordsworth, Percy Bysshe Shelley, and Lord Byron, particularly praising Byron’s liberalism.

Brandes expected to take a position within the faculty of the University of Copenhagen, but his appointment was denied owing to his Jewish background and the radical nature of his views, including his avowed atheism. During the mid-1870s Brandes undertook the publication of the journal *Det nittende aarhundrede* with his brother Edvard, but when this enterprise failed, he left Denmark. For the next five years Brandes lived in Berlin, during which time he became personally acquainted with many leading writers and wrote analyses of a number of European thinkers, including the English Conservative leader Benjamin Disraeli and the Danish existentialist philosopher Søren Kierkegaard. The volume on Kierkegaard is considered important as the earliest extended consideration of Kierkegaard’s philosophy, and, when translated in 1879, the first to introduce Kierkegaard’s thinking to an international audience.

The Critic Outside the Academy

With private financial support, Brandes returned to Copenhagen in 1883 and became well known as a public lecturer, unaffiliated with the university. During the ensuing decades his renown and influence grew as he published a number of significant studies and after 1887 became a leading proponent of the works of the German philosopher Friedrich Nietzsche. Largely unknown at the time, Nietzsche was in the final two years of lucidity when he and Brandes began corresponding. In Brandes’s 1889 essay, “Friedrich Nietzsche: En afhandling om aristokratisk radikalisme,” he presented the earliest systematic treatment of Nietzsche’s philosophy and technique. As quoted by Pages in *Scandinavian Studies*, Brandes introduced readers to this obscure writer by declaring, “Nietzsche appears to me the most interesting writer in German literature at the
present time. Though little known even in his own country, he is a thinker of a high order, who fully deserves to be studied, discussed, contested, and mastered. Among many good qualities he has that of imparting mood and setting thoughts in motion.” Nietzsche, in a letter quoted in Scandinavian Studies, later approved Brandes’s characterization of his work as “aristocratic radicalism,” calling that phrase “the cleverest thing I have yet read about myself.”

Through Brandes’s efforts—he lectured on Nietzsche in Copenhagen and developed a theoretical framework for Nietzsche’s works—Nietzsche gained prominence, but not before the philosopher had succumbed to madness, and he died in 1900. Brandes later issued the volume Friedrich Nietzsche (1909), which included biography, criticism, and correspondence.

Among Brandes’s works of this period are the final two volumes of Main Currents in Nineteenth-Century Literature, as well as a monumental three-volume consideration of Shakespeare (1895–1896) and the travel books Intryk fra Polen (Impressions of Poland, 1888) and Intryk fra Rusland (Impressions of Russia, 1888). Nolin noted, “His critical conceptions and analyses may be considered as the most substantial volume” of the series. In it Brandes focused on the period 1824 to 1848, analyzing works by Hugo, George Sand, Stendhal, Honoré de Balzac, Alfred de Musset, and Charles-Augustine Sainte-Beuve, a literary critic with whom Brandes is often compared. The final volume of the survey, Det unge Tydakland (Young Germany) was published in 1890. Brandes here examined the influence of Heinrich Heine, Karl Ludwig Börne, and Karl Ferdinand Gutzkow, and other advocates of the Young Germany movement in the mid-nineteenth century.

In the literary biography William Shakespeare Brandes combined literary evaluation with psychological portrait, attempting to elucidate the life of the writer through his works. Brandes, as quoted by René Wellek in A History of Modern Criticism: The Late Nineteenth Century, 1750–1950, expressed the opinion that “given the possession of forty-five important works by any man, it is entirely our own fault if we know nothing whatever about him. The poet has incorporated his whole individuality in these writings, and there, if we can read aright, we shall find him.” Brandes’s travelogues were praised by Hjalmar Hjorth Boyesen in Essays on Scandinavian Literature as showing “a faculty to enter sympathetically into an alien civilization, to seize upon its characteristic phases, to steal into its confidence . . . and coax from it its intimate secrets.” In the English journal the Spectator, a contemporary reviewer of Impressions of Russia asserted that Brandes “has drawn a portrait of the Russian State that in depth of insight, range of knowledge, and vividness of presentation, surpasses every contribution we are acquainted with.”

**Controversial to the End**

Brandes was at last made a professor of the University of Copenhagen in 1902. His memoir, Barndom og første ungdom (Reminiscences of My Childhood and Youth) was published in 1906. Though now ensconced in the academy, with many of his formerly controversial ideas gaining acceptance, Brandes remained an iconoclast throughout his career. He was a vocal opponent of the First World War and in 1925 elicited wide criticism when he published Saget om Jesus (Jesus: A Myth), a treatise in which he proclaimed that Jesus had never existed. Inspired in part by Nietzsche’s concept of the Übermensch, or Superman, Brandes focused much of his later career on producing biographies of extraordinary historical personages, including Wolfgang von Goethe (1914–1915), Voltaire (1916–1917), Julius Caesar (1918), and Michelangelo (1921). Brandes died on February 19, 1927.

While Brandes’s criticism has been surpassed and is little known today, his role as an early supporter of the Scandinavian writers Ibsen, Strindberg, and Kierkegaard remains significant as does his advocacy of the works of Nietzsche, whose influence continued throughout the twentieth century. In an assessment of Brandes written in the late 1890s, William Morton Payne wrote in the Bookman, “That the work of Brandes, taken as a whole, has been a contribution of great value to contemporary criticism can hardly be denied even by those the least in sympathy with his ideals. It is no more a matter of upholding in light what it lacks in sweetness, and it has the stimulating quality that comes from freshness of thought and unconventionality of utterance.” Near the end of his life, Brandes was hailed by Robert Herndon Fife in an introduction to Julius Moritzen’s Georg Brandes in Life and Letters, as “unique in his contribution to the development of European thought. . . . He is the only critic who has ever completely identified himself with the whole of Europe’s culture and the entire spirit of the age.” And in Essays in German and Comparative Literature Oskar Seidlin, assessing Brandes’s lasting significance, noted, “His critical conceptions and analyses may be completely outmoded tomorrow; but his instinct for the truly great, his fight for the recognition of the new, will testify for him. . . . He was a great discoverer, and he had the courage of his discoveries.”

**Books**

Boyesen, Hjalmar Hjorth, Essays on Scandinavian Literature, Charles Scribner’s Sons, 1895.

Moritzen, Julius, Georg Brandes in Life and Letters, D.S. Colyer, 1922.


Seidlin, Oskar, Essays in German and Comparative Literature, University of North Carolina Press, 1961.


**Periodicals**

Bookman, April 1897.


Spectator, May 17, 1890.
Mel Brooks

Mel Brooks (born 1926) transformed traditional burlesque and Jewish humor into a hit-and-miss career writing and directing film parodies of traditional Hollywood genres. His biggest success came late in his career when he adapted his first film, The Producers, into a smash Broadway musical.

From Catskills to Television

Mel Brooks was born Melvin Kaminsky in Brooklyn, New York, on June 28, 1926. He was a short and often sickly child, and his peers often ridiculed him. Reacting to this treatment, he learned how to strike back with stinging forms of abusive and satirical humor.

After serving in the U.S. Army in World War II in Europe as a combat engineer, Brooks took his talent for insults and pratfalls to the Catskills resorts, then famous for nurturing Jewish comics. For several years he performed the role of a “toomler,” a kind of court jester who would stage impromptu monologues or pretend to insult the resort staff and the customers. The roots of Brooks’s comedy were in vaudeville and burlesque, two dying forms of entertainment that emphasized physical humor, insults, sight gags, and outrageous lampooning. Among his many gags was leapng into the swimming pool fully clothed with a suit and tie.

Brooks’s style of humor was perfectly suited to early television. In 1950, desperate to get a job writing gags and skits for pioneering TV comedian Sid Caesar, Brooks auditioned by falling to his knees before Caesar and singing a comic song about himself. Caesar hired the young comic to concoct jokes for his hit series Your Show of Shows. Among the writers Brooks worked with in Caesar's stable were Woody Allen, playwright Neil Simon, and Carl Reiner. It was during these years that Brooks honed his gift for sharp, sometimes mean satire and rapid-fire wordplay. By the time Brooks parted ways with Caesar in the mid-1950s, he was earning $2,500 per show, a substantial amount in those days.

Brooks remained in television, though without regular income, as a gag writer and script doctor. He also worked on dialogue and scripts for radio and theater and occasionally appeared as a comic on television variety shows, such as 1962’s Timex All-Star Comedy Show. One of his frequent skit partners was Reiner, with whom he developed a sketch called “The 2,000-Year-Old Man,” in which Brooks played a smart-alecky Jewish curmudgeon who has seen it all and has comments on everything in history. With variations and elaboration, this routine developed into a staple on television shows and the two comics eventually had a hit record album on their hands. “The 2,000-Year-Old Man” was Brooks’s first big success.

In 1964 Brooks married actress Anne Bancroft, with whom he would have four children. That same year he did the voice-over on a cartoon film titled The Critic, playing the equivalent of the 2000-Year-Old Man commenting on modern art. The film won an Academy Award for Best Animated Short Subject. In 1965 Brooks and writer Buck Henry developed the hit television show Get Smart, a comic spoof of the spy genre. Starring Don Adams as the bumbling secret agent Maxwell Smart, Get Smart became one of the most popular shows of the late 1960s. After television audiences began to turn away from comedy and variety shows in favor of drama in the next decade, and as his radio work dried up, Brooks would see his income plummet.

Springtime for Hitler

Buoyed by the success of Get Smart, Brooks wrote and directed the low-budget movie The Producers, which was released in 1968. Starring Zero Mostel and including a role for Brooks, The Producers is a tall tale about a down-and-out theatrical producer named Max Bialystock (Mostel) who is persuaded by corrupt accountant Leo Bloom (Gene Wilder) to deliberately stage a money-losing play and abscond with the excess cash finagled from their naive, elderly investors. The two hire a neo-Nazi director and a drug-crazed hippie star (Dick Shawn) to stage a musical comedy called Springtime for Hitler, a light-hearted romp featuring the German Chancellor who waged war on Europe and exterminated six million Jews. When the show turns out to be a success, Bloom and Bialystock find themselves in trouble.
The Producers was an outrageous and risky venture that depended on audiences laughing at the idea of a Hitlerian musical little more than two decades after the end of the war, during a time when many older adults with firsthand experience of World War II and the Holocaust were still living. In fact, the film is the epitome of Brooks’s satirical attitude, and his belief that show business knows no bounds. Despite its low budget, The Producers was hailed as something of a minor comic masterpiece. Unfortunately, it flopped at the box office and was unable to buoy Brooks’s sinking income.

After getting an acting role in the black comedy Putney Swope in 1969, Brooks wrote and directed The Twelve Chairs, an adaptation of a 1928 Russian novel about a former aristocrat who has hidden his fortune in a dozen chairs. Less a satire than a straight comedy and complete with chase scenes and comic suspense—and another role for Brooks—The Twelve Chairs was also a flop, both commercially and critically.

In 1974, after several dry years, Brooks signed on with Warner Brothers to do a film based on a satirical Western story called “Tex X.” “Richard Zanuck and David Brown had it and didn’t know what to do with it,” Brooks told an interviewer for Entertainment Weekly years later. “They asked me to direct. I said, I don’t do things I don’t write. So write it, they said. I didn’t really want to. But I was broke. My wife, Anne Bancroft, was pregnant. And frankly, ‘Tex X’ was a really good idea.” Tasteful, politically incorrect—in the film Brooks plays an Indian chief—and retitled Blazing Saddles, the film became Brooks’s first big hit.

With the blockbuster success of Blazing Saddles, Brooks was off and running. Brooks was nominated for a 1974 Oscar award for Best Song for his penning of the title tune from Blazing Saddles. By the end of the same year Brooks had released a second hit, Young Frankenstein, starring Wilder. Following Brooks’s formula, Young Frankenstein, shot in black and white, lampoons the granddaddy of all monster/horror movies by imagining Wilder as the great scientist’s grandson who creates his own monster. Full of scatological humor, plot twists, silliness, and loving bows to monster movies of the past, Young Frankenstein managed to appeal both to critics and audiences, and it was nominated for Academy Awards for best adapted screenplay and for best sound.

Brooks cast himself in the lead role of his next film, Silent Movie, as a director who wants to return to the silent-movie era. His old boss, Sid Caesar, played the producer who approves the project. Among the stars appearing in the film was Bancroft. A very chancy project, the entire movie had no dialogue other than a single word—spoken, ironically, by famous mime Marcel Marceau. Full of sight gags yet nostalgic and sweeter than most Brooks films, Silent Movie was not a big box-office hit.

In 1977 Brooks took a detour from sarcasm by directing a little-known, little-seen, schmaltzy family film titled Poco Little Dog Lost. He also released his next big project, High Anxiety, a parody of Alfred Hitchcock thrillers. Vulgar and often repetitive, High Anxiety again starred Brooks in the lead role opposite Cloris Leachman. Brooks’s efforts resulted in success when he was nominated for Golden Globe awards for best musical or comedy as well as for best actor in a musical or comedy.

In 1980 Brooks tried something new. Purchasing the rights to The Elephant Man, a screenplay about the abuse suffered by a grotesquely deformed man in Victorian England, he hired virtual unknown David Lynch to direct the drama. Although Brooks produced the film he had his name removed from all publicity so audiences not confuse the film as a satirical comedy. With little fanfare, Brooks went on to produce several other serious films in the 1980s and the early 1990s, including Frances and 84 Charing Cross Road.

Winter for Mel

Brooks’s style of humor had become less popular by the 1980s, and he began using some of his favorite gags repeatedly. No joke was too tawdry and no target too sacrosanct. His 1981 film The History of the World, Part I was such a box-office disaster that Part II was never attempted. Beginning with this film, during the decade his scattershot humor ranged widely to create a series of comic vignettes ranging from the Stone Age to the French Revolution and including parodies of Hollywood Biblical epics and more recent films such as 2001: A Space Odyssey and Star Wars. He extended the parody of George Lucas’s blockbuster sci-fi adventure in the 1987 release Spaceballs. In between, he filmed a remake of Ernst Lubitsch’s To Be or Not To Be, a story about a Polish theater troupe during the early years of the Nazi occupation. Brooks and Bancroft star as the leading duo in the troupe.

Also in the 1980s, Brooks produced and contributed his vocal talent to an animated version of The 2000-Year-Old Man and acted in and produced several more films. In 1990 he did the voice-over of the character Mr. Toilet Man in Look Who’s Talking, Too. Later in the decade he released three more feature films, playing his customary roles as writer-director-producer-actor in Life Stinks, Robin Hood: Men in Tights, and Dracula: Dead and Loving It, the last film in 1995. He also produced 1992’s The Vagrant and acted in The Little Rascals, The Silence of the Hams (a little-seen satire), Screw Loose, and two episodes of the television hit sitcom Mad about You.

Well into his 70s by 2000, Brooks appeared to be at the conclusion of a successful if spotty career as a leading practitioner of crude and sometimes inspired satire. He was considered almost a relic of a bygone era, one of the last American comics to take the traditions of burlesque and Catskills humor into the 1960s and beyond by blending his gift for satire and insult with a knack for parodying the tradition of Hollywood. Nobody would have predicted that he was about to achieve a new pinnacle of success.

The Producers on Broadway

In the years after it first appeared, Brooks’s The Producers achieved increasing popularity and appreciation. Many critics began to refer to it as a comedy classic, and it became a cult favorite. At the urging of DreamWorks studio executive David Geffen and Bancroft, Brooks penned a musical
version of *The Producers* designed for the stage. Opening on April 19, 2001, and starring Nathan Lane and Matthew Broderick, the show became a mega-hit on Broadway. In fact, within a year, it had broken all Broadway box-office records, and it received a record 12 Tony awards, one for every nomination, and two of them going to Brooks as author of the show’s music and lyrics. In his acceptance speeches, as quoted in *Back Stage*, Brooks thanked his wife “for sticking with me through thin” and added: “I’d like to thank Hitler for being such a funny guy onstage.”

In the opinion of some critics, *The Producers* reflects an earlier era when shows were not as afraid of lampooning sensitive subjects. A contributor to *Time* called it “one of the best translations of a beloved movie to the stage ever…. The show delivers such a wealth of vaudeville exuberance that the few quibbles (a rather lumpy second act) are likely to fade away.” Explaining the appeal of the show in the same article, Brooks said: “You can’t compete with a despot on a soapbox. The best thing is to make him ludicrous.”

Despite its popularity, the musical also had its detractors, some of whom took issue with the way *The Producers* mocks gays, Jews, and Germans. Brooks reacted by defending his approach. “There are always holier-than-thou guys,” he told Nancy Shute of *U.S. News & World Report*. “There isn’t a subject that’s taboo.”

Late in 2002 a touring version of the play began making the rounds of U.S. theaters, with plans for a London production in 2004. Buoyed by the astonishing success of his stage remake, Brooks was laying plans for revamping *Young Frankenstein* as a musical. Meanwhile, 2002 found him busy on his memoir. “I have always been a huge admirer of my own work,” Brooks told John F. Baker of *Publishers Weekly*, adding: “I’m one of the funniest and most entertaining writers I know. And I just can’t wait to read my book.”

**Books**


**Periodicals**

*Back Stage*, June 8, 2001.


*Entertainment Weekly*, March 1, 2000; May 25, 2001; December 6, 2002.

*People*, December 31, 2001


**Online**

determined to force a change. Capitalizing on a family friendship with President Theodore Roosevelt, she went to the White House to bring the Native Americans’ plight to Roosevelt’s attention and explain the need to preserve their native art and culture. Burlin’s plea was successful, as detailed in the preface to The Indians’ Book: “Thus, for example, the singing of Indian songs in the Indian schools came to be not only officially permitted, but encouraged. . . . Congress . . . found funds sufficient for a short-lived effort to record officially the music of the various tribes. At last the Indian child in the government school and the adult on the reservation were allowed a freedom of racial consciousness and a spiritual liberty theretofore almost tyrannically denied.”

Called Tawi-Mana (song maid) by the tribes, Burlin was given official permission to record Native American songs, and Roosevelt himself became personally involved in the project, eventually traveling to the reservation in 1913 for the Hopi flute and snake ceremonies. The visit was detailed in “Theodore Roosevelt in Hopi Land,” an article Burlin wrote for Outlook magazine.

**Published The Indians’ Book**

The Indians’ Book, published in 1907, was a collection of songs and stories gathered from 18 tribes. Lavishly illustrated with photographs and artwork contributed by Native American artists, it contained Burlin’smeticulous handwritten transcriptions of songs, although she noted in the chapter on the Hopi Native Americans that “[t]o seize on paper the spirit of . . . [such] music is a task as impossible as to put on canvas the shimmer and glare of the desert.” The songs were interspersed with stories of Burlin’s travels among the Indians, illustrating not only the unique aspects of each tribe’s culture but their humanity.

Burlin held herself to a strict standard, refusing to add or delete anything from the songs she transcribed. The book’s title reflected her overwhelming belief that she was only “the white recorder,” as she called herself. She described her technique in the chapter on Hopi Indians: “[I]n rhythmic monotone the old man crooned beside me. Long and diligently I worked. . . . It was no light task to fix the chant in musical notation. I saw the question in the chief’s eyes: ‘I have sung the song; why does it take so long to make those black marks on the paper?’ And I said, ‘Lolomai [Very Good One], you know that when the Hopi sets a trap for the blackbird, sometimes it is long before he can catch his fluttering prey. Your song is a wild blackbird to me, and it may be that the sun will move far along the sky before I have captured it.’”

Once transcribed and recorded, the Native American music brought to light by Burlin caught the attention of other musicians. One of them, her former teacher Ferruccio Busoni, used a collection of Native American melodies as the basis of his Indian Fantasy. The piece was first performed in 1915 by the Philadelphia Orchestra, conducted by the famous director Leopold Stokowski. The Natalie Curtis Burlin website quotes her reaction: “With the first bars of the orchestral introduction . . . the walls melted away, and I was in the West, filled again with that awing sense of vastness, of solitude, of immensity.”

**Became Interested in African American Music**

Burlin’s work with Native Americans convinced her of the need to promote minority rights in American society. Although she continued to travel in the American West and remained a lifelong advocate for Native Americans, Burlin broadened her scholarly focus in the years following The Indians’ Book publication. Around 1910 she began to record and transcribe African American music at the Hampton Institute in Hampton, Virginia, a university established in 1868 to educate former slaves. The famous philanthropist George Foster Peabody, who funded much of her work, was a trustee at Hampton. Like Burlin, he wanted to expand educational opportunities for blacks.

The following year, Burlin and the violinist David Mannes founded the Music School Settlement for Colored People in New York, intending, as the website explains, “to preserve and develop black music and provide musical education for children.” Her efforts did not stop there, however. In 1912 Burlin was among a group of musicians who sponsored the first concert featuring black musicians at Carnegie Hall. The audience ranged from well-known professional musicians to everyday folks who simply loved music; music editors from the New York papers were also in attendance. Burlin was thrilled with the 123-member Clef Club orchestra directed by James Reese Europe. The website quotes her: “It was an astonishing sight, that Negro orchestra . . . Europe uplifted his baton and the orchestra began (with an accuracy of ‘attack’ that many a great band might envy) . . . [A]s one looked through the audience, one saw heads swaying and feet tapping in time to the incisive rhythm, and when the marse neared the end, and the whole band burst out singing as well as playing, the novelty of this climax—a novelty to the whites, at least—brought a very storm of tumultuous applause.”

In 1917, Burlin married Paul Burlin, an artist who was also enchanted by the beauty of the American Southwest. They were married in Taos, New Mexico, which had already become known as an artists’ colony, thanks in part to Natalie Burlin’s efforts. The couple created “The Deer Dance,” a pageant based on Pueblo Indian ceremonies. Burlin—now Natalie Curtis Burlin—based the music on native songs, and her husband designed sets and costumes.

**Published Negro Folk-Songs**

In 1918 Burlin, in association with the Hampton Institute, published the first of four volumes entitled Negro Folk-Songs, each one a collection of songs for a male quartet. Books I and II were collections of spirituals; Books III and IV were, as noted on the title page, “work- and play-songs.” As she had with The Indians’ Book, Burlin strove to record, not change, the music she heard, noting in the foreword to the first volume: “These notations of Negro folk-songs are faithful efforts to place on paper an exact record of the old traditional plantation songs as sung by Negroes. . . . I have added nothing and I have striven to omit nothing.” True to
Burlin’s philanthropic ideals, all proceeds from the volumes went to the Hampton Institute.

As she had on the Native American reservations, Burlin used her Edison recorder to capture the songs’ intricate harmonies and rhythms. “I lack entire faith in the study of wax records afar from the live voice of the singer,” Burlin noted in the Foreword to Book II, “...but the phonograph with its wealth of recorded detail...is an invaluable adjunct to the higher spiritual task of assimilating the folk-idiom and translating it mentally into terms of notation.”

Her interest in the Negro Folk-Songs books led Burlin to study the roots of black American music. She spent a year working with two African students at Hampton, one a Zulu from Natal (now South Africa), the other from Portuguese East Africa (now Mozambique), recording their songs and learning about the religions and cultures of their respective societies. She intended to include these African songs in the American volumes, but decided instead to publish them separately as Songs and Tales from the Dark Continent in 1920.

Challenged White Hegemony

The Burlins moved to Paris in 1921. Her husband, who had begun to explore abstract and expressionist art, found the cultural climate in the United States too restrictive and chafed at the criticism he encountered even from fellow artists. He found the European arts community more supportive. The move was a welcome one for his wife, whose earlier studies in Paris had made her familiar with the city. It also enabled her to attend the International Congress of Art History, held that year in Paris, as a delegate.

For all of her care and concern for the peoples she studied and whose rights she promoted, Burlin’s views, seen with the clarity of historical distance, seem condescending. She referred to the Native Americans as “simple people” and “children of the desert” and portrayed their culture in an unrealistic and idealized light. Her views of African Americans could be considered patronizing: “The Negroes possess an intuitive gift for part-singing,” she noted in the foreword to Book I. “This instinct, transplanted to America and influenced by European music, has flowered into the truly extraordinary harmonic talent found in the singing of even the most ignorant Negroes of our Southern States.” It “makes one wonder at the possibilities of the race,” she mused in Book IV.

In her day, however, Natalie Curtis Burlin was ahead of her time in her advocacy for the rights of all peoples and all cultures. The preface to The Indians’ Book quotes her fervent belief that “only when we admit that each race owes something to the other, only when we realize our vast mutual human indebtedness, may we hope for...inter-racial...tolerance, understanding, and co-operation...” Speaking to the Congress of Art History, she railed against “the everlasting monopoly of the white race,” and praised the “12 million Negroes who are ‘good enough’ Americans to die for American ideals in our wars.” She defended America’s multicultural heritage, saying, “All America is not New England, but an agglomeration of races with a rich and diverse folklore.”

The speech, unfortunately, would prove to be one of her last public pronouncements. Only a few weeks later, on October 23, 1921, she was struck and killed by a speeding automobile in Paris while stepping off a streetcar.

Books

Burlin, Natalie Curtis, The Indians’ Book: An Offering by the American Indians of Indian Lore, Musical and Narrative, to Form a Record of the Songs and Legends of Their Race, Dover, 1968.


Online


Carol Burnett

For 11 years beginning in 1967, Carol Burnett (born 1933) was the undisputed leader in television entertainment. On her long-running program for the CBS television network, The Carol Burnett Show, the multi-talented Burnett expanded and upgraded the concept of the television variety show, mixing song and dance routines, elegant costumes, and zany humor sketches in ways that appealed to a massive popular audience. She was one of the first actors to be allowed complete control of every aspect of the show’s creation, without excessive interference from network brass. Since the show’s final season in 1978, Burnett has remained active as a producer, actor, and playwright who is respected by her colleagues for her strong work ethic and adored by her audiences for her decidedly unpretentious demeanor.

Burnett was born on April 26, 1933, in San Antonio, Texas; her family moved to Hollywood, California when she was three. Her father suffered from alcoholism and chronic tuberculosis; her mother was a quick-tempered alcoholic who aspired to become a writer within Hollywood social circles. Her parents divorced when she was eight and Burnett was raised by her grandmother on her mother’s side, a feisty old woman who instilled the young girl with values, as well as taking her to the movies up to eight times a week (Burnett’s signature ear-tug at the close of her shows was a tribute to “Nanny”). “You might say ‘poor’ thing when you heard my parents drank and we were
on relief," the actor told Newsday reporter Blake Green in 1999, "but that was the way it was with everyone in that neighborhood. I never had a picture that anything could be different, except in the movies, and I knew that was fantasy."

When Burnett started college, she got a job as an usher at a Warner Brothers-owned movie theater. She was fired after she refused to seat a couple during the last five minutes of an Alfred Hitchcock movie. When Burnett was given her star on the Hollywood Walk of Fame in 1975, she asked that it be placed in front of that theater.

Burnett attended UCLA in 1951, originally to pursue a degree in English writing. She attended an actor's workshop and was so significantly enamored with the craft that she decided it would be her calling. As part of her final exam for her theater major, her theater professor made the class perform at an elegant black-tie party he was holding. A patron attending the party who saw Burnett perform gave her a small amount of money to go to New York City, in the hopes of entering show business. She graduated in 1954, left California for New York City and married her first husband, classmate Don Saroyan, soon afterwards. After a few stints in local shows, nightclubs, and some high-profile appearances on Jack Paar and Ed Sullivan's television shows, Burnett made it to the Broadway stage in a big way; in May 1959, she had landed the lead role as Princess Winnifred Woebegone in Once Upon A Mattress (a stage adaptation of the fable "The Princess And The Pea"), under the direction of the acclaimed director George Abbott.

While appearing in Once Upon A Mattress, Burnett was discovered by representatives for television personality Garry Moore, who had a successful evening variety show on CBS. She auditioned for the show and after a few guest appearances, she was added to the full-time cast of The Garry Moore Show in November of that year; she stayed on until 1962. Audiences were enamored by Burnett's physical comedy, goofball facial contortions, and self-deprecating antics. While working on the Moore show, Burnett still found the time to record an album, appear in plays, host a radio show, and guest star in television shows, including an episode of The Twilight Zone. Her success had taken a toll on her marriage, however, and in late September of that year, she and Saroyan divorced.

After leaving the The Garry Moore Show, Burnett appeared on Broadway in the short-lived Fade Out-Fade In, some television specials, and opposite Dean Martin in her first film, Who's Been Sleeping In My Bed? She was offered the lead role in a musical comedy called The Luckiest People but suggested to the producers that they instead cast a then-unknown actress named Barbara Streisand (the show was later retitled Funny Girl). In May 1963, she married Joe Hamilton, a successful television producer she met on the set of the Moore show. But Burnett's biggest accomplishment was yet to come. During her frenetic schedule, representatives from CBS kept enticing the multi-talented performer with offers to perform in her own television show. Finally, on September 11, 1967, The Carol Burnett Show premiered on the network, with Burnett at center-stage, alongside a cast of regulars including Harvey Korman, Lyle Waggoner, and Vicki Lawrence.

The show was a vehicle for Burnett's range of talents, as well as a distillation of what she enjoyed in her various show-business experiences. She would start every show with a question-and-answer session with the audience, an idea she borrowed from her stint on Garry Moore's show (Moore never filmed his pre-show audience interactions for broadcast). Over the next 11 years, the show had amassed a dedicated following of viewers who tuned in to see an array of Burnett creations ranging from the lonely charwoman (a trademark character that Burnett never really thought that highly of); the high-strung Eunice Higgins (which fostered a spin-off show, Mama's Place, starring Lawrence as the elderly matron); and the highly inept office secretary Wanda Wiggins. The troupe was quite fond of doing parodies of television soap operas and classic movies. One of the show's most famous moments was during a parody of the motion picture Gone With The Wind (titled Went With The Wind). Then-fledgling designer Bob Mackie outfitted Burnett's Scarlett O'Hara character in a gown made of hanging curtains—with the rod still attached. That skit generated the longest laugh (reportedly ten minutes) from a studio audience in the history of the show. Veteran comedic actor Tim Conway joined the cast full time in 1975, adding an element of surprise with his keen improvising skills. Many viewers would tune into the show each night to see Conway routinely crack-up Burnett and the rest of the cast in mid-scene.

Sensing that the program had run its course, Burnett decided in February 1978 to end the show on a high note.
instead of wearing out her welcome. After 11 years, 286 shows, and being honored by her peers with 22 Emmy Awards, The Carol Burnett Show ended on March 17, 1978. The two-hour show included a recap of classic footage, some long-running characters with new routines (Eunice Wiggins and Mama finally saw a family counselor), some guest appearances, and Burnett reprising her charwoman character for a final emotional farewell. As author J. Randy Taraborrelli succinctly stated in his 1988 Burnett biography, Laughing Till It Hurts, “She tugged on her ear in recognition of Nanny. And then she turned around and walked into television history.”

In the years immediately following the show, Burnett became involved in a number of projects for film, stage, and television. She appeared in two movies directed by Robert Altman, 1978’s A Wedding and 1979’s H.E.A.L.T.H. She teamed up with actor Charles Grodin for a TV movie based on author Erma Bombeck’s book, The Grass Is Always Greener Over The Septic Tank, in October 1978. The following year, she starred opposite Ned Beatty in a television movie, Friendly Fire, about a couple’s search to find the truth about a son’s death in Vietnam.

Working on the politically charged film sparked Burnett to voice her political beliefs publicly for the first time in her career; she was an advocate of the Women’s Rights Movement and regularly spoke out in support of the Equal Rights Amendment. When her eldest daughter, Carrie, developed a drug addiction problem, Burnett and her husband got her medical treatment and went public with the story afterwards, a move that distanced her from much of the relentlessly secretive Hollywood elite, yet endeared her to the hearts of regular people who had friends and loved ones going through the same torment. Burnett appealed publicly for stricter drug laws and rallied against stores that routinely sold drug paraphernalia.

Unlike many show-business denizens, Burnett has continued to make her private life public in an effort to stall sensationalist stories in gossip magazines. In the mid-1970s, the National Enquirer printed an anecdote that she was being drunk and disorderly in a Washington, D.C. restaurant. Incensed by the fabrication—and personally wounded because of how alcohol destroyed her parents—Burnett sued the paper. After seven years in the courts, a jury sided with the actor and awarded her a hefty sum. She gave the proceeds to charity.

In July 1981, she appeared as the treacherous Miss Hannigan in the film version of the musical, Annie and starred alongside Elizabeth Taylor in the HBO production, Between Friends, in 1984. Burnett’s workload had put a strain on her marriage to producer Hamilton, and the two divorced in the spring of 1984.

In 1986, Burnett turned to writing, putting together One More Time, a memoir of her early childhood years growing up in Texas and California that took the form of an open letter to her three daughters, Carrie, Jody, and Erin. She returned to Broadway in 1995 in the comedic farce Moon Over Buffalo and appeared in several television specials. She also performed in the 1999 Stephen Sondheim tribute, Putting It Together.

In 1998, at the suggestion of her eldest daughter Carrie (herself a writer and actor), Burnett and Carrie collaborated on the script for a play based on One More Time. The project, Hollywood Arms (named after the building that housed the one-room apartment Carol and her grandmother lived in) was both fruitful and troubling for Burnett, as Carrie was under medical supervision for cancer. Sadly, Burnett’s daughter died from lung cancer in January 20, 2002, just prior to the rehearsals before the project’s Halloween 2002 premiere. When Newsweek writer Marc Peyser asked Burnett if her daughter would be proud of Arms landing on Broadway, she responded, “No matter what happens to our play, my baby and I went the distance. For that, I’m grateful.”

During the writing of Hollywood Arms, Burnett took time out to do a speaking tour of the United States. The format of the program was the same question-and-answer sessions that ran at the beginning of each episode of her network series. The fact that audiences paid to see and hear Burnett answer questions, reminisce on her career, accept complements, and do her classic Tarzan yell, was a testimony to her affable and charismatic personality.

In November 2001, at age 69, Burnett secretly wed her third husband, Brian Miller, a percussionist for the Hollywood Bowl Orchestra. And although Burnett has been given generous offers to return to network television to host her own program, she has steadfastly refused. She cites the high cost of mounting a variety show production (back in the day, many of designer Mackie’s gowns alone fell within the $30,000 to $50,000 price range) as well as having to deal with meddling “suits” from network offices making “suggestions” and demanding changes. Her original show has remained in syndication for years (under the title Carol Burnett And Friends), edited to a half-hour format with the musical numbers excised, due to regulations from the Musicians Union.

Books

Periodicals
Chicago Tribune, June 1996.
CNN: Larry King Live, October 2002.
Interview, October 1994.
Kitchener-Waterloo Record, April 2002.
Los Angeles Times, October 2000.
Newsweek, October 2002.
People, October 1997.
Dick Button

Dick Button (born 1929), a dominant force in figure skating in the late 1940s and early 1950s, was instrumental in developing the sport in America. He is the only male figure skater to clench the “grand slam” of skating, winning the United States, North American, European, World, and Olympic championships in the same year. Button later became a somewhat controversial commentator on figure skating for television.

Richard Totten Button was born on July 18, 1929, in Englewood, New Jersey, the son of George and Evelyn B. (Totten) Button. He and his two older brothers, Jack and George, were raised in wealth and privilege. Button began skating when he was five years old, using his brothers’ old skates.

When Button was 11 years old, he received his first pair of skates for Christmas. He wanted figure skates, but received hockey skates from his father. The skates were exchanged, but Button’s burgeoning figure skating career was almost cut short again. The youngster was 5’2” and weighed 160 lbs. His first coach did not believe he had any ability and would never learn to skate.

Early Skating Success

Button’s parents found him another coach. He was first taught by Joe Carroll in New York City in 1942 and eventually would train with a coach who would become famous for instructing Olympians, Swiss-born Gustave Lussi. Button attended public schools in Englewood, New Jersey, until high school, when he attended the private Englewood School for Boys. For the next ten years, during his summers off from school, Button would train with Lussi in Lake Placid, New York, where the 1932 Winter Olympics had been held.

Button soon proved he had great natural ability. Combined with intense training and great coaching, he soon had success in competition. Button also grew into a 6’1” frame. In 1943, he placed second at the Eastern States novice singles championships. Showing his competitive spirit, Button was unhappy with his second place win. Later that year, he won first title. Button won the major novice singles championship at the Middle Atlantic States competition. He went on to win national men’s novice (1944) and junior titles (1945).

In 1946, Button capped his rise to the top of American men’s figure skating by winning the U.S. national senior singles championship, in Chicago, Illinois. He was only 16 years old at the time, the youngest man to win the title. Button had to come from behind to win, as he placed second after compulsory figures. This marked the first and only time a figure skater won the novice, junior, and senior titles in succession. Button would go on to win the men’s singles title every year through 1952.

Changed Skating Style

Button competed at the 1947 World Championships, the first World’s held since 1939 because of World War II. He placed second to Hans Gerschweiler, though some believed Button should have won. This finish prompted Button to change his skating style. In addition to becoming more precise in his school figures, more importantly, he became more bold and daring in his free skate.

The new approach in free skate allowed Button to emphasize power in his spins and jumps, becoming more
artistically daring. He also focused on developing new jumps and spins, especially jumps. Button was encouraged in his pursuit by Lussi, who was a disciplinarian but also supported Button’s quest for innovation. Button’s work in this area paid off in 1948 when he won his first world championship. This marked the beginning of his fame as a powerful figure skater. Button would go on to win the world championship every year through 1952.

While Button was reaching the summit of the figure skating world, he still attended Englewood Boys School. He lettered in football and played baseball there, but figure skating was his main focus. Button skated for hours every day, rising early for school, to skate, and to pursue other sports. He graduated in 1947 then took a year off of school to train for the 1948 Olympics.

To practice for the Olympics, Button competed in the 1948 European championships in Prague, Czechoslovakia. Not only did this competition assist Button in preparing for the Olympic games, it allowed him to show off his newly developed style to the judges so they might be more favorable later on. It was the first time an American competed, and Button impressed the judges enough to win the title. After this victory, non-Europeans were excluded from competing for the championship.

**Won First Olympic Gold**

Button cemented his status as a leading figure skater at the 1948 Winter Olympics in St. Moritz, Switzerland. This was the first time the Olympics had been held since 1936. Button was leading after school figures, then won the gold medal with his free skate.

Button’s free skate was innovative for several reasons. He did two moves on the ice that had not been done before in world competition. Button did the first double axel (a jump that rotated in the air for two-and-a-half rotations) and the Button camel (the first version of the flying camel, a jump into a spin). Button landed the double axel for the first time two days before the competition, then landed it perfectly in competition.

Button won the Olympic Gold Medal when eight of nine judges gave him first place. In 1948, Button won all five major championships: Olympic, European, World, North American, and United States. He was the only American to accomplish it, and the first man to ever do it. Button’s win marked the beginning of American influence in skating, which had been dominated by Europeans for a number of years. Button’s new style made free skate more important than the compulsory figures, which had previously been the more important part of competition. Eventually, figures would be eliminated and it was the free skate that would attract audiences.

**Entered Harvard University**

In the fall of 1948, Button entered Harvard University. He could have gone to Yale University, but Yale would not let him take time off to compete as a skater. While attending college, Button continued to win the World and U.S. championships, as well as a number of North American championships.

In 1949, Button won the Sullivan Award as the United States’ outstanding amateur athlete. This was the first time a figure skater won the prestigious award, the finest honor an amateur athlete could receive. Button’s win also showed the increased importance of figure skating.

As Button continued to win major competitions, he also was more innovative as a skater. He developed a number of jump combinations. In 1949, he came up with the double loop combo of two double loops. In 1950, Button devised a triple double loop. In 1951, he did a double axel, double loop. These combinations would go on to become something many high level skaters would learn.

**Won Second Olympic Gold**

In 1952, Button repeated his gold medal victory at the Olympic Games in Oslo, Norway. Again, button achieved something no skater had done before. He landed a triple loop in his free skate program, the first time he or any skater had done a triple jump in competition. Button was in the lead after school figures, but would have lost the gold medal had he not landed the triple loop.

The evolution of Button’s triple loop was one of frustration. Button had spent the summer of 1951 trying to execute the jump, but some coaches thought it would be impossible. He became so focused on the triple loop that it negatively affected his ability to do his other jumps. Button finally let it go for a while, only to try again just before Christmas in 1951. This time, Button finally got the feel for jump and was able to do it at the Olympic Games.

Button liked winning gold medals, but he told Vinny DiTrani of The Record, “Being handed the gold medal is like being presented the Nobel Prize for peace. It’s a thrill, but there were even greater thrills along the way when you were doing the things for world peace that earned you the honor.”

**Retired as an Amateur**

In 1952, Button graduated from Harvard with his B.A. The university later gave him a special Harvard “H” for athletics. He also retired from amateur competition. Button became a professional figure skater touring with the Ice Capades during his vacations from Harvard Law School. Button graduated from law school in 1956 and passed the bar in Washington, D.C., but never really practiced. He continued to skate, appearing in a Goodwill Tour of Moscow, USSR, in 1959.

**Became Commentator**

In the early 1960s, Button started for ABC and other television networks as a color/expert commentator for figure skating competitions. He was considered as controversial for his opinions as he was hard on skaters. Some considered him fair, but others believed he played favorites.

Describing his technique as an announcer, Button told Jane Leavy of the Washington Post, “I have carte blanche to say anything I want. I’ve never been cut, called down, or told to shut up. When I’ve asked for guidance, they say, ‘Tell it the way you see it.’ If anyone holds back, I do. I’m
reporting skating to 200 million people in the country. Probably only 25,000 to 50,000 understand the sport and only 1,000 really understand. My job is to educate them and make them aware of it.” Button won an Emmy for his commentary in 1981 as Outstanding Sports Personality Analyst.

Button was also associated with television in another way. He formed a television production company with partner Paul Feigay, Candid Productions. This company produced sport and entertainment series that included national and world figure skating and gymnastics, horse shows, and national pentathlon. Button’s company also created sports-oriented programs, such as The Superstars, The Superteams, and The Battle of the Network Stars. These were reality, made-for-television sports competitions that were very popular in the 1970s, but also continued to air in the 1980s and 1990s. Button also created figure skating championships through this company, including the World Professional Figure Skating Championship in 1980.

Button, involved in another aspect of the entertainment world, invested in and produced a number of stage productions in New York City, primarily on Broadway. Among these productions were Sweet Sue with Mary Tyler Moore and Artist Descending a Staircase. Button also did some appearances himself. He skated in Hans Brinker and the Silver Skates for television and was an actor in movies like The Young Doctors and stage productions such as South Pacific.

Married to Slava Kohout, with whom he had two children, Emily and Edward, Button was considered one of the best figure skaters ever. International Figure Skating publisher, Mark A. Lund, as quoted by Business Wire when Button was selected to be man of the century for figure skating, said “No other individual in the 20th century represents the sport better than Dick Button. From his technical innovations to his creation of the world of professional figure skating competitions with the World Pro, Dick Button has by far had the most influence on the sport during the last century.”

Books
Malone, John, The Encyclopedia of Figure Skating, Facts on File, Inc., 1998.

Periodicals
Record, February 14, 1992.

Online
Australian director and screenwriter Jane Campion (born 1954) created a number of films with strong female protagonists starting in the late 1980s. Among the best known of her works was the Academy-award-winning film The Piano (1993).

Campion was born on April 30, 1954, in Wellington, New Zealand, the daughter of Richard Campion and Edith Armstrong. Her father was a theater director and her mother was an actress. They had met when both were students at the Old Vic in England. Together, they co-founded the New Zealand Players. Campion was raised in Wellington, with her older sister, Anna, with whom she would later collaborate, and her younger brother, Michael.

While Campion was interested in acting, she did not immediately follow the family tradition. Instead, she attended Victoria University in Wellington and earned a bachelor’s degree in structural anthropology. She then went to Europe where she studied art in Venice, among other places. Eventually, she went to London where she worked as an assistant for a filmmaker who did documentaries and commercials. She also studied at the Chelsea School of Arts in London.

Became Interested in Film

Campion finished her diploma in art at the Sydney College of Arts in Sydney, Australia. She majored in painting and sculpting, but she discovered her true calling during her last year at the college, when she began making super-8 films. Her first short film, Tissues (1980), got her into film school.

In 1981, Campion entered the Australian Film Television and Radio School. There, she made three significant short films. She was the director, writer, and editor of Peel (1982), which focused on a power struggle over discipline between a father and a son. In 1984, she made Passionless Moments and Girl’s Own Story, the latter focusing on brother-sister incest.

After graduating from the school in 1984, Campion spent several years working with the government-funded Women’s Film Unit. She wrote and directed After Hours (1984) a film about sexual harassment. Campion then moved into television. She directed an episode of the series Dancing Daze. In 1985, she directed her first television movie, Two Friends, which was released theatrically in the United States in 1996. The film focused on a female friendship and how it changed over time and was told in reverse chronological order.

Early Features

In 1986, Campion won the Palme D’Or at the Cannes Film Festival for best short film for Peel, garnering her much attention. She then began working on the script, with former boyfriend Gerald Lee, for what became her first feature film, Sweetie. The disturbing black comedy was released in 1989 and won several prizes.

Sweetie focuses on a dysfunctional family. The movie tells the story of Kay, a shy woman who is engaged to Louis but cannot enjoy life. Her already sad world is turned upside down when her sister, Dawn, also known as Sweetie, enters her life again. Dawn is obese, mentally unstable, and uncontrollable, and she was doted on by her parents her whole life. Dawn was led to believe that she was bound for show
business since childhood, and her actions and needs take over her entire family and the movie.

Audiences and critics often had extreme reactions to *Sweetie*, positive and negative. Vincent Canby of the *New York Times* wrote: “It is funny, though one doesn’t often laugh at it, and sad, without ever asking for tears. Instead, it demands that it be taken on its own spare terms without regard to the sentimental conventions of other movies. At its best, it is audaciously unreasonable.”

In 1990, Campion directed her second feature, originally made for New Zealand television as a miniseries. It was *Angel at My Table*, a movie about author Janet Frame adapted from her autobiography. The film had a dreamy, slow quality and focused on how men controlled, betrayed, and condemned Frame.

*Angel at My Table* depicts all of Frame’s tragic life. After a difficult childhood, Frame worked briefly as a teacher before having a nervous breakdown. She was misdiagnosed as a schizophrenic and forced to live in a mental institution for eight years. After receiving hundreds of electroshock treatments, Frame was nearly lobotomized until a doctor discovered that she had won a literary prize for poetry. Frame left the institution and eventually found her calling as a writer.

Though *Angel at My Table* received mixed reviews in the United States, it was generally liked. The film won a number of prizes, including the Silver Lion at the Venice Film Festival. In many ways, this was Campion’s break-through film, setting the stage for her biggest artistic triumph, *The Piano* (1993).

**Acclaimed for The Piano**

Though *The Piano* began with some development money from the Australian Film Commission, the film was Campion’s first big-budget production, financed with French money. Campion had been working on the script since 1984, and she had long wanted to do a story about the colonial days of New Zealand.

Set in 1850, *The Piano* focuses on a mute Scottish woman named Ada, who does not speak only because she chooses not to. Her only means of communication is her piano. She has an illegitimate, young daughter, who is just as free-spirited as her mother. Ada enters into an arranged marriage with a New Zealander and moves to that country. Her new husband, Stewart, is a farmer who will not take the piano to their new home. He sells it to a man, Baines, who lives with the natives. Baines offers to give the piano back to Ada if she teaches him to play. Ada and Baines eventually become lovers, and after several plot turns, Ada leaves her husband for him.

*The Piano* was a huge international hit. It won numerous awards, including the Palme d’Or at Cannes. Campion was the first female director to win that award. She was also nominated for the Academy Award for best director.

Campion was developing a solid reputation as a film director. Actor Sam Neill, who played Stewart, told Mary Cantwell of the *New York Times Magazine*, “Jane works in an unusually intimate way with people. When you’re an actor, you’re always putting yourself in other people’s hands anyway, and she repays the gesture many times over. Jane’s interested in complexity, not reductiveness, and very sure of what she’s doing. If you have an opinion contrary to hers, she listens with the greatest care and consideration, then does what she had in mind all along.”

The same year that *The Piano* was released, Campion formed a production company, Big Shell Films, with her producer-director husband Colin Englert. Also that year, the couple had a son, Jasper, who died 12 days after birth. In 1994, their daughter Alice was born.

**Later Films**

Campion’s films after *The Piano* could not match its success. In 1996, she directed an adaptation of Henry James’ novel *The Portrait of a Lady*. The story focuses on Isabel Archer (Nicole Kidman), an American expatriate who lets her potential die and enters into an unhappy marriage with Gilbert Osmond. Reviews of the film were mixed and box office returns paltry.

In 1999, Campion directed and co-wrote, with her sister Anna, *Holy Smoke*, a contemporary story about religion, cults, and male-female relationships. The plot focuses on Ruth Barroon, a young woman from the suburbs of Sydney, Australia, who joins a religious cult in India to find enlightenment and spirituality. Ruth returns to her home after a desperate visit by her mother. When she comes home, she finds that her family has tricked her and hired a
deprogammer, J.P. Waters, to force her out of the cult. Ruth ends up manipulating Waters, and the pair become lovers.

While many critics praised the themes of the movie, the script was seen as conventional and obvious. As Janet Maslin wrote in the New York Times, “as Holy Smoke moves from its early mix of rapture and humor into this more serious, confrontational stage, it runs into trouble. For one thing, the characters as written are an impressionable young woman and a tough older man. . . . And it doesn’t help that the screenplay . . . threatens to become head-handedly ideological beneath its outward whimsy.”

Campion’s next movie was a Hollywood production. In 2002, she adapted the best-selling novel, In the Cut. Her first film set in the United States, In the Cut is an erotic thriller focused on a female linguist who falls in love with a cop who is investigating a serial killer. Originally, In the Cut was supposed to star Kidman, but she was replaced by Meg Ryan. Campion encountered problem when Miramax dropped the film, but it was scheduled for distribution in 2003.

Throughout her career, Campion was generally regarded as an important original female voice who depicted strong women characters. As Jay Carr of the Boston Globe wrote in 1999, “With her embrace of the bizarre and the private, Jane Campion has become film’s poet of the human interior. It’s not so much her way of focusing on the suppressed voices of women that marks her art. Rather, it’s her stubborn belief that these voices will be heard, sooner or later, one way or another. . . . Campion’s films are genuflections to the staying power of powerless woman.”

Books

Periodicals

Online

Thomas Campion
An English poet best known during his lifetime as an author of Latin poetry, Thomas Campion (1567–1620) is chiefly remembered for his songs for voice and lute and a number of masques celebrating occasions at court. He produced theoretical writings on music composition and in Observations in the Art of English Poesie (1602) called for the use of classical meter in English poetry.

Campion was born to John and Lucy Campion in St. Andrew’s parish, Holborn, on February 12, 1567. His father died in 1576, and his mother, who was the daughter of one of the queen’s sergeants-at-arms, remarried but was soon widowed. After remarrying again, Campion’s mother died herself, and from 1580 he was raised by his stepfather, Augustine Steward. Campion was educated at Peterhouse, Cambridge, but left in 1584 without taking a degree. During the late 1580s he studied law at Gray’s Inn, where he developed an interest in musical arts and participated in dramatic performances but never completed his legal training. Based on evidence in his writings, biographers believe he left England in 1591 to accompany Robert Devereux, Second Earl of Essex, on a military campaign to Rouen, in Normandy.

In 1601 Campion and his friend, Philip Rosseter, a musician in the court of King James, collaborated on the volume A Booke of Ayres. Campion contributed the first 21 songs and a prose exposition on music theory. Campion related the composition of an ayre to that of an epigram in poetry, praising simplicity and condemning the popular madrigal style of the era as overly complex. He wrote in the preface to Book of Ayres, “what Epigrams are in poetrie, the same are ayres in musick, then in their chief perfection when they are short and well seasoned.” His musical contributions to the volume include “Though You Are Young and I Am Old;” “Come, Let Us Sound with Melody,” a rendering of Psalm 19 in Sapphic meter; and “I Care Not for These Ladies.”

Observations in the Art of English Poesie, Campion’s treatise on poetry, was published in 1602. In it he denounced rhyming verse as facile and inartistic and advocated instead the use of classical, quantitative meters, that is meters based on quantity—determined by duration, or the time it takes to express a syllable—rather than on accent. As an example of his theory, he exhibited “Rose-Cheekt Lawra:” “Rose-cheekt Lawra, come / Sing thou smoothly with thy beawties / Silent musick, either other / Sweetely gracing.”

During this same period Campion went abroad to pursue medical studies at the University of Caen in Normandy. He returned to England a degree physician and set up a medical practice in London in 1605. While his profes-
sion provided necessary income, he continued his artistic pursuits, and in 1607 he produced the Lord Hay’s Masque, a presentation at the court of King James celebrating the marriage of James Hay, a Scottish courtier later created first Earl of Carlisle, to Honora Denny, the daughter of a wealthy English nobleman. Depicting the resolution of a disagreement between Diana and the knights of Apollo through the intervention of Hesperus, the masque reflects the symbolic union of Scotland and England in the nuptial occasion and the actual union of the countries under James’s rule.

Campion returned to theoretical writing with A New Way of Making Fowre Parts in Counter-point, published circa 1610. In it he advocates using the bass line rather than the tenor as the basis of musical harmony, a shift in composition that Anthony Burgess called “innovative” in a 1970 review of Campion’s works.

In November 1612, during the preparations for Campion’s next court masque (a celebration of the marriage of Princess Elizabeth to Frederick, Elector Palatine), the sudden, unexpected death of Henry, the Prince of Wales, inspired Campion’s Songs of Mourning, a collection of elegies and epigrams on medical subjects and elegies on love and faithfulness. Tho. Campiani Epigrammatum Libri II. Umbra. Eligiarum liber unus, Campion’s final work, was published in 1619. This work enlarges and revises his earlier Latin poetry, including Ad Thamesin, and presents a number of new epigrams on medical subjects and elegies on love and faithfulness. Umbra narrates the tragic story of Iolde and her son Melampus. According to Dana F. Sutton, “the poem deals with destructive dreams and beguiling false visions” and through its subtext suggests that “physical beauty, and the love it engenders is a destructive snare and delusion.”

Campion died in London on March 1, 1620, and was buried at St. Dunstan’s in the West, Fleet Street.

In the century following his death, Campion’s reputation diminished as new styles of music and poetry evolved. Interest in his compositions was revived during the early twentieth century with the publication of Campion’s Works, edited by Percival Vivian in 1909. Commentators of the era generally favored the achievement of his lyrics over his songwriting, a view held by Bruce Pattison, who in 1946 called Campion “the finest lyric poet of his age.” A later estimation, advanced by Anthony Burgess in 1970, holds that “Campion is possibly unique in possessing a total mastery of both crafts . . . and a precise knowledge of the relationship between them. In both he was not merely an inspired empiric but a powerful theorist.” Of his dramatic works, biographer David Lindley has noted in the Dictionary of Literary Biography that “Campion’s masques are significant examples of their kind. In them may be traced the evolution of the early Jacobean masque, its music and scene design. Each of them offers an interesting gloss on the significant political events they celebrated. If their symbolism is fully and sympathetically understood then often-repeated criticism of Campion’s lack of structural ability is shown to be false.” In 1996 Jorgens summarized, “Campion’s importance for nondramatic literature of the English Renaissance lies in the exceptional intimacy of the musical-poetic connection in his work. While other poets
and musicians talked about the union of the two arts, only Campion produced complete songs wholly of his own composition, and only he wrote lyric poetry of enduring literary value whose very construction is deeply etched with the poet’s care for its ultimate fusion with music.”

**Books**


**Periodicals**


**Online**


---

**Ion Luca Caragiale**

Often considered the voice of Romanian literature and his native country’s best playwright, Ion Luca Caragiale (1852–1912) reflected the language, people, and concerns of Romania in his work. Caragiale was best known for his eight plays—most of which were social comedies—though he also had an extensive body of fiction, dramatic criticism, other works of nonfiction, and one novella to his name.

Caragiale was born on January 30, 1852, in Haimanalele, in what was to become Romania. He was the son of Luca and Ecaterina (nee Karaba) Caragiale. His father was the eldest of three sons, who all had careers in the theater as actors, directors, and playwrights, and were of Greek origin. Luca Caragiale began as an actor, but later became a judge, lawyer, and administrator of an estate. Caragiale also had a sister.

As a child, Caragiale received his education in Ploesti, beginning in 1857. It was not a complete or particularly even education at a local grammar school, then the Ploesti Gymnasium for three years, from 1864 to 1867. In many ways, Caragiale was largely self-taught and cultivated his own study of literature.

---

**Studied Acting in Bucharest**

When Caragiale was 16, he went to Bucharest to enter the family business. He entered the acting school run by one of his uncles, Iorgiu “Costache” Caragiale. The uncle ran the Bucharest Drama Conservatory. While a student there, he studied acting, mime, and dramatic recitation. While Caragiale wanted a career in the theater, his studies were cut short because of the death of his father when he was 18 years old. He then became the sole supporter of his mother and sister.

To financially provide for his mother and sister, Caragiale worked a number of jobs, while also building a career in the theater and in publishing. He was employed in a tobacco factory, a beer garden, as a copyist for the Prahova County Court House, private tutor, and translator of French literature. In 1870, he worked as a prompter for the National Theatre in Bucharest. Caragiale was also the proofreader of two newspapers and a freelance journalist.

**Published First Works**

In the early 1870s, Caragiale began publishing sketches and poetry. In 1873 and 1875, he had sketches published in the satirical review *Ghimpele*. In 1874, Caragiale published his first poem in a review published in Bucharest. He then moved on to working as a freelance journalist, often writing theater criticism for a number of publications including *România libera* and *Convorbiri literare*. Caragiale also held several positions in running publications. In 1877, he was the publisher of *Clapomul*, a humor periodical. Caragiale both wrote for and was a member of the editorial board of *Timpul* from 1878 to 1881.

Thus, before Caragiale ever established himself as a playwright, he was somewhat known, at least in Bucharest, for his literary works. In his writing for *Convorbiri literare*, Caragiale was a recognized member of the literary circle, Junimea (which means youth). The journal was their publication. He eventually became a leader in the group, though he was forced out after ten years in the early 1880s because of his critical attitude.

**Began Writing Plays**

By the late 1870s, Caragiale began writing the plays that would cement his reputation as an important playwright in Romania. In both his plays and the prose he wrote for much of his life, he displayed an ear for the language, customs, and manner of Romanians, especially the common person, and successfully used them in comic and satirical ways. Caragiale was very observant of the human condition and our tendency towards mistakes and used what he saw and heard in his stories, which often focused on social conflicts and political corruptions. The plays, especially, were full of action and fast-paced, employing stock characters who spoke witty dialogue but often failed to succeed in their goal.

Caragiale’s first foray into writing plays was two translations of French works into verse done in 1878, *Roma Invinsa* and *Lucretia Borgia*. His first original work of importance was *O noapte furtunoasă sau numărul* (A Stormy Night,
or Number 9; 1879 or 1880). The story was centered around a love triangle between a man, Dumitrache, and wife, Veta, and the assistant of the husband/wife’s lover, Chririac. Dumitrache is a jealous and mean man who is employed as the head of the civil guard. Because of his worries about his wife, he has his assistant, Chririac, guard his home, though his assistant is already his wife’s lover. When Rica, his wife’s sister’s lover, comes to the home in error, the intricacies of the relationship are nearly revealed. Though the play was later considered important, it was originally banned from performance and labeled immoral and unpatriotic.

A second significant play from the same time period was also a satire, but more of a political comedy with similar elements of social commentary. Conul Leonida fata cu reacțiune (Mr. Leonida and the Reactionaries; 1880) also featured a couple at its center. The provincial man, Mr. Leonida, relates the story of the Romanian republic that existed for a brief three weeks, to his wife Efimita. A republican, he also tells her his idea for a utopian society. Later that night, shots ring out. At first, Leonida believes that the revolution is taking place, and later, that they reactionaries are after him because of his ideas. Both assumptions are wrong, and he learns that the shots are coming from a Shrove Tuesday celebration.

Though Conul Leonida did not have the same controversial opening as A Stormy Night, when Caragiale originally wrote it, the play featured two aristocratic characters at its center. Theater officials would not allow the play to be performed until he changed them to two provincials. This allowed the characters to be viewed as more farcical and satirical by the audience. While Caragiale was gaining much notoriety as a playwright, he was also still holding other jobs to support his family. From 1881 to 1884, he served as an inspector of schools.

**Wrote A Lost Letter**

In 1884, Caragiale wrote what many consider his masterpiece as a playwright, O scrisoare pierduta (A Lost Letter; 1884). This was a comic satire about political corruption, which explores the victory of a blackmailer in a provincial government election. Like Caragiale’s other important plays, A Lost Letter features a love triangle. The letter referred to in the title is from the wife of a candidate to an election official and is romantic in nature. The letter is lost and found by others who want to win the election and/or bring down the candidate. Caragiale’s depiction of the events surrounding this election is very cynical, with most of the characters not even being likable. Despite this, the play had a long life and was performed for many years.

Another significant play of this time period was D’ale carnavaualului (Carnival Adventures or Carnival Scenes; 1885). This complex farcical comedy was set in Bucharest during carnival time. The story focuses on romantic intrigues among the lower class characters. Several couples deceive each other and their lovers. Originally, Carnival Adventures was only performed twice because it was considered violent and crude.

As Caragiale became established as a significant playwright in Romania, he briefly held a post of importance there. For a few months at the end of 1888 and the beginning of 1889, he was the director general of the National Theatre in Bucharest. As a playwright, Caragiale was also maturing. In 1889 or 1890, he wrote Napasta (also known as False Accusations, Injustice, and False Witness), which was a tragedy-comedy but more serious than his other works. It was often compared to Fyodor Dostoyevsky’s novel Crime and Punishment and Leo Tolstoy’s The Power of Darkness. The central character is a woman named Anca. She is a widow who has remarried to the man, Dragomir, who killed her husband. He was not convicted of the crime, but his friend Ion was. The play focuses on Anca’s revenge on Dragomir. Like his other plays, Napasta was controversial in its time period.

**Stopped Writing Plays**

After Napasta, Caragiale did not write plays for the most part because he did not make much money at it and he needed to take care of his own family. In 1889, he married Alexandrina Burelly, with whom he had one son, Luca Ion—who also grew up to be a writer—and daughter Ecaterina. The couple also had another daughter who died in infancy. (Caragiale also had an illegitimate son, Mateiu Caragiale, who also became a writer.) Caragiale again returned to non-theater-related jobs, but continued to write short stories, fiction, and non-fiction in periodicals.

In 1892, Caragiale published two collections of short stories. Many of these stories retained his comic bite and reflected Romanian life. They often showed the life of lower class people like peasants and clerks. One famous short story published that year was “O facie de Paste” (“The Easter Torch”), a condemnation of anti-Semitism. He published another collection of fictional pieces in 1901.

In the 1890s, Caragiale again returned to publishing work in a multi-faceted way. In 1893, he was the founder and editor of Mortitul roman, a humor magazine. It was revived in 1901. In 1894, he was the producer, with George Cosbuc and Ioan Slavici, of the magazine Vatra, a family publication. He was also a contributor to Vointa nationala in 1895 and Universal between 1899 and 1901. Though Caragiale worked in publishing, he also continued non-related occupations as well. He was a civil servant at the Romanian Department of State Monopolies between 1899 and 1901.

**Lived in Voluntary Exile**

In 1901, Caragiale was sued by a theater critic for plagiarism. This caused much psychological stress for him, though he eventually proved his innocence. Such incidents led to his decision to move his family to Berlin, Germany, in 1904. That year, he received a long-awaited and previously disputed inheritance from an aunt. Caragiale had never really been happy in Romania, in part because he felt unappreciated as a writer in his native country. He also continued to have problems supporting his wife and children there.

While in exile, Caragiale continued to write, often contributing sketches and stories to periodicals published in Romania. In 1907, he published Din primavara pana in...
toamna (From Spring to Fall), a sociological piece of commentary that was originally published in Die Zeit, a German magazine. Two years later, he published a novella, Kir Janulea (Lord Janulea). This was his version of Niccolo Machiavelli’s stage play The Marriage of Belphasagor. In this fantasy, an imp from hell is sent to investigate human women on earth by the devil. The title refers to the name and form the imp takes when he lives in Bucharest as a Greek merchant. On this form, he marries a shrew and is bankrupted by her. Negoita, a man, saves him. The imp gives his rescuer wealth. The imp goes back to hell, while his wife and Negoita to heaven.

Caragiale died in Berlin, Germany, on July 9, 1912, of arteriosclerosis. He was buried there, but later he was reburied in Romania. Though Caragiale had a following and name recognition in Romania during his lifetime, he was also criticized and unappreciated there. After his death, he became more recognized for his importance to Romanian drama. Fifty years after his death, he was given a week-long tribute in which his plays were performed. Caragiale’s plays seemed especially relevant when the Communists were in control and were oppressive. In the 1980s, his plays were banned until the dictator Nicolae Ceausescu was taken out of power in 1989.

Though Caragiale only wrote eight plays, he was arguably the best playwright produced in Romania. He was the first playwright to reflect the realities, speech, and manner of Romanian people and life and influenced other playwrights including the Romanian-born Eugene Ionesco. As Eric D. Tappe wrote in his book Ion Luca Caragiale, “He prided himself on his knowledge of Romanian and would say: ‘Not many are masters of it as I am.’”

Books


Jacob Cats

Jacob Cats (1577–1660), seventeenth-century poet, moralist, and statesman, was one of the leading poets in the golden age of Dutch literature. His emblem books, which reflected a stolid Calvinist philosophy, exhorted readers to virtuous and industrial lives.

Enormously popular, the books became the source of many well-known maxims and proverbs, giving him the title of “Father Cats,” a fond sobriquet still used by modern Dutch to describe him.

Jacob Cats was born on November 10, 1577, the youngest of four brothers in Brouwershaven, Zeeland, the southernmost province of what is now the Netherlands. After his mother’s death and his father’s remarriage, Cats and his three brothers were sent to live with an uncle in the same province. After attending school in Zierikzee, Cats began his legal studies at the University of Leiden, then traveled to France to earn a doctor of laws degree in Orléans. After a further period of study and work in Paris, he returned to the Netherlands. Settling in the Hague, he began to work as a lawyer, where, the 1911 Edition Encyclopedia notes, “his pleading in defence of [a] wretched creature accused of witchcraft brought him many clients and some reputation.”

His success in the courtroom gave him the means to consider marriage, but an engagement was broken off when he contracted a mysterious, debilitating fever that lasted for two years. Desperate for treatment, he went to England, but was unable to find any relief. He went back to Holland, resigned to death, but received a new lease on life when he was unexpectedly “cured” by a charlatan.

Restored to health, Cats went to Middelburg, Zeeland, in 1603, where he opened a law practice. Two years later he married a wealthy heiress, Elisabeth van Valkenburg, and settled down to a prosperous existence. The Twelve Years’ Truce (1609–1621), an interruption of the Eighty Years’ War that eventually gave the Dutch their independence from Spain, was a period of comparative tranquility. In this favorable climate Cats and his brothers became wealthy draining and reclaiming land that had been flooded during the war—a profitable undertaking in a country where most of the land lies below sea level.

A successful businessman, Cats became a prominent political figure in the cities of Middelburg, and later, Dordrecht. He was appointed an advocate, or pensionary, a public servant that conducted much official municipal business. From 1636 to 1651 he served as Grand Pensionary of Holland, the most powerful of the Netherlands provinces. This prominent position had national importance, giving him a role in foreign policy. He was sent on at least two diplomatic missions, both to England: one in 1627 to Charles I and a second, unsuccessful venture 25 years later to Oliver Cromwell.

Like Dante and Chaucer before him, however, Cats was more than a mere civil servant. He is best known as a poet and author of emblem books—illustrated collections of didactic and moralistic (although clever and often humorous) poetry. These books, which had become popular in Europe, had begun with Liber emblematum published in 1531 by Andrea Alciato, an Italian lawyer.

Emblem books were immensely popular, especially among the pious and hard-working Calvinists of the Nether-
lands. In recent years they have also become valued as
treasure troves of sociological and historical detail, illustrat-
ing not only many facets of daily life in the seventeenth
century, but the moral and philosophical ideals that imbued
the era as well. The books were perfect fodder for the
relatively new printing industry, and the savvy Dutch soon
cornered the market in printing them for both foreign and
domestic audiences.

Most emblem book pages consisted of an illustration
that was intended to drive home and amplify the moralistic
verse printed along with it. At first examination, the two
did not always appear to go together. For example, Cats
combined a picture of a top and the whip that drove it—a
common child’s toy—with a warning against sloth
and indolence. The Humanities Advanced Technology and
Information Institute at the University of Glasgow, Scot-
land, quoted Cat’s explanation: “The top spins merrily
on the floor, whipped by a biting cord, and the harder one
hits the better it spins. But let up a bit with the whip and
it falls in the dust. From then on it won’t do a single turn,
but lies forever like a block. One never watches it better
than in times of sorrow and unhappiness. For if anyone
lives without pain, he rests at once from idleness. When
man has too much leisure, you see, that’s when the heart
years for lust.”

Cat’s first book Sinne-en minnebeelden (Portraits of
morality and love) was published in 1618, when he was
forty years old. The book, divided into three sections, con-
tains prose, poetry, Bible verses, quotations from the clas-
sics, and common proverbs in Dutch, French, and Latin.
Each illustration was accompanied by three different texts,
each of which was designed to give three different—but
always instructive—interpretations: the first romantic, the
second social, and last religious. This combination of texts,
stories, and languages in various degrees of complexity made
the book accessible to a broad public. Illustrations were
expensive, however, and at least two editions were pub-
lished. One version had reproduced each of the 51 illustra-
tions in all three sections; a second, cheaper printing
contained only one set of images.

The images for many of Cat’s books were supplied by
Adriaan van de Venne, a well-known artist of the time. He
drew literally hundreds of illustrations for the books, and
they were, in turn, reproduced by master engravers. Other
artwork for Cat’s books were imitations of van de Venne,
including a famous image depicting matrimony as a fisher-
man’s trap.

In 1620 Cat published Self-strydt, a retelling in verse
of Joseph and Potiphar’s wife that became popular enough to
warrant an English translation 60 years later. Entitled Self-
Conflict: Or, The powerful Motions between the Flesh &
Spirit, it was, as the subtitle explained further, a meditation
‘Represented in the person and upon the occasion of Jo-
seph, when by Potiphar’s Wife he was enticed to Adultery.’
In the foreword, the translator, John Quarles, praised both
Cat’s “incomparable mind” and the “profitablest [sic] vari-
ety of delight, both Moral and Divine,” that could be found
in his works. Like Cats, Quarles hoped that this story of
Joseph, which he later reprinted under the title Triumphant
Chastity, would give readers “Sovereign Antidotes to kill or
enervate such (else irresistible) Charms, either in the birth or
riper growth,” within themselves.

Houwelyck (Marriage) was published in 1625, the
first of Cat’s two great works on love and marriage. The
title page shows the six stages of a woman’s life: maid,
lover, bride, wife, mother, and widow, each illuminated
with an accompanying illustration. Like most of Cat’s
work, it was written in verse and filled with religious and
moral instruction. Its popularity can be gauged by its sales:
more than 50,000 were printed in the 30 years following its
debut.

Cat was widowed in 1630, a terrible blow that sad-
den him greatly. Searching for a way to distract himself
from his grief and loneliness, he began construction of his
estate Sorgvliet (Fly from care), situated near the Hague, to
fill his days. He also continued to write, publishing his most
famous book, Spiegel van den ouden en nieuwen tijd (Miri-
ror of old and new times), in 1632. Written in colloquial
rather than classical Dutch, this oft-quoted, homespun vol-
ume has become the source of many Dutch sayings. Leiden
University has an original edition that contains handwritten
notes and comments from the author.

In 1639, at what was probably the height of his fame,
Cat’s portrait was painted by famed court artist Michiel
Janszoon van Mierevel. Now housed in the Rijksmuseum
in Amsterdam, the poet and statesman gazes out of a frame
adorned by Homer, Virgil, Ovid, Horace, and the Cat family
crest, captioned by a line of his own poetry (in archaic
Dutch): Als ick dit beelt aesie en van mijn eerste jaren, /
Soo leer ick dat de tijt verloopt gelyck de haren (When I see
this image of my former years / I see how time recedes, just
like my hair).

Cat continued to publish in the decades that followed.
Trou-ringh (Wedding Ring), his second poetic exposition on
conjugal bliss, appeared in 1637. He published his most
heartfelt autobiographical musings in his later years:
Gedachten op slapelooze nachten (Thoughts on sleepless
nights) in 1661; Ouderdom, buyten-leven en hof-gedachten
op Sorgvliet (Old age, country life, and garden thoughts at
Sorgvliet) in 1656; and his autobiography, Twee en
tachtig-jarigh leven (Eight-two years of my life). This last
volume, which occupied him until his death, was not pub-
lished until 1734.

In his time Cat was tremendously popular and ex-
remely influential, shaping not only contemporary thought
but image as well—artists often based their paintings on his
well-known poems and stories. Even after his death his
works were reprinted and translated, and it was said that
every Dutch home had both a Bible and a book by Cats. His
pithy aphorisms remain in modern use, although his dense
and difficult texts are now prized more for their historical
value than their literary content. The people of his native
town of Brouwershaven erected a statue honoring him in
1829: his estate, Sorgvliet, now called Catshuis (Cat’s
house), has become the official residence of the Dutch
prime minister.
Jacob Cats died on September 12, 1660, and was buried in the Kloosterkerk in the Hague.

Books
Heywood, Thomas, Pleasant Dialogues and Drama’s, 1637.

Online
“Child Playing with a Top,” The Humanities Advanced Technology and Information Institute, University of Glasgow, Scotland, http://www.hatii.arts.gla.ac.uk/MultimediaStudentProjects/00-01/97043597/mmcourse/project/html/Mainpages/child_playing_with_a_top.htm (February 16, 2003).

Margaret Lucas Cavendish
Margaret Cavendish (1623–1673) was one of the first prolific female science writers. As the author of approximately 14 scientific or quasi-scientific books, she helped to popularize some of the most important ideas of the scientific revolution, including the competing vitalistic and mechanistic natural philosophies and atomism. A flamboyant and eccentric woman, Cavendish was the most visible of the “scientific ladies” of the seventeenth century.

Margaret Lucas was born into a life of luxury near Colchester, England, in 1623, the youngest of eight children of Sir Thomas Lucas. She was educated informally at home. At the age of eighteen, she left her sheltered life to become Maid of Honor to Queen Henrietta Maria, wife of Charles I, accompanying the queen into exile in France following the defeat of the royalists in the civil war. There she fell in love with and married William Cavendish, the Duke of Newcastle, a 52 year-old widower, who had been commander of the royalist forces in the north of England. Joining other exiled royalists in Antwerp, the couple rented the mansion of the artist Rubens. Margaret Cavendish was first exposed to science in their informal salon society, “The Newcastle Circle,” which included the philosophers Thomas Hobbes, René Descartes, and Pierre Gassendi. She visited England in 1651-52 to try to collect revenues from the Newcastle estate to satisfy their foreign creditors. It was at this time that Cavendish first gained her reputation for extravagant dress and manners, as well as for her beauty and her bizarre poetry.

Published Original Natural Philosophy
Cavendish prized herself on her originality and boasted that her ideas were the products of her own imagination, not derived from the writings of others. Cavendish’s first anthology, Poems, and Fancies, included the earliest version of her natural philosophy. Although English atomic theory in the seventeenth century attempted to explain all natural phenomena as matter in motion, in Cavendish’s philosophy all atoms contained the same amount of matter but differed in size and shape; thus, earth atoms were square, water particles were round, atoms of air were long, and fire atoms were sharp. This led to her humoral theory of disease, wherein illness was due to fighting between atoms or an overabundance of one atomic shape. However in her second volume, Philosophical Fancies, published later in the same year, Cavendish already had disavowed her own atomic theory. By 1663, when she published Philosophical and Physical Opinions, she had decided that if atoms were “Animated Matter,” then they would have “Free-will and Liberty” and thus would always be at war with one another and unable to cooperate in the creation of complex organisms and minerals. Nevertheless, Cavendish continued to view all matter as composed of one material, animate and
intelligent, in contrast to the Cartesian view of a mechanistic universe.

Challenged Other Scientists

Cavendish and her husband returned to England with the restoration of the monarchy in 1660 and, for the first time, she began to study the works of other scientists. Finding herself in disagreement with most of them, she wrote Philosophical Letters: or, Modest Reflections upon some Opinions in Natural Philosophy, maintained by several famous and learned Authors of this Age, Expressed by way of Letters in 1664. Cavendish sent copies of this work, along with Philosophical and Physical Opinions, by special messenger to the most famous scientists and celebrities of the day. In 1666 and again in 1668, she published Observations upon Experimental Philosophy, a response to Robert Hooke’s Micrographia, in which she attacked the use of recently-developed microscopes and telescopes as leading to false observations and interpretations of the natural world. Included in the same volume with Observations was The Blazing World was a semi-scientific utopian romance, in which Cavendish declared herself “Margaret the First.”

Invited to the Royal Society

More than anything else, Cavendish yearned for the recognition of the scientific community. She presented the universities of Oxford and Cambridge with each of her publications and she ordered a Latin index to accompany the writings she presented to the University of Leyden, hoping thereby that her work would be utilized by European scholars.

After much debate among the membership of the Royal Society of London, Cavendish became the first woman invited to visit the prestigious institution, although the controversy had more to due with her notoriety than with her sex. On May 30, 1667, Cavendish arrived with a large retinue of attendants and watched as Robert Boyle and Robert Hooke weighed air, dissolved mutton in sulfuric acid, and conducted various other experiments. It was a major advance for the scientific lady and a personal triumph for Cavendish.

Cavendish published the final revision of her Philosophical and Physical Opinions, entitled Grounds of Natural Philosophy, in 1668. Significantly more modest than her previous works, in this volume Cavendish presented her views somewhat tentatively and retracted some of her earlier, more extravagant claims. Cavendish acted as her own physician, and her self-inflicted prescriptions, purgings, and bleedings resulted in the rapid deterioration of her health. She died in 1673 and was buried in Westminster Abbey.

Although her writings remained well outside the mainstream of seventeenth-century science, Cavendish’s efforts were of major significance. She helped to popularize many of the ideas of the scientific revolution and she was one of the first natural philosophers to argue that theology was outside the parameters of scientific inquiry. Furthermore, her work and her prominence as England’s first recognized woman scientist argued strongly for the education of women and for their involvement in scientific pursuits. In addition to her scientific writings, Cavendish published a book of speeches, a volume of poetry, and a large number of plays. Several of the latter, particularly The Female Academy, included learned women and arguments in favor of female education. Her most enduring work, a biography of her husband, included as an appendix to her 24 page memoir, was first published in 1656 as a part of Nature’s Pictures. This memoir is regarded as the first major secular autobiography written by a woman.

Books

Grant, Douglas, Margaret the First: A Biography of Margaret Cavendish, Duchess of Newcastle, 1623–1673, University of Toronto Press, 1957.

Periodicals

Thomas Robert Cech

American biochemist Thomas R. Cech (born 1947) received the Nobel Prize in 1989 for his groundbreaking discovery of the role of the RNA molecule not only as a molecule of heredity, but also as a biocatalyst.

Discovered Science at an Early Age

Thomas Robert Cech was born on December 12, 1947, in Chicago, Illinois, to Robert Franklin Cech, a physician, and Annette Marie Cerveny Cech, a homemaker. The family moved to Iowa City where Cech was raised and attended school. His father, though medicine was his chosen field, was also extremely interested in physics and all sciences in general, a fascination that spread quickly to his son. It was as early as the fourth grade when Cech began collecting rocks and wondering about their formation. In later school years he could be found visiting with professors at the nearby University of Iowa about other earth sciences. This desire for knowledge and curiosity for things scientific would lead him to his life’s work and future success.

Cech entered Grinnell College in 1966 and found that he enjoyed studying literature and history as well as the sciences, but it was chemistry that he pursued. As he honed in on his studies and through undergraduate research experience, he discovered that he was “attracted to biological chemistry because of the almost daily interplay of experimental design, observation, and interpretation,” he later recalled in Les Prix Nobel, as noted in his autobiography from the website of The Nobel Foundation. His choice of study would prove to be a wise decision.

It was while an undergraduate at Grinnell, he recalled in his Nobel Prize autobiography, that he met Carol Lynn Martinson “over the melting point apparatus” in a chemistry lab. They graduated from Grinnell and married in 1970. Thomas and his new wife chose the University of California, Berkeley for their graduate studies. He was fortunate to have John Hearst as a thesis advisor, one who had a contagious interest in chromosome function and structure and greatly assisted Thomas in his studies. The Cechs received their Ph.D.’s in 1975 and accepted jobs in the Northeast; Carol went to Harvard and Thomas took a position with the Massachusetts Institute of Technology (M.I.T.) where he began his post doctorate research.

After working at M.I.T. for some years, the couple moved to Boulder and both joined the faculty at the University of Colorado in 1978. It was around this time that Cech had resolved to concentrate on more specific genetic material. From Notable Scientists. “He was particularly interested in what enables the DNA molecule to instruct the body to produce the various parts of itself,” a process called gene expression. Though he had done some genetic research in the 1970s, he now purposed to “discover the proteins that govern the DNA transcription process onto RNA.” What he and his research team would soon discover would shake the scientific community and rewrite textbooks.

Ribonucleic Acid

To understand Cech’s groundbreaking discoveries, one must first appreciate the workings of chemical reactions. Most reactions are in need of a catalyst, a molecule that can aid a chemical reaction without being altered or consumed. Nearly all the reactions that take place in any living cell require the workings of a biocatalyst, which we call enzymes. Enzymes work in myriad locations in the human body: in the liver to break down alcohol, for instance. Before the research of Cech and his team was released, all enzymes were thought to be proteins. The workings of proteins and their functions are controlled by the hereditary entities called genes.

Gene expression is a fascinating scientific field. Genes of every living thing are composed of deoxyribonucleic acid, more widely known as DNA. All the genetic information for an organism is contained in the DNA and is arranged as a string of codes that work together to dictate the protein design. In order to facilitate protein synthesis, however, the code must first be transcribed into another type of nucleic acid, ribonucleic acid (RNA). Scientists commonly assumed that DNA was the template of the genetic code in the nucleus of the cell. The code was somehow imprinted on the three different types of RNA and the RNA was a passive participant that simply relayed the genetic material.
to the enzymes of the cell. It was the enzymes, they thought, that were the catalysts for chemical reactions that occurred in the cell. Scientists believed that RNA needed the presence of an enzyme for these reactions to take place.

Prior to Cech’s research, it was widely known that there were three types of RNA: messenger RNA, the form of RNA that mediates the transfer of genetic information from the cell nucleus to ribosomes (a minute round particle composed of RNA and protein that serves as the site of assembly for polypeptides encoded by messenger RNA) in the cytoplasm, where it serves as a template for protein synthesis; ribosomal RNA, which imparts the messenger’s structure within the ribosome; and transfer RNA, which helps to establish amino acids in the proper order in the protein chain as it is being assembled. In the late 1970s a researcher named Phillip A. Sharp along with others found that the DNA and the RNA product that resulted after transcription were actually different: there were portions of the DNA that had not been coded and were left off of the RNA. These non-coded sections of DNA were termed introns.

Cech and his team were not interested in introns to begin with, but these sections of DNA soon proved too important to ignore. They became fascinated with the intron function and with DNA splicing altogether. How were the introns, the portions of DNA that held no code, removed during RNA transcription? This question drove Cech and his team to delve further into the process.

At the same time, another scientist whom Cech would later share an honor with was also studying transcription. Sidney Altman was independently studying an RNA-cutting enzyme, which is made up of a combination of one protein and one RNA molecule, from the bacterium *Escherichia coli*. When the enzyme was split and the protein split from the nucleic acid, it was no longer functional. But when the pieces were rejoined, the enzyme was restored and usable. This was the first time it was shown that an RNA molecule was essential for a catalytic reaction. It would be several years, however, before Altman could take the next step with his research.

Meanwhile, at the University of Colorado, Cech began his own RNA investigation. With the use of a single-celled pond organism called *Tetrahymena thermophila*, Cech and a colleague named Arthur Zaug scrutinized the pre-ribosomal RNA of the organism just as it underwent transcription. He first isolated the unspliced RNA and added some material taken from the nucleus of the *Tetrahymena*, along with other ingredients to be used as energy for the reaction. It was in this nucleic material, according to their supposition, that the catalyst necessary for transcription was formed. Cech discovered that isolated, unprocessed RNA without any nucleic additives would begin to splice itself even without the presence of an outside catalyst. The RNA molecule amazingly cut itself into pieces and rejoined the important genetic fragments.

Cech’s work was first met with some hostility and debate as it upended and challenged many long-standing beliefs about the nature of enzymes. In fact, Cech himself was not entirely sure of his results. Skeptical scientists held that the organism used to conduct the experiments had atypical RNA or that the RNA molecule was not a true enzyme because it did not contain properties and characteristics found in other enzymes. Skepticism was proved untrue, however, when other scientists also found RNA enzymes. It was Sidney Altman who established that RNA was capable of completing the actions of an enzyme on substances other than itself, another concern of unconvinced scientists.

As with most scientific breakthroughs, the discovery of the role and function of RNA had and continues to have effects more far-reaching than even Cech could have imagined. It has astonishing potential in the area of disease, as the RNA molecule can be cut at certain points, destroying the parts that cause genetic disorders or infections. It may lead to the cure of countless health problems. Cech’s research has also led scientists to hypothesize that the RNA molecule was the first bit of life on our planet. Since it can replicate without the need for an outside catalyst, it is believed to be the first self-reproducing system.

**Awarded the Nobel Prize**

Cech and Altman were awarded the Nobel Prize for Chemistry in 1989 for their independent work that demonstrated the catalytic properties of RNA, a groundbreaking discovery in the scientific community. Whereas the RNA molecule had been previously thought to act only in conjunction with a catalyst, now Cech had shown that it performed its function without an outside enzyme. Altman proved that the molecule carried out functions consistent with other enzymes.

Since the research of the 1980s, Cech has received numerous awards and honors and has become a sought-after lecturer at institutions around the country. He earned the Passano Foundation Young Scientific Award and the Harrison Howe Award in 1984. Besides the highest honor of receiving the Nobel Prize, he was also awarded an honorary doctorate degree from his alma mater Grinnell College in 1987. Within the next year he was elected to both the United States Academy of Sciences and the American Academy of Arts and Sciences.

Four years after Cech’s discovery he had it patented. When two Australian scientists who had been working on similar technology sold their findings to a French pharmaceutical company, Cech decided to take them to court for patent violation and was awarded an inclusive patent in 1991. Although some feared that this would hinder the development of research in this area, it was unnecessary as Cech later sold his rights to the United States Biochemical Corporation.

Cech’s work has been recognized by many national and international awards and prizes. He was promoted to full professor of chemistry at the University of Colorado in 1983. He was also elected president of the Howard Hughes Medical Institute in 2000. He continues to research both the RNA molecule as well as other areas of biochemistry. As for his personal life, Cech and his wife welcomed two daughters into their family, Allison, born in 1982, and Jennifer, born in 1986. Despite the busy schedule of a professor and...
Chikamatsu Monzaemon

Japanese playwright Chikamatsu Monzaemon (1653–1725) is best known for his tragedies involving ordinary men and women in the kansai, or western part, of Japan, where his works were first presented in the late seventeenth and early eighteenth centuries. During his career, Chikamatsu wrote about 100 puppet and kabuki stage plays. In these works, natural human emotions keep the characters alive as their human passions come into conflict with the rational principles and ethics that serve as the foundations of society. The plays go on to treat human weakness and the need for maintaining dignity in the face of crisis.

Chikamatsu’s use of lower class characters in his tragedies is rather unique in world drama, where tragic characters have most often been members of the upper classes. In Chikamatsu’s most famous plays, his characters violate the rules of society—often by committing a crime such as theft, adultery, or murder—and occasionally end up meeting a tragic end, either by their own hand or by society’s. But in most of the works, the tragic hero is redeemed by his or her love, confession, or penitence.

Chikamatsu’s plays were printed during his lifetime to please his wellborn parents. But he may have been constrained in his choice of occupation by his father’s Ronin status, which left the son with few options for achieving samurai rank. And although Chikamatsu’s association with the Japanese nobility certainly enriched his understanding of the world, it probably provided very little in the way of financial remuneration. It has been surmised that Chikamatsu’s other option would have been to become a poetry teacher. Some have suggested that he may have been persuaded to pursue a career in the theatre after he saw Uji Kaganojo while running errands for this nobleman.

Entered the Theatre

Chikamatsu’s decision to enter the theatre could not have pleased his wellborn parents. But he may have been constrained by his father’s Ronin status, which left the son with few options for achieving samurai rank. And although Chikamatsu’s association with the Japanese nobility certainly enriched his understanding of the world, it probably provided very little in the way of financial remuneration. It has been surmised that Chikamatsu’s other option would have been to become a poetry teacher. Some have suggested that he may have been persuaded to pursue a career in the theatre after he saw Uji Kaganojo while running errands for this nobleman.

The Soga Heir

Although it is not known when Chikamatsu first began writing puppet plays, his earliest known work of this genre was Yotsugi Soga (The Soga Heir), which was written for Uji Kaganojo in 1683. The play met instant success and brought fame to the 30-year-old playwright. The rather crudely written piece treated a well-known story involving two brothers, Onio and Dosaburo, who had formerly served as retainers to another pair of brothers, the Sogas, before the Sogas were put to death. In most versions of the story, the subject was the successful revenge of the two retainers and their subsequent deaths. But in Chikamatsu’s treatment, the story became more complex.

Chikamatsu adds a scene in a brothel where the two lovers of the late Soga brothers are employed. The two women are distressed at not having heard from their sweethearts, unaware that they have both been killed. When the two alleged murderers of the brothers show up wanting to sleep with the women, the retainer Onio chases them away, not knowing who they are.

Having now learned of their lovers’ deaths, the two prostitutes next travel to the Soga brothers’ village, intending to tell their lovers’ mother of her sons’ deaths. After the old woman learns that her sons are dead, one of the
prostitutes informs her that she has given birth to her son’s child, a boy named Sukewaka. The boy is at the time staying with an aunt.

A short while later, the villains visit the prostitutes, looking for Sukewaka. After the two women pretend to be in love with them, the murderers try to enlist their help in killing Onio and Dosaburo. Hiding inside large chests, they wait for the two retainers to show up. But when Onio and Dosaburo arrive, they are accompanied by an enormously strong friend, who places large boulders on the chests. When one of the villains tries to get out, he is crushed to death by the weight of the stones. The second villain is taken captive, and the victors leave for the capital to celebrate.

In the final scene, the surviving villain is released so as not to mar the festivities with bloodshed. Sukewaka is given the Soga family lands. The emperor’s consort declares that she has come to realize that prostitutes, far from being debased creatures, are in fact the models of fidelity in love. At the emperor’s request, the prostitutes do an improvised dance to retrace the history of courtesans. At the end of the play Sukewaka and his mother exit amid assurances that the Soga clan will flourish for years to come.

Kagekiyo Victorious

Chikamatsu’s next puppet play, entitled Shusse Kagekiyo (Kagekiyo Victorious), was written for a younger rival of Kaganojo in 1686. In the play, Kagekiyo’s mistress learns that her lover is going to marry a woman of high birth. Out of revenge, she betrays Kagekiyo’s hiding place to his enemies. After Kagekiyo is captured and bound, his mistress appears before him with their two sons to beg his apology. But he disowns his children, and she kills the children and then herself before his eyes. In the final scene, it is revealed that the goddess Kannon has substituted her own head for Kagekiyo’s at his execution, so Kagekiyo is safe. He then makes peace with his old enemy.

Kabuki Interlude

Kabuki is a form of Japanese drama in which the actors use stylized movements, dances, and songs to perform comedies or tragedies. Many critics feel that Chikamatsu’s early kabuki plays were inferior to his puppet plays, possibly because he had to write for conventional roles that did not allow for the complexity of some of his puppet characters.

Chikamatsu wrote most of his plays for the kabuki theatre between 1688 and 1703. Although he had written Yugiri Shichiren Ki (The Seventh Anniversary of Yugiri’s Death) in 1684, in the ensuing four years he wrote mostly for the puppet theatre.

The best known of Chikamatsu’s kabuki plays was Keisei Mibu Dainembutsu (roughly translated Courtesans and the Great Recitation of the Name of Buddha at the Mibu Temple). The play was written to coincide with the public display of a secretly kept statue of Buddha at a famous temple. The strength of the play derived from the freedom it gave to the actors to display their own particular strengths. In this play within a play, a loyal retainer is assigned the role of a woman. So disguised, the retainer overhears a plan by his master’s stepmother and her brother to steal the family treasure, a religious statue. Pursuant to winning the villains’ confidence, the retainer is required to kill his daughter to protect his master’s reputation.

Return to the Puppet Theater

In 1703, Chikamatsu shifted his efforts back to the puppet theatre. He may have been motivated by the departure of the actor who appeared in his kabuki works from the stage, or possibly by the tendency of kabuki actors to take liberties with his text while performing his works. In any case, Chikamatsu’s decision to return to the puppet theatre would have long-lasting impact. It meant, for example, that the puppet theatre would be the most popular form of drama for the next 50 years because it would be puppets who performed the works of the country’s pre-eminent dramatist.

At the time that Chikamatsu was writing, audiences were accustomed to spending an entire day at the puppet theatre and were not always attentive to everything that was happening on the stage. For Chikamatsu, the challenge of the puppet theatre was to impart lifeless puppets with a variety of emotions and thereby capture the audience’s attention. Chikamatsu did not hesitate to have his characters say things that a real person would not utter in order to maximize the pleasure in the play’s performance.

Chikamatsu scored a major success in 1703 with a play about a lovers’ double suicide entitled Sonezaki Shinju (The Love Suicides at Sonezaki). In the play, which was based on an actual event, Tokubei is in love with the prostitute Ohatsu. After he refuses to marry the woman chosen for him by his uncle, he is obliged to give back her dowry money. But Tokubei is tricked out of the money by a friend, and Tokubei and Ohatsu, facing separation, decide to commit suicide together.

In 1715, Chikamatsu achieved his greatest success up to then with the puppet play Kokusenya Kassen (The Battles of Coxinga), which tells the story of Coxinga, the son of a Chinese father and Japanese mother, who leaves Japan with the intention of restoring the Ming rulers to the throne of China and defeating the Tartar usurpers.

Chikamatsu’s masterpiece, Shinju Ten no Amijima (The Love Suicides at Amijima) was written in 1721. Again dealing with a lovers’ double suicide, the play tells the story of Jihei, who is in love with two women, his wife Osan and a prostitute named Koharu. To keep Jihei and Koharu from committing a double suicide, Osan suggests her husband buy Koharu’s contract. But the plan is thwarted by the arrival of Osan’s father, who takes his daughter away. Jihei then has no choice but to go through with the lovers’ suicide. But out of concern for his wife, he arranges the suicide so that it appears that the lovers have died independently.

Final Works

Between 1720 and 1722, the 70-year-old Chikamatsu wrote ten plays in 25 months. In the earlier of these plays, the male heroes come across as depraved as they proceed to destroy the world around them. But the later plays in this group involve more noble characters of a higher social class. According to C.A. Gerstle, writing in Hero as Mur-
derer in the Plays of Chikamatsu, the playwright decided to look at the persons at the top of society who were ultimately responsible for the depravity among the lower classes.

Following this prodigious two-year output, Chikamatsu produced nothing for 16 months until his last play was performed in 1724. This final play, *Tethered Steed and the Eight Provinces of Kanto*, addresses the familiar theme of rivalry over love, with the hero willing to die for his honor after stealing his brother’s fiancée. In the ensuing conflict between honor and love, the offended brother offers mercy in an exchange for an apology. The offending sibling finally gives up his pride and submits to his brother’s demands. Chikamatsu’s final statement as a playwright turned out to be a paean to idealism over self-destruction.

Chikamatsu died in the early part of 1725, less than a year after *Tethered Steed and the Eight Provinces of Kanto* was performed.

Books

Chung Ju Yung

Chung Ju Yung (1915–2001) founded Korea’s Hyundai Group, which remained his country’s most powerful chaebol, or family-run conglomerate, for years. Chung’s assemblage of corporate entities, which he was said to run by relying heavily upon his famous iron will, included the automaker Hyundai as well as large construction, shipbuilding, and electronics concerns. In his later years, Chung entertained political ambitions and ran for president of South Korea.

Stole Family Cow

Chung Ju Yung was born on November 25, 1915, in Tongchon, located in the northern section of Korea, then annexed to Japan. At the time of Chung’s birth, Korea had been under harsh Japanese colonial rule for five years; the northern regions would eventually fall under communist domination as North Korea in 1948. Chung was the oldest in a family of eight that eked out a living on the land, and he was forced to abandon his education after grade school in order to work to help support his family. He attempted to run away on two occasions, and after stints on a railway construction site and as a dock worker, he secretly sold the family cow and fled from home with the money. After walking to Seoul, one of Korea’s larger cities, Chung found a job working at a rice shop as a bicycle delivery person. He eventually bought the business, on credit, but harsh Japanese military rule made owning businesses difficult for Koreans. A small truck and repair garage he established in 1940 languished under the same harsh economic restrictions.

By the end of World War II and the ouster of the Japanese, Chung had begun a family with his wife, Byun Joong Suk, whom he had married at the age of 15 in 1930. Several of his brothers had by now also followed him from Tongchon to Seoul. At the war’s close Japan had been vanquished by Allied forces, and Korea prepared for political and economic independence. With a major reconstruction effort underway, Chung moved from automobile-servicing to the construction industry and won several lucrative early contracts from the U.S.-run military government in the southern half of the country. His company’s growth was again affected by the outbreak of war as northern and southern Korea battled alongside their respective controlling superpowers between 1950 and 1953. Following the war Chung’s Hyundai Engineering and Construction thrived.

Company Expanded Alongside Country

Like those of other large chaebols, the fortunes of Chung’s Hyundai group were boosted due to ties with South Korea’s political elite. A military junta came to power in 1961 under Park Chung Hee, and the following year Chung’s company won the Ssoyangang Dam project; it also built the Kyongbu (Seoul-Pusan) Expressway, South Korea’s first major highway, which was completed in 1970. Park was
determined to industrialize South Korea in order to free it from dependence on foreign aid, and Chung's business interests continued to expand along with this government policy. In the late 1960s he built an automobile manufacturing plant in Ulsan, on the country's southeastern coast. Initially it built two Ford Motor Company models for the South Korean domestic market, but in 1974 unveiled the first true Hyundai, the Pony. Chung's younger brother, Chung Se Yung, was put in charge of the auto group.

Chung kept expanding his Hyundai chaebol to include 86 companies at its largest. He was known to be a strong-willed business man, constantly striving to stay ahead of other top Korean chaebols like Samsung and Daewoo. In 1971 Chung met with bankers from London's esteemed Barclays house in the hopes of gaining financing to begin a shipbuilding firm. To quell the bank's doubts, he showed them a 500-won bank note with an illustration of the world's first ironclad ship, built in Korea in 1592. As with all of Chung's other ventures, Hyundai Heavy Industries thrived and within 30 years had become the largest builder of merchant ships in the world. In the early 1980s, worried about the dominance of Samsung in the electronics market, Chung launched Hyundai Electronics, which soon flourished as a maker of semiconductor chips for computers. The tycoon's formidable business skills landed him a post as head of South Korea's Olympic Bidding Committee, and he was instrumental in drafting South Korea's winning proposal to host the 1988 Summer Games. The international sporting event was a turning point in the small, overcrowded nation's image.

A Demanding Boss and Parent

Daily breakfast meetings with his sons, who became top executives, took place at 5:30 a.m., but Chung was oftentimes awake hours before. The Hyundai chief "managed his sprawling industrial empire with an iron hand that befitted a Confucian patriarch," explained Financial Times writer John Burton. "He was said to hurl ashtrays and to slap managers who displeased him." Both Hyundai's automobile manufacturing and shipbuilding concerns were based in Ulsan, and it eventually became known informally as "Hyundai City." In time, South Korea itself would even be dubbed the "Republic of Hyundai" by critics observing the dominance of Chung's brand in all sectors of the Korean economy. The Hyundai name seemed to be everywhere in South Korea. It built trains, bridges, ships, and a plethora of consumer goods besides cars. Chung's close ties with the ruling governments, which were military in character until 1992, helped him battle labor-union movements, especially one at the Ulsan shipyard in the 1980s that dragged on for five years. At the time, South Koreans worked six-day weeks, with little vacation time, and earned some of the lowest wages in the industrialized world. Government riot police finally stepped in to quell the unrest at Ulsan in 1987, but a pro-democracy movement had taken hold countrywide, and the military juntas under Park and his successors were now considered illegitimate holders of power.

Despite his success in South Korea, Chung was interested in expanding his company beyond his country's borders. In the 1970s Hyundai Engineering and Construction bid for and won lucrative contracts for projects in the Middle East, including the construction of a vast oil terminal port facility. In 1985 Hyundai Motors produced its first cars for the American market and within a few years had made South Korea one of just a handful of export nations to hold a share of the U.S. automobile market. Yet Chung was eyeing a market closer to home: the heavily armed, isolated, and repressive socialist state of North Korea, where he still had family. Since the end of the Korean War in 1953, relations between the two Koreas were frosty at best; North Korea spent heavily on defense, and at one time boasted the fifth largest armed forces in the world; South Korea, meanwhile, was home to several thousand U.S. troops stationed at bases and alongside South Korean forces at the tense demilitarized zone (DMZ) that divided the two nations. North Korea maintained that South Koreans harbored a secret desire to be "liberated," while keeping its own citizens in a constant state of high alert by warning them that the U.S. and South Korea were planning to invade.

Returned Home with Cow

In 1989 Chung made a highly publicized visit to North Korea and announced that he would fund a tourism project in the Keumkang Mountains of his home province. He hoped to create a special coastal tourism zone in the east, near the DMZ, as a place where long-separated family members could reunite briefly. The plan fell through, however, and at times Chung, now in his 70s, began to voice criticism over his government's policies toward North Korea. In 1992 he announced he would be giving up several company posts in order to run for president. He launched his United People's Party (UUP) in February of 1992, but was bested by Kim Young Sam, President Roh Tae Woo's chosen successor. Chung won just 16 percent of the vote, but the UPP took 30 seats in the National Assembly. Kim became the first civilian president of the nation since the Korean War, and along with the new mood of democracy—and an impressive hike in the South Korean standard of living—came calls to dismantle the power of the chaebols.

Chung's political ambitions brought trouble for Hyundai. He was investigated and found guilty of diverting some $61 million in company funds to finance his campaign; his three-year sentence was suspended due to age, but several Hyundai officials were jailed and the state rescinded its policy of making favorable loans to the company. The government also began auditing Hyundai and Chung-family tax returns. Chung was still an ardent supporter of reconciliatory policies with the North and in 1998, following reports of widespread starvation in North Korea, he became the first civilian to cross the DMZ since the end of the Korean War. Prior to this moment, all travel between the two countries had to go through a third country, usually the Soviet Union or China. Chung, now 75 years old, walked the last part of the trip on foot. He brought with him 500 head of cattle from his own nearby farm as a gift to Tongchon, remarking that it was a gesture of reparation for taking his father's cow back in 1933. His visit was a major news event in South Korea; "Television networks interrupted their regular broadcasts with live footage of the
trucks rumbling through the streets of Seoul on their way north,” reported *Time International* correspondent Stella Kim. “Early Tuesday, the convoy stopped just short of the border, where more than 1 million heavily armed troops face off in a tense armistice. . . . A Buddhist priest in gray robes walked along the row of trucks, banging on a wooden block and praying that the animals would ‘survive until reunification.’”

**Sons Warred with One Another**

Chung met with North Korean leader Kim Jong Il, and within two years a North-South summit had taken place; this time Hyundai agreed to a $942 million investment plan in the north. Yet Chung faced more pressing concerns back in Seoul: a power struggle had erupted between his two oldest sons, with one enlisting the help of a South Korean government determined to break up the powerful chaebols. Chung had fathered nine children in all, but only five were likely born to his wife; the others were registered as part of his family anyway. There were two tragedies: the eldest, Chung Mong Pil, died in a car accident in 1982 and another, Chung Mong Woo, committed suicide in 1990. Mong Pil would have inherited control of the Hyundai empire at some point—the traditional chaebol practice—and the second eldest son, Chung Mong Koo, was thought to be next in line to succeed the father.

As the eldest living son, Chung Mong Koo was made chief of Hyundai Motors in 1998 and Chung gave his third son, Chung Mong Hun, the more lucrative construction and chip businesses. This launched an intense rivalry some say was fueled by the Chung sons’ lack of allegiance to their family unit due to long-simmering resentment over legitimacy issues. Soon the infighting at the upper levels of the Hyundai Group reached an unparalleled level of acrimony, as Chung’s health grew more frail and family members attempted to acquire control over parts of the business empire via stock deals. In 1999 Hyundai’s combined sales stood at $80 billion, making Chung’s empire the largest of the five main chaebols in South Korea during the last genuine year of their existence. Chung by then had been ordered to spin off some of the Hyundai businesses by the South Korean government, but the obstinate tycoon refused until debtors forced his hand in May of 2000.

Though he was said to be worth $6.2 billion, Chung lived in a modest home built from leftover construction materials from his company. He walked the three-mile trek to his office in Seoul daily until his health began to falter. He was an ardent fan of the Internet and liked to sing karaoke. He died of pneumonia on March 21, 2001, in Seoul, South Korea. His son Chung Mong Joon served as organizer of South Korea’s hosting of the World Cup soccer tournament in 2002. After his death, the elder tycoon continued to generate respect; noted *Guardian* obituary writer Aidan Foster-Carter, Chung “personified his country’s ascent from poverty to global success.”

**Periodicals**


---

**Kyung Wha Chung**

Kyung Wha Chung (born 1948) led the way for Korean musicians to excel in the western world. Arriving as a child to study in New York City, Chung made the study of the violin her life’s work.

On March 26, 1948, Kyung Wha Chung was born in Seoul, Korea, to Won Sook Lee and Chun Chai. She grew up in a family with eight siblings, all of whom had early training in music. They all began with piano lessons. “Both my parents were music lovers,” stated Chung on the *Asia Week* website. “Music was part of our education, and there was always music-making at home.” A friend of her father gave her a violin to play at the young age of six. She immediately found she could express herself with the instrument. “The violin,” she noted in *Asia Week*, “is very close to the human voice.” Soon she was playing in a trio with her sister Myung Wha, who was getting proficient on cello, and brother Myung Whun, who stuck with the piano.

**Talented Child Musician Headed to New York City**

Her older sister, Myung So, was very skilled on the flute and went to America to study at Juilliard in New York City. In 1961, Chung followed and shared an apartment with her sister. Chung also began studying at Juilliard with the well-known Ivan Galamian. Living in New York City, struggling to learn a new language and to live away from home and family in Korea, was difficult. “To put it mildly, I started a whole new life,” Chung told the *Shanghai Star*. “From that time on, my commitment to music was the beacon that showed the way for me.” Galamian was extremely firm with her about understanding that she would have a career as a concert violinist and would not have time to have a family. He said that it was unacceptable for a woman to have both. “Mr. Galamian loved me deeply,” said Chung, according to the January/February 1999 issue of the *American Record Guide*, “but that did not change how he felt about female students. He had already been let down by a number of girl prodigies who abandoned their professional goals in their teens, or who had run off and got married.” At each lesson,
he would remind her that she was not to get married and have children. She would always respond that it was her intention to become a concert violinist. Later, she would tell Asia Week, “I was shocked by the high standard of the music there, and my only goal was to reach that high level.”

In 1967, at age 19, she gained a great deal of attention when she won the 25th international Leventritt Competition at Carnegie Hall in New York City, sharing first prize with Pinchas Zukerman. This brought her engagements throughout the United States and Europe. This further led to an opportunity that served as a springboard to her career. She got her London debut by replacing Itzhak Perlman in the Tchaikovsky Concerto with André Previn and the London Symphony. “Sometimes one person’s mischance becomes another person’s chance,” Chung is quoted as stating on the Amazon.com website. “After winning the Leventritt, I began to perform in America and Europe. But it was the London debut that really launched my international career. It was very successful, though at first everything seemed to be against me: I had stepped in at the last moment, and there was so much confusion that I hardly had any rehearsal, but as a result the musicians were all the more concentrated at the performance. The communication with the audience was very strong, so the event was a wonderful experience. The concert was a benefit and not supposed to be reviewed, but the critic with the Financial Times wrote one of the best reviews I have ever received in my life. It was really quite embarrassing—he simply said I was better than everybody else, mentioning a lot of names. I just ignored it, but it was a gold mine for the managers, and I got engagements all over Europe. I always feel very strange when I have to cancel a concert, but then I think, Maybe this will give a young artist the chance of a lifetime.” She further stated, “For a young player, replacing another artist can be the first stepping stone to a career. I got my London debut by replacing Perlman in the Tchaikovsky Concerto with André Previn and the London Symphony. Shortly afterward, Renata Tebaldi canceled a recording session and London Records asked me to record the Tchaikovsky and Sibelius concertos instead. My recording career started when they offered me an exclusive contract. And I got my German debut because Lorin Maazel engaged me for his Berlin Festival when Boris Christoff pulled out.”

Her success was so great that she was immediately booked for three more London concerts, a tour of Japan, and a television appearance. Engagements with the London Philharmonic, Berlin Philharmonic, and Cleveland Orchestra followed, firmly establishing her international career. Chung quickly gained recognition throughout the world as a high calibre performer. She was appearing with all of the major orchestras and conductors throughout North America, Europe, and the Far East. Asia Week contends that she was a leader in showing that Asians could master the western classical tradition, quoting Kyung Soo Won, the conductor of the Seoul Philharmonic Orchestra as saying, “Until she became a world-class violinist, it was only remotely possible for a Korean to achieve that kind of success. It was like a dream in the clouds. But she showed it was possible.” In 1972, the South Korean government awarded her with their highest honor by presenting her with the Medal of Civil Merit. Kyung Soo Won stated in Asia Week that she has a skill and style all her own by saying, “Her tone and technique are unique. These days, young musicians all play the same, but she is markedly different from all the others.”

Chung Changed the Rules

In 1981, her long-time instructor, Galamian, to whom she had consistently promised that she would never marry, passed away. A few years later, in 1984, when she was 35, Chung broke her promise and got married to a British businessman. When her first son, Frederick, was born, she worked hard to keep at least part of her promise to Galamian, by being determined to not let motherhood affect her work, maintaining the same schedule and taking young Frederick along with her in a basket everywhere. However, when her second son, Eugene, was born, she found that Galamian had been right and that she could no longer keep up. She cut back on her performance schedule, reducing it from 120 performances each season down to 60. “For me, because motherhood came rather late, it was the most incredible experience to have my children, so they became my first priority, and I wanted to be with them,” Chung stated. “As far as music and performing are concerned, I tried to narrow it down to a certain kind of continuous project—recording—so I did concerts that were related to preparing for the recordings,” she told American Record Guide in the January/February 1999 edition.
In 1988, she signed a contract to record exclusively with EMI Classics. “Recordings are so personal for me,” she said to the Rocky Mountain News. “Nothing is ever permanent in an interpretation—but that’s not the case with a record. You have to leave something of your soul on that compact disc. The problem is, your soul is not perfect, so a recording never will be.” However, recording obviously agreed with her as she won a Gramophone Award for the recording of the “Bartók Violin Concerto No. 2” and the two rhapsodies with the City of Birmingham Symphony Orchestra and Sir Simon Rattle. She also began recording more with her brother and sister, and they called themselves the Chung Trio. Her brother, Myung Whun Chung, was a winner of the 1974 Tchaikovsky Piano competition and has been music director of the Paris Opera and head of the Orchestra of the Academia Santa Cecilia in Rome. Her sister, Myung Wha, plays the cello and has won the Geneva International Competition. In 1994, they released Beethoven’s “Piano Trios Op. 11 and 97” which received great critical acclaim. The trio is well known in Korea, but also widely recognized throughout the world. She is quoted on Amazon.com as saying, “We have played together all our lives.” The Chung Trio made a number of recordings including a performance of the Beethoven Triple Concerto with the Philharmonic Orchestra for Deutsche Grammophon in the 1995–1996 season.

When Chung did tour, she would take her children with her when they were not in school. She also took them to Korea several times to experience the culture. Both the children learned to speak Korean. “That was important for me,” Chung told Asia Week. Both children have also studied music extensively. Chung is considered an icon on Korea. She considers herself Korean, although she only lived there for a small percentage of her life, now living in southern England and New York City. “I’m Korean, and there’s nothing that will change that,” she told Asia Week.

In 2000, she won another Gramophone Award for her recording of the Strauss and Respighi Violin Sonatas with Krystian Zimmerman.

**Chung Returned to Full Concert Schedule**

As her children grew older, Chung began to expand her performing schedule once again, but she did not slow down on her recordings. In February of 2001, her recording of Vivaldi’s Four Seasons, played with the St. Luke’s Chamber Ensemble, was released. Sensible Sound called her a “magnificent violinist” and stated, “Chung’s interpretation is best described as elegant. Her phrasing is elegant, her tempos are elegant, her command of nuance is elegant.” Later that year, in November, she released the recording of “Symphony No. 5; Brahms: Violin Concerto” with Sir Simon Rattle and the Vienna Philharmonic. “Kyung Wha Chung can be a firebrand violinist, but here she’s very much the aristocrat. She supplies gleaming tone and rhythmic acuity, but also delicacy and tenderness. Her hushed, high flickerings in the Joachim cadenza are breathtaking,” stated the Dallas Morning News.

Even as an experienced concert violinist and recording artist, Chung sometimes will still get nervous. “Funnily enough, even after having been on all the major stages of the world, it took me a long time to get rid of those feelings of anxiety when I performed in New York. Every time I walked out in Carnegie Hall, I felt as though I were 19, about to play for the Leventritt Competition on that stage. I went to Carnegie Hall last December, to perform the Beethoven Concerto, and my children were sitting there with a big smile. I suddenly thought this is simply wonderful!” she told American Record Guide.

Chung continues to practice for several hours every day. When she has time, she enjoys gardening and teaching students. Chung remains one of the most sought-after international violin players.

**Periodicals**

Shanghai Star, April 11, 2000.

**Online**


**Clare of Assisi**

Clare of Assisi (1194–1253) was one of the most influential women in the early medieval period of Roman Catholic church history. A follower of Francis of Assisi, Clare founded her own order, the Poor Clares, based on his tenets of charity and humility. She is thought to be the first woman in the history of the church to write her own rule, or guidelines for the religious life of her order.

**Of Noble Italian Birth**

Clare was born Chiara Offreduccio di Favaronne in Assisi, a hillside town in central Italy, in July of 1194. She was the eldest daughter in an affluent, landowning Umbrian family that had links to the Roman nobility of the past. Her father was Favorino Scifi, count of Sasso-Rosso, and her mother Ortolana also hailed from an aristocratic lineage. Growing up, Clare lived at both her family’s villa in Assisi and a castle on the mountainside of Mount Subasio. She was likely schooled at some point, for the writings that survive her display a good grasp of Latin.

Clare was said to be a devout, pious child from an early age, but her family planned an advantageous marriage for
her, and she resisted. When she was 18, she heard Francis of Assisi preach and was deeply moved by his words. He had come back to Assisi, his hometown, to preach Lenten sermons at the church of San Giorgio. Twelve years her senior, Francis hailed from a well-to-do cloth merchant family, but a stint in the army and a year as a prisoner of war in Perugia caused a religious awakening, and he became an ascetic. By the time Clare heard his sermons, Francis was called “Poverello” and was known throughout much of Christian Europe. His Franciscan order, founded in 1209, was the first mendicant, or beggar, order in Europe, created in what was then a radical attempt to follow Christ’s teachings. It followed a verse from the Gospel of Matthew, which counseled, according to Butler’s Lives of the Saints, “Freely have you received, freely give. . . . Do not possess gold . . . nor two coats nor shoes not a staff. . . . Behold I send you as sheep in the midst of wolves.” Unlike other monastic communities, some of which were quite wealthy in land, the Franciscan communities were forbidden to own any property or worldly goods.

Founded Order

Desiring to join such a community herself, Clare sought out Francis, and according to her official church biography, went to Mass at the Assisi cathedral on Palm Sunday, the Sunday before Easter. Instead of joining the queue to receive the palm leaf—an act that recalled a biblical incident in which Christ entered Jerusalem and to welcome him, believers cut boughs from trees and tossed them in his path—Clare remained in prayer, and the bishop then reportedly went to her and placed a palm in her hand. She was said to have fled her father’s home that night, on March 20, 1212, with the help of her aunt Bianca and another woman. They met Francis, as arranged, at a small chapel called Porziuncula that served as the spiritual home of his order, and Clare made her vows before him and accepted a rough brown tunic as her habit and a thick veil.

Francis first sent Clare to live with a community of Benedictine nuns in San Paolo, near Bastia, and at one point her relatives—it is thought that her father may have died by this time—learned of her whereabouts and attempted to bring her home by force. She resisted, however, reportedly clinging to the altar and declaring she would be the bride of no other except for Christ. While staying at another Benedictine monastery in Panzo, she was joined by her younger sister Agnes. Soon Francis found them a substandard dwelling next to the chapel of San Damiano, and with this Clare established with him a women’s religious community that she called “Order of Poor Ladies”; it later became known as the Poor Clares. The order was unusual in that its first members were women from well-to-do families, inspired by Clare’s devotion. Daughters of the famed Ubaldini family of Florence were among some of the first postulates.

Reputation Spread Across Europe

Against her objections, Francis made Clare abbess of her order in 1215, and she is believed never to have left the San Damiano abbey for the 40 years between then and her death. Another sister, Beatriz, also followed her there, as did her widowed mother and aunt Bianca. Like Francis’s Friars Minor order, her idea swiftly spread throughout Italy and beyond, and several other communities of Poor Clares were founded. As abbess, she was known for the rigors of her penance and often fasted so drastically that she became sick; during the forty days of Lent, for example, she took only bread and water. The Poor Clares did not sleep on mattresses, rather on homely beds fashioned from twig and hemp and went barefoot at all times. They begged for food, never ate meat, and refrained from all unnecessary speech. “The foundress recommended this holy silence as the means to avoid innumerable sins of the tongue,” noted Butler’s Lives of the Saints, “and to preserve the mind always recollected in God and free from the dissipation of the world which, without this guard, penetrates even the walls of cloisters.”

Clare was determined that her order should live as Francis’s community of friars, without assets or land, subsisting only on daily charity. This was a radical proposition for religious communities in the early Middle Ages, for many possessed large estates that they farmed to survive; others took in students or made crafts that they then sold for subsistence; the Franciscan tenet believed that such work distracted them from fulfilling their religious vocation, to serve God. Clare’s order had no formal written rule, or constitution, in its early years, save for a brief one written by Francis. In 1219, the Poor Clares came under the protection of Cardinal Ugolino when Francis joined one of the Holy Crusades, and Ugolino drew up a rule based on that of St. Benedict. It did not, however, contain the injunction for
absolute poverty—instead allowing for the possession of common property—and Clare objected to this; the Clares were a cloistered order, and Ugolino believed it impractical that the women should go begging. Nevertheless, it was approved by Pope Honorius III that year; after several years of her entreaties, Clare won her case. On September 17, 1228, Ugolino, now Pope Gregory IX, granted her order the Privilegium Paupertatis, or “Privilege of Poverty.” It was the first such decree kind issued by a pope and read in part: “It is evident that the desire of consecrating yourselves to God alone has led you to abandon every wish for temporal things… Since, therefore, you have asked for it, we confirm by Apostolic favour your resolution of the loftiest poverty and by the authority of these present letters grant that you may not be constrained by anyone to receive possessions. To no one, therefore, be it allowed to infringe upon this page of our concession or to oppose it with rash tenuity.”

In his later years, when Francis was blind and ill, Clare was said to have constructed a small hut for him at San Damiano, where he wrote his “Canticle of the Sun.” She herself carried out less of the penitential punishments for which she was known in earlier years. In writing to Agnes, daughter of the Bohemian king and founder of a Poor Clares community in Prague, she cautioned the abbess to be less drastic in her own mortifications, “so that living and hoping in the Lord you may offer Him a reasonable service and a sacrifice seasoned with the salt of prudence,” Butler’s Lives of the Saints quoted her as writing to Agnes.

**Famously Repelled Looting Army**

Clare lived during a tumultuous period in Italian history, and in 1234 San Damiano’s walls were transgressed by soldiers in the army of the Holy Roman emperor, Frederick II. Clare was ill in bed but reportedly rose and went to the window with a ciborium, a chalice-like vessel that was used at the time to house the Eucharist. She was said to have raised the ciborium at the soldiers—some of them Saracen, or Muslim—who had mounted a ladder, and they fell over backwards and fled. Because of this story, Clare is sometimes depicted holding this object in artistic representations. She also repelled another attack, it was said, a few weeks later by prayer, reminding the sisters that the city of Assisi had nourished them through charity, and they owed it to later by prayer, reminding the sisters that the city of Assisi had nourished them through charity, and they owed it to herself carried out less of the penitential punishments for which she was known in earlier years. In writing to Agnes, daughter of the Bohemian king and founder of a Poor Clares community in Prague, she cautioned the abbess to be less drastic in her own mortifications, “so that living and hoping in the Lord you may offer Him a reasonable service and a sacrifice seasoned with the salt of prudence,” Butler’s Lives of the Saints quoted her as writing to Agnes.

Clare lived during a tumultuous period in Italian history, and in 1234 San Damiano’s walls were transgressed by soldiers in the army of the Holy Roman emperor, Frederick II. Clare was ill in bed but reportedly rose and went to the window with a ciborium, a chalice-like vessel that was used at the time to house the Eucharist. She was said to have raised the ciborium at the soldiers—some of them Saracen, or Muslim—who had mounted a ladder, and they fell over backwards and fled. Because of this story, Clare is sometimes depicted holding this object in artistic representations. She also repelled another attack, it was said, a few weeks later by prayer, reminding the sisters that the city of Assisi had nourished them through charity, and they owed it to herself carried out less of the penitential punishments for which she was known in earlier years. In writing to Agnes, daughter of the Bohemian king and founder of a Poor Clares community in Prague, she cautioned the abbess to be less drastic in her own mortifications, “so that living and hoping in the Lord you may offer Him a reasonable service and a sacrifice seasoned with the salt of prudence,” Butler’s Lives of the Saints quoted her as writing to Agnes.

Clare lived during a tumultuous period in Italian history, and in 1234 San Damiano’s walls were transgressed by soldiers in the army of the Holy Roman emperor, Frederick II. Clare was ill in bed but reportedly rose and went to the window with a ciborium, a chalice-like vessel that was used at the time to house the Eucharist. She was said to have raised the ciborium at the soldiers—some of them Saracen, or Muslim—who had mounted a ladder, and they fell over backwards and fled. Because of this story, Clare is sometimes depicted holding this object in artistic representations. She also repelled another attack, it was said, a few weeks later by prayer, reminding the sisters that the city of Assisi had nourished them through charity, and they owed it to herself carried out less of the penitential punishments for which she was known in earlier years. In writing to Agnes, daughter of the Bohemian king and founder of a Poor Clares community in Prague, she cautioned the abbess to be less drastic in her own mortifications, “so that living and hoping in the Lord you may offer Him a reasonable service and a sacrifice seasoned with the salt of prudence,” Butler’s Lives of the Saints quoted her as writing to Agnes.

Clare lived during a tumultuous period in Italian history, and in 1234 San Damiano’s walls were transgressed by soldiers in the army of the Holy Roman emperor, Frederick II. Clare was ill in bed but reportedly rose and went to the window with a ciborium, a chalice-like vessel that was used at the time to house the Eucharist. She was said to have raised the ciborium at the soldiers—some of them Saracen, or Muslim—who had mounted a ladder, and they fell over backwards and fled. Because of this story, Clare is sometimes depicted holding this object in artistic representations. She also repelled another attack, it was said, a few weeks later by prayer, reminding the sisters that the city of Assisi had nourished them through charity, and they owed it to herself carried out less of the penitential punishments for which she was known in earlier years. In writing to Agnes, daughter of the Bohemian king and founder of a Poor Clares community in Prague, she cautioned the abbess to be less drastic in her own mortifications, “so that living and hoping in the Lord you may offer Him a reasonable service and a sacrifice seasoned with the salt of prudence,” Butler’s Lives of the Saints quoted her as writing to Agnes.

**Books**


**Periodicals**


---

**Clement I**

Clement I (died 101) is believed to have been the third pope, after Saints Linus and Anacletus; some modernists who consider the apostle Paul to be the first pope refer to Clement I as the fourth pope. Although little is known about the life of Clement I, scholars believe he led the Roman Church during the turbulent years of the last decade of the first century A.D.

Clement I—sometimes called Saint Clement or Clemens Romanus—was one of the first of the Apostolic Fathers and the first pope about whom anything definite is now known. Working closely with Saints Peter and Paul, the two founding fathers of the Christian church who preached alongside Jesus prior to Christ’s crucifixion in 33 A.D., he was likely a follower of the apostle Paul and was schooled by Paul in Rome. Accepting the Christian faith as a young man and working as a missionary preaching the word of the crucified Jesus, Clement I was eventually ordained a bishop by the apostle Peter and served a leadership role in the Roman church before being exiled to the Crimea, where he died in 101 A.D.

Although several letters have been attributed to Clement I throughout the ages, only one exists with definite authenticity: a letter dated circa 96 addressed to the Church of Corinth, which had become established during the reign of St. Paul and which was at the time experiencing internal dissension. Clement’s epistle is noteworthy because it bridges the chasm between inspired and uninspired Christian writings. Clement’s feast is celebrated on November 23.
The Life of Clement I

Because little is known of the life and death of Clement I, much scholarly speculation has resulted. Although his name is of Latin origin, his epistle to the Corinthians is written in Greek. While it is possible that, as an educated Roman, he wrote in Greek for the sake of his audience, several distinctly non-Roman elements in his letter have let some to speculate that Clement I was born outside the Roman empire. He may also have been a non-Latin dependent of a Roman household.

References to the Old Testament made in Clement’s letter to the Church of Corinth have suggested to some scholars that the letter-writer was of Jewish extraction. However, because he does not appear to have been familiar with Hebrew, and because references within the epistle—including mention of the mythological phoenix that rises from the ashes of its parent—suggest a Gentile upbringing, Clement’s Jewish origin remains in doubt. Some have proposed that he was a Hellenistic Jew, while still others have speculated that he was a Jewish freedman or son of a freedman of the emperor’s household. Another theory holds that Clement I was a convert to Judaism who later became a Christian. In any case, the Old Testament was, during Clement’s adult years, the principle sacred canon of the Christian Church; thus, it is not surprising that he would be well versed in it regardless of whether or not he had ties to Judaism.

An ancient church fresco dating to the fifth century corresponds to a legend in which Clement I was the son of a Roman nobleman named Faustinus and raised by Tiberius (42 B.C.–37 A.D.), second emperor of Rome. According to one account, when Clement I was five years old his mother left for Athens in response to a dream. After hearing nothing from his wife for a lengthy period, Faustinus went in search of his wife, leaving his young son to the care of the Roman emperor. Many years later, according to this legend, Clement I was taken to Palestine, where he met Saint Peter and rediscovered his lost family.

Second-century historian Saint Hegesippus (died 180), in his Five Memorials of Ecclesiastical Affairs, is reported by later historian Eusebius of Caesarea (c. 264–340)—a Palestinian scholar known as the father of Roman Catholic history—to write that Clement I was a contemporary of the apostles Peter and Paul. This view is echoed in the writings of Alexandrian scholar Origen (c. 185–c. 254). Greek theologian Saint Irenaeus (c. 130–200) writes that Clement I “saw the blessed Apostles and conversed with them, and had yet ringing in his ears the preaching of the Apostles and had their tradition before his eyes, and not he only for many were then surviving who had been taught by the Apostles.”

Tertullian, in his De Praescriptione of 199, writes that Clement I was ordained a bishop by Saint Peter, echoing the most widely accepted view.

Although it is traditional to refer to Clement I as “pope,” early works refer to him simply as the bishop of Rome, a position he was likely granted as a reward for his missionary zeal. Although Clement I was most likely ordained a bishop by Saint Peter and appointed by Peter to be, as his successor, the first pope, he may in fact have declined the position for several decades due to his relative youth and served instead under others for many years.

Historian Saint Epiphanius (c. 315–403) was unable to verify whether or not Clement I was actually ordained by Saint Peter or whether he was perhaps appointed bishop by another church elder. In his letter Clement I refers to the deaths of the apostles Peter and Paul in a manner that suggests that these deaths were not distant events. But he also notes that many of the presbyters or elders ordained by the apostles at Corinth were already dead. It therefore appears that Clement I may have lived among those who had known the apostles Paul and Peter in Rome, if he did not know the apostles himself.

Dating Clement’s Episcopate

In his letter to Corinth, Clement I himself never refers to his personal authority as a bishop of the Church, although this may have been a tactical decision in light of the fact that the churches of Rome and Corinth had not yet come to recognize a single Church leader of overarching authority. In later years the leaders of the Roman Church would become dominant within the Christian faith.

According to Eusebius of Caesarea, the first references to the dates of Clement I’s episcopate are found in the writings of Hegesippus and Dionysius of Corinth (c. 180). Eusebius writes that Clement I was made bishop of Rome in the 12th year of the reign of the Roman Emperor Domitianus (reigned 81–96), whose alienation of the upper classes resulted in a period of terror and ended in his assassination.
Hegesippus, who circa 160 compiled the first record of the popes and their episcopates, lists the dates of Clement's episcopate as 90 to 99, in the midst of the schism within the Church of Corinth. More recent scholars have placed the beginning of Clement's reign anywhere from 88 to 96 A.D. Eusebius also links Clement's reign with the rise in troubles at Corinth, a situation that existed through the end of the first Christian century.

Noted Church historian Saint Jerome (c. 342–420) writes that among his own contemporaries most “Latinus” believed that Clement I was the immediate successor to Saint Peter, but that he was in fact the fourth pope. Hegesippus and Irenaeus also identify Clement I as the fourth pope (after Peter), but two other early sources identify him as the third pope, and one other source as the fifth pope. Hegesippus’s list appears to have been used in chronologies compiled as late as the fourth century. Among nineteenth-century scholars, he is most often cited as the third pope after saints Linus and Anacletus.

**Epistle to the Church of Corinth**

In the last decade of the first Christian century some elders in the Church of Corinth spearheaded a move against other of the church leaders, resulting in a split or schism among the region’s Christians. Clement’s now famous letter was sent to urge peace and unity. It begins with a reference to the persecution of the Roman Church, presumably by Emperor Domitianus, by way of explanation of his delay in writing. In addition to being unpopular among the Roman wealthy class, Domitianus also made frequent attacks on the region’s Christians. Clement’s now-famous letter was sent to urge peace and unity. It begins with a reference to the persecution of the Roman Church, presumably by Emperor Domitianus, by way of explanation of his delay in writing. In addition to being unpopular among the Roman wealthy class, Domitianus also made frequent attacks on the Corinthian Church. More recent scholars have placed the date of Clement’s reign anywhere from 88 to 96 A.D. Eusebius also links Clement’s reign with the rise in troubles at Corinth, a situation that existed through the end of the first Christian century.

Evidence that the epistle was written at an early date in Church history comes from the fact that letter addresses a quarrel at Corinth over the authority of the presbyters, with some members of that church arguing against order or hierarchy in the church. The very nature of the dispute would only have arisen during the first Christian century when the Church was governed by a group of presbyters or elders. In fact, the word “bishop,” which comes from a Greek phrase meaning “superintendent,” was during Clement’s day synonymous with the term “elder.”

**A Martyr to the Faith**

The Epistle to the Church of Corinth is the only document believed to have been written by Clement I. A second letter, known as the Second Epistle of Clement to the Corinthians, is considered by scholars to be spurious. Other apparently apocryphal documents once attributed to Clement I are two Epistles to Virgins, the Apostolical Constitutions, the Apostolic Canons, the Testament of Our Lord, and five other letters.

Although it is not known what effect Clement’s letter had on the quarrel at Corinth, the Corinthian Church came to revere the letter and held it second in value only to the epistles Saint Paul had written. Clement’s letter was for many years reopened on Sundays and read aloud to the Christian congregation. It became one of the best-known of the early Christian writings and served as a model upon which many subsequent church documents were based. It also had the effect of placing Clement I in a position second only to that of the apostles.

Clement I is believed to have died in 101, a year after the end of his pontificate, and was succeeded by Pope Evaristus. The Roman theologian Rufinus (c. 345–410) was the first to refer to Saint Clement as a martyr, and in 417 Pope Zosimus wrote in a letter that Clement I had given his life for the Christian faith. There are at least two other references to Clement’s martyrdom dating to the fifth century. Some modern scholars are of the opinion that Pope Clement I may have been confused with a martyred consul also named Clement. On the other hand, since there is no
tradition that he was buried in Rome, Clement I may have died while in exile.

An apparently apocryphal account of Clement’s martyrdom dating to no earlier than the fourth century relates that he converted over 400 individuals to the Christian faith before being banished from Rome to the Crimea—modern-day Russia—by an angry Emperor Trajan (c. 53–117). Trajan was a militant leader who conquered both Mesopotamia and Armenia. In the Crimea, it is said, Clement I quenched the thirst of 2,000 Christians by means of a miracle. In retribution for this act, Trajan had Clement I bound to an anchor and thrown into the Black Sea. A shrine of white marble miraculously encased his corpse; each year when the tide receded some two miles this shrine containing the martyr’s bones was said to become visible to those on shore.

Around 868 Slavic apostle Saint Cyril dug up some bones in the Crimea along with an anchor, and he believed these to be the relics of Saint Clement. These relics were deposited by Pope Hadrian II in the altar of the basilica of Saint Clement in Rome, along with the relics of Saint Ignatius of Antioch. The modern church of Saint Clement at Rome was constructed as late as the early 12th century by Paschal II, following the destruction of parts of the city by the Normans. However, an older church dating to the fourth century lies under the present building.

Books

Online

Xavier Cugat

Xavier Cugat (1900–1990), a classically trained violinist who conducted with his bow, was known in his lifetime as the Rumba King. He is credited with pushing Latino music and dance into popularity in America during the first half of the 20th century.

Best-known for having popularized the rumba in the United States during the 1930s, Xavier Cugat’s Latin-influenced band lead the way in a new music craze among the dancing and radio-listening public. A dramatic showman who often wore huge South American hats on stage and who led his band with the wave of a violin bow, Cugat performed in the ritziest of clubs, on the radio, and in the movies. Having made his professional start as a child prodigy playing classical violin, Cugat was never apologetic about his switch to popular music. He was quoted in the Los Angeles Times as saying, “I play music... make an atmosphere that people enjoy. It makes them happy. They smile. They dance. Feel good—who be sorry for that?” Cugat’s several marriages, extramarital affairs, and divorces made headlines, but these events did not cause him to repine. He credited his irrepressible interest in women to a Latin temperament and once said he’d marry each of his four wives over again.

Born on January 1, 1900, near Barcelona, Spain, and christened Francisco de Asis Javier Cugat Mingall de Brue y Deulofeo, Cugat was two years old when his father moved the family to Havana, Cuba. Two years later, a neighbor and violinmaker gave the boy a quarter-sized violin as a Christmas present. Cugat’s exceptional talents were soon evident, as he developed into a musical prodigy. He played professionally when he was just nine years old, and at age twelve he became first violinist for the Teatro Nacional Symphonic Orchestra.

Tenor Enrico Caruso met Cugat in Havana when he was performing there with the Metropolitan Opera Company, and he enlisted the boy as his accompanist for an American tour. The subsequent events of Cugat’s teen years are somewhat obscure. He is known to have played the violin on a WDY broadcast in 1917, which made him one of the first violinists to perform on radio, and some sources list
Cugat as having moved to the United States with his parents in 1915. But the bandleader once told the Los Angeles Times a far different story, one where he began by working 14 hours a day for a room, meals, and no pay. “[Caruso died] shortly after I got to New York . . . and there I was, no friends and not a word of English. And not much money,” he said. In any case, Cugat was disappointed in his musical career. Although he played Carnegie Hall twice, toured the United States and Europe with a symphony orchestra, and became a soloist for the Los Angeles Philharmonic, the money—and critical response—was not satisfactory to Cugat.

He then gave up playing the violin for a job with the Los Angeles Times as a cartoonist. Caruso had taught Cugat how to draw caricatures and the young man hoped to use this skill to improve his prospects. Cugat had considerable talents as an artist but soon grew tired of the situation. Quoted in a Los Angeles Times obituary, Cugat explained, “When they tell you to be funny by 10:30 tomorrow morning . . . I can’t do it—I finally quit, and get these six guys to play commercial music with me.” Also joining Cugat on the bandstand was his wife-to-be Carmen Castillo as lead singer. The year was 1928 and Latin music was not yet popular. However, the band would land a gig playing during intermissions at the famed Coconut Grove in Los Angeles. At the time, a Gus Arnheim band with singer Bing Crosby was the main act. While in Los Angeles, Cugat also played the violin with two performers on a daily broadcast on KFWB radio.

**Fame at the Waldorf-Astoria Hotel**

The job that served as Cugat’s springboard to fame was at the new Starlight Roof at the Waldorf-Astoria hotel in New York City. The bandleader made a modest start there in 1933 but was soon ensconced in the hotel’s “Cugat Room.” His dance band played at the posh hotel for 16 years and Cugat became the Waldorf-Astoria’s highest-paid bandleader, making $7,000 a week plus a cut of the cover charge take. In 1934 Cugat’s band played a three-hour network radio program on Saturday nights.

During a time when dance band leaders Benny Goodman and Glenn Miller were immensely popular, Cugat benefited from a conflict between the American Society of Composers, Authors and Publishers (ASCAP) and the radio networks. ASCAP withheld its music from broadcasts, forcing dance bands to play mostly tired public-domain songs. Cugat, however, had some 500 non-ASCAP Latin tunes at his disposal and had soon attracted a national audience. He became known as the “Rumba King.” Some of the performers that Cugat in turn helped to popularize were Desi Arnaz, Dinah Shore, Lina Romay, and Miguelito Valdes. He wrote and recorded hundreds of songs, including “Chiquita Banana,” “Rumba Rhapsody,” “Kasmiri Love Song,” “Rain in Spain,” “Babalu,” “My Shawl,” “Rendezvous in Rio,” “Walter Winchell Rumba,” “Is It taboo,” and “I’ll Never Love Again.”

Cugat made the leap to the silver screen in 1942, appearing in You Were Never Lovelier, which starred Rita Hayworth. Cugat had met the actress in California many years before, when she was a dancer known as Margarita Cansino. With his band, Cugat appeared in many more films—often as himself. He was repeatedly seen on screen with the swimming actress Esther Williams; among their motion pictures together were Neptune’s Daughter, Bathing Beauty, This Time for Keeps, and On an Island With You. Cugat’s caricatures were also featured in some of his films and on a “curtain of stars” in Grauman’s Chinese Theater in Hollywood. These events followed an earlier interest in movie making on the part of Cugat, who had previously made films including an ill-fated production during the early sound era. In 1928 he had spent $35,000 to produce a Spanish-language film, only to discover that there were as yet no sound projectors in Latin America.

Cugat’s personal life made news many times, as he wed and divorced four times. His marriage to Castillo ended unhappily in 1944. The bandleader was married to Lorraine Allen from 1947 to 1952, when—with the help of private detectives—she caught him in a compromising position in a hotel room with the band’s lead singer, Abbe Lane. Cugat wed Lane that same year and stayed married some 14 years, until he found her with another man. In 1966 he married the much younger singer-guitarist Charro Baeza, who is better known by her first name alone. This marriage ended in 1978 and was said to be the only amicable divorce. Cugat’s reflections on his love life were recalled in the Los Angeles Times: “I like women—all women. . . . Also, there is my temperament. I am Latin. I excite. For me, this is life.”

Although the Latin music craze that had swelled in the 1930s and 1940s died down, Cugat remained extremely popular. His band was often booked in Las Vegas and he performed until 1969, when Cugat suffered a stroke and became partially paralyzed. The bandleader recovered from the stroke but his health was never the same. After his divorce from Charro, Cugat moved to Barcelona, where he lived for 18 years—until his death in 1990. He had been suffering from heart and lung problems and was in intensive care at the Quiron Clinic when he died.

**Books**

Contemporary Authors, Gale, 1991.


**Periodicals**


**Online**

Saint David

Saint David (c. 520–c. 601) is the patron saint of doves, poets, and Wales. One source calls him “perhaps the most celebrated of British saints.” Another gives him credit for evangelizing much of Wales. The body of information available about him today is thin in substantiated fact but rich with tradition, including even King Arthur and a sea monster. Saint David’s mere existence may provide evidence that Christianity in Wales persisted in tact and uninterrupted since Roman times.

Rhygyfarch Embellished Story

Most information about Saint David comes from the writings of an eleventh-century monk named Rhygyfarch (also Rhgyvarch, Rhigfarch, and Ricemarch), son of Bishop Sulien, of Saint David’s Cathedral, Saint David’s favorite of the churches he established. Rhygyfarch claimed to have gathered his information from old written sources, but those have not survived. Rhygyfarch’s life of Saint David is regarded by many scholars as suspect because it contains many implausible events and because he had a stake in enhancing Saint David’s history so as to support the prestige of the Welsh church and its independence from Canterbury, the center of the English church (still Catholic at the time). According to David Hugh Farmer in The Oxford Dictionary of Saints, Rhygyfarch’s history of Saint David “should be treated as propaganda, which may, however, contain some elements of true tradition.” Another source considers Rhygyfarch’s biography “traditional, symbolic tales of a great religious leader.” Saint David’s existence at least does not seem to be in doubt; it is attested to in written records from earlier dates. The earliest is an Irish Catalogue of the Saints of 730. Another is an Irish Martyrology of 800.

Saint David Born

One legend says Saint David’s birth was foretold to Saint Patrick (about 373–464) by an angel 30 years in advance. In the traditions surrounding Saint David, his mother is said to be a woman named Non, now Saint Non, who may have been a nun at the cloister called Ty Gwyn, near Whitesand Bay. She may also have been the daughter of a chieftain in Pembrokeshire. She is said to have been very beautiful, and it was her great beauty that is said to have driven Saint David’s father, Sant, or Xantus, a local chieftain or king, perhaps related to King Arthur, to rape her. (Other traditions say Sant and Non were married, and she became a nun later in her life.) She became pregnant with Saint David. Yet another legend says that during her pregnancy she entered the church of Saint Gildas in Wales, and he was struck dumb. He realized the Welsh church must be intended for the future Saint David and left for Ireland. In any case, Non is said to have given birth during a storm (so violent as to have deterred a local ruler who planned to kill Saint David in order to eliminate a rival for power in the realm) at a spot overlooking Saint Bride’s Bay, south of today’s Saint David’s Cathedral. The year is given variously as 454, 487, 520, 542, and 544. A medieval chapel named for Saint Non was built at the spot; it is today in ruins. Non’s son was baptized at Porth Clais by Saint Ailbhe, who may have been Non’s nephew. Miracles marked the event: a new spring erupted and sight was restored to a blind monk, Movi, holding the baby.
Excelled in School

Saint David went to school at a monastery called Hen Vynyw, or Henfynyw, in Cardigan. Rhygyfarch wrote, “He grew up full of grace and lovely to behold. And there it was that holy David learnt the alphabet, the psalms, the lessons for the whole year and the divine office; and there his fellow-disciples saw a dove with a golden beak playing at his lips and teaching him to sing the praise of God.” One source points out he would have learned Latin there and studied mathematics, astronomy, and music. After Hen Vynyw, he went to an unidentified island (one source says it was the Isle of Wight) to study for the priesthood under a Welsh scribe, Saint Paulinus. A legend says that Paulinus had gone blind from crying so much as he prayed, and that Saint David restored his sight with a gentle touch. Another legend says that an angel told Paulinus to send Saint David out to evangelize the British.

Founded Monasteries

As a traveling priest, Saint David is said to have founded 10 or 12 monasteries. The number is disputed, but several have been authenticated. He also allegedly cleansed deadly water at Bath and turned it into a warm and healing pool. Another legend says some monks tried to poison Saint David’s bread, but Saint Schuthyn rode to Saint David one night from Ireland on the back of a sea monster to warn him, and Saint David blessed the bread, counteracting the poison. There is consensus that he ended his evangelizing travels in Mynyw, or Menevia, in extreme southwest Wales (where Saint David’s Cathedral is today) and founded his major abbey there, training “many great pastors and eminent servants of God,” according to Father Alban Butler on the Catholic Forum website. Butler described Mynyw as “formed by nature for solitude, being . . . almost cut off from the rest of the island.” Another source calls the site “lovely and lonely.”

Wrote Strict Rule

Saint David’s monks followed a very strict rule “in the spirit of penance,” according to Father Butler. Others say Saint David adapted his rule from that of monks in Egypt. “Every moment of the day had its duties,” wrote Amy Steedman, one interpreter of Saint David’s life. Wearing animal skins, they labored in the fields, plowing without farm animals; “every man his own ox,” Saint David is reported to have said. Speaking was severely restricted, and they were to pray, silently if not aloud, at all times. When not in the fields, they prayed, studied, and wrote. They ate bread, vegetables, and salt and drank only water and a little milk. Following the evening meal, the only one of the day, they prayed for three hours before going to bed, then awoke at dawn. Because he didn’t allow the consumption of wine or other spirits, Saint David is nicknamed “The Waterman.” The monks were to pray continuously from evening on Friday until daybreak on Sunday, with only an hour after Saturday Matins for rest. Farmer noted, “David devoted himself to works of mercy and practised frequent genuflexions and total immersion in cold water as his favourite austerities.”

Father Butler wrote that if someone wished to join Saint David’s monastery, he had to wait outside for 10 days, “during which time he was tried by harsh words, repeated refusals, and painful labours, that he might learn to die to himself. When he was admitted, he left all his worldly substance behind him.”

Combatted Pelagian Heresy

A man who lived over a hundred years before Saint David played a role in the next major event in the traditional telling of Saint David’s life. The monk Pelagius, born in Britain in about 354, visited Rome in approximately 380. Although Pelagius was not a priest, he was a popular religious leader who placed a high value on asceticism, or self-denial, as a way of drawing closer to God. The self-indulgent excess he saw in Rome shocked him, and he blamed it on the doctrine of salvation by grace, the idea that people cannot earn salvation by good works but that only God can bestow it. To counteract this doctrine, which Pelagius thought led to moral degradation, he insisted humans were responsible for their own salvation. For this he was declared a heretic and excommunicated in 417 by Pope Innocent I.

By the fifth century, Pelagius’s heresy, called Pelagianism, was widespread in Britain. It was suppressed, but legend says it sprang up again in Saint David’s lifetime, and a meeting of church officials, called a synod, took place at Brefi, in Cardigan, in about 519, to suppress it again. Saint David was invited to attend. Although he spoke to the assembly only reluctantly, his words were compelling, and legend says a hill rose up under his feet so that everyone could see and hear him and a white dove came and sat on his shoulder as he spoke. (He is represented in church art standing on his hill with the dove on his shoulder.) He not only put down the heresy, but was elected primate of the Cambrian, or Welsh, church unanimously. The incumbent primate, Dubricius, even resigned in Saint David’s favor. Saint David accepted on the condition that the headquarters of the see be transferred to his home monastery in Mynyw (now Saint David’s Cathedral). Some traditions say the legendary King Arthur approved the relocation of the see.

Made Pilgrimage to Jerusalem

Other stories of Saint David say that after a vision, he traveled to Jerusalem with two companions to aid the patriarch, and that the patriarch of Jerusalem, John III, consecrated him archbishop. Back in Wales, he allegedly assembled a Synod of Victory to officially celebrate the end of the Pelagian heresy in Britain. This synod also presumably ratified a set of rules written by Saint David for the “regulation of the British church,” but Rhygyfarch maintained the writings were lost to “age and negligence, and also . . . the frequent attacks of pirates.”

Died in Mynyw

Saint David died in his monastery at Mynyw, some say at the age of 142 or 147 (he is credited with predicting the day), and an observer watched angels carry Saint David’s soul up to heaven. Saint David’s last words to his monks are said to be, “Be joyful, and keep your faith and your creed.
Do those little things that you have seen me do and heard about.” The year of his death varies; it may have been in 560, 589, or 601.

Sanctified

In 1120 Pope Callistus II declared David a saint. Butler’s Lives of the Saints casts doubt on a legend that the pope also declared that visiting Mynyw twice would be “equal to one visit to Rome” in indulgence value. Saint David’s feast day is March 1 (his mother Saint Non’s is March 3), and according to Butler’s Lives, “There can . . . be no question that he was a highly popular saint in his own country. More than fifty pre-Reformation churches in South Wales are known to have been dedicated in his honour. Moreover, even in England, Archbishop Arundel in 1398 ordered his feast to be kept in every church throughout the province of Canterbury.” Although the monastery Saint David built is gone, today’s Saint David’s Cathedral, much of it dating from the twelfth century, is Wales’s largest cathedral.

Saint David Symbolized

Several symbols are associated with Saint David. William Shakespeare referred to the Welsh custom of wearing leeks or daffodils in Saint David’s honor on March 1 as “an ancient tradition begun upon an honourable request,” as quoted in Farmer’s Oxford Dictionary. Some say the custom comes from a battle between the Welsh and the Saxons; Saint David reportedly wanted the Welsh to wear leeks in their hats so they could recognize other Welsh. Saint David’s day now is marked by festivals that feature singing, dancing, and reciting, and the leek and the daffodil are national symbols of Wales.

Other symbols associated with Saint David come from yet another legend about his birth: An angel told Saint David’s father, Sant, in a dream that when he went hunting the next day, he would kill a stag and find a fish and a beehive. The stag, said to eat snakes, represents Christianity’s conquering Satan (the serpent); the fish represents Saint David’s abstinence from liquor; and the bees represent his wisdom and spirituality.

Books


Online


Wales,” Encyclopaedia Britannica Library, 2003, CD-ROM.

Marie-Olympe de Gouges

French author and activist Marie Olympe de Gouges (1748–1793) achieved modest success as a playwright in the 18th century, but she became best known for her political writing and support of the French Revolution. Considered a feminist pioneer, de Gouges was an advocate of women’s rights. Her most famous work was The Declaration of the Rights of Woman, (1791). Even in revolutionary France, feminist ideas were considered radical. In 1793, she was executed for crimes against the government.

Early Life

Marie-Olympe de Gouges was born Marie Gouzes in Montauban, in southern France, on December 31, 1748. The facts about her true parentage are somewhat vague, and de Gouges herself contributed to the confusion by encouraging rumors about her illegitimacy.

It is commonly believed that she was born and raised in a modest family, the daughter of Pierre Gouze, a butcher, and Anne Olympe Moisset, a maidservant. However, it was rumored that de Gouges’s mother, who reportedly was a beautiful woman and unhappy in her marriage, had an affair with a person of high social rank, Marquis Lefranc de Pompgnan. The marquis, many claimed, was de Gouge’s real father. Another circulated rumor suggested that de Gouges was the illegitimate daughter of King Louis XV. When asked about her true parentage, de Gouges would only answer somewhat ambiguously. Fueling the speculation about de Gouges’s illegitimate birth was the fact the Pierre Gouze’s name did not appear on any significant documents relating to his daughter’s paternity. However, it is now generally believed today that Gouze was indeed her real father. Whatever the true facts about her parentage, she actually lived with Gouze, who died when she was two years old. During her youth, de Gouges already
demonstrated the kind of rebelliousness that would come into play in her adult life.

In 1765, when she was 17, de Gouges married a French officer, Louis Aubrey. Two years later, they had a son. Aubrey was much older than de Gouges and he died three years into the marriage. Following his death, and displaying her characteristic rebelliousness, de Gouges refused to accept her position as a widowed mother or the designation of “Widowed Aubrey,” a personal stance that was counter to the social convention. Even more, she vowed never to remarry.

Moved to Paris

Abandoning her son, de Gouges went to Paris in 1770 to seek fame as a writer. For her pen name she chose simply Olympe de Gouges, a variation of both her mother and father’s names. She actively sought to achieve her ambition, propagating the rumors of her illegitimate birth. It has been suggested that she started, or at least encouraged, the rumors because she believed that, by tying her lineage to a marquis, she’d gain her entrance into the higher social circles that she aspired. Also, she most likely believed that a blood tie with Marquis Lefranc of Pompignan, who was a well-known author, would help her establish her own reputation as a writer. The rumor gained currency in her lifetime even though no proof existed of its truth.

During this period, she furthered her career by meeting and establishing connections with the most famous writers and philosophers of the time, and she worked her way into the highest social circles. Remaining resolute in her desire never to marry again, she reportedly became the mistress of several men of high social rank and she divided herself between her many lovers and her writing. A self-educated woman, de Gouges wrote plays, novels, and sociopolitical pamphlets. Her dramatic works included Le Mariage inattendu de Chérubin and Zamore et Mirza ou l’Heureux naufrage.

Her career as a playwright turned out to be somewhat disappointing, as it resulted in only modest success. She was poorly educated, could barely read for a good portion of her life, and her grammar and punctuation were terrible. As a result, her writing tended to be plodding, verbose, and awkward. However, greatly affected by current events, she soon enter the phase of her career that proved the most productive and thematically significant. She began turning out political works that helped influence the course of human rights, specifically for women. Paris, in the late 1780’s, was a political focal point. France was a country in turmoil and on the verge of an influential and inspiring, though bloody, revolution that would attract the attention of the world. De Gouges was swept up in the fervor of the times.

Although most of her fellow citizens were exuberantly political, and even fanatically revolutionary, de Gouges initially took a moderate stance. Reforms she suggested in her political materials were intended to bring about change without sacrificing the social stability. Indeed, de Gouges had friends in the French royalty that was about to be overthrown, but her works often attempted to negatively depict the extremists on both sides of the political spectrum: the royalists, or monarchists, and the revolutionaries. As the storms of revolution swirled, de Gouges still considered herself a royalist. Her 1788 piece Droits de la femme articulated advanced revolutionary ideals while expressing her sympathies for the French monarchy. Also in 1788, she published her Patriotic Remarks, wherein she presented a large program of social reforms and advocated for the dismantling of the monarchical government. The document also outlined the abuses of the elite social class. One of her works was a political satire, Project of a Patriotic Case By Citoyenne, involving a “voluntary tax.”

But de Gouges would become disillusioned by the French monarchy’s inaction, and she would encourage the French king Louis XVI to abdicate his throne and put in its place a regent government. She felt that this would be a workable solution to an ever-growing crisis. The citizens had armed themselves, the Bastille had been stormed, and blood was literally flowing in the streets. De Gouges would remain a royalist until Louis XVI escaped from the country, a move that further increased the growing chaos. From that point on, her political material become more pointed and she sided more strongly with the revolutionaries.

In 1789, after Louis XVI’s escape, she produced two more satires, Cry of Wise by a Woman and To Save the Fatherland.
Feminist Thought

The sociopolitical works that de Gouge produced during this period focused strongly on the issues of civil rights, particularly the rights of women, which she deemed were "natural" and "inalienable." Her dedication to and advocacy for these issues stemmed from her much broader belief in the complete equality of all human beings.

The revolution created the type of environment that fostered innovative ideas such as feminism. One of the feminist organizations created during this period was the Society of Republican and Revolutionary Women. Its members encouraged de Gouges to develop a document that would essentially serve as a declaration of rights for women. She set out to produce the work, which would eventually be published as the Declaration of the Rights of Woman and of the Citizen in 1791.

In the meantime, her name was becoming widely known in radical circles, just as it had a few years earlier when she established her standing in the bourgeoisie. In October 1789, the year the French Revolution came to a boil, she proposed a radical reform platform to the French National Assembly, a governing body comprised of the nation’s new leaders. Appearing before this board, she advocated for the complete legal equality of the sexes, more job opportunities for women, a legal alternative to the private dowry system, better education for young girls, and the establishment of a national theater that would show only plays written by women.

Declaration of Women's Rights

Finally published in September of 1791, the Declaration of the Rights of Woman (Déclaration des Droits de la Femme et de la Citoyenne) was, in a way, a response to the Declaration of the Rights of Man and the Citizen that was published in 1789 and was to the French Revolution what the Declaration of Independence was to the American Revolution. De Gouge’s declaration called for an extension of the rights demanded in the latter including complete freedom of speech, the right to vote, and the opportunity to seek public office. Lest anyone miss her point, de Gouge employed the same kind of language and rhetoric that characterized the male “Declaration.”

De Gouge dedicated the work to Queen Marie Antoinette, hoping that the royal would support women’s rights. The work consists of a preamble, 17 articles, and an epilogue. Her words were provocative and incited women to action. In the epilogue, de Gouge proclaimed, “Woman, wake up; the tocsin of reason is being heard throughout the whole universe; discover your rights. The powerful empire of nature is no longer surrounded by prejudice, fanaticism, superstition, and lies. The flame of truth has dispersed all the clouds of folly and usurpation. Enslaved man has multiplied his strength and needs recourse to yours to break his chains. Having become free, he has become unjust to his companion. Oh, women, women! When will you cease to be blind? What advantage have you received from the Revolution?”

Essentially, the Declaration of the Rights of Woman and of the Citizen stated that women were equal to men in every respect and thus were entitled to the same rights. The work would create enemies for de Gouge; she believed that because many women participated in the French Revolution, they would or should automatically receive the newfound rights extended to the male citizenry.

Accused of Sedition

De Gouge’s outspokenness would eventually lead to her arrest, conviction, and execution. The government that came to power after the overthrow of the monarchy demonstrated no tolerance for perceived subversion or even criticism. In a way, one tyranny replaced another, and de Gouge had placed herself in a rather tenuous situation. She felt she had the right to speak out on behalf of the citizenry and to assert the rights of women. But in doing so, she violated traditional social boundaries that even the revolutionaries held inviolable, thus invoking the ire of the ruling body. Also, she harshly criticized Maximilien Robespierre, the recognized leader of the new government. Her advocacy of women’s rights combined with this criticism, which she published as Pronostic de Monsieur Robespierre pour un animal amphibie, as well as her previous support of King Louis XVI, led to accusations of sedition. In retrospect, and given the tenor of the times, de Gouge’s publications of the criticism and “Declaration” were highly impetuous and imprudent actions.

Sent to Trial

At the time of her arrest, she was known publicly as Marie Olympe de Gouges, femme de lettres. She was 38 years old and lived in the Pont-Neuf section of Paris, on rue du Harlay. A review of her trial proves enlightening, as it provides a typical example of the persecution that befell the revolutionaries who criticized the new government that arose in the wake of the monarchy’s downfall. As this new government, the so-called National Convention, grew stronger, it took on the force of a “Reign of Terror.”

De Gouges was charged on July 25, 1793, with having written works contrary to the wants and needs of the entire nation and directed against those in power. She was imprisoned and her writings were reviewed by a public prosecutor the next day. Her interrogation began on August 6, 1793. Following the review and her interrogation, it was determined that she had produced writings that were considered an attack on the sovereignty of the people and that she had questioned and openly provoked civil war and sought to arm citizens against one another.

The public prosecutor assigned to her case expressed great indignation for de Gouges and her writings, claiming that she stated “perfidious intentions,” as it is written in the Life, Liberty, Fraternity: Exploring the French Revolution website. Describing de Gouges as “criminal,” the prosecutor ascribed to her “hidden motives” against the sovereignty of the citizens of France and accused her of seeking to reestablish the monarchial government. He also criticized her for alleged inappropriate behavior during her public hearing, accusing her of smirking during her hearing, shrugging her shoulders at the accusations, raising her eyebrows at various statements, and smiling at spectators.
The prosecutor drew up formal accusations and de Gouge was held for trial. She was found guilty and condemned to death according to article one of the new constitution, quoted by the Life, Liberty, Fraternity: Exploring the French Revolution website, “Whoever is convicted of having composed or printed works or writings which provoke the dissolution of the national representation, the reestablishment of royalty, or of any other power attacking the sovereignty of the people, will be brought before the Revolutionary Tribunal and punished by death.”

In an attempt to escape the guillotine blade, de Gouges claimed she was pregnant. She was examined by doctors and midwives, who determined that her claim was false.

Executed by Guillotine

De Gouge was executed in Paris on November 3, 1793, put to death by guillotine, the instrument that had taken the lives of so many royals and members of the bourgeoisie during the revolution, as well as the lives of many staunch and true revolutionaries who dared defy or criticize the implacable government that rose to power. According to reports in the Life, Liberty, Fraternity: Exploring the French Revolution website, de Gouge ascended the scaffold at 4 p.m., looked into the assembled crowd, and said, “Children of the Fatherland, you will avenge my death.”

Following the execution, a published report, quoted in an article by Jone Johnson Lewis, stated that “Olympe de Gouges, born with an exalted imagination, mistook her delirium for an inspiration of nature. She wanted to be a man of state. She took up the projects of the perfidious people who want to divide France. It seems the law has punished this conspirator for having forgotten the virtues that belong to her sex.”

Before her death, she wrote to her son, as seen on the Bibliotheca Augustana website, “Good-bye, my son, I will not live any more when you receive this letter. You will repair the injustice which one makes to your mother.” In a public statement, she wrote, “Think of me and remember the action that I carried out in favour of the women! I am certain that we will triumph one day!”

Books


Online


Marie le Jars de Gournay

Marie le Jars de Gournay (1565–1645) was one of Renaissance France’s most active literary figures. She served as the posthumous editor for the works of famed essayist Michel de Montaigne, and in her own writings espoused a strongly feminist point of view that made her a woman far ahead of her time. A generation after her death, de Gournay was honored as one of the seventy most famous women of all time by Jean de la Forge in the 1663 volume Circle of Learned Women.

Barred from School

De Gournay was born on October 6, 1565, in Paris, where her father Guillaume enjoyed royal patronage as an officeholder during the reigns of Charles IX and Henry III. She was the first of six children in her family, and when she was three years old, her father acquired an estate in Picardy, a region in northern France. The property, Gournay-sur-Aronde, also gave him a minor nobility title, but the family did not live there until after his death in 1577. De Gournay’s mother decided to relocate the family there in order to live more cheaply than in Paris; the death of Guillaume de Gournay had caused some financial difficulties, which were exacerbated by general economic troubles in France at the time during its contentious Wars of Religion.

De Gournay’s brothers were sent away to school, but she was not. Had they received an education at home with tutors, she might have enjoyed some access to learning; thus she took it upon herself to learn by reading avidly and teaching herself Latin. She became proficient enough to translate works from Virgil, the classical Roman poet, and then moved on to the study of Greek. At the time, French Humanist thought stressed that a familiarity with the classics would breed a virtuous intellect. De Gournay still retained a respect for the teachings and tenets of the Roman Catholic church, however, and also read the works of church fathers such as St. Jerome.
Met Montaigne

Around 1584, de Gournay came across the new second edition of Montaigne’s Essais, published just a few years earlier to widespread public debate. A renowned scholar, Montaigne hailed from a landowning family and had served as the mayor of Bordeaux. His essays discussed a range of topics, from friendship to intellectual curiosity to human fallibility and were written in a lively style that greatly influenced other writers of the era and beyond. As editors Richard Hillman and Colette Quesnel wrote in a preface to one of de Gournay’s works in translation, Apology for the Woman Writing and Other Works, “the Essays were a radically innovative work in their time, not least for their author’s complex self-portrayal, which makes him a fascinating presence within his own work; they also apply abundant classical learning to a wide variety of moral, political, and philosophical questions of contemporary concern, which are often treated in a manner at once iconoclastic and profound.”

Deeply intrigued by Montaigne’s ideas and literary style, de Gournay traveled to Paris in 1588 to meet him. At the time, she was 23 years old, and Montaigne 32 years her senior; afterward, he journeyed to Picardy, where she was still living with her family and spent three months there. He termed her his fille d’alliance or “adoptive daughter,” which was a common mentor-student relationship at the time among intellectuals. In Picardy, she later asserted, Montaigne recounted to her a tragic love story that she drew time among intellectuals. In Picardy, she later asserted. In the same essay, she noted that “If, therefore, women may achieve is to resemble ordinary men,” she asserted. In the same essay, she noted that “If, therefore, women attain less often than men to the heights of excellence, it is a marvel that the lack of good education—indeed, the abundance of outright and blatantly bad education—does not do worse and prevent them from doing so entirely.”

Settled Family Finances

De Gournay’s literary ambitions were both stalled and set free by family matters. Orphaned with the death of her mother in 1591, she was forced to undertake the education of two more brothers—while her own formal schooling never materialized—and find a husband for her sister, each of which were costly enterprises that depleted the family’s already diminished assets. Yet her mother, scholars believe, likely viewed de Gournay’s goal to live independently—both free of marriage and free to write—with more than some disdain, and the death of her parent allowed de Gournay to pursue her ambitions once she had provided for her younger siblings’ futures. During this period, Montaigne died, and the news did not reach de Gournay until the following year. She was crushed but did visit his widow, who treated her kindly and gave her the notes for a new edition of the Essais slated for publication. By this time de Gournay’s novel Le Proumenoir had been published, and though it was not a commercial or critical success at the time, it is considered one of the first modern psychological novels by a male or female author. Its plot centers on a princess in ancient Persia, Alinda, who balks at the prospect of an arranged marriage and instead elopes. The vessel carrying the newlyweds is shipwrecked in Thrace, and the ruler there involves her in an intrigue; eventually her husband Leontin betrays her, and Alinda commits suicide.

Returning to Picardy, de Gournay diligently went to work on revising the new edition according to Montaigne’s notes and wrote “Preface... sa fille d’alliance” for the 1595 edition of Essais. In this preface, she answered critical remarks made by Montaigne’s detractors and drew criticism herself in part for her strident tone, wrote Hillman and Quesnel. “She was widely viewed as having impertinently mingled her own interests with those of Montaigne—a veritable usurpation of the ‘father’ by the ‘daughter.’”

Led Literary Life

Eventually de Gournay’s family business matters were settled, and she was left with a small income that enabled her to travel on occasion and live independently. She went to Brussels and Antwerp in 1597, where she met well-known authors and was surprised to find herself somewhat feted. After 1599 she lived in Paris with one servant, who remained with her until her death and devoted her energies to writing essays, verse, and literary criticism. She revised Proumenoir and frequented the famed salon of the former French queen, Margot, who wrote as Marguerite de Valois. Margot’s husband, Henry IV, had demanded an annulment so that he could be free to marry his mistress, and de Gournay was also active in Henry’s court. When this Protestant king was assassinated in 1610, the death was blamed on a faction loyal to the Jesuits, the Roman Catholic religious order, and de Gournay involved herself in the controversy by defending the Jesuit cause in her published writings. Characteristically, her arguments on such topical matters were “tightly focused, highly articulate, and dauntingly indignant,” wrote Hillman and Quesnel in Apology for the Woman Writing.

After obtaining a small pension from Henry IV’s son, Louis XIII, de Gournay enjoyed a prolific period during the 1620s. She published a series of important tracts, later cited as prime examples of feminist reasoning, during this time. They began with Egalité des hommes et des femmes (“The Equality of Men and Women”) in 1622, which traced the history of misogyny in Western European civilization back to the apostle Paul and his first epistle to the Corinthians, which set forth the reasons that women were to be barred from ministry in the early Christian church. De Gournay also espoused equal access to education for men and women alike. She mused about the backhanded praise often leveled at women like herself who had achieved some merit in the arts, noting that the highest compliment of the day was in itself damning praise—“the supreme excellence women may achieve is to resemble ordinary men,” she asserted. In the same essay, she noted that “If, therefore, women attain less often than men to the heights of excellence, it is a marvel that the lack of good education—indeed, the abundance of outright and blatantly bad education—does not do worse and prevent them from doing so entirely.”
Espoused Provocative Ideas

Her two major next work, *Grief des dames* (“Complaint of Women” or, alternately, “The Ladies’ Grievance”), appeared in 1626 in a volume of her collected works, *L’Ombre de la Demoiselle de Gournay* (“The Shadow of Miss Gournay”). *L’Ombre* also contained two other essays, *Apologie pour celle qui escrit* (“Apology for the Woman Writing”) and *Peinture de mœurs* (“Character Portrait”). De Gournay also wrote poetry, and much of her verse had a strong feminist strain, focusing on themes of marital love or the French heroine Joan of Arc and the legendary Amazon women. “The writer’s ultimate figurations of female triumph . . . are women who excelled in the ultimate masculine sphere, epitomizing the fulfillment of her aspiration to beat men at their own game,” noted Hillman and Quesnel.

In her literary criticism, De Gournay often resisted prevailing trends. In a 1624 essay, she defended the works of Pierre de Ronsard, the leader of the so-called Pléiade poets who took their name from an Alexandrian group of the classical era. Ronsard, who died in 1585, had fallen out of favor by de Gournay’s time, but she attempted to revive his reputation, wrote Hillman and Quesnel, “by pretending to have discovered a more ‘modern’ authorial revision of one of his pieces, which she proceeded to publish with a dedication to the king. In fact, the ‘revision’ was her own work (and not particularly distinguished at that).” For such acts de Gournay was often mocked and derided in print for her views and was victimized by the occasional practical joke: in one notorious example, she was told that King James I of England desired a profile of her work for a planned compilation of the lives of famous men and women of the time, and she duly wrote an autobiographical sketch and sent it in, “Copie de la vie de la Demoiselle de Gournay” (Representation of the life of Miss de Gournay) appeared in print later in one of the last works published during her lifetime, the 1641 collection *Les Adviz ou les Presens de la Demoiselle de Gournay*. The tome contained revisions of her feminist tracts as well.

Mocked, Then Forgotten

In her later years, De Gournay continued to be the occasional target of ridicule. “Her taste and talent for controversy seems to have been particularly provocative,” wrote Hillman and Quesnel, particularly in the twilight of her career, they noted, when “it became easier not only to stamp her as a holdover from a remote era but to make fun of her eccentricities. These were real enough, running the gamut from rashness—of tongue, temper, and judgment—to a shameless thirst for praise and a fascination with alchemy. Humorous stories were recounted at her expense; she was the object of practical jokes, the target of satire in print, even of caricature on the stage.” Despite such scorn, de Gournay had attained enough of a reputation to earn another pension, this one from King Louis XIII’s influential chief minister, Cardinal Richelieu, in 1634; she was also involved in the founding of the prestigious Académie Française that same year, created to further and protect the French language.

De Gournay was read by some in the generation of women scholars who immediately followed her, such as Anna Maria van Schurman and Marguerite Buffet. She continued to work on several subsequent new editions of Montaigne’s *Essais* before her death in Paris on July 13, 1645. Her reputation languished until the early nineteenth century, which coincided with revival of interest in Montaigne’s works. Much of her work did not appear in English translation until the late 1980s.

Books


Periodicals


Online


Johann Deisenhofer

Biochemist and biophysicist Johann Deisenhofer (born 1943) devised a way to use X-ray technology to map the chemical reactions central to plant photosynthesis, earning him the Nobel Prize in Chemistry in 1988.

Deisenhofer has spent his career investigating the design and composition of molecular structures. Through his work at the Max-Planck Institute for Biochemistry in his native Germany, Deisenhofer gained experience in the application of X-ray technology as a tool to analyze the structure of crystallized substances. During the 1980s his work aiding a group of German biologists in studying plant photosynthesis—the process whereby light energy from the sun is converted into the chemical energy that maintains life—resulted in the first-ever mapping of the structure of those molecules involved in the chemical reaction integral to the conversion process.

From Farm to Laboratory

Deisenhofer was born on September 30, 1943, in Zusammalheim, Bavaria (now Germany), a small village located near the city of Munich. His parents, Johann and Thekla (Magg) Deisenhofer, were farmers and they raised Johann with the expectation that, as the only son in their small family, he would take over the responsibility of running the family farm when his father retired. However, the young boy showed more aptitude for academics than he did for farming, and his parents reluctantly came to the conclusion that their son was an intellectual rather than a farmer. In 1956, 13-year-old Johann was sent away to a series of
boarding schools, and he graduated from Augsburg’s Holbein Gymnasium—a gymnasium is the German equivalent of a North American high school—seven years later in 1963. After passing Germany’s mandatory qualifying exam, he earned a state scholarship that allowed him to attend the Technical University in Munich. Prior to enrolling at school, however, Deisenhofer was required to perform a year and a half of compulsory military service, after which he left with the rank of private.

In Munich at last, Deisenhofer decided to focus his studies on physics, the logical outgrowth of the fascination with astronomy he had developed while observing the night sky as a boy and reading popular books by such authors as Fred Hoyle during his years at the gymnasium. The more he explored his academic major, however, the more he found himself drawn specifically to the study of solid-state physics: the study of the composition and structure of condensed matter and solids. During his hours in the laboratory he was inspired by a professor to explore the new and growing area of physics called biophysics: the study of biology using the principles of physical science. In 1971, the same year he graduated with a diploma in physics from Munich’s Technical University, Deisenhofer successfully published his first scientific paper in Physical Review Letters. His university thesis meanwhile focused on the detection of terahertz-phonons in a ruby.

Deciding to continue his education in biophysics, in June of 1971 Deisenhofer enrolled as a doctoral candidate at the prestigious Max-Planck Institute for Biochemistry near Munich, where he studied under the direction of Institute director Robert Huber and where he also became well versed in the technique of X-ray crystallography. X-ray crystallography—first used in 1912 by German scientist Max Theodore Felix von Laue to create X-ray diffraction images and employed as well during the mid-twentieth century by University of Cambridge biologists James Watson and Francis Crick as a means of confirming their model of the DNA molecule—is a technique whereby the atomic structure of a purified and crystallized water-soluble substance is studied by exposing the crystal to bursts of radiation of a predetermined and controlled wavelength. Because the internal atomic structure of water-soluble crystals is ordered into a system of lattices, the wavelength of the X-rays used to scatter the subject crystal’s electrons and the measurement of the intensity of the scattered electrons can be combined to allow scientists to map out the crystal’s electron and atomic structure. During his research into X-ray crystallography, Deisenhofer focused specifically on a project with fellow student Wolfgang Steigemann wherein the two Ph.D. candidates attempted to determine the atomic structure of Bovine Pancreatic Trypsin Inhibitor. Deisenhofer obtained his Ph.D. from the Max-Planck Institute in 1974, his thesis based on his successful work with Steigemann.

After graduation Deisenhofer stayed at the Max-Planck Institute, content to work alongside Huber as a research scientist. He continued to make advances in the applications for X-ray crystallography and was appointed a staff scientist at the lab in 1976. To supplement his lab work, Deisenhofer also developed a facility with computers and was able to design computer programs that could process the data obtained from the X-ray techniques and produce a map of the atomic structure of the substance in question. As the computers available to the lab became more sophisticated, so did Deisenhofer’s programs. Meanwhile, the findings of his work with Steigemann on the Bovine Pancreatic Trypsin Inhibitor while a Ph.D. candidate were published to favorable peer reviews in a 1975 edition of the journal Acta Crystallographica.

**Technical Advances Hastened Project**

In 1979 Huber and his laboratory associates were joined by German biophysicist Hartmut Michel, who was engaged in the ongoing study of photosynthesis in the hopes of finding a way to obtain a thorough analysis of the molecules involved in the complex chemical-reaction process. Even in the late twentieth century, the detailed process of photosynthesis remained a mystery to scientists, although it was known that an understanding of the structure of the proteins present in cell membranes would be the key to understanding the photosynthetic light-chemical energy transfer. The reason: the light energy sent to the electron in the cell membrane fuels the reaction during which the protein transmits that energy through the cell wall in a chemical form. In September of 1981 Michel successfully hit upon a way to crystallize the photosynthetic reaction center of a purple bacterium called *Rhodopseudomonas viridis*. He came to Huber for advice, and Huber sent Michel to Deisenhofer, reasoning that with his experience in
X-ray crystallography, Deisenhofer would find a way to analyze and map the photosynthetic reaction center.

In less than three years Deisenhofer, with the aid of several assistants, was able to use X-ray crystallography techniques to map the more than 10,000 atoms within the membrane protein complex of *Rhodopseudomonas viridis* and produce the first three-dimensional structural analysis of a photosynthetic reaction center. Measuring the X-ray diffraction was accomplished quickly with the aid of electronic devices that had replaced the standard X-ray film or more primitive devices used only a few years before. However, the actual computer modeling process went much slower. In fact, two years were needed by Deisenhofer as he repeatedly refined his model of the membrane protein. Using custom-designed software and a high-speed computer to quickly perform the myriad of calculations required to establish the location within the cell of each of the many thousands of atoms contained in that single crystallized protein, the German biophysicist painstakingly supervised the slow formation of the model, a process akin to watching a photograph develop in a darkroom. A computer graphics program he devised took the data relating to X-ray diffraction, combined it with the predetermined wavelength of the relevant radiation, and translated the resulting data into a three-dimensional computer model that has been for scientists a welcome replacement for the classic ball-and-stick models of decades past. Of the future of X-ray crystallography, Deisenhofer predicted to *Southwestern Medicine* contributor David Doremus: “Progress in this field will closely parallel progress in the development of computers. That’s what makes me optimistic—computers have fantastic capabilities now compared to 10 years ago.”

Amid the excitement that broke out within the scientific community at the news of Deisenhofer and Michel’s accomplishment, a writer in *New Scientist* heralded the efforts of the scientists at the Max-Planck Institute as “the most important advance in the understanding of photosynthesis” since the mid-1960s, as quoted in *Notable Scientists: From 1900 to the Present*. Deisenhofer later recalled of his experience in the award-winning project in his autobiography for the Nobel e-Museum: “It was a special privilege to belong to the very small group of people who saw the structural model of this molecule grow on the screen of a computer workstation, and it is hard to describe the excitement I felt during this period of the work.”

**Received Nobel Prize in Chemistry**

In 1988 the Royal Swedish Academy of Sciences announced that the recipients of that year’s Nobel Prize in Chemistry were Deisenhofer, Huber, and Michel. In addition to paving the way for the creation of artificial photosynthetic reaction centers, their findings were acknowledged for their potential as tools to gain knowledge about other biologic functions, such as the function of cell hormones, respiration, nutrition, and nerve impulses.

The Nobel Prize changed Deisenhofer’s world. Instead of working quietly in his laboratory in Germany, he was now a celebrity of sorts, and he and his award-winning colleagues were asked to present papers and appear at a host of science-related functions. In addition to the Nobel Prize, Deisenhofer was a co-recipient, with Michel, of the American Physical Society’s Biological Physics Prize in 1986 and Germany’s Otto-Bayer Prize two years later. His other honors include the Knight Commander’s Cross of the German Order of Merit and the Bavarian Order of Merit, while honorary degrees have been conferred on him from Drury College of Springfield, Missouri, and Burdwan University of West Bengal, India. A fellow of the American Association for the Advancement of Science since 1992 and named an Argonne fellow in 2001, Deisenhofer also belongs to the American Crystallographic Association, the German and U.S. affiliates of the Biophysical Society, the German Society for Biological Chemistry, the Protein Society, Academy Europaea, Sigma Xi, and has been an honored foreign associate of the U.S. National Academy of Sciences since 1997. He also serves on the University of Chicago board of governors for the Argonne National Laboratory and was inducted into the Texas Science Hall of Fame in 2002. After moving to the United States and establishing a permanent residence in this country, Deisenhofer applied for and was granted dual U.S./German citizenship.

Leaving the Max-Planck Institute and moving to the United States in February of 1988, Deisenhofer accepted the Virginia and Edward Linthicum Distinguished Chair in Biomolecular Science at the University of Texas Southwestern Medical Center (UTSMC) at Dallas. In addition to his role as Regental Professor and professor of biology at UTSMC he also accepted a position as an investigator at the Dallas unit of the Howard Hughes Medical Institute, where he is able to promote the use of X-ray crystallography in the study of water-soluble proteins, membrane proteins, and other macromolecules and develop additional crystallographic software. Early in his tenure at the Texas research center he also met the woman who would become his wife, microbiology professor and fellow Howard Hughes Medical Institute investigator Kirsten Fischer Lindahl. Deisenhofer and Lindahl were married in 1989 and continue to make their home near Dallas, Texas.

Although Deisenhofer has a reputation for being shy and totally involved in his work, he also finds time to enjoy music and chess, swimming and skiing, and is an amateur history buff. As an outgrowth of his lab work, in 1993 he joined fellow scientist James R. Norris of the Argonne National Laboratory in writing the two-volume book *The Photosynthetic Reaction Center*, based on research emanating from his Nobel Prize-winning investigation into photosynthesis. Other research by Deisenhofer has been published in *Science, Journal of Molecular Biology, Journal of Biological Chemistry, EMBO Journal, Nature*, and other scientific journals. Among his continuing goals as a scientist is the ability to discover the rules defining the three-dimensional structure of proteins. By learning this, the biophysicist reasons, scientists will be a good deal closer to understanding the basic structural component of all life on Earth.

**Books**

Michael Saul Dell

One of the most successful executives in the highly competitive personal computer industry, American businessman Michael Dell (born 1965) has shepherded his company—Dell Computer Corporation—from an idea hatched in his college dorm room in 1984 into one of the world’s largest PC manufacturers. The company, launched by Dell with an initial investment of only $1,000, has generated revenue of tens of billions of dollars since its creation. The company has prospered while adhering to Dell’s original concept of selling computers directly to its customers and avoiding middleman markups in order to keep costs down. Along the way, Dell has expanded its product line to include not only personal computers but network servers, storage systems, handheld computers, and a wide array of computer services as well.

Dell, who dropped out of college at the age of 19 to pursue his dream of a direct-sales PC empire, had a net wealth hovering around $20 billion at the beginning of 2003. As chief executive officer of Dell Computer, he successfully steered his company through the treacherous economic waters of the early new millennium. To keep his company at the top of its game—a neck-and-neck competitor with Hewlett Packard for the title of world’s largest PC company—Dell has launched a number of marketing innovations, not the least of which has been his skillful use of the Internet as a sales tool. As of late 2002, Dell Computer was recognized as the largest online commercial seller of PC systems with average online sales of more than $50 million per day. Dell has also used the World Wide Web to deliver faster and more efficient service to its customers.

Bitten by the Computer Bug at an Early Age

Michael Saul Dell was born in Houston, Texas, on February 23, 1965. The son of Alexander (an orthodontist) and Lorraine Dell (a stockbroker), he first got interested in computers when he was in the seventh grade. In an interview with Esther Wang of the Daily Texan, Dell recalled: “Computers were just starting to come into being in terms of the personal computer in the late ’70s, early ’80s. I got some exposure to the first personal computers, became really interested in the product and what I could envision about how that could change society and business and culture and education and everything else, and that caught my interest pretty early.” He got his first computer—an Apple II—in 1979 when he was 14. Dell also was a born entrepreneur, earning a quick $2,000 from a stamp and baseball card trading enterprise he operated through the mail when he was only 12 years old. He also found innovative ways to drum up business for the newspaper delivery route he operated while in high school. Dell would obtain the names and addresses of newlyweds in his delivery area and mail them an introductory offer of two weeks’ free service. His clever sales strategy earned him more than $18,000, enough to buy his own fully-equipped BMW even before he was old enough to drive.
Although he was a fairly good student, Dell grew impatient with the slow pace of school and at the age of 8 sent by mail for information about obtaining a high school equivalency diploma, hoping that he might be able to bypass the rest of his public school obligation. His parents, however, balked at this notion and insisted that Michael complete his schooling conventionally. After he graduated from high school, Michael was sent to the University of Texas at Austin, where his parents hoped he might eventually study to be a doctor. It was during his freshman year in college that Dell launched his direct sales computer business. He had already gained some experience in taking apart and then reassembling computers and soon realized that he could make money by adding components to basic units and selling them for a profit. With an initial investment of $1,000 he began operating his business out of his dorm room, much to the chagrin of his roommates, who at one point barricaded his door with piles of computer equipment. His roommates’ enmity notwithstanding, Dell’s business skyrocketed. By the end of his freshman year, he was taking in roughly $80,000 a month.

**Incorporated as PCs Unlimited**

In the summer of 1984 Dell incorporated his business as PCs Unlimited and moved its headquarters from his dormitory room to a storefront in Austin. In its first year of business, the company sold computer equipment manufactured by other computer companies, such as IBM and Compaq, to which were added various optional features. In July 1985, PCs Unlimited introduced its first proprietary model, the Turbo PC, which featured the Intel 8088 processor and operated at 8 Mhz. To help expand his business, Dell borrowed money from his family but was soon able to repay it as his company’s annual sales climbed to the $30 million mark. In 1987 Dell renamed his company Dell Computer Corporation and a year later took it public with an initial offering of 3.5 million shares at $8.50 each. By the end of 1988, Dell’s annual sales had reached $159 million.

The late 1980s brought some major changes in Dell’s personal life, even as his fledgling computer company continued to expand at an exponential rate. In February 1988 he was introduced to Susan Lieberman, a real estate agent who had recently relocated to Austin from Dallas. The daughter of noted Baylor University Medical Center cancer surgeon Zelig “Zeke” Lieberman, Susan had grown up in the affluent North Dallas neighborhood of Russwood Acres. After graduating from W.T. White High School, she enrolled at Arizona State University to study fashion design and merchandising. Returning to Texas, Lieberman decided against a career in fashion and following the lead of her older brother Steve got into real estate, moving to Austin to work for Trammell Crow, a major real estate company. She and Dell met at a North Austin bistro for lunch and in the spring of 1989 they were engaged. They married on October 28, 1989.

**Direct-Sales Strategy Key to Success**

At the heart of his computer company’s success has been its adherence to Dell’s original concept of a direct-sales model. Customers can place their orders by calling Dell’s toll-free number or by logging on to the company’s Web site. Their orders produce a made-to-order computer that is shipped within 36 hours. Because the company builds only to order, it has managed to keep its inventory to less than 6 percent of sales. Further slashing its inventories, Dell maintains a close relationship with most of its suppliers, many of whom have built new facilities close to Dell’s headquarters outside of Austin.

By 1993 Dell’s annual sales had climbed to $2 billion, although the company reported a loss of $36 million for the fiscal year, which ended January 31, 1994. That same year, Dell joined the ranks of the top five computer system manufacturers worldwide. The following year the company powered back with a profit of $149 million.

Dell was quick to recognize the potential of the Internet as a marketing tool. By 1996 the company’s Web site (http://www.dell.com) was booking orders from customers. In the late 1990s Dell appeared on the company’s television commercials to plug the company’s newly created online technical support called “E-Support-Direct from Dell.” Of the company’s new advertising strategy and its growing use of the World Wide Web as a selling tool, one Dell executive said “it will leverage our position on the Internet and show how it’s easier for customers to do business with us.” Dell’s Internet strategy paid off well, favorably impressing major customers like the Ford Motor Company. In September 1999, Ford’s CEO observed: “We can interact much, much more efficiently with them [Dell] than with their rivals.”

**Kept Close Ties to Suppliers**

Dell has continued to refine his company’s Internet strategy, moving aggressively to maintain close communications with Dell’s key suppliers. By the dawn of the new millennium the company had connected 90 percent of its suppliers onto Dell’s factory floors via the World Wide Web, allowing suppliers to see current information on orders and thus replenish supplies only as needed. Using this and other techniques, Dell was able to cut its inventories to a mere five days’ worth in 2000, a sharp reduction from 13 days’ worth in 1997. By contrast rival Compaq Computer (since merged into Hewlett Packard) had more than three weeks of inventories on hand in the first quarter of 2001.

Another important element in Dell’s growth strategy has been its expansion into overseas markets. As early as 1987, the company opened a subsidiary to serve the United Kingdom. In 1990 Dell opened a manufacturing facility in Limerick, Ireland, to build computers for sale in its European, Middle Eastern, and African markets. In 1993 the company expanded into the Asia-Pacific region with the opening of subsidiaries in Australia and Japan. This was followed in 1996 with the opening of an Asia-Pacific manufacturing center in Penang, Malaysia. To serve its growing market in China, Dell in 1998 opened a production center in Xiamen, China. The following year saw the opening of a factory in El Dorado do Sul, Brazil, to serve Dell’s growing Latin American market.

Interviewed in October 2002 by Esther Wang of the Daily Texan, Dell was asked what it was that set his com-
pany apart from its competitors. In response, he pointed out that “we took a very different approach to customers. Our business, I think, understood and anticipated customer needs much better than our competitors,” most of which sold their products through intermediaries and dealers, “which certainly was the industry started, but it’s not the way it’s evolved. Our business system has proven to be more responsive and more efficient in providing what customers want.”

Expanded Product Line

Although Dell’s initial success was in marketing customized personal computers, Michael Dell recognized that to continue to grow, his company would have to look beyond PCs. Underlining the need for a broader product line to reinvigorate company results was Dell’s fiscal 2001 decline in sales, the first in company history. The decline was relatively small, falling from $31.9 billion in fiscal 2000 to about $31.2 billion in fiscal 2001. To diversify its product line, Dell in May 2002 introduced two new non-PC products—a big screen projector and a new line of the company’s most popular server, a computer that runs PC networks. Late in 2001, to broaden its line of business devices, Dell began reselling data-storage machines manufactured by EMC Corp. It also began selling computer-network switches to compete with 3Com Corporation and Cisco.

Interviewed in November 2002 by Maria Bartiromo of the CNBC cable television network, Dell was asked how his company had managed to do so well during the economic slump of the early new millennium while the rest of the industry continued to struggle. “I think it’s pretty simple,” Dell replied. “We deliver better value to customers with a business model that’s really focused on direct relationships. We’ve got a very efficient supply chain. We turn our inventory 99 times during the quarter. And so when you’ve got great service, great products, great value, customers beat a path to your door.”

Books

*Newsmakers*, Issue 2, Gale Research, 1996.

Periodicals

*Money*, November 1, 2002.

Online


Maya Deren

Maya Deren (1917–1961) wore many hats in her brief lifetime: avant-garde filmmaker, documentarian, author, and Voudoun priestess, to name a few. Her influence, especially in independent film, has not only endured but also increased in the decades following her death. Deren was a seminal figure among independent filmmakers about whom legends sprung. Her reputation as a filmmaker rests on only seven short completed films in her lifetime and five unfinished films, though one was edited and released after her death. In the early 21st century Deren, who by then had been dead for more than 40 years, was still discussed as a fresh voice and a “past master who still matters,” as the magazine *Utne Reader* declared her.

Early Years

Deren was born Eleanora Solomonovna Derenkovsky on April 29, 1917, in Kiev, Ukraine, less than two months after the Russian Revolution that forced the Tsar’s abdication (but prior to the Bolshevik takeover). Her parents were members of Kiev’s intelligentsia: her mother, Marie, had studied music and her father, Solomon, was a psychiatrist. The period between 1917 and 1922, Deren’s early years, was a time of political and economic upheaval in Russia and Ukraine. The five-year span saw the Tsar’s abdication; the two revolutions of 1917, the second of which brought the Bolsheviks to power; Russia’s capitulation in the First World War; the civil war; and the formation of the Soviet Union. Furthermore, Ukraine, which had been part of the tsarist empire, declared itself an independent nation on January 22, 1918, but in 1922 it became a constituent republic of the Union of Soviet Socialist Republics (USSR). Despite all of this, the Derenkovsky family led a relatively secure life.

All of that changed by 1922. The economy was in such a shambles that even Lenin had retreated from hardline communism toward a “New Economic Policy.” A more important factor in the Derenkovsky’s decision to emigrate was a recurrence of pogroms (organized massacres of Jews) in Ukraine. The family eventually settled in Syracuse, New York, where Solomon Derenkovsky’s brother lived. After a period of adjustment Solomon Derenkovsky set up his psy-
chiatric practice and the family name was shortened to Deren.

Young Eleanora Deren attended primary school in Syracuse until 1930 when she was sent to Switzerland to attend Ecole Internationale de Geneve, which was founded under the auspices of the League of Nations (the immediate predecessor of the United Nations). Deren remained in Switzerland for three years studying French, German, and Russian. When she returned to the United States in 1933 she enrolled at Syracuse University, where she studied journalism until 1935. At this time Deren joined the Young People’s Socialist League, a Trotskyite organization. Among the political activists she became involved with was Gregory Bardacke, whom she married in 1935. Deren and Bardacke moved to New York City, and Deren transferred to New York University (NYU) from which she graduated in 1936. At NYU Deren first became interested in photography and film. Deren then went on to study literature at Smith College in Northampton, Massachusetts; she was awarded an M.A. in 1939. By then Deren and Bardacke had divorced. Deren’s initial career path was the publishing industry. She worked briefly as a writers’ and publishers’ factotum, all the while writing poetry herself.

Independent Filmmaker

Soon she met and began working as a secretary for Katherine Dunham, who was to have a profound influence on the directions Deren’s career would take. Dunham was a choreographer and an anthropologist who had founded an African American dance company. It was while working for Dunham in Los Angeles in 1941, where Deren lived with her mother (Deren’s parents ultimately divorced), that she met Alexander Hammid; ten years Deren’s senior, he became another influence on her career. Hammid (original name Hackenschmied) was a Czechoslovakian refugee who came to the United States to work as a motion picture photographer for “The March of Time” newsreels. Deren and Hammid were married in 1942 and it was he who provided the stimulus for Deren’s filmic imagination. During this time, possibly at Hammid’s suggestion, Deren changed her first name to Maya, the Sanskrit word for illusion.

At the time of her marriage Deren was primarily a writer, with poetry, newspaper articles, short stories, and essays to her credit. One of her essays, written no doubt under the eye of Dunham, discussed religious possession in dancing—a theme that would later command her attention. In 1943 Solomon Deren died and left Deren a small inheritance with which she purchased a second-hand Bolex 16mm camera, which she and Hamid used to make the film Meshes in the Afternoon. While Meshes in the Afternoon is considered her first film by most film historians, filmmaker Stan Brakhage in his essay on Deren (published in Film at Wit’s End) discussed the idea that a study of the photography reveals it is primarily Hammid’s film: “For all the unusual things that happen within the film, its whole style of photography betrays the slick, polished, penultimate craftsmanship of the old European sensibility for which Sasha [Hammid] was known.” Nevertheless Brakhage does acknowledge “the real force of the film came from Maya herself.”

Deren and Hammid moved to New York City where her electric personality really took off. Soon she was regularly screening Meshes in the Afternoon and lecturing the audience on independent filmmaking. This caused a natural friction with Hammid who felt he was being slighted. In 1943 Deren began another film, Witch’s Cradle, but it remained unfinished. The most notable aspects of the film were that it was shot at an art gallery where a surrealist exhibition was taking place and that it included Marcel Duchamp. Deren followed up this attempt with the 15-minute film, At Land, which featured Deren herself on different landscapes: meticulously crawling on rocks, walking along what appears to be a cart path with a man who changes appearances. The film included brief appearances by poet and critic Parker Tyler, composer John Cage, and Hammid.

In 1945 Deren and Hammid decided to make a second film together in which Hammid would take the lead in directing and filming. The result was the 30-minute The Private Life of a Cat. Here again Stan Brakhage, who was a friend and something of a protégé of Deren, disputes the claim of film historians who say that Deren’s input was minimal. However The Private Life of a Cat did not boost Hammid’s reputation the way Meshes had lifted Deren’s. Also in 1945 Deren made A Study in Choreography for Camera, a 2 1/2-minute film that featured choreographer Talley Beatty who was also credited as co-director.

1946 was a busy year for Deren. She rented the Provincetown Playhouse in New York City and screened Meshes in the Afternoon, At Land, and A Study in Choreography for Camera. The program, which ran several evenings, was titled “Three Abandoned Films.” She published An Anagram of Art, Form, and Film and received a Guggenheim Fellowship for “Creative Work in the Field of Motion Pictures.” Deren was the first filmmaker to be awarded a Guggenheim fellowship. That year Deren also completed Ritual in Transfigured Time.

Voudoun Priestess

In 1947 she presented Meshes in the Afternoon at the Cannes Film Festival where it won the Grand Prix International in the category of 16mm Film, Experimental Class. It was the first time the award went to a film produced in the United States and the first time a female director was honored. Deren and Hammid were divorced that year, and Deren began making trips to Haiti to observe and film Voudoun rituals and dance. The result was that over the next eight years her focus began to shift away from film and onto Voudoun culture. Deren’s involvement with Voudoun became the source of most of the legends that surrounded her life.

In between trips to Haiti, Deren completed Meditation on Violence (1948). This was to be her only completed film for the next seven years as she spent a total of nearly two years in Haiti working on her Voudoun ritual project. In 1949 she began but left unfinished Medusa, and in 1951 she abandoned Ensemble for Somnambulists. By that time she
had met and fallen in love with a young Japanese musician, Teiji Ito. Ito was 15 years old at the time of their meeting (Deren was 43), and Deren became both his mentor and lover; they lived together in New York and traveled to Haiti. In 1953 Deren published Divine Horsemen: The Living Gods of Haiti, a study of Haitian deities, rituals, and practices. The work had the assistance of anthropologist Gregory Bateson and was edited by Joseph Campbell. In the book Deren defined myth as “facts of the mind made manifest in a fiction of matter.” When the book was republished in 1970 Campbell wrote a second foreword (he had also written a foreword to the first edition) in which he summed up the work by saying: “It has always been my finding that the poet and the artist are better qualified both by temperament and by training to intuit and interpret the sense of the mythological figure than the university-trained empiricist. And rereading today, after twenty years, Maya Deren’s celebration of the gods by whom her own life and personality were transformed, I am reconfirmed in that finding: reconfirmed, also, in my long-held belief that this little volume is the most illuminating introduction that has yet been rendered to the whole marvel of the Haitian mystères as ‘facts of the mind.’”

By the time Deren had finished filming in Haiti she had shot more than 18,000 feet of film, but as Brakhage attests the amount of footage overwhelmed Deren and she could not complete the job of editing. Her own Voudoun practice continued, however, which may have been the reason for her inability to edit the footage. The deeper Deren became involved in the religion the harder it was for her to believe in the efficacy of the film document of the rituals. Deren’s practice included regular dance rituals in her apartment as well as performing a Voudoun ritual at the marriage of dancer Geoffrey Holder, whereupon she went into a trance, witnessed by Brakhage, in which she displayed amazing physical strength and fits of violence. But Deren’s Voudoun legend did not end there.

**Final Film**

Her final film, *The Very Eye of Night*, was completed in 1955, but because of financial problems it did not premiere until 1959. The film had its premiere in Port-au-Prince, Haiti, with a soundtrack by Teiji Ito. The delay caused a rift between Deren and her backer, lyricist John Latouche, with the supposed result being that Deren put a Voudoun curse on Latouche, who died soon afterward.

In the late 1950s Deren established the Creative Film Foundation and in 1960 she married Teiji Ito. She had also begun the “Haiku Film Project,” but it never went beyond the planning stage. In 1961 Deren and Ito traveled to New England to claim his inheritance following the death of his father. Ito’s family sought to block the claim and Deren became apoplectic (showing signs of a stroke). The fit, whether Voudoun inspired or not, caused her to have a cerebral hemorrhage, and she lapsed into a two-week coma from which she never awoke. Deren died on October 13, 1961, in New York City. The fact that it was Friday the 13th also contributed to her legend. Some believe she was the victim of a counter-curse placed on her by friends of Latouche. Another possible (and more rational) cause of her stroke was the so-called vitamin shots Deren had been receiving. These contained amphetamines.

After her death, the Haitian footage was offered to many filmmakers to edit, but all refused. In the 1980s Teiji Ito and his new wife Cherel completed the editing process and, with a soundtrack by Ito, the completed film became *Divine Horsemen*. In 1985 the American Film Institute established the Maya Deren Award for independent filmmaking.

**Books**


**Periodicals**


**Online**


John Elway

Considered by some to be the greatest modern American football player, John Elway (born 1960) played in the position of quarterback for the Denver Broncos for 16 years, leading his team to two consecutive Super Bowl wins before retiring in 1999.

Born to Play Ball

John Elway was born in Port Angeles, Washington, on June 28, 1960. His twin sister, Jana, was born 11 minutes after him, and they joined their older sister, Lee Ann, who had been born 18 months beforehand. Elway’s father, Jack, made a living as a college football coach, and he encouraged his children to be athletic from an early age. Elway’s family fostered healthy competition among the siblings and they got along well; in later years, Elway recalled that playing with his sisters as a boy formed some of his happiest memories. Jack Elway remembered that the twins shared a special bond, even before they could walk or talk, “jabbering at each other in that special language twins have,” quoted Michael BeDan in the Rocky Mountain News.

Even as a baby, Elway seemed naturally inclined to play, and when he was old enough to get on his feet, he wore out an average of a pair of sneakers every month. His sister Lee Ann remembered that his competitive spirit sometimes got in the way of having a good time while playing with him. “I love John a lot,” she told Adam Schefter in the Denver Post, “But it wasn’t always fun playing with him because he took everything so seriously. He was just so competitive, even back then.”

Meanwhile, Elway’s father taught him how to play baseball in the back yard. He recognized that his son had a talent, and he aimed to nurture it. While Elway’s sisters went on skiing trips, his father made him stay home for fear that he would injure himself seriously before he had a chance to play competitive sports. Until he was in the fourth grade, Elway played baseball and basketball. Then, before he entered fifth grade, his parents allowed him to play football, and there his true talent shined. In his very first game, he ran circles around the opposing team’s members, scoring four touchdowns by himself. A basketball coach who was present at the game remarked to Jack Elway, as reported Adam Schefter in the Denver Post, “Either every kid on that field is the worst football player I’ve ever seen or your boy is the greatest player I’ve ever seen.”

The family moved a great deal while Elway was growing up, as his father traveled from one college coaching position to another. Leaving Port Angeles, the family next settled in Missoula, Montana, then headed back to Washington state to live in the town of Pullman, Washington, before finally settling for good in Southern California.

Recruited by 65 Different Colleges

The young Elway learned plenty about the game of football by watching the games that his father coached at Montana State, Washington State, and California State University at Northridge. Elway often acted as ball boy for these games, and he got a chance to see a great many games up close. A star player on his high school football team, Elway attracted the attention of college athletics recruiters, eventually being courted by no less than 65 different schools. He also played high school baseball, leading the team to the
Elway quickly distinguished himself as one of the best players on the Broncos’ team. In 1985, he shattered the Broncos single-season record for attempts (605), completions (327), passing yards (3,891), and more. In 1986, Elway led the Broncos to their first American Football Conference (AFC) Championship in almost ten years. In 1987, Elway was named the NFL’s Most Valuable Player (MVP) and was named to the Sporting News All-NFL team. He was also named the Colorado Pro Athlete of the Year by the Colorado Sports Hall of Fame and was voted the Broncos’ offensive MVP. Playing in Super Bowl XXII, he made history by becoming the first quarterback in a Super Bowl to catch a pass.

The beginning of 1989 saw Elway at his second Super Bowl in which he scored the only touchdown made by his team. In spite of a persistent shoulder injury, Elway led his team in touchdowns in 1991, with a then career high of six. In the 1992 off-season, he had his shoulder injury corrected by arthroscopic surgery. In the 1992 regular season, Elway was back in action and better than ever throwing the longest touchdown pass of his career, 80 yards.

In 1993, Elway was named AFC MVP by the NFL Players Association, as well as AFC Offensive Player of the Year by United Press International (UPI) and AFC Player of the Year by Football News. Also this year he was named to the all-AFC team by UPI and Football News, as well as second team all-NFL by the Associated Press, College and Pro Football Weekly, and Football Digest. Also this year he was named to the all-AFC team by UPI and Football News, as well as second team all-NFL by the Associated Press, College and Pro Football Weekly, and Football Digest. Also this year he was named to the all-AFC team by UPI and Football News, as well as second team all-NFL by the Associated Press, College and Pro Football Weekly, and Football Digest. Also this year he was named to the all-AFC team by UPI and Football News, as well as second team all-NFL by the Associated Press, College and Pro Football Weekly, and Football Digest. Also this year he was named to the all-AFC team by UPI and Football News, as well as second team all-NFL by the Associated Press, College and Pro Football Weekly, and Football Digest. Also this year he was named to the all-AFC team by UPI and Football News, as well as second team all-NFL by the Associated Press, College and Pro Football Weekly, and Football Digest. Also this year he was named to the all-AFC team by UPI and Football News, as well as second team all-NFL by the Associated Press, College and Pro Football Weekly, and Football Digest. Also this year he was named to the all-AFC team by UPI and Football News, as well as second team all-NFL by the Associated Press, College and Pro Football Weekly, and Football Digest. Also this year he was named to the all-AFC team by UPI and Football News, as well as second team all-NFL by the Associated Press, College and Pro Football Weekly, and Football Digest. Also this year he was named to the all-AFC team by UPI and Football News, as well as second team all-NFL by the Associated Press, College and Pro Football Weekly, and Football Digest. Also this year he was named to the all-AFC team by UPI and Football News, as well as second team all-NFL by the Associated Press, College and Pro Football Weekly, and Football Digest. Also this year he was named to the all-AFC team by UPI and Football News, as well as second team all-NFL by the Associated Press, College and Pro Football Weekly, and Football Digest. Also this year he was named to the all-AFC team by UPI and Football News, as well as second team all-NFL by the Associated Press, College and Pro Football Weekly, and Football Digest. Also this year he was named to the all-AFC team by UPI and Football News, as well as second team all-NFL by the Associated Press, College and Pro Football Weekly, and Football Digest. Also this year he was named to the all-AFC team by UPI and Football News, as well as second team all-NFL by the Associated

Recognition for Elway’s achievements came yet again in 1997, when he received the NFL Players Association Mackey Award as the best quarterback in the AFC. Also in 1997, Elway helped the Broncos’ offense become the best in the NFL for the second season in a row.

Playing with the Broncos, Elway became famous for dramatic, last-minute game-winning scores. He also topped the NFL by making first place in the history of the league in victories by a starting quarterback, first in rushing attempts by a quarterback.

During his 16 years with the Broncos, Elway played in four Super Bowls, the final two of which, Super Bowl XXXII and Super Bowl XXXIII, his team won. Also during his career with the Broncos, Elway became only the second player in NFL history to throw for over 50,000 yards, and he topped the NFL in victories for a starting quarterback and in rushing attempts by a quarterback.

During the height of his popularity, Elway was an internationally recognized star: he regularly stopped to sign autographs wherever he went, including Europe and Asia. He took to wearing sunglasses while out in public and walking with his head down in an effort not to be recognized. He also had to change his telephone number every month or so to avoid getting thousands of telephone calls.
Retired as a Top Player in the NFL

Looking ahead to his retirement from football, Elway opened an automobile dealership in the Denver area in the 1990s. This business grew to include seven auto franchises by the turn of the century. He also became an active philanthropist, donating time and money to victims of child abuse and the Make-A-Wish Foundation. Elway decided to retire in 1999, after two Super Bowl wins in a row and 16 years as a Broncos quarterback.

Immediately following Elway’s retirement announcement, the Denver Broncos Ring of Fame Committee waved its usual five-year waiting time after a player retires from the team to induct Elway into the Ring of Fame. The purpose of the Ring of Fame is to honor Broncos players and administrators who have made outstanding contributions to the team. The committee also retired Elway’s jersey number, seven, making him the third player in Broncos history to have his number retired. Elway was inducted and his number retired in a halftime ceremony at Mile High Stadium in Colorado on September 13, 1999.

In March 2001, Elway sold most of his stake in his chain of auto dealerships, earning $82.5 million for the sale. Uneasy in retirement, Elway, at 42 years old, wasn’t ready to turn to a life of leisure. “I didn’t really know what to do,” he told Sports Illustrated’s Josh Elliott. “I was searching for something, and that was pretty tough.” He found his answer in the form of a part ownership stake in an Arena Football League (AFL) team called the Colorado Crush. The team, which intended to begin regularly scheduled games in 2003, gave Elway the spirit of competition and the role in a business for which he had been searching. Best of all, it allowed Elway to stay in the game of football.

Bowed by Tragedy

Elway’s happiness was soon dampened by tragedy. Elway’s father, Jack, died of a heart attack in April 2001. The two were very close; Elway considered his father his best friend, and Jack was the earliest supporter of Elway’s football career. Elway blamed part of his father’s illness on stress brought on by news that Elway’s twin sister, Jana, had been diagnosed with lung cancer.

Tragedy again struck the Elway family in 2002. In July, his twin sister, Jana Elway-Sever, who had become a school teacher in San Jose, California, died after a two-year battle with lung cancer. She was 42 years old. She had been seriously ill at the time of Jack Elway’s death the previous year, although she had managed to attend the funeral service.

Learned that Winning Is Not Everything

As if the deaths of Elway’s father and sister had not brought enough heartache, his wife Janet moved out soon after Jana’s death, taking the couple’s four children with her. Elway and Janet had been married 18 years. It was a wakeup call for the football star, who realized that the pressures of his football career, and his later career as a businessperson, had stressed his family life to the breaking point.

Elway learned to shift his priorities, making more time for his family. He began to go to Janet’s rented house when she was not home to pull weeds from her garden. He sent her roses every week and took the kids out for shopping trips and other excursions—things he had not done in earlier years. Responding to Elway’s attentions, Janet and the kids moved back in with him within a month. Elway told Sports Illustrated’s Rick Reilly soon afterwards that his shift in attitude was permanent. “I’m trying to do things . . . that aren’t necessarily about achieving. I want to put my family first from now on.”

Periodicals

Sports Illustrated, June 24, 2002; August 19, 2002.

Online


Enchi Fumiko Ueda

Enchi Fumiko Ueda (1905–1986) achieved literary fame in post-World War II Japan as a feminist before her time. Enchi typically portrayed the subordination of women by paternalistic Japanese society through supernatural themes in dreamlike settings. Her writings frequently included references to traditional Japanese texts, with which she had become familiar through her work as a translator of such premodern writings as The Tale of Genji into modern Japanese. Her literary allusions to traditional texts covered a wide range of genres, including tales of fiction, history, and war.

Early Life

Enchi Fumiko Ueda was born on October 2, 1905, in Tokyo, Japan. Her father was Ueda Kazutoshi (1867–1937), a professor of linguistics and philology at Tokyo University. Enchi’s paternal grandmother, who was reportedly a good storyteller, introduced her granddaughter to the kabuki theatre.

As a young girl, Enchi enjoyed kabuki and tales from the novels of the late Edo period (1600–1867). Her early reading included The Tale of Genji (Genji monogatari), Edo novels, and modern fiction. By the time she was 13, she was reading Oscar Wilde, Edgar Allen Poe, Izumi Kyoka, Nagai Kafu, Akutagawa Ryunosuke, and Tanizaki Junichiro.

From 1918 to 1922, Enchi attended the girl’s middle school at Japan Women’s University. But she abandoned her studies at the middle school to study drama. Her interest in the theatre was encouraged by her father, and as a young
woman, she attended the lectures of Osanai Kaoru, a noted modern Japanese dramatist. She also received private instruction, lasting until she married, in English, French, and Chinese literature.

In 1926, the twenty-one-year-old Enchi published a one-act play entitled “A Birthplace” that was received well by critics. “A Birthplace” was followed two years later (1928) by “A Noisy Night in Late Spring,” which was subsequently staged at the Tsukiji Little Theatre in Tokyo.

In 1930, the twenty-five-year-old Enchi married Enchi Yoshimatsu, a journalist. Following their daughter’s birth, Enchi began writing novels. But early attempts in this genre, including The Words Like the Wind (1939), The Treasures of Heaven and Sea (1940), and Spring and Autumn (1943), failed to meet with any financial success.

In World War II, Enchi lost her property during the bombing of Tokyo. She also had a cancer operation about this time, from which she was slow to recover. Her writing lapsed until around 1951.

**Post War Success**

Following the war, with the loss of all her property, Enchi began writing about the oppressiveness of domestic life. Although Japan’s postwar constitution guaranteed gender equality, discrimination based on gender continued unabated at all levels of society in the years immediately following the war. Most women could neither support a family nor rise to the top of their chosen professions. Women were instead largely relegated to roles as mothers and wives. In 1953, Enchi’s story “Starving Days,” about family misfortune and deprivation, won the Women’s Literature Prize.

**The Waiting Years**

Enchi’s The Waiting Years, written between 1949 and 1957, looked at the sufferings of women at the hands of the patriarchal family system. The novel is set between the 1880s and 1920s—a time when the patriarchal social and political order was evolving.

In the novel, the protagonist, Tomo, is married at the age of 15 to a government official. Later, after her husband has become a high-level prefectural officer, he persuades her to allow him to keep a mistress in their home. The following passage from the novel describes Tomo’s humiliation as her husband instructs her how to find a mistress for him.

“To call the girl a concubine would be making too much of it,” he had said to Tomo. “She’ll be a maid for you, too. . . . It’s a good idea, surely, to have a young woman with a pleasant disposition about the house so that you can train her to look after things for you when you’re out calling. That’s why I don’t want to lower the tone of the household by bringing in a geisha or some other woman of that type. I trust you, and I leave everything to you, so use your good sense to find a young—as far as possible inexperienced—girl. Here, use this for your expenses.”

But Tomo’s husband is not satisfied with one mistress and eventually takes a second. Later he seduces his son’s wife. Through the repeated humiliations, however, Tomo remains mistress of the household. On her death bed, she tells her husband she does not wish to be buried and instead asks to be dumped into the sea. Only at that point, after forty years of marriage, does Tomo’s husband realize how much he has made her suffer.

**Voices from the Past**

In Masks (1958), Enchi creates a protagonist based on a witch-like character in the The Tale of Genji. The heroine of Masks has hopes that her son will atone for the torments her husband has caused her. But her hopes are shattered with his premature death. The woman then prevails upon her daughter-in-law to have a son to replace the one she has lost. The daughter-in-law later dies after giving birth to the son. For the mother-in-law, a daughter-in-law flawed by male domination is replaced by an untainted male heir.

In Enchi’s novels, her female characters often discover suppressed shamanesses or mediums within themselves. Many of Enchi’s writings attempt to supplement the voices of the women of the medieval period with modern ones of defiance. Unlike the ancient Japanese shamanesses who set out to wreak revenge on their female rivals, however, Enchi’s women seek their retribution against men.

Enchi saw in Shintoism, a Japanese belief system that employed female shamanesses, a path to empowerment for women. Enchi contrasted the traditions of female subjugation in Buddhism with the indigenous Japanese Shinto religion, which left women with more power. Although modern Japanese tend to find the beliefs of Buddhism and Shintoism complementary rather than in opposition to each other, Enchi preferred to see the two belief systems in conflict. Shamanesses had appeared in the earliest Japanese folk tales, through the writings of the medieval period and beyond; however, the female shaman was traditionally a marginalized character, who existed on the outskirts of mainstream society.

Enchi seemed to have a particular fondness for writings by women of the Heian era (794–1185), especially The Tale of Genji, which was written by a well educated lady-in-waiting in the imperial court of the late tenth and early eleventh centuries. (Enchi would work for six years on the Enchi Genji, her 10-volume modern translation of The Tale of Genji.) The Heian era marked the emergence of Japanese women as writers of verse, fiction, and poetic diaries. These works frequently served as vehicles for the writers to criticize the subordination of women in their society.

The patriarchal Japanese society of the Heian era and the traditional practice of polygamy in the royal court left many women writers of the time resentful. Enchi was able to find a modern voice that perpetuated the tradition of women writers into the twentieth century by making her characters mediums for the mythic woman of the past. In Enchi’s The Tale of an Enchantress (1965), she tells the story of a consort to a Heian emperor. The book won the 1966 Women’s Literature Prize.

Enchi’s novel A Tale of False Oracles (1959–1965; Namamiko monogatari) was one of the first to deal exclusively with female mediums and possession by spirits. Nar-
rated in the first person, the story at first seems to be told with authority, but eventually two other narrators—one from the Heian period and another who paraphrases events in the Heian-era text being referenced—join in telling the story, with the result that the original narrator becomes discredited as a false-medium.

The influence on Enchi of the kabuki theater, where all roles were assumed by male actors, comes through in her fascination with the sort of androgynous environments that appealed to many of the women writers of the Heian era—women who were dissatisfied with the male-dominated society. Although Enchi frequently employed androgynous characters in her writing, she did not develop the concept. But the frequent appearance of androgynes in her books has suggested to some critics that she may have felt they represented a wholeness lacking in the lives of women subjugated by men.

**Aging Women and Sexual Desire**

In *Growing Fog* (1976), Enchi writes of an aging woman who attempts to revive her waning sexuality through liaisons with younger men. In Enchi’s novel, sexual desire brings vitality and helps to overcome the fear of death.

Enchi’s older women are caught between their passion and anger. On the one hand they are overwhelmed by physical desire, but at the same time they are burdened by self-loathing. As they age, they watch themselves lose their physical attractiveness while they continue to have sexual yearnings. There is a basic inequality for Enchi between men and women when they face advanced age in that men can still achieve paternity, while maternity is not an option for women.

**Criticism**

Literary critic S. Yumiko Hulvey has divided the themes in Enchi’s work into three developmental stages. In the first, Enchi’s women endure male subjugation, with only a faint hint of the presence of a female shaman. Writings in this category included *The Waiting Years,* “Skeletons of Men,” “Enchantress,” and “A Bond for Two Lifetimes—Gleanings.” In the second stage, middle-aged women find inner strength by tapping into the shamanic powers of the female medium. Hulvey places Enchi’s *Masks* and *A Tale of False Oracles* at this developmental stage. In Hulvey’s third stage, elderly women vacillate between illusion and reality in their attempts to understand sexual desire. Hulvey assigns Enchi’s trilogy *Wandering Spirit,* “The Voice of a Snake,” “The Old Woman Who Eats Flowers,” and *Colored Mist* to this stage.

In *Dangerous Women, Deadly Words,* literary critic Nina Cornyetz argues that the psychological depths of Enchi’s characters were complicated by historical depths. For Cornyetz, it is the collective female past coupled with the individual pasts of Enchi’s characters that gives rise to the actions in the narrative. The historical subordination of women thus becomes a past that produces the present. But, as Cornyetz notes, Enchi’s characters do not abandon themselves to their fates; instead they confront the constraints of their subordination.

Enchi received numerous Japanese literary prizes, including the Bunka Kunsho, the highest award made to an individual, in 1985 from Emperor Hirohito. Before her death on November 14, 1986, of heart failure, she was elected to the Japan Art Academy. Few of Enchi’s works have been translated out of Japanese.

**Books**


**Online**


**Louise Erdrich**

Once named one of People magazine’s most beautiful people, Louise Erdrich (born 1954) is a Native American writer with a wide popular appeal. She is no literary lightweight, however, having drawn comparisons to such noted American authors as William Faulkner.

Louise Erdrich was the first of seven children born to Ralph Louis Erdrich and Rita Joanne (Gourneau) Erdrich. Born on June 16, 1954, in Little Falls, Minnesota, she was raised in Wahpeton, North Dakota. Her mother, of Ojibwe descent, was born on the Turtle Mountain Ojibwe Reservation while her father was of German ancestry. Both parents taught at a Bureau of Indian Affairs boarding school.

**A Tradition of Storytelling**

From childhood, the rich oral tradition of Ojibwa storytelling was a part of Erdrich’s life. Her mother and grandparents told her many stories about life on the reservation during the Great Depression of the 1930s, as well as other tales. Erdrich’s father also told stories about his relatives and the towns where he grew up. Erdrich maintains that listening to her family’s stories has in some ways been her most significant literary influence. Her father introduced her to the works of William Shakespeare and encouraged all of his children to write, paying a nickel apiece for her stories—Erdrich later joked that these nickels were her first royalties. Her mother supported her efforts as well, creating book...
covers for her daughter’s manuscripts out of woven strips of construction paper and staples.

Living in a small town where she and her family were regarded as eccentric, Erdrich became an avid reader. Among her literary influences were Flannery O’Connor, Gabriel García Marquéz, Katherine Anne Porter, Toni Morrison, Willa Cather, Jane Austen, George Eliot, and Faulkner.

Erdrich attended a Catholic school in Wahpeton. Her grandfather, Petrice Gourneau, taught her about culture and religion; tribal chair of the Turtle Mountain Reservation, he worshiped the traditional Ojibwa religion while at the same time was a devout Catholic. Her grandfather’s example inspired Erdrich’s creation of the character Father Damien who appears in many of her novels.

Indeed, Erdrich has drawn on her roots, both the land and the experiences of her family, for inspiration. As Mark Anthony Rolo wrote in the Progressive, “Erdrich once mused that Native American literature is often about coming home, returning to the land, the language and love of ancient traditions—a theme opposite of Western literature, which is about embarking on a journey, finding adventures beyond one’s beginnings.”

Native American Studies

In 1972 Erdrich enrolled in Dartmouth College as part of that school’s first coeducational graduating class. There she met anthropologist Michael Dorris, chair of the Native American Studies department created at Dartmouth that same year. At Dartmouth Erdrich started writing poems and stories integrating her Ojibwa heritage and in 1975 she was awarded the Academy of Poets Prize. She received her bachelor of arts degree the following year.

Erdrich served as a visiting poet and teacher for the Dakota Arts Council for two years after college graduation. She went on to earn a master of arts in writing from Johns Hopkins University in 1979. While she began sending her work to publishers around this time, most of them sent back rejections.

Erdrich served as communications director and editor for one year for The Circle, a Boston Indian Council-sponsored newspaper. Following that, she worked as a textbook writer for Charles Merrill Company.

Beginning of a Partnership

In 1979 Erdrich returned to Dartmouth to do a poetry reading, where she once again met up with Dorris. Dorris became interested in Erdrich’s poetry, but even more interested in the poet herself. Although the two went their separate ways for a year—Dorris to New Zealand, Erdrich returning to Dartmouth as a visiting fellow in the Native American Studies department—they continued to exchange manuscripts through the mail. They met back at Dartmouth the next year and were married on October 10, 1981.

Viewed by outsiders as having an idyllic relationship, Erdrich and Dorris collaborated on every project and wrote tender dedications to each other in their books. They had a system worked out: when both wrote comparable amounts of a draft, the work was published under both names, but when one of them wrote the entire first initial draft, that person was the author. Even in the latter case, the final product was always a result of collaboration. They did the research together, developed plot lines and characters—sometimes even drawing them to see what they looked like—and discussed all aspects of the draft before submitting it for publication.

When they were first married and needed money, Erdrich and Dorris published romantic fiction using the pen name Milou North: “Michael plus Louise plus where we live,” Erdrich once explained to Shelby Grantham in the Dartmouth Alumni Magazine. One of their stories was published in Redbook, while others ran in European publications.

Erdrich received the 1982 Nelson Algren Fiction Award for “The World’s Greatest Fishermen,” a story that became the first chapter of her first novel, Love Medicine. Erdrich learned of the contest and started writing just two weeks before the submission deadline. The first draft was completed in just one day, and Dorris collaborated with her on the subsequent drafts. The final product was one of 2,000 entries judged by Donald Barthelme, Studs Terkel, and Kay Boyle.

In 1983 Erdrich was awarded the Pushcart Prize for her poem “Indian Boarding School” and the National Magazine Award for fiction for her short story “Scales.” This story and another she had previously published, “The Red Convertible,” also found their way into Love Medicine.
Prizewinning First Novel

The next year, at the age of 30, Erdrich published Jacklight, a book of blank verse poems collected from her graduate thesis work, and Love Medicine, her first novel. Love Medicine was a runaway success, winning the 1984 National Book Critics Circle Award for fiction, the Sue Kaufman Prize for Best First Fiction, and the Virginia McCormick Scully Award. The novel continued to win awards the following year, including the Los Angeles Times Award for fiction, the American Book Award from the Before Columbus Foundation, and a fiction award from the Great Lakes Colleges Association.

Love Medicine became the first of Erdrich’s “Argus” novels covering several generations of three Ojibwe families living in Argus, North Dakota, between from 1912 and the 1980s. Comparisons have been drawn to the work of Southern writer William Faulkner because of Erdrich’s use of multi-voice narration and nonchronological storytelling as well as the ties of her characters to the land. Erdrich’s fictional town of Argus has also been compared by critics to Faulkner’s Yoknapatawpha County.

The “Argus” Novels

Erdrich’s second novel in the series, The Beet Queen, published in 1986, covers a 40-year span beginning in 1932. Through characters like orphans Karl and Mary Adare and Celestine James and her daughter, Erdrich explores the negotiated interactions between the worlds of whites, half-breeds, and Native Americans. She followed this with a prequel, Tracks. Gleaned from the manuscript of the first novel she had ever started, Tracks explores the tensions between Native American spirituality and Catholicism. Erdrich continued the “Argus” series with The Bingo Palace, Tales of Burning Love, The Antelope Wife, and The Last Report on Miracles at Little No Horse.

Many of the characters in Erdrich’s books grow and develop over time in successive novels. Katy Read in the Globe & Mail wrote, “Erdrich’s characters do seem to have lives of their own—lives and histories and intricate relationships that meander in and out of nearly all her books.”

For example, In the Last Report on Miracles at Little No Horse, a finalist for the National Book Award, Father Damian Modeste, first introduced in Love Medicine, returns. The Father’s secret, it unfolds, is that he is really a former nun, Agnes DeWitt, who, through a series of events, ended up posing as a Catholic priest. Agnes spends half a century ministering to the people of an Ojibwe reservation and hiding the fact that she is actually a woman.

Interest in the Unusual

Although strange things often happen in her books, Erdrich rejects the “magical realist” label, claiming that even the most unusual events are based on things that really occurred, things she has found documented in newspaper clippings and books. She collects books on strange tales and supernatural happenings and keeps notebooks which she fills with stories of odd events she has heard about. Erdrich has also done a great deal of historical research, especially family history and local history around North Dakota. On the other hand, she admitted to Rolo, “A lot of it is plain made up.”

Erdrich’s second book of poems, Baptism of Desire, was published in 1989. That same year, her husband, Dorris, received the National Book Critics Circle Award for his nonfiction work The Broken Chord. The book, with a preface by Erdrich, is a memoir of Dorris’s experiences as one of the first single men to adopt children; by the time he married Erdrich he had adopted three Native American children with fetal alcohol syndrome.

In 1991 the couple published their co-authored novel The Crown of Columbus. The book is a complicated 400-page story about a love affair between two writers and intellectuals who, at the same time they are trying to define their relationship, are also grappling with the historical figure of Columbus in their research and writing. The couple also co-authored a book of travel essays titled Route Two.

Tragic Turn of Events

Erdrich and Dorris had three children together in addition to the three children Dorris adopted prior to their marriage. The couple separated in 1995 in the wake of allegations of sexual abuse brought against Dorris by some of his children. After an investigation left the accusations unresolved, Dorris committed suicide in 1997. As Erdrich told a National Public Radio Weekend Edition commentator that during that time, “All my being was really concentrated on getting our children through it, and that’s something you do minute by minute. Then, you know, there’s that one day at a time.”

Despite the turbulence within her personal life during the 1990s, Erdrich kept writing. In 1995 she published her first nonfiction book, The Blue Jay’s Dance, in which she records her experience with pregnancy and the birth year of her child. The title, which refers to the way a blue jay will defiantly dance toward an attacking hawk, is a metaphor for “the sort of controlled recklessness that having children always is,” Erdrich told Jane Aspinall in an article in Quill & Quire.

The following year Erdrich wrote the children’s book Grandmother’s Pigeon. Using the same sense of magic found in her novels, she tells the story of an adventurous grandmother who rides to Greenland on a dolphin. The eggs she leaves for her grandchildren hatch into pigeons that can send messages to her.

New Start in Minneapolis

In 1999 Erdrich and her three youngest children relocated to Minneapolis to be closer to her parents in North Dakota. In July 2000, she and her sister Heidi opened Birchbark Books, Herbs, and Native Arts in the Kenwood neighborhood of Minneapolis. The store, located in a building that was once a meat market, is decorated with a stairway made of birch trees that fell on land owned by friends in Wisconsin; the shop’s focal point is an intricately carved Roman Catholic confessional Erdrich found at an architectural salvage store. Dream-catchers hang in the corners of the confessional, along with books with “sin” in the title and a framed copy of the U.S. Government’s 1837 treaty with the Chippewa.
Since the late 1990s Erdrich has focused on learning the Ojibwe language and studying her tribe’s culture and traditions, including its mysticism. She has also taught her youngest daughter to speak the Ojibwe language. In 2001 she finished writing *The Last Report on Miracles at Little No Horse* and also had a baby girl. The following year Erdrich wrote her first novel for young adults, the National Book Award for Young People finalist *The Birchbark House*. The story of a young Ojibwa girl named Omakayas, *The Birchbark House* also features illustrations by Erdrich. Her 2003 novel for adults, *The Master Butchers Singing Club*, returns readers to Argus, North Dakota; its main character is a German butcher named Fidelis Waldvogel, an immigrant to the United States in the 1920s.

**Books**

**Periodicals**
*Progressive*, April 1, 2002.
*Quill & Quire*, August 1995.
*Star Tribune* (San Diego, California), December 30, 2001.

**Online**
“Voices from the Gaps: Louise Erdrich,” [http://voices.cla.umn.edu/authors/louiseerdrich.html](http://voices.cla.umn.edu/authors/louiseerdrich.html) (February 4, 2003).
Geraldine Farrar

American opera singer Geraldine Farrar (1882–1967) was a lyric soprano with great vocal skills and dramatic flair. Often paired with tenor Enrico Caruso at New York City’s Metropolitan Opera, her career was relatively short-lived because her voice had given out by 1920.

Farrar was born on February 28, 1882, in Melrose, Massachusetts, the only child of Sidney “Syd” Farrar and his wife Henrietta. A professional baseball player with the Philadelphia Phillies, Farrar’s father later worked as a storekeeper. Both he and his wife were amateur musicians, and when their young daughter exhibited musical talent at an early age, they encouraged her.

Wanted to Sing

To supplement her natural talent, Farrar began music taking instruction in various instruments from age five. However, when the young girl balked at practicing the piano, lessons stopped and her parents resorted to other means of encouraging their daughter in expressing herself musically. Farrar ultimately found her musical expression in singing, and at the age of 12 she played the part of a popular singer of her day, Jenny Lind, in her town’s annual May Festival, singing two numbers before an appreciative hometown audience.

Although Farrar was not rigorous in practicing, she continued her lessons as a vocalist, studying with noted vocal instructor Mrs. J. H. Long in Boston in 1894. The 12-year-old Farrar also studied operatic acting and deportment with Victor Capoul, a singing actor. Capoul is credited with changing her development as a performer and inspiring the dramatic flair Farrar later brought to her work on stage. In 1896 Farrar made her professional debut when she was paid $10 to sing a song from Mignon at the Melrose town hall. Later she appeared on a Boston stage to perform a selection from the Barber of Seville.

Trained in New York City, Europe

By the time she was 13 Farrar was living in New York City and studying with Emma Thursby. Under Thursby’s tutelage, Farrar began giving recitals when she was 14 years old, and her talent caught the attention of established opera singer Nellie Melba. Melba arranged an introduction between Farrar and Maurice Grau, director of the Metropolitan Opera of New York. Although Farrar had the opportunity to be cast in a small role in one of the Met’s upcoming opera productions, she turned it down.

On the advice of professionals, Farrar pursued her training in Europe, her parents borrowing money so the family could remain together while Farrar was in Paris pursuing her dream. There from 1899 to 1900, she studied with Trabadelo, a Spanish vocal coach, and also attended plays that starred Sarah Bernhardt. Her studies of Bernhardt influenced the way in which Ferraro approached the staging of her performances when she became an established opera star.

Sang Opera in Berlin

When Farrar had learned all she could from Trabadelo, she went to Berlin, Germany, to study with Francesco Graziani, who was also known for being an important vocal teacher. In 1900 Farrar auditioned and won a three-year contract with the Berlin Hofoper, the city’s Royal opera house. Making her debut as Marguerite in Faust in 1901, Farrar was
an immediate success and was named “court singer.” She was even lauded by the German royal family, the country’s crown prince going so far as to become smitten with the beautiful, young vocalist. Farrar would go on to sing the role of Marguerite 60 times over the course of her career.

Soon after her first stage debut, Farrar engaged another vocal coach in Lilli Lehmann. Lehmann was important to Farrar’s training because she helped the singer modulate her voice, improving Farrar’s diction and forward projection, and giving her greater technical control over her voice. Farrar’s roles required that she learn German, although she sung her first three roles with the company in Italian because she had not yet mastered the language.

After her contract in Berlin was up, Farrar moved to the Monte Carlo Opera, where she sang from about 1904 to 1906, making her Monte Carlo debut in Puccini’s La Bohème alongside costar Enrico Caruso, who would later play a significant role as her co-star in the United States. In 1905, on the strength of only five days of rehearsal, Farrar sang in Amica by Mascagni. She also appeared in Paris, Munich, Warsaw, and Salzburg, establishing an international reputation that preceded her when she returned to the United States. While she lived in Europe, Farrar continued to study with Lehmann.

Made Debut at the Met

On opening night of the 1906–1907 season at the Metropolitan Opera House in New York City, Farrar made her debut with the company with which she would be associated for the rest of her career. She would become its leading singing actress. In her debut, Farrar sang in Roméo et Juliette by Gounod.

Over the course of her career at the Met, Farrar became known for her thorough preparation, her staging, and her costumes. Her interpretations and characterizations were often very different from those previously done by operas. In addition to her strong personality, Farrar had different look than other opera singers. Rather than being overweight, she was pretty, slim, and full of grace.

Soon after Farrar arrived at the Met, a new managing director took over the well-known opera house. Arriving from Italy, Giulin Gatti-Casazza brought with him conductor Arturo Toscanini, with whom Farrar immediately became at odds due to both their unrelenting personalities. Fortunately, Farrar and Toscanini eventually resolved their problems, and she became the composer’s mistress for the duration of his tenure in the United States, seven years.

In 1907 Farrar made a well-received appearance in the Met’s first production of Puccini’s Madama Butterfly, which the composer even attended. She was acclaimed in the role of Cho Cho San, and the role became the most linked to her name. Farrar had prepared for this role by studying with a Japanese actress named Fu-ji-Ko. New York audiences loved Farrar’s interpretation of Cho Cho San, and although Puccini was initially reluctant, he was also eventually won over. Farrar went on to play the lead role in Madama Butterfly 95 more times at the Met. Caruso was also part of the initial production, and their on-stage chemistry made their performances together very popular.

Throughout her career, Farrar was known for her desire to take on new risks and challenges. One of these risks was presented to her in 1910 at the world premiere of German composer Engelbert Humperdinck’s Königskinder, creating the role of the Goose Girl. She went on to sing this role 30 more times. A year later, in 1911, Farrar sang in the American premiere of Ariane et Barbe-bleue.

Suffered Vocal Problems

Among Farrar’s strengths as an opera singer was her very wide vocal range, especially the upper register. Unfortunately, in 1913 her voice broke during a performance, prompting much discussion of why this had happened. While some blamed her vocal stress on the fact that Farrar had studied under many vocal coaches with different teaching methods, others blamed it on her wide-ranging and sometimes odd-beat repertory. In fact, Farrar had never taken care of her voice in proportion to the work she demanded of it, and although she rested, after 1913 her voice never regained the strength and vitality it had once possessed.

Despite the diminished quality of her voice, Farrar’s popularity was such that she continued to be offered starring roles. In 1914 she made her debut in the title role of Bizet’s Carmen, although that role had already been linked to another star singer. Farrar played the role 65 times on stage, before appearing in the silent film version in 1915. After shooting the film, her stage versions of Carmen became more animated, as Farrar added more acting touches than
were normally found in opera. One time, for example, she physically slapped Caruso, who played Don Juan opposite her Carmen.

Made Film Debut

Farrar’s film debut in Carmen was directed by Cecil B. DeMille, one of the leading silent film directors of the day. Even without the sound of Farrar’s voice, Carmen was a hit at the box office, earning her fans that were not necessarily opera fans. Discussing her performance in this film from a historical perspective, critic Richard Dyer wrote in the Boston Globe that “Farrar had a real screen face that the camera loves—alluring, vital, and in every moment expressive. Her face tells the story, and you can’t take your eyes off her.” In short, she possessed “star quality.”

Farrar’s agreement to appear in Carmen gave a varnish of respectability to a young film industry that many viewed as somewhat suspect as a credible art form. She went on to have a second career as film actress, appearing in 13 films that included María Rosa (1916), Joan the Woman (1917), The Woman God Forgot (1917), The Turn of the Wheel (1918), The Hell Cat (1918), The World and Its Woman (1919), Flame of the Desert (1920), and The Woman and the Puppet (1920). None of these films were opera roles; all confirmed Farrar’s aptitude for acting.

While Farrar gave the silent film dignity, she also brought opera to many outside that music’s traditional audience. During the Met’s off-season she traveled throughout the United States in her own Pullman railroad car, singing operatic arias to crowds in small towns which had never heard such performances. By the time Farrar was 30 years old she was a celebrity.

Because of the U.S. public’s interest in Farrar’s life, she penned an autobiography titled Geraldine Farrar: The Story of an American Singer, by Herself. The book was published in 1916, the same year she was married to Lou Tellegen, a Dutch actor. The marriage was short-lived, and the couple endured a bitter divorce in 1923.

Retired from the Met

By the early 1920s Farrar’s upper range had been compromised, forcing her relatively early retirement as an opera singer. Her final performance at the Met was in April 1922. She sang in Zazá by Leoncavallo, a role she first sang in 1920 after working with stage director and producer David Belasco. Her farewell performance was a big event; it was sold out almost immediately, and scalpers made huge profits as the singer’s many fans paid huge amounts to witness her performance. After the final curtain, Farrar was followed in her open-topped car by a mob of admirers that extended up Broadway.

During her time at the Met, Farrar sang in 23 roles for 493 performances. She even had a following of teenaged groupies, dubbed the “Gerryflappers.” Her best roles were considered to be in Mascagni’s Amica, Saint-Saëns’s L’Ancêtre, and Puccini’s Suor Angelica.

After retiring from the Met, Farrar continued to perform in concert tours throughout the United States. While her voice had lost many vocal qualities, she retained her technical abilities, and she continued to perform in concert until November of 1931, when she took the stage at Carnegie Hall for her last concert. She remained connected to opera by serving as intermission commentator for the Met’s Saturday afternoon radio broadcasts during the 1934–35 season and was active in civic activities, charity work, the Republican party, and some public speaking. During World War II Farrar volunteered for the Red Cross and corresponded with servicemen. In addition to music, Farrar explored several forms of writing, including poetry and songs. In 1938 she expanded her 1916 autobiography into a second book, Such Sweet Compulsion, in which she credited the spirit of her now-deceased mother with inspiring her writing.

Though Farrar no longer sang, fans could still hear her voice due to the number of recordings she made as early as 1904 and primarily during her prime. These popular recordings let fans showed how great her voice really was. Her records, like her tours, brought a larger audience that numbered in the millions to listen to opera. Referring to listening to her voice on recordings, Tim Page wrote in the New York Times, “Farrar’s voice was one of great warmth; her high notes had a brilliant gem-like quality. There is a serene confidence to her singing, a subliminal awareness of her splendid technique and the seamless skein of her register. Hers was startlingly original singing, full of verve and passion, yet very modern, with none of the swooping into notes so prevalent at the time. Her singing always had a sense of center, a sense of control, which is one of the reasons her disks are more enjoyable to listen to today than those of many of her contemporaries.”

Farrar died on March 11, 1967, in Ridgefield, Connecticut, where she lived in her retirement. To sum her life, a representative for Opera News quoted the singer as saying, “If I can live so that those who come in contact with me find encouragement and enrichment, that is all I ask of life. For more important to me than being a great artist will be, when the final curtain is drawn, to have succeeded in being a great human being.”

Books


Periodicals


Abraham Adolf Fraenkel

One of the fathers of modern logic, German-born mathematician Abraham Fraenkel (1891–1965) first became widely known for his work on set theory. Long fascinated by the pioneering work in set theory of fellow German Ernst Zermelo (1871–1953), Fraenkel launched research to put set theory into an axiomatic setting that improved the definitions of Zermelo’s theory and proposed its own system of axioms. Within that system, Fraenkel proved the independence of the axiom of choice. The Zermelo-Fraenkel axioms of set theory, known collectively as ZF, are the standard axioms of axiomatic set theory on which, together with the axiom of choice, all of ordinary mathematics is based. When the axiom of choice is included, the resulting system is known as ZFC.

Studied at Several Universities

Abraham Adolf Fraenkel was born on February 17, 1891, in Munich, Germany. The son of Sigmund and Charlotte (Neuberger) Fraenkel, he was strongly influenced by his orthodox Jewish heritage. B.H. Auerbach-Halberstadt, Fraenkel’s great-grandfather, had been widely known for his rabbinical teachings. As a child, Fraenkel was enrolled in Hebrew school and was reading Hebrew by the time he was five. Raised in a family that set a high priority on education, Fraenkel advanced rapidly in his general studies and, like most German students of that era, studied at a number of universities. He began his higher studies at the University of Munich in his hometown and studied subsequently at the German universities of Marburg, Berlin, and Breslau. In 1914, at the age of 23, Fraenkel received his doctoral degree in mathematics from the University of Breslau.

World War I broke out in August 1914, shortly after Fraenkel had completed his studies at Breslau. For the next two years, he served in the German military as a sergeant in the medical corps. He also worked briefly for the German army’s meteorological service. In 1916 Fraenkel accepted a position at the University of Marburg as an unsalaried lecturer, or privatdocent. It was at Marburg that Fraenkel began his most important research in mathematical theory. On March 28, 1920, he married Malkah Wilhemina Prins. The couple eventually had four children.

Focused on Set Theory

Fraenkel’s earliest research was on the p-adic numbers first described by Kurt Hensel in the late nineteenth century and on the theory of rings. Before long, however, he became deeply involved in the study of set theory, specifically the work of Ernst Zermelo, who in the early years of the twentieth century had published his controversial and innovative views on the subject. Zermelo had postulated that from any set of numbers, a single element could be selected and that definite properties of that element could be determined. This was known as the axiom of choice, but Zermelo offered no real proof for his theory, suggesting that the study of mathematics could only progress if certain axioms were simply accepted without question. For many mathematicians, Zermelo’s lack of proof was unacceptable. Some, including French mathematician Jacques Hadamard, reluctantly agreed to accept Zermelo’s theory until a better way could be found, while others, including Jules-Henri Poincaré, adamantly opposed acceptance of Zermelo’s theory.

Without either accepting or rejecting Zermelo’s theory outright, Fraenkel set about to find ways to put Zermelo’s work on a firmer foundation. In the case of finite sets of numbers, Fraenkel found, Zermelo’s theory already worked quite well. However, for infinite sets, Zermelo’s assumptions were more questionable. Fraenkel eventually substituted a notion of function for Zermelo’s idea of determining a definite property of a number in a set. In so doing, he significantly clarified Zermelo’s set theory and also rid it of its dependence on the axiom of choice, which had clearly been one of the most controversial elements of Zermelo’s work.

Just as Fraenkel’s research built on theories advanced earlier by Zermelo, others’ refinements to the work of Zermelo and Fraenkel have buttressed their theories and advanced the mathematical community’s understanding of set theory. Fraenkel’s system of axioms was modified by Norwegian mathematician Thoralf Skolem in 1922 to create what is known today as the ZFS system, named for Zermelo, Fraenkel, and Skolem. Within the ZFS system, it is harder to prove the independence of the axiom of choice, a goal that was not achieved until the work of American Paul Joseph Cohen in the 1960s. Cohen used a technique called “forcing” to prove the independence in set theory of the axiom of choice and the generalized continuum hypothesis.

Published Set Theory Findings

Fraenkel published his conclusions on set theory in two separate works—a popular introductory textbook published in 1919 and a 1922 research article determining the independence of the axiom of choice. The conclusions in the latter work were later included as part of the proof for a newly coined term, Ur-elements—infinitely distinct pairs of objects that do not in themselves define a set. A number of prominent mathematicians of the period questioned the validity of Ur-elements, but only three years later German physicist Wolfgang Pauli used them in his proof of the exclusion principle.

In 1922 Fraenkel was promoted to assistant professor of mathematics at the University of Marburg. His earlier work on set theory had propelled him to the forefront of set theory research, and over the next few years he published a number of articles on the subject while he continued to teach. In 1928 Fraenkel was offered a full professorship at the University of Kiel. He accepted but only a year later took a leave of absence to become a visiting professor at Jerusalem’s Hebrew University. For the next two years he taught at Hebrew
University, leaving in 1931 after a disagreement with the school’s administration.

**Germany in Turmoil**

Fraenkel’s return to Germany proved to be a bitter-sweet occasion. His native country was in economic disarray, suffering through the effects of the worldwide economic depression and the brutal conditions imposed by the Treaty of Versailles that had ended World War I. The economic pressures on the German people had given rise to increasing intolerance, most notably a disturbing wave of anti-Semitism. For the next two years, Fraenkel resumed his teaching duties at Kiel, keeping a wary eye on the increasingly unsettled political situation in Germany. In January 1933 Adolf Hitler, leader of the National Socialist German Workers’ Party, better known as Nazis, became Germany’s chancellor. Fraenkel and his family left the country a month later, moving first to Amsterdam in the neighboring Netherlands.

Fraenkel and his family spent only two months in Amsterdam, closely monitoring the situation in their native Germany while there. Convinced that there would not be a quick turnaround under the Nazi regime, Fraenkel drafted a letter of resignation to the University of Kiel in April 1933 and returned to Jerusalem to teach once again at Hebrew University. Despite his earlier disagreement with the university’s administration, he was warmly welcomed back to the school’s faculty.

**Focus of Research Changed**

Following his exile from Germany, Fraenkel changed the focus of his research. Although he continued to publish texts on set theory for the remainder of his career, Fraenkel began to concentrate his studies on the evolution of modern logic and the contributions made by Jewish mathematicians and scientists in their respective fields. Fraenkel had written a number of books about the history of mathematics. In 1920 he had published an overview of the work of Carl Friedrich Gauss, who in his doctoral dissertation had proved the fundamental theorem of algebra. As early as 1930 he had begun the work of chronicling the accomplishments of Jewish mathematicians with his biography of Georg Cantor, who was half-Jewish. Cantor at that time was of greater interest to Fraenkel for the nature of his research into set theory than for his ethnic background. However, once he had resumed teaching at Hebrew University in 1933, he began a much wider study into the work of Jewish scientists and mathematicians. In 1960 Fraenkel published *Jewish Mathematics and Astronomy*.

In his research into the origins of modern logic, Fraenkel looked closely at natural numbers, describing them in terms of modern concepts of logic and reasoning. Although his research underscored the need for continuity in consideration of the number line, Fraenkel also expressed interest in opposing points of view. During this period, Fraenkel had a conversation with physicist Albert Einstein, who suggested that the prevailing theory of continuity in mathematics might some day be overtaken by the atomistic concept of the number line. Although Fraenkel himself remained unconvinced, largely because he considered mathematical continuity necessary to the foundation of modern calculus, he did publish an article explaining the views of the intuitionists, as Einstein and others who believed similarly were known.

**Taught at Einstein Institute of Mathematics**

Fraenkel was among the first professors at Hebrew University’s Einstein Institute of Mathematics. Along with fellow professor Edmond Landau, Fraenkel taught mathematical logic and mathematical analysis. In 1958, while still teaching at Hebrew University, Fraenkel published an overview of his work on set theory, a textbook entitled *Foundations of Set Theory*. A year later, he retired as a professor at Hebrew University. To mark Fraenkel’s 70th birthday in 1961, several members of the mathematical community put together a collection of essays and research articles related to Fraenkel’s life work. The collection, *Essays on the Foundations of Mathematics*, contained contributions from mathematicians around the world. Sadly, Fraenkel never saw the book in its final form. He died in Jerusalem on October 15, 1965, only months before the book was published.

Fraenkel will be remembered for his research in set theory and modern logic. His refinements to the set theory conclusions of Ernst Zermelo, codified as the Zermelo-Fraenkel axioms, or ZF, are almost always what scientists and mathematicians mean today when they speak of “set theory.” Further enhancing the value of Fraenkel’s contributions to the body of mathematical theory are the clarity and precision of his writings, several of which continue to be taught in colleges and universities worldwide. In its review of Fraenkel’s summation of his set theory research—*Foundations of Set Theory*—the *British Journal for the Philosophy of Science* was lavish in its praise. Its reviewer wrote that the book “is a masterly survey of its field. It is lucid and concise on a technical level, it covers the historical ground admirably, and it gives a sensible account of the various philosophical positions associated with the development of the subject . . . essential reading for any mathematician or philosopher.”

**Books**

*Contemporary Authors Online*, Gale Group, 2000.


**Online**


Kenichi Fukui

Kenichi Fukui (1918–1998) was a theoretical chemist whose career was devoted to explaining the nature of chemical reactions. His work was distinguished from that of other chemists by its mathematical structure. He especially contributed to bridging the gap between quantum theory, a mathematical theory of the behavior of molecules and atoms, and practical chemistry. He made it easier both to understand and predict the course of chemical reactions, and he shared the 1981 Nobel Prize in chemistry with Roald Hoffmann.

Fukui was born October 4, 1918, in Nara on the island of Honshu, Japan. He was the eldest of three sons born to Chie and Ryokichi Fukui. His father was a merchant and factory manager who played a major role in shaping his son’s career; he persuaded Fukui to study chemistry. Fukui had no interest in chemistry during high school and he described in his autobiography, from the Nobel Foundation website, that his father’s persuasiveness was the “most decisive occurrence in my educational career.” He enrolled at the Department of Industrial Chemistry at Kyoto Imperial University, and he remained associated with that university throughout his life. Fukui graduated from the university in 1941, and he spent most of World War II at a fuel laboratory, performing research on the chemistry of synthetic fuel.

Fukui returned to Kyoto University in 1945, when he was named assistant professor. He received his Ph.D. in engineering in 1948 and was elevated to a full professorship in physical chemistry in 1951. At the beginning of his career, his research interests ranged broadly through the areas of chemical reaction theory, quantum chemistry, and physical chemistry. But during the 1950s, Fukui began theorizing about the role of electron orbitals in molecular reactions. Molecules are groups of atoms held together by electron bonds. Electrons circle the nuclei in what are called orbitals, similar to the orbit of planets around the sun in our solar system. Whenever molecules react with one another, at least one of these electron bonds is broken and altered, forming a new bond and thus changing the molecular structure. At the time Fukui began his work, scientists understood this process only when one bond was changed; the more complex reactions, however, were not understood at all.

Theories Increased Understanding of Chemical Reactions

During the 1950s, Fukui theorized that the significant elements of this interaction occurred in the highest occupied molecular orbital of one molecule (HOMO) and the lowest unoccupied molecular orbital of another (LUMO). Fukui named these “frontier orbitals.” The HOMO has high energy and is willing to lose an electron, and the LUMO has low energy and is thus willing to accept an electron. The resulting bond, according to Fukui, is at an energy level between the two starting points. Over the next decade, Fukui developed and tested his theory using complex mathematical formulas, and he attempted to use it to predict the process of molecular interaction and bonding.

Fukui continued to break new ground in theoretical chemistry through the 1960s. Other chemists began research on these same problems during this period, but Fukui’s work was largely neglected. His use of advanced mathematics made his theories difficult for most chemists to understand, and his articles were published in journals that were not widely read in the United States and Europe. In an interview quoted in the New York Times, Fukui also attributed some of his obscurity to resistance from Japanese colleagues: “The Japanese are very conservative when it comes to new theory. But once you get appreciated in the United States or Europe, then after that the appreciation spreads back to Japan.”

Two of the chemists who had been working independently of Fukui were Roald Hoffmann of Cornell University and Robert B. Woodward of Harvard, and in 1965 they came to conclusions that were similar to his, though they had arrived there along a different path. Staying away from complex math, these two developed a formula almost as
simple as a pictorial representation. Taken together, the work of Fukui and the American team enabled research scientists to predict how reactions would occur and to understand many complexities never before explained. These formulae answered questions about why some reactions between molecules occurred quickly and others slowly, as well as why certain molecules reacted better with some molecules than with others. They removed much of guesswork from this area of chemistry research.

For the advancements in knowledge their work had brought, Fukui and Hoffmann were jointly awarded the 1981 Nobel Prize in chemistry. Woodward, who would probably also have shared in the prize, had died two years before. Fukui was one of the first Japanese to receive the Nobel Prize in any field, and the very first in the area of chemistry. After winning the Nobel Prize, Fukui remained at Kyoto University, and he continued to be active in his field. He continued his research on chemical reactions and expanded his formula to predict the interaction of three or more molecules.

Fukui was elected senior foreign scientist of the American National Science Foundation in 1970. In 1973, he participated in the United States-Japan Eminent Scientist Exchange Program. In 1978 and 1979, he was vice-president of the Chemical Society in Japan, and he served as their president from 1983 to 1984. In 1980, he was made a foreign member of the National Academy of Sciences, and in 1982 he was named President of the Kyoto University of Industrial Arts and Textile Fibers. He was a member of the International Academy of Quantum Molecular Science; the European Academy of Arts, Sciences, and Humanities; and the American Academy of Arts and Sciences. He served as director of the Institute for Fundamental Chemistry from 1988 until his death on January 9, 1998, in Kyoto, Japan.

Fukui was married in 1947 to Tomoe Horie. The couple had one son, Tetsuya, and one daughter, Miyako.

Books

Periodicals
Science, November 6, 1981.

Online

Meta Warrick Fuller
Meta Vaux Warrick Fuller (1877–1968) is celebrated for being the first American black artist to reflect African themes and folk tales in her work and for being ahead of her time in her understanding of the black experience. Fuller's career spanned over seventy years. Her sculptural works in bronze, clay, and plaster represented her comments on wartime America, racism and violence, and the African American perspective. As a young woman studying in Paris, she was encouraged by French artist Auguste Rodin and W.E.B. DuBois.

Encouraged as a Young Artist
William H. Warrick, Jr., was a master barber, and his wife, Emma (Jones) Warrick, was a hairdresser and wigmaker. Their fourth child, Meta Vaux Warrick, was born June 9, 1877, in a middle-class neighborhood in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania. She was ten years younger than her brother William and sister Blanche. Another sister, Virginia, died before Fuller was born.

As early as elementary school, Fuller's parents encouraged her interest in art and her artistic talents began to shine. In high school, she was selected to attend J. Liberty Tadd's art school for special classes once a week. In fact, a small woodcarving of Fuller's was part of the school's display at the 1893 World’s Colombian Exposition in Chicago.

After graduating high school, Fuller was one of the first blacks to earn a scholarship to the Pennsylvania Museum and School for Industrial Art, which she attended for three years, until 1897. Part of her scholarship was that she produce a work for the school, which resulted in a bas-relief, which featured thirty-seven medieval figures, called Procession of the Arts and Crafts. Fuller won a prize for the sculpture, one of the year's best works.

Studies in Paris Challenged by Money, Race
After college, in 1899, Fuller sailed to Europe. She first stopped in England and spent a month with a friend of her mother, then continued on to Paris. A friend of Fuller's uncle, painter Henry Ossawa Tanner, had agreed to look after her there. When her train arrived in Paris, Tanner was not there to meet her. Fuller found her way to a women's youth hostel for students, called the American Girls Club, but was unwelcome. Fuller was shocked to find the club's rules excluded her because of her race.

Though the American Girls Club did not welcome Fuller, the club's director was helpful to her. The director helped her find a room to stay in and introduced her to American sculptor Augustus Saint-Gaudens. Fuller's studies in Paris had been limited by financial problems, and Saint-Gaudens helped her meet competent teachers. He suggested she take time to study drawing for a while rather than rush into sculpting. For the first year of her Paris stay, Fuller studied drawing, visited museums, and attended lectures at Académie des Beaux-Arts. With Saint-Gaudens's guidance, she had advanced to sculpting from live models by the summer of 1900.
Fuller was in the company of many notable black Americans who had come to Paris to participate in the Paris Universal Exposition in 1900. Fuller spent time with Thomas J. Calloway, the exposition commissioner; Andrew F. Hilyer, an agent of the United States Department of the Interior, and his wife, Mamie, an accomplished pianist; Alonzo Herndon; Adrian McNeal Herndon, an actress who taught at Atlanta University; and Professor W. E. B. DuBois of Atlanta University. Fuller resisted DuBois when he suggested she focus on African American subjects. She felt it would limit her work. After the exposition, Fuller registered at the Académie Colarossi to study under French sculptors.

Mentored by Master Auguste Rodin

In the summer of 1901, Fuller had a fortunate meeting. One of her fellow students at Colarossi arranged to introduce her to renowned French sculptor Auguste Rodin at the sculptor’s home in Meudon. Fuller went with hopes of being accepted as one of Rodin’s students and so brought with her an example of her work. He was impressed with the piece, called The Man Eating His Heart, and complemented her sense of form. Though he already had too many students, he did promise to visit her in Paris often to critique her work.

Fuller and Rodin shared a belief that the purpose of art was to explore human emotion. Under her French mentor, Fuller became more bold in her execution of these ideas, often embracing an ugly portrayal rather than limiting herself to aesthetically pleasing ones. During this time Fuller’s work became stronger and more daring in subject as well as form. She began more consciously using her work to make a philosophical point. She illustrated the importance of duty in Man Carrying a Dead Comrade. She explored the struggle of the wise man who cannot alleviate human suffering in The Wretched.

Although Fuller shied away from focusing solely on African American themes, her work—and her world perspective—certainly was influenced by her color. Many were shocked and laughed at the grotesque face of Fuller’s contribution to the 1902 Victor Hugo Centennial, a portrayal of Hugo’s Laughing Man. In an era when African Americans were depicted humorously as slow and lazy, bug-eyed “Sambos,” Fuller was commenting on the accepted images of the time with Laughing Man. She objected to such stereotypes and by altering her subject’s face—his mouth opened grotesquely to his ears, his ears folded over his eyes—was indirectly protesting them with the piece.

Her studies in Paris began to pay off during her last year there. Rodin was drawing attention to Fuller’s work and she held private showings. The press called her the “delicate sculptor of horrors,” and she was the only American artist invited to show with several French artists in Paris. During that year, her work caught the attention of S. Bing, a patron of such artists as Mary Cassatt, Aubrey Beardsley, and Henri de Toulouse-Lautrec. He held a one-woman show for her at his famous modern art and design gallery, L’Art Nouveau.

Started to Follow African American Inspiration

Back in her native Philadelphia in 1902, Fuller at once set up a studio and continued to work. She found chilly receptions from local art dealers who claimed not to buy domestic work, but were not interested in her Paris sculptures either. Fuller felt that her race was the reason and found a more appreciative group in Philadelphia’s black social and intellectual circles. The more she became immersed in black life in Philadelphia, the more her work began to reflect African American themes as well as European influences. She held exhibitions at her studio and was invited by local art schools and community organizations to contribute to their art shows. She showed pieces like Two-Step and The Comedian, a portrayal of dancer and singer George Walker. Both sculptures were examples of this transitional time in Fuller’s work.

Fuller began to draw her inspiration more heavily from the songs of black America and from African folk tales. Before the emergence of the artists of the Harlem Renaissance, Fuller presented America with work that showed the impact of African and African American themes. Her sculptures illustrated truth, joy, and other universal facets of the human condition. Her work naturally began to take the tone of W.E.B DuBois’s suggestion to her in Paris—that she specialize in African American themes.

In 1907, on the recommendation of Thomas Calloway, whom she had met at the Paris Universal Exposition, Fuller was commissioned to sculpt a number of scenes for the Negro pavilion at the Jamestown Tercentennial Exposition. She won a gold medal for 150 figures, which represented the progress of black Americans since their 1619 arrival in Jamestown, Virginia. She was the first black woman artist to receive a federal commission.

Fire Destroyed, but Family Strengthened

Although it was not the popular view of the time, Fuller decided to combine career and marriage and wed Dr. Solomon C. Fuller in 1909. Dr. Fuller, born in Liberia, was a neurologist at Massachusetts State Hospital and a director of the pathology lab at Westborough State Hospital. The couple moved into the house they had built in Framingham, Massachusetts. The Fullers would become significant residents of the town. In 1994, Fuller Middle School in Framingham was named in their honor.

Before she was married, Fuller stored all her tools and sculptures in a Philadelphia warehouse. In 1910, before she could have the load shipped to her home in Framingham, a fire in the warehouse destroyed sixteen years’ worth of her work from Paris and Philadelphia. The tragedy killed her desire to sculpt, and Fuller found solace as a wife and mother—over the next six years, she gave birth to three children, sons Solomon, Jr., William Thomas, and Perry.

However, Fuller did not stop sculpting for too long. In 1913, W.E.B. DuBois requested that she recreate one of her pieces lost in the fire, Man Eating His Heart, for the fiftieth-anniversary celebration of the Emancipation Proclamation in New York. The prospect seemed too painful to Fuller,
who instead produced an eight-foot-tall sculpture of three figures, called *Spirit of Emancipation*. Unlike her other work at the time, the sculpture was not comprised of obvious slavery and African American symbolism, such as the discarded chains and thankful slaves bowing to the image of Abraham Lincoln that appeared in her other sculptures. *Spirit of Emancipation* was the start of the most prolific period of Fuller’s life, which lasted fifty years.

**Social Observations Produced Strong, Subtle Work**

Where before Fuller’s sculptural statements on the African American experience had utilized bold and obvious imagery, her style became more subdued. She was no less a social observer and advocate, but she made her statements more subtly. Between 1914 and 1921, Fuller’s work reflected American anxieties over the world at war. She explored the search for peace and the atrocities of war. Fuller created two anti-lynching pieces in response to the increasing violence against blacks in America, one based on the notorious Mary Turner case. She also produced a relief of a boy rising from his knees in the morning sun, hoping to inspire black youth at Atlanta, Georgia’s black Young Men’s Christian Association during these racially tense times.

During this period, Fuller created *Ethiopia Awakening*, a sculpture which symbolized the emergence of a new way of black thinking that anticipated the voices of the Harlem Renaissance. Using an African motif, she sought to awaken blacks to the awareness of anti-colonialism and nationhood. The sculpture was of a woman whose lower half was wrapped like a mummy, with the head of a beautiful African woman wearing an ancient Egyptian queen’s headdress. In *Ethiopia Awakening*, Fuller looked to share a message of hope in Africa—a world plagued by hunger and war, compared to the prosperity of the Western world.

In 1929, Fuller responded to her increasingly crowded attic studio and her husband’s concerns for her health. Dr. Fuller was worried that so much dust produced in so small a space would damage his wife’s health. So she designed and had built a shoreline studio on Larned’s Pond, not far from the Fuller home. The new space increased her productivity and allowed her to begin taking on students.

**Grew No Less Inspired With Age**

Fuller’s popularity grew in the 1930s. She showed her work at local libraries and churches and with the Boston Art Club. She exhibited her work with and later became a juror for The Harmon Foundation in New York City, which was founded to support the work of young black artists. Through these types of relationships, Fuller shared work still rooted in African American culture throughout the thirties and forties.

Fuller closed up her studio in 1950 to care for her husband, who died three years later. Sick with tuberculosis, she entered a sanitarium, where she stayed until 1956. When she was again well, she started taking commissions, including one for the Palmer Institute in Sedalia, North Carolina, to sculpt its founder. She also sculpted the head and hands of ten notable black women for a set of dolls for the National Council of Negro Women in Washington, D.C.

Through her eighties, Fuller continued to produce significant and inspired commissions. *Storytime*, for the Framingham Center Library, depicts a mother reading to her children. Framingham Union Hospital, where Dr. Fuller practiced, commissioned her to sculpt a representation of working doctors and nurses. She also supported the civil rights movement by donating proceeds from the sales of her work and by letting symbols of that era inspire her. She dedicated *The Good Shepherd* to the clergymen who walked with Martin Luther King, Jr. across the Edmund Pettus bridge on March 9, 1965. When four young girls died in the bombing of the Sixteenth Street Baptist Church in Birmingham, Alabama, Fuller reacted with a piece called *The Crucifixion*.

Although Fuller initially resisted W.E.B. DuBois’s idea that she specialize in African American themes in her work, she ultimately did just that. Her perspective of the black American experience led to her strongest, most recognized, and inspired works. Fuller died March 18, 1968, at age 90.

**Books**


**Online**

Griselda Gambaro

Griselda Gambaro (born 1928) is a powerful, world-renowned, prize-winning playwright, novelist, and short story writer. For decades she has been creating allegorical dramas that deal with issues relating to the oppressive political and social environment of Argentina in the 1960s, 1970s, and 1980s. Although her characters and their situations offer a commentary on Argentine society and government, Gambaro’s work reached beyond the country’s borders to make universal statements about power dynamics, human nature, and the role women play in the larger social order.

From Humble Beginnings to Recognition

Gambaro is a second-generation Argentine with Italian roots. She was born in Buenos Aires on July 28, 1928. Growing up as the only girl amongst four older brothers in a poor family was not easy. Her father was a postal worker of limited economic means, tending to the most basic needs of his children. As a result, the young girl had little access to books and plays, and her public schooling did not provide her with good formal education. Gambaro was highly motivated, though, and refused to be stopped by her circumstances. She taught herself about drama and literature by going to the public library and immersing herself in the works of dramatists such as Eugene O’Neill, Anton Chekhov, and Luigi Pirandello. After finishing high school in 1943, she began working in a publishing company. She later moved into business and accounting and remained there until she married sculptor Juan Carlos Distefano by whom, she said in Women’s Voices from Latin America, she was “emancipated.” Together, they had two children, Andrea in 1961 and Lucas in 1965.

Gambaro began writing at a young age, but her work was not immediately successful. “When I was twenty-four, I published a book of stories that I don’t want to remember. It was so immature, so full of the sort of imperfections that mar many first books,” she confessed in Interviews with Contemporary Women Playwrights. In her mid-thirties, however, Gambaro suddenly started to enjoy great recognition and success as a writer. Madrigal en ciudad, her second volume of short stories, won an esteemed prize from Argentina’s National Endowment for the Arts, which resulted in publication in 1963. At the same time, she became involved with the Instituto Torcuato Di Tella, an avant-garde foundation formed in Buenos Aires in 1958 that combined sociological studies with the fine arts until it was forced to close in 1971 due to the repressive political climate. The Instituto achieved a name for itself in the 1960s as a hot bed of groundbreaking experimental art, music, and theater. It was at the Instituto’s theater that Gambaro put on a series of four plays responsible for her international success. Each of these plays—Las paredes (“The Walls,” 1964), El desatino (“The Blunder,” 1965), Los siameses (“The Siamese Twins,” 1967), and El campo (“The Camp,” 1971)—was developed alongside a corresponding prose piece. El desatino, for example, was also a collection of short stories, which gained attention from literary critics and won the Ernecké Publishers Prize for 1964.

Major Themes

Gambaro’s plays share the common theme of everyday people wrapped up in oppressive power relationships.
Gambaro’s characters are victims and oppressors locked into situations in which the victim remains helpless and unable to rebel against the cruelty of his oppressor who often takes the form of friend or family member. These early plays, as Gambaro herself acknowledged in *Women’s Voices from Latin America*, are largely concerned with the subject of passivity. “One often has a single theme, and I probably have mine, the problem of passivity. It must be due to personal reasons; I am a very cowardly woman. Very cowardly in every way. I’m not brave; I find it difficult to be brave. I am very preoccupied with passivity and the non-assumption of individual responsibility. In society it is that way and, also, in my plays.” In *The Female Dramatist*, Gambaro was quoted as having said that she was also majorly preoccupied with “violence—its roots, manifestations, and spheres of influence, as well as the ways in which it may be perceived, masked, and denied.”

Gambaro’s style involved black humor, focusing on the absurdities of the Argentine political situation, and it broke with realistic drama insofar as her plays were not set in a specific time or place. The dramatist did not locate her plays literally within Argentina by use of identifiable nationalist themes or specific references to her native country. Instead the physical and mental abuse played out by her characters mirrors the reality perpetrated by the Argentine military in the 1960s through the Dirty War ending in 1983. Adding to the surreal nature of her work was the fact that the action of the plays was rarely linear or logical, and it was almost always terrifying. *Las paredes*, for example, is about a nameless Youth who is abducted and questioned by an Official and a Custodian in a well-decorated room. Nobody seems to know why he is being held captive, but the tormentors are dead set on breaking his will and torturing him, regardless. As the walls close in and the room begins to literally shrink in front of the audience’s eyes, the Youth can no longer deny that he has “disappeared” from the world. Still, at the end of the play, he is unable to bring himself to walk out the open door because he is so deeply traumatized.

### Years in Exile

Gambaro managed to remain in good enough favor with the Argentine regime until 1977 when her novel *Ganarse la muerte* was banned. Copies were confiscated and President Rafael Videla did not allow the book’s sale. “There were raids, the army paid us ‘visits’ during which they looked at all the material in the house. As any material was considered subversive—Marx, Freud—a big burning of books resulted. Everyone who owned books burned them,” Gambaro explained in *Interviews*. She even burned the manuscript to her visionary masterpiece, *Información para extranjeros* ("Information for Foreigners," 1971) and had to reconstruct it years later. She refused to publish it for many years because of its obvious political message and the certain negative repercussions that would ensue once it was released. The piece predicted the rise of the government’s on-going repression, and in 1981 the Teatro released 20 plays, most of which, including Gambaro’s *Decir sí* (“To Say Yes,” 1981), were political attacks on the military government and the commercial nature of Argentine theater. Soon after, when the Argentine government lost the Falklands War, failing to expel the British from the Falkland Islands off Argentina’s coast in 1982, Argentina began a period of extended democracy, the likes of which had not been in place in many years. The attempt to drive Great Britain from the Falklands was one of the Argentine dictatorship’s last efforts to gain popularity and maintain power. When it failed, a new era of freedom began, exemplified by the fact that a formerly banned playwright, Carlos Gorostiza, was named minister of culture.

### Homecoming: More Freedom and a New Voice

Since Gambaro herself had been a “prohibited” writer under the former administration, the democratic shift in Argentina’s political climate affected her very personally and allowed her the freedom to influence Argentina with her bold art. Although the political climate in Argentina had calmed, the writer was no less passionate in her work. In 1987, she finally published *Información para extranjeros*, an arresting work that challenged spectators to comment on and engage the brutal actions they witnessed on a “stage” that did not have clearly defined boundaries. The stage directions called for an entire house to be used as the backdrop for some actors who perpetrated violent acts, such as murders and kidnappings, while others played children’s games. The audience members encounter harmlessness or torture, depending upon which room they enter, and they were to be led by an actor/guide who interacted with spectators along the way. The surreal writing style and contrast between the actions taking place in the different rooms reflected Gambaro’s belief that, “[Argentina is a schizophrenic country, a country that lives two lives. The courteous and generous have their counterpart in the violent and the armed who move among the shadows. . . . One never really knows what country one is living in, because the two co-exist.” Gambaro created a drama in which viewers were not permitted to be passive bystanders to terrible acts of violence, for the guide forced them to question and respond to their surroundings and the events that take place within them. The play, which powerfully addresses the reality of Argentina’s past military regime and the way average citizens were implicated—through their silence—in the brutalization of their neighbors, was a commentary on passivity in the face of horror. It indirectly, but clearly, was a reminder of the phenomenon of desaparecidos (“the disappeared”). These vanished Argentine citizens, many of whom were intellectuals or politically conscious members of society, were commonly dragged off to a horrible fate, often in the dead of night, by the former dictatorship while their neighbors pretended they did not see what was happening.
During Gambaro’s time in exile, the playwright had the opportunity to engage the feminist movement in Europe and develop consciousness about women and their issues. At the time, *Ganarse la muerte* had been published in France and Gambaro was invited there. “I had the opportunity to meet the feminists of France, and I began reading about the specific problems related to women. I started to realize things which, before that time, I had only felt in an instinctive way,” she told Kathleen Betsko and Rachel Koenig in *Interviews*. In the 1980s, Gambaro’s writing reflected, embraced, and contributed to the growing women’s movement in Argentina. She created a number of plays with strong female characters. These women, like the geisha Suki in *Del sol naciente* (“From the Rising Sun”) and Antígona in *Antígona Furiosa*, represented powerful models who rejected the confines of stereotypical female roles. “The title character of her 1986 play *Antígona Furiosa* hauntingly mirrors Gambaro herself. She, like Antígona and her Greek namesake, is intent on burying her dead, her disappeared ones. She renounces the traditional sphere, home and hearth, and refuses to remain silent.” Elaine Parnow commented in *The Female Dramatist*.

Starting in the mid 1980s, many of Gambaro’s characters—not just women—shifted in such a way that those in the victims’ roles managed to confront and fight back against their oppressors. For example, marginalized characters in *Del sol naciente* joined forces at the end of the play, their solidarity and humanity undermining the oppressive system in which they found themselves. This transformation from passive characters to consciously united, active ones reflects the way in which Argentine society was unable to fight government oppression until the Falklands War brought about a group effort to overcome it.

It was only in the 1990s, after decades of recognition in Latin America and Europe, that Gambaro’s work began to be performed with some frequency in the United States. In this era, her plays began changing in texture and themepersonal emotions, rather than state control became the main subject. *Penas sin importancia*, written in the early 1990s, has been described by reviewers as having a gentler tone than her previous work, reflecting the transitions—socially, economically, and politically—that have occurred in Argentina since Gambaro began writing. Since the early 1960s, Gambaro has let loose her words through plays, fiction, and essays. In the face of terror, exile, repression, and financial challenges, the dramatist has never failed to offer creative, poignant, relevant, and painfully true perspectives on politics and human nature.

### Books


---

### Alfonso García Robles

During his distinguished career, Mexican diplomat Alfonso García Robles (1911–1991) was a strong advocate of banning nuclear weapons. Educated in international universities as a lawyer, García Robles rose through the ranks of Mexico’s diplomatic service to become a well-known and highly respected international spokesperson on nuclear disarmament. He was instrumental in bringing about the Treaty of Tlateloco, an agreement among 22 Latin-American countries that banned nuclear weapons in that part of the world. It was because of this outstanding achievement—and García Robles’s tireless efforts toward global nuclear disarmament—that he received the Nobel Peace Prize in 1982.

Alfonso García Robles was born in Zamora, Mexico, on March 20, 1911. Showing intellectual promise, he studied law at the Independent National University of Mexico. Later he travelled to Europe and earned a postgraduate degree at the Institute of Superior Studies at the University of Paris. García Robles went on to earn a second postgraduate degree at the Academy of International Law in the Netherlands.

### Entered Diplomatic Service

In 1939 García Robles became a member of his country’s foreign service, first working as a secretary of the Mexican delegation in Sweden. In 1945 he was Mexico’s delegate at the San Francisco Conference, a global summit that involved the founding of the United Nations. As a result of his efforts at this pivotal conference, he obtained a position at the United Nations Secretariat for several years.

In the late 1950s García Robles served as director general in the Mexican Ministry of Foreign Affairs. In this capacity he played a major role in his country’s Law of the Sea conferences. In 1962 he was appointed Mexican Ambassador to Brazil and first became aware of a proposal that aimed to prohibit the use of nuclear weaponry in Latin America. The proposal originated in the anxiety created during the Cuban Missile Crisis of 1962, when the United States, Cuba, and the Union of Soviet Socialist Republics (USSR) were involved in a standoff many feared would lead to a nuclear war. The crisis had been sparked when the USSR attempted to secretly establish a base for nuclear missiles in Cuba, one of its communist allies. In October the missile site was discovered by CIA operatives who reported its existence to U.S. President John F. Kennedy. Because of Cuba’s proximity to the southern shores of the United States,
Kennedy imposed a naval blockade around the island and demanded that Soviet Premier Nikita Khrushchev remove the missiles. The crisis came to an end on October 28, 1962, when Khrushchev accepted Kennedy’s promise to decrease the number of U.S. missiles in Turkey. Although a major conflict had been averted, for two tension-filled weeks the whole world had held its breath.

In the wake of the crisis García Robles persuaded the Mexican government to support the proposed plan of nuclear non-proliferation in Latin America. He tirelessly advocated this position for several years, after which his efforts resulted in the 1967 Treaty of Tlatelolco.

Negotiated Treaty of Tlatelolco

Since 1964 García Robles had served as under-secretary of foreign affairs to Mexican president Gustavo Díaz Ordaz. In this position, he was able to effectively champion the cause of international nuclear disarmament—particularly disarmament for Latin America—and this directly led to his key role in the formation of the Treaty of Tlatelolco. His role in creating a nuclear-free Latin America was an extremely important and high-profile one, his efforts so integral to the cause that he became known as the “father” of the Tlatelolco treaty. This agreement, which was concluded on March 12, 1967, had been first proposed by Adolfo López Mateos, who was president of Mexico at the time. The basic idea of the agreement was that a ban on nuclear weapons in Latin America would prevent that part of the world from becoming involved in any conflicts—and potential full-scale warfare—that could arise between the world’s superpowers. García Robles conducted the negotiations, which went on for several years and called on his diplomatic skills to bring about a conclusion. Although the agreement was finalized, its ultimate goal of the agreement remained unrealized into the next century; several Latin American countries, among them Brazil and Argentina, signed the agreement but never implemented it. Still, 22 countries in that part of the world banned nuclear weapons from their territories as a result of García Robles’ efforts.

Became International Figure

The Tlatelolco Treaty was the crowning achievement of García Robles’s distinguished career. In all, the negotiations lasted four years and were concluded in the Tlatelolco Plaza in Mexico City. While García Robles’s role eventually led to his receiving the Nobel Prize in 1982, this honor was not bestowed for the Tlatelolco Agreement alone. The Nobel Prize committee recognized the Mexican diplomat’s numerous efforts toward achieving nuclear disarmament worldwide. He advocated for global disarmament in session at the United Nations, thereby gaining a reputation as one of the most reasonable and knowledgeable advocates for a nuclear weaponry ban. In 1968 he helped draft the Treaty on the Non-proliferation of Nuclear Weapons.

In the late 20th century García Robles became a major diplomatic player in world affairs. From 1971 to 1975 he served as Mexico’s permanent representative to the United Nations and from 1974 to 1975 was chairman of Mexico’s delegation to the General Assembly. During this time he also held the post of director in the Political Affairs Division of the U.N. Secretariat, serving as principal secretary of the special committee on Palestine and as secretary of an ad hoc committee on the Palestine question.

In 1975 García Robles became Mexico’s secretary of Outer Relations, a position he held for two years. That position evolved into something larger when, in 1977, he became his country’s permanent representative to the U.N. committee on disarmament, which was based in Geneva, Switzerland.

During the U.N. session on general nuclear disarmament held in Geneva in 1978—the first-ever session of its kind—García Robles became known and respected for his patient and skillful diplomacy in helping to stem a global arms race that, by that point in time, had approached alarming levels. It was largely because of his tireless efforts that the U.N. General Assembly adopted the “Final Document” that resulted the session. As one of the international representatives seeking to initiate a world-wide campaign to ban nuclear weapons, García Robles assumed the prodigious task of coordinating all of the various views from different countries and incorporating those views, along with the accompanying proposals, into this document.

In 1977 García Robles published 338 Days of Tlatelolco, a book documenting the creation and adoption of the Latin American non-nuclear agreement. It was one of several books on international affairs he would publish during his career.

338 Days of Tlatelolco
Received the Nobel Peace Prize

García Robles continued his untiring efforts toward global nuclear disarmament during the U.N. disarmament sessions held in 1982 as the second of three scheduled sessions (a third was held in 1999). This second session turned out to be less positive than the first. While supporting his idea of a world disarmament campaign, the assembly failed to adopt it.

In presenting him with the 1982 Nobel Peace Prize, the Nobel committee stated that García Robles’s main contribution was in helping to create the agreement that made Latin America a nuclear-free zone. It went on to acknowledge his other efforts as well, citing the diplomat for “not only . . . almost 20 years of work on disarmament, but also vindication of the virtues of patient and methodical negotiation.” García Robles shared the prize with Sweden’s Alva Myrdal, a former cabinet minister, diplomat, and writer whose efforts toward world nuclear disarmament matched those of García Robles. Like García Robles, Myrdal played an active role in nuclear non-proliferation negotiations and emerged as one of the world leaders on that issue. Also like García Robles, she attempted to pressure the United States and the USSR to demonstrate greater concern for the dangers of nuclear weaponry and to come up with workable solutions to disarmament.

Cofounder of Contadora Group

Following their award, García Robles and Myrdal worked together in another important effort toward world peace: the creation of the Contadora Group, which was established in 1983 to deal with the highly volatile situation in Central America. The group’s main goals are to bring to an end the terrible suffering endured by the people of Central America due to the ongoing military conflicts; to recognize the basic human rights of all citizens; and to help solve a the local crisis before it could negatively impact global peace. The idea for the group was developed by another Nobel Prize winner: Gabriel García Marquez, the Colombian writer who received the award for literature. Also contributing to the creation of the group Swedish Prime Minister Olof Palme. Together, the Contadora Group founders called for the presidents of Colombia, Mexico, Venezuela, and Panama to mediate in the Central American conflict.

In 1983 the foreign ministers of these countries met on the island of Contadora and agreed to combine their efforts in the Contadora Act on Peace and Co-operation in Central America. Reviewing the political and economic situation in this region, they then drew up a detailed plan for the formation of the Group. The plan met with the support of the U.N. Security Council and its General Assembly, as well as with that of many regional and international governing bodies. In 1985 Argentina, Brazil, Peru, and Uruguay organized groups to support the Contadora Group’s advisers. That same year, the Group was awarded the Simon Bolivar Prize.

Honored in Life and Death

In 1990 the Fulbright-García Robles scholarship honoring García Robles and U.S. Senator J. William Fulbright was established to help both Mexican and U.S. citizens. García Robles passed away the following year on September 2, 1991, in Mexico City, Mexico. After his death his widow, Juanita García Robles, gifted her husband’s personal 1,100-volume library to the University of Virginia. In appreciation of the donation, the university erected an exhibit to honor García Robles. The exhibit included documents, articles, and photos and emphasized the Nobel Peace Prize.

Books


Online


David Lawrence Geffen

David Geffen (born 1943) has emerged as one of the wealthiest individuals in rock music through his combined talents as a manager, label owner, and film producer.

Beginnings

David Geffen’s father, Abraham Geffen, was only three years old in 1906 when his Jewish family packed their few belongings and left their home in Vilna, Russia, for America. Many years later, in 1930, a marriageable “Abe” Geffen would again cross the Atlantic, having decided to use his hard-earned savings to see the world. Taking leave of his job as a Western Union telegrapher, he made his way first to Europe and later to Palestine, where he met a pretty seamstress by the name of Batya Volovskaya.

Volovskaya had been born in a small village in the Ukraine in 1907. Her father was a wealthy Jewish landowner. Her mother ran a small pharmacy and cosmetology business. When she was thirteen, Volovskaya’s parents sent her to live with an aunt in Romania so that she could continue her studies. After the aunt died, Volovskaya was unable to return to Russia because the Bolsheviks had cut off all communication between Russia and Romania. She chose instead to go to Palestine, where her father had relatives.

During Abe Geffen’s stay in Tel Aviv, Volovskaya introduced him to the intellectual and artistic circles of that city. Although Volovskaya could not speak English, she was able to converse with Abe in Yiddish. Abe, however, returned to America alone. Back home, Abe Geffen kept up a correspondence with the young seamstress, while saving everything he could towards making a return trip to Palestine. In
1931, he succeeded in making his second trip, during which he married Volovskaya. That November, the pair arrived at Ellis Island, New York. The newlyweds took an apartment on Manhattan’s Lower East Side, and their first child, a boy named Misha, was born in 1933. On February 21, 1943, their second son, David Lawrence Geffen, joined the family.

Childhood

When David Geffen was six years old, his mother had what was then called a “nervous breakdown” and had to be hospitalized. During the six months that she was in the hospital, his grandmother cared for David. The young boy exhibited emotional problems during his mother’s absence, and after she was released, Batya Geffen arranged to have them both treated by a psychiatrist.

Later David’s parents opened a successful corset shop. Batya, a good businesswoman, taught her youngest son the value of hard work. But his parents’ long hours away from home left David unsupervised for lengthy periods. Geffen later said he used his unstructured time to attend Broadway musicals and to listen to recordings of show tune musicals.

Show Business

Geffen once claimed to have had 17 jobs between high school and the time that he was hired as an usher at the CBS-TV studios in New York, but he could not fall in love with any of them. Not at least until he got the job at CBS, where he was allowed to watch TV rehearsals with the likes of Judy Garland and Red Skelton.

Eventually he was hired as a receptionist for a new CBS TV series called The Reporters, but after he made the mistake of offering some suggestions to the show’s producer, he lost the job. He then approached the show’s casting director, asking her whether there was anything he could do. When she asked him what it was he could do, he reportedly replied, “Nothing.” The casting director jokingly suggested he might want to consider becoming an agent.

William Morris Agency

Geffen apparently took her advice seriously and applied for a job in the mailroom of the William Morris Agency. The mailroom brought Geffen into contact with everybody at William Morris, and he has said that the job was the first one he held where he knew he was in the right place.

Geffen worked his way up to agent at William Morris and became a specialist in signing and managing rock ‘n’ roll artists. He worked with Laura Nyro, who had recently received disappointing reviews at the Monterey Pop Festival. Geffen promoted her by keeping her out of major concerts until she had achieved a following and then booked her into Carnegie Hall, where she sold out twice. Nyro’s first album on Verve had not sold well, and Geffen landed her a contract on Columbia, where her albums scored well on the record charts. With Nyro’s songs selling, Geffen renegotiated her contract with Columbia and in the process made himself a millionaire—at the tender age of 27.

Formed Asylum Records

Geffen went on to sign Crosby, Stills and Nash to Atlantic Records. After Atlantic refused to sign Jackson Browne, however, Geffen formed his own label, Asylum Records, with Elliot Roberts. Asylum would eventually sign many other top West Coast artists. According to Geffen’s biographer, Tom King, “Geffen . . . wanted [Asylum] to be known as a sanctuary for artists, a place where they could make their music and be free from any kind of corporate interference.”

But there may have been a darker side to Geffen’s decision to form Asylum. According to King, Geffen was all too willing to sabotage personal relationships to get what he wanted. “For example,” King told ABCNews.com in 2000, “he signed the Eagles, Joni Mitchell and others to his Asylum Records label with false promises and suspect business contracts.”

In any case, the label began selling in 1972-73 after Asylum had signed Browne, Joni Mitchell and Linda Ronstadt. Geffen, meanwhile, refused to let members of the band that would later become known as the Eagles record until he felt they were ready. Geffen’s call proved to be on target, and the Eagles would go on to become one of rock ‘n’ roll’s biggest acts.
Warner Brothers

Geffen's next move was to sell Asylum to the Warner/Elektra/Atlantic (WEA) distribution company for $7 million. The sale brought more money to the Eagles; at the same time WEA more than recouped the purchase price of Asylum through sales of albums by Linda Ronstadt and the Eagles. This sale would prove to be one of the few times that Geffen would undervalue his artists.

The deal also left Geffen on contract with Warner Brothers. He managed to regain control of the Asylum label after it was taken from Warner Brothers Atlantic division and combined with its Elektra operation. In 1974, Geffen scored a major coup when he cajoled Bob Dylan into signing a contract. Dylan ended up making two albums for Geffen on Elektra/Asylum, but he left after he was offered a better royalty rate elsewhere. Geffen also signed Andrew Gold, Tom Waits, and a revamped Byrds.

But Geffen was restless. He tried his hand at Los Angeles club management, and, without success, as vice-chairman of Warner Brothers Pictures. After his Warner Brothers contract expired, he chose to move on.

Cancer Diagnosis

About this time Geffen was diagnosed with bladder cancer, though a second opinion failed to confirm the earlier diagnosis. Nevertheless, in 1976 Geffen decided to retire from the music industry to attend to his perceived health problems. Four years later, he would be back.

Geffen Records

In 1980, Geffen became a consultant and formed his own record label, Geffen Records, with Warner Brothers money. He signed John Lennon, after bringing the former Beatle out of a five-year retirement, to make an album entitled “Double Fantasy” that was released in November 1980. Although Geffen Records also had contracts with Elton John and Peter Gabriel in the United States, Donna Summer, Joni Mitchell, Asia, Don Henley, Neil Young, Was (Not Was), Greg Copeland, and Lone Justice, Geffen’s leading stars were not at that time on the peaks of their careers, and his label struggled. Meanwhile, Geffen invested in several Broadway musicals, including Dreamgirls and Cats, and achieved some success as a film producer (Geffen Films produced Risky Business, Beetlejuice, and Little Shop of Horrors).

In exchange for distribution rights for five years, Steve Ross of Warner Brothers agreed to sign over Geffen Records to David Geffen. The record company had not achieved any real success up until then, and Geffen had sometimes been forced to ask Ross for advances. After Geffen sold 13 million copies of one Guns N’ Roses album, he tried to sell the company back to Ross. But Ross declined the offer. In 1990, Thorn-EMI attempted to buy Geffen Records for a reported $750 million, but Geffen instead sold it to MCA for approximately $330 million in stock, which made him the largest shareholder. In 1989, Geffen and MCA had more top selling albums than any other company. When Matsushita bought MCA in 1991, Geffen became a billionaire.

Gay Spokesperson

In 1992, Geffen publicly acknowledged his homosexuality at an AIDS benefit in Los Angeles. Even though Geffen’s sexual preference was widely known among his associates as early as the 1960s, it was not something that he talked about very much. But Geffen’s speech in Los Angeles had the effect of making him a spokesman for gay issues.

When President Clinton proposed ending the ban on homosexuals in the military, he turned to Geffen for feedback. With military officials opposing the idea on the grounds that it would be bad for morale, Geffen became a torch carrier for the president’s proposal. But after a month spent trying to turn public opinion in favor of the plan, Clinton was forced to adopt a “don’t ask, don’t tell” compromise. Geffen, for his part, backed away from the issue, saying that overturning the ban would not be worth committing political suicide.

DreamWorks

In 1995, Geffen formed the DreamWorks movie studio with Steven Spielberg, Mo Ostin, and Jeffrey Katzenberg. Each partner contributed $33 million in start-up capital, making them title to 67 percent of the company. By 1995, they had attracted more than $2 billion that they would use to release films, television shows, interactive games, animated films, and music. DreamWorks even negotiated a partnership with Microsoft for their computer releases. One of the first achievements of the company’s record division, DreamWorks SKG Music, was to extract George Michael from his Sony contract.

In October 1999, DreamWorks announced its plans to create an internet entertainment company under the name of Pop.com in a joint venture with Imagine Entertainment. The start-up was to offer short films, streaming video, live events, games, performance art, and continuing series. Pop.com’s creators hoped to encourage film and video artists to create new material for the site. But after merger talks broke down in September 2000, the founders of Pop.com decided to terminate the venture. Geffen and his partners reportedly could not figure out how the start-up would be able to make any money given that only a handful of Internet users then had the high-speed connections needed to make live video interesting. The audience to sustain such a venture was still in the dream stage.

The Operator

Even though Geffen long ago made enough money to tempt him from ever doing another day’s honest work, he reportedly plans to continue working for many more years. DreamWorks partner Jeffrey Katzenberg once praised Geffen’s integrity as a key to his success in the entertainment business. But in an unauthorized biography, published in 2000 and entitled The Operator: David Geffen Builds, Buys and Sells the New Hollywood, Wall Street Journal columnist Tom King portrayed Geffen as a man with few scruples who was all too willing to betray friends and sacrifice personal relationships to get what he wanted. Not surprisingly, Geffen took affront at the portrayal.
King told ABCNews.com in 2000: “[Geffen] apparently doesn’t like the way the book portrays him. He has told people that he thinks the book is a ‘total character assassination.’ It is not. In my mind, the book is a very balanced portrait of a man who has made indisputable contributions to pop culture history. At the same time, he’s no boy scout. He knocked a lot of people off the ladder on his way to the top, and those people’s stories are reflected in the book too.”

Books

Periodicals

Online

Walter Gilbert

American scientist Walter Gilbert (born 1932), who shared the Nobel Prize for Chemistry in 1980, became world famous for his groundbreaking research in the field of molecular biology. Admired by both fellow scientists and laymen, his efforts substantially advanced the field of genetic engineering. Because of his work, scientists have been able to manufacture genetic material in laboratories. When receiving his Nobel award, he was cited for developing a method for determining the sequence of nucleotide links in the chainlike molecules of nucleic acids. Later, he formed several commercial biotechnology firms, and he became involved in helping map the human genetic blueprint.

Early Life

Walter Gilbert was born on March 21, 1932, in Boston, Massachusetts, to Richard V. Gilbert, an economist, and Emma Cohen, a child psychologist. His father worked for the Office of Price Administration during World War II as part of President Franklin D. Roosevelt’s administration. His mother proved to be an intellectually stimulating influence in the two-child household. When Gilbert was a boy, she would administer intelligence tests to his sister and him, and she educated him at home during his earliest years, teaching him how to read. In 1939, the family moved to Washington, D.C., where Gilbert attended public schools.

As a boy, Gilbert took an active interest in science, joining mineralogical and astronomical clubs. Naturally curious, he began performing his own experiments, once with nearly catastrophic results: when he was 12 years old, while his family lived in Virginia, he attempted a chemistry experiment that ended in an explosion of shattered glass. He suffered a slashed wrist and his mother had to take him to the hospital. According to her account, Gilbert was only concerned with determining what went wrong with the experiment.

In high school, he became fascinated with inorganic chemistry and nuclear physics. A youth of advanced intelligence, he would often skip school to go to the Library of Congress so he could read about Van de Graaf generators and atom smashers. “I decided to try and find out about these subjects, but there was nothing available in school,” he recalled. “My grades were still good enough that the school didn’t object too much.” He also maintained his interest in astronomy and, as a teenager, he won a regional science fair in Washington, D.C. by making a telescope that photographed sun spots.

After high school, he attended Harvard University, where he majored in chemistry and physics. While in college, his interests became focused on theoretical physics. As a graduate student, he studied the theory of elementary
particles and the quantum theory of fields. After one year of graduate school at Harvard, he transferred to the University of Cambridge in England for two years and received a doctorate degree in physics in 1957. His thesis involved dispersion relations for elementary particle scattering. While at Cambridge, he met James Watson, a young American scientist who had established a name for himself in scientific circles—and imprinted his name in genetic textbooks forever—with his groundbreaking work with DNA. That same year he returned to Harvard for a year of post-doctorate study. He also married Celia Stone, a poet he first met in high school. They would have two children, John Richard and Kate. After that, he became an assistant professor of physics at Harvard University. In the late 1950s and early 1960s, he taught several courses in theoretical physics.

**Entered Molecular Biology Field**

In 1960, Gilbert reached a turning point in his life when he worked with Watson and Francois Gros on an experiment that involved the identification of messenger RNA. (The experiment uncovered new information about messenger RNA—essentially, the “messenger that relayed information from DNA to the areas in the cell where proteins are manufactured.”) Gilbert found experimental research exciting, and from that point on, he continued working in molecular biology, which was a new and exciting field at the time. In 1961, Gilbert gained a great deal of notoriety when he published his first paper on messenger RNA in *Nature Magazine*. He soon became a tenured biophysicist at Harvard.

Following his work with RNA, he did research into protein synthesis, again uncovering new information that would advance the field. In the mid-sixties, he worked with Benno Müller-Hill. Their collaboration resulted in the isolation of the lactose repressor, the first example of a genetic control element. Again, his research findings advanced the field as well extended his notoriety to the international level. Later in that decade, working with David Dressler, he helped invent the rolling circle model, which describes one of the two ways DNA molecules duplicate themselves.

The 1970s were also an active and fruitful period for Gilbert. In that decade, he developed a technique of using gel electrophoresis that read nucleotide sequences of DNA segments. Also, he isolated the DNA fragment to which the lactose repressor is bound, studied the interaction of the bacterial RNA polymerase and the lactose repressor with DNA, developed recombinant DNA techniques, and helped develop rapid chemical DNA sequencing. In 1974, he became an American Cancer Society Professor of Molecular Biology. Late in the decade, he worked with Lydia Villa Komaroff and Argiris Efstathiou on the bacterial strains that expressed insulin. The work he started with DNA would eventually lead to the Nobel Prize in Chemistry in the next decade.

**Entered the Business Arena**

In 1979, Gilbert formed an alliance with businessmen and other scientists to help found Biogen, a commercial genetic-engineering research corporation. Reportedly, he approached this enterprise with the same enthusiasm he brought to his academic and research pursuits, learning as much as he could about patent laws and exploring management issues. For several years, Gilbert served as chief executive officer. However, he was often at odds with the company’s board of directors and he resigned in 1984. Later, he would lend a hand in starting several other biological companies, including Myriad Genetics. A few years after he left Biogen, he founded the Genome Corporation, a company involved in human genome research. But the company went out of business after the stock market crash of 1987. Despite the failed venture, Gilbert’s interest in genome research never flagged. When he left Biogen, he went back to Harvard, where he became a major and very high profile supporter of the Human Genome Project, a government-funded enterprise looking to build a complete map of the gene sequences in human DNA.

**Won the Nobel Prize**

The next decade started with Gilbert receiving the most prestigious honor a scientist can attain. His innovative work and long list of achievements up to that point culminated in 1980 when he received a share of that year’s Nobel Prize in Chemistry. Still a Harvard professor at the time, he shared the award with Professor Frederick Sanger, of Cambridge University in Great Britain, and Paul Berg, of Stanford University in California. They were honored for independently developing a method for determining the sequence of nucleotide links in the chainlike molecules of the nucleic acids DNA and RNA. Their work added a great deal to the world’s knowledge about how DNA, as a carrier of the genetic traits, directs the chemical machinery of the cell. Working separately in their own labs, Gilbert and Sanger developed different methods to determine the exact sequence of the nucleotide building blocks in DNA. Together, their work resulted in the creation of effective tools that enabled continued investigations into the structure and function of the genetic material.

**Sought the Origin of Genes**

After Gilbert resigned from Biotech in 1984, he returned to Harvard University. Beginning in 1985, he worked as a professor in the university’s departments of physics, biophysics, biochemistry, and biology. Former students fondly recalled studying under him. Gilbert’s labs and classrooms provided an exciting atmosphere where all were considered equals, including the world famous educator himself. Students enjoyed working with Gilbert, as they found that he encouraged camaraderie, demonstrated humor, and possessed an infectious personality.

Gilbert also worked in Harvard’s Department of Molecular and Cellular Biology where, with fellow staff members, he became involved in research, discovery, and training in biological areas including cellular biology, biochemistry, neurobiology, genetics, and bioinformatics. This led him to research involving molecular evolution and the development of the theory of the intron/exon gene structure. Essentially, Gilbert set out to discover the origins of genes and how they evolved. It is believed that such a theory, if
eventually proven correct, could impact drug design, as it may allow scientists to recognize and manipulate the working parts within proteins.

Essentially, the purpose of the research was to discover where genes may have come from and what the first genes were like. In the course of the work, Gilbert came up with terms for the interrupted pattern in which genes are stored. In the intron/exon theory, exons refer to the working parts, while introns refer to the regions in between where the cell has to splice out. If the theory is proven correct, some believe the history of life on earth could be deduced from the DNA of modern genes. The intron/exon theory is somewhat controversial and has not gained total acceptance. In response, Gilbert employed extensive computer and statistical analysis to try and support it. Fellow scientist Philip Sharp, a molecular biologist at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, who first discovered the primordial introns, an accomplishment that won him a Nobel Prize in Physiology or Medicine in 1993, remarked that solving the mystery may be impossible, but he gave Gilbert a vote of confidence: “That won’t stop Wally Gilbert, of course. . . . [He] captured the imagination of the field, and still has it, I think.”

What Gilbert has tried to do is to find out how the first genes were assembled in the “organic soup oceans that once covered the entire world and gave rise to life.” Obviously, this is a daunting task. Modern genes contain a great deal of information, and to determine precisely how they evolved by examining their structure would be a lengthy and complex process. However, Gilbert feels the first genetic elements were simple components that predate the modern exons. The early exons became mixed and matched and constructed into long chains that would make increasingly larger genes. He believes that by studying the structure of modern genes, we could see find the early components and then determine how the mixing and matching process occurred. In his theory, the introns would be the elements that could make the mixing and matching possible.

Outside Activities
Outside of his interests in science, Gilbert enjoys Chinese cooking, playing the piano (a skill he learned later in life), and studying and collecting ancient art, particularly Greek sculpture.

Periodicals

Online

Ellen Gleditsch
Ellen Gleditsch (1879–1968) began her long career in chemistry as Marie Curie’s assistant but quickly grew to prominence in her own right. She pioneered the field of chemical radioactivity, becoming one of the first specialists. Gleditsch established the half-life of radium and aided in proving the existence of isotopes. In addition, Gleditsch was in contact with many prominent scientists of the time, and her friendship and work connected them all.

Ellen Gleditsch was born on December 29, 1879, in Mandal, Norway, the first of ten children born to Karl Kristian Gleditsch, a teacher, and Petra Birgitte (Hansen) Gleditsch. Although poor, the Gleditsch family was an exceptionally happy and close one. Both Karl and Petra were intellectual and politically liberal. The children were exposed to cultural, musical, and natural activities in addition to their regular studies. Gleditsch’s mother was an advocate of women’s rights.

Gleditsch graduated from high school in 1895 as valedictorian, with her highest grades in science and mathematics. She could not enter the university because it was not open to women at the time, so she began training as a pharmacologist in Tromso, and completed her nonacademic degree in pharmacology in 1902.

Because her studies involved chemistry and her degree qualified her to take courses at Oslo University, chemist Eyvind Bodtker invited her to study at the university laboratory. In 1903, she was an assistant in the chemistry lab, and in 1906 she was permitted to take the university entrance exam, which she passed. Bodtker, who became a lifelong friend—as did most who came into contact with sociable Gleditsch—suggested she continue her training at Marie Curie’s laboratory in Paris and personally saw to her appointment there in 1907.

Became Curie’s Assistant
Gleditsch received a grant from philanthropic funds made available by Josephine, the dowager queen of Norway and Sweden, for her Paris studies. Although students normally paid to work in Curie’s laboratory, Curie needed a chemist and gave Gleditsch responsibility for purifying radium salts in exchange for exemption from fees. Curie also asked Gleditsch to help her reproduce a recent study in
which British scientists claimed that copper changed to lithium when exposed to radium, a study Curie doubted. Their findings did, indeed, prove the first study wrong. Gleditsch worked closely with Curie and became a family friend to Curie and her children. Most of her work in Curie’s lab involved analyzing uranium and radium in radioactive minerals.

**Established Half-Life of Radium**

Gleditsch returned to Norway periodically to visit her family and, in 1912, returned to stay after receiving her Licence à Sciences from La Sorbonne in Paris. She was offered a fellowship at the University of Oslo, where she supervised the laboratory and lectured on radioactivity. The university’s most experienced radiochemist, she continued her study of radium’s half-life, but became discouraged by isolation and the lack of equipment. Hope for better opportunities came in 1913 in the form of a scholarship from the American-Scandinavian Foundation to study the United States. That same year, both her parents and a brother died within weeks of each other and Gleditsch then took in two of her brothers to care for them.

In 1914 Gleditsch wrote to Theodore Lymann at Harvard and Bertram Boltwood at Yale, asking to work in their laboratories. Lymann informed her that no woman had ever worked in his lab and he did not intend to change that. Boltwood was more polite, trying to discourage her with claims of minimal space. Undeterred, Gleditsch went to Yale anyway and spent a year there where she established the half-life of radium: 1,686 years. Her number remained the standard for many years until it was adjusted to 1,620 years. Half-life refers to the amount of time it takes for half the atoms of a radioactive substance to decay, or decrease in amount. Measuring the half-life of radium was important in the study of radioactivity because it could be used as a constant to study other elements. This work brought her acclaim and respect in the scientific community. Smith College awarded her an honorary Doctor of Science degree, and Lyman changed his mind about having women in his lab. Boltwood even helped her to publish her results in the *American Journal of Science.*

**Helped to Confirm Existence of Isotopes**

Gleditsch’s other significant contribution to chemistry was her part in confirming the existence of isotopes. Isotopes are two or more atoms of an element that have the same atomic number and chemical behavior, but different atomic mass and physical properties. British chemist Frederick Soddy had suggested that an element’s atoms could have different atomic weights, but most scientists maintained that atomic weight was fixed within an atom and evidence otherwise was hard to find. American chemist Theodore Richards was considered the expert in the field at the time, so like many other scientists trying to prove the existence of isotopes, Gleditsch sent a lead sample to him to analyze. Gleditsch’s sample was so free of errors that it was the only one that proved the existence of isotopes.

Her work finally gained her respect and she was appointed a reader in chemistry at the University of Oslo in 1916. Although it was not a tenure track position, it was an improvement over the low-paying fellowship she had before. In 1917, Gleditsch coauthored two chemistry textbooks, one of which was the first of its kind written by Scandinavians. That same year, she became a member of Oslo’s Academy of Science, only the second woman to be elected.

Gleditsch was always active in promoting the reputation of women in academics. In 1919, Gleditsch cofounded the Norwegian Women Academics Association, for which she acted as president from 1924 to 1928. She also served as president of the International Federation of University Women from 1926 to 1929, a position that allowed her to travel and lecture extensively. She began a radio lecture series and wrote biographies and research papers in several languages, in order to keep the public and other scientists informed in scientific research and breakthroughs. During the 1920s Gleditsch also traveled to Curie’s laboratory many times to supervise experiments and once the entire lab while Curie was in South America.

Gleditsch continued her isotope research during this time, sometimes working with her chemist sister. She published a book on isotopes which was translated into English and sold so well it had to be reprinted in a year after its publication. In 1929, the University of Oslo finally appointed her professor of chemistry, making her only the second woman at Oslo to be appointed to that level.
Provided Safe Haven for Scientists

During the 1930s, Gleditsch began work at a new laboratory she had helped to plan. Soon after, the Nazis came into power. Gleditsch, always the “mother,” took in her brother’s child during the war and offered her laboratory space in Oslo as a kind of “safe house” for scientists, including Marietta Blau, who were fleeing Nazi persecution in other countries. By 1940, Norway was under German occupation as well. Even though part of the university had been taken control of by Nazis, Gleditsch continued her work. She and a few of her colleagues secretly became “guerrilla scientists,” working with an underground organization to defy Nazi power. Gleditsch aided the university community, sometimes hiding people in her own home. They planted gardens because food was scarce, and took turns guarding them from thieves. She went undercover, pretending to be a needleworker making national costumes, so she could relay messages to people about the underground resistance movement.

In 1943, the laboratory was raided by the Germans, and all of the men were arrested. Gleditsch and the other women worked quickly to clear the lab of anything valuable, and Gleditsch hid valuable minerals in a suitcase under her bed. When she was finally arrested, her scientific knowledge and fluent German helped her to negotiate her release.

After the war and her retirement, Gleditsch worked for the newly established United Nations organization UNESCO, only to resign several years later in protest to fascist Spain becoming a member. She was granted an honorary doctorate by the University of Strasbourg in 1948 and by La Sorbonne in 1962. She was the first woman to receive the award at La Sorbonne, and it was her proudest achievement.

After her retirement, Gleditsch continued her research and wrote papers on scientific history. She still kept an office at the laboratory and continued to advise and inspire students. She gave a dinner party at her country house for her students less than a week before her death of a stroke on June 5, 1968. That same year, the Ellen Gleditsch Scholarship Foundation was established in Norway to support aspiring scientists in their educations.

Books

Shearer, Benjamin F., and Barbara S. Shearer, eds., Notable Women in the Physical Sciences, 1997.

Elinor Glyn

British author Elinor Glyn (1864–1943) wrote a number of novels, many featuring strong female characters in sexually charged situations. The most scandalous was Three Weeks, which nearly ended Glyn’s career. Later in her career she was lured to Hollywood to write screenplays, one of which originated the idea of the “It Girl.” She also directed two unsuccessful films.

Glyn was born Elinor Sutherland on October 17, 1864, in Jersey, England, the daughter of Douglas and Elinor (Saunders) Sutherland. Douglas Sutherland was a Canadian-Scottish civil engineer who died of typhoid fever when Glyn was three months old. After her father’s death, Glyn, her mother, older sister Lucy—who as Lady Lucy Duff Gordon would become a successful fashion designer—and her French grandmother moved to Canada. Glyn’s grandmother was a particularly strong influence on Glyn; from an aristocratic background and with strong beliefs, the elderly woman helped shape her granddaughter’s outlook on life.

In 1871 Glyn’s mother was remarried, and the family returned to Jersey, England. Glyn and her sister did not like their stepfather, an oppressive man, nor did Glyn want to live in Jersey. Glyn became very rebellious in all facets of her life and stuck to her own ideas. Although she did not receive much of an education because she did not like the governesses assigned to teach her through the age of 14, Glyn read a great deal of the books in her stepfather’s library.

As was expected of a woman of her class, Glynn was born in 1864, in Jersey, England, the daughter of Douglas and Elinor (Saunders) Sutherland. Douglas Sutherland was a Canadian-Scottish civil engineer who died of typhoid fever when Glyn was three months old. After her father’s death, Glyn, her mother, older sister Lucy—who as Lady Lucy Duff Gordon would become a successful fashion designer—and her French grandmother moved to Canada. Glyn’s grandmother was a particularly strong influence on Glyn; from an aristocratic background and with strong beliefs, the elderly woman helped shape her granddaughter’s outlook on life.

Glyn was born Elinor Sutherland on October 17, 1864, in Jersey, England, the daughter of Douglas and Elinor (Saunders) Sutherland. Douglas Sutherland was a Canadian-Scottish civil engineer who died of typhoid fever when Glyn was three months old. After her father’s death, Glyn, her mother, older sister Lucy—who as Lady Lucy Duff Gordon would become a successful fashion designer—and her French grandmother moved to Canada. Glyn’s grandmother was a particularly strong influence on Glyn; from an aristocratic background and with strong beliefs, the elderly woman helped shape her granddaughter’s outlook on life.

In 1871 Glyn’s mother was remarried, and the family returned to Jersey, England. Glyn and her sister did not like their stepfather, an oppressive man, nor did Glyn want to live in Jersey. Glyn became very rebellious in all facets of her life and stuck to her own ideas. Although she did not receive much of an education because she did not like the governesses assigned to teach her through the age of 14, Glyn read a great deal of the books in her stepfather’s library.

As was expected of a woman of her class, Glynn was born in 1864, in Jersey, England, the daughter of Douglas and Elinor (Saunders) Sutherland. Douglas Sutherland was a Canadian-Scottish civil engineer who died of typhoid fever when Glyn was three months old. After her father’s death, Glyn, her mother, older sister Lucy—who as Lady Lucy Duff Gordon would become a successful fashion designer—and her French grandmother moved to Canada. Glyn’s grandmother was a particularly strong influence on Glyn; from an aristocratic background and with strong beliefs, the elderly woman helped shape her granddaughter’s outlook on life.

In 1871 Glyn’s mother was remarried, and the family returned to Jersey, England. Glyn and her sister did not like their stepfather, an oppressive man, nor did Glyn want to live in Jersey. Glyn became very rebellious in all facets of her life and stuck to her own ideas. Although she did not receive much of an education because she did not like the governesses assigned to teach her through the age of 14, Glyn read a great deal of the books in her stepfather’s library.

As was expected of a woman of her class, Glynn was born in 1864, in Jersey, England, the daughter of Douglas and Elinor (Saunders) Sutherland. Douglas Sutherland was a Canadian-Scottish civil engineer who died of typhoid fever when Glyn was three months old. After her father’s death, Glyn, her mother, older sister Lucy—who as Lady Lucy Duff Gordon would become a successful fashion designer—and her French grandmother moved to Canada. Glyn’s grandmother was a particularly strong influence on Glyn; from an aristocratic background and with strong beliefs, the elderly woman helped shape her granddaughter’s outlook on life.

In 1871 Glyn’s mother was remarried, and the family returned to Jersey, England. Glyn and her sister did not like their stepfather, an oppressive man, nor did Glyn want to live in Jersey. Glyn became very rebellious in all facets of her life and stuck to her own ideas. Although she did not receive much of an education because she did not like the governesses assigned to teach her through the age of 14, Glyn read a great deal of the books in her stepfather’s library.

As was expected of a woman of her class, Glynn was born in 1864, in Jersey, England, the daughter of Douglas and Elinor (Saunders) Sutherland. Douglas Sutherland was a Canadian-Scottish civil engineer who died of typhoid fever when Glyn was three months old. After her father’s death, Glyn, her mother, older sister Lucy—who as Lady Lucy Duff Gordon would become a successful fashion designer—and her French grandmother moved to Canada. Glyn’s grandmother was a particularly strong influence on Glyn; from an aristocratic background and with strong beliefs, the elderly woman helped shape her granddaughter’s outlook on life.

In 1871 Glyn’s mother was remarried, and the family returned to Jersey, England. Glyn and her sister did not like their stepfather, an oppressive man, nor did Glyn want to live in Jersey. Glyn became very rebellious in all facets of her life and stuck to her own ideas. Although she did not receive much of an education because she did not like the governesses assigned to teach her through the age of 14, Glyn read a great deal of the books in her stepfather’s library.

As was expected of a woman of her class, Glynn was born in 1864, in Jersey, England, the daughter of Douglas and Elinor (Saunders) Sutherland. Douglas Sutherland was a Canadian-Scottish civil engineer who died of typhoid fever when Glyn was three months old. After her father’s death, Glyn, her mother, older sister Lucy—who as Lady Lucy Duff Gordon would become a successful fashion designer—and her French grandmother moved to Canada. Glyn’s grandmother was a particularly strong influence on Glyn; from an aristocratic background and with strong beliefs, the elderly woman helped shape her granddaughter’s outlook on life.

In 1871 Glyn’s mother was remarried, and the family returned to Jersey, England. Glyn and her sister did not like their stepfather, an oppressive man, nor did Glyn want to live in Jersey. Glyn became very rebellious in all facets of her life and stuck to her own ideas. Although she did not receive much of an education because she did not like the governesses assigned to teach her through the age of 14, Glyn read a great deal of the books in her stepfather’s library.
beautiful, a flame-haired temptress, too exotic and too well-dressed to be easily accepted in the society of which she sometimes adorned the fringe. Her ambition was a happy and worldly marriage.” Finally, Glyn married when she was in her late twenties. From outward appearances, the 1892 match was favorable: Clayton Glyn was a landowner and a member of the gentry. While the couple eventually had two daughters, Margot and Juliet, Clayton Glyn spent his fortune and had a drinking problem. The marriage was essentially over in the early 1900s, by which time his wife had sought solace in the arms of other men such as Lord Milner and Lord Curzon.

**Published First Novel**

Before her marriage ended, Glyn saw her first novel, *The Visits of Elizabeth*, serialized in *The World* in 1900. The story, which focuses life on country-house society, reflects Glyn's ability to observe the world around her. The book was popular and successful, and Glyn used the money she made from the book's publication to travel to Italy, France, and Egypt.

In 1902 Glyn followed *The Visits of Elizabeth* with a similar work, *Reflections of Ambrosine*. Basing the work on historical facts, she employed a diary format so the novel reads like the autobiography of its subject, Ambrosine Eustasie Marquise de Galincourt, who was guillotined in 1793. Her next novel was much different. *The Damsel and the Sage: A Woman's Whimsies* presents a dialogue between the Damsel, a free and loving woman, and the Sage, who lives alone in a cave and hates women. The pair debates love, life, and the universe. The Damsel ultimately prevails and the Sage falls in love with her.

**Penned Scandalous Three Weeks**

As Glyn's career as a novelist progressed, her plots became more unrealistic and featured socially prominent, beautiful, sexually charged heroines and heroes that were dominating. In 1907 she published the work that made her almost notorious. In *Three Weeks*, she depicts an affair between Lady Henrietta, an older woman who turns out to be a queen in the Balkans, and a younger man, a handsome but rather dim Englishman. The fact that the pair makes love on a tiger-skin rug was more than enough to shock reading audiences and provoke somewhat of a scandal. The liaison produces a son, though because Henrietta is married, she is able to pass the child off as her husband's. On a more conservative note, she devotes the remainder of her life to her son's success. Still, due to the provocative sex scenes, London critics almost universally condemned *Three Weeks*, with the result that by 1916 the novel had sold more than two million copies and been translated into a number of languages. Despite the scandal Glyn made money on the book, but ultimately lost it because she trusted her husband's investment advice.

Clayton Glyn’s debts bankrupted the family by 1908, forcing Glyn to write for money to support herself and her family. Despite continuing money problems, she was determined to live in a comfortable fashion and pursued other avenues of attaining such comfort. She had an affair with Curzon, a former viceroy of India, probably with her husband's consent.

**Traveled Abroad**

In 1907–1908, Glyn went to the United States and lived in New York City, as well as Colorado, Nevada, and California. Despite the continuing turmoil over *Three Weeks*, she published *Elizabeth Visits America* (1909), which was written in a similar vein as her first novel and featured Glyn's own illustrations. Although it was not completely successful, her next work restored her reputation as an author.

At the end of the first decade of the 1900s, Glyn spent a winter at the Russian court at St. Petersburg and Moscow, and this experience provided the background for her 1910 novel, *His Hour*. A best seller that restored her reputation, *His Hour* focuses on an English widow who falls in love with a Russian prince, whom she ultimately marries. Glyn also had another best seller with *The Reason Why* (1911), a book she wrote in 18 days as a means to make money.

In 1915 Clayton Glyn died, and Glyn moved to Paris, where her literary output increased. She had another big seller with *The Man and the Master* (1915), which was written in the popular romance style of the time in which the couple destined to be together does not get together until the very end. Glyn also expanded beyond novel-writing to publish stories and articles in popular magazines. She also was a war correspondent in France during World War I, visiting the trenches but writing from the Ritz hotel.

Glyn's finances improved in 1917 after she signed a contract with William Randolph Hearst for the U.S. rights to her novels. One of the first books to published under the agreement was *The Career of Katherine Bush* (1916). While the book sparked a disagreement with Hearst, who wanted the heroine to be more agreeable, Glyn refused to change her text.

**Worked as Screenwriter**

Because of her popularity as a novelist, like many high profile authors of the time, in 1920 Glyn was asked to come to Hollywood and write screenplays by Jesse Lasky of Famous Players-Lasky. She proved to be very successful at screenwriting, because her scripts, much like her novels, were daring and sexy. Her first script was written in 1920 for leading star Gloria Swanson. *The Great Moment* concerns an Englishwoman with social standing who falls in love with a macho American man. When she returns to her native country, she almost marries the British millionaire chosen by her father, but ends up with the American, who has created his own wealth. Glyn's second screenplay, *Beyond the Rocks*, paired Swanson with costar Rudolph Valentino to provide another hit film.

Glyn produced a number of screenplays in the 1920s. She wrote *Six Hours and Three Weeks (The Romance of a Queen)* in 1923; the King Vidor-directed *His Hour* in 1924; *Man and Maid* and *Love's Blindness* in 1925; and *The Only Thing* in 1926. Both *Man and Maid* and *The Only Thing* were of the same genre as *The Great Moment*, but failed at
the box office. These failures forced Glyn to attempt a different kind of story. Based on her own short story, *Ritzy* (1927)—a farce about a woman hunting a duke who pretends he is poor though he loves her—did not do well at the box office either.

**Defined “It Girl”**

While working on screenplays for Hollywood Glyn continued to write novels, one of which was *It* (1926). The screenplay version of this story of liberated female sexuality restored Glyn’s reputation as a screenwriter, although she was credited only as author, adapter, and co-producer; Hope Loring and Louis D. Lighton actually adapted the screenplay from her novel. The 1928 film starred Clara Bow, whose sultry performance as a store clerk who has a crush on her boss and ultimately wins his affections earned her the name the “It Girl.” Bow’s new label inspired a catch phrase of the time describing the liberated, jazz-aged, new woman and *It* became a definitive jazz age film.

Glyn followed *It* with another film starring Bow, *Red Hair* (1928). A redhead herself, she used the hair color as a symbol for passionate women, though the movie did not have much of a plot. Up to this point, all of Glyn’s scripts had been for silent films. She wrote her first non-silent script, *Such Men Are Dangerous*, in 1929. That same year the 65-year-old novelist and screenwriter decided to return to England, in part because of tax demands.

Describing Glyn’s role in Hollywood, Victoria Glendinning wrote in the *Washington Post*: “Elinor had a triumphant last chapter as the social arbitrator of Hollywood. Aging now, her hair dyed, her make-up over-bright, she worked on scenarios and instructed ignorant American actors on how real ladies and gentleman walked and dressed and decorated their houses. She was immensely grand.”

**Worked as Film Director**

When Glyn returned to England in 1929, she formed her own film production company and began a film-directing career that proved less than successful. Using her own money, she directed *Knowing Men* (1929), a comic-feminist take on men as sexual harassers. The woman at the center of the film is an heiress who assumes a false identity to learn what her suitor is really like. The final product came off as very amateur, and the screenwriter, Edward Knoblock, sued to prevent it from being released. *Knowing Men* created such a scandal that it ruined Glyn’s fledgling film company.

Glyn managed to direct a second film, *The Price of Things* (1929), which also proved to be a commercial disaster. After two such failures Glyn retired from film work and continued to write novels until her death. In 1936 she published her autobiography, *Romantic Adventures*.

Glyn died on September 23, 1943, in London. Moira Petty described the late novelist in *Stage* magazine as “the chick-lit author of the early 1900s, with a dash of Dorothy Parker and a dollop of Barbara Cortland.”

**Books**


**Periodicals**

Financial Times, October 18, 1896.


Stage, July 11, 2002.


**R.C. Gorman**

R.C. Gorman (born 1931) was perhaps the leading Native American artist in the United States. Gorman’s themes were universal and transcended the boundaries of the Navajo culture in which he was raised. Gorman’s portraits of Navajo women were executed in a free-flowing style with vivid colors. He was sometimes called the “Picasso of American Indian artists.”

**Talented Ancestors**

Rudolph Carl Gorman was born on July 26, 1931, in Chinle, Arizona, though some sources give his birth year as 1932. He grew up on the Navajo reservation in Chinle, Arizona, not far from Canyon de Chelly in the northeastern part of the state. The ancient home of the Anasazi and a place steeped in legend, power, and magic, the Chinle area served for centuries as a refuge for the Navajo from their Indian, Spanish, and Anglo enemies. The Navajo traditionally lived in earth-covered dwellings called hogans, while eking out a subsistence living from the land.

Gorman’s family, like its ancestors, grazed sheep on the plains. Gorman’s father, Carl Gorman, attended mission schools as a boy and eventually became a wealthy cowboy. During World War II, Carl Gorman was a member of the Navajo Code Talkers, an elite group of U.S. Marines who developed a Navajo-based communications code that the Japanese were unable to break. When Gorman was about twelve, his parents separated. Carl Gorman left to attend art school and later became a recognized painter and teacher at the University of California at Davis.

Gorman described himself in his autobiography *R.C. Gorman: The Radiance of My People* as a descendant of sand painters, silversmiths, chanters, and weavers on
both sides of his family. In 1864, Gorman’s paternal great-grandfather was forced to march four hundred miles during the Navajo Long March from Canyon de Chelly to Fort Sumner. At the army fort he learned the art of silversmithing, which he taught to the rest of his tribe. Later, while attending the first government school at Fort Defiance, he was given the name Nelson Carl Gorman.

Gorman’s mother, though a devout Catholic, was raised in a family that still held to traditional Navajo religious practices. According to her son, she was in labor for twenty hours before he was born prematurely. The infant grew strong on a diet of coffee and goat milk prescribed by his great-grandmother.

Gorman was raised with two brothers, a sister, and several half-sisters and half-brothers. His family lived in an old stone house without running water. The local Catholic church allowed the family to use its outdoor faucet, and Gorman later recalled hauling water to the family home.

Early Interest in Art

As a boy, Gorman modeled animals and toys out of clay from the local swimming hole. Later he drew with charcoal on rocks. When he started school and discovered pencils, papers, and books, he began drawing with abandon. His first school, Chinle Public School, was a one-room structure heated with a wood stove. He recalled that his first work of art in school was a drawing of a naked woman; it brought spankings from his teacher and his mother.

In R.C. Gorham: A Portrait, Carl Gorman recalled the origins of his son’s career: “R.C. always carried a tablet and drew, wherever we were. We were dipping sheep once, and he got a little girl to model for him. A white man working with us saw the drawing, got me, and said, ‘Look. Someday he’s going to be a great artist.’ And it’s true. He was less than ten years old at that time. I never held his hand, or led him like a teacher. His eyes were his teachers.”

In 1943, Gorman enrolled in a Catholic boarding school on the Navajo reservation. In the fall of 1944, he switched to the Ganado Presbyterian Mission School. In the seventh grade, Gorman began selling his artwork to nurses and doctors at the mission school. He graduated from Ganado Mission High School in 1950.

As a child, Gorman never received instruction in the Navajo religion. “The Catholics and Protestants got to me first,” he wrote in his autobiography. Although he rejected Catholicism after his experience at the Catholic boarding school, he later considered himself a good Catholic.

In the Navy

After briefly enrolling at Arizona State College (now Northern Arizona University), Gorman joined the Navy in 1951. It was at that time that he began calling himself R.C., because, he said, Rudolph Carl didn’t seem to fit him. Following boot camp, Gorman was assigned to duty in Guam. He attended Guam Territorial College, intending to become a writer. During this time, he picked up pocket money by sketching girlfriends of officers and enlisted men from photographs they provided.

In 1955, after leaving the Navy, Gorman enrolled again at Arizona State College, with a major in literature and a minor in art. In the summer of 1956, he worked at Disneyland, where he dressed as a Native American and paddled a canoe.

San Francisco and Mexico

After his art began to sell, he moved to San Francisco. On a trip to Mexico, Gorman first saw the murals of Guadalajara depicting the history of the Mexican people. He later wrote in his autobiography, “Instead of trying to paint like a European, I started painting like a Mexican, I guess, except that I was using the Navajos for my subject matter.” In Mexico City, Gorman saw the works of Diego Rivera and other artists. According to Gorman, “Rivera went to Europe to discover himself. I went to Mexico and discovered Rivera and myself.”

Upon returning from Mexico, Gorman applied for a grant from the Navajo Tribal Council. He was awarded a scholarship to attend Mexico City College in 1958. After three months, Gorman returned to San Francisco, where he held a job in the post office at night and painted by day. Later he worked as a nude model for colleges and private art studios in the San Francisco Bay area.

Taos

In the early 1960s, Gorman relocated briefly to Houston, Texas. In 1964, he discovered Taos, New Mexico, which he loved at first sight. After he showed some slides to gallery owner Dorothy Brett of the Manchester Gallery in Taos, she agreed to handle his work. Following an extremely successful show in Taos, Gorman returned to San Francisco, where he began experimenting with landscapes, pottery, and sand paintings. In 1966, on another trip to Mexico City, Gorman did his first work in lithography. During this trip, Gorman was introduced to the noted printmaker Jose Sanchez.

When the Manchester Gallery in Taos came up for sale in the late 1960s, Gorman borrowed money from his parents and bought it. He reopened the gallery as the Navajo Gallery in 1968, starting with 55 artists. But after the others’ works failed to sell, Gorman began selling only his own material. His drawings sold for $100 apiece.

Gorman’s Women

Gorman said he liked to capture the beauty of his people, especially the women. As he explained in his autobiography, “Navajos always had respect for strong, powerful women who would go out and chop wood, herd sheep, have babies in the field. My Indian woman isn’t glamorous but she is beautiful. She is earthy, nurturing, and it is a constant challenge to capture her infinite variety.

“I deal with the common woman who smells of the fields and maize. She lives and breathes... My women work and walk on the land. They need to be strong to survive. They have big hands, strong feet. They are soft and strong like my grandmother who gave me life.”
“My women are remote, withdrawn in their silence. They don’t look out, but glance inward in the Indian way. You know their faces, but not a thing about their thoughts. They do not reveal whether they are looking at us or not.

“I like to think that my women represent a universal woman. They don’t have to be from the reservation. They could be from Scottsdale or Africa. They’re composites of many women I’ve known.”

Gorman used live models when he drew Navajo women, but not all of his models were Navajo. He said that by throwing a blanket over a Japanese woman, he could end up with a Navajo model. In fact, one of his favorite models was a young Japanese woman.

Magic Mountain

Gorman wrote in his autobiography, “It’s strange I should come to Taos. The Navajos are encircled by the four sacred mountains, and within those four mountains the Navajo feels, I think, protected, but on the other hand inhibited. I’m outside of the sacred Navajo mountains and feel like a very independent creature who is protected by another mountain that is quite magic, the Taos mountain.”

Gorman was visited in Taos by many celebrities, including Elizabeth Taylor, Jacqueline Onassis, Arnold Schwartzenneggar, Tab Hunter, Alan Ginsberg, Caesar Romero, Danny DeVito, and baseball pitcher Jim Palmer.

Indian Artist

Gorman was not offended at being called an “Indian artist.” He wrote in his autobiography, “I am what I am, and its obvious I’m not white, black, or Oriental. I am an Indian. I am an artist. I’m an Indian painting Indians, and if it worked out for me, then it’s all well and good.”

But Gorman added: “I’ve always felt successful. Even when I wasn’t making any money, I just knew it was all there. I always believed in myself. I knew I had talent and there was just no doubt about it. I just didn’t give up.”

Gorman gave thought to his legacy in his autobiography: “If I’m remembered at all, I’d be very surprised and amused. I don’t really think about it or worry about it. But I suppose I would like to be remembered that I was an earnest worker. That I cared. That I know anyone can get what they want if they work hard enough. After all, I’m just a little boy from the reservation who used to herd sheep at Black Mountain.”

Books

Online

Earl Gilbert Graves, Jr.

American publishing magnate Earl Graves (born 1935) launched his empire in 1972 with Black Enterprise magazine. Coming less than a decade after new U.S. federal civil rights legislation had been enacted, the magazine soon became the standard-bearer for upwardly mobile African Americans.

Working-Class Family Upbringing

Graves was born in Brooklyn, New York, on January 9, 1935, and grew up in the Bedford-Stuyvesant neighborhood. His father worked as a shipping clerk in New York’s garment district. Bedford-Stuyvesant, far from the nightclubs and jazz of Harlem, was home to many similar working-class black families. Many owned their own homes, as Graves later pointed out in an interview with Los Angeles Times writer Lee Romney. “I swept the sidewalk once a day and God forbid if I didn’t bring the garbage cans in after the garbage had been collected,” he recalled. “From that environment came the idea of wanting to do something of my own....”

But success seemed an unlikely avenue to success for a black man in that era; as Graves wrote in his book, How to Succeed in Business Without Being White: Straight Talk on Making It in America, “the concept of being black and in business was still considered to be almost seditious even when I was a student at Morgan State University in Baltimore from 1953 to 1957.”

During his time at the historically black college in Baltimore, Maryland, Graves earned money by delivering flowers on campus, at a time when the local florists would not venture there. He earned a degree in economics in 1958 and served two years in the U.S. Army, leaving with the rank of captain in the elite Green Beret unit. Back home in New York City, he dabbled in real estate and worked for the Boy Scouts of America before joining the staff of New York’s newly elected U.S. senator, Robert F. Kennedy, in 1964. Graves spent four years as Kennedy’s administrative assistant and was in the Kennedy entourage the night the senator, campaigning to win the Democratic Party’s presidential nomination, was assassinated at the Ambassador Hotel in Los Angeles in June 1968. As he told Romney in the Los Angeles Times interview 30 years later, “The enormity of his death stayed with me. When I went back a year later to Los Angeles, I sat up all night staring out the window thinking, ‘What would it all have been had Kennedy lived?’ I believe this would have been a different country than we have today.”

Empowerment Through Economic Success

Devastated, Graves sought a new direction in his life. While serving on an advisory board to the Small Business Administration, he launched his own management consulting firm. By the late 1960s, the civil rights movement had paved the way for black empowerment and the concept of “black capitalism.” Proponents believed that a liberated
American society would come only when minority communities thrived with their own businesses.

With this in mind, Graves founded *Black Enterprise* magazine in New York City in 1970. At the time, only the Johnson Company in Chicago issued magazines targeted at black readers in the United States: *Ebony* and *Jet.* Many believed Graves was too optimistic in starting a magazine aimed at African American businesspeople. At the time, there were only about 100,000 black-owned businesses in the United States, and most of them were small, family-run, neighborhood operations. Only three of the 3,000 business leaders who were serving on the boards of Fortune 500 companies were African Americans. “Lacking capital, managerial and technical knowledge and crippled by prejudice, the minority businessman has been effectively kept out of the marketplace. We want to help change this,” Graves declared in *Black Enterprise*’s first issue in August 1970.

**“The BE 100”**

Graves’s publication was a success within its first year, becoming profitable after just ten issues. In June 1973, the magazine started listing its Black Enterprise 100, ranking the top black-owned companies in America by revenues. At the time, Berry Gordy’s music and entertainment company, Motown, was number one on the list, and it remained there for a record eleven years. In time, as black-owned businesses grew in both number and revenues, the magazine expanded its rankings to list banks and insurance companies, auto dealerships, and other enterprises; it also began to publish statistics on Fortune 500 and other companies that were positive places for African Americans to work or to join as franchisees.

Graves expanded his empire over the years. He acquired several radio stations, and in 1990, in a much-heralded deal, joined with Los Angeles Lakers basketball star Earvin “Magic” Johnson to acquire the distribution rights for Pepsi-Cola products in the Washington, D.C. area. It was a $60 million deal, and their venture became the largest minority-owned franchise in the United States at that time. It was all the more remarkable because Pepsi rarely allowed outsiders to acquire its lucrative local distribution franchises. “Pepsi-Cola made the conscious decision, to their credit, to identify a minority person who could be a successful bottler,” Graves told *Beverage World*’s Tim Davis. “And I wanted Washington, D.C. I looked at other areas that were not necessarily minority. The population here is 80 percent minority, but the fact of the matter is that this is the seat of government for western civilization. And the beverage of choice right now is Pepsi-Cola.”

Wrote Autobiography

Graves later bought out Johnson’s shares and sold the Pepsi franchise back to the company in 1998, taking a post as chairman of Pepsi’s customer advisory and ethnic marketing committee. By this time he also sat on the boards of several Fortune 500 corporations, among them Chrysler Corporation, Aetna Inc., American Airlines, and Federated Department Stores. “Let’s be frank: African Americans are not invited to join the boards of white-owned companies because the world has run out of smart white people,” he wrote in *How to Succeed in Business Without Being White.* “We are expected to add a unique business perspective and a fresh dimension, just as women are. That is a strength to be leveraged, not a deficit to be hidden away.”

Graves’s book appeared in 1997. Much of it was a summation of his magazine’s editorial focus, with tips on dressing conservatively and how to define and assert personal career goals. A *Publishers Weekly* review found that “Graves’s own reflections on the challenges faced by blacks in business” proved “more interesting” than the standard how-to fare in rest of it. True to form, Graves promoted the book tirelessly, and it enjoyed strong sales in many urban markets. When asked by Romney in the *Los Angeles Times* about what minorities needed to succeed in corporate America, Graves asserted that “a junkyard-dog mentality” was crucial, “that competitive spirit that comes from the culture in terms of having to be better, having to try harder, and having to be prepared to get up after you get knocked down.”

**Ardent Civil Rights Champion**

Graves has often used the pages of *Black Enterprise* to call attention to unfinished civil rights business. He urged readers to support historically black colleges and to contribute to the United Negro College Fund. In one “Letter to My Grandchildren,” Graves noted that many critical changes had taken place since his own childhood, opening the doors for unparalleled achievement for blacks in the United States. “It is important to remind ourselves from time to time that the entrepreneurial, professional, and economic strides and accomplishments that fill the pages of *BE* each month were unimaginable just a few short decades ago,” he wrote. However, Graves noted, there was still work to be done, particularly with setbacks in affirmative action in the 1990s. “... Even as we pause to congratulate ourselves, our celebration is tempered by deep concerns,” he reflected. “I worry that the same legislation and policies that enabled the advances of my generation, and that of your parents’ generation, will no longer exist for your generation.”

For his longtime commitment to civil rights, Graves was awarded the 1999 Spingarn Medal from the NAACP, its highest honor. At the same time, he announced a new $1.23 million Earl G. Graves/NAACP Scholarship Fund. In 1995, he had given his alma mater, Morgan State University, $1 million, the largest alumni gift in the school’s history. Morgan State named its business school in Graves’s honor. Graves remained active in Democratic Party politics and supported the mayoral bid of Fernando Ferrer in the 2001 New York City race.

**Magazine Entered Fourth Decade**

*Black Enterprise* magazine continued to thrive. In 2001, the company, headquartered on Fifth Avenue in Manhattan, enjoyed $5.7 million in sales, with four million readers. The company also included a book publishing arm, sponsored seminars for entrepreneurs, and ran a private equity investment fund. *Washington Post* writer Linton Weeks called its founder “one of the most influential black
businesspeople in the country” and said Graves “has used Black Enterprise to tell the community how to: work together, dress smart, pull strings, borrow money, live reverentially well.”

Graves, married in 1960, lived in the posh New York suburb of Scarsdale. Two of his three sons served as executives with his company, while the third held a post with Pepsi-Cola. In addition to the Spingarn Medal, Graves was also the recipient of numerous other awards, including the Entrepreneurial Excellence Award from Dow Jones & Co. in 1992, and the Ernst & Young New York City Entrepreneur of the Year Award three years later. In all, he held 53 honorary degrees, but as he wrote in the 30th anniversary issue of his magazine in 2000, “I have always said that these awards recognize the magazine’s role in uplifting African Americans. By showcasing their achievements as well as gaining a forum to address the issues of the day, we helped fuel the aspirations of generations of black entrepreneurs and business people.”

In the same issue, he wrote: “We wanted to show our readers a better way and, at the same time, communicate to the business world, from Madison Avenue to Wall Street, that there was a viable black consumer market. It was my vision to show a more positive side of African American participation in the business mainstream. Along the way, we would carve a path for future generations.”

Books
Business Leader Profiles for Students, Volume 1, Gale, 1999.

Periodicals
Booklist, April 1, 1997.
Changing Times, November 1990.
Los Angeles Times, October 14, 1998.

Rafael Guastavino

Each year, thousands of tourists visit New York City and its historic structures such as Grand Central Terminal, Carnegie Hall, and the Great Hall on Ellis Island. Most tourists are not aware that the man responsible for these famous buildings was Rafael Guastavino (1842–1908), a Spanish immigrant who integrated centuries-old construction techniques into modern architecture. Guastavino left his personal stamp on the city. His work—with its great spans of curving, expressive spaces—combines grace with sturdy, enduring construction.

Adapted Ancient Building Technique

Rafael Guastavino was born in Valencia, Spain, in 1842. He was trained as an architect in Barcelona, graduating in 1872 from the Escuela de Arquitectura. Before emigrating to the United States, Guastavino established himself as a successful architect in Barcelona.

In Spain, Guastavino designed and built homes and factories for wealthy industrialists in the region of Catalin. He revived an ancient form of tile and mortar building that had been used for centuries. This technique, called the boveda catalana, or Catalan vault, featured long flat tiles placed in layers held together by a mixture of Portland cement and cow bay sand. The technique was also known as “timbrel” vaulting, a term that suggested the membrane of a timbrel, an old percussion instrument similar to a tambourine.

Guastavino would adapt the ancient technique into a method called “cohesive construction,” which involved placing layers of thin, interlocking terra cotta tiles in layers of mortar to create curved horizontal surfaces including floors, stairs, roofs, and ceilings which were usually shaped like vaults or domes. Though the tiles were light, their placement enabled them to withstand a great deal of weight, resulting in self-supporting arches. The strength of the vaults and arches came from a curved geometry held in a state of monolithic cohesion. The sturdiness of Guastavino’s structures has often been compared to the natural strength of eggshells. The style was both visually striking and practical: Not only were the structures strong, they were fireproof. These curved surfaces became his personal trademark, and Guastavino would employ this method when he emigrated to the United States in 1881.

Started Business in America

Guastavino wanted to emigrate to America after architectural plans he submitted to the Philadelphia Centennial Exposition earned him a medal of merit in 1876. He believed he could acquire better building materials and more job opportunities there. Five years after his award, he brought his son, Rafael Guastavino, Jr., with him to the United States. His son was nine at the time and would later go into business with his father.

In America, Guastavino worked as a builder and contractor. At first, he had trouble finding work. His techniques were not well understood in America. However, given time, he was able to establish his reputation. In 1885, he secured the first of his many patents on his vaulting system of construction.

In 1889, he founded the Guastavino Fireproof Construction Company. Promoting the vaulting technique called the “Guastavino Tile Arch System,” a refinement of the fireproof construction system he first used in Spain, Guastavino advanced his reputation, and his services were
soon much in demand in New York. His fire-resistant construction method was a major selling point, given the great fire that had ravaged Chicago in 1871.

Became Accomplished Architect

Today, his structuring method is a visual characteristic in many of New York City’s landmark buildings. However, much of Guastavino’s work during this early period involved residential architecture, including row houses on the city’s Upper West Side that remained standing into the 21st century. With his techniques, Guastavino could design homes with a distinctive feature: large openings could be spanned without using timber or iron beams. Guastavino also incorporated Moorish details into these homes, including brownstone, terra cotta, and articulated brickwork. The fact that the buildings still exist are a testament to Guastavino’s workmanship. He was so conscientious about quality that his company manufactured its own tiles.

Guastavino developed a reputation as an accomplished architect, and he worked with some of the best architects in the United States, including Stanford White, Richard Morris Hunt, Ralph Adams Cram, and Cass Gilbert. Guastavino greatly influenced these colleagues. They borrowed elements of his style and technique to create their own world-famous works. The same year that he formed his company, Guastavino collaborated with architects White, Charles Follen McKim, and William Rutherford Mead on the Boston Public Library, one of his best-known projects.

Guastavino’s business was essentially a construction and contracting firm. He, and later his son, installed the trademark masonry floors, ceilings, vaults, domes, stairs and acoustic products in churches, museums, railroad stations, state capitols, libraries, concert halls, government and university buildings, private homes, and highway structures. In all, his firm created nearly 400 structures in New York City. By 1891 the company had offices in New York, Boston, Milwaukee, Chicago, and Providence, Rhode Island.

The company also developed successful building products, including acoustic tile. With Wallace C. Sabine, Guastavino created Rumford tiles designed to reduce echoes inside large ecclesiastical edifices. The tiles can be found in several famous churches, including St. Bartholomew and St. Thomas in New York City and the Duke University Chapel in Durham, North Carolina. In 1900, the firm opened a tile manufacturing factory in Woburn, Massachusetts.

Moved to North Carolina

In the mid-1890s, Guastavino went to Asheville, North Carolina, to work on the Biltmore House, which would become a National Historic Landmark. He decided to stay in the area, buying land and building a house near Black Mountain. In 1905, working with another renowned architect, Richard Sharp Smith, he helped design and build the St. Lawrence Catholic Church, which would later be placed on the National Register Of Historic Places.

Guastavino decided to work on the church after he said, “If you weren’t willing to pay additional dollars for his system, “It’s a prettier system, but people great beauty, they could not compete with newer, cheaper building techniques. “It’s a prettier system, but people weren’t willing to pay additional dollars for his system,” he said.

Left a Strong Legacy

Much of Guastavino’s output can be found in the northeastern United States, including 360 works in New York, 100 in Boston, 30 in Pittsburgh, and 20 in Philadelphia. Examples of his work also can be found in ten other countries. His most famous accomplishments include vaults in Grand Central Station, Saint Patrick Cathedral, Saint John the Divine Cathedral, Mount Sinai Hospital, and City Hall Station. Buildings include Grant’s Tomb, the Great Hall at Ellis Island, Carnegie Hall, and the chapel at West Point. Other famous projects in other parts of the country include the Nebraska State Capitol and the U.S. Army War College in Washington, D.C.

Guastavino’s distinctive architectural stamp is also a strong presence in North Carolina. Along with the St. Lawrence church, the Biltmore House, and the Duke Chapel, famous sites include the Jefferson Standard Building in Greensboro, the Motley Memorial in Chapel Hill, and St. Mary’s Catholic Church in Wilmington. But it is the St. Lawrence church that remains perhaps the best-known structure in that state.

Built Many New York Landmarks

A walking tour of New York’s Upper West Side reveals many of Guastavino’s fingerprints, including the tiles in the Holy Trinity Church, the vehicular entrance to the American Museum of Natural History on Central Park West, and the porte-cochere at the Ansonia. Outside the Upper West Side, other Guastavino works include St. Paul’s Chapel on the Columbia University campus, the Cathedral of St. John the Divine, the Western Union Building on Hudson Street, the
City Hall subway station, the Grand Central’s Oyster Bar, the Church of Notre Dame, the Federal Reserve Bank, the U.S. Custom House, the Plaza and St. Regis hotels, Temple Emanu-El, Lenox Hill Hospital, the Cloisters, St. Bartholomew’s and St. Vincent Ferrer churches, and the Municipal Building. Many of these structures are among the most famous and distinctive in the country. “The Guastavino system represents a unique architectural treatment that has given America some of its most monumental spaces,” wrote Thomas Prudon in *Progressive Architecture*. “It deserves to be preserved and treated with care.”

**Guastavino Rediscovered**

The visual elegance of Guastavino’s work provided indelible impressions of New York City. However, until recent years, few knew who was responsible for these structures. Indeed, even when he was alive, Guastavino was not well known outside of the architectural field. Since he worked mainly as a contractor, his name did not appear on the buildings, and the public was largely unaware of the impact and significance of his work. “They are the best examples we have . . . of something that is at the same time structural, decorative and fireproof—an amazing combination of architectural and decorative elements in American architecture,” said Wescott.

In the late 20th and early 21st centuries, renewed interest was generated by exhibitions that highlighted his achievements. “It’s been a passion of mine to get him known,” said Wescott. “He’s just this incredible architect, engineer, contractor and ceramist. He is probably one of the best examples of a Renaissance man who never got any PR, and now it’s time for his PR.”

**Periodicals**

*Columbia University Record*, April 26, 1996.

**Online**

Tom Hanks

Oscar-winning actor Tom Hanks (born 1956) embraced his budding theater career as a high school student in the San Francisco Bay area. In 1984 he established a foothold in films, starring as the romantic interest of a mermaid in the movie *Splash*. Four years and seven films later he won a Golden Globe Award and by 2000 had won back-to-back Academy Awards as best actor.

Hanks was born Thomas Jeffrey Hanks on July 9, 1956, in Concord, California. His father, Amos, was a restaurant chef; his mother, Janet, was a waitress. Hanks, the third of the couple's four children and the second of three sons, was five years old in February 1962 when his parents separated. Leaving their younger brother behind with their mother, Hanks and his two older siblings went with their father to Reno, Nevada, where they lived in a basement flat at 529 Mills Street. By April their father had married Winfred Finley, the owner of the Mills Street residence. Finley was herself divorced and living with five of her eight children, and the large Finley brood merged to become step-siblings with the Hanks children.

In 1964 the 10-member household moved to Pleasant Hills, California. Soon afterward, Amos Hanks and Finley divorced. The Hanks children were shuffled continuously between the homes of various relatives while their father established a residence near his family in the San Francisco Bay area. For a time the three children stayed in Red Bluff with their mother, who was three-times remarried by then. After leaving Red Bluff they spent time with assorted relatives of their father in San Mateo and Oakland.

The living arrangement stabilized after Amos Hanks met and married Frances Wong who brought three daughters of her own into the marriage. Thus a large family was created anew, with six siblings in all. Hanks coped admirably with the unpredictability of his home life. He took judo lessons and participated in Little League, and the family enjoyed camping when circumstances allowed. He maintained above average grades at Oakland's Bret Harte junior high school and had by adolescence learned to be flexible above all else. Hanks, in fact, demonstrated a remarkable sense of resilience in the face of continuous upheaval. At home he and his siblings learned to fend for themselves by doing their own laundry and preparing meals as much as possible.

**Found His Focus**

When Hanks entered Oakland's Skyline High School in the early 1970s, he found an emotional anchor in a social group based at the First Covenant Church. Having been raised alternately as a Catholic and as a Mormon and later as a member of the Nazarene Church, he gravitated easily toward the group. In his senior year he left home and took up residence with a family from the church, supporting himself by working as a bellhop at the Oakland Hilton Hotel.

In high school, Hanks, with encouragement from a friend, joined the school's drama program. Beginning with a role in Shakespeare's *Twelfth Night*, Hanks appeared in a number of plays under the direction of the school's drama teacher, Rawley Farnsworth. Many years later, Hanks—in accepting his first Academy Award in 1994—publicly thanked Farnsworth for his help and encouragement.
After high school graduation in 1974, Hanks enrolled at Chabot Community College in nearby Hayward. For the next two years, he began a metaphorical love affair with the theater, appearing on stage and working as a stagehand. He took acting classes and developed a sincere appreciation of live theater. By the time he enrolled at California State University at Sacramento (CSUS) in 1976, his fascination with the theater could no longer be contained.

Through an extracurricular involvement with the Sacramento Civic Theater, Hanks developed a fortuitous acquaintance with director Vincent Dowling. A visitor to the Sacramento area, Dowling was affiliated with the Great Lakes Shakespearean Festival (now Great Lakes Theater Festival) in Cleveland, Ohio. Hanks appeared as Yasha in the Sacramento community theater production of Anton Chekhov’s Cherry Orchard and at Dowling’s invitation spent the summer of 1977 at the Shakespeare Festival in Cleveland as a volunteer intern.

When Hanks returned to Sacramento in the fall of 1977 he became an assistant stage manager for the Civic Theater and quickly lost interest in academics. He returned to Cleveland in the summer of 1978, where he appeared in Two Gentlemen of Verona at the festival and received the Cleveland Drama Critics Award for his effort. Attracted by the smell of the greasepaint, he abandoned school altogether and opted to try his luck as a professional actor. At the end of the festival season, he moved to New York City to embark on a serious acting career.

After a disappointing first season in New York, spent largely in the unemployment office, Hanks summated at the Shakespeare Festival in Cleveland for a third time in 1979. After appearing in Do Me a Favor, he returned to New York where a small movie role materialized in a grade B horror film—He Knows You’re Alone—about a deranged stalker of brides. He came to mainstream notoriety soon afterward in the unlikely television role of Kip Wilson—also known as Buffy—in Bosom Buddies, co-starring Peter Scolari. A weekly comedy series, Bosom Buddies was based on an outlandish situation wherein Hanks and Scolari portrayed two advertising men who dressed up regularly as women in order to rent rooms in a women’s hotel. The series ran from 1980 to 1982, and Hanks emerged from the experience secure in his name and face recognition before the viewing public.

**Movie Stardom**

In 1984 Hanks teamed with actor-turned-director Ron Howard in Splash. A whimsical romantic comedy about a man who meets a mermaid, Splash was a perfect vehicle to movie stardom for Hanks whose boy-next-door image had survived the quirky sitcom role of Buffy. Secure in his appeal as a comedic actor, he was cast in the spoof film Bachelor Party that same year. His 1985 film offerings—Man with One Red Shoe and Volunteers—were less than successful, although he did attract some attention that year in portraying an attorney named Walter Fielding, opposite Shelley Long, in The Money Pit. He appeared in three films in 1986; and in 1987 provided the comedy relief as detective Pep Streebek in Dragnet. The film, a reprise of an old detective series from the early days of television, was a mild success.

Hanks, who subscribes to a classic style of method acting, immerses himself in the experiences and feelings of each character that he portrays. In 1988 he captivated the movie-going public with a charming movie, called Big, in which he depicts a 12-year-old boy in a 30-something body. To prepare for the role Hanks spent much of his time in observing and learning to mimic the mannerisms of his 13-year-old co-star in that movie. Hanks prepared for a subsequent role as a stand-up comic in Punchline by performing several times on-stage at a comedy club in order to comprehend the daily life of a comic.

After two lighter-side films, The ‘Burbs and Turner & Hooch in 1989, and two box office duds in 1990 (Joe Versus the Volcano and Bonfire of the Vanities), Hanks took an overdue sabbatical to spend time with his family. He made a comeback in 1992 with a cameo role in Radio Flyer.

With his professional battery re-charged, he ramped up his output and gained 30 pounds for his next film. In the movie he played a middle-aged alcoholic baseball coach, opposite Geena Davis, Madonna, and Rosie O’Donnell, cast as lady baseball players. The film, called A League of Their Own, was a box office hit. He followed in 1993 with a highly controversial role, as an attorney who becomes stricken with AIDS. For his role as the homosexual Andrew Beckett, Hanks did a great deal of research, talking openly with AIDS patients and with gay men. Under careful medical supervision he lost a large amount of weight so as to
appear gaunt and dying. The movie, called Philadelphia, earned widespread critical acclaim.

Early in 1994 Hanks won an academy award as best actor for his role as Beckett, and that same year he delivered a second successive Oscar-winning performance, as the mentally challenged hero of Forrest Gump. The movie depicts the serendipitous adventures of a simple-minded man named Forrest Gump, who in spite of the mental handicap lives a life that proved to be more eventful and more fulfilling than the lives of many folks with twice his IQ. Hanks successfully brought the fictional character of Gump to life on the silver screen and turned the controversial character into a beloved folk hero.

Behind the Scenes

Hanks by 1995 was earning eight-figure salaries for his films, augmented by a percentage of the box office receipts. That year he starred as the Apollo 13 commander James Lovell, a true-life astronaut who steered an aborted moon mission safely back to earth. The film, called Apollo 13, was directed by Howard.

Among the most powerful films of his career was the critical favorite, Saving Private Ryan, directed by Steven Spielberg and released in 1998. Hanks and seven other actors underwent rigorous boot camp conditions for many days in preparation for their roles as a company of soldiers in World War II. The movie grossed $190 million at the box office, and Hanks was recognized with an Oscar nomination for the effort. Equally compelling that year was Hanks’s portrayal of a uniquely compassionate prison guard in The Green Mile, based on a Stephen King series about a supernaturally endowed inmate on Louisiana’s death row in the 1930s.

Behind the scenes, Hanks contributed his voice to the character of the cowboy Sheriff Woody in a computer animated film called Toy Story in 1995, and to the 1999 sequel, Toy Story 2. He also experimented with production work. He wrote and directed That Thing You Do! and served as executive producer of a 12-part Emmy-winning miniseries for Home Box Office (HBO), called From the Earth to the Moon, in 1998.

Hanks directed the war drama Road to Perdition in 2002 with David Frankel and was involved in several projects in 2002 and 2003. Among them, Lady Killers and Polar Express were scheduled for release in 2004.

Family Ties

In 1977 while a student at CSUS Hanks became close friends with a classmate, Susan Dillingham. An aspiring actress herself, Dillingham went by the stage name of Samantha Lewes. The two were married in 1978. Their son Colin was born in 1978 and a daughter Elizabeth was born in 1981. Sadly the marriage was fragile and the couple divorced in the mid 1980s.

Hanks, fearful of entering into a succession of unstable relationships, went into therapy before encouraging a close relationship with a colleague, Rita Wilson, who had appeared with him in several films. They were married on April 30, 1988. Their first child, Chester, was born in 1990; a second son, Truman Theodore, was born in 1995. Hanks, who spends virtually all of his free time with his family, maintains homes in Los Angeles, Malibu, and New York City.

The family name of Hanks might stimulate interest among history buffs because Hanks, through his father’s family tree, shares a common ancestor with Nancy Hanks, the mother of Abraham Lincoln.

Books


Thomas Harriot

A contemporary of Shakespeare, Elizabeth I, Johannes Kepler, and Galilei Galileo, Thomas Harriot (1560–1621) was an English scientist and mathematician. His principal biographer, J. W. Shirley, was quoted in the website “Thomas Harriot’s manuscripts,” saying that in his time he was “England’s most profound mathematician, most imaginative and methodical experimental scientist, and first of all Englishmen to make a telescope and turn it on the heavens.” He was also an early English explorer of North America. He published very little in his lifetime, and the extensive scientific papers he left at his death suffered loss and then neglect until the twentieth century.

Educated at Oxford

Harriot was born in Oxfordshire, England, in 1560. Nothing is known about his parents except that his father was recorded as a plebeian when Harriot entered the University of Oxford on December 20, 1577. Of Harriot’s early school years a boyhood friend, Tom Buckner, one day wrote, as quoted in Thomas Harriot: Science Pioneer, “Tom Harriot had a far greater gift for language than I had. He enjoyed reading the writings of the ancient Romans, sharpening his language abilities through disputation and debate, and writing poetry in Latin.” Harriot was a good student. At Oxford he attended St. Mary’s Hall with other students from the plebeian class. He became friends with two of his teachers, Richard Hakluyt, a geographer, and Thomas Allen, who had an interest in astronomy and was a suspicious figure to some because of the unusual instruments in his rooms. Harriot continued to do well in his studies and was one of only three in his class to receive a bachelor’s degree in July 1580.
Sponsored by Raleigh

While Harriot was enrolled in St. Mary’s Hall, Walter Raleigh had attended Oxford’s Oriel College, the preserve of the gentry and nobility. Raleigh was already involved in exploration in North America when Harriot graduated. Raleigh and his half-brother Sir Humphrey Gilbert had sailed with 11 ships to the Cape Verde Islands in 1578, and the ships had become badly scattered en route. Raleigh wanted someone to teach reliable navigation techniques to his ship captains. The principal at St. Mary’s recommended Harriot, and Raleigh became Harriot’s first patron. Harriot moved to Raleigh’s London residence, Durham House.

Harriot made several investigations to prepare a course for English navigators. He interviewed ships’ captains at the docks along the Thames River. His friends Allen and Hakluyt from Oxford helped him. He also read John Dee’s translation of Martin Cortes’ Arte de navigation. The result was a textbook he named Arcticon. Only the names of its chapters have survived; some of them were “Some Remembrances of taking the altitude of the Sonne by Astrolabe and Sea Ring,” “How to find the declination of the Sonne for any time of the yeare & any place; by a speciall table called the Sonnes Regiment newly made according to late observations,” and “Effect of longitude on declination.”

Traveled to Virginia

When Raleigh received permission to sail to North America in 1584, Harriot may have accompanied him, but there are no records to confirm it. He is known to have sailed for the Western Hemisphere with Sir Richard Grenville in 1585. En route Harriot made many observations of the sun and stars to track his course, and he also observed a partial solar eclipse. The ship sighted Dominica in the Caribbean, then moved northward. On June 30, 1585, it anchored at Roanoke Island, off Virginia. On shore, Harriot observed the topography, flora, and fauna, making many drawings and maps, and the native people, who spoke a language the English called Algonquian. Harriot worked out a phonetic transcription of the native people’s speech sounds and began to learn the language, which enabled him to converse to some extent with other natives the English encountered. Apparently Harriot favored friendly relations with the native people, but others in the party felt otherwise, and at least one of the native people was killed. At the same time, Sir Francis Drake, patrolling the Florida coast for Spanish treasure ships, the Madre de Deus, not long after the imprisonment. With Raleigh in prison, the ship was being gradually looted. Elizabeth wanted the greater part of its fortune for England’s treasury, so Raleigh and his family were released so that Raleigh could stop the looting. Harriot remained under Raleigh’s patronage in Ireland, avoiding the plague that struck London in 1593.

Harriot Studied Optics, Algebra

In 1595, the Duke of Northumberland, Henry Percy, a great friend of Raleigh’s, became Harriot’s patron and deedsed him property in Durham as well as allowing him use of a house in London. Harriot undertook a study of optics, using part of the house as a laboratory. The studies eventually led to several important discoveries concerning the refraction of light, but Harriot never published his results. He also began to analyze the forces affecting projectiles and commenced various studies in algebra. He and earlier mathematicians may have made several discoveries often credited to Rene Descartes (1596-1650). He wrote Artis Analyticae Praxis ad Aequationes Algebraicas Resolvendas, an algebra text, and left specific instructions for its publication in his will, but knowledgeable mathematicians reportedly think that the work which was eventually published represents Harriot’s efforts poorly. His body of work in algebra is considerable. He advanced the notation system for algebra (although the “greater than” and “less than” symbols that have been credited to him are now thought to have been introduced by the editor of Artis Analyticae Praxis) and did novel work on the theory of equations, including cubic equations and negative and imaginary numbers.

Queen Elizabeth died in March 1603, and James I became king. Raleigh was implicated in a plot against the new king and was arrested and charged with high treason. After a failed suicide attempt, Raleigh was sentenced to death, and Harriot, who had tried to help his former friend and patron, was mentioned in the judgment as “an atheist and an evil influence.” Harriot, apparently shaken, ceased scientific work for about a year. Raleigh’s death sentence was withdrawn, but he remained in the Tower of London. Then Guy Fawkes was arrested on November 4, 1604, for a plot to blow up Parliament. Henry Percy’s grandson was arrested with Fawkes, and Harriot was imprisoned in a place called the Gatehouse on suspicion. Later in November, Percy was imprisoned in the Tower to remain for 16 years.

Security Shaken

Two events made Raleigh’s and Harriot’s lives stressful about this time. First, Raleigh’s political situation became murky when he married Elizabeth Throckmorton, one of Queen Elizabeth’s ladies in waiting, in 1587. He had been a favorite of Elizabeth, and the marriage may have displeased the queen. Second, the queen issued a proclamation on October 18, 1591, attacking Jesuits in England for trying to return the country to Catholicism. Perhaps in retaliation, Jesuit father Robert Parsons attacked Elizabeth’s sometime friend Raleigh, as well as Harriot, accusing them of atheism.

Then in 1592, soon after Raleigh’s son was born, Elizabeth imprisoned Raleigh and his family in the Tower of London. Coincidentally, one of Raleigh’s ships captured a Spanish treasure ship, the Madre de Deus, not long after the imprisonment. With Raleigh in prison, the ship was being gradually looted. Elizabeth wanted the greater part of its fortune for England’s treasury, so Raleigh and his family were released so that Raleigh could stop the looting. Harriot remained under Raleigh’s patronage in Ireland, avoiding the plague that struck London in 1593.

Moons, Sunspots Observed

Harriot was released by the end of 1604 and quickly resumed his study of optics, still under Percy’s generous
patronage. He also visited Percy and Raleigh in the Tower from time to time. Harriot was working out a theory of color, and a correspondence began between him and the German astronomer Johannes Kepler, although nothing memorable seems to have resulted. Harriot went on to observe a comet, later identified as Halley's, on September 17, 1607. With his painstaking observations, later workers were able to compute the comet's orbit. Harriot also was the first in England to use a telescope to observe the heavens. He made sketches of the moon in 1609, then developed lenses of increasing magnification. By April 1611, he had developed a lens with a magnification of 32. Between October 17, 1610, and February 26, 1612, he observed the moons of Jupiter, already discovered by Galileo. While observing Jupiter's moons, he made a discovery of his own: sunspots, which he viewed 199 times between December 8, 1610, and January 18, 1613. These observations allowed him to figure out the sun's period of rotation. After this time, his scientific work dwindled.

Cancer Diagnosed

The cause of Harriot's diminished productivity may have been a cancer discovered on his nose. A doctor he consulted in 1615 made notes in which he called Harriot "a man somewhat melancholy... . . . A cancerous ulcer in the left nostril eats up the septum of his nose and in proportion to its size holds the lips hard and turned upwards... . . . This evil the patient has suffered the last two years," quoted the "Thomas Harriot" website. Harriot lost several friends during this time, and on October 29, 1618, he witnessed the public execution of his friend Raleigh.

Three days before Harriot died, he made his will. His mind was clear. He willed Percy charts and maps and his choice of books and papers. He remembered friends, servants, and Tom Buckner, a childhood friend with whom he maintained contact all his life and who had accompanied him on Grenville's trip to America. In the will, Harriot mentioned a sister, whose son he left fifty pounds, and a cousin. Most evidence suggests they were his only family when he died; it seems he never married. He remembered his servants generously, as well as Tom Buckner's wife (in whose house he died) and the Buckners' son.

Harriot died July 1 or 2 (accounts vary), 1621, in London and was buried in Saint Christopher's Parish Church, which burned in the fire of London in 1666. According to Thomas Harriot: Science Pioneer, after the fire an inscription was incorporated in a plaque in the Bank of England of London which reads, Harriot "cultivated all the sciences And excelled in all." The plaque calls him "A most studious searcher after truth." Harriot was several times accused of atheism during his lifetime, but the plaque adds that he was "a most devout worshiper of the Triune God."

Papers Rediscovered

Harriot's story did not end with his death. What some writers describe as his "thousands upon thousands of sheets of mathematics and of scientific observations" appeared to be lost until 1784, when they were found in Henry Percy's country estate by one of Percy's descendants. She gave them to Franz Xaver Zach, her husband's son's tutor. Zach eventually put some of the papers in the hands of the Oxford University Press, but much work was required to prepare them for publication, and it has never been done. Scholars have begun to study them, and an appreciation of Harriot's contribution began to grow in the second half of the twentieth century. Today scholars, sometimes referred to as "Harrioteers," study the details of his life and work to understand both the man and the science of his time.

Books


Online


Dorothy Irene Height

American social activist Dorothy Height (born 1912) was an advocate of women's rights and civil rights. She shared the platform with the Martin Luther King Jr. when he delivered his "I Have a Dream" speech in 1963. The recipient of more than 50 awards from local, state, and national organizations, Height received the Presidential Medal of Freedom, the nation's highest civilian honor, in 1994.

Early Years

Dorothy Irene Height was born in Richmond, Virginia, on March 24, 1912. She was the daughter of James Edward Height, a building contractor, and Fannie Burroughs Height, a nurse. When Dorothy Height was very young, the family moved to Rankin, Pennsylvania, not far from Pittsburgh, where she attended integrated schools. Although she taught Bible stories to white children at her church, she was hurt at the age of nine when her best friend, a white girl, told her that she could not play with her any longer because Height was black.

As a high school student, Height made a speech about slavery amendments to the U.S. Constitution that won her a scholarship to the college of her choice. Although she was accepted at Barnard College in New York City, when she showed up to enroll there, she was told the college's quota for blacks had been filled. Instead, she enrolled in New York University, where she earned a bachelor's degree in social sciences and a master's degree in educational psychology.
As a young woman, Height made time to join church-sponsored and civic groups. She continued her voluntary service in these organizations even after she graduated from New York University in 1932.

Welfare Caseworker

Following Height's graduation, she became a welfare caseworker. As an employee of the New York Welfare Department, Height helped the city deal with the 1935 Harlem riots. She emerged as one of the leaders in the National Youth Movement during President Franklin Roosevelt's New Deal years.

Height also volunteered in Christian activist groups. In 1937, she became an assistant director of the Harlem YWCA. She developed leadership training programs for volunteers and staff and programs promoting interracial and ecumenical education. Height worked with the national YWCA from 1944 until 1977. She founded the YWCA's Center for Racial Justice in 1965 and directed it for 12 years.

Height caught the attention of U.S. government leaders and human rights activists as a representative to international YWCA meetings. In 1966, she served on the council to the White House conference “To Fulfill These Rights.” Height also worked with Delta Sigma Theta sorority, serving as its national president from 1946 to 1957. She never married.

Headed NCNW

In 1937, while escorting First Lady Eleanor Roosevelt to a National Council of Negro Women (NCNW) meeting, Height met Mary McLeod Bethune, the NCNW's founder. Bethune asked Height to help in promoting the NCNW's agenda, which included pursuit of full and equal employment and educational opportunities for women. Height later said she learned “the value of collaboration and of building political coalitions” in NCNW.

Height assumed leadership of the NCNW in 1957 and led the organization for 41 years until she became president emerita in 1998. By then, the National Council of Negro Women had become a federation of 250 community organizations. During Height's tenure, she fought for the rights of black women and sought ways to strengthen black families. Under Height, the organization developed national and community programs aimed at combating problems such as teenage pregnancy and poor nutrition in rural communities. In 1975, Height started the only African American private voluntary organization working in Africa, building on the earlier achievements of NCNW's programs in other parts of the world.

In 2002, in honor of Height's ninetieth birthday, a gathering of friends that included TV star Oprah Winfrey, boxing promoter Don King, author Maya Angelou, the Reverend Al Sharpton, and former Washington D.C. mayor Marion Barry pledged $5 million to pay off the mortgage of the NCNW building on Washington's Pennsylvania Avenue. Height had been struggling for years to retire the debt.

Height, who was never an employee of NCNW, remained a strong advocate of volunteer work throughout her career. She said that people should realize that they can do more by working together than they can on their own.

Civil Rights Activist

While working with the NCNW, Height also worked for civil rights. In 1936 in New York, she participated in a protest against lynchings. She advocated an end to segregation in the military, a fairer legal system, and an end to racial restrictions on access to public transportation. During the 1950s, she worked on voter registration drives in the South.

By the 1960s, Height was at the forefront of the civil rights movement. She worked closely with the movement's major leaders, including King, Roy Wilkins, Whitney Young, and A. Philip Randolph, and she participated in nearly all of the major civil and human rights events of the era.

In 1964, Height initiated the NCNW’s “Wednesdays in Mississippi” program, in which women activists from the North flew south to spend Wednesdays in small towns, meeting with black women. One such meeting, held in a church in Hattiesburg, Mississippi, was nearly the scene of tragedy after someone threw a Molotov cocktail through the church window. Fortunately, the bomb did not ignite.

During Height's years as a civil rights activist, she never acquired a reputation as a radical or militant. Height received little attention for her work, perhaps because the movement was dominated by men. But Height told People in 1998, “If you worry about who is going to get credit, you don’t get much work done.” James Farmer, a former leader
of the Congress for Racial Equality, credited Height with bringing the women’s movement into the civil rights struggle.

**New Directions**

Following major civil rights victories in the 1960s, Height supported initiatives aimed at eliminating poverty among southern blacks, such as home ownership programs and child care centers. There was even a program aimed at giving poor families a pig. As Height explained to *People* in 1998, “I thought if they had a pig in their backyard, no one could push them around.”

In the 1980s and 1990s, the NCNW under Height’s direction took on AIDS education and put in place a program to celebrate traditional African American values. In 1986, Height inaugurated the Black Family Reunion Celebration to reinforce the traditional strengths and values of the African American family. In the late 1990s, Height championed the confirmation of Alexis Herman, the first black woman to head the U.S. Department of Labor.

In 2001, Height told *Black Issues in Higher Education* that sit-ins and protest marches had been replaced by lobbying for legislation. Instead of desegregation and voting rights, the issues had become economic opportunity, educational equality, and an end to racial profiling. If Height had any regrets, one was that the righteous indignation that had spurred the civil rights movement was lacking in the new century. She asked where the country would be if the “vigor placed in fighting slavery and in the women’s movement had kept pace.”

Height was inducted into the National Women’s Hall of Fame in 1993. She received more than 20 honorary degrees, including degrees from Harvard and Princeton Universities. In 1998, she told *People*, “I want to be remembered as someone who used herself and anything she could touch to work for justice and freedom. . . . I want to be remembered as one who tried.”

**Periodicals**

*Richmond Times-Dispatch*, February 1, 2002.

**Online**


---

**Carolina Herrera**

Venezuelan fashion designer Carolina Herrera (born 1939) ran a thriving fashion empire centered around her designer clothing line that consistently won praise for its elegant, feminine lines after its launch in 1980. The longtime New Yorker was regularly hailed in the media as one of the city’s most elegant women and was well-respected inside its fashion industry for her gracious manner. “In a world in which wearing borrowed haute couture on the red carpet signifies great style and erecting an East Hampton faux chateau verifies taste,” observed Hal Rubenstein in a 2003 *In Style* profile, “Herrera is unassailable proof that class and poise depend less on what you have on—or what you move into—than on how you behave.”

**Led a Charmed Life**

Herrera is the scion of an old South American family. She “was hardly bred for this sort of business success,” noted WWD writer Lorna Koski in 1991. “She was born, in fact, on another, much more languid planet, the lost world of the traditional Latin American
aristocracy.” Born Maria Carolina Josefina Pacanins y Nino in Venezuela’s capital city of Caracas on January 8, 1939, she was one of four daughters in a family whose roots on the continent stretched back to the 1500s. Her father, an aviation pioneer, served as governor of Caracas and was twice the country’s foreign affairs minister. Herrera’s mother and grandmother were chic women who regularly traveled to Paris to have their clothes made at the great design houses of Balenciaga and Lanvin.

Herrera’s early life was a charmed one, with a governess on hand and luxurious surroundings. Still, her parents were strict with their children, as she recalled in the interview with Koski: “I had three sisters and I grew up in a very organized house, a very disciplined house. There was a right time for having breakfast, a right way of doing everything.” Herrera sewed clothes for her dolls, but as she grew older became less interested in needlework; instead she became a skilled equestrienne and read avidly. “My mother believed you had to be cultivated,” Herrera told Town & Country writer Annette Tapert in 1997. “Having an inner life was very important to her. She told her four daughters, ‘Beauty is the first thing to go. If you don’t have anything inside you, you are going to be so lonely.’”

Endured Failed Marriage

Herrera was married at the age of 18 to a young man from an affluent Venezuelan family. With him she had two daughters, but the marriage ended after less than a decade, as Herrera became the first person in her family ever to divorce. She moved back into her parents’ home with her little girls and for a time worked in Caracas as a publicist for Emilio Pucci, the mod Italian designer. Soon she renewed an acquaintance with Reinaldo Herrera, whom she had known since she was a child. He also hailed from a well-to-do Venezuelan family, and after their 1968 marriage the couple embarked upon a romantic, jet-set lifestyle. They traveled in social circles that included Princess Margaret of Great Britain and New York artist Andy Warhol. When in Caracas, they lived with their two daughters and her two daughters from her first marriage at the 65-room Herrera family estate, La Vega, built in 1590 and thought to be the oldest continually inhabited house in the Western Hemisphere.

In her thirties, Herrera began to appear regularly on the International Best Dressed lists, and in 1980 she and her husband moved to New York with the children. Nearing 40, she considered trying some sort of fashion-related business venture and thought about fabric design. A longtime friend, fashion publicist Count Rudi Crespi, suggested that she do an entire line of clothing instead. Former magazine editor and style icon Diana Vreeland enthusiastically agreed. Others, including Herrera’s husband and mother-in-law, were more skeptical. Herrera had little business sense and had collected paychecks only during her stint at Pucci.

Launched Company in Borrowed Digs

In the fall of 1980, Herrera brought to New York about 20 dresses her dressmaker had made for her in Caracas. She borrowed the Park Avenue apartment of an acquaintance and invited her friends and acquaintances to see them. Soon, buyers for some of New York’s upscale fashion retailers arrived and wanted to take the entire line, but Herrera had no company and no way of putting a production deal together. Back in Caracas, she met publishing tycoon Armando de Armas, who offered to back her, and within a few months a design atelier and showroom, Carolina Herrera Ltd., opened on New York’s Seventh Avenue in the fashion industry’s heart. Her first full collection was shown at New York’s Metropolitan Club in April 1981.

Herrera’s business started small, with just a dozen employees, but soon grew rapidly. The socialites who knew her became some of her first devoted customers, and women like cosmetics tycoon Estee Lauder and former First Lady Jacqueline Kennedy Onassis became clients. The fashion trade journals were not always complimentary, however. “I had bad reviews at the beginning,” Herrera recalled in the interview with Tapert for Town & Country. “And when you haven’t been involved in this world, they really affect you. But that was good—you read the reviews and see what they found wrong and you think, ‘They were right.’”

Kennedy Wedding Dress a Hit

Some of the hallmarks of Herrera’s clothing found their way into the more mainstream fashions of the 1980s. She was one of the first to use padded shoulders, believing that broader shoulders made a woman’s waist appear smaller, and she loved elaborate sleeves as well. When she began designing in the early 1980s, Herrera told National Review interviewers John O. Sullivan and John Simon, “the whole fashion world was going mad on layer after layer of very loose skirts and free blouses—and no shapes. I came out with a collection that was all fitted.” Her big sleeves were novel for the day, and Herrera recalled that “Everyone asked me: ‘Why big sleeves?’ I replied: ‘Well, they are not that new. They have been a fashion feature from Elizabethan times, or even the Middle Ages, up to the Gibson Girls.’ All I did was to adapt them to modern times. They were successful because women liked these big sleeves framing their faces.”

Herrera’s company enjoyed even stronger sales after she designed the wedding dress for Caroline Kennedy in 1986. It made her a household name overnight across North America, and the ultra-feminine gown was quickly copied. Soon Herrera’s business expanded to include not just her “pret-a-porte” or designer line and the made-to-order items for women like Onassis, but bridal wear and a lower-priced line named CH. In 1988 she launched a fragrance line with an eponymous, jasmine-heavy scent based on the memory of a jasmine bush that bloomed outside her bedroom in Caracas when she was a teenager. Lucrative licensing agreements for accessories, costume jewelry, and eyewear boosted the fortunes of her company even further. By 1990, after a decade in business, its wholesale figures reached $20 million. She celebrated by opening a new, luxurious showroom on Seventh Avenue.
Maintained Focus on Elegance

As the elaborately overdressed mood of the 1980s gave way to new styles in the next decade, Herrera’s designs continued to maintain a devout clientele and attract new wearers. She admitted that the fashion industry was difficult, noting that the modern woman often had more pressing concerns than hemlines. “Fashion in the past meant that you had to have the guts to wear something different from others—to express your individual personality—but within the constraints set by formal standards of elegance and style,” she mused in the National Review interview. “Today, people want to be free to wear what they like, in any combination they like, to be confined by no rules, and to set their own standards—yet they all end up looking exactly the same.”

Herrera often began a collection by assembling luxurious fabrics and draping them over mannequins. She was frank about her abilities as a seamstress. “I have an eye for proportion, which is always the key to looking great, for mixing fabrics, and for shape,” she said in an In Style interview with Rubenstein from 2000. “Don’t ask me to cut or sew. I can’t do that. But I know exactly how a shoulder should lie.” A team of assistants then executed her ideas into sketches that served as the basis for a more formal process of production. “I could tell you that I’m inspired by painters or some wonderful garden or music but that all isn’t true. . . . I get my inspiration from everyday life, from looking at women around me,” she told WWD writer Irene Daria in 1989. She said that her own lifestyle and her regular visits to upscale retailers in major American cities to present her new lines helped her creations as well. “By traveling around you get to know your customer and what they need but you have to have your own point of view,” she said in the same WWD interview. “The more you listen the more confused you get. You can’t design to please the press and to be in fashion.”

Expanded Empire into Europe

Herrera contracted with Puig, a Spanish cosmetics company, to produce her fragrance line, which became a tremendous success; she even created a top-selling men’s scent, Herrera for Men, in 1991, and regularly added new women’s products to the line. Her empire continued to expand, and in 1994 the partnership with Armas ended when he sold his share to Puig. In 2000, Herrera opened her first store, located at Madison Avenue and 75th Street in Manhattan, and looked forward to expanding her business further into Europe. Within two years, she had opened her first collection boutique outside of New York, a boîte located in Madrid’s upscale Salamanca district.

Herrera’s daughters, now grown, began families of her own and made her a grandmother several times over. One of them, Carolina Adriana, worked at her mother’s company. Husband Reinaldo served as the special projects editor for Vanity Fair magazine. An apartment on New York’s Upper East Side was their home base, but they returned often to La Vega. Herrera was adamant that running a highly successful company such as her own could be done during a normal work week, and she claimed never to work past 5 p.m. “The moment I leave my office I draw a curtain on my work,” she told In Style’s Rubenstein. “Because you know what is really boring? When you work and work and then work some more, and you don’t realize it, but work is all you talk about all the time. Many designers have that problem. Work should be an important part of your life. But for it to be your life? That is very sad.”

Books


Periodicals

In Style, June 1, 2000; February 1, 2003.
W, October 2002.

Hiawatha

The Native American honored as a leader of the Iroquois nation in Henry Wadsworth Longfellow’s “The Song of Hiawatha” is not an actual person, although Hiawatha (c. 1400) has entered American legend as such. Although the legendary Hiawatha is usually cited as a member of the Mohawk tribe, some Iroquois traditions hold that he belonged to the Onondaga tribe. Given the uncertainty about his tribal affiliation, it has been suggested that the legendary Hiawatha is in fact a composite of several historical personages. The founding of the confederacy and the time of Hiawatha have been assigned to sometime between the late 14th to the early 17th century.

Legend of the Iroquois Confederacy

The Mohawk people once inhabited what is now New York state. They were a fierce, warlike tribe whose members frequently sought to subdue neighboring tribes by attacking them. According to a traditional Iroquois legend recounted in Arthur C. Parker’s Seneca Myths and Folk Tales, sometime after 1390 a Mohawk chief named Dekanawida recognized the hopelessness of his tribe’s constant aggressions toward their neighbors. When his tribal council gathered Dekanawida spoke out against these incessant battles, pointing out that all the Mohawk warriors would eventually lose their lives if such warfare continued. Eventually frustrated by the council’s lack of response to his
request, Dekanawida left his tribe and journeyed to the west to escape the fighting. Reaching the shore of a lake, he paused to rest.

As he reflected, Dekanawida heard the paddling of a canoe in the lake. Looking up, he saw a man fishing for periwinkle shells by dipping his basket into the shallow water of the lake. Paddling to shore with a canoe full of quahog or round clam shells, the canoeist built a fire and proceeded to shape the shells into wampum beads. Varying in color from white to purple, these half-inch-long wampum bead were strung in patterns on elm fiber or sinew thongs and worn as belts. As he finished each belt, the canoeist touched the shells and spoke.

After the man had made the last of his wampum belts, Dekanawida announced his own presence, and the canoeist introduced himself as Hiawatha. Dekanawida asked Hiawatha about the wampum belts, and the canoeist explained that they represented the rules of life and good government. The white shells signify truth, peace, and good will, he explained, while the black shells stand for hatred, war, and an evil heart. Hiawatha went on to explain that the string in which black shells alternate with white indicates that peace should exist between tribes, while the string with white on the end and black in the middle means that wars must end and peace should be declared.

Dekanawida recognized the wisdom in Hiawatha's philosophy and thought his Mohawk kinsmen could benefit from it. Tribes speaking the same language should stop fighting each other, he realized, and instead unite against their common enemies. Hiawatha explained to Dekanawida that he had tried to share his philosophy with Chief Tadadaho of the Onondaga tribe, but that Tadadaho had forced him to leave. That was why he now professed his laws in seclusion, at the lake where Dekanawida now found him. The bands of wampum he created would one day serve to remind future generations of Hiawatha's laws and their meaning.

Dekanawida asked Hiawatha to return with him to his Mohawk village, and the two traveled east. After reaching his village, Dekanawida called a tribal council to listen to Hiawatha. The Mohawks were impressed with Hiawatha's philosophy and readily agreed to live by them. Dekanawida and Hiawatha next traveled to the neighboring Oneida and Cayuga tribes, and they too agreed to be bound by Hiawatha's guiding rules. Finally the two men journeyed to the Onadaga and confronted Chief Tadadaho. Upon learning that three of the Iroquois nations had already agreed to abide by Hiawatha's philosophy Tadadaho fled into the woods. Although the evil spirits possessing Tadadaho hung from his head as serpents, Dekanawida and Hiawatha bravely followed. Hiawatha assured Tadadaho he would be allowed to be the head chief of the Iroquois Confederacy if he promised to govern in accord with their philosophy of peace, at which Tadadaho relented and joined the confederation. Dekanawida and Hiawatha also visited the Seneca and other tribes to the west, but only the Seneca agreed to join the Iroquois Confederacy.

Iroquois Longhouse

Dekanawida built the Iroquois Confederacy's Longhouse at Albany, New York, at the mouth of a stream emptying into the Hudson River. The longhouse is symbolic of the political structure of the confederacy. A long, narrow dwelling of over 10 feet wide and up to 250 feet long, it housed many families. At both ends were doors, while shelves for sleeping or storage ran along each side. Families in the longhouse lived in segmented units, and adorning families shared a fire in the center aisle. Each nation in the confederacy was represented symbolically: the Mohawks, who lived furthest to the east, were portrayed as keepers of the eastern door; the Seneca, who lived to the west, kept the western door; the Onondaga, who lived in the middle, became the keepers of the central meeting fire. As keepers of the longhouse doors, the Seneca and Mohawk were expected to watch for potential danger on their fronts.

Dekanawida was given the honorary title "Pine Tree" because, according to tradition, he had a dream in which an evergreen tree grew so tall that it reached the heavens. The five supporting roots of the tree represented the five members of the confederacy. Another tradition holds that when the confederacy was founded a pine tree was uprooted and tomahawks, bows and arrows, armor, shields, and clubs were thrown into the hole where it had stood. In honor of Pine Tree, an Iroquois warrior who demonstrated particular courage became a member of the Pine Tree Society.

The Historical Confederacy

Also known as the League of the Ho-de-no-sau-nee, the Iroquois Confederacy was composed of the Mohawk, Onondaga, Seneca, Oneida, and the Cayuga tribes. Scholars trace its origins to sometime between 1400 and 1600, when the tribes came together primarily as a means of preserving peace. The Confederacy consisted of a grand council of chiefs or sachems made up 9 Mohawk chiefs, 8 Oneida chiefs, 14 Onondaga chiefs, 10 Cayuga chiefs, and 8 Seneca chiefs; the Tuscarora nation, which would not join the confederacy until 1717, would be represented by the Oneida. All decisions were required to be unanimous, and if a unanimous decision could not be reached nations were allowed to act on their own. The confederacy existed only to mediate disputes among tribes, not within them. It had no police powers, so could not enforce its decisions, and had no power to tax its members. The position of chief was hereditary, with appointments made for life by the women in the matriarchal Iroquois society. If the chief performed less than satisfactorily, the individual was given three chances to reform before being removed from office.

The Confederacy's Great Law set out rules for settling blood feuds. Setting the value of a human life at ten strings of wampum, the confederacy compensated a bereaved family in the case of murder with the price of its lost member as well as the price for the murderer, who was required to forfeit his of her life to the bereaved family. The Great Law had the desirable effect of bringing to a close many long-standing feuds between families.

By 1500, at which time the Iroquois Confederacy was functioning, French traders had made their way into the St.
Lawrence River valley. The confederacy doubtless had concerns about the French presence among the five nations. Now joined together, the united tribes were able to present a united defense against this new threat, as well as against hostile and longstanding threats such as the Algonquians. Their unity also guarded them against the risk of famine and other natural disasters.

Hiawatha's Legacy

Unfortunately, the Confederacy did not bring peace to the Iroquois and their neighbors. The Algonquian and other hostile tribes to the south, after being repeatedly repulsed and then attacked by the five united Iroquois nations, were eventually forced to ally themselves with European colonists. The Confederacy meanwhile sought to bring other tribes within its structure.

Following a French attack on Confederate villages during the French and Indian War, the Iroquois joined with the British to help drive the French from North America. However, they failed to unite against the Americans following the Revolutionary War that followed, and by 1851 the Iroquois confederacy was all but obsolete. Even so, the tradition of the tribal confederacy greatly impressed subsequent historians, some viewing it as a forerunner of the U.S. Constitution. Some scholars even speculated that the tribal Confederacy would have eventually dominated the Atlantic coast tribes had it not met resistance from European-born whites.

The Role of Wampum

As one of the founding chiefs, Hiawatha was assigned the position of Keeper of the Wampum. In this capacity he looked after the wampum belts with patterns representing the Great Law and the confederacy as well as those patterned in ways assigned by the council to remind the Iroquois of treaties, important personages, and other noteworthy things. Wampum belts were also carried to various villages to announce a decision reached by the Grand Council of Chiefs. When a particular wampum belt lost its significance, it could be assigned a new meaning. Among the Iroquois, wampum did not serve as a currency of exchange.

The traditions established by Hiawatha continue to be honored by the Iroquois into the 21st century. When a new leader is selected to head the chiefs of the Grand Council he takes the name Tadadaho, and the chief who takes the position of Keeper of the Wampum assumes the name Hiawatha. Observance of this tradition reminds members of the Confederacy of its origins. The original wampum belt representing Hiawatha was removed from the tribe but was eventually returned to the Onondaga by the New York State Museum in Albany.

Longfellow's "Hiawatha"

Several centuries later, in 1855, poet Henry Wordsworth Longfellow muddied the waters of history when he published "The Song of Hiawatha." In fact, the hero of Longfellow's poem is not the founder of the Iroquois nation at all, but rather an Algonquian cultural hero named Nanabozho. Apparently deciding that the name Hiawatha had a more musical ring to it than Nanabozho, Longfellow decided to assign the Algonquian hero Hiawatha's name. The unplanned result created a century and a half of historical confusion before the traditions of Native Americans came under renewed scrutiny by revisionist historians late in the 20th century.

Books

Page, Thomas, The Civilization of the American Indians, Mi
ervna, 1986.
Parker, Arthur C., Seneca Myths and Folk Tales, University of Nebraska Press, 1989.

Online


David Da-I Ho

Molecular biologist David Da-I Ho (born 1952) has dedicated his career to identifying a cure for acquired immune deficiency syndrome (AIDS). His greatest contribution to the worldwide battle against AIDS came in 1996 when he combined state-of-the-art AIDS medications in a way that stopped the progression of the human immunodeficiency virus (HIV), which leads to the deadly AIDS condition.

IDS researcher David Ho was the fourth scientist to identify the cause of AIDS as a virus that attacks the body’s immune system. Now chief executive officer and scientific director of the Aaron Diamond AIDS Research Center (ADARC), Ho has been at the forefront of the worldwide battle against the AIDS epidemic and remains hopeful that HIV can be eradicated.

A Strong Work Ethic

Ho was born on November 3, 1952, in Taichung, a small town in Taiwan where transportation was by means of bicycle and the only form of communications technology was a small radio. His parents, Paul and Sonia Ho, were poor but proud; they lived in a small four-room house bordering a ditch that served as an outdoor toilet. Ho’s father, an engineer, had high hopes for his family. Reflecting Paul Ho’s optimism, he named his first child Da-I, meaning “Great One,” then boarded a freighter for the United States in 1956. Fluent in English, he enrolled in an advanced engineering degree program at the University of Southern California, Los Angeles (UCLA), determined to make a better life for his growing family. It would be nine years before
Within six months he had mastered the English language enough to break down his social barriers, and his grades shot up. A daily dose of television also aided in his eventual fluency in spoken English, and the game of basketball provided him with friends. By the end of high school, Ho’s transcript reflected his hard work, and the decision to go to college became clear.

Deciding to go into physics, Ho applied to the best schools and ultimately enrolled at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology (MIT). Unhappy on the east coast being so far from home, he returned to California to finish his bachelor of science degree and graduated summa cum laude from the California Institute of Technology in 1974. Ho was fascinated by the ongoing advances in the area of molecular biology and the cutting-edge technology involved in gene splicing. This fascination prompted him to make a second trip east and earn a medical degree from the Harvard-MIT Division of Health Science and Technology in 1978.

A Series of Mysterious Deaths

In 1981 Ho became a resident in internal medicine at UCLA’s Cedars-Sinai Medical Center and advanced to chief resident the following year. He was concerned by the large number of homosexual men who exhibited the same unusual symptoms. Their immune systems were seemingly inoperable; infections that would otherwise be easily overcome such as pneumonia and brain infection (toxoplasmosis) were suddenly proving fatal. Diagnoses ranged all over the map, from allergies to substance abuse to sexually transmitted diseases. Some researchers suspected that it was more likely a parasitic, bacterial, or viral infection that destroyed the body’s immune system, and Ho was among them. He decided to make the cause of these deaths his focus. When that cause was eventually determined, it was found to be AIDS.

When the AIDS epidemic became understood in the late 1970s, it drew the best minds from the country’s finest research hospitals, both bacteriologists and virologists. Ho worked first from UCLA, moving his research into the existence of a possible virus to Massachusetts General Hospital’s infectious diseases unit in 1982, where he worked alongside fellow virologist Martin Hirsch. Ho was the fourth researcher to identify HIV; Paris-based researcher Luc Montagnier of the Pasteur Institute was the first to isolate the retrovirus, followed by American scientist Robert C. Gallo of the National Cancer Institute and Jay Levy of the University of California’s San Francisco Medical Center.

Ho relocated to Cambridge, Massachusetts, from 1982 to 1985 to serve as a Harvard University research fellow in medicine before returning to UCLA in 1986. With the HIV virus now isolated, he was able to provide others colleagues in the battle against AIDS with much-needed information about the disease, including its neurological complications. “He was the first to show that it grows in long-lived immune cells called macrophages,” a Time reporter explained, “and was among the first to isolate it in the nervous system and semen.” Ho was also able to subdue a public scare by verifying the fact that there not sufficient HIV virus in human
saliva to transmit AIDS on drinking glasses or eating utensils or while kissing. Other scientists also added pieces to the AIDS puzzle, and within a few years researchers had discovered that the virus destroys the immune system by entering T-cells, cells that help keep disease from taking hold by attaching and unlocking the CD4 receptor proteins on the cells’ surface.

Research Setbacks Reoriented Search for a Cure

AIDS researchers believed that injecting AIDS patients with massive doses of CD4 protein could intercept the virus and prevent it from attaching to those CD4 receptor proteins located on the surface of T-cells. Ho and Robert Schooley of the University of Colorado Medical Center in Denver tested soluble CD4 in over 20 AIDS patients, but the results were disappointing; some HIV strains, termed “wild viruses,” are able to distinguish the real CD4 proteins from the CD4 decoy particles.

Frustrated at this failed effort to stop HIV’s rampage, Ho decided to start at the beginning and study the onset of the virus. Using as subjects four homosexual men who displayed the flu-like symptoms of an early HIV infection, he discovered through research that millions of infected particles are present in a patient’s blood stream, even at the early stage of the disease. In fact, the level of virus particles remains a high constant during the course of the disease, resulting in its rapid spread. Ho’s results mirrored those of fellow researcher Dr. Robert W. Coombs, affiliated with the University of Washington School of Medicine, in proving that the virus directly damages the immune system and actively reproduces even in early stages and does not at first lie dormant as was previously believed.

In addition to his research, Ho established a teaching career, beginning as assistant professor in 1986 and rising to the post of associate professor of medicine at the UCLA Medical School three years later. In 1990 he was named chief executive officer and scientific director of the new Aaron Diamond AIDS Research Center (ADARC), the largest privately funded AIDS research center in the world, established by philanthropist Irene Diamond and based in east Manhattan, New York. He left UCLA and relocated his career as an educator at New York University, becoming professor of medicine and microbiology at the university’s medical school and co-director of its Center for AIDS Research. In 1996 he moved to the Rockefeller University and a new professorship. Despite the fact that his work had increasingly taken him away from the “front line” of AIDS, the clinics, the emergency rooms, the hospitals, Ho remained dedicated to fighting the disease on a personal level. As he told Judy Woodruff in an interview with CNN: “I think everybody who’s involved in patient care in the AIDS field has been personally affected in many different ways. We’ve seen too many tragedies, too many deaths, due to this virus. There’s no question that myself and all of my colleagues who have cared for AIDS patients have been touched in a very deeply emotional way.”

Attracting many top-notch AIDS researchers from around the world, ADARC quickly became a heavy hitter in the battle against AIDS. In addition to testing a wide variety of AIDS treatments, including herbal remedies used by AIDS patients, Ho and his team continued to focus on ways the virus might be contained and worked closely with the Centers for Disease Control in tracking the spread of AIDS. Through work at ADARC, Ho revealed that the presence of white blood cells, a byproduct of a functioning immune system in HIV patients shows that the immune system responds in combating the virus early on. Then why does the virus level in AIDS patients become so high so quickly? One possibility, Ho reasoned, was that in the earliest stages of the virus the immune system sets to work killing off viral particles; because the HIV virus replicates immediately upon infection, the disease progresses rapidly, causing the overtaxed immune system to quickly give out and the production of virus particles is then allowed to continue unabated.

“Cocktail” Therapy Proves Effective

In 1994 those battling AIDS were handed a new weapon in the form of non-nucleoside protease inhibitors, protease being an enzyme component of HIV that breaks down the proteins in the virus so that an infectious particle is formed. Developed by drug researchers, protease inhibitors stop the breakdown, bringing to a halt the replication of HIV unlike AZT, the first drug to show effectiveness, which only slows the spread of the virus. Within the year Ho and his team at ADARC had devised an experiment utilizing protease inhibitors and two other drugs, reverse transcriptase inhibitors, administering these to patients in the early stages of the disease in a “cocktail.” The results were dramatic and were quickly disseminated around the world: through combination therapy Ho had halted the AIDS virus in its tracks. Even better, he showed that once the HIV is halted, the body’s immune system is able to reduce viral particles to undetectable levels. And Ho’s use of a combination of drugs reduces the chances that virus particles will mutate and become resistant to the drug therapy.

While many scientists have been quick to point out that Ho’s drug treatment is not a cure for AIDS as it does not restore the health of organs already damaged, there is no sense of how long its positive effects will last. There is the chance that the virus may remain dormant in certain body organs, but the treatments ability to stop the advancement of HIV was the first positive news for those infected with the disease. It has also provided other researchers using techniques such as X-ray crystallography with information useful for continued work. Meanwhile, researchers have become split in their goals: some, like Ho, believe that HIV can be eradicated through the use of antiviral drug therapies, while others hope only to control the epidemic. As Ho noted to Woodruff, “We, basically, have, for the first time, staggered the virus, and the new optimism comes from the fact that we now realize maybe, just maybe, this virus is not as invincible as we have previously thought. . . . This is just a beginning of this battle, and I think we have taken the first step successfully.” Overall, Ho maintains, although he continues to refine and improve the effectiveness of his protease inhibitor “cocktail,” combination drug therapy is effective only in individual cases in individuals with access to physicians and expensive medicines. In order to protect
the world population, the true work is in the area of AIDS prevention: vaccines and education.

Ho continues his work at ADARC, where in 2002 he and his staff of over 100 were investigating a group of antiviral proteins called alpha-defensins that seem to help some individuals remain resistant to HIV infection. He also continues in his role as an educator. In addition to serving in an advisory capacity to such organizations as the scientific advisory board of the National Cancer Institute and the American Foundation for AIDS Research, he continues to author or coauthor scientific articles in journals such as *Nature* and the *New England Journal of Medicine*. For his accomplishments in the area of AIDS research, Ho was named 1996 Man of the Year by *Time* magazine and has been honored for his work in other ways. Among his scientific prizes are the Scientific Award of the Chinese-American Medical Society, the Ernst Jung Prize in Medicine, New York City Mayor’s Award for Excellence in Science and Technology, the Squibb Award, and a Presidential Citizen’s Medal. Making his residence in Chappaqua, New York, Ho is married to artist Susan Kuo, with whom he has three children: Kathryn, Jaclyn, and Jonathan. He is a member of the Committee of One Hundred, a Chinese American leadership organization, in addition to several scientific groups. Interestingly, despite his high professional profile, his command of the English language, his role as director of a U.S. corporation, and his successful assimilation into U.S. culture, Ho still performs his mathematical calculations in Chinese.

Books


Periodicals

*Rolling Stone*, March 6, 1997; April 29, 1999.

Online


Malvina Cornell Hoffman

One of America’s foremost sculptors, Malvina Cornell Hoffman (1885–1966) studied with the great French sculptor Auguste Rodin from 1910 until his death in 1917 and is recognized by some as “America’s Rodin.” Hoffman is perhaps best known for her monumental bronze series, “The Races of

Mankind,” commissioned in 1930 by Chicago’s Field Museum of Natural History. Hoffman first won acclaim for her bronze sculpture of Russian dancers Anna Pavlova and Mikhail Mordkin and also studied under two other sculptors—Gutzon Borgium of Mount Rushmore fame and Herbert Adams.

Hoffman’s commission from the Field Museum sent the sculptor on a round-the-world odyssey that lasted for more than eight months. During her global journey, Hoffman photographed and sketched hundreds of people of different racial and ethnic groups and collected massive amounts of anthropological data. In the end she produced a total of 104 monumental bronze figures, which were first exhibited in 1932 in Paris. The sculptures were formally unveiled to the American public at the opening of the Field Museum’s Hall of Man on June 6, 1933.

Showed Early Interest in Art

Hoffman was born in New York City on June 15, 1885, the youngest child of British-born pianist Richard Hoffman and Fidelia Lamson Hoffman. Her father, born in Manchester, England, came to the United States in 1847 at the age of 16. Shortly after his arrival he played for the New York Philharmonic Society. Three years later he was hired by P.T. Barnum as an accompanist for Jenny Lind, the so-called Swedish Nightingale, on her first American tour. When he was 22, he became soloist for the New York Philharmonic, a
Hoffman organized a series of concerts for the benefit of wounded Union soldiers. Fidelia Hoffman was a native of Ipswich, Massachusetts, and the Hoffman family often spent summers on the New Hampshire seacoast nearby.

The Hoffmans’ Manhattan home on West 43rd Street was a popular gathering place for the many artist and musician friends of her parents. Hoffman attended the prestigious Brearley School in Manhattan and at the age of 14 enrolled at the Art Students League. She later studied painting under John White Alexander. By the time she was 15, she had made up her mind that art would be her vocation. When she was 21, her father’s health was failing, and Hoffman wanted desperately to memorialize his image. She first tried to paint his portrait in oils but was dissatisfied with the result and turned instead to clay, creating a three-dimensional likeness. The sculpture was eventually reproduced in marble. Shown the clay likeness, her father said, “My child, I’m afraid you are going to be an artist.” He died two weeks later.

In 1910, a year after the death of Hoffman’s father, she and her mother left New York to move to Paris, where the budding sculptor hoped to study with Auguste Rodin, the foremost sculptor of the 20th century. Desperate to gain an audience with Rodin, Hoffman was turned away from his studio five times. Unwilling to take no for an answer, she resolved that on her sixth attempt she would refuse to leave until he agreed to see her. In her 1936 memoir, Heads and Tales, Hoffman recalled her ultimatum to Rodin’s concierge: “I shall not leave, he must admit me today.” Her persistence paid off. Rodin agreed to grant her an audience and quickly recognized her talent, agreeing to take her under his wing.

Became Close Friends with Rodin

Off and on over the next seven years, until Rodin’s death in 1917, the French master helped Hoffman improve her technical knowledge and understanding of carving, modeling, and foundry techniques, as well as her artistic discipline and expressive abilities. Student and teacher developed a close friendship, and when World War I broke out in 1914, Hoffman helped Rodin store his sculptures before she returned to the United States. To help finance her studies while in Paris, she worked as a studio assistant to American-born sculptor Janet Scudder. After her return to New York, Hoffman improved her understanding of the human form by studying anatomy at the city’s College of Physicians and Surgeons.

While in Paris, Hoffman produced her first dance sculpture, “Russian Dancers.” Long an aficionado of the ballet, Hoffman was inspired to create the sculpture after attending a Ballet Russe production of Bacchnale in London, featuring prima ballerina Anna Pavlova. The sculpture later was awarded first prize in an international art exposition. It was the first in a series of ballet-inspired sculptures Hoffman created. She met Pavlova in New York in 1914, and the two remained close friends until the dancer’s death in 1931. To perfect her knowledge of ballet and the basic movements of its performers, Hoffman took about 30 lessons from Pavlova’s partner. Pavlova then convinced the sculptor to make her debut in a ballet recital. Pavlova loaned Hoffman the same costume which the Russian ballerina had worn in Bacchnale in London and tied bunches of grapes about Hoffman’s brow. Suffering stage fright, Hoffman danced to center stage at New York’s Century Theater as a full orchestra provided a musical backdrop. Hoffman, overcome with nervousness, collapsed in a dead faint. It was the end of her ballet career.

While in New York in the fall of 1914, Hoffman set up a residence and studio at Sniffen Court in Manhattan’s Murray Hill neighborhood. During World War I, the sculptor was active in Red Cross relief efforts and also served as the American representative for Appui aux Artistes, a Paris-based organization she had helped to found. The organization was dedicated to providing assistance to artists and models who had lost their jobs because of the war. At the close of the war, Hoffman embarked on a seven-week inspection tour of hospitals and children’s centers in the Balkans at the request of Herbert Hoover, who was then serving as director of the American Relief Administration.

Unveiled “The Sacrifice”

Hoffman’s first major sculpture after the war was “The Sacrifice,” a massive memorial to Harvard University’s war dead. The sculpture, carved in Caen stone, was commissioned by Mrs. Robert Bacon in memory of her late husband, the former U.S. ambassador to France and a hero of World War I, for display in Harvard’s proposed War Memorial Chapel. While construction on the chapel continued, Hoffman’s completed sculpture was exhibited at upper Manhattan’s Cathedral of St. John the Divine from 1923 until 1932.

In 1925, Hoffman unveiled her most significant architectural sculpture, “To the Friendship of the English Speaking People,” at Bush House in London. Consisting of two heroic stone figures and an altar for the entrance to the house, it was commissioned by American-born businessman Irving Bush. Staid Londoners were startled by the sight of Hoffman clambering over her massive statuary putting finishing touches on her work. That same year, the sculptor traveled to Zagreb, Yugoslavia, to study equestrian sculpture with Ivan Mestrovic. She also filmed Mestrovic at work on his “American Indian Groups” sculpture for Chicago’s Grant Park.

In June 1924 Hoffman married violinist Samuel Grimson. Hoffman first met Grimson in 1908 when he came to the Hoffmans’ Manhattan home to play chamber music with her father. A couple of years after they married, the couple moved to the Villa Asti in Paris.

By far the biggest commission of Hoffman’s career came when she was approached by Stanley Field, who asked if she would be interested in participating in a massive undertaking planned by Chicago’s Field Museum of Natural History. The museum hoped to put together a series of more than a hundred bronze and marble busts, heads, and lifesized figures representing all the peoples of the world. The museum wanted the sculptures completed before the 1933 opening of the Chicago World’s Fair and planned to divide
the work among three prominent sculptors. Hoffman wanted the whole job for herself, and she eventually persuaded Field to award the commission exclusively to her.

Toured World

Once she had struck an agreement with Field and the museum’s board of directors, Hoffman, with her husband in tow, embarked on an eight-month tour to find models for her statues of the world’s many ethnic groups and races. On her travels, the sculptor photographed or sketched scores of models. In Singapore a Dyak headhunter modeled for Hoffman. Deep in the jungles of the Malay Peninsula, she drew a sketch of a Saka warrior, who would not allow her interpreter or white escorts to observe them while she modeled.

With her research complete, Hoffman went to work on the sculptures in her Paris studio. By early 1932 she had completed 97 bronze figures, casting many of them herself. The remaining statues were carved in marble. All were completed in time for a debut exhibition at the Musee d’Ethnographie in Paris’s Palais du Trocadero. In all, Hoffman’s “Races of Mankind” series included 105 sculptures—35 full figures, 1 half-size figure, 30 busts, and 39 heads. Almost from the start, the series provoked controversy. While prominent abstract artists of the early 1930s criticized Hoffman’s sculptures as either too realistic or too romantic, social scientists argued that her work relied too heavily on physical rather than cultural characteristics. Despite the criticism, almost everyone agreed that it was a monumental work of art. In 1936 Hoffman divorced Grimson and returned from Paris to her Sniffen Court residence and studio in New York. For the next three decades she continued to work out of her New York studio, producing a number of notable sculptures, including a World War II memorial for the Epinal Memorial Cemetery in France. In 1939 Hoffman published an instructional guide to sculpture entitled Sculpture Inside and Out. This was followed in 1943 by Heads and Tales, an account of her world travels on the “Races of Mankind” project, and in 1965 by her autobiography, Yesterday Is Tomorrow. On July 19, 1966, Hoffman died at her home in Manhattan.

Periodicals

Metro Santa Cruz, March 10-17, 1999.

Online


Helen Elna Hokinson

One of the 20th century’s most influential cartoonists, Helen Hokinson (1893–1949) chronicled the social comings and goings of the middle-aged American matron in the pages of the New Yorker for nearly a quarter century. She traded her early aspirations to become either a painter or a fashion illustrator for life as a cartoonist after one of her early cartooning efforts was accepted for publication by the newly founded magazine in 1925. Hokinson’s cartoons were peopled with what came to be known as “those Hokinson ladies.” The ladies of Hokinson’s cartoons, all of them “slightly overweight, behatted, and ranging in mental state from outright addled to merely puzzled, populated garden clubs, library societies, civic meetings, and luncheons, and they entertained numberless notions and aspirations that were at once ridiculous and engagingly innocent,” according to a profile of Hokinson in Her Heritage: A Biographical Encyclopedia of Famous American Women.

Over the next 24 years Hokinson created more than 1,700 cartoons, the majority of which were published in the New Yorker, gently lampooning the society matron. So gentle was Hokinson’s touch, in fact, that she counted among her numerous admirers many of the plump, well-to-do middle-aged women her cartoons chided. Her earliest cartoons appeared in the New Yorker without caption. Before long, however, the magazine’s editors began adding captions to further punch up the impact of her work. Beginning in 1931, she collaborated with James Reid Parker, a contributor of short stories to the New Yorker, who originated many of the scenarios for Hokinson’s cartoons and also wrote the captions. In an assessment of their extended association in the Saturday Review of Literature, John Mason Brown wrote: “Theirs was the happiest of collaborations. Without any of the friction of the lords of the Savoy, they found themselves as perfectly matched as Gilbert and Sullivan. If Miss Hokinson’s was the seeing eye, Mr. Parker’s was the hearing ear.”

Drew Sketches of Classmates, Teachers

Hokinson was born Helen Elna Hokinson in Mendota, Illinois, on June 29, 1893. The only child of Adolph and
Mary (Wilcox) Hokinson, she spent her early years in Moline, Illinois, and Des Moines, Iowa, before returning in 1905 to Mendota. Her father, a farm machinery salesman, was the son of Swedish immigrants who had changed the family name from Haakonson to Hokinson. Her mother, an Arkansas native of English descent, was the daughter of Phineas Wilcox, a well-known lecturer known as the “Carpenter Orator.” During her years at Mendota High School, Hokinson carried a sketchbook with her wherever she went, discreetly recording the events and personalities around her. She drew humorous sketches of her classmates and teachers at Mendota High, as well as some of the more interesting characters among the townspeople of Mendota.

After her graduation from high school in 1913, Hokinson persuaded her parents to let her enroll in a two-year program of study at the prestigious Chicago Academy of Fine Arts. The school promised that its program would produce commercial artists who were fully equipped to make a living. During the course of her studies in fashion illustration and design, Hokinson lived modestly at the Three Arts Club in Chicago. After completing the two-year program, she was able to secure assignments from art service agencies and department stores in the city.

Moved to New York City

Buoyed by her modest success in Chicago, Hokinson in 1920 moved to New York City, hopeful that she might do even better in the larger market the city offered. She was joined in New York the following year by fellow artist Alice Harvey, with whom she had earlier shared a small studio in Chicago. The two moved into rooms at the Smith College Club, a newly opened residence for Smith graduates that just happened to have some accommodations available for young women who had not attended Smith. While Harvey managed to sell some of her humorous drawings to Life magazine, Hokinson worked mostly as a fashion illustrator for such fashionable New York stores as B. Altman, John Wanamaker, and Lord & Taylor. Both women also tried their hand at cartooning, hoping to sell one of their strips to the Daily Mirror. Hokinson’s “Sylvia in the Big City” did appear briefly in the newspaper but was dropped after a couple of months.

In 1924 Hokinson and Harvey enrolled in courses at New York’s School of Fine and Applied Art. That learning experience was to radically alter the course of Hokinson’s career. She studied under Howard Giles, who taught the Jay Hambridge theory of dynamic symmetry. Looking over some of Hokinson’s high school sketches, Giles was struck by the young artist’s talent for “drawing true.” Although some of her high school work might loosely be described as caricatures because of the humor they conveyed, Giles believed that this was due mostly to Hokinson’s ability to accurately represent characteristics in her subjects that were innately funny. Giles urged Hokinson to concentrate on this form of artistic expression, capturing accurately the funny and ironic situations that unfolded around her. Hokinson took his advice and soon had abandoned fashion illustration altogether. Before long, she was turning out her slice-of-life observations in watercolor, combining the elements of dynamic symmetry she’d learned from Giles with the color theory of Denman Ross.

Cartoon Accepted by New Yorker

When the New Yorker began publishing in 1925, its editors launched a search for writers and artists whose work accurately reflected life in the city. Shortly after they’d opened their editorial offices, Hokinson submitted one of her drawings for consideration. When she checked back two weeks later, she learned that her drawing had been accepted for publication. What’s more, the editors asked that she continue to send drawings each week for possible publication. It was the beginning of a long association between Hokinson and the magazine.

Typical of Hokinson’s cartoons for the New Yorker are these: An ample matron, seated in the beauty parlor, submits stoically to the ministrations of her hairdresser, who opines, “These little curls will add to the gaiety of nations, Mrs. Balcom.” In another, an equally well-padded woman of late middle age, clad in an overcoat with fur collar and sporting an imposing chapeau, has just purchased a fish in a pet store. She asks the store owner, “And when they spawn, do I do anything?” In neither of these so-called cartoons are the characters’ features overly exaggerated. They are fairly accurate drawings of humorous situations that Hokinson had either observed or imagined.
Assigned to Do Magazine Covers

As Hokinson continued to turn out cartoons for the New Yorker, its editors began to assign her to create cover illustrations for the weekly magazine. For the cover of the magazine’s October 3, 1931, issue, Hokinson drew a decidedly obese matron posing for her photograph at the feet of a giant statue of Buddha. In another charming slice-of-life cover (November 27, 1937), a middle-aged housewife puzzles over a cookbook before a table covered with the ingredients for a pumpkin pie—including a pumpkin—as members of her family look on covertly from a nearby room. For the New Yorker cover of February 26, 1938, Hokinson drew two obviously wealthy youngsters—brother and sister—selecting food items for themselves at a Horn & Hardart Automat as the family chauffeur patiently looks on.

Hokinson’s earliest work for the New Yorker carried no captions. After the first year, however, the magazine’s editors began supplying appropriate captions. They also began to suggest ideas for her to work on and sent her on assignments to cover various New York area events and phenomena they thought might spark a cartoon or cover idea. In 1931 Hokinson met writer James Reid Parker, who was also a regular contributor to the magazine. For the next 18 years, until her death in 1949, the two worked together on cartoons for the New Yorker. Parker supplied the ideas or situations, as well as the captions, while Hokinson did the artwork. The two also collaborated on a monthly cartoon—"The Dear Man"—for the Ladies Home Journal and handled some advertising assignments as well.

Felt Fondness for Her Subjects

In an article in the Saturday Review of Literature, literary critic John Mason Brown wrote of Hokinson’s feelings for the subjects of her cartoons. “Miss Hokinson’s fondness for them was transparent and contagious. Hers was the rarest of satiric gifts. She had no contempt for human failings. She approached foibles with affection. She could ridicule without wounding. She could give fun by making fun and in the process make no enemies.” At one point in her career, Hokinson became concerned that those who saw her cartoons were laughing at, rather than with the plump, strong-minded but occasionally befuddled women who were their principal characters. So strongly did the artist feel about her subjects that she launched a crusade to defend them and explain them.

In addition to her work for the New Yorker and Ladies Home Journal, Hokinson published three books of her own cartoons: So You’re Going to Buy a Book in 1931; My Best Girls in 1943; and When Were You Built? in 1948. After her death in 1949, the Hokinson estate brought out these additional collections of the cartoonist’s work: The Ladies, God Bless Them in 1950; There Are Ladies Present in 1952; and The Hokinson Festival in 1956. Two of the books published posthumously—The Ladies, God Bless Them and The Hokinson Festival—included not only Hokinson’s cartoons but John Mason Brown’s essay about her and a memoir entitled “Helen” by longtime collaborator Parker.

Regarded Subjects as Individuals

In his memoir of Hokinson, Parker wrote of the artist’s choice of subjects for her cartoons, “Her best-known sketches were of pleasantly plump, middle-aged suburban clubwomen. Most, but certainly not all, of these women were unself-consciously charming, kind, self-indulgent, ingenuous to a degree, and generally addicted to short-lived enthusiasms. But Miss Hokinson confounds us because she drew so very many women (and men), each a true individual. It is true, however, that many of Miss Hokinson’s admirers were inclined to think of her women as a type, an amalgam of women exemplified by the women’s club treasurer who declines to submit her monthly report ‘because there is a deficit.’ Miss Hokinson herself thought of her characters only as individuals, which in fact they are.”

Hokinson, who never married, divided her time between an apartment in New York and cottages in Connecticut—first in Silvermine and later in Wilton. Invited to speak at the opening of the annual Community Chest drive in Washington, D.C., on November 1, 1949, Hokinson was aboard a flight from New York that collided with a Bolivian fighter plane and plunged into the Potomac River, killing all aboard. She was buried in her hometown of Mendota, Illinois.

Books


Online


Ludvig Holberg

Scandinavian playwright, writer, historian, and philosopher Ludvig Holberg (1684–1754) is considered the father of Danish and Norwegian literature, as well as the founder of drama for all of Scandinavia.

Born on December 3, 1684, in Bergen, Norway, Ludvig Holberg was the youngest of twelve children born to Lieutenant Colonel Christian Nielsen...
Holberg and his wife, Karen Lem. From a family of farmers and himself a member of the Norwegian army, Lieutenant Colonel Holberg was 25 years older than his wife, who was from a merchant family. The family had been wealthy, but were considered poor by the time the playwright was two years old. Tragically, of the couple’s 12 children, 6 had died as infants. Their bad luck continued with the death of Holberg’s father in 1688; the family was further impoverished by one of Bergen’s fires that same year. Holberg suffered another loss eight years later when his mother died, and he and his siblings were sent to live with relatives.

For the first three years after the death of his parents, Holberg lived with a pastor in Norway’s Gudbrand Valley, where his interest in literature and language was noticed and somewhat supported. Unfortunately, he did not do well in school because he did not get along well with his teacher, with the result that he was sent to live with his uncle Peder Lem in Bergen. There, Holberg was educated at the Bergen Grammar School.

Desired to See World

When he was 18 years old, Holberg entered the University of Copenhagen and took his degree in theology-philosophy within two years after spending a year working as a tutor in Norway. By the time he graduated Holberg was determined to see the world and traveled to Holland in 1704. His travels were short lived, however, after he became ill in the city of Aachen. Because of a lack of funds he had to return home on foot in 1705.

Again living in Bergen, Holberg saved money by working as a French tutor and supplemented this income by teaching other languages in Kristianland, a city located in the south of Norway. Holberg amassed enough funds to resume his travels and further his education. From 1706 to 1708, he lived in England, primarily in London.

Attended Oxford University

While in England, Holberg spent two years at the Bodelian Library at Oxford University. He studied history, languages, and literature and was exposed to the ideas of the Enlightenment. Holberg was especially captivated by the works of Jonathan Swift, among other English authors, and Swift influenced his development as a writer. To fund his stay in England, Holberg worked as a teacher of flute and violin. Before returning to Denmark, he also studied in Leipzig in late 1708 and early 1709, then moved to Copenhagen. There he became a fellow of Borch’s Kollegium, which supported scholars who had no money so they could continue to study. Holberg had already begun a book while he was living in England, *Introduction til de Fornemste Europeiske Rigers Historier* (*Introduction to the History of Leading European Nations*), which he published in 1711. The success of this volume led to Holberg being given a royal grant that allowed him to continue his education and travel. He also continued to tutor as well as lecture at the University of Copenhagen on the current European thought of the day.

In 1714 Holberg traveled to major cities in France, Italy, and the Netherlands using his preferred method of travel: by foot. The two years he spent walking to these cities affected his development as a writer very deeply, for he witnessed intellectual developments first hand and was exposed to the works of such writers as Molière and theatrical genres like the commedia dell’arte.

Became Professor

When Holberg returned to Denmark in 1716 he published *Introduction til naturens og Copenhagen*, a book about natural law and natural rights. The following year he was awarded a professorship at the University of Copenhagen that gave him financial security. However, he was now required to teach metaphysics, a subject he disliked, and he avoided lecturing as much as possible. Nonetheless, in 1720 he was promoted to the University’s chair of public eloquence and began teaching Latin literature and rhetoric.

While a professor, Holberg came into his own as a writer and had what he called a poetic rapture. His first work of significance was *Peder Paars*, published under the pen name Hans Mikkelsen in 1719–1720. It was the beginning of his own brand of humorous literature and the first classic in the Danish language. *Pedar Paars*, a 6,000-line epic poem, is a parody of Virgil’s *Aeneid* that mocks Danish society and the social conditions of its author’s day.

Wrote for First Theater in Copenhagen

In 1722 the first Danish-language theater opened in Copenhagen on Lille Grønnetgade. Holberg wrote 25 plays for the theater, mostly comedies and satire, and many
were successful. Many of Holberg’s plays used Danish manners, pretensions, words, and class differences as a target of satire, using stock and stereotypical characters. Among his best plays were Den politiske Kandestøber (The Political Tinker); Den Vaegelsindede (The Weathervane); Jean de France; Jeppe paa Bjerget (Jeppe of the Hill); Ulysses von Itacia; Den Bundeslose (The Fidget); and Erasmus Montanus.

The first play by Holberg performed there was Den politiske Kandestøber (The Political Tinker, 1722). The central character in this play, Herman von Breman, wants to become the mayor of Hamburg though he had no political experience. He becomes mayor for a day and the complexities of the office distract him.

Two other plays of significance were written by Holberg in 1722, Jeppe of the Hill and Jean de France. The former play’s title character is a cuckolded peasant who gets himself so drunk that he believes he is a baron, has died, and has gone to heaven, whereupon he condemns to death those who had been his bosses. Jeppe of the Hill is considered by many to be Holberg’s best known comedy. Jean de France is about a Francophile Dane who goes to Paris and tries to be French. At the same time, his fiancée Elsebet is in love with someone else, and he is gotten rid of by her servants.

Wrote Erasmus Montanus

In 1723 Holberg wrote Erasmus Montanus, another social comedy. The title character in this play is the son of a farmer who gets a college education and becomes a menace to his family and neighbors with all he has learned. Though his real name is Rasmus Berg, when he returns from school the farmer’s son re-names himself Montanus and Latinizes his speech.

While Holberg was establishing himself as a successful playwright he also continued to travel. In 1725–1726, he went to Paris, and many of his plays of this period were influenced by Molière because both playwrights used the dramatic devise of the central character being confused and his confusion driving the drama of the play. Some critics maintain that Holberg is more effective at this than Molière because his comic characters are imbued with more human qualities than those of the French playwright.

Another significant play in this genre by Holberg was Den stundeslose (The Fussy Man or The Fidget). (1726). At the center of this work is an idealistic main character, Vielgeschrey, who makes much out of the minutiae of life. He tries to marry his daughter to a man she does not want to marry, a bookkeeper because the bookkeeper has agreed to help Vielgeschrey in return. The play was very modern in its approach.

Holberg wrote several plays that were influenced by the Italian commedia dell’arte in that they are centered more on the plot or pageantry than on examining educational or moral ideas. These plays included Henrik og Pernille (Henry and Pernilla) and Mascarade (Masquerades).

In 1727 the theater on Lille Grønnedragde closed because of funding problems. Holberg wrote a play to commemorate its closing, Funeral of Danish Comedy, and continued to write plays for other venues. In 1731 he published all his performed plays plus ten new plays, then took a break from playwriting until late in life. Much of Holberg’s writing output now focused on history, an interest that he would follow for about a decade.

In the early 1730s Holberg began to teach history at the university, and during the years 1732 to 1735 he authored the three-volume work Danmarks Riges Historie (History of Denmark). In this work he underscored the cultural development of Denmark; he would later supplement it with a history of the navy of Denmark and Norway. Holberg also wrote about historical subjects outside of Denmark, in 1738 publishing the two-volume Almindelig Kirkehistorie (University History of the Church), a history of Christianity through Martin Luther’s reformation. In 1742 he published Den Jodiske Historie (History of the Jews) in two volumes.

By the mid-1730s Holberg was considered a leading figure at the University of Copenhagen, although he mostly worked as an administrator. From 1735 to 1736, he was a rector of the university, and from 1737 until 1751 he served as its bursar. As Holberg’s work responsibilities changed, so did the subject of his writing. After 1740 much of his work focused on morals and ethics in both fiction and nonfiction.

Published Novel

In 1741 Holberg published a political and social satire titled Nicolai Klimii iter Subterraneum (The Journey of Niels Klim to the World Underground). An early science fiction novel written in Latin that focuses on a man, Klim, who falls into the center of the earth and finds a utopia where women are the dominant sex. Holberg’s most popular book in Europe, Nicolai Klimii iter Subterraneum was translated into several languages and was enjoyed by fans of Jonathan Swift’s Gulliver’s Travels (1726). However, when the book was first released in Denmark, it was considered dangerous because of some of the ideas Holberg advanced.

Less controversial was Holberg’s 1744 publication Moralske Tanker (Moral Thoughts). In it Holberg outlined his philosophy, both moral and religious, and, in doing so, made a statement about the Danish Enlightenment. He revealed more about himself in the five volumes of Epistler (1748–1754), which contains several hundred letters and essays on various subjects, including dogmas and metaphysical ideas of the day. In 1751 he wrote Moralske Fabler (Moral Fables). These 200 pieces were influenced by Ovid’s Metamorphoses and are more cynical and negative than Holberg’s previous works.

Named Baron

In 1747 Holberg was given the title of baron by the king of Denmark. He had become a very wealthy man over his lifetime, having invested the money he made from teaching and publishing on land rather than in living a lavish lifestyle. He had a number of country estates that he took care of in his old age. Holberg was particularly fond of Tersloegaard in central Zealand.

The year Holberg was named a baron, the new Danish National Theater was founded. He wrote six more plays for
the company, but they were not as good as his previous works; while they were considered very intelligent they lacked the strong characters of his previous works.

Holberg died on January 28, 1754, in Copenhagen, Denmark. After his death, his will left his estate to the Sorø Academy to fund the teaching of modern subjects. The University of Copenhagen was not happy that he did not leave his money to them.

Long after his death, Holberg’s plays in Danish were still being performed. There was critical debate over his work, though he was generally considered the father of Danish and Norwegian literature. He greatly influenced another Scandinavian playwright, Henrik Ibsen. Statues of him are located in both Norway and Denmark, at the National Theatre of Oslo and Royal Theatre of Copenhagen respectively.

As S. C. Hammer wrote in his book, *Ludvig Holberg*, “wherever you go in Denmark and Norway Holberg’s name is familiar. Words and sayings of his live on the lips of both nations as colloquial terms. He sits in bronze in an armchair outside the main entrance of the Royal Theatre at Copenhagen; his noble sepulchre is at Sorø, a dreaming little site of learning in Zeeland . . . [H]e is the pride of his townsmen, who cherish his memory.”

**Books**


**Periodicals**


---

**John Lee Hooker**

American musician John Lee Hooker (1917–2001) was an influential blues artist who played a role in the development of the genre from the late 1940s through the 1990s. Playing both electric and acoustic guitar, Hooker’s distinctive vocal and instrumental style also shaped the development of rock and folk music during the 1960s and 1970s.

John Lee Hooker was born on August 22, 1917 (some sources say 1920), in Clarksdale, Mississippi, the fourth of 11 children born to William and Minnie Hooker. Hooker’s father was a sharecropper and Baptist minister who did not like the blues, referring to it as the “devil’s music.” Hooker’s parents separated when he was five and divorced when he was 11 years old.

While Hooker received a limited formal education, music was an important component to his life. He first became exposed to it at church and constructed his first instrument out of a piece of string and an inner tube. Soon after her divorce, Hooker’s mother was remarried to William Moore, a blues musician. Hooker credited Moore with mentoring him as a musician.

Moore taught Hooker how to play guitar, showing the boy his minimalist but very rhythmic style of playing. Soon Moore and Hooker were playing together at house parties and dances near their hometown. Though Hooker enjoyed playing with his stepfather he was unhappy living in Mississippi and when he was 14 years old he ran away from home.

**Traveled to Tennessee and Midwest**

Hooker first tried to join the U.S. Army, in part because during World War II a young man in uniform would attract attention from women. He made it through basic training and after three months was stationed in Detroit before it was discovered that he was underage and he was kicked out. Hooker then moved to Memphis, Tennessee. Supporting himself with day jobs such as movie theater usher, Hooker also worked as a musician at house parties because he could not get into clubs. Among the musician he played with was Robert Lockwood.

In his late teens Hooker moved to Cincinnati, Ohio, where he continued to work menial day jobs like dish washer and steel mill worker while establishing his music
career at night. Because he was still a minor, Hooker could only play the blues at house parties. However, he also sang in gospel quartets like the Delta Big Four, Fairfield Four, and the Big Six. By working frequently in front of a crowd, Hooker learned the ropes of performing on stage and entertaining an audience.

In 1943 Hooker moved to Detroit, where jobs were plentiful because so many men were overseas fighting in World War II. He held day jobs washing dishes and working as a janitor in a Chrysler automobile plant until 1951. Now a legal adult, Hooker was now able to perform at the many blues clubs located near Detroit’s Hastings Street.

While living in Detroit Hooker’s style changed: from the country/rural folk-type blues played primarily on an acoustic guitar, he shifted to a more urban style played on an electric guitar. Part of the change was due to his encounter with Elmer Barber, a local record-store owner. Barber had heard Hooker perform and he made several primitive recordings of the young musician in the makeshift studio located in the back of his store.

Barber’s recordings soon found their way to Bernie Besman, owner of a small record label, Sensation Records. It was Besman who suggested that Hooker should switch to electric guitar and include faster-paced material in his gigs at local clubs. Taking this advice, Hooker soon became one of the leading musicians in the Motor City, which at this time was witnessing a booming economy due to the men and women living there who had become wealthy due to the rise in wartime manufacturing.

**Recorded First Hit Single**

Hooker made his first single for Besman in 1948. “Boogie Chillen,” recorded in a basement in Detroit, features only Hooker’s vocals, his electric guitar, and the sound of his foot tapping the beat. When “Boogie Chillen” was released on Sensation it sold so well that the small label could not handle the demand. The single was then released on Modern Records and quickly climbed to the number-one spot on 1949’s prototype R & B charts, selling a million copies.

Although Hooker did not receive the royalties he was entitled to for this and future songs, his success with “Boogie Chillen” came as a surprise to him. In 1949 he followed up his first single with ten other top-ten songs. Many of these early recordings feature only Hooker and his guitar, although fellow guitarist Eddie Kirkland sometimes appeared on recordings with him.

One reason that Hooker often recorded alone was that his beat was hard for accompanying musician to follow. By recording alone, it was easier to achieve a clean take, and the recording session took less time. Describing his sound, Hooker once told John Collis of the Independent, “I don’t like no fancy chords. Just the boogie. The drive. The feeling. A lot of people play fancy but they don’t have no style. It’s a deep feeling—you just can’t stop listening to that sad blues sound. My sound.”

Despite becoming involved in conflicts regarding royalty issues, Hooker continued to record for Modern in the late 1940s and early 1950s, and some of his hits of the period include “Rock House Boogie,” “Crawling King Snake,” and “In the Mood.” One of his most popular recordings of the period, “In the Mood” was released in 1951 and sold a million copies. To ensure that he would earn enough to support his family, Hooker recorded and released material under several other names for over two dozen other labels. Some of his pseudonyms included John Lee Booker, which he used for Chess recordings, Johnny Lee, used for DeLuxe, and Texas Slim and John Lee Cooker, which he used on his recordings for the King label.

Many of Hooker’s early releases influenced other bluesmen such as Buddy Guy and are considered to be early precursors to rock and roll. His blues songs incorporated the traditional blues sound with jump and jazz rhythms. Although Hooker recorded his music with little backup, he also performed with a live band at clubs in Detroit and beyond. Due to his talent, hard work, and determination, Hooker was a success on the R & B circuit throughout the 1950s.

In 1955 Hooker signed on with VeeJay Records of Chicago. For this label he changed his recording style, his subsequent recordings becoming a better reflection of his live show. Because solo blues performance was waning in popularity, Hooker started recording with a band, producing such hits as “Dimples” and “Boom Boom.”

**Became Hit on Folk Circuit**

Even though Hooker found success performing on electric guitar, he discovered a new audience for his acoustic blues during the late 1950s. Folk music was now undergoing a revival of interest, and groups like the Weavers and blues singers like Odetta were increasingly becoming popular among young white college students. Hooker began appearing in folk clubs, coffeehouses, on college campuses, and at folk festivals as a solo artist, and did several recordings accompanying himself with acoustic guitar. Many of his songs written and recorded during this period reflect his background in Mississippi.

In 1959 Hooker released his first record album, I’m John Lee Hooker, on Riverside Records, his new label. This new turn in the career of the 42-year-old bluesman earned him an even wider audience, not just among white folk fans but in international markets where his records were also released.

Hooker once discussed his change from electronic band to solo folk music with Peter Watrous, telling the New York Times interviewer: “I played solo for a long time, so I know how to tap my feet so it sounds like a drum. It wasn’t any problem to start playing the coffeehouses. I can switch to any style, you have to be versatile as a musician. I knew the white audience was out there but I didn’t know how to get it. As the years go by, thing change and to me they were just people. I had no thought that British singers would start singing my songs, I had no idea what would come with that. People got more civilized.”

In the 1960s Hooker began touring internationally, and the popularity of his music spread throughout the world, particularly among the more sophisticated audience. His
songs also influenced emerging British rock bands such as the Rolling Stones and the Animals. Hooker continued to record on Veejay, although he did not end his practice of laying down tracks for other labels as well.

Returned to Electric

By the mid- to late 1960s Hooker once again moved away from performing acoustic solo blues when the trend toward electric blues prompted to put together a new band. In 1965 he recorded an album with British group John Mayall and the Groundhogs. Many of Hooker’s recordings during the late 1960s were albums rather than singles, and many were recorded in collaboration with bands composed of younger musicians. While many of these recording sessions produced mixed results due to Hooker’s unique rhythmic stylings, his sessions with the group Canned Heat is considered one of the best. The resulting album, 1971’s Hooker ‘n’ Heat, was a hit.

Though Hooker continued to record a little and play a lot during the late 1970s and 1980s, the blues had declined in popularity and demand for his music had declined. He still toured as a way to pay the mortgage on the house he owned in San Francisco, often performing with his Coast-to-Coast Blues Band and sometimes coming under fire for letting other musician carry him musically. Many of his early recordings were also repackaged and released for blues collectors.

Considered one of the top blues performers in the United States, Hooker was given a small role in the blockbuster movie The Blues Brothers in 1980. That same year he was inducted into the Blues Foundation Hall of Fame. In the late 1980s and 1990s his songs regained popularity, even appearing as part of film soundtracks. In the 1990s, Hooker himself began appearing in ads for Lee Jeans, Pepsi, various brands of liquor, and other products.

Recorded The Healer

In 1989 Hooker returned to the studio after a decade’s absence and recorded The Healer. He was joined by several contemporary blues artists, including Bonnie Raitt and Robert Cray, as well as Latin artists Los Lobos and Carlos Santana. Produced by Hooker’s former guitarist Roy Rogers, The Healer became one of the biggest-selling blues records of all time, selling 1.5 million copies. Hooker also won a Grammy Award for the song “I’m in the Mood,” which he performs on the album with Raitt.

Hooker was inducted into the Rock and Roll Hall of Fame in 1990 and was the focus of a tribute concert at Madison Square Garden that same year. With the success of The Healer, he started recording again, again in collaboration with other blues artists. His 1991 recording Mr. Lucky was a hit on the album charts in the United Kingdom. Among the musicians he worked with on this recording were Johnny Winter, Keith Richards, Van Morrison, and Santana.

Hooker continued to perform and record into his late 70s and early 80s and found himself even more popular now than he had been earlier in his career. He continued to perform live with the Coast-to-Coast Blues Band into the 1990s, but had the added security of royalty income to rely on. Unlike many other blues and R & B artists of his generation, Hooker continued to earn royalties from his early recordings because he had wisely saved his contracts and, with the proper legal advise, went to court to ensure that recording companies continued to honor them.

After a hernia operation in 1994 made it painful for Hooker to perform, he slowed down. After the release of Chill Out in 1995 he retired from performing on a regular basis, although he still made occasional appearances on stage. In 1997 he opened a blues club in San Francisco called John Lee Hooker’s Boom Boom Room. One of his final releases was the album Don’t Look Back (1997), which features a cover of Jimi Hendrix’s “Red House.”

Hooker died in his sleep of natural causes on June 21, 2001, at his home in Los Altos, California. He had performed five days earlier and was making plans to return to the recording studio. At his death he had recorded more than 500 tracks, making him one of the most recorded blues musicians of all time. Married and divorced four times, Hooker was survived by eight children. Late in his life he had contemplated his eventual passing, telling Ben Wener of Tulsa World: “We all got to go one day. We live out this life as long as we can and try to make the best of it. Simple as that. That’s what I’ve done. All my life, just try to make the best of it.”

Books

Periodicals
Independent, July 1, 1990.
Ottawa Citizen, November 1, 1992.
Tulsa World, August 30, 1997.

Doris Humphrey

One of the first modern dance choreographers, American Doris Humphrey (1895–1958) played a large role in determining the course of modern dance in the United States. While Martha Graham was a contemporary whose career lasted longer and had a broader influence, Humphrey, an early abstractionist, like George Balanchine, had an equally important role in developing twentieth-century
modern dance through her choreography for the ensemble.

Doris Batcheller Humphrey was born October 17, 1895, in Oak Park, Illinois. She was the only child of Horace Buckingham Humphrey, a hotel manager, composer, newspaperman, and photographer, and his wife, Julia, a musician and housekeeper at the theatrical hotel her husband managed. Humphrey’s ancestors included author Ralph Waldo Emerson.

From an early age Humphrey studied dance and showed she had talent in it. Her parents encouraged her interest, and she was trained in several disciplines, including ballet. Humphrey graduated from the Francis W. Parker School in Chicago, where she studied a number of dance genres. She was taught by Mary Wood Hinman, who educated her students in a version of eurhythmics and Swedish folk dancing. Humphrey also studied ballet in master classes with the European ballet dance teachers who passed through the area, among them Ottokar Bartik and Serge Oukrainsky.

Began Teaching Dance

To help support her family, Humphrey taught dance in the Chicago area for four years after she graduated from high school. She opened her own school in Oak Park in 1913, where she taught ballroom dance, among other social and fancy dances, while her mother performed the piano accompaniment. While Humphrey was unsatisfied artistically, she had to help her parents financially, something she would do for the rest of her life. During this time, Humphrey also toured with a dance group that performed at train stations along the Santa Fe Railroad to entertain employees.

Joined Denishawn

While Humphrey’s ultimate goal was to train as a professional dancer, she was not able to do so until 1917 when her parents’ finances became secure. That year, she joined the Denishawn dance school and company in Los Angeles. Denishawn, founded by Ruth St. Denis and Ted Shawn, was known for its Asian and exotic influence. Humphrey began as a student, but after a short time was appointed dancer in the company and rehearsal mistress. Soon rising to the company’s leading soloist, her style caught the eye of St. Denis, who influenced her as a dancer and choreographer. St. Denis and Shawn moved towards the abstract in their dances, and Humphrey performed in several “music visualization” pieces choreographed by St. Denis.

Began Choreography Career

By 1920 Humphrey had begun doing choreography, composing many of her early works with St. Denis. Among her first works was 1920’s Soaring (with St. Denis), set to the music of Robert Schumann. Denishawn did not like Humphrey’s approach to choreography, which became more experimental and self-expressive than exotic over time. She also emphasized ensemble pieces over individual works, which was also against the school’s grain. In 1925 Humphrey choreographed her first major work, which was performed to Alexander MacDowell’s Sonata Tragica, though it was later performed without musical accompaniment.

In 1925–1926, Humphrey toured Asia with Denishawn. When she returned she and Charles Weidman, another Denishawn dancer, were put in charge of the New York City-based Denishawn House, a franchise school of the Los Angeles-based company. Humphrey and Weidman lasted a year in this position before either artistic or political policies dissolved their partnership with Denishawn. Some sources say it was because of the way Humphrey viewed movement and her need to experiment with new movement forms, while others maintain she left when Shawn wanted her to do a production of the Ziegfeld Follies.

Formed Humphrey-Weidman Dance Company

No matter what the reason, Humphrey and Weidman left Denishawn to form their own school and company in 1928. With another Denishawn dancer, Pauline Lawrence, the pair formed Humphrey-Weidman and held classes in dance technique to pay for their productions of Humphrey’s new choreography, which continued to be innovative. During the Depression of the 1930s the group also received funding from the Federal Theatre Project of the Works Progress Administration.

Humphrey had spent much time studying the theory of movement and had developed her own concepts. She based much of her choreography on the principle of fall and recovery, the place between standing and the prone, motionless and unbalance. This moment in time symbolized the tension between security and adventure in the unknown.

As Jennifer Dunning wrote in the New York Times, Humphrey “abstracted the soul . . . in the central concept of her choreography. Falling, the recovery from a fall and the body’s arc between were for her an expression of the fundamental tension and precarious balance between failure and triumph that we struggle to maintain throughout our lives.”

Unlike Denishawn, which focused on spectacle, Humphrey based her choreography on feelings and physical states to create art. Movements reflected these emotions and physicalities. Many of her dances were conceptual and complex and could work with and against musical scores. There was no limit to her choreographical vocabulary as in ballet.

As Jack Anderson of the New York Times wrote, “When both the spirit and the shape of the steps are preserved, Humphrey’s dances are genuinely impressive. And however well they may be performed in any given revival, they can be fascinating to watch simply because of their thematic or formal conception.”

Many of Humphrey’s early works were seen as original and distinctive. A number were inspired by nature and not done to music, including A Water Study (1928) and Life of the Bee (1929). Such works were simple and considered intelligent. The abstract Drama of Motion (1930) had no
plot, sound, or costumes in the theatrical sense. In 1931, Humphrey choreographed The Shakers, one of many works that had a dramatic element to it, as well as an historical element. The Shakers was performed to traditional Shaker music and used boxes to define the mood because Humphrey could not afford a set.

Humphrey’s company toured the United States in the 1930s, during which time her life changed in a number of ways. She was married to merchant seaman Charles Francis Woodward in June of 1932 and had one son, Charles Humphrey Woodward. Her work as a choreographer expanded to Broadway. She did dances for such Broadway productions as Molière’s School for Husbands (1933) and Life Begins at 8:40 (1934).

**Expanded Teaching Career**

In 1934 Humphrey added another teaching position to her resume when she was put on the staff of the Bennington College of Dance. She taught at the Bennington College Summer School of Dance for eight years as well as for the High School of the Performing Arts. She also taught at Connecticut College’s American Dance Festival beginning in 1948. She later taught at the 92nd St. Young Men’s-Young Women’s Hebrew Association and eventually served as its director.

In 1936 Humphrey choreographed her masterpiece, a trilogy titled New Dance which featured the three dances—“Theatre Piece,” “With My Red Fires,” and “New Dance”—about a social utopia where individuals were satisfied while the group worked in harmony. She continued to choreograph and perform in the late 1930s and early 1940s. Her pieces included Passacaglia and Fuge in C Minor (done to the music of J. S. Bach; 1938) as well as Song of the West (1940). In 1940 the Humphrey-Weidman dance company was dissolved, but Humphrey continued to work. A later piece which was regularly performed was Partita in G Major (1943).

**Forced to Retire from Dancing**

In 1944 Humphrey choreographed the last piece she would publically perform, Inquest. While her arthritis forced her to stop dancing, she continued to choreograph. Humphrey developed increasingly severe arthritis in her hip and suffered from arthritic seizures until her death in 1958.

**Named Artistic Director of José Limón**

In the mid-1940s José Limón, a Mexican dancer who had been connected to Humphrey-Weidman as a student, formed his own José Limón dance company and hired Humphrey to be the artistic director. She guided Limón’s choreographing career and created some major works for him and his company: Story of Mankind (1947), Deep Rhythm (1953), and Ruins and Visions (1953). Many of her pieces focus on gesture. Lament for Ignacio Sánchez Mejías (1946) was based on the poetry of Federico García Lorca and created specially for Limón. Humphrey showed her flexibility and range as choreographer, meeting the varied demands of Limón’s company. She even did some mixed media work, such as Theatre Piece No. 2 (1956).

**Helped Form Juilliard School of Dance**

Though Humphrey claimed she did not like to teach, she played a big role in getting the Juilliard School of Dance open in 1952. When it opened, she was named to the faculty and given funds and space to choreograph. There, she taught creative composition and in 1955 founded the Juilliard Dance Theatre.

Humphrey died of cancer on December 29, 1958, in New York City. Though she never made much money at what she did, she never compromised her values as a dancer and artist. Over the course of her career, she choreographed 97 dances, some of which are still performed. At her death, she working on a piece choreographed to Bach’s Brandenburg Concerto No. 4, which was produced.

After Humphrey’s death her book The Art of Making Dances (1959) appeared, explaining how she taught dance in a way that was easy to understand. Humphrey was also working on her autobiography at the time of her death, and that book was not published until 1972.

Humphrey’s contribution to modern dance in the United States has been somewhat overshadowed by that of dancer and choreographer Martha Graham, who was in many ways her contemporary and often considered the main influence of modern dance development. Like Graham, Humphrey’s dances are still performed. The companies she worked with, Humphrey-Weidman and José Limón, produced many influential dancers of their own, including Sybil Shearer and Jennifer Muller. Her approach to choreography also was important.

As a contributor wrote in The Complete Guide to Modern Dance, “Combining an intellectual sense of craft with an emotional commitment to humane values made Humphrey design dances that were heroic in the best sense. At times her interest in the sheer mechanics of making a dance consumed her attention, but the works of her mature genius show a sympathy for human suffering or sacrifice and an artistic attempt at consolation and betterment of that condition.”

**Books**


**Periodicals**


*Dance Magazine*, October 1995.

Alberta Hunter

One of the seminal blues and cabaret singers, Alberta Hunter (1895–1984) gained international fame in the first half of the 20th century as a recording artist and nightclub and stage performer. Many of her recordings are considered classics and her accompanists were some of the greatest jazz musicians of the era. Hunter actually had two careers as a singer; during the 20-year interlude that separated them, this strong-willed and independent-minded woman worked as a nurse in New York City.

Hunter was born on April 1, 1895, in Memphis, Tennessee, and named for the doctor who delivered her. Her father, a railroad porter, abandoned the family while she was a young girl, though for years Hunter repeated the story that he had died while she was a child. Her mother eventually remarried, but Hunter did not get along with her new family and ran away from home. The exact date when this occurred has been lost, but most accounts say she was either 11 or 12 years old.

Early Success in Chicago

Hunter went to Chicago where she found work in a boarding house—her pay included room, board, and $6 a week. Captivated by Chicago’s nightlife, she began sneaking into clubs. Her professional debut came in 1911 when she sang in a club in Chicago’s Southside called Dago Frank’s, a shady place that was a hangout for underworld characters. Hunter remained there for two years and left only after the club was closed down. Her mother joined her in Chicago soon after.

Hunter’s first big connection in the music business came when she started singing in another Southside nightclub, the Elite Café. There she met ragtime pianist and songwriter Tony Jackson. Among the songs Jackson wrote was “Pretty Baby,” which Hunter helped popularize. Over the next few years Hunter sang in a string of Southside Chicago nightclubs including the Panama Café, which catered to whites; the De Luxe Café; and, beginning in 1917, the fabled Dreamland Café where she established herself as one of Chicago’s top blues singers. At the Dreamland she became friends with the King Oliver Creole Jazz Band, which featured Joe “King” Oliver on cornet and a young Louis Armstrong on second cornet. Hunter was especially friendly with Lil Hardin, Oliver’s pianist and Louis Armstrong’s first wife. Three years younger than Hunter, Hardin was also from Memphis. The Dreamland Café also drew an elite white and African American clientele; it was where Hunter first met Paul Robeson, with whom years later she would star in Showboat in London. Other patrons included Al Jolson and Bix Beiderbecke. On her off days and after hours Hunter worked as what was then known as a “drop-in girl,” making the rounds of other nightclubs.

By 1919 Hunter was a celebrity in Chicago and began paying more attention to her image, including the rumor that she was a lesbian. In that era few performers were openly homosexual (especially blues singers, who flaunted heterosexuality) and Hunter was no exception. In January she sang at a club in Cincinnati where one of the young waiters caught her eye, an army veteran named Willard Saxby Townsend. Hunter and Townsend were married in Covington, Kentucky, on January 27, 1919, but by all accounts their marriage was never consummated. Two months after they returned to Chicago Townsend filed for divorce, which was granted in March 1923. By then Hunter was living in New York with the love of her life Lottie Tyler, niece of the African American vaudeville comedian, Bert Williams.

In the early 1920s Hunter was the queen of the Dreamland Café and indeed of the Chicago blues scene. Back then Chicago was the place to be as far as jazz and blues musicians were concerned. As Hunter herself said of the era as quoted by Frank C. Taylor and Gerald Cook in Alberta Hunter: A Celebration in Blues: “If you had worked in Chicago and had been recognized there, you were somebody, baby. New York didn’t count then.”

Whether it counted or not, Hunter was soon traveling to New York to record for a label called Black Swan records. Her earliest recordings, in May 1921, were “He’s a Darned Good Man to Have Around” backed by “How Long, Sweet Daddy, How Long,” “Bring Back the Joys,” and “Some Day Sweetheart.” On all of these, Fletcher Henderson accompanied her on piano (though the identities of the other musicians have been lost). During the next two years Hunter traveled back and forth between her performing base in Chicago and her recording base in New York. In July 1922 she recorded a slew of songs for the Paramount label, including the now-classic “Down Hearted Blues,” which Hunter cowrote with pianist Lovie Austin, “Daddy Blues,” and accompanied by Eubie Blake on piano, “Jazzin’ Baby Blues.” The next year Bessie Smith recorded “Down Hearted Blues” for Columbia Records and it became that label’s first hit. Hunter, however, received very little in royalty payments—and only from Paramount. In February 1923 Hunter broke ground when she became the first African American singer to be back by an all-white band—the Original Memphis Five. Among the three songs they recorded that month was “Tain’t Nobody’s Biz-ness If I Do.” In all Hunter recorded 14 songs in the month of February 1923 alone (the other songs were backed by Fletcher Henderson’s Orchestra), all for Paramount Records. With so much recording activity, not to mention Broadway, the lure of New York became stronger and stronger for Hunter and she finally moved there in April 1923.

She was not without a job for long. On April 18 she joined the cast of the musical How Come? and was an immediate (and literal) “showstopper.” Her singing and glamour (Hunter always appeared onstage in beautiful dresses) captured the sophisticated Broadway audience. Unfortunately most critics found little else to praise in How Come? and the show closed after five weeks. Meanwhile Hunter continued recording for Paramount. In May and
June 1923 she cut “Stingeree Blues” and “You Can’t Do What My Last Man Did,” with piano accompaniment on both songs by Fats Waller.

In 1924 Hunter, feeling slighted by Paramount, recorded five songs on the Gennett label using the name Josephine Beatty. This was a technical violation of her contract with Paramount, and as a result she lost her contract at the end of the year. The five Gennett songs became minor cult classics as Hunter was backed up by the Red Onion Jazz Babies, featuring Louis Armstrong on cornet. The following year she began recording with Okeh Records and stayed with them through 1926; she also decided to hit the vaudeville circuit. Upon returning to New York from her vaudeville tour Hunter bought an apartment on West 138th Street, which placed her both professionally and personally in the midst of the famed Harlem Renaissance.

At the end of 1926 Hunter recorded three songs for a Chicago record company, Vocation, but they were never released. In 1927 she left Okeh to record for Victor. Among the seven Victor recordings she made that year was “Beale Street Blues,” with Fats Waller on pipe organ.

Paris and London

New York was home, but Hunter was a traveling woman by nature, and in August 1927 she and Tyler embarked for Paris, where Josephine Baker was already a star. It was an opportunity to escape American racism and become recognized for her talent that Hunter could not pass up. As quoted in Alberta Hunter: A Celebration in Blues she said, “The Negro [sic] artists went to Europe because we were recognized and given a chance. In Europe they had your name up in lights. People in the United States would not give us that chance.”

In Paris Hunter’s name was indeed up in lights, and she moved in the expatriate high cultural circles of the era. She also published letters in the Amsterdam News, New York’s most prominent African American newspaper, detailing her Parisian life, serving more or less as a correspondent. However Paris was also where she broke up with Tyler, though they remained good friends afterward. In January 1928, without Tyler who had returned to the United States, Hunter left Paris for London.

Her first professional appearance in London, two days after she arrived, was at the London Pavilion located at Picadilly Circus. Her biggest triumph of her European “tour” came in May 1928 when she performed the role of Queenie in the London stage version of Showboat, which also featured Paul Robeson. The musical closed after three months, but Hunter remained in London until March 1929. After a brief return to Paris to open the Paris Cotton Club she returned to the United States in May 1929. Back in the U.S. she cut two more songs, this time for Columbia Records. These were her only recordings until after the war.

If she had thought her unqualified success in Paris and London would be enough to open doors in the United States she was mistaken. Other than some vaudeville work, a role in a musical called Change Your Luck, and a revue titled This Way Out (in which she appeared only for a week and was never paid), Hunter found work hard to come by. There were a few bookings in Harlem’s Alhambra Theatre. By 1933 things had got so bad for her—the Great Depression having exacerbated the already hard-to-come-by bookings—that she decided to return to Paris. This time her success was a bit qualified—the economic depression was keeping people away from the nightclubs. In the spring of 1934 she went to Copenhagen, Denmark, where the reception given her by the public was even warmer than that of the French.

In July 1934 Hunter was back in London, and she effortlessly picked up where she had left off five years earlier. She toured the British and Scottish music hall circuit and recorded 12 songs including “I Travel Alone,” written by Noel Coward. Originally recorded for HMV, they were later released as an LP, The Legendary Alberta Hunter: The London Sessions—1934. She also appeared in the first British film shot in color, Radio Parade of 1935. In January 1935 her British work permit was not renewed and after a brief return to Paris, Hunter returned to the United States. In 1937 following another sojourn abroad, which took her not only to Europe but Egypt as well, Hunter began singing on NBC radio. Her contract expired in early 1938, whereupon she returned to Europe. With war becoming more of a likelihood, Hunter returned to New York in the fall of 1938 and resumed her radio singing. When war did break out and Paris fell to the Nazis African American entertainers returned to New York, making competition for jobs that much stiffer. Adding to this was the next generation of singers led by Ella Fitzgerald, Billie Holliday, and Lena Horne.

By then Hunter’s recording career had cooled off somewhat. In 1935 she recorded four songs for the American Record Company, which the company never released. In 1939 she recorded six songs for Decca, including another version of “Down Hearted Blues.” In 1940 she recorded four songs for Bluebird, accompanied by Eddie Heywood Jr. on piano. These were her last recordings until after the war.

USO Entertainer

During the World War II, Hunter entertained troops as a member of the United Service Organizations (USO). She did various tours in the Pacific (where she experienced an air raid) and European theaters, entertaining General Eisenhower, Field Marshal Montgomery, and Marshal Zhukov. She continued entertaining troops during peacetime and later toured again with the USO during the Korean War (1950–1953). During the postwar years she also continued performing in clubs and shows.

Hunter resumed her recording career in 1946 with two small companies: Juke Box, for whom she recorded two songs, and Stash, recording just one song. In 1950 she recorded on Regal and in 1952 she cut two songs for Wheeler and four songs for Prestige/Bluesville, but her career was obviously slowing down. Never the Broadway star she had hoped to become when she moved to New York, she appeared in a number of revues and plays into the mid-1950s, but work was sporadic and when one play in particular, Debut, closed after four days on Broadway she de-
cided to call it a career. Or rather, she decided to change careers.

Other Careers
On August 14, 1956, Alberta Hunter graduated from the Harlem YWCA nursing school and became a licensed practical nurse. She had lied about her age to get into the school, declaring that she was twelve years younger than she was, thus coming full circle from her earliest Chicago days when she had pretended to be older to sneak into clubs. She worked as a nurse for more than twenty years and retired in 1977 at what officials thought was the mandatory retirement age of 70; she was 82 years old. The only nod Hunter gave to her performing career during her years as a nurse was in 1961 when one of her old accompanists and songwriting partner, Lovie Austin, talked her into recording an LP for the Riverside label titled, Alberta Hunter with Lovie Austin's Blues Seranaders. The songs included “Down Hearted Blues,” “Moanin’ Low,” “Streets Paved with Gold,” and “St. Louis Blues.”

After retiring as a nurse Hunter effortlessly resumed her career as a New York cabaret singer and recording artist. This second career made her a bigger star than she had previously been. In 1977 she was performing at the Cookery in New York’s Greenwich Village. By the end of the year she had a recording contract with Columbia Records and had recorded the LP Remember My Name, the soundtrack of the film of the same name. Hunter played Carnegie Hall on June 27, 1978, and also gave command performance for the Carter White House. In 1979 she recorded the album Amtrak Blues. She followed this up in 1981 with The Glory of Alberta Hunter and in 1983 completed Look for the Silver Lining. Alberta Hunter died on October 17, 1984, in New York City.

Books

Periodicals

Online

Anna Hyatt Huntington
A prolific and innovative American sculptor, Anna Vaughn Hyatt Huntington (1876–1973) was one of the masters of naturalistic animal sculpture. Particularly noted for her equestrian statues, Huntington, along with her husband, helped found nearly 20 museums and wildlife preserves as well as America’s first sculpture garden, Brookgreen Gardens in South Carolina.

The youngest of three children, Huntington was born Anna Vaughn Hyatt on March 10, 1876, in Cambridge, Massachusetts, to noted paleontologist Alpheus Hyatt and amateur landscape artist Aduella Beebe Hyatt. From an early age, Huntington followed the examples of her parents by acquiring both an extensive knowledge of the anatomy and behavior of animals and an enthusiasm for drawing. As a child at her family’s summer home, Seven Acres, in Cape Cod and at her brother’s farm, Porto Bello, in rural Maryland, Huntington developed an affection for horses; as Charlotte Streifer Rubinstein related in American Women Artists, “[s]earching for her once at dinnertime, her family found her lying in a field, nose to nose with a horse, watching the action of its jaw muscles as it chewed on a cud of grass.” During her childhood sojourns in the countryside, Huntington also made her first clay models of horses, dogs, and other domestic animals.

Although Huntington was fascinated by the animal world, she initially entered a private school in Cambridge to study the violin and spent several years training to become a professional concert violinist. At the age of 19, while suffering from an illness—possibly nervous exhaustion—Huntington assisted her sister, Harriet Hyatt (Mayor), repair the broken foot on a sculpture the elder had produced. Pleased with the results, the elder Hyatt sister asked her to collaborate on a sculpture which included the family dog; in Energy and Individuality in the Art of Anna Huntington, Sculptor, and Amy Beach, Composer, Myrna Eden reported that “the sculpture group was accepted for exhibition by one of the national art societies, and purchased.” Having
found both enjoyment and success in her first professional sculpture, Huntington turned away from the violin to study under Boston portrait sculptor Henry Hudson Kitson. Her first one-woman show was held at the Boston Arts Club. It consisted of 40 animal sculptures. Her original plan was to open an art school. However, the death of her father and marriage of her sister to Alfred Mayor changed these early plans. Huntington left Massachusetts for New York City.

**Perfected Her Art**

In New York, Huntington continued her frequently self-directed studies. She attended the Art Students League, where she studied under three sculptors: George Grey Barnard, Hermon MacNeil, and Gutzon Borglum, the designer of Mount Rushmore. Preferring to work independently, Huntington left formal instruction in favor of direct observation. Over the next few years, she spent much of her time at the Bronx Zoo. As Wayne Craven explained in *Sculpture in America*, “[Huntington] became fascinated with the beauty found in the great cats of the New York zoo, particularly a prize jaguar called Senor Lopez.” The figures modeled from these personal observations, including the 1902 equestrian work *Winter Noon* and the 1906 sculpture *Reaching Jaguar*, based on Senor Lopez, became Huntington’s first major works.

During this period, Huntington shared several studios with other young female artists and musicians; one of these was Abastenia St. Leger Eberle, another up-and-coming sculptor. Eden related that: “Anna and Abastenia formed an artistic partnership which led them to collaborate on at least two statues: *Men and Bull*, awarded a bronze medal at the Louisiana Purchase Exposition of 1904, and *Boy and Goat Playing*, exhibited during the spring of 1905 in the gallery of the Society of American Artists.” The two sculptors worked together for about two years before following their individual paths, Huntington preferring a more traditional style and Eberle favoring the more modern Ash Can style.

**First Major Commissions**

In *American Women Sculptors*, Rubinstein quoted Huntington as saying, “One ought to be perfectly independent in one’s work and above outside influence . . . before going abroad.” By 1907, Huntington felt confident enough in her abilities to travel to Europe. Choosing to forgo academic study in order to pursue her craft independently, Huntington took a studio in Auvers-sur-Oise where she modeled two more jaguars that were exhibited at the Paris Salon of 1908. In the autumn of 1908, Huntington left France for Naples, Italy, to work on a colossal lion commissioned by a high school in Dayton, Ohio. Huntington returned to the United States for the dedication ceremonies, but went back to France about a year later to commence modeling another grand-scale piece.

For years, Huntington had wanted to produce a life-sized equestrian statue of Joan of Arc, and she now devoted herself entirely to this goal. Rubinstein described this process in *American Women Sculptors*: “The sculptor . . . immersed herself in research about the saint. She traveled to Rouen and other places [Joan] had lived . . . searched the streets of Paris for the right kind of horse and . . . brought it to her studio. . . . Shutting herself in her studio and working ten hours a day, she massed three and half tons of clay, built the armature, and carried out the work in four months.” This early model garnered an honorable mention at the Paris Salon of 1910, and led to Huntington’s being offered a commission by the City of New York to produce the model in bronze to honor the saint’s 500th birthday. A replica of this bronze was erected in Blois, France, and the French government made Huntington a Chevalier of the Legion of Honor. Throughout this period, Huntington received several other commissions and honors, raising her career to new heights. In 1912, she was one of only 12 women in the U.S. making at least $50,000 a year; in 1915, she received the Purple Rosette from the French government; and in 1916, she won the Rodin Gold Medal from the Plastics Club of Philadelphia as well as becoming an associate of the National Academy of Design.

**Marriage to Archer Huntington**

Following a brief withdrawal to Cape Cod during World War I, Huntington returned to New York City to take up new works, including a standing Joan of Arc and two sculptures depicting the Greek goddess Diana. One of these, *Diana of the Chase*, won the National Academy of Design’s Saltus Award in 1922. Around this time, Huntington was working with railroad heir and philanthropist Archer Milton Huntington on an upcoming Hispanic Society sculpture exhibition. The two married quietly—and suddenly—in Huntington’s studio on her 47th birthday in 1923. According to *American Women Sculptors*, “[b]oth were tall, imposing figures; they shared cultural interests and a sense of noblesse oblige toward their community. It was said of Archer Huntington that wherever he put his foot down, a museum sprang up.” The couple took an extended honeymoon; following their return to New York, Huntington took on several new commissions, including her second major equestrian work, *El Cid Campeador*, in honor of the medieval Spanish warrior.

From the mid-1920s on, Huntington battled tuberculosis, reducing her output dramatically. Most of Huntington’s works during this time were inspired by her husband’s fascination with Spanish culture; she produced a number of pieces for the New York grounds of the Hispanic Society of America, founded by her husband. In spite of decreased production, Huntington continued to enjoy public recognition, as detailed in *Sculpture in America*: “[Huntington’s] *Fighting Bulls* received the Shaw Prize at the National Academy of Design show in 1928, and the following year she received the Grand Cross of Alfonso XII from the Spanish government; in 1930 she won the Gold Medal of the American Academy of Arts and Letters, and two years later Syracuse University gave her an honorary Doctor of Arts degree in recognition of her work.” Huntington was also made an Officer of the French Legion of Honor in 1933.

**Founded Brookgreen Gardens**

In 1930, the Huntingtons purchased approximately 7,000 acres of former plantation land in the coastal region of...
South Carolina to provide a better winter environment for Huntington’s illness. The milder climate permitted Huntington to resume work, and the estate, Brookgreen Gardens, became the first modern sculpture garden when the grounds were opened to the public in 1932. The Brookgreen collection includes many works Huntington completed while living at Atalaya, the Huntingtons’ winter home on the estate, including several cast in aluminum—some of the earliest sculptures to use that medium. Brookgreen also features works by many other sculptors of the era. A Guide to the Sculpture Parks and Gardens of America commented that, “[d]uring the Depression years of the 1930s, the Huntingtons’ acquisitions were a boon to struggling artists; in its first six years, the Brookgreen added 197 art works.”

A Return to Health and Productivity

After her recovery from tuberculosis, Huntington resumed work vigorously. In 1936, the American Academy of Arts and Letters held a retrospective exhibition of 171 of Huntington’s works in New York. The following year, she received the Pennsylvania Academy’s Widener Gold Medal for Greyhounds Playing. According to Energy and Individuality in the Art of Anna Huntington, Sculptor, and Amy Beach, Composer, “[t]hat same year she had her first solo exhibition on the West Coast at the Palace of the Legion of Honor at San Francisco.” Huntington then arranged for 65 pieces from her 1936 New York exhibition to tour the United States through 1938 and 1939.

In the late 1930s, the Huntingtons donated their Fifth Avenue townhouse to the National Academy of Design and left for a Haverstraw, New York, estate called Rocos. Huntington here acquired her own zoo featuring monkeys, bears, wolves, and wild boars for use in continued animal modeling. After a few years, the Huntingtons donated this estate and zoo to the state of New York and moved to a large farm, named Stanerigg in honor of the Huntingtons’ Scottish deerhounds, in Redding, Connecticut. Huntington spent the duration of World War II on both her art and on wartime support, including the canning of produce from Victory Gardens and the sponsorship of a chapter of the Red Cross in her home at Stanerigg. Notable pieces dating from this era include two bas-reliefs at New York’s Hispanic Society Museum, Don Quixote and Boabdil.

Later Accomplishments and a Lasting Body of Work

With the advent of the 1950s, modern, abstract sculpture began to replace Huntington’s more traditional, academic style, much to the artist’s dismay. Huntington was quoted in American Women Sculptors as referring to modernism “as an overwhelming flood of degenerate trash drowning sincere and conservative workers in all the arts.” Her husband became ill and Huntington spent much of her time caring for him. However, she continued to work, producing even large pieces such as the equestrian Lady Godiva for an art association in Indiana and a group of large figures entitled The Torch Bearers, installed in Madrid in 1955.

Following Archer Huntington’s death, Huntington returned to full-time art work, despite being in her 80s. Between 1959 and 1966, she completed five more equestrian statues, including one of the late 19th century writer and activist José Martí; one of a young Abraham Lincoln; and one of a young Andrew Jackson. On Huntington’s 90th birthday in 1966 she was still working, reportedly on a bust of the composer Charles Ives.

Around the end of the 1960s, Huntington finally retired from creative work. She died on October 4, 1973, in Redding, Connecticut, following a series of strokes. Active over a period of 70 years, Huntington is today recognized as one of America’s finest animal sculptors, whose naturalistic works helped to bridge the gap between the traditional styles of the 1800s and the abstract styles of the mid-20th century. Her prominence also enabled other female artists to succeed. Her innovations in technique and display, as exhibited through her aluminum statues in Brookgreen Gardens, guarantee her place in the annals of art history.

Books

Craven, Wayne, Sculpture in America from the Colonial Period to the Present, Thomas Y. Crowell Company, 1968.

Online

Innocent IV

Pope Innocent IV (c. 1185–1254), whose pontificate extended from June 25, 1243, to December 7, 1254, is chiefly remembered for his disputes with Emperor Frederick II and as the author of a commentary on the decretals of Pope Gregory IX.

Early Life

Born Sinibaldo dei Fieschi in Genoa, Italy, sometime between 1180 and 1190, Pope Innocent IV was a member of a powerful Italian noble family. Innocent IV’s father, Hugh, the count of Lavagna, received the Fieschi name for his service to the emperor as controller of fiscal affairs. A nephew of Innocent IV would become Pope Adrian V in 1276.

Innocent studied law in Parma, where his uncle was a bishop. Innocent continued his studies in Bologna, and later references to him by Pope Honorius III suggest that he may have earned a law degree in that city. Innocent may also have taught in Bologna, but no definite evidence of that has been uncovered. Further speculation is that Innocent began work on the Decretals of Gregory IX while he was at Bologna.

In 1226 the future pope left school to become an auditor of the papal Curia. After Gregory IX became pope, Innocent was appointed vice-chancellor of the Roman church in 1227, and soon thereafter he became a cardinal. In 1234, Gregory appointed Innocent governor of the March, in the Papal States. But Innocent apparently remained in Rome during his governorship, because his signature appears on many papal letters from that time. In 1235 he was named Bishop of Albenga and legate of Northern Italy.

Elevated to Papacy

While Innocent was working in the Curia, relations between the emperor and the pope began to disintegrate. By 1238, Emperor Frederick II had begun claiming sovereignty over central Italy and even Rome. In response, the pope called a general council. Frederick seized two cardinals who were on their way to Rome to attend the council and held them captive on an island off the coast of Tuscany.

Pope Gregory IX died in 1241, and the College of Cardinals immediately convened to elect a new pope. But the new pope, Celestine IV, died after a reign of only fifteen days. Meanwhile, the two cardinals were still held prisoner by the emperor, and Frederick was excommunicated. The College of Cardinals could not agree on how to deal with the emperor, and the papacy remained vacant for nearly 18 months until June 1243, when the cardinals elected Innocent pope. On his elevation, Innocent took the name Innocent IV.

Prior to being elected pope, Innocent IV had been a friend of Frederick II, and the emperor sent messengers to Rome with congratulations and peace overtures. But Innocent refused to receive the messengers.

Negotiations with Frederick

Two months after his investiture, Innocent sent two legates to try to convince Frederick to release the two cardinals. He also asked his legates to find out what compensation Frederick was prepared to make for the harm he had caused the Church. If Frederick denied any wrongdoing, the legates were instructed to propose settling the matter before a council of kings, prelates, and secular princes. On March 31, 1244, Frederick promised to accede to most of the
demands of the Curia, including restoration of the Papal States, release of the cardinals, and the granting of amnesty to allies of the pope. The apparent restoration of peace could not have been more timely—the Mongols were threatening Eastern Europe and in 1244 the Muslims captured Jerusalem.

But peace remained elusive. Frederick was slow to honor his promises, and he still refused to release the cardinals. He also secretly incited civil disorder in Rome. About the time that a formal signing of the negotiated treaty between Frederick and the Church was scheduled, Innocent, mistrusting his adversary, fled Italy.

Exile in Lyons
The pope initially traveled to Sutri, Italy, and then made his way in disguise over the mountains to Civitavecchia, where a fleet was waiting to take him to Genoa. By October 1244, he was in Burgundy, and by December he had reached Lyons, France.

Upon arriving in Lyons, Innocent called a general council, the 13th ecumenical, which was convened in 1245. Although Lyons was within Frederick’s empire, the pope enjoyed the protection of the French king there, so was not threatened by Frederick. Lyons also was easily accessible to many prelates without risking capture by Frederick.

First Council of Lyons
At the opening of the general council on June 26, 1245, Innocent outlined his agenda, which far exceeded his concern about Frederick. Besides his problems with the emperor, he also hoped to address problems with the clergy and difficulties with the Muslims. When the meeting opened, three patriarchs and about 150 bishops were in attendance. Also present was the Latin emperor of Constantinople. But many church leaders had been prevented from attending either by the invasions of the Tartars in the east, the Muslim incursions in Jerusalem, or intimidation by Frederick.

Innocent was particularly concerned with the Tartars, and he sent a papal envoy to the ruler of the Mongol empire. By this time, Innocent had ruled that the pope held authority over non-Christians and could punish them if they violated the laws of nature. Innocent also decreed that non-Christians were obligated to permit Christian missionaries to visit them. If they refused, Innocent believed that the pope could call for a war against them. Innocent’s policy would influence future missionary endeavors by the Church for centuries to come.

Shortly before the Council at Lyons convened, Innocent once again excommunicated Frederick. During the council, he summoned Frederick to Lyons. The emperor did not show up, but instead sent his legate Thaddeus of Suessa. Although Thaddeus argued strongly in defense of Frederick, the council nevertheless ordered the emperor deposed, calling for the German princes to elect a new emperor. Some of the princes responded, and Henry Raspe, Landgrave of Thuringia, was elected emperor. When Frederick heard of his deposition, he reportedly placed a crown on his head and challenged the pope to knock it off.

But Henry died shortly thereafter, and the princes elected William, the Count of Holland, in his place. But most of the princes had abstained from voting and neither Henry nor William received wide recognition. They were too weak to challenge Frederick’s son and ally, Conrad.

Innocent attempted to mount a crusade against Frederick, but his ally King Louis IX of France, the only monarch powerful enough to confront Frederick, was unwilling to sign up for such an undertaking. Instead, the French king attempted to mediate a settlement.

Last Acts
In 1248 Innocent renewed Frederick’s excommunication. With Frederick’s death at the end of 1250, Innocent was once again in a position to exert his authority in central Italy. Innocent set out for Rome from Lyons on April 19, 1251, arriving there in October 1253.

Following Frederick’s death, Innocent campaigned for the deposition of his heirs. Innocent offered the crown of Sicily, which he controlled, to Richard of Cornwall and later to Charles of Anjou. But since Conrad’s half brother Manfred still held power in Sicily, there were no takers. After Manfred submitted to the papacy, Innocent made his way into Naples in 1254. But Manfred revolted and defeated the papal army at Foggia.

Legacy
Innocent’s commentary on the Decretals of Gregory IX was cited by almost every jurist from his contemporaries to
those of the seventeenth century. Innocent is also remembered for his commentary of the First Council of Lyon.

Following precedents set by Innocent III, Innocent IV extended papal authority in the church and over secular matters. Innocent IV held that the pope could choose between two imperial candidates, depose an emperor, and exercise imperial authority when the throne was empty. As noted, although he permitted non-Christian rulers to hold power, he held that those rulers must permit Christian missionaries to proselytize in their countries.

Innocent IV believed that since Christ had the power to depose emperors, the pope held the same authority as the vicar of Christ. Innocent IV attempted to exert his influence over several potentates besides Frederick. In England, he extended his protection to Henry III against the lay and church nobility. In Austria, he confirmed the son of King Wenzel as duke and later mediated between him and the king of Hungary. In Portugal, he appointed Alfonso III as administrator of the kingdom.

His continual fighting with Frederick led to the neglect of the internal affairs of the Church, thus Italy was left deserted. Taxation by the Church increased, which prompted loud complaints from the populace. Church abuses were overlooked as the pope remained preoccupied with his struggle with the emperor.

Innocent IV, severely ill with pleurisy, died in Naples on December 7, 1254, and was buried in a tomb at the Basilica of Santa Restituta in Naples.

Books
Brecher, Joseph S., Popes Through the Ages, Neff-Kane, 1980.

Online
Sophia Jex-Blake

Sophia Jex-Blake (1840–1912) led a long and difficult struggle to open the medical profession to women in Great Britain. After many years of trying to gain admittance to a Scottish medical school, she succeeded in getting Parliament to guarantee women’s right to a medical education and testing. She became licensed at the age of 37 and opened a private practice in Scotland the following year, becoming the country’s first female doctor. Her tenacious fight for women to have the right to become doctors opened the door for women in the medical profession.

Sophia Jex-Blake was born to a wealthy and religious family in Sussex, England, on January 21, 1840. Her father, Thomas Jex-Blake, was a retired attorney. Her mother, Maria Jex-Blake, was often sickly. Jex-Blake’s parents were devoted to their children and ran a strict religious household in which dancing, theater-going, and other “worldly amusements” were forbidden. The family’s older children, a son, eight years older than Sophia, and a daughter, six years older, accepted their conservative upbringing. But Sophia was an energetic and audacious child whose strong will often clashed with her parents’ expectations for their Victorian daughter. Still, Sophia and her parents had a close and loving relationship throughout their lives. “No one ever had better parents than I,” Sophia often said, according to a biography by Margaret Todd.

Jex-Blake was a bright, intelligent child whose thirst for knowledge was not satisfied by the schools meant to mold Victorian girls into homemakers and mothers. Jex-Blake was shuffled from school to school because her teachers and her ailing mother found it difficult to handle her excitable behavior. Jex-Blake showed little interest in marriage and was denied participation in physical activity, such as horseback riding, that she craved.

Jex-Blake took an interest in teaching, one of the few professions open to women during the mid-19th century, and in 1858 she entered Queens College, one of the first colleges for women in England. For the first time in her life, she felt intellectually challenged. She particularly liked mathematics and tutored other students in the subject. She also learned bookkeeping. While at Queens College, Jex-Blake developed a loving friendship with Octavia Hill, who later became a social reformer. The two lived together until Hill broke off the relationship, leaving Jex-Blake devastated. She remained loyal to Hill for life. Todd wrote that a friend later said, “She was never the same again. It cut her life in two.”

In 1861, Jex-Blake finished her term at Queen’s College and went home. The following year, she enrolled in Edinburgh Ladies’ Educational Association in Scotland where she struggled to get over the loss of Hill’s friendship. In addition to mathematics, Jex-Blake was very interested in religion. She had a gift for public speaking and considered becoming a missionary, but preferred teaching. She dreamed of opening a university and traveled to Germany in 1862 to study the country’s education system. She took a job teaching at Grand Ducal Institute for Women in Mannheim. She was homesick and Jex-Blake had trouble in the position. Her students took advantage of the fact that she was not a strict disciplinarian. In addition, Jex-Blake was not
equipped to teach the girls dancing, singing, playing, or embroidery. Although the situation eventually improved, Jex-Blake returned home after only one year.

**Traveled to America**

In 1865, Jex-Blake convinced her parents to allow her to travel to the United States to study its education system. “I have such a feeling that with the new world, a new life will open,” she said. In Boston, she met Dr. Lucy Sewall, a 28-year-old physician at the New England Hospital for Women and Children. Through their friendship, Jex-Blake was introduced to the field of medicine and the idea of feminism.

The trip shaped Jex-Blake’s attitudes about women, education, and careers. Feminism in America was more clearly defined and advanced than in Great Britain. Jex-Blake visited schools and colleges and in 1867 published *A Visit to Some American Schools and Colleges*.

Jex-Blake’s thoughts about religion changed while she was in the United States. She found that her religious ideas, which were considered mainstream in England, were extremely conservative in America. She gave up on the idea of becoming a minister, but she did later write some religious tracts.

Although she received no formal medical education, Jex-Blake worked along with Sewall and other doctors and students at the hospital. She learned practical hospital work, especially diseases of women. She worked as the hospital’s bookkeeper and pharmacist. The experience convinced her that she should become a physician.

Jex-Blake wanted to attend Harvard so that she could obtain an education equal to a man’s. She and another student requested admission to Harvard Medical School. When their request was denied, Jex-Blake persuaded some of the faculty to teach her and other women at Massachusetts General Hospital. Among her instructors was Dr. Oliver Wendell Holmes.

In 1868, Jex-Blake was admitted to the Women’s Medical College of the New York Infirmary, a new women’s college founded by Elizabeth and Emily Blackwell. (Elizabeth Blackwell was the first female physician in the United States.) However, she never attended the school because in the fall of 1869, Jex-Blake’s father died and she returned to England.

**The Struggle for a Medical Education**

Dealing with her grief and adjusting once again to life in Great Britain, Jex-Blake contemplated her education options. She researched the history of women in medicine and wrote an essay titled, “Medicine as a Profession for Women,” which was published in *Women’s Work and Women’s Culture*. It later appeared in her book, *Medical Women*.

Jex-Blake decided not to return to the United States. Instead, she pursued her medical education in Great Britain. In 1869, she was admitted to Edinburgh University’s medical school, but the university later overturned the decision. Jex-Blake began a long and tenacious campaign for admittance, attracting international attention along the way. In 1870, Jex-Blake and four other women were admitted to the school. They had to attend separate classes for women and pay higher tuition than men. But negative pressure continued and in 1869, the university discontinued the separate classes and advised the women to seek training at a local teaching hospital, the Royal Infirmary. The hospital refused to comply. The women were harassed by opponents, although there were sympathizers among the faculty, students, and in the community.

In November, the conflict came to a head in what became known as the riot at Surgeons’ Hall. When the ladies, now numbering seven, arrived for a class, 200 protesters blocked their entry to the classroom. The women were subjected to howls and jostling, according to *The Courant*, an Edinburgh newspaper. The incident earned publicity worldwide and the women gained sympathy and support. Among the seven students was Edith Pechey, a loyal friend of Jex-Blake’s. They worked side-by-side throughout the struggle and remained lifelong friends.

Jex-Blake led the students to file a lawsuit against the university for failing to allow them to complete their medical education. They won the suit, but lost an appeal. The women finally took their fight to Parliament where, after a difficult battle, they succeeded in getting supporters to pass a bill that allowed all medical schools in Great Britain to admit women. However, many institutions still denied women the right to take medical exams.

Throughout the long struggle, Jex-Blake and the other women had received instruction from sympathetic faculty. Jex-Blake completed her medical education in Switzerland...
and in 1877, Jex-Blake and four other women passed their medical exams at the College of Physicians in Dublin, Ireland. At the age of 37, Jex-Blake was now a licensed medical practitioner.

Established Medical Practice

Jex-Blake's strong will, which had confounded her parents and teachers when she was young, had helped her win women's right to medical education. Her determination and leadership were recognized on both sides as the driving force behind the movement. Pechev was quoted in the Jex-Blake biography, saying, "All we had done towards opening up the medical profession to women was due mainly to Miss Jex-Blake, who had got all the abuse because she had done all the work—in fact all along she had done the work of three women or . . . of ten men!"

Although she was a strong administrator, Jex-Blake was also difficult to work with. Her impulsive and autocratic manner led to a deep disappointment concerning a women's medical school she co-founded. Jex-Blake and Elizabeth Garrett Anderson founded the London School of Medicine for Women in 1874. Anderson was a London physician who had been educated in France and had introduced Jex-Blake to the cause of women's medical education in the 1860s. Jex-Blake expected to be named the London School's secretary, but because her temperament was considered inappropriate for the position, Jex-Blake was passed over in favor of Anderson.

Jex-Blake left London and established a private practice in Edinburgh, becoming Scotland's first female doctor in 1878. Eventually, she opened a cottage hospital known as the Edinburgh Hospital and Dispensary for Women and Children. She remained active in the women's medical movement as there were continuous efforts in Parliament to restrict women's ability to become doctors.

In 1881, Maria Jex-Blake died. Jex-Blake had been devoted to her mother throughout her life and the two had frequently exchanged loving and supportive letters. Jex-Blake withdrew from her practice, leaving the responsibility to a young assistant. The assistant maintained the practice and worked on laboratory experiments regarding the insolvency of fats. The experiments proved to be toxic and the assistant died. Jex-Blake was devastated by the loss of these two relationships. She gave up her practice and stayed with her friend Ursula DuPre, who nursed her back to physical and mental health. After two years, Jex-Blake moved back to Edinburgh and resumed her practice. She wrote The Care of Infants and a second edition of Medical Women.

Jex-Blake continued advocating for female medical students, who were still required to attend separate classes at the Edinburgh University. Her advocacy led to the formation of a women's college similar to the London School—the Edinburgh School of Medicine for Women, under the direction of Jex-Blake. She negotiated with a hospital to provide clinical training, making it possible for Scottish women to obtain a complete medical education for the first time.

The school functioned successfully for a year before Jex-Blake's unyielding personality clashed with students who found her to be inflexible. The bitter conflict led some students to found a new medical school for women. When many chose it over the Edinburgh School, financial difficulties arose. However, Jex-Blake was so dedicated to the cause of women's medical education that she never criticized the rival school. She supported it wholeheartedly because it advanced the cause of women's medical education.

In 1894, the Edinburgh University finally opened its medical exams to women, breaking one more barrier to women's ability to become doctors. That same year, the National Association for the Medical Education of Women honored Jex-Blake for her 25 years of dedication to women's medical education.

Retired at Age 59

The Edinburgh School of Medicine for Women remained open until 1898, when low enrollment forced its closure. Jex-Blake continued her private practice until 1899 when she retired to Sussex. Jex-Blake's business and home were acquired by Edinburgh Hospital and operated as Bruntsfield Hospital until 1989.

In retirement, Jex-Blake lived with Margaret Todd, a former student who was 20 years her junior. Todd, who was also a novelist, gave up her medical career after only five years to be with Jex-Blake. The two women spent their time reading, traveling, entertaining, and corresponding with friends. Jex-Blake remained interested in social causes, including the suffrage movement, which she supported.

Jex-Blake was very proud of her students' successes. She happily followed their careers and called them "my daughters," "my young girls," or "my doctors." She corresponded with hundreds of people during her life and kept all their letters. She also chronicled her life in voluminous diaries.

In her later years, Jex-Blake suffered a series of heart attacks and other ailments. She died on January 7, 1912, at the age of 71. She willed her possessions, including her personal papers, to Todd, who wrote a biography, The Life of Sophia Jex-Blake, in 1918. In accordance with Jex-Blake's wishes, Todd destroyed the personal papers after the book was published. A few months later, Todd committed suicide at the age of 58.

Books

Todd, Margaret, The Life of Sophia Jex-Blake, MacMillan and Co., 1918.


Pauline Johnson

Pauline Johnson (1861–1913) was the first Native American poet to have her work published in Canada and was one of the few women of her time who succeeded in supporting herself from her writings and recitals. Thousands of Canadian schoolchildren have read her poem "The Song My Paddle Sings."
Johnson was unique in her time because she recited her own work rather than that of others. Her recitals of her own poems, anecdotes, and plays were a refreshing change for American and Canadian audiences whose usual theatrical fare was Shakespeare or Ibsen. Johnson was never able to make much money from her writing, and most of her income came from her speaking tours.

Mixed Heritage

Emily Pauline Johnson was born on March 10, 1861, near Brantford, Ontario. She was one of four children born to George Johnson, a Mohawk chief on the Six Nations Indian Reserve, and Emily Howells, a wealthy white woman originally from Bristol, England. Her paternal grandfather was Mohawk chief Smoke Johnson.

Johnson’s mother was living with her family in Ohio when she decided to join her sister, who was living near Brantford. While staying there, she met George Johnson, who had been raised primarily among whites.

George and Emily Johnson were married in 1853 despite opposition from some white citizens of Brantford. Emily Johnson’s brother-in-law, a minister, refused to marry the couple. George Johnson’s mother was also opposed to the marriage; she was concerned their children would not be considered Mohawks. They had a private wedding but were hounded by curious onlookers after the ceremony.

George Johnson bought two hundred acres on the Indian reserve and built a mansion there that he named Chiefswood. Johnson grew up at Chiefswood. Although she had few playmates, she managed to find companionship in nature. The Grand River flowed alongside her house, and she enjoyed camping and canoeing. Chiefswood frequently played host to important visitors from England. In 1869, Prince Arthur, Duke of Connaught, who would later become governor-general of Canada, paid a visit.

Johnson’s mother encouraged her daughter to read the classics in English literature, including the works of Sir Walter Scott, John Milton, and William Shakespeare. Johnson attended the Brantford Model School and also had private instruction from her governess. Her formal education ended after seven years and she did not attend college. Her father and grandfather taught her Mohawk legends.

Budding Poet

As soon as she could write, Johnson started creating poems. Her early writings were influenced by her grandfather’s Indian tales and by the English poetry she heard from her mother. Canoeing would take on special significance in some of her poems, including “The Song My Paddle Sings.” By the time she had reached her late teens, she was a competent poet but not yet published.

George Johnson died in 1884 at the age of 67 following a beating he received while trying to stop whites from illegally taking timber from the Six Nations Reserve. After his death, the family could not afford to remain at Chiefswood, so they rented out the house and moved to Brantford. Johnson expected to marry but found no suitors. She brought in some income by writing poems, which she published in the local newspaper and in an anthology entitled Songs of the Great Dominion.

Poetry Recitations

Johnson initially wanted to take up acting, but her mother objected. In the minds of many Victorian women, acting was not a reputable occupation. Instead, Johnson agreed to give poetry recitations, a highly respectable occupation for women in those days. Over the next seventeen years, Johnson recited her poems in England, New England, and Canada. During much of this period, she lived in trains and hotels. All told, she made nineteen trips across Canada and six forays into the United States. Some of her recitals were accompanied by musicians or comedians.

Although Johnson never married, she was involved with her manager and traveling partner Walter McRae. Johnson first met McRae in 1897, when she was 35 and near the peak of her career. McRae, who was giving recitals of French-Canadian dialect poems throughout Canada and the United States, was 20. In 1899, the two formed a partnership; McRae took responsibility for arranging their tours, bookings, and transportation. McRae remained Johnson’s constant companion and co-performer until she retired.

In 1892, using the Mohawk name Tekahionwake, Johnson made her reading debut at a poetry recital held at the Young Liberals Club in Toronto. At the recital, Johnson read her poem “A Cry from an Indian Wife,” which argued that Canada had been taken unfairly from its first inhabitants. In “Indian Poet Princess,” she asked, “If some great nation came from far away, Wrestling their country from
their hapless braves,/Giving what they gave us—but wars
and graves.'' During half the performance, she wore an
evening gown, but in the other half, she dressed in buckskin
embellished with silver brooches, wampum belts, a blanket,
and two scalps.

Johnson toured to help defray the cost of printing her
first book of poetry. She read her poetry throughout Canada.
Her recitals took place in church halls, schoolhouses, and
even saloons. In larger towns she might appear in an opera
house.

Traveled to England

Johnson performed throughout Canada before traveling
to England, where she hoped to find a publisher for her first
book of poems. In England, she was warmly accepted and
frequently invited to recite her poetry at private parties held
by wealthy socialities.

Her first book of poetry, The White Wampum, ap-
ppeared in 1895 while she was still in England. It included
her famous poem “The Song My Paddle Sings.” After her
return to Canada, she again began touring while publishing
in North American magazines. Besides poetry, Johnson
wrote stories about Indian life, travel articles, and family
stories for a variety of magazines. Because she covered a
wide range of topics, she reached a diverse audience.

Johnson’s second book, Canadian Born, appeared in
1903. Critics did not consider the poems in it as strong as
those in her first collection, but the book sold well. Focusing
on the shared heritage of all Canadians, Johnson empha-
sized the debt that her themes had to Native American
culture. In the book’s preface, she wrote, “White race and
Red are one if they are but Canadian born.” About this time,
Johnson began cutting back on her public readings, having
begun to feel the toll of constant traveling on her health.

Hoping to retire in England, she made a second trip
there in 1906 but found no English journals or magazines
willing to publish her work. The “drawing room entertain-
ments” that had included Johnson on her visit to London
twelve years earlier were no longer in vogue. She made her
stage debut during this second trip in a large concert
hall, billed as “E. Pauline Johnson—Tehahionwake, Indian
Princess.”

Vancouver

Not finding the reception she had hoped for in England,
Johnson decided to make her home in Vancouver in 1909.
In 1911, she published Legends of Vancouver, based on
stories she had heard from Chief Joe Capilano of the
Squamish tribe of British Columbia. Johnson’s novel The
Moccasin Maker recounted experiences of Canadian
women—white, Indian and mixed-blood.

By 1911, Johnson knew that she had inoperable breast
cancer. She nevertheless continued to write through the last
years of her life. Many of her readers purchased her fourth
book, Flint and Feather, which contained all of her poems in
one volume, by subscription at premium rates to help defray
her medical expenses. Her poem from this period, “And He
Said Fight On,” conveyed her determination to defeat the
illness that was taking her life: “Time and its ally, Dark
Disarmament,/Have compassed me about/Have massed their
armies, and on battle bent/My forces put to rout;/But though I
fight alone, and fall, and die,/Talk terms of Peace? Not I.”

Johnson died on March 7, 1913, in Vancouver, British
Columbia, three days before her fifty-second birthday. Her
ashes were placed in Vancouver’s Stanley Park and later
marked by a large stone. Her final book, The Shagganappi,
was published posthumously.

Legacy

In the years immediately following Johnson’s death,
her work went largely ignored. But in the mid-1920s, there
was renewed interest in her poetry. Canadian schoolchil-
dren began studying “The Song My Paddle Sings.” In 1961,
to mark the 100th anniversary of her birth, the Canadian
government issued a Pauline Johnson postage stamp, the
first stamp to recognize a Canadian Indian and the first
Canadian stamp to recognize a woman who was not a
member of the British royal family.

Some critics believed Johnson was Canada’s best Na-
tive American poet. Some others attributed her success to
her theatrical talents or to her successful blending of Indian
and English elements in her poetry. For her part, Johnson
seemed to care little whether she was remembered as a
great poet. “Forget that I was Pauline Johnson, but remem-
ber that I was Tekahionwake, the Mohawk that humbly
aspired to be the saga singer of her people,” she was quoted
as saying in Lucie Hartley’s biography, Pauline Johnson.

Books


Online

“E. Pauline Johnson’s Legacy,’’ McMaster University,
http://www.
humanities.mcmaster.ca/~pjohnson/legacy.html (February
2003).

“Emily Pauline Johnson (1861–1913),” University of Minnesota
Voices from the Gaps, http://voices.cla.umn.edu/authors/
EmilyPaulineJohnson.html (February 2003).

“The Pauline Johnson Archive,” McMaster University,
http://
www.humanities.mcmaster.ca/~pjohnson/home.html (Feb-
ruary 2003).

Robert Johnson

Of all the great blues musicians, Robert Johnson
(1911–1938) was probably the most obscure. All
that is known of him for certain is that he recorded
29 songs; he died young; and he was one of the
greatest bluesmen of the Mississippi Delta.

There are only five dates in Johnson’s life that can
undeniably be used to assign him to a place in
history: Monday, November 23; Thursday, Novem-
ber 26; and Friday, November 27, 1936, he was in San
Antonio, Texas, at a recording session. Seven months later, on Saturday, June 19 and Sunday, June 20, 1937, he was in Dallas at another session. Everything else about his life is an attempt at reconstruction. As director Martin Scorsese says in his foreword to Alan Greenberg's play Love In Vain: A Vision of Robert Johnson, "The thing about Robert Johnson was that he only existed on his records. He was pure legend."

**Beginnings**

Robert Johnson was born in the Mississippi Delta (Hazlehurst, Mississippi) sometime around May 8, 1911, the 11th child of Julia Major Dodds, who had previously born 10 children to her husband Charles Dodds. Born illegitimate, Johnson did not take the Dodds name.

Twenty-two-year-old Charles Dodds had married Julia Major in Hazlehurst, Mississippi—about 35 miles from Jackson—in 1889. Charles Dodds owned land and made wicker furniture; his family was well off until he was forced out of Hazlehurst around 1909 by a lynching mob following an argument with some of the more prosperous townsfolk. (There was a family legend that Dodds escaped from Hazlehurst dressed in women's clothing.) Over the next two years, Julia Dodds sent their children one at a time to live with their father in Memphis, where Charles Dodds had adopted the name of Charles Spencer. Julia stayed behind in Hazlehurst with two daughters, until she was evicted for nonpayment of taxes.

By that time she had given birth to a son, Robert, who was fathered by a field worker named Nonah Johnson. Unwelcome in Charles Dodds' home, Julia Dodds became an itinerant field worker, picking cotton and living in camps as she moved among plantations. While she worked in the fields, her eight-year-old daughter took care of Johnson. Over the next ten years, Dodds would make repeated attempts to reunite the family, but Charles Dodds never stopped resenting her infidelity. Although Charles Dodds would eventually accept Johnson, he never would forgive his wife for giving birth to him. While in his teens, Johnson learned who his father was, and it was at that time that he began calling himself Robert Johnson.

Around 1914, Johnson moved in with Charles Dodds' family, which by that time included all of Dodds' children by Julia Dodds, as well as Dodds' mistress from Hazlehurst and their two children. Johnson would spend the next several years in Memphis, and it was reportedly about this time that he began playing the guitar under his older half-brother's tutelage.

Johnson did not rejoin his mother until she had remarried several years later. By the end of the decade, he was back in the Mississippi Delta living with his mother and her new husband, Dusty Willis. Johnson and his stepfather, who had little tolerance for music, did not get along, and Johnson had to slip out of the house to join his musician friends. Eventually he decided to run away.

It is not known whether Johnson attended school in the Delta during this time. Some later accounts say that he could neither read nor write, while others tell of his beautiful handwriting. In any case, everyone agrees that music was Johnson's first interest, and that he had gotten his start playing the jew's harp and harmonica.

**Bluesman**

By 1930, Johnson had married and become serious about playing the guitar. During the time that he was married, he lived with his sister and her husband. But his wife died in childbirth at the age of 16. By some accounts, Johnson briefly moved back with his mother and stepfather, where he encountered the same problems that he had found intolerable when he was growing up and soon left. In 1931, he married for a second time. By then, his fellow musicians were beginning to take note of his precocity on the guitar.

Johnson began traveling up and down the Delta, traveling by bus, hopping trains, and sometimes hitchhiking. When he arrived in a new town, he would play on street corners or in front of the local barbershop or a restaurant. He played what his audience asked for—not necessarily his own compositions. Anything he earned was based on tips, not salary. With an ability to pick up tunes at first hearing, Johnson had no trouble giving his audiences what they wanted. Also working in his favor was an ability to establish instant rapport with his audiences. In every town he stopped, Johnson would establish ties to the local community that would serve him in good stead when he passed through again a month or a year later.

Fellow musician Johnny Shines was 17 when he met Johnson in 1933. He estimated that Johnson was maybe a year older than himself. In Samuel Charters' Robert Johnson, the author quotes Shines as saying, "Robert was a very friendly person, even though he was sulky at times, you know. And I hung around Robert for quite a while. One evening he disappeared. He was kind of [a] peculiar fellow. Robert'd be standing up playing some place, playing like nobody's business. At about that time it was a hustle with him as well as a pleasure. And money'd be coming from all directions. But Robert'd just pick up and walk off and leave you standing there playing. And you wouldn't see Robert no more maybe in two or three weeks. . . . So Robert and I, we began journeying off. I was just, matter of fact, tagging along."

During this time Johnson established what would be a relatively long-term relationship with a woman who was about 15 years older than himself—the mother of future musician Robert Jr. Lockwood. But Johnson reportedly also had someone—a woman—to look after him in all of the towns he played in. Johnson would reportedly ask young women living in the country with their families whether he could go home with them, and in most cases the answer was yes. At least until their husbands came home or Johnson was ready to move on.

**Recording Sessions**

Around 1936, Johnson met H. C. Spier in Jackson, Mississippi, who ran a music store and doubled as a talent scout. Spier put Johnson in touch with Ernie Oertle, who offered to record the young musician in San Antonio, Texas. At the recording session, Johnson was too shy to perform in front of the musicians in the studio, so played facing the
wall. In the ensuing three-day session, Johnson played 16 selections. When the recording session was over, Johnson presumably returned home with several hundred dollars in his pocket—probably more money than he had ever had at one time.

Among the songs Johnson recorded in San Antonio were “Come On In My Kitchen,” “Kind Hearted Woman,” and “Cross Roads Blues.” “Come On In My Kitchen” included the lines: “The woman I love took from my best friend/Some joker got lucky, stole her back again/You better come on in my kitchen, it’s going to be rainin’ outdoors.” In “Cross Roads Blues,” another of his great songs, he sang: “I went to the crossroads, fell down on my knees./I went to the crossroads, fell down on my knees./I asked the Lord above, have mercy, save poor Bob if you please./Umb, standing at the crossroads I tried to flag a ride./Standing at the crossroads I tried to flag a ride./Ain’t nobody seem to know me, everybody pass me by.”

When his records began appearing, Johnson made the rounds to his relatives and the various children he had fathered to bring them the records himself. The first songs to appear were “Terraplane Blues” and “Last Fair Deal Gone Down,” probably the only recordings of his that he would live to hear.

In 1937, Johnson traveled to Dallas, Texas, for another recording session. Eleven records from this session would be released within the following year. Among them were the three songs that would largely contribute to Johnson’s posthumous fame: “Stones In My Heart,” “Me And The Devil,” and “Hell Hound On My Trail.” “Stones In My Heart” and “Me And The Devil” are both about betrayal and making a pact with the devil. The terrifying “Hell Hound On My Trail” is often considered to be the crowning achievement of blues-style music.

Interestingly, six of Johnson’s blues songs mention the devil or some form of the supernatural. In “Me And The Devil,” he began, “Early this morning when you knocked upon my door/Early this morning, umb, when you knocked upon my door/And I said, ‘Hello, Satan, I believe it’s time to go,’ ” before leading into “You may bury my body down by the highway side./You may bury my body, umm, down by the highway side./So my old evil spirit can get on a Greyhound bus and ride.”

**Death at the Crossroads**

In the last year of his life, Johnson is believed to have traveled to St. Louis and possibly Illinois. He spent some time in Memphis and traveled through the Mississippi Delta and Arkansas. By the time he died, at least six of his records had been released.

His death came on August 16, 1938, at the approximate age of 26 at a little country crossroads near Greenwood, Mississippi. He had been playing for several weeks at a country dance in a town about 15 miles from Greenwood when, by some accounts, he was given poisoned whiskey at the dance by the husband of a woman he had been seeing. Johnson was buried in the graveyard of a small church near Morgan City, Mississippi, not far from Greenwood, in an unmarked grave. His life would be short but his music would serve as the root source for an entire generation of blues and rock and roll musicians.

Among the Mississippi Delta bluesmen believed to have exerted the strongest influences on Johnson’s music are Charley Patton, Willie Brown, Howlin’ Wolf, Tommy Johnson, and Son House. Peter Guralnick, in *Searching for Robert Johnson*, quotes Son House, “We’d all play for the Saturday night balls, and there’d be this little boy standing around. That was Robert Johnson. He was just a little boy then. He blew harmonica and he was pretty good with that, but he wanted to play guitar.”

**Books**


**Frances Benjamin Johnston**

Once called America’s “court photographer” by *Life* magazine, Frances Benjamin Johnston (1864–1952) became famous doing both portraiture and documentary photography. Fortunate to know many of the rich and famous of her time, Johnston produced a body of work that serves as an important historical document. A staunch feminist and independent thinker, she campaigned to promote greater recognition of women photographers in the United States. The stark documentary style she brought to her most famous photographs would greatly influence the emerging art of photography.

**Early Life and Career**

An only child, Francis Benjamin Johnston was born in Grafton, West Virginia, in 1864 to affluent parents. She was raised in Washington, D.C. where her parents moved soon after she was born. In the nation’s capitol, her parents were active in the high-ranking political and social circles, and their connections, particularly her mother’s, would greatly benefit Johnston’s education and subsequent career as a photographer. Also, Johnston drew a great deal of inspiration from the independent female role models in her family: her free-willed Aunt Nin and her mother, who worked as a journalist for the *Baltimore Sun* and the *Rochester Democrat and Chronicle*.

Johnston graduated from the Notre Dame Academy near Baltimore in 1884, where she earned the equivalent of a high school diploma. Her parents’ connections to the Washington elite enabled her to study art in France, at the prestigious Academie Julien in Paris. She was one of the first
women ever to attend the school. In 1885, she returned to Washington at age 21, planning to make a living as an artist. For awhile, she drew illustrations for magazines and sometimes wrote columns. But she soon became more interested in photography because she felt it resulted in more accurate depictions than painting or drawing. Again, her mother’s connections served her well, as she soon began studying photography under Thomas Smillie at the Smithsonian Institution. Smillie taught the aspiring photographer how to use a camera and work inside a dark room.

It was not long before Johnston, who received her first camera from family friend George Eastman, began establishing a name for herself as a professional photographer. As her reputation developed, she also became an advocate of women’s involvement in photography, which was then a field that was dominated by men like the famous Civil War pictorial chronicler Mathew Brady. She was the first female member of the Capitol Camera Club. At the time, photography, or “pictorialism,” as it was called, was a relatively new field, and its application was mainly for journalistic purposes and not as an art form. As her skills developed, Johnston would incorporate both journalistic and artistic elements into her work, which would result in a distinctive style that greatly influenced the field and made her famous.

Her mother’s own journalistic activities especially benefited Johnston early in her career. Working as a newspaper reporter, her mother wrote about congressional activities as well as Washington inside information, and she knew all of the important people in the nation’s capital. She was also related to President Grover Cleveland’s wife. This helped open the doors of the White House for Johnston. From the 1880s and into the 1910s, she would take pictures during the administrations of Presidents Cleveland, Harrison, McKinley, Roosevelt, and Taft. This resulted in an outstanding and historically invaluable pictorial document that depicted the members of the various first families, as well as White House staff members and visitors.

**Independent Photographer and Woman**

In 1889, not long after she first gained entrance into the White House, Johnston opened a studio behind her father’s house. She soon developed a reputation both as a smart businesswoman and a talented photographer. Not only was she a founding member of the Business Women’s Club, but her own photographs decorated the club’s walls. She also developed a reputation as a free-thinking and strong-willed woman. Her independence and bohemian character was well characterized by her famous self-portrait that showed her pulling up her skirt and striking a rather manly pose while drinking a beer and smoking a cigarette. In this way, she helped symbolize the spirit of the “new woman” that was emerging during this period in the country’s history. The picture was designed to shock, as it flaunted traditional values. In fact, with that single pose, Johnston managed to purposefully target many of the taboos about women’s role in American society. Her aggressively feminist stance, combined with her independent nature, sometimes resulted in work that generated controversy. When she took a nude photograph of a social debutante, the young girl’s father filed a lawsuit against Johnston.

With her reputation as a hard-working professional established, Johnston became a successful photojournalist and took pictures as well as wrote for many popular publications. In 1897, she published an article in *The Ladies Home Journal*, “What A Woman Can Do With A Camera,” that outlined her thoughts on why she believed woman were particularly suited to photography. She also explained the training involved and how to operate a studio. Working as a freelance photographer during this period, she photographed a wide variety of people, including the famous and powerful, influential woman, and common laborers. Besides the nation’s presidents she photographed President Theodore Roosevelt’s high-spirited daughter Alice Roosevelt, noted feminist Susan B. Anthony, women workers in New England textile mills, iron workers, and coal miners. It is also surmised that she helped establish the tradition of school pictures for students. Once, while on assignment photographing students at a school in Washington, D.C., she was told there was no money to pay her, so she decided to offer the pictures for sale to the students’ parents.

**The Hampton Institute Project**

In 1899, when she was 37 years old and at the height of her skills, Johnston produced a collection of photographs that would rank among her most famous and best works. By this time, her talent and ambition would direct her into taking on larger projects. That year, the Hampton Institute, in Hampton, Virginia, a vocational school founded to train
ex-slaves, hired her to take pictures at the school that would be included in an exhibition about contemporary African American life.

The project demonstrated the best qualities of her work: her strong sense of pictorial composition coupled with her skillful arrangement of human subjects. Individual photographs, which depicted Hampton students in classrooms and vocational surroundings, demonstrated remarkable photographic clarity. Some were stark and intense, as Johnston played with black and white shading to a powerful effect that underscored the separation that existed between blacks and whites in American society.

Many of the pictures were presented at the Universal Exhibition in Paris in 1900 as part of the “American Negro” exhibit (organized by prominent black leaders such as W. E. B. DuBois and Booker T. Washington) and at the Pan-American Exposition in 1901.

The Hampton photographs alone would have been enough to secure Johnston’s status of one of America’s greatest photographers. But she had other great works ahead of her. Like the images in the Hampton collection, the other photographs that Johnston produced at this point in her career provide a rich pictorial account of the United States, as her work preserved images of settings and famous people that defined the essence of a particular period of the nation’s history.

The same year she took the Hampton photographs, she took pictures aboard Admiral Dewey’s battleship, the U.S.S. Olympia, when it was stationed in the Manila Bay. Like the Hampton project, this assignment provided an extensive pictorial document, as it captured life on board the ship and showed the famous admiral on the deck. It also generated a great deal of publicity and it added to her stature. This period also included her famous photographic portraits of Teddy Roosevelt and Mark Twain. At the Roosevelt White House, she took pictures of the president’s children playing with their pet pony as well as the famous 1902 photo of Alice Roosevelt, which gained acclaim for perfectly capturing the essence of the president’s daughter’s adventurous spirit. Her famous 1906 portrait of Mark Twain has become part of America’s iconography.

As her stature as a photographer grew, so did her reputation as a one of the 19th Century “liberated” women: an unmarried American female who could support herself with her own career and was strongly conscious of gender issues. Continuing to advocate on behalf of women photographers, Johnston, in 1900, organized an exhibit of women photographers for the Universal Exhibition in Paris, the same year when her Hampton photographs were exhibited. The exhibit included 148 works. The women’s exhibit was presented at the Third International Photographic Congress, which was held in conjunction with the Paris exposition. Johnston received both publicity and professional recognition for her efforts.

**McKinley Assassinated**

Johnston’s fame grew to even greater proportions in 1901 when fate brought her within intimate proximity of one of the tragedies of American history. She traveled to Buffalo to photograph a major exhibition, which was taking place in early September. Her visit coincided with that of President William McKinley, who was also attending the event, so she could take pictures of him as well. As it turned out, she would take the last picture of McKinley alive, only minutes before he was killed by an assassin’s bullet.

After the assassination, Johnston made and sold postcard-sized copies of this image of McKinley speaking at the Exposition grounds the day before he was shot. It became a hugely popular seller.

**Later Career**

Even as she approached and then surpassed her 50’s, Johnston really never slowed down in her pursuit of new projects and new subject matter. She even actively engaged in acquiring new knowledge about her profession. In 1905, Johnston, her mother, and her aunt became close friends with the Lumiere brothers in France. They taught Johnston the theory and practice of their new photographic process. By 1912, she was making “color photo-transparencies.” In 1906, she took only a large project, similar in scope to the Hampton project, when she photographed the Tuskegee Institute in Alabama.

In 1910, her career direction took a significant shift when she began specializing in architectural photography. Instead of doing portraiture and journalistic pieces, Johnston now photographed striking examples of architecture as well as the homes and gardens of rich and famous people. During the period, she lived with Mattie Hewitt. The two women shared a profession as well as a relationship for about eight years. They went their separate ways in 1917.

Johnston moved south in July of 1927 when, during a car tour of the eastern United States, she decided to settle in Virginia. Several years later, during the Great Depression, and funded by a grant from the Carnegie Institute, she again took to the road and traveled throughout the country taking photographs.

Johnston’s most significant project during her architectural phase involved photographing still-standing pre-Civil War, or antebellum, mansions and early buildings throughout nine southern states. She was again funded by the Carnegie Institute. Johnston’s purpose was to capture the essence and preserve a record of early architecture indigenous to the south before the buildings were lost forever.

**Later Life**

She moved permanently to New Orleans, Louisiana, in 1945, where she enjoyed being part of the bohemian culture. She bought a home on that city’s famous Bourbon Street, where she continued her architectural photography and socialized with an eccentric, artistic crowd that included fellow photographer Joseph Whitsell.

Johnston died on March 16, 1952, in New Orleans, Louisiana. Before her death, she once stated that she was happy that she never did “marry for money.” In fact, a liberated woman until the day she died, Johnston never married at all. After her death, her estate donated a great
deal of her photographs to the Library of Congress in Washington, D.C.

Books

Online


Antoine Henri Jomini
Baron Antoine Henri Jomini (1779–1869) drew on his experience in the armies of French Emperor Napoleon Bonaparte to write the first systematic study of military strategy. The science of warfare as outlined in his *Précis de l’art de la guerre* (*The Art of War*) has been studied by military commanders in the years since Jomini’s death, and it continues to influence the way modern warfare is waged, discussed, and studied.

Baron Antoine Henri Jomini rose in the ranks of the Swiss army, eventually serving under Marshall Michel Ney as chief of staff and becoming a baron in 1807. Loyal to French Emperor Napoleon Bonaparte, Jomini distinguished himself in 1806 at the battle of Jena as well as during France’s takeover of Spain. His continued fame rests on his now-classic 1836 *Précis de l’art de guerre*, which advocates the use of large land forces, speed, maneuverability, and the capture of strategic points during battle. Jomini’s work remained influential with military leaders throughout the 1800s, most notably during the U.S. Civil War.

Leaves Business for Battlefield
Jomini was born on March 6, 1779, in the town of Payerne, located in the Swiss canton of Vaud. His parents, of Italian descent, were of modest means and gave their son a good education. As a child he was fascinated by soldiers and the art of war and was eager to attend the Prince de Wurtemberg’s military academy in Montbéliard, but his family’s circumstances did not permit this. Unable to afford a commission in the Swiss Wattleville regiment then under the command of the French, at age 14 he was sent to business school in Aarau with the intent that he train for a career. In April of 1795 he moved to Basle where he found a clerical position at the banking house of Monsieurs Preiswerk.

Moving to Paris in 1796, Jomini worked as a bank clerk for Monsieurs Mosselmann before leaving to become a stockbroker in partnership with another young man. Napoleon’s successes in Italy at Lodi, Castiglione, and Lonato inspired Jomini to begin to write on military matters, and he began to study comparative warfare in earnest. His first published study of military operations were that of Frederick II. In 1798 he left his business career behind to reenlist in the Swiss army where he was appointed aide-de-camp to the minister of war of the Helvetic Republic.

Formulated Military Theory
In 1799 Jomini was appointed bureau chief within the Swiss war office, and in the following months, now with the rank of major, he reorganized the ministry for the Swiss War. He drew on his growing knowledge of military operations to standardize several procedures, taking advantage of his position to experiment with organizational systems and strategies. Leaving Switzerland in 1801, Jomini returned to Paris and worked for two years at a military equipment manufacturer before abandoning commerce for good and beginning the first of his books dealing with military theory and history, *Traité des grandes opérations militaires*. In this work, published in eight volumes between 1804 and 1810 and translated as *Treatise on Grand Military Operations*, Jomini presented an overview of the general principles of warfare. He included a critical history of the military actions of Frederick II, “the Great,” during the Seven Years’ War, contrasting them unfavorably with the battles waged by Napoleon Bonaparte. Not surprisingly, this work caught the attention of the French emperor, who eventually offered Jomini a position within his own ranks.

Jomini’s *Traité des grandes opérations militaires* was the first of several works, including *Principes de la stratégie* (1818), and the 15-volume, 1819-1824 work *Histoire critique et militaire des guerres de la Révolution*, which addressed the wars of the French Revolution. The grossly inept early campaigns of the French Revolution had, in fact, inspired Jomini’s search for scientific principles underlying successful warfare, but he waited to publish his *Histoire critique* until most of the generals he criticized were dead. In each of his writings he described actual battles and theorized why the actions taken either were successful or failed. A child of the Enlightenment, he sought to determine the laws of military strategy, inviolable scientific principles
that could be followed to wage a successful war. Such laws would, Jomini believed, provide continuity among the diverse forces at work within an army and thus make war controlled and of minimal duration.

Ironically, Jomini was at first unable to gain entrance into either the French or Russian military on the basis of his Traité des grandes opérations militaires, the implication being that one so young had little to teach older and far more experienced generals. Finally his work came to the attention of Marshal Ney, who took Jomini into his staff in 1805 and provided the funds necessary for the young man to publish his book. Jomini fought with the Sixth Corps against Austria at Ulm in 1805 and served as senior-aide-de-camp against the Prussian Army at Jena and Bautzen the following year. Following the 1807 peace of Tilsit, he was created Baron of the Empire on July 27, 1808, in recognition of his service. During Napoleon’s campaigns to take Spain in 1808, he fought bravely and was made brigade general in 1810. When the French army retreated from Russia Jomini also handled his role commendably and was appointed brigadier general in 1813.

Throughout his career in the army of Napoleon, Jomini exhibited complete confidence in his ability to discern “correct” and “incorrect” strategies in line with his theories. Such confidence was interpreted as arrogance by many officers, including Murat and Marshal Berthier, who likely also resented the preferential treatment given to the younger man by Napoleon. In August of 1813, as the result of efforts by Berthier to discredit him and sabotage a well-earned promotion to major general following Ney’s victory at the battle of Bautzen, Jomini was forced from the French ranks. Angered and humiliated at his treatment, he traded allegiances, left France, and joined the Russian Army as lieutenant general and aide-de-camp to Alexander I. Aiding in Russia in ending Napoleon’s efforts to conquer Eastern Europe, Jomini was allowed to abstain from all military action that took place on French soil. Advancing to general-in-chief in the service of Russia in 1826, he became the military tutor of the Tzarevich Nicholas. As one of his final duties in the Russian military, Jomini was put in charge of organizing the Russian staff college in 1830.

Under Bonaparte, the French had revolutionized warfare by decentralizing command, using a predominately conscripted force and vesting both political and military power in a single leader. Influenced by Alexander the Great, Hannibal, and Caesar, Napoleon had little concern for individual victories or defeats, and even placed the conquest of land secondary; he focused on the overall goal of destroying his enemy through a massed concentration of force. The observation of Napoleon’s battle strategy strongly influenced Jomini’s theory and became the foundation of his greatest work, 1836’s Precis de l’art de la guerre, translated in 1862 as The Art of War, which was written to provide military instruction for the Grand Duke of Russia, the future Nicholas I. Jomini believed that after the age of Napoleon, war would no longer be considered the private affair of individual monarchs; instead it would be waged nation against nation. In his Precis he defined for the first time the three main categories of military activity—strategy, tactics, and logistics—and postulated his “Fundamental Principle of War.”

Jomini’s “Fundamental Principle of War” involved four maxims: 1) To maneuver the mass of the army, successively upon the decisive points of a theater of war, and attack the enemy’s lines of communication as frequently as possible while still protecting one’s own; 2) To quickly maneuver and engage fractions of the enemy’s army with the majority of one’s own; 3) To focus the attack on a “decisive point,” such as weak or undefended areas in the enemy lines; 4) To economize one’s own force on supporting attacks so that the focus of effort could attack—preferably by surprise—the decisive point at the proper time with sufficient force. He also advocated use of the turning movement, through which an adversary was overcome by moving beyond its position and attacking from the rear, and believed that adversaries in retreat should continue to be pursued as a means of beating them psychologically. He viewed leadership as a prime requirement for military success and appraised character as “above all other requisites in a commander in chief.” However, he also recognized that a commander who possessed great character but lacked intellectual training would never be a great general; the necessary characteristic of a winning general would be the combination of intellect and natural leadership. Jomini strongly advocated simplicity and praised the Napoleonic strategy of a quick victory gained by quickly massing troops, as well as the French general’s objective of capturing capital cities as a signal of defeat. He also provided early definitions for modern concepts such as the “theater of operation.” Jomini cared little for the political niceties of war; in his view governments choose the best commander possible, then free that person to wage war as he deems appropriate.

Influence Spanned the Centuries

Jomini’s writings, which constitute over 25 translated works, continued to influence military leaders in both Europe and North America for much of the nineteenth century. His systematization of Napoleon’s modus operandi became accepted military doctrine during the U.S. Civil War and was used by generals at Chancellorsville and Gettysburg. However, more recent scholars have viewed Jomini as a chronicler of pre-modern warfare. As a military strategist, he was often compared with Prussian contemporary Karl Marie von Clausewitz (1780–1831), whose 1833 treatise Vom Kriege was considered by many scholars to be romanticized. Unlike Clausewitz, Jomini was vague and contradicted himself on the importance of genius. Like Clausewitz, however, his focus remained on the Napoleonic “great battle” rather than the more modern war composed of multiple armed encounters. Among Jomini’s other writings was a well-received 1864 Life of Napoleon and a political and military history of Napoleon’s Waterloo campaign.

After publishing his Precis, Jomini retired from the Russian military. He moved to Brussels, but continued to be sought out for his expertise. In 1854 Jomini was called to advise the future Czar Nicholas I on the Crimean War and was consulted by French leader Napoleon III on the 1859 Italian campaign. Until 1888 he was considered by the
English to be preeminent among military strategists, and his books were required reading in military academies. U.S. generals such as George B. McClellan and Robert E. Lee were said to have gone into battle armed with a sword in one hand and Jomini’s *Summary of the Art of War* in the other. Reported to be of sound mind as late as his nineties, Jomini continued to insist that his principles would endure despite the changing face of modern warfare as a result of the development of technological advances such as railways and telegraphs. He died on March 24, 1869, at his home in Passy, France.

**Books**


**Periodicals**

*Galaxy*, January-July 1869.


**Online**


---

**Matilda Sissieretta Joyner**

Widely hailed as the possessor of one of the great singing voices of her day, Matilda Sissieretta Joyner (1869–1933) enjoyed a successful career as a concert and variety performer from the late 1880s to the World War I era. Joyner’s career had two phases. First she was a soloist, appearing in concert halls, churches, and other venues in North America and Europe. Later, she spent two decades touring the United States as the star of an all-black variety entertainment show. It is an example of the peculiar nature of race relations in America that Joyner, whose extraordinary talent was almost universally acknowledged and whose concerts and variety shows drew mostly white audiences, never appeared in opera.

J oyner was born in Portsmouth, Virginia, as Matilda Sissieretta Joyner. The year of her birth is usually given as 1869. According to William Lichtenwanger in *Notable American Women*, no record of her birth has ever been found and the ages listed on her marriage and death records indicate that she was born around 1865. Joyner’s father, Jeremiah Malachi Joyner, was a former slave and had been a body servant to his master until the end of the Civil War. After gaining his freedom, he became a minister in the Afro-Methodist Church. Joyner’s mother, Henrietta, a former slave as well, was an accomplished amateur singer with a fine soprano voice. She grew up as an only child, her brother having died in infancy. In 1876, Joyner’s father accepted an offer to become pastor of a church in Providence, Rhode Island, and the family moved north. A minister’s salary was modest and Reverend Joyner took odd jobs to help make ends meet. Providence had a thriving black community in the 1870s and the atmosphere in the city was relatively progressive in regard to racial matters. Joyner attended the Meeting Street and Thayer Street schools, both of which had integrated student bodies and teaching personnel.

As a small child, Joyner exhibited a love for singing. “When I was a little girl, just a wee slip of a tad, I used to go about singing. I guess I must have been a bit of a nuisance then, for my mouth was always open,” the adult Joyner recalled in an interview with the *Syracuse Evening Herald*, excerpts of which are included in Willia Daughtry’s doctoral dissertation about Joyner. During her teenage years, Joyner made her first public appearance as a singer at the
Pond Street Baptist Church in Providence and studied voice at the Providence Academy of Music.

In 1883, Joyner married David Richard Jones, called Richard, whom Rosalyn M. Story in *And So I Sing: African-American Divas of Opera and Concert* says was described in contemporary accounts as a “handsome mulatto from Baltimore.” Richard Jones had worked as a hotel bellman and as a newspaper dealer. The couple is said to have had a child who died in infancy.

Marriage does not seem to have hindered Joyner’s budding professional career. She is said to have attended the New England Conservatory of Music in Boston in the mid-1880s. In 1887, Joyner made her professional debut in Boston at a concert to benefit the Irish nationalist Charles Stewart Parnell, whose political career was being jeopardized by a personal scandal. Her performance at the Parnell concert, before an audience of 5,000, drew a strongly positive reaction. The following year Joyner made her first New York appearance in a concert at Steinway Hall.

Later in 1888, Joyner sang at Wallack’s Theater on Broadway, becoming the first African American to appear on stage at the prestigious theater. The attention she received at this performance led to her joining a troupe of black musicians on a tour of the West Indies. The West Indian tour lasted eight months and was a triumph. In Jamaica, Haiti, and other countries, Joyner was greeted by enthusiastic crowds and presented with jewel encrusted honors from local governments and admirers. Returning to the United States, she appeared with baritone Louis Brown in several East Coast cities and briefly returned to Providence for further study of voice. In the winter of 1890-1891, she made another tour of the West Indies.

It was during her early concert years that Joyner was dubbed the “Black Patti” by the *New York Clipper*, a theatrical newspaper. The moniker alluded to Adelina Patti, the Italian American soprano and star of the Metropolitan Opera. Joyner’s managers and promoters repeated the “Black Patti” description in advertisements and it became strongly identified with her for the remainder of her career. Although Joyner adamantly disapproved of the nickname at the beginning, she then used it to her advantage in the later years. According to Daughtry, instead of finding the comparison to another artist pointless and the “black” qualification condescending, Joyner used it “as a weapon—a kind of boomerang—which drew the predominately white audience to her—an audience which expected to find a freak, a comical, awkward, unusually strange creature before it, but which found instead an artist who exhibited the same training known to the white singer of her time as well as a decorum which gave new dignity and finesse to the Negro image on the concert stage.”

In February 1892, Joyner performed at the White House for President Benjamin Harrison and his luncheon guests in the Blue Room. Her vocal selections, typical of her concert repertoire at the time, were the popular songs “Home, Sweet Home,” “Swanee River,” and the cavatina from Meyerbeer’s opera *Robert le Diable*. Enchanted by Joyner’s talent, the First Lady, Caroline Harrison, presented the singer with a bouquet of White House-grown orchids. In later years, she returned to Washington to sing for Presidents Grover Cleveland, William McKinley, and Theodore Roosevelt. African American performers at the Executive Mansion were rare but not unprecedented. According to Elise K. Kirk in *Operetta News*, singer Marie Selika performed at the Rutherford B. Hayes White House in 1878, and the Fisk Jubilee Singers performed for President Chester Alan Arthur in 1882. However, it was not until 1901, when Booker T. Washington lunched with Theodore Roosevelt, that an African American was invited to the White House as a sit-down guest.

True notoriety came to Joyner in April 1892 when she was selected to be the star attraction at the Grand Negro Jubilee at New York City’s Madison Square Garden. The Jubilee was a three-day extravaganza featuring hundreds of black singers and dancers and a military band. Joyner sang popular songs and opera selections, including the “Siempre libera” aria from *La Traviata*. She was said to have been the highlight of the show. Offers for bookings increased so dramatically after this appearance that it was hard for Joyner to fully absorb what had happened. “I woke up famous after singing at the Garden, and didn’t know it,” she said in an article quoted by *Story*.

In June 1892, Joyner signed a contract with Major J.B. Pond, a high-powered promoter and manager of entertainers and lecturers whose clients included novelist Mark Twain and clergyman Henry Ward Beecher. Pond built a program around her, featuring classical and popular music. According to *Story*, the program became “something of a forum for the best black talent of the day.” Among the performers who appeared with Joyner were poet Paul Lawrence Dunbar and Joseph Douglass, a violinist and grandson of Frederick Douglass. She sometimes sang with accompaniment by black pianist Alberta Wilson, giving audiences a chance to marvel at two accomplished African American women musicians holding forth on a concert hall stage.

In 1893, under the management of Pond, Joyner earned two thousand dollars for a one-week engagement at the Pittsburgh Exposition. It was said to be the highest salary paid to a black performer up to that time. Also in 1893, she performed at the World’s Columbian Exposition in Chicago where she was a top box-office draw.

Management problems began to plague Joyner’s career beginning in 1893. The details are vague. It is possible that she found Pond’s management style exploitative and more focused on making quick money than in fostering a long-term concert career. Other troubles are said to have stemmed when Joyner’s husband, Richard, booked engagements for his wife without the permission of Pond. Her marriage was troubled due to Richard Jones’s penchant for gambling and drink and his inability to hold a job. The couple divorced sometime between 1893 and 1898.

In the mid-1890s, Joyner broke with Pond and under new management participated in a charity concert at Madison Square Garden to benefit the *New York Herald’s* Free Clothing Fund. The renowned Hungarian composer Antonin Dvorak conducted the concert. Dvorak, then director of the National Conservatory of Music in New York, was an
admirer of African American people and culture. Strains of black folk music can be heard in Dvorak's famous "Symphony No. 9: From the New World." At the Free Clothing Fund benefit, Joyner sang the soprano solo from Rossini's Stabat Mater with an all black male choir singing the chorus. "Mme. Jones was an enormous success with the audience. To those who heard her for the first time she came in the light of a revelation, singing high C's with as little apparent effort as her namesake, the white Patti," wrote a reviewer in the New York Herald. Joyner then performed in England, France, and Germany. In London, she participated in a Royal Command performance for the Prince of Wales (future King Edward VII) at the Royal Opera House at Covent Garden.

In 1896, Black Patti’s Troubadours were formed under the auspices of New York theatrical managers Voelkel and Nolan. As the name suggests, Joyner was the main attraction of this travelling show, which also offered comedians, dancers, acrobats, jugglers, and other variety entertainers. Her appearances in the Troubadours came in what were called "Operatic Kaleidoscopes," which offered scenes from famous operas, such as La Bohème, Rigoletto, and Carmen, sung with full costumes and scenery.

Joyner's greatest dream was to sing in a full-scale opera. Many critics agreed that her voice and dramatic flair were well suited to opera. "The thought was irresistible that she would make a superb Aida, whom her appearance, as well as her voice, suggested," wrote a writer for the Philadelphia Times, quoted by Story. A few offers were made in regard to opera after her initial rise to fame in the early 1890s but nothing ever materialized. Undoubtedly, Joyner’s race was the reason she never appeared with prestigious opera companies, such as the Metropolitan. It was not until the 1950s that black singers appeared with major American opera companies. However, Denis Mercier points out in Notable Black American Women that all-black opera performances began to be done after the turn of the century and it is unclear why Joyner never participated in any of these productions.

Black Patti's Troubadours traveled across the United States and were popular with both white and black audiences. A writer for the Detroit Evening News, in an article quoted by Story, said that "without exception the Black Patti Troubadours company is the best colored theatrical organization that has visited this city. Every member of it seems to be a star."

Despite its success, Joyner was not entirely happy as leader of the Troubadours. She felt the company was essentially a minstrel show and not the proper showcase for her serious "Operatic Kaleidoscopes." The appeal of Black Patti’s Troubadours reached its peak in the first decade of the twentieth century, then began to wane along with a general decline of minstrelsy. In 1916, the company gave its final performance at the Gibson Theatre in New York City.

Joyner’s career came to an end with the demise of the Troubadours. Aside from a concert at Chicago’s Grand Theatre, she made no further professional appearances. Returning to Providence, she looked after her elderly mother, took in two boys who were wards of the state, and occasionally sang at local churches. To gain income, she sold off most of the possessions she had accumulated during her career, and in her last years received public assistance. She died of cancer on June 24, 1933, with only the generosity of friends preventing burial in the city’s “potter’s field.”

Books

Periodicals
New York Herald, January 24, 1894.
Opera News, November 1, 1980.
Ilya Kabakov

Ilya Kabakov (born 1933) is an artist of note in two distinctly polar disciplines. While living in the Soviet Union for 30 years, he was a well-known, albeit officially sanctioned, children’s book illustrator. He was simultaneously amassing a substantial body of unofficial avant-garde work. Since leaving the Soviet Union in 1988, he has been prolific; he is now considered the foremost post-Stalinist Russian artist. His prime means of artistic expression has been sprawling installations largely based on Soviet-related themes.

By any reckoning Kabakov’s career has bridged an exceptional variety of situations and concerns,” wrote Robert Storr in *Art in America*. “He remains better known in Europe (where he was featured in the last Venice Biennale) than in America, where he now resides. His ideas and observations raise significant questions about the development and future of installation art—which remains his principal artistic form—and about our current esthetic horizons.”

**Studied Art by Accident**

Kabakov was born on September 30, 1933, in Dniepropetrovsk, Ukraine, to Jewish parents. His family was poor, so much so they often lived apart from each other. War also frequently uprooted Kabakov. He was first relocated in 1941 when World War II fighting extended into the Soviet Union.

By chance, Kabakov attended a professional elementary art school between the ages of 7 and 16. The school was the Leningrad Academy of Art, which had been temporarily relocated to Samarkand during World War II. A friend studying at the school decided one night to clandestinely take Kabakov into the school to look at paintings of nude women. Once inside the school, they were confronted by an adult. The boys lied to legitimize their presence there, making the excuse that they were there because Kabakov was thinking about attending the school. He was invited to apply and dashed off a few pictures—military scenes based on equipment stationed in the area—to support his application. He was accepted; he was also the only applicant.

Art was neither easy nor a passion. Kabakov claims to have been constantly frustrated by his lack of ability. “I already understood that I couldn’t draw and that I had no talent for art,” he told *Art in America* in 1995. “I continued to study even though I didn’t like it, and my attitude toward it was like that of a trained rabbit who beats a drum: he must learn to do it, but not loving it inside and even feeling revulsion toward it. And ultimately I did learn to beat the drum fairly well, but all the while thinking to myself that it just wasn’t me.”

Kabakov was evacuated again when German forces began invading the Soviet Union. He was taken to Holy Trinity Monastery and Cathedral in Zagorsk. He eventually returned to Samarkand, then continued his formal education in Moscow until he was 23.

**Continued Education in Moscow**

Kabakov said his mother moved to Moscow to be near him while he was in boarding school, even without a special resident permit. “She became a laundry cleaner at school. But without an apartment the only place she had
was the room where she arranged the laundry.” He related in a 1992 article on ARTMARGINS website that his mother “felt homeless and defenseless vis-a-vis the authorities, while, on the other hand, she was so tidy and meticulous that her honesty and persistence allowed her to survive in the most improbable place. My child psyche was traumatized by the fact that my mother and I never had a corner to ourselves.”

He attended Moscow Secondary Art School between 1945 and 1951. He graduated from Surikov Institute of Arts in 1957. He maintained that creating art continued to be a struggle. Kabakov said in *Art in America* his education was very classical in nature, extremely similar to nineteenth-century art education but “bureaucratic and dead. . . . We all were physically present but mentally absent.”

Kabakov has claimed he became an illustrator of children’s books as a result of bad grades, which placed him in the school graphics program rather than in the more elite painting section. He said this discipline actually suited him well. “I read incessantly, I was crazy about books, and I would comment upon or think aloud about anything I saw. My thoughts would come to me already in the form of words. I don’t know what it is, but I cannot look at a painting in silence; inside I am always talking to myself at the moment that I am viewing it,” he said in *Art in America* in 1995. “Naturally, this method is very easily connected to the notion of illustration. . . . I was successful not only because I mastered what I was supposed to illustrate, but also what was expected from me.”

Small student groups formed outside the classroom to supplant the dreary coursework. Each person would tackle a subject: philosophy, history, or poetry. Kabakov and artists Erik Bulatov, Oleg Vassilyev, and Mikhail Mezhandinov formed a clique. These students found mentors in artists such as Robert Falk, Vladimir Favorsky, and Artur Fonvizin. Under the Soviet Regime, each of these men was an unofficial artist, that is, their work was not sanctioned by the state.

**Sought Artistic Expression Outside the Official**

Kabakov said he knew in 1955, while still in school, that he had to find an artistic form outside that which was officially dictated and sanctioned. It certainly continued his lifelong struggle with art and the creative process, but it marked an important step in his evolution and maturity. Kabakov experimented variously in genres including Abstract Expressionism and his own version of neo-Surrealism. He and his fellow artists began creating unofficial art. These pieces began to be shown in the West in 1964.

The group was known as NOMA or the Moscow Conceptual Circle of Artists. The style of art they created was called Romantic Conceptualism. This was “not so much an artistic school, but a subculture and a way of life,” wrote Svetlana Boym on the ARTMARGINS website. “A group of artists, writers, and intellectuals created a kind of parallel existence in a gray zone, in a ‘stolen space’ carved out between Soviet institutions. Stylistically, the work of the conceptualists was seen as a Soviet parallel to pop art, only instead of the advertisement culture they used the trivial and drab rituals of Soviet everyday life—too banal and insignificant to be recorded anywhere else, and made taboo not because of their potential political explosiveness, but because of their sheer ordinariness, their all-too-human scale.”

Some members’ work was purchased by visiting Westerners, but Kabakov has asserted others gave away paintings in hopes of triggering some positive reaction from afar. Westerners were initially overwhelmed with the work, but this unofficial art generated buzz and attracted notice within the international art community in the 1970s and 1980s. Conceptual artists associated with this group include Vitali Komar and Alexander Melamid.

As an official artist, Kabakov worked in the Soviet Union for 30 years with the “benefit of steady work and minimal KGB scrutiny,” according to Amy Ingrid Schiegel writing in the Winter 1999 issue of *Art Journal*. He has claimed in *Art in America* this art was not done for love, but because it “could be done quickly and therefore didn’t take a lot of time away from your own work. . . . You should not think that we loved our illustrating. It might have been possible to love it if you had been permitted to do what you wanted, but you didn’t love it because you had to do what was expected.” He has also said “at the foundation of my career lies fear, ridiculous circumstances and my mother, who sacrificed everything for it.” Indeed, Kabakov supported her and his in-laws throughout his sanctioned illustrating career.

Between 1969 and 1980, Kabakov created a series of 50 albums that combined art and text. “Each album told the tale of a different character, a different demented dreamer
creating an elaborate system to make life not only bearable but meaningful,” wrote Amei Wallach in a feature in Art in America. The best known of these is “Okno” (“The Window”), which was later published. These albums became the basis of his interest in installation art.

He began working in a more conceptual style in the mid-1970s. The result were “zhek picture displays,” parodies of broadsides and Soviet posters. Kabakov created the name from the acronym ZhEK, referring to the Soviet housing management. He hosted informal meetings of fellow conceptual artists at his apartment known as the Sretensky Boulevard Group, so called after the Moscow street where many of them lived.

Emigrated and Continued Prolific Creation

Kabakov attempted to emigrate from the Soviet Union three times, first in the 1970s. Each time, he changed his mind. He eventually left the Soviet Union in 1988. He is reportedly reluctant to discuss this, although immigrating to the West has obviously had a major impact on his life and art. Schlegel stated when he did leave his homeland, he chose “to exile himself from Russia physically, socially, and linguistically once the policies of perestroika and glasnost took effect in the late 1980s.”

A flurry of Kabakov books was released after his emigration. A particular surge could be seen in the mid-1990s. These included his children’s books as well as volumes related to his various exhibitions such as “The Palace of Projects” and “Auf dem Dach/On the Roof.” Schlegel dubbed this “critical mass” of work “The Kabakov Phenomenon.” His work and his prolific production plus these publications “helped make him a senior international art world star.” Artforum International said of this generation of contemporary Soviet artists, most of the attention has been paid to Kabakov. “[H]is work comes as close as anybody’s to encompassing the better part of a continent’s worth of art,” wrote Barry Schwabsky.

It was Kabakov’s “Ten Characters” installation mounted in New York that started a series of museum installations. It was also his first solo exhibition. Wallach, writing in Art in America in 2000, noted since the spring of 1988, “he has for all intents and purposes been working in a series of museums. In the last 12 years he has mounted 165 installations in 148 museums in 30 countries.” A 1995 book by Kabakov, On the “Total” Installation, explains the form and his artistic philosophies.

Moved Away from Installations

Later in his career, Kabakov began shying away from relying on the Soviet Union as a subject for his installations. One of the first of these is “Auf dem Dach/On the Roof,” in which ten rooms, representing a narrative timeline of snapshots from family life, were shown from the vantage point of a rooftop. His “The Palace of Projects” and “Life and Creativity of Charles Rosenthal” marked a further turn toward other forms. Kabakov considers these works as “grand finales to his singleminded preoccupation with ‘total’ installation,” but, added Wallach, “it is difficult to imagine that he will forsake it altogether.” As has been the case throughout his career, Kabakov continued to create prolifically. As Schlegel pointed out, Kabakov “works every day, all day. Some might say he is a workaholic. Others would interpret his work habits as a form of flood control.”

He and his wife Emilia also began collaborating on public sculpture. The couple moved to Long Island, New York, around 1996. There, they built two large studios. Permanent pieces by them can be found in Italy, Japan, and Belgium. Wallach stated “according to his concept, the purpose of the sculpture is to embody a ‘spirit of the place.’” Kabakov contended “The principle is that every place in our cultural life has a spirit, and . . . if you hear the spirit, if you feel it . . . what the spirit has to say is: Please do not disturb me!”

Boyom submitted that “For Kabakov, art remains an inevitable, existential need and a therapy for survival. . . . The artist loves the museum not merely as an institution, but as a personal refuge. . . . Kabakov’s total installations look like the artist’s Noah’s arks, only we are never sure if the artist escaped from hell or from paradise.”

Periodicals


Online


Yousuf Karsh

One of the greatest portrait photographers of all time, Yousuf Karsh (1908–2002) captured not only the images of hundreds of the 20th century’s most memorable leaders and celebrities but also the faces of thousands of ordinary men and women whose lives formed the backbone of Canadian society. Karsh, who died at the age of 93 in July 2002, left a priceless legacy to Canada—his adopted homeland for nearly eight decades. Before his death, Karsh sold or donated all 355,000 of his negatives to Canada’s National Archives in Ottawa. His photos will form the core collection of the Portrait Gallery of Canada, which was scheduled to open in 2005.
Of Karsh's accessibility to photo subjects from all walks of life, Lily Koltun, acting director of the Portrait Gallery told the *Toronto Star*, "He gave the same attention to anyone who called his studio, so the work we have from him is a wonderful cross-section of Canadian society, not just of famous people but fishermen, a sailmaker, a farmer in his field—if you look deeply in his collection, you can discover aspects to him that are quite unexpected." Equally lavish in her praise was Maia Sutnik, curator of photography at the Art Gallery of Ontario, who told the *Toronto Star*, "He brought a huge sense of the personality into his pictures. He made iconic portraits of great men and women, and he brought international acclaim to Canada." Karsh was not without his detractors, however. Some of his more vocal critics faulted the photographer for the sameness of his photo portraits, almost all of which were shot in black and white and have an extraordinarily solemn feel to them. His defenders—and they are legion—retort that this was simply Karsh's style. In its assessment of Karsh's legacy, the *Economist* likened the criticism of his work to "complaining that Rembrandt's paintings did not make you laugh."

Apprenticed to Leading Boston Photographer

Karsh was born on December 23, 1908, in the Armenian enclave of Mardin, Turkey. During the years of World War I (1914–1918), the Armenians of Turkey endured widespread persecution and privation at the hands of the Turkish government. In 1924, at the age of 16, Karsh left his native Turkey for Canada to live with his uncle, A.G. Nakash, who operated a photo studio in Sherbrooke, Quebec. Under his uncle's direction, the young Karsh learned the basics of photography. However, recognizing that Karsh needed more expert guidance to refine his skills, his uncle in 1928 sent him to Boston to apprentice under fellow Armenian John H. Garo, a well-known portrait photographer of the day. For the next couple of years, Karsh later recalled, as written in the *Independent*, that he learned about "lighting, design, and composition . . . and began to appreciate the greater dimensions of photography." Under Garo's tutelage, Karsh was exposed to some of Boston's most celebrated men and women who regularly convened at Garo's informal afternoon salons. "Even as a young man," he remembered, "I was aware that these glorious afternoons and evenings in Garo's salon were my university. There I set my heart on photographing those men and women who leave their mark on the world."

After a three-year apprenticeship under Garo, Karsh in 1931 returned to Canada. In the nation's capital of Ottawa, he opened a modest portrait studio, hoping that its location would offer him an opportunity "to photograph its leading figures and many international visitors," Karsh was quoted as saying in the *Independent*. So meager was Karsh's budget for the launch of his own studio that most of the furniture consisted of orange crates, "covered—tastefully, I thought—with monk's cloth, and if I occasionally found myself borrowing back my secretary's salary of $17 a week to pay the rent, I was still convinced, with the resilience of youth, that I had made the right choice." In his spare time, Karsh became involved with a local theater group, where he learned more about lighting and the use of artificial light in photography. It was at the theater group that the photographer first met actress Solange Gauthier, whom he married on April 27, 1939.

Studied Subjects Before Photo Shoots

Only a few years after setting up shop in Ottawa, Karsh had firmly established himself in Canadian political circles. In 1935 he was named official portrait photographer of the Canadian government, in which capacity he was frequently called upon to photograph Canadian leaders and visiting statesmen. Karsh routinely researched the lives and accomplishments of his well-known subjects. In an account of his preparations for a photo shoot, Karsh wrote, as quoted in the *Independent*, "Before I begin, I will have studied my subject to the best of my ability, and within broad limits know what I am hoping to find, and what I hope to be able to interpret successfully. The qualities that have attracted me to the subject are those that will satisfy me if I can portray them in the photograph, and that will most probably satisfy views of the picture as well. I am fascinated by the challenge of portraying greatness . . . with my camera."

Although he had already won wide acceptance in the Canadian capital, Karsh first captured international attention with his December 1941 portrait of British Prime Minister Winston Churchill. During a brief visit to Ottawa, Churchill reluctantly agreed to sit for Karsh, warning the
photographer that he would give him two minutes and not a second more to take his picture. With that, Churchill lit up one of his trademark cigars. Seconds later, Karsh snatched the cigar from Churchill’s lips and snapped the picture. The resulting photo, which shows a somewhat petulant Churchill scowling into the camera and was sold to Life magazine for only $100, eventually became the most widely reproduced portrait in the history of photography. The Churchill portrait firmly established Karsh’s reputation as a world-class portrait photographer. Not long thereafter, the Canadian government asked Karsh to travel to England to shoot a series of photographs of British military leaders. Life magazine subsequently commissioned the photographer to do a similar series of American wartime leaders. In 1946, the year after the end of World War II, Karsh published his first book, Faces of Destiny, a collection of portraits of the men and women who spearheaded the Allied victories in Europe and the Pacific. That same year Karsh became a naturalized Canadian citizen.

The widely circulated Churchill portrait brought a major change in Karsh’s life. No longer did he have to seek out subjects. They came looking for him, seeking immortality through his lens. To be “Karshed” was a true sign that a celebrity had arrived. Although he offered his services to those from all walks of life, there was no denying that Karsh was fascinated by those he described as “people of consequence,” a group that included politicians, royalty, writers, scientists, and actors, among others. As the photographer himself observed and noted in the Economist, “It’s the minority that make the world go around.” Every Canadian prime minister from Mackenzie King to Jean Chretien sat for Karsh, as did every American president from Herbert Hoover to Bill Clinton. Although probably no one other than Karsh knows for sure, it has been estimated that he photographed 17,000 people over six decades.

Worked Briefly as Industrial Photographer

During the early 1950s Karsh worked occasionally as an industrial photographer, doing work for companies such as Ford of Canada Ltd. and Atlas Steel Ltd., but the bulk of his life’s work was as a portraitist. His most famous subjects included the British royal family; a young Elizabeth Taylor; Pope Pius XII; Albert Einstein; authors Norman Mailer, George Bernard Shaw, Andre Malraux, and H.G. Wells; British Prime Minister Margaret Thatcher; and a bevy of American film stars, including Bette Davis, Humphrey Bogart, and Gregory Peck. In 1959, Karsh became the first photographer to have a one-man exhibition at the National Gallery of Canada.

Karsh gained world recognition for his portrait style, which was formal and shot almost exclusively in black and white. The most notable aspect of the photographer’s unique style was his use of light to model his subject’s faces in almost sculptural fashion. Karsh’s portraits are shot against simple backgrounds—frequently black—and use no props or decorations that might attract attention away from the central figure of the portrait. Although some of his detractors complain that Karsh’s portraits fail to capture the essence of his subjects, his supporters point out that Karsh’s primary goal was the visual idealization of the legend and public image of those he photographed.

In 1961 Karsh’s wife, Solange, died of cancer. A year later, on August 28, 1962, the photographer married Estrellita Maria Nachbar. He also became involved in academics, serving as visiting professor of photography at Ohio University in Athens from 1967 to 1969. In 1972 Karsh, whose “Karsh of Ontario” label was now recognized as the signature of one of the world’s most famous portrait studios, moved his operation into a suite at Ottawa’s fashionable Chateau Laurier Hotel. He also signed on with Boston’s Emerson College as visiting professor of fine arts, a position he held until 1974.

Held in Deep Respect by Subjects

Part of Karsh’s success as a portraitist may be attributable to the deep respect in which he was held by most of his subjects. According to the Edmonton Sun, Karsh’s brother Malak, who died in 2000, said his brother’s subjects freely gave of themselves “with love and respect.” He said, “People knew they had a master with them and they appreciated that opportunity.” For his part, Karsh preferred to refer to his photo sessions as “visits,” during which he was unfailingly polite and curious, seeking to draw out his subjects’ views on their own lives’ experiences as well as life in general.

Karsh maintained his studio in the Chateau Laurier Hotel until 1992, when he retired to Boston with wife Estrellita. Although he was no longer active in photography, Karsh’s work continued to excite great interest worldwide. In the years following his retirement, major retrospective exhibitions of Karsh’s work were held at Montreal’s Museum of Fine Arts; London’s National Portrait Gallery; Washington’s Corcoran Gallery; the Mint Museum in Charlotte, North Carolina; the Museum of Photography, Film, and TV in Bradford, England; Boston’s Museum of Fine Arts; the Detroit Institute of Art; the National Portrait Gallery of Australia; and the Tower Gallery in Yokahama, Japan. His work has also been reproduced in nearly a score of books of photography, including Faces of Destiny (1946), Portraits of Greatness (1959), This is Rome (1959), The Warren Court (1965), Karsh Portfolio (1967), This is the Holy Land (1970), Faces of Our Time (1971), Karsh Portraits (1976), and Karsh Canadians (1978).

Karsh died in Boston, Massachusetts, on July 13, 2002, from complications following surgery for diverticulitis. Perhaps Karsh himself offered the best overview of his goals as a portraitist in his 1962 autobiography, In Search of Greatness: Reflections of Yousuf Karsh. Echoed in Contemporary Photographers Karsh wrote: “I believe that it is the artist’s job to accomplish at least two things—to stir the emotions of the viewer and to lay bare the soul of his subject. When my own emotions have been stirred, I hope I can succeed in stirring those of others. But it is the mind and soul of the personality before my camera that interests me most, and the greater the mind and soul, the greater my interest.”
Kidnapped by the Ottoman Turks at a young age, Albanian freedom fighter Gjergj Kastrioti-Skanderbeg was raised under Islam and trained as a general within the ranks of the Turkish military before fleeing his captors and reconverting to Christianity in 1443. As commander of Albania’s warlords, he sparked a national revolt in 1444 and held off numerous efforts by the Ottomans to take back Albania and bring that country once again under Muslim rule. Following Kastrioti-Skanderbeg’s death in 1468 his Albanian forces could no longer repulse the Turks; twelve years later Albania fell once more to Turkish forces and remained part of the Ottoman Empire for many centuries, until its eventual liberation in 1912.

The Spread of the Muslim Empire

The Albanian people, descendants of the Illyrians, occupied the mountainous region of the western Balkans, a remote area extending from what is now Slovenia southward into Greece. Although known for being sociable, the Illyrians were also known for their bravery in war and aggressively maintained their lands against the many other clans throughout the Balkan region. Although influenced culturally as the result of conquest by Greece, Rome, and ultimately the Visigoths, Huns, and Ostrogoths, large numbers of Albanian peasants nonetheless managed to retain their customs, culture, and language by living in small, remote towns in the mountains where, due to the lack of roads, they were able to resist all efforts at assimilation by conquering cultures. Influenced by many years under Roman rule and subsequently made a part of the Byzantine Empire, Albania could boast a flourishing culture, established trade, and a strong economy by the middle ages; this situation would change for the worse after the region was overrun by the Ottoman Turks in 1388.

The Ottoman Empire expanded from Anatolia into the Balkans during the 1300s and by 1400 marauding Muslim armies had pierced the boundaries of the once-mighty Byzantine Empire. The city of Constantinople, built by the Roman Emperor Constantine I in 330 and the seat of the Eastern Orthodox Church, was destined to fall to Islam in little more than a half-century. Meanwhile, the Turks, known for their brutal treatment of the conquered, now extended their reach west to Bulgaria and Serbia where, due to the capitulation of a succession of competing tribal leaders, soon had the Balkans firmly under their control. Completely under Ottoman control in 1385, Albania’s ruling families were allowed to retain their lands and titles, but due to their disunity they were unable to overthrow the invading armies. For the most part, the Albanian people suffered greatly under the brutal regime of their new overlord, Sultan Murad II.

A Childhood Cut Short

Into this hostile world, Kastrioti-Skanderbeg was born in the city of Krujë in northern Albania, on January 17, 1405. His father, Gjon Kastrioti, was a prince of Emathia, although the family could trace its lineage back to serf roots. To assure the loyalty of Albanian princes such as Kastrioti, Sultan Murad II established a practice of kidnapping the sons of royalty and raising them in the court of Adrianopol (now Edirne, Turkey) to become loyal Turks. As a boy of three years of age, Kastrioti-Skanderbeg and his three older brothers were taken in this manner. Tragically, his older brothers, Stanislao, Constantino, and Repasio, met their fate at the hands of their Turkish captors.

For his part, the young Kastrioti-Skanderbeg was quickly indoctrinated in the Muslim faith and was given a
good education in the Turkish court. When he reached the appropriate age, he was trained for battle in the Turkish military, as was the traditional fate of Turkish teens. Given the name S’kander and eventually earning the rank of Bey—from which his second surname “Skanderbeg” was eventually derived—the intelligent and well-spoken Kastrioti-Skanderbeg proved himself on the battlefields of Asia Minor and eastern Europe. Eventually promoted to general, the former Albanian led Turkish armies against the Greeks and then north into Serbia and Hungary. It is claimed that Kastrioti-Skanderbeg was fluent in several languages, among them Arabic, Greek, Italian, Bulgarian, and Serbo-Croatian; it is also claimed that he eventually entered secret communication with highly placed persons in the powerful cities of Venice and Naples. However, believing Kastrioti-Skanderbeg to be loyal to Turkey due to his continued success on the field of battle, Murad II continued to bestow his favors on Kastrioti-Skanderbeg and granted the general the title of governor of lands in central Albania.

In 1443 Kastrioti-Skanderbeg was ordered by the sultan to attack the Hungarian forces commanded by Janos Hunyadi, a revered general known as the White Knight, for the purpose of reclaiming Nis (now Serbia) for the Ottoman Empire. While studying this new enemy, Kastrioti-Skanderbeg reportedly learned of his own Albanian origins, as well as of the tragic fate of his brothers. Now aware that his true people shared an allegiance with Hunyadi, the Turkish general arranged a secret meeting wherein the two generals conspired to thwart the Turks. Along with 300 Albanian princes, in the course of battling the Hungarians Kastrioti-Skanderbeg claimed defeat, then abandoned the Turkish army and headed toward Albania. Disguising his small regiment as acting on orders of Sultan Murad II himself, Kastrioti-Skanderbeg entered the Turkish fortifications at Kruje and that night massacred the Turkish pasha and the Muslim contingent stationed there. The following morning the Kastrioti family’s standard—a red flag emblazoned with a black, double-headed eagle that has since been adopted as Albania’s national flag—fluttered in the breeze over the city’s castle. Here Kastrioti-Skanderbeg reportedly made his historic pronouncement: “I have not brought you liberty, I found it here, among you.” In March of 1444, during a meeting of Albanian princes in the city of Lezhe, he was elected commander-in-chief of the Albanian army.

At first stunned that such a favored general would betray him, Sultan Murad II soon became infuriated and immediately amassed an army to send against the Albanians. Despite Kastrioti-Skanderbeg’s interior numbers, the battle that was waged on June 29, 1444, ended with a Turkish defeat due to the Albanian general’s use of guerilla tactics. Murad amassed a second army consisting of over 15,000 men. Kastrioti-Skanderbeg once again overcame this force, his small army avoiding a conflict on open ground and instead successfully ambushing the Turkish forces as they attempted to navigate the Prizren Pass on October 10, 1445. Through his continued efforts, Kastrioti-Skanderbeg continued to defeat the Turks in battle 24 times, thereby forcing the Ottomans to remain beyond Albania’s borders. His particularly spectacular victory in 1450 against the Turkish army led by Murad himself, in which the vastly outnumbered Kastrioti-Skanderbeg commanded only 20,000 troops, caused him to be hailed as a hero throughout Europe.

**Rejoined Faith of His Father**

In 1443, at the same time the 41-year-old Kastrioti-Skanderbeg broke his political allegiance to the Ottomans, he renouncing the Turkish faith of Islam and reconverted to the Roman Catholic faith of his father. With his military successes against the Turks now well known, Catholic leaders at the Vatican quickly saw an opportunity to gain a valuable ally. Hoping that the Albanian general could provide some protection for the Catholic faith in Western Europe, Pope Eugenius IV also dreamed of beginning a new crusade against Islam, this time to be led by Kastrioti-Skanderbeg. With some assistance from the Vatican, as well as from the powerful lords of Naples and Venice, Kastrioti-Skanderbeg continued to repulse successive efforts by the Turks to invade Albania over the next 25 years, including at Dibër and at Ochrida in 1462. His major supporter, King Alfonso of Naples (1416–1458), made the Albanian general his vassal in 1451. Alfonso supplied the Albanian army with needed funds, military equipment, and additional troops, and also acted as a protector by extending sanctuary to Kastrioti-Skanderbeg and his family.

After Pope Eugenius’s death in February of 1447, this crusade against Islam was inherited by a series of successors, among them Popes Nicholas V, Callistus II, and, most notably Pius II. The crusades were also fueled by news of the fall of Constantinople to militant Sultan Mehmed II in 1453. At Pope Pius’s death in August of 1464, Paul II was appointed pope of the Roman Catholic Church; because Pope Paul put art and antiquites above any attempts to regain the city of Constantinople, no further help came to Kastrioti-Skanderbeg and his Albanian army from Rome. A battle against the Turks in 1467 left Kastrioti-Skanderbeg victorious but concerned; because of his advancing years he was finding warfare increasingly difficult. Steps to replace the 63-year-old general as commander-in-chief proved in vain; the Albanian commander contracted malaria and died in Lezhe on January 17, 1468.

At his death Kastrioti-Skanderbeg left behind him a son, Giovanni Kastrioti, born of the general’s wife, Donica Arianiti. Still a young boy at the time of his father’s death, Giovanni Kastrioti fled with his mother to Naples, where they were given the sanctuary once promised by King Alfonso. In 1481 Giovanni attempted to return to Albania to continue his father’s work but was unsuccessful. Only a year before, little more than a decade after Kastrioti-Skanderbeg’s death, Albania had succumbed once more to Turkish domination, and its new Muslim rulers now exacted a brutal revenge against the late general’s military successes. The ruling families who were able to escape; many of those of good family left behind were executed. While much of Western Europe soon came to flower as a result of the Renaissance, Albania and the east endured a withering “dark age,” remaining cut off from advances in technology, science, and the arts while the Turks renewed their efforts to destroy the region’s economy and culture.
Despite these dark years of Turkish rule, the memory of Kastrioti-Skanderbeg served to buoy the Albanian spirit and fuel that country’s desire for independence. A statue of the Albanian hero was eventually erected in the capital city of Tirana, joining others erected elsewhere in the country. A museum dedicated to his honor was eventually installed in the family castle in Kruje. More recent generations have continued to marvel at Kastrioti-Skanderbeg’s accomplishments: 16th-century French poet Pierre Ronsard honored the Albanian national hero in verse, while two centuries later Ronsard’s compatriot, noted Enlightenment-era novelist and essayist François Marie Arouet de Voltaire maintained that the Byzantine Empire might have survived the Ottoman onslaught had it such a leader as Kastrioti-Skanderbeg. Italian composer Antonio Vivaldi’s opera Scanderbeg also was written to honor the Albanian hero.

While Kastrioti-Skanderbeg’s accomplishments inspired many of the artists and writers who came after him, perhaps the most ironic show of respect was that reportedly given him by his Turkish adversary. Upon retaking the city of Kruje in 1478 and locating Kastrioti-Skanderbeg’s grave in Saint Nicholas Catholic Church, the Turks disinterred the general and distributed his bones, holding them as talismans that would bring them good luck.

Books

Online

Urho Kekkonen

Urho Kekkonen (1900–1986) was Finland’s president from 1956 to 1981. He kept the nation on a steady political course, despite continuing to keep that nation actively politically neutral to assure peaceful relations with its powerful neighbor, the Soviet Union. This policy became known as “Finlandization” by detractors.

Youth Spent in War, Journalism, Sport

Urho Kaleva Kekkonen was born on September 3, 1900, in Pielavesi, Finland, the son of a farmer. His father later became employed in some aspect of timber operations. His career has been variously described as a sawmill operator, timber foreman, and forestry manager. His mother was a farmer’s daughter. The family lived in the rural province of Kainuu. Kekkonen attended the Lyseo Lukio Kajaani. He was not an exemplary student and had to repeat the seventh grade.

Kekkonen originally planned to become a writer. He frequently wrote short stories and plays. Among his influences were Jack London, Jules Verne, and Mark Twain. His other favorite subjects were history and gymnastics.

He became a war correspondent during the Finnish Civil War, which was fought in 1916 through 1917. He fought in the White Army and reported from their positions in Eastern Finland. During his service, Kekkonen commanded an execution patrol squad. As such, he was witness to the execution of six Red Army prisoners.

After the war, Kekkonen continued his journalistic career at Kajaanin Lehti, a newspaper. He also worked as a magazine columnist. He was active in other organizations including the Academic Karelia Society.

He made his entry onto the world stage via international athletics where he won an Olympic gold medal in the high jump. He also was an active member of The Finnish Sports Organization and the Finnish Olympic Committee. This served as his springboard into politics.

He married Sylvi Uino, who was a writer, in 1926. They met while she was working in the secretariat of the security police. They would eventually have two children. Kekkonen graduated from the University of Helsinki with a
Bachelor of Civil Law degree in 1928. He completed his doctoral degree in 1936.

Began Ascent in Finnish Government

In 1933, Kekkonen joined the Agrarian or Maalaislitto party, which would become known as the Center party in 1965. Among his first political jobs was a post at the ministry of agriculture. He made his ascent in Finnish politics from his post as a parliament member. He served in various national political offices between 1936 and 1956. During World War II, Kekkonen was director of the Karelian evacuees welfare center and commissioner for coordination. He was Finland’s prime minister from 1950 until 1956.

Kekkonen was also known as a political columnist. He adopted numerous pseudonyms for publishing this work beginning in 1942. His noms de plumes included Pekka Peitsi (“Peter Pkestafi”), Olli Tampio, Veljenpoika, and Liimatainen. His work frequently appeared in magazines including Suomen Kuvalahti, even during his tenure as prime minister. He once demurred being considered as a writer, saying “I haven’t even written a single poem.”

In 1950, he lost his bid for the presidency to Juho Kusti Paasikivi. Kekkonen wrote a political pamphlet “Onto Maallamme Maltia Vaurastua” (“Does our country have the patience to get rich?”), published in 1954. In the document, he laid out his ideas on Finnish economic policy.

Won Election, Adopted Policy Known as “Finlandization”

Two years later when he ran again for president, he was elected by a two vote margin over Paasikivi. This was the last national election the country would hold until 1981. It was feared any open election might jeopardize Finland’s relations with the neighboring Soviet Union and compromise the nation’s independence. In fact, every Finnish attempt to hold a national election was said to be seen by the Soviets as a desire by the Finns to put an end to their neutrality.

Perhaps to outsiders this policy might have seemed as equal parts Finnish cowardice and Soviet bullying. It is difficult, however, to understand in a vacuum. Finland achieved political independence from Russia during the Russian Revolution. During World War II, the Soviet Union invaded Finland in 1939 and 1944, forcing its neighbor to reduce its borders. Once World War II had ended, Finland chose to adopt a policy of political neutrality for the sake of self-preservation. This was not initiate by Kekkonen, but certainly he made sure relations with the Soviets were never in jeopardy. The nation had, under Kekkonen, become what The New Republic writer Joyce Lasky Shub characterized as “a silent victim of Soviet power.”

Walter Laqueur, writing in Commentary, observed that in the 1970s Finland had to kowtow, by virtue of its proximity to Soviet Union, to display “readiness to acquiesce in Soviet wishes.” This Kekkonen-extended political deference policy became known as “Finlandization.” Richard Lowenthal was said to have originated the phrase in the 1960s to describe this strategic political subordination, but Laqueur is credited with modifying the term to fit with the Finns’ self-imposed submissive policies, which were adopted well before being approached by their overbearing neighbor.

Laqueur said “given Finland’s geopolitical situation, it was obvious that certain concessions toward the Soviets had to be made. But I also argued that Urho Kekkonen . . . had carried this trend much too far (though he himself was not a Communist or even a socialist). It was not the policy of wisdom, maturity, and responsibility that Kekkonen and his supporters claimed, and furthermore it set a bad example for the rest of Europe.”

This issue is still open to debate and has been examined closely by political commentators and historians. So too has Kekkonen’s role in Finnish-Soviet relations. There is no clear consensus on these issues.

Enjoyed Reputation as an Effective Deal-Maker

Kekkonen himself, however, is said to have been a regargious leader. Seppo Salonen, an editor of one of Finland’s leading newspapers told The New Republic in 1983 that Kekkonen could “get anybody to do anything. When he wanted to score a point with [Soviet leaders Nikita] Khru- shchev or [Leonid] Brezhnev, he’d get them into a sauna and tell them funny stories.”

While in office, Kekkonen developed a reputation for following through on every deal he struck. He made good on five-year trade agreements with the Soviets throughout the 1960s. He also brought Finland to the attention of the Common Market. As a result, Finland became one of the world’s leading producers of oil rigs.

Perhaps it was his earlier interest in writing or a result of his marriage to an author, but nevertheless Kekkonen made sure to keep informed about writing and the arts throughout his career. Young writers and artists were frequently guests at his residence, Tamminiemi. After Hannu Salama, the writer, was tried and convicted on blasphemy charges in connection with his writing the novel Juhannustanssit (“Midsummer Dance”) in 1968, Kekkonen immediately pardoned him.

Kekkonen left office in 1981. There remains debate about how his retirement came about. Some suggest he was pressured into retirement. Other opinions suggest ill health led him to step down. He was succeeded by Mauno Koivisto, a Social Democrat.

Diary-Keeping Offered Insight into Kekkonen

Kekkonen continued to live in Tamminiemi until his death. He reportedly continued to write and read frequently, favoring authors such as Anatole France, Mika Waltari, and a number of other Finnish authors and works such as Machiavelli’s The Prince and Don Quixote. The residence is now the Urho Kekkonen Home Museum.

About two years into his first term as president, he had started keeping a diary, a practice which he faithfully continued until 1981, shortly before his resignation. The diaries
were never meant to be published, but in 2000, his son, Matti Kekkonen, and his grandson, Timo Kekkonen, consented to their publication in a four-volume set. According to the newspaper Helsingin Sanomat, “The only parts to be left out of the books will be Kekkonen’s observations about his own family. There are to be indications in the published work whenever a cut is made.”

Ironically, Kekkonen never completed his memoirs. The first volume was completed by Paavo Haavikko in 1981. Later, Juhani Suomi wrote a multi-volume biography of Kekkonen, a project that has spanned some two decades. Suomi also contributed historical perspectives to the diaries and has been credited for his ability to read Kekkonen’s handwriting.

Rumors Persisted As Did Legacy Debates

Even after leaving politics and well after his death, rumor and conjecture continued to swirl about Kekkonen. One such rumor held that he had been a Soviet agent, but, says Laqueur, “they were dismissed as base calumnies by his official biographer—who denied everyone else access to the relevant archival material.” When the files of the Central Committee of the Soviet Communist Party (CPSU) were eventually made public, it became clear Kekkonen and his cronies “had been paid many millions of finmarks through the office of the KGB: some of this money was used for their election campaigns, but there were also payments for personal use.” But, notes Laqueur, “perhaps he would have acted as he did even if the Soviets had never paid him a single ruble.”

More controversy arose when a tell-all book by Anita Hallama was released in 2001. She claimed to have had an affair with Kekkonen that had started in the early 1960s. Her husband was the Finnish ambassador to the Soviet Union. Reuters said the publication of this correspondence between the two served to confirm the “open secret” about their relationship. Each of their spouses purportedly knew about this relationship. The book delved into how Kekkonen developed policy, purportedly even how he discussed specific issues with Hallama.

“Urho Kekkonen was a great statesman in the true meaning of the word,” said Finnish Prime Minister Paavo Lipponen in a September 3, 2000, speech marking the Urho Kekkonen centenary seminar at the House of Estates. “The aim of Finland’s active policy of neutrality—as Kekkonen, not the Soviet Union, understood it to strengthen Finland’s international standing. Good relations with the USSR prepared the way for consistent integration into cooperation between the Western democracies. . . . Finland was neither an outpost of the West nor a cat’s-paw of the Soviet Union. When certain Western commentators saw fit to cast aspersions about us in conversation, I couldn’t help asking what exactly their own countries did in 1940.

“Talk of Finlandization is justified, but in the case of foreign policy it’s valid to ask which did better, the cat or the mouse. Finland came out on top in the Cold War,” continued Lipponen. He says at the end of his term in office, however, Kekkonen “was interfering in the action of the Prime Minister and the Government in a way that was totally unacceptable. . . . The neo-worship and concentration of power that had grown up around the old man kept him in office too long. On the other hand, maybe Kekkonen himself knew no other way of life, and would have been unable to resist interfering in things as ex-President.”

Several politicians and political commentators have noted that there has yet to be any sufficient distance from events to truly gauge what impact on Finland and the world Kekkonen might have had or to accurately determine what his legacy might be. “The jury is still out on what sort of verdict history will hand down to Kekkonen. The image of the man presented by the diaries is naturally bound to the times of which they report, in just the same way as our present image of Kekkonen is bound to what we know now. And above all we know what ultimately happened to the Soviet Union,” wrote Unto Hämäläinen, in a review of the diaries published in Helsingin Sanomat in 2002. “Kekkonen could not even begin to guess at such an outcome, and in his weak moments he felt that Finland would come through intact.” Kekkonen died on August 31, 1986, in Helsinki, Finland.

Books

Contemporary Newsmakers, Gale Research, 1986.

Periodicals

Commentary, January 1993.

Online


Thomas Henry Kendall

Though his education was slight and he was plagued throughout his life with a variety of personal troubles, Thomas Henry Kendall (1839–1882) perse-
vered with his verse to become Australia’s best known 19th century poet. Kendall grew up on the southern coast of the continent and drew his inspiration from the surrounding natural environment as well as the local traditions.

Early Life

Kendall was born on April 18, 1839, in Kirmington, Australia, a twin son of Basil Kendall and Melinda McNally. Kendall’s given names were Thomas Henry, but he was often referred to as Henry Clarence Kendall. With twin brother Basil, he was brought up among the mountains and cool rainforests of the south coast of New South Wales. Like his father before him, Basil Kendall, the poet’s father, had led an adventurous life at sea before becoming a farmer. Basil and his wife settled on farmland in Kirmington, living in a primitive cottage where their sons were born.

In 1844, Basil Kendall moved his family to the coastal regions of Illawarra in the Clarence River district. Before he got married, Basil Kendall had lost almost all of one lung and, by this time, his health had begun to fail. He found it hard to support his family, which had grown to include three daughters. He died in 1851 when Henry Kendall was 12 years old.

After Basil Kendall’s death, Kendall’s mother moved her children back to the south coast, near Woolongong, and the family was soon scattered, the children taken in by various relatives who cared for them. Henry and his brother lived with relatives on the South Coast in Illawarra. The area was said to be especially beautiful, and the environment made an enormous impression on Kendall. The lush and beautiful surroundings influenced some of his later landscape poetry, especially in such works as “Bell Birds,” “September in Australia,” and “Narrara Creek.”

In 1855, after a brief education, the 14-year-old Kendall followed in the footsteps of his father and grandfather and went to sea. He worked as a cabin boy on a whaling brig, the Plumstead, which was owned by his uncle Joseph. During the two-year voyage in the South Seas, the vessel stopped at many islands. Like the landscape of Australia, the sublime beauty of the Pacific scenery made a powerful impression on Kendall, and he referred to his experiences in two of his poems, “The Ballad of Tanna” and “Beyond Kerguelen.” He found the rigors of life at sea, however, to be extremely harsh, and most of his memories of the experience were bad ones. This reaction to the experience seemed in keeping with his natural disposition. All throughout his life, even when he was a young boy, Kendall was, for the most part, unhappy. As he grew older, he was increasingly shy, inclined toward melancholy, and possessed of a keen ambition that often made him feel thwarted in his efforts. These qualities would contribute to a difficult adult life.

Started Writing Poetry

In March of 1857, he returned to Australia. Living in Sydney, and only 16 years old, he became the primary support of his mother and sisters, working at various jobs including errand boy, shop assistant, and public servant. Kendall was very devoted to his mother, who was an attractive, strong-willed woman who recognized in her son a gift for written verse. Kendall credited her with his later literary accomplishments. He always felt that he inherited his talent from her, and she helped with his education and encouraged him to write poetry.


His poetry drew favorable notices in Australia and England and would lead to important and supportive friendships with people such as Henry Parkes, an editor; Charles Harpur, a well-known Australian poet; and Daniel Henry Deniehy, an orator and critic. In 1859, Parkes, then the editor of The Empire, a newspaper, published a poem, “Silent Years,” signed by one “Mr. H. Kendall, N.A.P.” Kendall had attached those initials to his name. They stood for Native Australian Poet. The next year, Parkes published Kendall’s verses on the wreck of the Dunbar, titled “The Merchant Ship,” which Kendall had written when he was sixteen.

Established Important Friendships

At the time, Kendall also sent some poems to The Sydney Morning Herald, which gained the attention of Henry Halloran, a civil servant and amateur writer, who contacted Kendall and tried to help him. Later, it was said of Kendall that he may have been unlucky in life but lucky in friendships, which proved beneficial to a young man who was shy and nervous.

During this period, Kendall’s mother introduced him to Sheridan Moore, a well-known literary critic. Moore admired Kendall’s work and helped to get his poetry published. Moore later would introduce Kendall to James Lionel Michael, a Grafton solicitor, who hired Kendall as his clerk. Michael was a cultured, literate man who also wrote poetry. Both a friend and an employer, Michael opened his huge, personal library to Kendall and encouraged the young man in his own poetic pursuits.

After employment in Grafton, Kendall had a somewhat nomadic work history and changed jobs and locations several times. For a while, he worked in Dungog on the Williams River and then at Scone, where he only worked for a month or two before he returned to Sydney. In October of 1862, while living in Sydney, Kendall published his first volume of poetry, Poems and Songs. The collection gained favorable notices and proved to be popular.

More good reviews followed, including ones for his poem “The Empire” as well as for his work that appeared in the literary publication Athenaeum over the next four years. In 1866, his growing body of work received high praise by
G. B. Barton in his *Poets and Prose Writers of New South Wales.*

In August of 1863, Parkes used his influence to secure Kendall a clerkship in the Surveyor-General’s Department in Sydney at 150 pounds a year. In 1866, he was transferred to the Colonial Secretary’s Office, where he earned 200 pounds a year. He combined these positions with some journalism work and continued writing poetry. His poetry from this period would later be published in two volumes, *Leaves from an Australian Forest* (1869) and *Songs from the Mountains* (1880). The poems demonstrated his appreciation of nature and of the beautiful Australian landscape and bush.

### Marriage and Financial Difficulties

In 1867, despite his natural shyness, he gave a series of lectures at the Sydney School of Arts. After one of these lectures, coincidentally titled “Love, Courtship and Marriage,” Kendall met Charlotte Rutter, daughter of a government medical officer and accompanied her home. They immediately fell in love and married the next year, the same year that Kendall received a prize for the best Australian poem for “A Death in the Bush.” The contest’s judge, author Richard Hengist Horne, wrote an article in Melbourne and Sydney newspapers in which he praised Kendall as a true poet. He also stated that if the contest had awarded three prizes instead of one, Kendall would have received the other two prizes for his other submissions, “The Glen of Arrawatta” and “Dungog.”

The award and the praise bolstered Kendall’s confidence enough that he decided he wanted to work exclusively as a writer. He resigned his post in the Colonial Secretary’s Office in March of 1869 and moved to Melbourne with his wife and their recently born daughter. Kendall opted to move to that city because, at the time, it was a center of literary activity. Still, he found it difficult to establish himself on his writing alone. He tried to work as a full-time journalist, but his efforts met with little success. His second volume of poetry, *Leaves from Australian Forests,* received good reviews but made little money.

### Suffered a Nervous Breakdown

Besides the financial problems, Kendall experienced some personal tragedies. In April of 1869, Michael, his friend and former employer, was found dead in the Clarence River. Also, in June, Harpur, the fellow poet who had encouraged Kendall, passed away. Meanwhile, personal problems plagued the troubled poet. By 1870, he and his wife lived in poverty, and he was suffering a drinking problem. After they returned to New South Wales that year, Kendall suffered a nervous breakdown and was placed in an institution.

When healthy again, Kendall again sought work as a journalist, writing prose and poetry, but his earnings were small. He also established friendships with George Gordon McCrae and Lindsay Gordon, two leading figures of the Melbourne literary scene. The friendships provided Kendall with encouragement but also brought him sadness. Kendall and Gordon had become very close, so it was devastating to Kendall when Gordon committed suicide at the age of 37.

The next two years were particularly troublesome for Kendall. The depression brought on by his friend’s death further darkened his already melancholy spirit. In addition, his poor business sense and his alcoholism resulted in poverty that in turn led to a temporary breakdown of his marriage. Then, in 1871, his first-born daughter, Araluen, died. This, combined with his lack of success, led him increasingly to seek solace in alcohol. He returned to Sydney a broken man, and he would spend periods in a Sydney asylum seeking a cure for his addiction.

### Attained Peace in Later Years

Fortunately for Kendall he recovered, thanks to the efforts of his devoted wife, who reconciled with him, and the help of some friends. He emerged from the darkest period of his life to find personal peace and produce his best poetic works.

Those friends—George and Michale Fagan—were timber merchants in Brisbane, and they took care of Kendall until he was well enough to take a position as storekeeper with their company. For the remaining years of his relatively short life, Kendall lived a tranquil existence with his wife and family. By this time, Kendall had two sons, and in 1876 he would have another son and a daughter.

During these final years, Kendall received some gratifying recognition for his talents. In 1879, he wrote the lyrics for the opening Cantata sung at the Sydney International Exhibition. He also won a prize for a poem he wrote about the Exhibition. In addition, his third collection of poetry, *Songs from the Mountains* (1890) earned him a huge profit. This last book published while he was still alive is generally regarded to include his best work, reflecting a greater command of the craft and demonstrating a high level of imagination.

In 1881, his old friend Parkes helped him secure the position of Inspectorship of State Forests at 500 pounds a year. The experience Kendall gained in the Fagan brothers’ timber business proved especially helpful. However, by this time in his life, Kendall’s health began failing, and the outdoor work drained him physically. During one of his forest inspections, he caught a chill that affected his lungs and brought about tuberculosis. He went to Sydney for treatment, but he died there on August 1, 1882, in his wife’s arms. He was only 43 years old. He was buried at Waverley, which overlooked the ocean.

Kendall’s wife survived him for more than 40 years. In all, they had seven children. The town Kendall in northern New South Wales was named after him. Kendall has been remembered long after his death, and a compilation of his work, *The Poetical Works of Henry Kendall,* was published in 1966.

Today, many regard his poetry to be the best produced by any Australian poet, and individual poems have been described as “singing pictures.” His poetry has also been described as mellifluous and highly descriptive. Modern scholars marvel that he was able to produce such a copious
and effective body of work in light of his personal troubles as well as the harsh surroundings of 19th century Australia.

**Books**


**Online**


**Khalid bin Abdul Aziz Al-Saud**

Khalid bin Abdul Aziz Al-Saud (1912–1982) was Saudi Arabia’s fourth king, reigning from 1975 to 1982. Like his brother, King Faisal, whom he succeeded to the throne, Khalid was most at home in the desert. His prior government service included positions as Governor of the Hijaz (from 1932 to 1934) and Minister of the Interior, starting in 1934.

**The Al-Saud Royal Family**

The stability of Saudi Arabia derives largely from its ruling Al-Saud family. Although outsiders have no way of knowing how large the family actually is, estimates have placed its size at between five and eight thousand adults. The size and wealth of the Al-Saud family have created a system of family politics quite unlike any previously known.

The modern history of Saudi Arabia dates to 1747 when Muhammad Bin Saud, who ruled the Arabian peninsula, allied himself with the Muslim scholar Muhammad Bin Abdul Wahhab to found the modern state. For most of the nineteenth century, control of the Arabian peninsula was in the hands of the Al-Saud family. In 1902, Abdul Rahman captured Riyadh, which marked the beginning of the unification of the region’s diverse tribes into one nation that would take 30 years to achieve.

The current Kingdom of Saudi Arabia had its beginnings on September 23, 1932, when one of Abdul Rahman’s sons, Abdul Aziz Bin Abdul Rahman Al-Saud (hereafter called Abdul Aziz Al-Saud), declared himself king. The kingdom’s sovereignty was recognized by most of the nations of the world. In 1933, the king commissioned a survey aimed at identifying Saudi Arabia’s natural resources, and four years later, oil was discovered. Commercial oil production began in 1938. Revenues from the country’s oil resources drove subsequent efforts to modernize Saudi Arabia through a series of five-year development plans.

Under Abdul Aziz Al-Saud, the order of royal succession remained in question. As a result of his attempts to unify the various tribes on the Arabian peninsula, he had married many women from important tribes, and fathered 36 sons. At the time of his death, his oldest surviving sons were Saud bin Abdul Aziz and Faisal bin Abdul Aziz. The next two sons, in order of seniority, were Muhammad bin Abdul Aziz (born 1910) and Khalid bin Abdul Aziz (born 1912).

In May 1933 Saud was designated heir apparent, even though the Saudi system of succession was not based on primogeniture. Khalid, meanwhile, was acquiring authority under Faisal’s supervision in the Hijaz. Starting in 1943, Saud, Faisal, Muhammad, and Khalid began assuming joint control of Saudi Arabia’s destiny.

Following the death of King Abdul Aziz in 1953, his son Saud Bin Abdul Aziz inherited the throne. During his eleven-year reign, King Saud established Saudi Arabia’s welfare programs and contributed to Islamic causes.

By 1960, Khalid was effectively next in line in succession to the throne, after his brother Faisal. Muhammad’s health problems had kept him out of the line of succession. Khalid was by then known to have a heart problem, but he did not appear to have any interest in becoming king.
Saud was deposed by his brother Faisal in 1964, after health problems made it difficult for him to continue on the throne. Under Faisal, the country achieved sustained economic stability and growth. Faisal also instituted a major national development program based on Saudi Arabia's enormous oil revenues.

Upon becoming king, Faisal named Khalid heir designate. In 1967, Faisal appointed Interior Minister Fahd second in line to the throne after Khalid.

In March 1975, Faisal was shot to death at a reception in the royal palace. The assassination did not seem in any way related to a dispute about succession, however.

King Khalid bin Abdul Aziz Al-Saud

Following Faisal's death, a new Council of Ministers was announced in March 1975. Khalid assumed the posts of both prime minister and foreign minister. One of Faisal's sons became minister of state for foreign affairs. Fahd, meanwhile, was appointed first deputy prime minister and minister of the interior.

Khalid had the immediate advantage of being a descendant of the royal family through both parents. His mother, Jawharah bint Musa'id, was a granddaughter of Jalwi b. Turki, who was a son of the sixth Saudi emir.

In May 1975, the government announced its second five-year plan (covering 1975 to 1980), a move that required some government reorganization. Then in September, the last brother of King Abdul Aziz retired as finance minister, altering the political composition of the Council of Ministers. That October, to accommodate these developments, a major reshuffling in the Council took place. Some have speculated that Khalid and his heir apparent Fahd sought through the reshuffle to purge the council of those loyal to Faisal, and instead advance their own favorites.

Khalid had already had some training in Saudi political affairs. He had made his first appearance on the military and political stage when his father sent him on an observation mission along the Trans-Jordanian border during the Ikhwan rebellion. At the age of 19, he had stood in for his brother Faisal as acting viceroy of the Hijaz. He represented Saudi Arabia in 1934 when he signed an agreement ending war between Yemen and his country. And in 1939, he traveled with Faisal to London. He was appointed by Saud as acting prime minister in 1960, at a time when Saud was battling his half-brothers for power; although the appointment meant very little in terms of a transfer of power, it established Khalid's position in the line of succession.

During Khalid's reign, he was assisted by Fahd, his first deputy prime minister. In May 1975, a royal decree assigned Fahd full responsibility for daily management of Saudi Arabia. Khalid retained the powers of king, as well as the support of the family.

Health Problems

But Khalid's absences from Saudi Arabia to deal with his health problems eventually cut into his authority. In 1972, he underwent open-heart surgery in Cleveland, Ohio. In 1977, he had hip surgery in London. Rumors eventually began to circulate that he would abdicate. Finally, in 1978, he was hospitalized in Cleveland for further heart surgery. While there seemed to be general agreement that Fahd would step in should Khalid leave the throne, there was no consensus about who would be Fahd's heir apparent. But when the king's health improved following his open-heart surgery in 1978, the issue was set aside.

Under Khalid, Saudi Arabia weathered several major political shake-ups. With the signing of the Camp David agreement in 1979, Saudi Arabia cut off its financial aid to Egypt. In November of that year, a group of Sunni Muslims barricaded themselves inside the Holy Mosque of Mecca. Although they held out for 15 days, eventually as many as 200 were killed. In 1980, Saudi Arabia assumed full control of Aramco.

Khalid's Monarchy

King Khalid and his half-brother and heir apparent Fahd shared power in a more fluid way than had Khalid and his brother, King Faisal. Like his brother, Khalid assumed the roles of both prime minister and king, but unlike King Faisal, Khalid chose to delegate many of the ministerial responsibilities to his heir apparent. But the extent of Khalid's delegation of responsibility to Fahd also fluctuated with the king's health and the political standing of Fahd.

During Khalid's reign, family rivalries were more subdued than under his predecessors. Instead, Saud family politics became characterized by the presence of multiple centers of influence. As a result, in spite of Khalid's recurring health problems, he was able to counter Fahd's political ambitions. Other centers of power, including the National Guard and the Royal Intelligence, reported directly to the king. Many government ministers refused to keep Fahd advised of their activities, frustrating Fahd's attempts to become the country's de facto prime minister.

Also contributing to the decentralization of power was the continuation in office under Khalid of princes who had built up entrenched bureaucracies during King Faisal's reign. The splitting of power between Khalid and Fahd contributed to the independence of these princes. But as older princes left their government positions, and were replaced by younger ones, the internal politics within the Saud family became complicated by the presence of shifting allegiances.

Domestic and Foreign Policy

Achievements

Khalid's achievements in domestic and foreign policy were not inconsiderable, despite his suffering from a serious heart condition. As already noted, shortly after coming to the throne, Khalid initiated Saudi Arabia's second Five Year Plan, which established the infrastructure for the future prosperity of his country.

On the foreign policy front, Khalid played a role in attempting to resolve the Lebanese civil war. An Arab peace conference was held in Riyadh, Saudi Arabia, in October 1976. This conference, followed by an Arab League meeting in Cairo the same month, temporarily brought hostilities...
in the Lebanese Civil War to a halt. In 1981, Khalid convened a historic summit of Arab nations.

The Iran-Iraq war erupted in September 1980. Iraq had long posed a threat to the monarchies of the Arabian peninsula. After Iran recovered from the attack by Iraq, the threat of Islamic revolution seemed to replace any threat posed by Iraq. The Persian gulf principalities that had traditionally served as buffer states between Saudi Arabia and Iran and Iraq had, meanwhile, begun experiencing increased subversive activity within their borders by Iranian and Iraqi agents. After Saudi citizens were arrested in Bahrain in 1981, Saudi Arabia increased its cooperation with the mini states, and eventually formed the Gulf Cooperation Council.

The Gulf Co-operation Council (GCC) was founded in 1981 with the signing of the organization’s constitution by the kings and princes of Bahrain, Kuwait, Qatar, the Kingdom of Saudi Arabia, the Sultanate of Oman, and the United Arab Emirates. Its goal included achieving unity between member states and enhancing co-operation between peoples of the region. The GCC also set out to bring into conformity laws in the member countries pertaining to economics and financial affairs; commercial, customs and transportation affairs; education and cultural affairs; social and health affairs; and communication, informational, political, legislative and administrative affairs. In addition the organization sought to encourage joint progress in science and technology.

Under Khalid, Saudi Arabia’s standard of living rose considerably, and the country achieved enhanced economic and political strength in the international arena. Khalid actually oversaw the implementation of two of the country’s five-year development plans, the first of these being the one that lasted from 1975 to 1979, and another that lasted from 1980 to 1984. During Khalid’s reign, the country began to diversify its economy and made progress toward the completion of its infrastructure.

Khalid died on June 13, 1982, one week after civil war broke out in Lebanon. Fahd subsequently ascended to the throne.

Books

Online

Jamaica Kincaid

A significant voice in contemporary literature, Jamaica Kincaid (born 1949) is widely praised for her works of short fiction, novels, and essays in which she explores the tenuous relationship between mother and daughter as well as themes of anti-colonialism. A native of the island of Antigua, Kincaid is considered one of the most important women Caribbean writers. Over a career that has spanned more than three decades, Kincaid has earned a reputable place in the literary world for her highly personal, stylistic, and honest writings.

Jamaica Kincaid was born Elaine Potter Richardson on May 25, 1949, in the capital city of St. John’s on Antigua, a small island in the West Indies that was colonized by the British in 1632 and achieved full independence in 1981. Her mother, Annie Richardson, was an emigre from Dominica. Her stepfather, David Drew, was a carpenter and cabinetmaker. Kincaid’s maternal grandmother, a Carib Indian, also played an important role in her early life. Kincaid’s biological father, Roderick Potter, was never involved in her upbringing. Her family was poor: they had no electricity, running water, or plumbing in their home.
Kincaid was an only child until she was nine, at which time the first of her three brothers was born. Until their birth, Kincaid had enjoyed the sole attention of her mother, who taught her to read when she was three and had given her a copy of the *Oxford English Dictionary* when she turned seven. However, with the arrival of her brothers, Kincaid’s relationship with her mother changed dramatically. She was no longer a dependent young child and her importance in her mother’s eyes was severely diminished because she was female.

Although Kincaid was intellectually gifted, she was not given encouragement in the British public school she attended on the island. Her teachers frequently found her attitude rude and considered her a troublemaker. Nevertheless, she was an avid reader and spent much time at the city’s library, getting to know and admire the young librarian who worked there. Kincaid’s love for books was so fierce that she stole some from the library and hid them under her family’s porch. The bookish and small child was not well liked by her peers, who often picked fights with her and beat her up. Discussing this period in her life, Kincaid recalled in a *Kenyon Review* interview with Moira Ferguson in 1994, “I would come home with my clothes in tatters and my face scratched up, and my mother would take me back to the person who had beaten me up and say ‘fight, fight’ and I couldn’t fight. I would just cry and cry. . . .” Eventually, after years of abuse, when she was 11, Kincaid finally did fight back and win. After that, she was no longer tormented and she actually took on a leadership role.

As a girl there were few options available for Kincaid. She would have liked to have attended university in Antigua and remained there after becoming a teacher or a librarian, but she was not given that opportunity. Despite the shortcomings of her early education, she did acquire a strong background in English literature, studying the works of Shakespeare, Wordsworth, Keats, and the King James version of the Bible. Kincaid especially loved the works of Charlotte Bronte, reading *Jane Eyre* numerous times.

**Self-Exile in the United States**

In 1966, shortly after turning 17, Kincaid was sent to the United States to work as an au pair for an affluent family in Scarsdale, New York. She was expected to send money home to her family, but she would not. She received letters from home, but she did not open them. It was in this state of self-exile that Kincaid would shape her new life away from the unhappiness she had felt in Antigua. Shortly after leaving her job in Scarsdale, Kincaid found work for an Upper East Side family in New York City. After this move, she left no forwarding address and was cut off from her family until her return to Antigua 20 years later. While working in New York, Kincaid continued her education at a community college, earned a high school equivalency diploma, and began taking photography courses at the New School for Social Research. She later studied photography at Franconia College in New Hampshire on a scholarship, though she never earned a college diploma. When asked in a 1996 interview with Dwight Garner in *Salon* if she had any aspirations to become a writer when she came to the United States, she stated flatly, “None. Absolutely none. [When] I first arrived I was incredibly depressed and lonely. I didn’t know there was such a world as the literary world. I didn’t know anything, except maybe how to put one foot in front of the other.”

Although Kincaid was not fully aware of her literary ambitions during her childhood and early years in New York, she had gained much from her voracious reading, all of which was of an English literary tradition. She had never been exposed to West Indian literature. When speaking to Ferguson, she acknowledged that as a child she would imagine stories and conversations in her head, but she never wrote them down. It was her experiences in photography that finally made her aware of writing. After watching the French film *La Jete* and reading Alain Robbe-Grillet, Kincaid felt her burst of inspiration. She told Ferguson, “I began to write poems. I began to write of my photographs—what I would take and [how] I would set them up. I would look at what I had written down, and that is how I would take the photograph. I would write down what I thought the picture should feel like. And I would try to take a picture of what I had written down.”

**Entrance to Literary World**

After three years as an au pair, Kincaid left to become a secretary, model, and backup singer in a New York club. In 1970, with bleached blond hair, Kincaid enjoyed a free-wheeling city lifestyle, sharing with Garner that she once attended a Halloween party dressed as Josephine Baker with only some bananas wrapped around her waist. She began to contribute pieces to *Ingenue*, a teen magazine. Her first published work, “When I Was Seventeen,” was an interview with Gloria Steinem about the notable feminist’s own teenage years. In 1973, Elaine Potter Richardson changed her name to Jamaica Kincaid mainly to keep her anonymity since she feared her family would disapprove of her writing and mock her efforts. After her contributions to *Ingenue* and the *Village Voice*, Kincaid began to make contacts with members of New York’s literary society. One friend, Michael O’Donoghue, who was a founding writer for *Saturday Night Live*, introduced Kincaid to George Trow, who wrote the “Talk of the Town” column for *New Yorker* magazine. A strong friendship developed between the two and Kincaid began to accompany Trow when he researched bits for his column, adding her observations. William Shawn, editor of the *New Yorker*, ultimately asked Kincaid to write her own “Talk of the Town” piece. She submitted notes of her observations of the West Indian Day parade, and Shawn published the notes as a finished column. Beginning in 1976, Kincaid contributed regularly to the magazine as a staff writer under Shawn’s mentorship. In 1978, she published her first work of fiction, the short story “Girl,” in the *New Yorker*.

Kincaid acknowledged that Shawn helped her develop her voice and encouraged her to continue writing stories. Along with the significant development as a writer Kincaid received while working at the *New Yorker*, she also met Allen Shawn, a classical composer and son of Ted Shawn. They were married in 1979.
**Literary Celebrity**

In “Girl” and nine other sketches, often denoted “prose poems” by critics, that appeared in the 1983 collection *At the Bottom of the River*, Kincaid plumbed her early life in Antigua, developing a series of “fictional narratives” centering on a young Caribbean girl. The stories were marked by a lyrically poetic, incantatory, rhythmic voice. Perhaps the most-discussed piece in the collection is “Girl,” which is one sentence uttered by a mother to her child, listing in repetitive scrutiny a series of commands. Her breakthrough collection earned Kincaid the Morton Dauwen Zabel Award from the American Academy and Institute of Arts and Letters.

Kincaid followed the publication of *At the Bottom of the River* with the slim novel *Annie John* in 1985. In this work, Kincaid writes a coming-of-age tale that focuses on the life of a young Caribbean girl. The theme of the mother-daughter relationship in which a mother devastatingly severs her bond with her daughter is at its core. This work was well received and critics praised its rhythmic quality, evocative images, and universal themes. Many critics have noted that her most significant theme, that of the mother-daughter bond, represents the larger issue of the powerful and the powerless, particularly as this relationship operates in a colonial culture.

The personal nature of so much of Kincaid’s fiction is one of its salient features, and she admits that her difficult relationship with her own mother inspired her writing, though she maintains it was an act of salvation to write her thoughts down. “Writing is really such an expression of personal growth,” she admitted to Ferguson. “I don’t know how else to live. For me it is a matter of saving my life. I don’t know what I would do if I didn’t write. It is a matter of living in the deepest way.” Noting the autobiographical element to her writing, she asserted that “My writing has been very autobiographical. The events are true to me. They may not be true to other people. I think it is fair for my mother to say, ‘This is not me.’ It is only the mother in the books I’ve written. It is only the mother as the person I used to be perceived her. . . . For me it was really an act of saving my life, so it had to be autobiographical.”

**Angry Voice Divided Readership**

With the publication of her nonfiction work *A Small Place* in 1988 and her third fictional work, *Lucy*, in 1991, Kincaid was no longer the darling of the literary world. Reviewers were divided over the angry tone expressed in both works. In *A Small Place*, described as “an anti-travel narrative,” Kincaid returns to Antigua after having been gone for 20 years. She ultimately skewers the white tourist who visits Antigua with no thought to the poverty and the long-endured oppression of the colonized natives, while also pointing out the corruption of the post-independent Antiguan government. Bob Gottlieb, editor of the *New Yorker* at the time, refused to publish any of the work in the magazine due to its angry tone. In her native Antigua, the government issued an informal ban on Kincaid, restricting her visits to the island from 1985 to 1992. Seemingly unaccepting of her resentment and frustrations, V.R. Peterson of People compared Kincaid to West Indian writer V.S. Naipaul, maintaining that “where Naipaul is humane and appreciative of the dark corners of the human condition, Kincaid seems only vituperative and intemperate.”

Kincaid drew similar criticism for the novel *Lucy*. *Annie John* ends with the protagonist leaving Antigua at the age of 17, and *Lucy* begins with the eponymous protagonist leaving the Caribbean at age 19 to come to the United States to work as an au pair for a wealthy New York City family. Commentators note a more bitter tone to this novel in which Lucy will not bend to the powers that hold sway. However, most still commend Kincaid’s storytelling abilities. Reviewing the novel, the Newsweek book critic summarized "Vinegary Lucy doesn’t bother to be likable, but her shrewdness and her gumption make her good company all the same."

**Familial Bonds**

Kincaid returned to her familiar theme of the mother-daughter relationship and the cruel outcomes of colonization with her dark portrayal of seventy-year-old Xuela Claudette Richardson, the narrator of her novel *The Autobiography of My Mother* published in 1996. The novel, set on the island of Dominica, presents the life of the narrator and the mother whom she never knew who had died in childbirth. Xuela’s life is mired in loss, and, as Andrea Stuart noted in the *New Statesman*, “[*The Autobiography of My Mother*] is simultaneously one of the most beautifully written books I have read, and one of the most alienating.” In 1997 this complex novel was a finalist for the National Book Critics Circle Award for fiction and the PEN Faulkner Award.

In 1997 Kincaid published *My Brother*, a memoir of her youngest brother Devon Drew, who died of AIDS in 1996 at the age of 33. This highly personal work addresses not only the relationship Kincaid had with her brother—the two were alike in personality though they had spent little time together—as well as the continued themes of her resentful relationship with her mother and the devastating outcomes of a post-colonial culture. Reviewing the work in *Time* John Skow laments that while “there is deep, honest feeling here . . . it seems long past time for this gifted writer to tell us something new.” In response to such criticism, Kincaid related to Garner, “I am not troubled . . . to be seen to be of one whole cloth—that all that I write is a further development of something. Perhaps it is musical in that way. My work is a chord that develops in many different ways. I couldn’t help but write these books.” Central to this work is Kincaid’s discovery after Drew has died that he was homosexual and the oppressive secret he had kept throughout his life. Kincaid’s ability to address the personal themes within a memoir that, according to Brad Goldfarb in *Interview*, is “an almost ruthless desire to get at the truth” and still relate them to such universal themes as familial bonds and the overarching question of post-colonial issues, helped her earn a nomination for a National Book Award.
Fragrant and Thorny

As a child, Kincaid had been surrounded by plants on Antigua, and her interest in gardening developed steadily throughout her adult life. In 1985, when her husband accepted a teaching position in Bennington, Vermont, the couple moved to this idyllic community with their two young children, Annie and Harold. Leaving the confines of the city, Kincaid had ample space to garden, and she published My Garden (Book) in 1999. This collection of essays marks a departure from the embittered tone of her previous works and was heralded as entertaining yet intelligent due to Kincaid’s artful connection between gardening and philosophical and poetic reflections. While most reviewers concede that all of Kincaid’s works, despite at times her harsh tone, are complex and stylistically unique, with My Garden (Book), Kincaid seemed to have expressed similarly profound observations in a more gentle, even humorous tone.

Mr. Potter, Kincaid’s tenth book, is a return to a West Indian setting and characters from her family background. The narrator, Elaine Cynthia Potter Richardson, ruminates over the empty life of Roderick Potter, her father who has had no part in her life. Acknowledging the characters’ obvious connections to Kincaid’s own life, Susan Walker asserts in the Toronto Star that “it’s unlikely any reader will mistake these characters for actual people. They are too encased in literary language, too distilled, almost mythical in the way they come to represent the way many people’s lives are shaped by history.”

While many of Kincaid’s works are short in length, they have never failed to elicit respect, if at times reluctantly. Kincaid herself is a forthright person who speaks candidly. After she left the New Yorker in 1995, she spoke quite openly about her disgust at the “vulgarity” that the magazine produced under the editorship of Tina Brown. Her frankness, however, is always tinged with humor as she told Garner, “[B]rown[s] actually got some nice qualities. But she can’t help but be attracted to the coarse and vulgar. I wish there was some vaccine—I would sneak it up on her.”

Kincaid has been awarded honorary degrees from Williams College (1991), Long Island College (1991), Amherst College (1995), Bard College (1997), and Middlebury College (1998). She continues to write from her home in Bennington, teaching creative writing at Bennington College and Harvard University.

Books

Authors and Artists for Young Adults, Volume 13, Gale, 1994.
Contemporary Authors Online, Gale, 2001.
Contemporary Literary Criticism, Gale, 2002.
Feminist Writers, St. James Press, 1996.

Periodicals

Advocate, December 9, 1997.
Essence, March 1996.
Interview, October 1997.
Kirkus Reviews, March 1, 2002.
Library Journal, October 1, 1999.
Maclean’s, June 3, 2002.
Mother Jones, September/October 1997.
New Statesman, October 11, 1996.
Newsweek, October 1, 1990.
People, September 26, 1988; December 15, 1997.

Online


Masaki Kobayashi

Masaki Kobayashi (1916–1996) was a Japanese film director best known for injecting social criticism of Japanese traditions and norms into his chosen art form. He made each of his films carefully, meticulously. As a result, his body of work is not large in comparison with that of his contemporaries, but he remains an important figure nevertheless.

Renowned for powerful critiques of ethical issues and a strong sense of visual detail, Kobayashi’s films are surprisingly political compared to his contemporaries in Japanese cinema, wrote Mike Pinksy on the DVD Verdict website. “Although Kobayashi is not as well known abroad as some other Japanese directors, his critical reputation is based on his uncompromising scrutiny of personal responsibility and his desire to expose the uncomfortable truths about social corruptions.”

Early Career Interrupted by War

There is seemingly no documentation of Kobayashi’s early life or personal life other than noting he was born on January 14, 1916, in Otaru, Japan, and spent his youth on the northern island of Hokkaido, Japan, in the port city of Otaru. In 1933 Kobayashi entered Waseda University in Tokyo where he began studies in philosophy and art. He was particularly interested in Buddhist sculpture. Kobayashi
had planned to continue studying art history, but the Pacific War had already begun. “In art history I knew it would require many more years of painstaking research for me to make a contribution, and the war made the future too uncertain,” said Kobayashi in World Film Directors. “But with film, I thought there might be a chance of leaving something behind.”

Upon Kobayashi’s graduation in 1941, he went to work at Shochiku Film Company in Ofuna. His job was short-lived with the advent of Japanese involvement in World War II. Kobayashi, who is often described by film historians as having been a pacifist, was drafted by the Japanese Imperial Army in 1942. He loathed the military and as a form of protest, Kobayashi refused every promotion offered to him. He was dispatched into combat first in Manchuria, then to the Ryukyu Islands. Kobayashi was captured and taken as a prisoner of war on Okinawa. He remained on Okinawa until the war ended.

Career Resumed with Lengthy Apprenticeship

Following the war, Kobayashi was able to resume his career in film and rejoin the staff at the Shochiku studios. Beginning in November 1946, he commenced what would be a six-year long apprenticeship as an assistant director. Kobayashi worked under Keisuke Kinoshita on 15 films. Kinoshita was not only Kobayashi’s supervisor, he also served as his mentor. The two directors wrote one film together in 1949.

Kobayashi made his directorial debut in November 1952 with Musoko no seishun (My Sons’ Youth). The film followed a middle-class family with two teenage sons who were about to go on their first dates. For Kobayashi’s second effort, he used a script written by his mentor titled Magakoro (Sincere Heart). The script was a gift given by Kinoshita to commemorate Kobayashi’s promotion within the studio.

“Kobayashi’s instinct for self-preservation within the Shochiku system was correct,” according to Audie Bock in World Film Directors. “In Kinoshita he had an excellent teacher and powerful patron. While none of the early films he made under direct Kinoshita tutelage are bad films, they are more his mentor’s late style than his own, and very different from what Kobayashi already knew he wanted to do as a director.”

That same year, Kobayashi decided it was time to embark on his own. The result was an independently made film called Kabe atskui heya (Room with Thick Walls). For the making of this film, Kobayashi started his own production company, Shochi Productions. Shochiku Film Company agreed to distribute the film. The subject he chose to examine for this film was an unvarnished look at Japanese wartime atrocities. The script, by the novelist Kobo Abé, was based on the diaries of lower level Japanese war criminals. The film was not released until 1956. The studio feared offending Americans with its subject matter. Ultimately, the film won the nation’s Peace Culture Prize for that year.

Explored Controversial Subjects in Several Films

Kobayashi went on to make four more films with Shochiku. By 1956 Kobayashi considered himself to be sufficiently well established in his career, comfortable enough to make what would be a controversial film about corruption within professional baseball, Anata kaimasu (I’ll Buy You). The film that followed it was no less controversial. Kuroi kawa (Black River, 1957) was another expose. This time Kobayashi peeked into the corruption and criminal elements surrounding the military bases in Japan.

The controversy these films stirred up dimmed in comparison to that caused by the epic film Ningen no joken (The Human Condition). The epic set in World War II was based on the six-volume novel by Jumpei Gomikawa. The film follows a single male character from the period of the Japanese occupation of Manchuria through the capture of Japanese soldiers by the Russians in 1945, after the Japanese surrender. As Pinksy wrote on the DVD Verdict website, “Kobayashi was likely drawn to the material because it parallels his own wartime experiences.

“The Human Condition feels above all uncompromisingly real. Effective use of exterior locations, detailed sets, minimal use of music, and an unflinching look at the horrible effect of war on human bodies (we are shown corpses killed by steam, torture, even executions on camera) force us to confront the realities of war,” wrote Pinksy. “All this adds up to a strong sense that we are watching something true, like a documentary in narrative form.”

Kobayashi chose to break the film into three parts, each of which was three hours or more in length. The film was ultimately entered into the Guinness Book of Records as the longest film in existence. The first film in the trilogy is known as No Greater Love (1959), set in 1943. It won the San Giorgio Prize at the Venice Film Festival and is regarded as a masterpiece. The other two films in the trilogy are Road to Eternity (1959) and A Soldier’s Prayer (1961). Stanley Kubrick, the noted British director of films including 2001 and Dr. Strangelove, was said to have been inspired by the latter film in the trilogy, portions of which he used in creating the first segment of his own war film Full Metal Jacket.

Decade of Frustration Followed Successes

Kobayashi made a couple of other films before choosing to make a big budget picture. This blockbuster was Kwaidan (Kaidan, 1964), a film composed of four distinct ghost stories by Lafcadio Hearn, which were based on traditional Japanese tales. The project had been in the planning for years. With Kaidan Kobayashi also abandoned the gritty realistic style for which he had become well known in favor of exploring beauty in a more stylized manner. It was also his first color film and is regarded as his most successful. The picture won the Special Jury Prize at the Cannes Film Festival.

His work in the 1960s was among his best. An essay in International Dictionary of Films and Filmmakers names Seppuku (Harakiri, 1962) and Joiuchi (Rebellion, 1967)
as “Kobayashi’s two finest films.” These films utilize “historical settings to universalize his focus on the dissident individual. The masterly blend of style and content, with the unbending ritual of samurai convention perfectly matched by cool, reticent camera movement and elegantly geometric composition, marks in these two films the peak of Kobayashi’s art.”

The 1970s were difficult for Kobayashi. His films were categorically rejected by the studios for their social critiques. The industry had taken a distinctly different turn, favoring exploitation films over serious art. Kobayashi, Akira Kurosawa [best known for his films Seven Samurai (1954) and Rashomon (1951)], and two other film makers formed Yonki no Kai (“The Club of the Four Knights”). The idea was for the four to collaborate on a single film project. The partnership was aborted when the filmmakers could not reach consensus. With the effort’s failure, each of the participants reluctantly decided to make a film for television.

For Kobayashi, the result of this was Kasuki, a television film based on the book by Yasushi Inoue. The project consisted of eight, one-hour segments. Filming took Kobayashi to different locations, including Europe. The project aired on television in 1972. According to the International Dictionary of Films and Filmmakers, Kobayashi is said to have considered the televised version “rough footage” for the cinema version. The series was later edited to 213 minutes and released as a feature film in 1975.

Chronicalled War Crimes in Documentary

Kobayashi’s next project was a disappointment, but the director redeemed himself with the film Tokyo saiban (The Tokyo Trials, 1983), a four-and-a-half-hour documentary epic. The film chronicles the events of the Pacific counterpart to the post-World War II Nuremberg Trials. During these war crimes trials before the International Military Tribunal for the Far East, 28 high profile Japanese who had been in the military or politics during the Second World War were tried by the Allies. All were found guilty. Seven, including Hideki Tojo, the former Japanese Prime Minister, were hanged. For this documentary, Kobayashi combed thousands of reels of news footage, including 30,000 reels from the United States Pentagon.

Joan Mellen in The Nation explains that the film “looks at the Tokyo war-trials in light of the American adventure in Vietnam; the film closes with shots of the Hiroshima bombing. So much for war guilt.” It was released in the United States in 1984 and also won the FIRPRESI Award at the 1985 Berlin International Film Festival.

The last Kobayashi film was Shokutaku no nai ie (variously translated as either The Empty Table, House Without a Dining Table, or Fate of a Family, 1985). The work is fictional, based on real events involving a stand-off between police and radical Japanese terrorists. In the film, many of the radicals’ parents are shown apologizing publicly for their children in order to save face. One of the parent’s refuses, thus, Kobayashi is able to make a larger comment on contemporary society’s insistence on tradition.

Remembered for Perfectionism, Social Commentary

Among his frequent collaborators was Toru Takemitsu, a composer, and actor Tatsuya Nakadai. Kobayashi and Takemitsu began working together in 1962 on Karamiai (The Inheritance). Shokutaku no nai ie was the last film for both masters.

Kobayashi was known as a perfectionist. He took his time on the set, possibly completing only three final takes in a day’s work, which would be considered a slow pace for a director. Each of his films was carefully crafted. He even went so far as to paint sets himself.

Kobayashi’s volume of production is not large compared to some of his contemporaries, such as Kurosawa, but his films are considered an important body of work. In a website dedicated to a Kobayashi retrospective at Columbia University, the corpus of his work is described as being wholly based on his experiences during the war. “Whether historical dramas or stories set in modern Japan, they reflect the director’s rejection of military or social authority wielded at the expense of the individual. Few artists of any time or any culture have argued more passionately than Kobayashi against the abuse of power. None has revealed more dramatically the cost of such power for a society or an individual.”

Books


Periodicals

Asia Africa Intelligence Wire (From The Yomiuri Shimbun/Daily Yomiuri), August 8, 2002.


Online


Christine Ladd-Franklin

Christine Ladd-Franklin (1847–1930) was a noted logician and psychologist who added to the literature in both fields during the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries. She proposed the antilogism, a major contribution to the field of logic. As a psychologist, she contributed theories of color vision. Despite her contributions, she was denied acceptance in the scientific community because she was a woman.

Ladd-Franklin was born Christine Ladd in Windsor, Connecticut, on December 1, 1847. Her parents came from influential and well-to-do families. Her father, Eliphalet Ladd, was a New York merchant and the nephew of William Ladd, founder of the American Peace Society. Her mother, Augusta Niles Ladd, was the niece of John Milton Niles, former postmaster-general of the United States. Augusta Ladd was a staunch supporter of women's rights who often attended suffrage meetings. In a letter to her sister, Augusta described a lecture she had attended, saying that women belonged “every place where a man should be.” Her mother’s beliefs regarding women’s rights had an early influence on Ladd-Franklin during a time in American history when women’s sphere was expected to be the home and family.

Ladd-Franklin, known as Kitty, was the oldest of three children in the family. She spent her childhood in her native town and in New York City until the age of 12, when her mother died. She then moved to Portsmouth, New Hampshire, to live with her paternal grandmother. She did exceptionally well in school where she studied Greek and math alongside boys who were preparing to attend Harvard University.

Ladd-Franklin’s father was very warm and supportive. Father and daughter exchanged frequent letters in which Eliphalet Ladd encouraged his daughter’s educational pursuits. In an article in American Psychologist, Laurel Furumoto said, “Kitty’s father also abundantly praised her academic achievement and communicated an unwavering belief in her potential to excel.” Ladd-Franklin graduated from Wilbraham Academy as valedictorian of her class.

Ladd-Franklin aspired to a career and wanted to attend Vassar College, a new college that would offer women a curriculum comparable to men’s colleges. However, she faced some obstacles. Although Ladd-Franklin’s father had supported her educational endeavors, he did not believe it was necessary for her to attend college. He was also experiencing financial difficulty and could not afford to pay college tuition. Ladd-Franklin’s grandmother, who had raised her after Ladd-Franklin’s mother died, believed that if Ladd-Franklin attended college, she would be too old to marry after graduation. Ladd-Franklin convinced her grandmother to allow her to attend college with the argument that she was not attractive enough to find a husband and that there was a shortage of men as a result of the Civil War. Therefore, she needed education in order to support herself. Finally, her grandmother gave in. Her father also agreed.

Attended Vassar

Untold Lives states that shortly before entering Vassar, Ladd-Franklin wrote in her diary, “Vassar! Land of my longing! Mine at last. In a month I shall pace the spacious corridors and busy myself in the volumes of forgotten lore at Vassar!” Ladd-Franklin’s mother’s sister, Juliet Niles, an-
other women’s rights supporter, paid Ladd-Franklin’s tuition to Vassar. Ladd-Franklin was interested in physics but could not pursue that subject in college because women were denied access to laboratories. She studied mathematics instead. Ladd-Franklin attended Vassar in the 1866–1867 school year, the college’s second year of operation. She then taught for a year, before returning to Vassar to complete her degree in 1869.

Eliphalet supported his daughter’s career goals. American Psychologist reported that in 1867 he wrote, “We all miss you very much and wish you was at home but it is for your advantage and good to have some occupation and to be of some use in the world and acquire habits of independence and self-reliance and know that if you have health you can take care of yourself.”

At Vassar, Ladd-Franklin met astronomy professor Maria Mitchell, who became a mentor to Ladd-Franklin. Mitchell was a renowned astronomer and the first woman admitted to the American Academy of Arts and Sciences. Ladd-Franklin excelled in Mitchell’s astronomy classes and took observations for her in the college observatory, which had the third largest telescope in the country. Mitchell helped Ladd-Franklin and other women gain experience and self-confidence so they would pursue science as a career.

Ladd-Franklin earned an A.B. degree in 1869. She then taught in secondary schools in Pennsylvania, Massachusetts, and New York for nine years. Ladd-Franklin hated teaching. In 1872, according to Untold Lives, she wrote in her diary, “Sunday evening is the most miserable time of all the week. The burdens of the morrow look impossible to be born. Teaching I hate with a perfect hatred. . . . I shall not be able to endure it another year.” Ladd-Franklin did continue teaching and also published articles about mathematics in the Educational Times, an English periodical, and The Analyst, an American publication.

**Earned Graduate Degree**

Ladd-Franklin applied to Johns Hopkins University in Baltimore as a graduate student. Although the school did not admit women, a mathematics professor, J. J. Sylvester, noticed her application. He was familiar with her writings and persuaded the university to admit her on a special status, which allowed her to attend only lectures given by Sylvester. After a year, the university allowed her to attend other lectures and granted her a $500 annual stipend, which she held for three years. Male students who received this award were called fellows, but Ladd-Franklin was denied this title and was not even listed on the roster of students at the university. Ladd-Franklin qualified for a PhD in 1882 but was denied the degree because she was a woman. The university eventually granted her degree in 1926, when she was nearly 80 years old.

While studying mathematics at Johns Hopkins, Ladd-Franklin became interested in symbolic logic, which was taught by C. S. Peirce. She published her thesis, “The Algebra of Logic,” in Peirce’s Studies in Logic by Members of the Johns Hopkins University in 1883. Ladd-Franklin’s thesis proposed a way to analyze logical statements for validity using an inconsistent triad, which she called an antilogism. Notable Mathematicians defines an antilogism as “three statements that are together incompatible” and lists the following example: “It is impossible that any of these measures should be idiotic, for none of them is unnecessary, and nothing that is necessary is idiotic.” Ladd-Franklin’s work was praised in its time and is still regarded as a major contribution to the field of logic.

While attending Johns Hopkins, Ladd-Franklin met mathematics professor Fabian Franklin, who she married in 1882. Franklin was a native of Hungary who had worked as a civil engineer and surveyor before earning his PhD in Mathematics at Johns Hopkins. As a fellow academic, Franklin was extremely supportive and proud of his wife’s work. The Franklins had a son, who lived only a few days, and a daughter, Margaret.

**Studied Color Theory**

Ladd-Franklin began studying vision and theories of color perception. It is unclear why Ladd-Franklin became interested in vision, but one possibility, according to Furumoto, is that she had suffered from eye troubles since adolescence. Ladd-Franklin published her first paper in the field in 1887.

As a married woman, Ladd-Franklin was denied a research position at American colleges and universities. In 1891 and 1892, Ladd-Franklin, her husband, and their daughter traveled to Germany where Franklin was pursuing mathematical research. Ladd-Franklin used the opportunity...
to pursue research in Germany. German professors were opposed to women researchers, but Ladd-Franklin was not a threat to them. As an American, she would return home and would not compete for a teaching position in Germany.

Ladd-Franklin studied color theory in the laboratories of G.E. Müller and theories of color vision with Hermann von Helmholtz. Ladd-Franklin's study led her to propose her own color theory, which she presented to the International Congress of Psychology in London in 1892. The theory was controversial but gradually accepted.

Ladd-Franklin returned to Germany alone in 1894 to do lab work with Arthur König, a physicist interested in color vision. During her four months there, she wrote home frequently to share her discoveries with Franklin who continued to provide encouragement and praise. The experience turned out to be a disappointment as she felt König was not providing good direction. According to American Psychologist, he also took credit for her work, causing Ladd-Franklin to lament, "what can one expect from a man!" She traveled to Germany again in 1902 to consult with Müller.

Despite the fact that Ladd-Franklin contributed to scientific literature and psychological research, she was denied a research-teaching position at a college or university. Although her work on color vision was widely accepted, without an academic affiliation, she felt illegitimate. In 1904, she was appointed lecturer in psychology and logic at Johns Hopkins. She taught one course per year, on a year-to-year basis.

In 1895, Fabian Franklin left Johns Hopkins to become editor of the Baltimore News. In 1909, the couple moved to New York when Franklin became associate editor of the New York Evening Post. Unable to obtain an official appointment, Ladd-Franklin lectured on psychology at Columbia University, although she drew no salary and was not considered faculty. She remained at Columbia until 1927.

Shunned by Male Scientists

One of her greatest disappointments was exclusion from an elite group of experimental psychologists known as the Experimentalists. Cornell University psychologist E.B. Titchener began the club in 1904 and invited the heads of psychological laboratories and up-and-coming junior faculty and graduate students to attend the informal meetings. Titchener specified that no women would be allowed to participate. Ladd-Franklin had known Titchener, who was 20 years younger than she, for many years and was incensed at her exclusion. When the group met at Columbia in 1914, Ladd-Franklin told Titchener that not inviting her to the meeting at her own university represented a medieval attitude and that his policy was "so unconscious, so immoral,—worse than that—so unscientific." Finally, Ladd-Franklin was permitted to attend one session but was never invited back. She continued to protest the group’s men-only policy, but the group continued to exclude women until long after Ladd-Franklin's and Titchener's deaths.

During the final years of her career, Ladd-Franklin studied "blue arcs," which she believed showed that active nerve fibers emit a faint light. Ladd-Franklin published Colour and Colour Theories in 1929. It was comprised of her major works on vision.

Ladd-Franklin died of pneumonia in New York City on March 5, 1930. She was 82 years old. Although she had made many contributions in the fields of logic and vision, she was never fully accepted in the male-dominated scientific community.

Books


Periodicals


Christopher Columbus Langdell

Christopher Columbus Langdell (1826–1906) altered the way that students of the law were educated with his development of the case law method and the treatment of law as a science. His practices were considered controversial at the time of introduction, but eventually Langdell’s technique would become the basic foundation for the study of law.

Education

Langdell was born in the small farming town of New Boston, New Hampshire, on May 22, 1826. He was the son of John Langdell and Lydia Beard. He attended the local district schools and at the age of 18 he began teaching. He also worked in the textile mills in Manchester, New Hampshire. Langdell wanted to obtain further education, and in 1845, his sisters agreed to help to support him while he worked his way through Phillips Exeter Academy. After graduating, he entered Harvard University as a sophomore with the class of 1851. He did not stay at the university long before he was granted a leave of absence in order to resume teaching, presumably with the intention of obtaining more funds to continue to attend school. He then spent some time working in an Exeter Law office. When he returned to Harvard, it was not to the university, but to the Harvard Law School. He spent three years there, three times longer than most students at the time. He also worked as a student librarian from 1852 to 1854.

Langdell began practicing law in December of 1854 in New York City. He did not employ a lot of time appearing in court; instead he gained a reputation as an educated, knowledgeable lawyer. He spent a great deal of time studying at the Law Institute, and while he was there he had an opportunity to supply a reference to Charles O’Conor, the
well-known lawyer and politician who was once nomi-
nated for president. O’Conor often returned to Langdell to
request his help and soon thereafter others were coming to
him for assistance as well.

Harvard Law School

After Langdell had been practicing law for 16 years, an
old friend of his from school, Charles Eliot, was appointed as
the President of Harvard Law School. Eliot invited Langdell
to join him on the staff there as a Dane Professor of Law and
dean of the law school. Langdell quickly accepted the posi-
tions and worked with Eliot to make changes in the way that
the law students were taught. According to A History of
American Law, “the duties of the dean were not very awe-
some; he was to ‘keep the Records of the Faculty,’ prepare
‘its business,’ and ‘preside at its meetings in the absence of
the President.’” However, Langdell, with the support of
Eliot, made sweeping changes in the entire way that the law
school was run. At the time, most students attended the law
program for one year and achieved their degrees by attend-
ing lectures given by judges and practicing lawyers who
taught at the law school as a side job. In addition, the
standards for acceptance to the law school were fairly leni-
ent, and law degrees were handed out without a great deal
of testing. Langdell quickly changed all of that.

Langdell began to test students before they were ac-
cepted into the program by asking them to translate phrases in
Latin from Virgil, Cicero, and Caesar, without the aid of a
dictionary. In some instances, French was considered an ac-
ceptable alternative to Latin. If prospective students did not
have a college degree, they were given an entrance exam. He
would also quiz them on Sir Blackstone’s Commentaries on
the Laws of England. Blackstone’s Commentaries was consid-
ered a masterwork in English law and was used to form
the foundation of law in America and was the standard reference
material of the 13 colonies at the time of the American
Revolution. Within a year of accepting the job, Langdell had
the law school changing the program from one year of study
to two years. In addition, he began to require final examina-
tions at the end of each year to assure each student was ready
to move on to the next level. Five years later, the program was
increased to three years, although the third year did not have
to be in residence. By 1899, a three-year program in resi-
dence was a mandatory requirement.

Initially, the increase in the length of the program and
the stricter entrance exams led to a decrease in the number of
students. In addition, the new style of teaching was consid-
ered experimental. However, the quality of the re-
maning students eventually provided ample evidence of
the program’s success as they entered the workforce.

The curriculum of the law school classes was changed to
reflect a steady stream of appropriate information. Each stu-
dent was required to take a set amount of different types of
courses and the courses were to be taken in an established
order. The style of the teaching also changed. Lectures were
no longer the standard method of learning. Instead, Langdell
encouraged learning through the Socratic method so that the
students were taught through questions and answers instead
of through lectures. The law was not learned through memo-

method, stating, “The result of this elaborate study of actual disputes, . . . ignoring . . . the settled doctrines that have grown out of past ones, is a class of graduates admirably calculated to argue any side of any controversy, but quite unable to advise a client when he is safe from litigation.”

Gradually, the opposition died down, and the Langdell case study method won out over all of its rivals. By the 1920’s, the Harvard/Langdell case method was almost universal.

The Legacy Continued

Langdell had suffered from difficulty with his eyesight since he was a young child and as he grew older, this affliction became worse. It became necessary for him to hire readers to assist him. But even the readers could not help him to maintain his position as dean; by 1895 he had to resign as the dean of the law school. His first academic law professor, James Barr Ames, replaced him as dean and continued his methods. At the time of his retirement, the case method was established not only at Harvard, but at Northwestern University, the University of Wisconsin, and the University of Cincinnati and was being taught by Harvard Law School graduates across the country. Langdell continued to teach until 1900.

Langdell passed away on July 6, 1906. He had married on September 22, 1880, to Margaret Ellen Huson, who survived him a few years. They had no children. After he died, a trust was created in his name in order to provide funding for education of poor students.

In 1905–1906 Harvard constructed what would become the principal building on the law school campus and named it Langdell Hall. It held classrooms, faculty offices, and the library. Additions were constructed in 1929. In 1997, Langdell Hall was completely renovated. The library now occupies the entire building.

Langdell’s impact on the reform of legal education in the United States was immense. Despite opposition and attacks on his unorthodox methods, Langdell stood his ground and permanently altered the course of law school education and legal history.

Books


Online


Joseph Sheridan Le Fanu

Considered “the father of the English ghost story,” Irish author Joseph Sheridan Le Fanu (1814–1873) is recognized for combining Gothic literary conventions with realistic technique to create tales of psychological insight and supernatural terror. Among his most highly regarded works is In a Glass Darkly (1872), a collection of horror stories that includes the earliest example of a vampire story in English literature.

Biography

O f French Huguenot descent, Le Fanu was born in Dublin on August 28, 1814, the first son of Emma Lucretia Dobbin and Thomas Philip Le Fanu. His father, a clergyman in the Church of Ireland and nephew of the playwright Richard Brinsley Sheridan, served as the chaplain of the Royal Hibernian Military School in Phoenix Park during Le Fanu’s early childhood. In 1826 the family moved to Abington in county Limerick, where Thomas Le Fanu had been appointed rector and dean of Emly. Le Fanu, who enjoyed the resources of his father’s large library, was privately educated until his acceptance at Trinity College, Dublin, in 1833.

His university career was a success. He won academic honors and was active in debate and the historical society. After completing studies in classics he pursued legal studies at King’s Inns in London but never took up the practice of law. His interests already lay in literary pursuits. As
early as 1837 he had begun contributing to the *Dublin University Magazine*, and in 1839 he took ownership of the Irish Protestant newspaper *The Warder*. From this time on journalism constituted Le Fanu’s foremost professional undertaking. He assumed a financial interest in several newspapers over the course of his career, including the *Statesman*, the *Dublin Evening Mail*, and *Dublin University Magazine*, and used these publications to promote his conservative political views.

In December 1843 Le Fanu married Susanna Bennett, the daughter of a barrister, and they had four children. Their years together were plagued by financial difficulties and ill health, and when she died in April 1858 at the age of thirty-four, it came as a life-shattering blow to Le Fanu, who blamed himself for her suffering. He wrote at the time, as quoted by Kathryn West in the *Dictionary of Literary Biography*, “The greatest misfortune of my life has overtaken me. My darling wife is gone. . . . She was the light of my life.” His grief was inconsolable, and from this point on he retired from public life.

One obituary notice, quoted by Roy B. Stokes in the *Dictionary of Literary Biography*, later remarked: “He vanished so entirely that Dublin, always ready with a nickname, dubbed him ‘The Invisible Prince’; and indeed he was for long almost invisible, except to his family and most familiar friends, unless at odd hours of the evening, when he might occasionally be seen, stealing, like the ghost of his former self, between his newspaper office and his home in Merrion Square; sometimes, too, he was to be encountered in an old out-of-the-way bookshop poring over some rare black letter Astrology or Demonology.” However, it is during the period of his seclusion that he produced his most enduring works of fiction.

Le Fanu sold the *Dublin University Magazine*, which had become the main outlet of his short fiction, in 1869. He died in 1873. Of the effect of the seclusion of his final years on his literary work, biographer Michael H. Begnal commented, “Instead of limiting his artistic vision, it would seem that the seclusion of Sheridan LeFanu was a blessing in disguise, for it preserved him from the pitfalls of immersion in immediate social concern. Yet at the same time it induced him to concentrate upon the larger issues which were the true shapers of his time.”

**Early Works**

Le Fanu’s first published works of fiction were short stories printed in the *Dublin University Magazine* beginning in 1838. The earliest of these, “The Ghost and the Bone-Setter,” draws on the Irish folk belief that the most recently deceased corpse in a cemetery must carry water to the thirsty souls already in purgatory. Though the story offers a comic explanation for the appearance of a ghost, the work is notable for introducing the character of Father Francis Purcell, a Catholic priest from Drumcoolagh in county Limerick, who serves as a connection for a number of stories later collected in *The Purcell Papers* (1880). Similarly, “The Fortunes of Robert Ardalgh” employs a dual structure to tell the story of a mysterious murder, explained alternately as a manifestation of Satanic power and a rational series of unfortunate events.

The most famous of the Purcell stories is “Strange Event in the Life of Schalken the Painter,” published in May 1839. In the story, Purcell relates a tale told to him by the owner of a “remarkable picture” painted by an artist named Godfrey Schalken—a portrait of a young woman named Rose whom he had once loved. Betrothed to a wealthy stranger whose ghoulish appearance is an omen of his diabolical nature, Rose returns home in an anguished state some months after her marriage, begging not to be left alone and crying, “The dead and the living cannot be one—God has forbidden it!” She mysteriously disappears from her room, and no trace of her is ever recovered. Some time later Schalken experiences a vision of Rose beckoning him to follow her. He cannot resist, and she leads him to a richly outfitted bedchamber where she reveals—with “an arch smile, such as pretty women wear when engaged in successfully practising some roguish trick”—her demonic husband waiting for her in a black-curtained bed. The painter faints at the sight but paints a faithful representation of what he has seen.

A somewhat later tale, “The Watcher,” was included in *Ghost Stories and Tales of Mystery* (1851) and revised as “The Familiar” for *In a Glass Darkly*. The story relates events leading up to the death of Captain James Barton, who is haunted by a strange figure who may or may not be a ghost, but whose relentless appearance causes Barton to lose his senses and eventually his life. In the *Dictionary of Literary Biography* Gary William Crawford called the story “remarkably sophisticated for its day,” noting that “the lingering uncertainty about what happens . . . invokes a genuine frisson.” A story first published in 1853, “An Account of Some Strange Disturbances in Aungier Street,” again depicts the persecution of the living by the dead when two students rent a house in Dublin that had once belonged to a judge who had sentenced many convicts to hang. Only in the midst of their terror do they learn that he had ultimately hanged himself in the house in his despair and madness. The story was later revised as “Mr. Justice Harbottle” and included in *In a Glass Darkly*.

**Later Career**

Le Fanu published no fiction works during the period 1853 to 1861, an unsettled time in his family life, but his later period proved to be the most productive. When Le Fanu resumed his literary output he published *The House by the Churchyard* (1863), a many-faceted novel that combines comedy, mystery, history, and horror, and *Wylder’s Hand* (1864), a successful tale of rivalry and murder. His next work, *Uncle Silas* (1864), is set in Derbyshire, England, and is Le Fanu’s best-known Gothic mystery. In the story Maud Ruthyn is the niece of a man suspected though never proven to have committed a murder years before. A wealthy heiress, she comes under his care when her father dies and once in his household becomes herself the intended victim of a murder plot calculated by her uncle, her cousin, and an evil governess in hopes of gaining Maud’s fortune. She escapes when the governess is mistakenly killed in her place, and the uncle’s true character is revealed. The fourth
of his sensational novels published during this period, *Guy Deverell* (1865), centers on the Marlowe estate, illegitimately acquired by Sir Jekyll Marlowe, and the efforts of Monsieur Varbarriere to reinstate the rightful heir.

Le Fanu also produced several additional novels over the next few years, including the romances *All in the Dark* (1866) and *Haunted Lives* (1868), and the mysteries *The Tenants of Malory* (1867), *A Lost Name* (1867–1868), and *The Wyvvern Mystery* (1869).

**In a Glass Darkly**

Le Fanu’s short story collection *In a Glass Darkly* contains a group of his most chilling horror tales, “Green Tea,” “The Familiar,” “Mr. Justice Harbottle,” “The Room in the Dragon Volant,” and “Carmilla,” all purportedly taken from the files of Dr. Martin Hesselius, a German doctor with an interest in psychic phenomena. “Green Tea” is among the best known of Le Fanu’s works of supernatural terror, and in 1947 V. S. Pritchett named it “one of the best half-dozen ghost stories in the English language.” It concerns Reverend Robert Jennings, a clergyman suffering from a nervous condition. Engaged in a study of ancient religions, Jennings reports that he has been haunted by a little black monkey and suggests that perhaps it is a hallucination brought on by drinking large amounts of green tea. The presence of the monkey begins to interfere with Jennings’s duties and with his research, and the creature begins to urge evil actions on the increasingly distressed clergyman. Ultimately, Jennings commits suicide.

The final tale in the collection, “Carmilla” is also the most important from a literary standpoint for it introduces the vampire legend into English literature. Set in an isolated castle occupied by an innocent young girl and her father, the story draws on conventions of the Gothic to heighten terror. Carmilla is a young woman who is brought into the castle to recuperate after a carriage accident. She gives no information about her past, but resembles a dead woman whose portrait hangs in the castle. The heroine of the tale suffers visions of a nocturnal visitor and is slowly drawn into intimate association with Carmilla, whose possessiveness and passion overpower the innocent girl. When Carmilla’s true nature as a vampire is discovered, she is killed.

Le Fanu, though not as well known as Edgar Allan Poe, Bram Stoker, or Mary Shelley, remains a seminal figure in the advancement of horror writing, and his works continue to find new audiences through reprint editions. His works expanded the vocabulary of Victorian Gothic to include the deeper effects of psychological terror that characterize modern supernatural horror. In describing what set Le Fanu’s stories apart, Pritchett wrote: “LeFanu’s ghosts are the most disquieting of all ghosts. . . . The secret doubt, the private shame, the unholy love, scratch away with malignant patience in the guarded mind. It is we who are the ghosts. Let illness, late nights and green tea weaken the catch we normally keep clamped so firmly down, and out slink one by one all the hags and animals of moral or Freudian symbolism.”

Le Fanu died on February 10, 1873, in Dublin, Ireland.

**Books**


**Periodicals**

*Criticism*, Fall 1996.

**Online**


**Leadbelly**

Leadbelly (1885–1949) was an accomplished 12-string guitar player from the Texas-Louisiana border. During his violence-torn life, Leadbelly served four prison terms for assault. At one of his performances in prison, he was discovered by John Lomax, a Harvard-trained musicologist. Lomax introduced Leadbelly to American audiences of the 1930s and 1940s through his contacts and writings. Although Leadbelly never sold many records during his lifetime, he strongly influenced several generations of folk musicians.

**Louisiana Beginnings**

Huddie William Ledbetter was born on Jeter Plantation in Mooringsport, Louisiana. His date of birth has been variously given as January 29, 1885, and January 21, 1888. As an only child, he enjoyed the doting affection of his parents, Wes and Sally Ledbetter. The Ledbetters were fairly well-to-do Southern blacks, having
risen from sharecroppers in Louisiana to landowners on the Texas-Louisiana border. Leadbelly’s mother, born Sally Pugho, was reportedly half Indian.

Leadbelly’s uncle, Terrel Ledbetter, taught his nephew to play accordion and later guitar. Leadbelly was soon playing at local parties—as well as on Shreveport’s Fannin Street, a notorious red-light district, despite his mother’s protests.

Leadbelly caused a scandal when he fathered a child at the age of 15 and a second child at 16. In reaction to the community’s outrage, he set out on his own, supporting himself as a wandering minstrel and farm laborer. At one point, however, he became extremely sick and returned home to Mooringsport. It was during this period that he met his first wife, Lethe.

Leadbelly later claimed to have wandered around Dallas with blues singer Blind Lemon Jefferson about this time. Jefferson, who went on to sell a million records during the 1920s, had a profound influence on Leadbelly, who would later acknowledge his debt to the younger musician in a song entitled “(My Friend) Blind Lemon.”

Jailed for Assault

By 1917, when Leadbelly was jailed for assault, the two musicians had gone their separate ways. Although Leadbelly’s parents sold their land to pay for his legal defense, Leadbelly was sentenced to short-term hard labor. He escaped from the penitentiary by outrunning the prison dogs. After seeking refuge at his parents’ farm, he was sent by his father to New Orleans. But he disliked that city and moved on to De Kalb, Texas, in the northeastern part of the state near Arkansas. Hoping to avoid recapture, he supported himself as a farm laborer while relatives helped him.

During this period, Leadbelly played little music to avoid drawing attention to himself. He also adopted the alias Walter Boyd. He and Lethe were no longer together, and Leadbelly found other women to keep him company.

Convicted of Murder

As Walter Boyd, Leadbelly became known for the company he kept with women and for frequent fights. While traveling with friends and a relative named Will Stafford, Leadbelly got into a fight in which Stafford was fatally shot. Though Leadbelly maintained his innocence, he was convicted of murder and sentenced to 30 years of hard labor on Shaw State Farm in Texas.

Still using the name Boyd, Leadbelly served seven years of his 30-year sentence working on chain gangs. After a prison escape failed, he tried to drown himself in a lake but was apprehended. Back in prison, he used his musical talents to gain favor with the prison guards.

While Leadbelly was serving time at Shaw State Farm, his father died. Just before his death, Wes Ledbetter had tried to bribe prison officials into releasing Leadbelly. But in 1925, Leadbelly won a full pardon on his own. Oddly, the pardon came after the governor of Texas went on record as opposing pardons. The governor had visited the prison several times to hear Leadbelly sing, and Leadbelly later maintained that he won over the governor with his song “Please Pardon Me.”

Following his release from prison, Leadbelly returned home to Mooringsport. While supporting himself as a truck driver, he kept himself in liquor and women by using his musical talents. By this time, Blind Lemon Jefferson’s records were selling well and country blues was at the peak of its popularity. But record scouts took no notice of Leadbelly.

Another Prison Sentence

One night while performing a song titled “Mister Tom Hughes’s Town,” Leadbelly became involved in a brawl that left him with a horrendous scar on his neck and left the other man with permanent brain injuries. Other fights would follow, leading Leadbelly into further conflicts with the law. After a fight in which he claimed that six men tried to steal whiskey from his lunch pail, Leadbelly was convicted of assault with intent to commit murder. Court records, however, show that he was convicted of assaulting a white Salvation Army officer with a knife at a Salvation Army concert after the officer told Leadbelly to stop dancing to the music.

In 1930, Leadbelly was sentenced to ten years at the Louisiana state prison in Angola. After the authorities discovered Leadbelly’s prior conviction, he was disqualified from any chance at early release. Life in Depression-era Southern prisons was not easy, and Leadbelly received beatings for minor offenses. But he adapted to the conditions at Angola and eventually was allowed to work as a laundry
man and waiter. During this prison term, he acquired the habit of sleeping with the lights on.

**Discovered**

In 1933, a Harvard-trained expert on American folk music, John Lomax, was making his way through Southern prisons and recording musicians when he stopped at Angola and heard Leadbelly sing. Lomax made some preliminary recordings of Leadbelly’s songs and returned months later with better recording equipment. Leadbelly recorded his “Please Pardon Me” song (now addressed to the governor of Louisiana) and “Goodnight Irene.” Although Leadbelly later maintained that he was pardoned because the Louisiana governor had been moved by his prison song, records indicate that he was released as a cost-saving measure.

When Leadbelly was released from Angola in 1934, jobs were scarce, especially for ex-convicts. But Lomax hired him as a recording assistant and took him to New York, where Lomax was well connected with musicologists.

**Sensation in New York**

In 1934, Leadbelly moved into a house in Connecticut owned by a socialite to give himself some breathing room from the publicity seekers in New York and to work with Lomax on the book. Meanwhile, the guitar player sent to Louisiana for his latest companion, Martha Promise. They were married in Wilton, Connecticut, in a highly publicized ceremony.

While in Connecticut, Leadbelly recorded songs for the Library of Congress archives. Lomax also made arrangements for Leadbelly to record under the label of the American Record Company. Although American released some of Leadbelly’s recordings commercially, they sold poorly, the peak market for rural blues having passed some ten years earlier. But part of the problem was that the company insisted Leadbelly record blues rather than folk songs, even though most of his repertoire was folk music. As a result, Leadbelly never did sell many records while he was alive, and Lomax kept Leadbelly on a tight leash to prevent him from getting into trouble. Leadbelly increasingly resented Lomax as he discovered New York’s black nightlife.

Leadbelly’s violent past and emotional turbulence gave Lomax more than enough reason to be a little afraid of his discovery. Some minor disagreements and Leadbelly’s failure to meet commitments led to their parting in March 1935.

Leadbelly returned to Louisiana, while Lomax moved to Texas to work on his book, which was behind schedule. Destitute, Leadbelly hired a lawyer to obtain money from Lomax. A settlement was reached in which Lomax was allowed to complete the book, and it was published in November 1936.

**Darling of the Left**

In March 1936, a year after he left New York, Leadbelly was back with his wife Martha. Without Lomax, Leadbelly initially floundered, but after he met lecturer Mary Barnicle of New York University, he got an introduction to left-wing political factions within New York society, which had taken a strong interest in Leadbelly’s folk music.

Surviving on welfare and odd jobs, Leadbelly and his wife struggled to make ends meet. Lomax’s book was not selling well. Jazz and swing now dominated popular tastes. The American folk music following and Leadbelly’s audiences were largely confined to members of the political Left.

To attract a wider audience, Leadbelly added topical protest songs about segregation to his repertoire. He also made some non-commercial recordings, a number of which ended up in the archives of East Tennessee State University.

**Another Conviction**

In 1939, Leadbelly was arrested for assaulting a man with a knife. He reportedly stabbed the man sixteen times. Convicted of third-degree assault, Leadbelly was sentenced to less than a year in prison. During the trial, Leadbelly made his first commercial recordings since 1935 for Moe Asch’s Folkway Records, a number of which ended up in the archives of East Tennessee State University.

**A Living—and a Dying**

Leadbelly befriended the then-unknown Woody Guthrie and inviting him to move into the apartment he was sharing with his wife. Leadbelly’s apartment soon became a gathering place for folk singers and the scene of all-night jam sessions. Leadbelly meanwhile made radio appearances and recorded for RCA and the Library of Congress. He also made a recording for Moe Asch’s Folkway Records, which would become his principle record label.
In 1944, Leadbelly headed west to Hollywood in hopes of getting work in the studios. Although he was unable to land work in movies, he made a decent living playing club circuits. He recorded for Capitol records, which used the best recording technology that he had so far encountered. But by late 1946, he had had enough of the West Coast and returned to New York.

With the revival of Dixieland jazz and renewed interest in “origins” music, Leadbelly found his music increasingly in vogue. In 1946 a book entitled *A Tribute of Huddie Ledbetter* was published in England. Leadbelly was able to make a modest living playing in jazz clubs and giving occasional concerts. In 1949, while briefly touring in France, he was diagnosed with amyotrophic lateral sclerosis—better known as Lou Gehrig’s disease. He died in New York City six months later, on December 6, 1949. He is buried in the Shiloh Baptist Church graveyard near Mooringsport, Louisiana.

**Online**


---

**Henrietta Swan Leavitt**

Henrietta Swan Leavitt (1868–1921) was an American astronomer of the first magnitude. Her research resulted in numerous advances within the field, the effects of which extended well beyond her lifetime. She discovered a means to rank stars’ magnitudes using photographic plates, which became a standard in the field. Leavitt also discovered a means by which astronomers became better able to accurately measure extra galactic distances known as the period-luminosity relation. She also discovered more variable stars than any other astronomer in her time.

**Parents Supported Her Education**

Henrietta Swan Leavitt was born in Lancaster, Massachusetts, on July 4, 1868, where she was one of seven children. Her parents were Henrietta Swan Kendrick and George Roswell Leavitt, a Congregationalist minister whose parish was in Cambridge, Massachusetts. Her parents, who were said to have been strict Puritans, did encourage Leavitt to use her intellect. The majority of people in that period did not support education for women. The Leavitt family eventually relocated to Cleveland, Ohio.

Leavitt studied at Oberlin College in Ohio between 1885 and 1888. She transferred to the Society for the Collegiate Instruction of Women (which would later be known as Radcliffe College of Harvard University) in Cambridge, Massachusetts, where she finished her A.B. degree in 1892. It was while in her senior year of college that Leavitt first became interested in astronomy.

After graduation she took another astronomy course, but then suffered a debilitating illness. It left her profoundly deaf and she stayed home for several years.

**From Volunteer to Harvard Researcher**

Leavitt received an appointment as a research assistant at the Harvard College Observatory in Cambridge in 1895. This was a voluntary post; her assignment was to determine stars’ magnitudes by consulting photographs of the heavens. Her work impressed the staff. “She soon rose ‘by her scientific ability and intense application,’” according to her biography on the American Association of Variable Star Observers (AAVSO) website.

She was given a permanent position in 1902 by Edward Pickering, a noted astronomer who was head of the Harvard College Observatory. Her salary was 30 cents per hour. Leavitt was one of a group of women working at the observatory who were known as computers. It has been said that Pickering hired women in order to save money because he would have had to pay men with the same education greater salaries. Other women in this group also became well-respected astronomers, including Annie Jump Cannon and Williamina Fleming.

Leavitt was soon promoted as head of the photographic photometry department. Photometry, as its name implies, is
the science of measuring stars’ brightness. Employing photography in astronomy necessitated adjusting astronomers’ magnitude scale to compensate for the way film registers light. This post did not give Leavitt time to indulge in theoretical work. Actually, she was given no latitude in her choice of research. Pickering would typically assign work to Leavitt on topics that interested him.

Developed Reputation as Variable Star “Fiend”

In her role in the photometry department, Leavitt was assigned to search photographic plates for variable stars in the Magellanic Clouds regions. According to Astronomy, “The technique for variable hunting was strikingly uncomplicated. Leavitt would simply overlay the positive plate of a region of sky on the negative plate taken on a different night. If the positive and negative star images didn’t match up, she would flag a potential variable.” This technique was known as superposition. By 1904 she discovered more than 200 variable stars using this method. The following year that number grew to more than 840 stars.

“What a variable-star ‘fiend’ Miss Leavitt is,” wrote Charles Young of Princeton in a letter to Pickering. “One can’t keep up with the roll of the new discoveries.” It was while working at the observatory that Leavitt discovered a means to rank the magnitudes or brightness of stars on photographic plates. This ranking would become a standard used by astronomers, known as the Harvard Standard.

Worked on Several Major Research Projects

Leavitt was interested in Cepheids. These variable stars become brighter, then dim in a regular cycle. The Cepheids were named after the first star of this type to be discovered, Delta Cephei. Leavitt first made the observation in 1904 that there was a relationship between how long a Cepheid took to complete one of these cycles and its ultimate magnitude. The difficulty was that this could not be confirmed by observing these stars in this galaxy. There were too many factors that could skew the possible results. She eventually published her discovery in 1908. Leavitt continued to work on this research for four more years.

Beginning in 1907, Leavitt was asked to develop a “North Polar Sequence” by which star brightness could be described and which would serve as a standard in the field. She used 46 stars near the North Pole to represent each of the varying degrees of star magnitudes. Magnitude could not be reliably determined from photographic images nor from telescopic images. Stars typically emit light in various colors, which can confuse or trick the eye. Using this data as a basis for determining magnitude gave varied and often inaccurate results. What Leavitt did was compare and contrast the stars with each other using various images from many different telescopes. This scale she created assigned brightnesses for the stars in a range from the 4th to the 21st magnitude. Her findings were published in the Annals of Harvard College Observatory.

While studying photographic images of the estimated 1800 Cepheid variable stars in a system known as the Magellanic Clouds taken from Harvard’s observatory in Peru in 1912, Leavitt found a direct correlation between the brightness of a Cepheid variable star and the period of its variability to confirm her theory. The Magellanic Clouds are star systems that are located just outside the Milky Way. The theoretical relationship she posited is commonly known as the period-luminosity theory. Leavitt had thought since the stars in this system are approximately the same distance from Earth, then there might be a relationship between these two factors. Her hypothesis was correct.

Expressed arithmetically, she determined the Cepheid’s apparent magnitude increases linearly with the logarithm of the period. In 1912, Leavitt published her results and a table of the 25 Cepheid periods. These periods ranged in length from 1.253 days to 127 days, with an average period duration of five days. These stars’ apparent brightnesses were also included in the table.

“A straight line can be readily drawn among each of the two series of points corresponding to maxima and minima, thus showing that there is a simple relation between the brightness of the variable and their periods,” wrote Leavitt in 1912, as quoted on the AAVSO website. She noted that “since the variables are probably nearly the same distance from the earth, their periods are apparently associated with their actual emission of light, as determined by their mass, density, and surface brightness.”

Since the stars in this system are approximately the same distance from Earth, if the range of a single Cepheid could be calculated, then that data could be used to calculate the distances to the Magellanic Clouds. The data could also then be further used to calculate the distance to even more distant Cepheids.

“The measurement and discussion of these objects present problems of unusual difficulty, on account of the large area covered by the two regions, the extremely crowded distribution of the stars contained in them, the faintness of the variables, and the shortness of their periods,” according to a document published by the observatory in 1912 and quoted on the Bloomfield Science Museum website. “As many of them never become brighter than the fifteenth magnitude, while very few exceed the thirteenth magnitude at maximum, long exposures are necessary, and the number of available photographs is small.”

In 1913 Leavitt’s system for describing magnitudes or “North Polar Sequence” was adopted by the International Committee on Photographic Magnitudes. She established these sequences for 108 areas in the heavens. When her supervisor, Pickering, established 48 “Harvard standard regions,” Leavitt calculated secondary brightness standards for each of them. These international standards were used until the methodology improved.

Using Leavitt’s period-luminosity theory, a Danish astronomer was able in 1913 to calculate some star’s distances only using their period. Astronomers typically used a measurement method known as the parallax method to determine distances between stars. This worked well for distances up to 100-light-years, but making these measure-
ments was difficult. Additional work by other astronomers further refined how the relationship between absolute brightness and period could be accurately used to calculate distances greater than 10 million light-years, as well as to determine the actual distance between the Earth and a given star. This also gave astronomers a better idea as to the vastness of the heavens. It enabled Harlow Shapley to measure the size of the Milky Way galaxy.

Leavitt also discovered more variable stars during her career than had any other astronomer. Leavitt catalogued about 2400 variable stars while working at Harvard. At the time, this was about half the known variable stars. She also had discovered four novae and studied Algol-type eclipsing binary stars and asteroids as well.

Consequences of Consignment to Menial Tasks Mulled by Colleagues

As previously mentioned, Pickering dictated the work Leavitt and the other computers were to do. “If Leavitt had been free to choose her own research projects, she might have investigated the consequences of the period-luminosity relationship she had discovered,” according to an excerpt from Women of Science: Righting the Record on a UCLA physics website. “Pickering hired people to do a specific job and didn’t want them wasting their time doing anything else.” That Leavitt was not given free reign to explore her passion for variable stars most likely impeded progress in the field. Cecilia Payne-Gaposchkin, one of these women who knew Leavitt, wrote that for Pickering to relegate her solely to photometry “was a harsh decision, which condemned a brilliant scientist to uncongenial work, and probably set back the study of variable stars for several decades.”

Among the professional organizations of which she was a member were the American Association for the Advancement of Science and the Astronomical and Astrophysical Society of America. Leavitt was also an honorary member of the American Association of Variable Star Observers as well as a member of Phi Beta Kappa and The American Association of University Women.

“Miss Leavitt inherited, in a somewhat chastened form, the stern virtues of her puritan ancestors,” Solon I. Bailey, a Harvard professor wrote of Leavitt in 1922, quoted on the AAVSO website. “She took life seriously. Her sense of duty, justice and loyalty was strong. For light amusements she appeared to care little. She was a devoted member of her intimate family circle, unselfishly considerate in her friendships, steadfastly loyal to her principles, and deeply conscientious and sincere in her attachment to her religion and church. She had the happy faculty of appreciating all that was worthy and lovable in others, and was possessed of a nature so full of sunshine that, to her, all of life became beautiful and full of meaning.”

Honored by Nobel Committee

Leavitt worked at Harvard until her death. She died of cancer December 21, 1912, in Cambridge, Massachusetts. Her colleagues mourned her passing, in particular the void her death created. Some of her colleagues thought her to have been the brightest among them. She had made an irreplaceable contribution to the field.

Books

Notable Scientists: From 1900 to the Present, Gale Group, 2001.

Periodicals

Astronomy, July 2002.

Online


Ernesto Lecuona

Ernesto Lecuona (1896–1963) remains Cuba’s best known and perhaps the nation’s most prolific composer. Of his more than 1000 compositions, his most popular works remain standards in Latin music. These include popular tunes such as “Malagueña” and “Siboney.” His work was not confined to popular compositions, but spanned a variety of musical forms. Lecuona was also a noted pianist and conductor.

Acknowledged as a Child Prodigy

Lecuona was born Ernesto Sixto de la Asuncion Lecuona y Casado in Guanaboco, Cuba, on August 7, 1896. His father was a newspaper editor. His siblings, two sisters and four brothers, were all musicians. He first studied with his elder sister Ernestina, also a classically trained pianist. Several of his other siblings also studied piano. Lecuona made his performing debut at five years old. He was considered by all accounts a prodigy.

He studied music theory with Joaquin Nin, the Spanish composer and father of the writer Anais Nin. His first composition, a two-step often performed by Cuban military bands, was published when he was 11. He was frequently performing and organizing various musical groups to perform in silent movie houses as well as in ballrooms in Havana throughout his teen years. Lecuona studied at the National Conservatory in Havana, graduating in 1913 with a gold medal in performance. His educational concentra-
tion was on teaching both singing and piano. He immediately began touring throughout Europe and the Americans with a repertoire including Mozart and Bach, often playing duets with his sister Ernestina on these tours.

The year 1917 was an important one in Lecuona's career. He made his debut in New York with his first piano recital and also began his recording career. During this time his tours continued to take him outside Cuba. He was performing primarily in the Americas and in Spain. He also performed regularly on radio broadcasts.

**Continued Performing, Became Prolific Composer**

As a composer, Lecuona was tremendous. He created and published hundreds of songs, although the exact number varies widely. Once source credits him with composing more than 400 pieces, while another says he has produced some 1000 compositions. Lecuona studied composition under Maurice Ravel while in Paris and worked in a variety of musical forms. He remains best known for his songs, typically referred to as lighter fare by historians and critics.

Lecuona chose not to work at the piano while composing, preferring a card table. Typically, he would work in creative bursts that would produce astonishing results. He reportedly once wrote four songs that would become hits: “Blue Night,” “Siboney,” “Say Si Sí,” and “Dame tus dos rosas/Two Hearts That Pass in the Night,” in a single night: January 6, 1929. The following year “Andalucía” and “Malagueña” were on the charts.

“Malagueña” is inarguably the best-known of his popular songs. It is considered his first major composition. This stirring piano instrumental has enjoyed enduring popularity as a recorded tune and in performance. Lecuona had debuted the composition at the Roxy Theatre in New York in 1927. Other notable popular tunes composed by Lecuona included “Always in My Heart,” “Jungle Drums,” “Dust on the Moon,” “Aquella tarde,” “Canto Carabili,” “Como arrullo de palmas,” and “Dame tus dos rosas.” Some of his compositions were reworked. “Andalucía,” for example, was given English lyrics and re-released in 1940 as “The Breeze and I.” His “Dame tus dos Rosas” became “Two Hearts that Pass in the Night,” which was a hit for big band leader, Guy Lombardo.

**Becomes Noted Triple Threat**

Lecuona was also in demand as a conductor throughout the 1930s and 1940s. His Cuban Boys, first known as the Palau Brothers Cuban Orchestra, was a popular dance band, which, according to Americas “Helped set the stage for the advent of Latin jazz and salsa.” The group appeared in the film Cuban Love Song before being disbanded in the mid-1930s. Lecuona then became leader of the Orquesta de la Habana beginning in the late 1930s. He also conducted the Havana Casino Orchestra and continued to tour as a performer. During a particular European tour, he chose to perform his own works along with lighter compositions by various late nineteenth and early twentieth century Cuban composers.

Film scores were another popular medium for Lecuona. He was musical director of the MGM film Under Cuban Skies (1930). This led to work in other films including Carnival in Costa Rica (1947). He created a total of 11 film scores for major American studios including Warner Brothers and MGM. He also wrote scores for Mexican, Argentine, and Cuban films. Lecuona was nominated for an Academy Award in 1942 for the tune “Always in My Heart.”

Lecuona appeared at New York’s famed Carnegie Hall in October 1943. This was the premier for his orchestral work “Rapsodia Negra” (Black Rhapsody). This piece used Afro-Cuban instruments, atypical in so-called serious orchestral works and Cuban musicians were featured in the performance. Lecuona not only composed the piece, he also conducted and played piano for the concert that night.

“In the triple role of batonist-composer-pianist, Mr. Lecuona ranged over wide tracts of Latin-American rhythms and motifs, woven into compact lyric and symphonic form. As featured premier, Black Rhapsody proved Lecuona’s grasp of native idiom and his flair for heaving rhythmic sequences,” as quoted in the Dictionary of Hispanic Biography.

**Popularity Obscures Talents**

It was this continuing popularity that seemingly obscured Lecuona’s merits as a serious composer of classical music, particularly later in his career. Lecuona was formally trained in composition and his body of work does in fact show remarkable breadth. He created, for example, 11
As Thomas Tirino, a concert pianist who has made several recordings of Lecuona’s music, observed in an interview with America this popularity “may have contributed to the lack of scholarly attention that his considerable achievements do merit,” said Tirino. “His music does have a popular appeal, because of the beautiful melodies and shortness of the pieces, but the works themselves are very challenging, if you perform them in the way Lecuona intended. I believe the danger has been to stress the popular element to his music, and with his serious compositions, not to fully realize what they are and the genius behind them.”

Lecuona has often been described as “the George Gershwin of Cuba,” because he both composed and performed pieces bridging classical and popular music. But this “isn’t quite accurate,” according to The Boston Globe’s Richard Dyer. “Although his music, like Gershwin’s does cut across the divisions between concert and popular music . . . Lecuona was essentially a miniaturist, and there is an element of charm and novelty in many of the pieces.” Gershwin and Lecuona, who had the same publisher, met in the 1940s and were reportedly life-long friends.

As for his abilities as a performer, Dyer observed that he was capable of creating great music, but his piano performances ultimately ranged from excellent to quite bad. “Lecuona’s best music is colorful and tuneful, sultry and firey by turns; he shows considerable ingenuity in imitating idiomatic guitar effects on the piano,” wrote Dyer. “There is nevertheless a wide gap between Lecuona’s best and his worst—bits of Rachmaninoff keep coming into view, along with keyboard figurations that sound like Liberace or the even efforts of cocktail pianists everywhere.”

Interests Extended Beyond Music

Lecuona was described as “a heavy-set, melancholic figure with famously dark eyes.” He was “a popular host who invited friends to play music in his home in Jackson Heights, Queens, though he would escape on solitary walks when the company got to be too much,” according to the Dictionary of Hispanic Biography. “Besides liking to play the piano, and collecting wood and stone sculpture of the Aztecs, Mayas, the ancient Peruvian Incas, his greatest delight is brewing strong, black Cuban coffee.”

Other hobbies reportedly enjoyed by Lecuona included raising small animals and exotic birds (particularly while he was living in rural Cuba), reading mysteries (Agatha Christie was said to have been a favorite writer), and playing poker. He was a baseball fan as well as an inveterate collector who treasured antiques, cigarette lighters, and music boxes.

Lecuona lived in New York and Havana, not unexpectedly given his touring schedule. He also reportedly had homes in Tampa and Tallahassee, Florida. Cuban President Fulgencio Batista named him cultural attaché to the Cuban Embassy in the United States in 1943. With Fidel Castro’s coup in 1959, Lecuona left Cuba. He reportedly took a vow in 1960 to never play piano again until Cuba was a free nation. He chose to live abroad, splitting his time between the United States, Spain, and the Canary Islands. Lecuona was in Santa Cruz de Tenerife in the Canary Islands recuperating from a lung problem when he died of a heart attack on November 29, 1963. He is interred in Hawthorn, New York.

Left Significant Body of Work

As Carl Bauman observed in American Record Guide in 1997, “Lecuona, as perhaps Cuba’s outstanding composer, certainly deserves to be better known.” He created more than 1000 compositions, among them 176 pieces for piano and 37 orchestral pieces during his career. In a later review of another Lecuona recording in that same publication, John Boyer describes his music as “Latin music distilled for the middle-classes in the same way that Brahms and Liszt distilled Hungarian music for the consumption of 19th Century Germans.”

Influenced Several Generations of Musicians Worldwide

Lecuona’s music has lasted, influencing generations of musicians in various genres all over the world. “When I was a little boy growing up in Australia, one of the most popular bands on the Australian airwaves was Ernesto Lecuona and his Cuban Boys,” Don Burrows, the Australian jazz musician said in a 2001 interview with The Age. “In those days, Cuba used to export music to all over the world and Ernesto Lecuona was as important to me in those days as Duke Ellington. So by the time I was 10, I knew every song that Ernesto Lecuona had ever written. And these boys in the band just couldn’t believe that someone over the other side of the world knew as much Ernesto Lecuona as they did.”

Michel Camilo, the Dominican jazz pianist, told the All About Jazz website, “The first composition I remember enjoying as a child was ‘La Comparta’ by Cuban renown pianist Ernesto Lecuona, performed by my favorite uncle at the piano. He played the tune in his debut at Carnegie Hall.”

“He was able to translate the Afro-Cuban rhythms and put them in tails,” Camilo told Americas. “Technically, he was very advanced, in the tradition of Ignacio Cervantes, another Cuban pianist and composer who came before him. But Lecuona’s left hand is a direct link to someone like Chopin, with the ability to translate the African syncopations.”

Lecuona’s music was frequently recorded by a wide range of artists during his lifetime and continues to be recorded by artists well after his passing. Among those who have recorded Lecuona songs include Desi Arnaz, Guy Lombardo, Paquito D’Rivera, Katia Labeque, Los Super Seven, and numerous others.

Books

Dictionary of Hispanic Biography, Gale Research, 1996.

Led Zeppelin

Led Zeppelin has been called the grandfathers of the “Heavy Metal” genre. At their height in the early to mid 1970s, they frequently outsold the Rolling Stones in concert tickets. And by 1973, they had sold more albums than any other band worldwide. Their anthemic song, “Stairway to Heaven,” is the most-played song in the history of radio.

Led Zeppelin was formed out of the ashes of the 1960s supergroup The Yardbirds, once featuring renowned guitarists Eric Clapton and Jeff Beck, and later, a young studio session guitarist, Jimmy Page. (Page, it is estimated, played on 50 to 90 percent of the popular rock records made in England from 1963 to 1965.) In 1965, he joined the Yardbirds, having turned down an offer to replace Eric Clapton just a year earlier. With the Yardbirds, Page and fellow guitarist Jeff Beck pioneered the two-guitar style of rock. Beck left only a year later, however, to pursue a solo career. The band continued for another year and a half, but split by 1968.

Page decided to form The New Yardbirds and sought new musicians. First, he recruited John Paul Jones, a fellow session player, to play bass and keyboards. Then, following a tip, he went to listen to a young blues singer, Robert Plant. Page and Jones wrote the music for “Stairway to Heaven” first, and Plant wrote most of the lyrics in one sitting. Plant later recalled to journalist Cameron Crowe in Led Zeppelin: The Complete Studio Recordings, “It was done very quickly. It took a little working out, but it was a fluid, unnaturally easy track. It was almost as if—uh oh—it just had to be gotten out at the time. There was something pushing it saying, ‘You guys are okay, but if you want to do something timeless, here’s a wedding song for you.’ ”

The band followed up with Houses of the Holy in 1973. Some of the concerts on that tour were filmed for posterity and later released in the film, The Song Remains the Same. Following this album, Led Zeppelin started its own label, Swan Song. Signings to the label included Dave Edmunds, Bad Company, the Pretty Things, and Maggie Bell.

In the early years, the band did not have a publicist, did not release singles, and avoided the press. While the idea had been to keep the band mysterious, the band became notorious instead when all their press had to do with riots over concert tickets and the band members and their entourage trashing hotel rooms. Nevertheless, album and concert sales climbed continuously. In the beginning, they made around $200 a night playing small clubs, but at their height were making more than $500,000 a night. After their fourth album, the band owned it’s own plane, “The Starship.”

Crowe, in the liner notes to The Complete Studio Recordings, summed it up: “The Zeppelin attitude had something to do with Peter Grant, their brilliant and imposing manager. A little bit to do with the wicked humor of Richard Cole, their road manager. Something to do with John Bonham thundering down the aisle of the Starship, performing Monty Python routines. With John Paul Jones, Jones lost in dry ice, playing “No Quarter.” It had a lot to do with Page and Plant, side-by-side, sharing a single spotlight, ripping through “Over the Hills and Far Away.”

In 1974, the band returned to Headley Grange and recorded a double-album, Physical Graffiti. The standout song on the album was the hypnotic “Kashmir,” a song the band members claim as their favorite. (Rapper Puff Daddy teamed with Page and Plant as well as Tom Morello of Rage Against the Machine to create a reworking of “Kashmir”.

Led Zeppelin signed with Atlantic Records and released its self-titled first album in February 1969. The band’s sound had diverse influences, including the Delta blues and performers like Robert Johnson, Howlin’ Wolf, Buddy Guy, The Incredible String Band, and Elvis Presley. Between Plant’s incredible vocal range, and Page’s utilization of the new technology of the time—including fuzzboxes, boosters, split pickups on his guitars, and super-amplifiers for the maximum distortion—the band roared into the underground rock consciousness.

Led Zeppelin’s best-known song, “Stairway to Heaven,” first performed at a 1971 concert in Belfast, was from their fourth album—untitled, save for four strange, runic symbols. Led Zeppelin’s fourth album was recorded at Headley Grange, a converted poorthouse in Hampshire, England. Page and Jones wrote the music for “Stairway to Heaven” first, and Plant wrote most of the lyrics in one sitting. Plant later recalled to journalist Cameron Crowe in Led Zeppelin: The Complete Studio Recordings, “It was done very quickly. It took a little working out, but it was a fluid, unnaturally easy track. It was almost as if—uh oh—it just had to be gotten out at the time. There was something pushing it saying, ‘You guys are okay, but if you want to do something timeless, here’s a wedding song for you.’ ”

The band followed up with Houses of the Holy in 1973. Some of the concerts on that tour were filmed for posterity and later released in the film, The Song Remains the Same. Following this album, Led Zeppelin started its own label, Swan Song. Signings to the label included Dave Edmunds, Bad Company, the Pretty Things, and Maggie Bell.

In the early years, the band did not have a publicist, did not release singles, and avoided the press. While the idea had been to keep the band mysterious, the band became notorious instead when all their press had to do with riots over concert tickets and the band members and their entourage trashing hotel rooms. Nevertheless, album and concert sales climbed continuously. In the beginning, they made around $200 a night playing small clubs, but at their height were making more than $500,000 a night. After their fourth album, the band owned it’s own plane, “The Starship.”

Crowe, in the liner notes to The Complete Studio Recordings, summed it up: “The Zeppelin attitude had something to do with Peter Grant, their brilliant and imposing manager. A little bit to do with the wicked humor of Richard Cole, their road manager. Something to do with John Bonham thundering down the aisle of the Starship, performing Monty Python routines. With John Paul Jones, Jones lost in dry ice, playing “No Quarter.” It had a lot to do with Page and Plant, side-by-side, sharing a single spotlight, ripping through “Over the Hills and Far Away.”

In 1974, the band returned to Headley Grange and recorded a double-album, Physical Graffiti. The standout song on the album was the hypnotic “Kashmir,” a song the band members claim as their favorite. (Rapper Puff Daddy teamed with Page and Plant as well as Tom Morello of Rage Against the Machine to create a reworking of “Kashmir”
called “Come With Me,” featuring a 70-piece orchestra, for the Godzilla soundtrack in 1998.) After the album’s release in February 1975, the band decided to take some vacation time before touring again.

On August 4, during a trip to the Greek island of Rhodes, Plant and his wife rolled over a cliff in their car and both were seriously injured. Upcoming tours were postponed and for 18 months, it was not known whether Plant would walk again. The band released its live concert film, The Song Remains the Same to fill the void for their fan base during their time away. Presence, the band’s seventh album, was recorded in Munich with Robert Plant in a wheelchair, his ankle still on the mend. The album was released in March 1976, and a tour followed the next year.

That tour was interrupted by tragedy when Plant’s son Karac died at the age of five from a rare viral infection. The karmic retribution was to blame for the tragedies. There was speculation that like stories of Page’s excessive drug and alcohol use, rumors of his dabbling in black magic. There was speculation that it didn’t haunt me. I was just incredibly aggrieved.’’

Around this time, darker rumors about the band started, including stories of Page’s excessive drug and alcohol use, rumors of his dabbling in black magic. There was speculation that karmic retribution was to blame for the tragedies.

James Rotondi, in Guitar Player magazine, recalled, “Enough preconceptions, bad raps and spurious accusations have swirled around Page over the last 30 years to fill the National Enquirer, Blues Revue, and an entire season of The X-Files.”

The band regrouped and in November and December of 1978 recorded In Through the Out Door, which was to be their final album. A rare single, “Fool in the Rain,” was released in December 1979. A U.S. tour was planned for autumn 1980, however, their last show would be performed at the British Knebworth Festival in 1979.

On September 25, 1980, the band was assembled for rehearsals at Page’s home and set to leave on tour the next day. During the night, however, Bonham was found dead in a bedroom. After drinking around 40 shots of vodka in a 12-hour period, Bonham died of asphyxiation. The remaining three members decided instantly that they could not go on without him. They later met in a London hotel room to write a statement for the press.

Page and Plant each embarked on other projects in the 1980s. Page formed The Firm, releasing a self-titled first album in 1985, which had success with the single, “Radioactive.” The Firm released a second album, Mean Business, the following year. Page released a solo album, Outrider, in 1988 and embarked on a brief project with David Coverdale in 1993, with one album, Coverdale/Page.

Plant released his first solo album, Pictures at Eleven in 1982, followed by The Principle of Moments (1983) and Shaken ‘n’ Stirred (1985). During these years, Plant distanced himself from his connections with Led Zeppelin.

Plant’s stance seemed to change in 1985 when the remaining members reunited to play Live Aid concert with Bonham’s son Jason on drums. Three years later, they reunited, again with Jason Bonham on drums, to play the Atlantic Records 40th Anniversary celebration. That same year, Plant released his fourth solo effort, Now and Zen, which contained samples of Zeppelin songs. His following solo efforts, Manic Nirvana (1990) and Fate of Nations (1993) also veered closer to his Zeppelin past.

“Led Zeppelin was so big and so successful that I wanted to distance myself from it,” Plant told reporter Gary Graff in the Houston Chronicle in June 1988. “I was fooling myself, really, I’ve learned that I can lean on my past—without thinking that I’m taking the easy way out.”

Hopes of a more permanent reunion sprang eternal among fans, and the remaining members of Led Zeppelin were offered $100 million to tour America. They turned it down. Two years later, Plant was still adamant about not reforming the band. He told Deborah Wilker of the Fort Lauderdale Sun-Sentinel, “I can’t imagine anything more horrifying than three middle-aged men trying to pretend that ‘Black Dog’ is significant. It’s inappropriate.”

The mid-1990s finally saw a reunion of sorts. Plant was invited to play MTV Unplugged in 1994 and included Page plus a group of Egyptian, Moroccan, and Western classical musicians in addition to bassist Charlie Jones, drummer Michael Lee, and Port Thompson of the Cure on rhythm guitar. The show was called “Unledded” and a recording of the program was released titled No Quarter.

In 1995, The Sporting Life, John Paul Jones’s venture with avant-garde vocalist Diamanda Galas, was released. Jones told writer Joe Gore at Guitar Player, “I suppose I was disappointed that they didn’t feel they had to tell me about it. (Page and Plant’s project No Quarter.) I read it in the newspapers, which was kind of embarrassing. I’m a great Led Zeppelin fan. I thought it was a fantastic band, and I’m very proud of what we did. But Diamanda is a stunning artist, and I wouldn’t want to be doing anything else right now.”

In January 1995 Led Zeppelin was inducted into the Rock and Roll Hall of Fame by fellow heavy-rockers Aerosmith. “They were like Lord Byron-mad, bad and dangerous to know,’’ Joe Perry of Aerosmith told The Boston Globe. “It was kind of like Howling Wolf meets the Loch Ness monster.”

Led Zeppelin’s record sales as strong as ever, a 1997 Billboard reported that Led Zeppelin were the number two-selling act of all time, according to the Record Industry Association of America (RIAA). Ten of their albums were certified at multi-platinum levels. By 1999, Led Zeppelin became the third act in music history to be awarded four or more Diamond albums, according to the RIAA.

Page and Plant continued the collaboration they’d renewed on No Quarter on Walking Into Clarksdale in 1998. The album, produced by indie-rock icon Steve Albini, represented the first new material from the duo since In Through the Out Door in 1979.

The two continued their solo efforts as well. Recorded over two nights in Los Angeles in October of 1999, Jimmy Page & the Black Crowes Live at the Greek was the first major release exclusively available online (at musicmaker.com), where it could be customized by the pur-
chaser. Page toured with The Black Crowes again the following year. Plant released his seventh solo album, Dreamland, in 2002, and toured behind it with his band, Strange Sensation, which again included Thompson from The Cure and Clive Deamer, drummer from Portishead. John Paul Jones released two solo CDs, 1999’s Zoomba and The Thunderthief, featuring some guitar work by Robert Fripp, in 2002.

While the band had historically balked at commercializing their music, the new century saw a change of heart. First, Page and Plant licensed Zeppelin’s “That’s The Way” for use on the soundtrack to Cameron Crowe’s 2001 film, Almost Famous. The film chronicled Crowe’s early career as a rock journalist who, among other bands, interviewed and went on tour with Led Zeppelin. In 2002, Led Zeppelin sold a song for use in a commercial for the first time in the band’s history, selling “Rock and Roll” to Cadillac. The car manufacturer has used the ad to sell its Cadillac CTS, XLR, Escalade, and Escalade EXT. In 2003, in honor of their 35th anniversary, Led Zeppelin released the Led Zeppelin DVD, which contains live performance footage, previously unreleased, from four of their tours during the 1970s. At the same time, the group also released How the West Was Won, a three-disc CD with live material compiled from their concerts in 1972 in California.

Books

Periodicals
AP Online, March 18, 2002.
Billboard, December 13, 1997; April 21, 1998.
Calgary Herald, October 13, 2002.
Charleston Gazette, July 18, 2002.
Chicago Sun-Times, December 1, 1999.
Guitar Player, February 1, 1995; February 1, 1998.
Herald, August 18, 1999.
Herald Express, October 13, 2000.
Plain Dealer, March 24, 1995; December 9, 1997.
St. Louis Post-Dispatch, June 7, 1998.
Times Union, July 9, 1998.
Toronto Star, August 27, 2002.

Online

Yuan Tseh Lee
Chemist Yuan Tseh Lee (born 1936) shared the 1986 Nobel Prize for Chemistry with two colleagues for the part he played in the development of chemical-reaction dynamics. Their work opened important new fields of chemistry. Remarkably, Lee developed many of the laboratory tools he employed in his research, receiving a number of patents over the years. A great educator as well as innovator, Lee would later return to his homeland to head Taiwan’s top academic and research institution.

Yuan Tseh Lee was born on November 29, 1936, in Hsinchu, Taiwan. His father was a respected artist and his mother taught school. World War II had a great impact on his early life. When Lee started his elementary education, Taiwan was under Japanese occupation. His early schooling was interrupted by the war, as the Taiwanese had to move into the nearby mountains to escape the frequent bombings of the Allied Army. After the war, when Taiwan came under Chinese rule, Lee was able to continue his education as a third-grader. During his elementary school years, Lee first met Bernice Wu, who he would later marry. The marriage would produce three children: Ted, born in 1963; Sidney, born in 1966; and Charlotte, born in 1969.

During his early school years, Lee was an active student. His extracurricular activities included sports: he played baseball and was a member of a championship ping-pong team. In high school, he enjoyed tennis and played trombone in his school’s marching band. Juggling schoolwork with his other interests taught Lee the value of time at a relatively youthful age. He credited this ability with his later success. “I learned how to use time productively, a skill which was very beneficial to my subsequent work,” he told interviewer Ying-Yuen Hong.

Lee was an avid reader, a pursuit that helped shape his career direction. He cited a biography of Madame Curie as one of the major influences of his life. He was so impressed with Curie’s passion for science and her compassion for her
fellow human beings that he decided that he, too, would become a scientist.

**Studied Chemistry in College**

Lee excelled as a high school student and easily qualified for college. In 1955, when he applied to the National Taiwan University, he was admitted without having to take an entrance exam. He entered with a good idea of what he wanted to study. “Before I went to college, I had already developed an interest in academic research,” he told Hong.

In college, it did not take Lee long to focus on a specific career direction. At the end of his freshman year, he decided to enter the field of chemistry. Taiwan University fostered his academic and professional development: he studied under enthusiastic professors and a strong solidarity existed among the students. This helped Lee develop an innovative approach to his studies, something that would shape his later career. “After I entered the college, I knew from the experiences of others around me that if one wanted to become a laboratory scientist, one had to learn about electronic-related equipment,” he told Hong. “And so I did just that. When I was researching and doing work in synthetic chemistry I needed to understand vacuums, so I studied the art of glass blowing.” For his BS thesis, he worked with Professor Huei-sheng Cheng on the separation of strontium and barium using the paper electrophoresis method.

Lee began graduate work at the National Tsinghua University in 1959 and eventually received a Master’s degree. His thesis involved the studies of the natural radioisotopes contained in hukutolite. He then stayed on at Tsinghua as a research assistant. Working with Professor C.H. Wong, Lee carried out the x-ray structure determination of tricyclopentadienyl samarium.

**Relocated to the U.S.**

In 1962, Lee enrolled at the University of California at Berkeley as a graduate student. His thesis involved research on chemi-ionization processes of electronically excited alkali atoms. Lee became interested in ion-molecule reactions and the dynamics of molecular scattering—particularly crossed molecular beam studies of reaction dynamics. This direction of study would eventually lead him into work that would culminate in a Nobel Prize.

Lee earned his Ph.D. in 1965 and began performing experiments involving ion molecule reactive scattering. He employed ion beam techniques that measured energy and angular distributions. Before long, he could design, build, and perform experiments with a powerful scattering apparatus. He also assembled a complete product distribution contour map. At the time, these accomplishments were considered significant achievements. They could be attributed to the innovative approach he often brought to his education. “When I got to the University of California to complete my doctorate, I also mastered machine shop skills, as I needed to know about it for my doctorate work,” he related in the interview with Hong. “In my later experiments, I ended up using these practical skills. Out of all this study, I came to realize that in our society, any person with a special skill in a certain area can truly impact society. It is only in this way that progress in society can be pushed forward.”

**Began Work with Herschbach**

At Harvard University in 1967, Lee began his association with Dudley R. Herschbach, the man with whom he would eventually share the 1986 Nobel Prize. Working as a post-doctoral fellow, Lee studied reactions of hydrogen atoms and diatomic alkali, as well as the construction of a universal crossed molecular beams apparatus. Other notable colleagues with whom Lee engaged in research included Robert Gordon, Doug McDonald, and Pierre LeBreton.

Pursuing further postdoctoral studies, Lee would experiment with and build upon the crossed molecular beam technique that Herschbach had developed. Herschbach derived his technique from elementary particle physics. It brought together molecular beams at supersonic speeds under controlled conditions, enabling researchers to closely observe how events occur during chemical reactions. Lee would bring the technology of mass spectroscopy into the technique. This allowed researchers to identify the products from chemical reactions—specifically the reactions of oxygen and fluorine atoms with complex organic compounds. By late 1967, thanks to the efforts of Lee and his colleagues, a machine was developed that was used in the first successful non alkali neutral beam experiment.

The following year, Lee entered the hugely successful academic phase of his career when he became an assistant...
professor in the Department of Chemistry at the James Franck Institute of the University of Chicago. Still working as a scientist, and now aided by his students, he built a new, more advanced crossed molecular beams apparatus that resulted in even more successful experiments. Lee was promoted to associate professor in 1971 and professor in 1973. He became an American citizen in 1975. That same year, he returned to Berkeley as a professor of chemistry and principal investigator at the Lawrence Berkeley Laboratory of the University of California.

Back at Berkeley, Lee would build what Richard Bernstein, professor of physical chemistry at the University of California at Los Angeles, once described as “some of the most powerful equipment in the field.” As the range of Lee’s work grew, his laboratory became one of the best in the world, and it attracted scientists from many countries. It contained complex molecular beams apparatus designed to deal with problems associated with reaction dynamics, photochemical processes, and molecular spectroscopy.

**Won Nobel Prize**

Lee’s association with Herschbach resulted in a share of the 1986 Nobel Prize for Chemistry, along with John C. Polanyi of the University of Toronto. The scientists were recognized for their research, performed independently, that led to the development of chemical-reaction dynamics. Their work enabled others to focus on the behavior of individual molecules in a chemical reaction, rather than just looking at the overall behavior of a large mass. According to Eric Leber of the American Chemical Society, the findings of their research presented the field with new applications that would improve the efficiency of industrial chemical reactions and the ability to burn coal and other fuels cleanly. It would also provide new information about the earth’s atmosphere, such as how chemicals harm the ozone layer. At the time of his award, Lee was a chemist and University of California professor emeritus. He was also a professor emeritus of chemistry and principal investigator at the Lawrence Berkeley Laboratory.

**Expanded Interests in Taiwan**

Sensing that his life was becoming too complicated, Lee decided to return to Taiwan in 1987. He intended to help bring about major changes in Taiwanese society, to advance science, and to upgrade the country’s leading educational institution, the Academia Sinica—and very importantly, to serve as a role model for young people. Another reason for returning was that he felt Asian scholars could make a real difference by returning to their native countries and helping them to develop.

As president of Academia Sinica, Lee would play a major role in shaping educational and scientific policy in Taiwan. He reported directly to the president of Taiwan and acted as his senior science adviser. Lee chaired Taiwan’s Council of Educational Reform, advocating democratization, professionalism, and university autonomy. He also served as president of the Singapore-based Tan Kah Kee International Society, a large foundation dedicated to promoting education as a means of advancing democracy and development. His efforts were recognized in 1998 when Lee received the Clark Kerr Award for Distinguished Leadership in Higher Education. By this time his intellectual interests extended well beyond the field of chemistry. Lee often spoke about the direction and responsibilities of higher education, the future of mankind, global warming, the futility of war, and the environment. He also embraced the idea of the world as a global village.

**Online**


---

**Ethel Leginska**

England’s Ethel Leginska (1886–1970) enjoyed an acclaimed career as a concert pianist for many years; in the 1920s she became the first woman to regularly appear as a conductor with some of the world’s top orchestras. Leginska left behind a small body of musical works she wrote for the symphony and string quartet, as well as two operas. Many “were performed by major organizations at a time when women’s compositions rarely received such recognition,” according Leginska’s profile in *Notable American Women: The Modern Period*.

**Studied in Vienna**

Leginska was born Ethel Liggins on April 13, 1886, in Hull, a thriving port city in northeast England. Her parents were Thomas Liggins and Annie Peck Liggins, and her innate musical talents were recognizable from an early age. With the encouragement of her parents, she began a public recital career at age six and soon became known as a child prodigy in the city. When she was in her teens, a wealthy Hull shipping family, the Wilsons, became
her patrons and paid for her formal musical training on the European continent. Leginska first studied in Germany with James Kwast, a Dutch pianist, at the Hoch Conservatory in Frankfurt am Main. She then went to Vienna to study with Theodor Leschetizky for three years there. This Austrian, who enjoyed a renowned concert career in the 1840s, was inarguably the most famous piano teacher of his era. He taught Ignace Jan Paderewski, Artur Schnabel, Ossip Gabrilowitsch, and many other prominent names, and by the time Leginska came to study with him, he was one of Vienna’s leading cultural icons and even friends with the Austro-Hungarian emperor.

In 1902, at the age of 16, Leginska made her solo recital debut in London. A renowned singer of the era, Lady Maud Warrender, suggested to her that she change her name to more Slavic-sounding “Leginska” to boost her professional career. At the time, Polish and Russian piano prodigies like Paderewski were very much in vogue, and Leginska soon came to be dubbed the “Paderewski of woman pianists.” She studied in Berlin and made a concert tour of Europe. In 1907, she married an American, Roy Emerson Whittern, whom she had met in Vienna when he was a student of Leschetizky as well. The following year, they had a child, Cedric. In 1909 Leginska suffered what would be the first of three nervous breakdowns in her life. She separated from Whittern in 1912.

**Gained Enthusiastic Following**

Leginska sailed to America to make her debut at New York City’s Aeolian Hall on January 20, 1913. She earned favorable reviews for the performance and decided to base herself in the city, keeping a small rehearsal studio at Carnegie Hall. Her vigorous style and fluid movements at the bench differentiated her from other concert pianists of the time, who played with a more rigid and formal demeanor. Yet Leginska believed that a more emotive technique yielded a more expressive listening experience. “Relaxation is a hobby with me,” she was quoted as saying in a 1915 volume by Harriette Brower, *Piano Mastery: Talks with Master Pianists and Teachers.* “I believe in absolute freedom in every part of the arm anatomy, from the shoulder down to the finger tips. Stiffness seems to me the most reprehensible thing in piano playing, as well as the most common fault with all kinds of players.”

Leginska was also somewhat daring for wearing her hair in a bobbed style and eschewing the formal, bare-shouldered evening gowns that were standard stage gear for women performers in the classical world at the time. Instead she favored an imitation of a tuxedo—a black velvet jacket, slim skirt, and white shirt. Her career began to accelerate around 1915, and she gave sold-out performances of piano works from the German canon, such as the concertos of J. S. Bach and Franz Schubert. “She was an extremely popular artist and won praise from the press for her demanding programs, her magnetism as a performer, and her innovations—for example, playing an entire Chopin program without an intermission,” as noted in *Notable American Women.*

**Lost Custody of Son**

Leginska’s husband managed her career for a time, but they were divorced by 1916. She soon took up many of the duties herself, as a *Women in World History: A Biographical Encyclopedia* essay by Neil M. Heyman noted. Heyman described her as “canny about publicity. In 1916, when she injured her finger in a door, she sent an X-ray taken of the bruised digit to a music magazine and had the satisfaction of seeing it appear in a subsequent issue.” Yet a string of off-stage worries began to hinder her career. She sometimes failed to appear at scheduled engagements and entered into a bitter custody battle with Whittern over their son. She lost, though she had even offered to give up performing altogether and instead teach piano for a living. She estimated that she could earn around $300 a week—a large sum of money at the time—but the judge sided with her ex-husband.

Not surprisingly, Leginska often spoke publicly about the challenges faced by the few professional women of the time, especially regarding child care. She also urged women to move forward and break down artificial barriers. She was already doing so herself by writing her own compositions, which she began around 1914. To further her knowledge, she studied composition with Rubin Goldmark and Ernest Bloch, and the first of her works to be performed publicly was *String Quartet*, inspired by four poems by an Indian poet, which premiered in Boston in April of 1921. A symphonic poem with a title borrowed from a tale by Irish fantasy-fiction pioneer Lord Dunsany, *Beyond the Fields We Know*, made its debut in New York City the following February. The critics treated these performances of Leginska’s work as somewhat of a novelty, however.

**Led Europe’s Top Philharmonics**

Leginska decided to turn her energies to conducting. She traveled to London in 1923 to study with Eugene Gossens and later that year worked with Robert Heger, conductor of the esteemed Bavarian State Opera in Munich. Through connections realized in the classical world from her earlier stage career, she secured guest-conductor spots by agreeing to appear on the program with a piano concerto. She conducted several renowned bodies, including the Berlin Philharmonic. Soon she was able to lead orchestras in performances of her own works, beginning in December of 1924 with her *Quatre sujets barbares* suite in Munich. She made her American conducting debut on January 9, 1925, with the New York Symphony Orchestra at Carnegie Hall and appeared in a much-lauded Hollywood Bowl engagement in Los Angeles later that summer.

Leginska was still plagued by stress, however, and in 1925 and 1926 suffered two more nervous breakdowns. The 1925 episode began with a taxi trip to Carnegie Hall for a scheduled performance of hers; she vanished en route and a last-minute substitute had to be called in. Missing for four days, she was finally located in Boston. The following year, she disappeared again before a New York City engagement, leaving some 1,500 admirer’s waiting for her to appear. She later claimed that her manager was supposed to have canceled the date. She also had a bad experience that same
year on a tour of the Midwest. As Heyman reported in his *Women in World History* article, Leginska “abandoned a performance scheduled to take place before an audience of 4,000 in Evansville, Indiana. She had given a hint of her state of mind the previous day when she complained loudly of the city’s yellow cabs, the lack of a symphony orchestra to accompany her, and the concert hall, which she described as ‘an old barn.’”

**Formed Groundbreaking Women’s Orchestras**

Consulting with doctors, Leginska was counseled to take a year off from performing and duly announced her official retirement from the concert stage as a solo pianist. She wrote her last symphonic work, *Fantasy for Piano and Orchestra*, which made its premiere on January 3, 1926, in New York. She had settled in Boston in 1925 and there founded the hundred-member Boston Philharmonic Orchestra, which was a mostly male group that offered accessible ticket prices to classical-music lovers for one short season. She then established the Women’s Symphony Orchestra of Boston in 1926. It toured twice before it folded in 1930. In December of 1928 she conducted a National Orchestra of Boston in New York. She had settled in Boston in 1925 and there founded the hundred-member Boston Philharmonic Orchestra, which was a mostly male group that offered accessible ticket prices to classical-music lovers for one short season. She then established the Women’s Symphony Orchestra of Boston in 1926. It toured twice before it folded in 1930. In December of 1928 she conducted a National Opera performance of *Rigoletto* at the Boston Opera House. Her determination to conduct—when it was unheard of for a woman to do so at the time—ignited a media debate; detractors argued that women did not possess the intellectual rigor to handle the complexities of the job.

Leaving Boston for Europe in 1930, Leginska conducted performances of opera companies there and returned to New York City in 1931 to lead an orchestra for a Broadway revival of Franz von Suppe’s *Boccaccio*. The following year, she founded another short-lived group, the National Women’s Symphony Orchestra, in New York. An opera she wrote, *Gale*, made its debut at the Chicago City Opera on November 23, 1935, with Leginska at the podium. She found fewer opportunities to lead orchestras, however, and turned to teaching to support herself. Living in London and Paris in the late 1930s, she had some notable students there, and in 1939 settled in Los Angeles. Again, she enjoyed a reputation as an esteemed instructor in her field, and her students of note from this later part of her career included James Fields, Daniel Pollack, and Bruce Sutherland. She also established a concert bureau, New Ventures in Music, with many of her students on its roster. A second opera, *The Rose and the Ring*, had its debut in Los Angeles in 1957, again with Leginska leading the orchestra. It would be the last of her works to debut before an audience.

It was not until late 1950s that women conductors began to make progress within classical circles: Leginska’s true heir at the podium was American Sarah Caldwell and her Opera Company of Boston. Some years later, Caldwell became the first woman ever to conduct at the New York Metropolitan Opera House in a 1976 engagement. Leginska died in Los Angeles of a stroke on February 26, 1970, at the age of 83. Despite her pioneering forays into composition and conducting, Leginska remained devoted to her first love. “For me the piano is capable of reflecting every mood, every feeling; all pathos, joy, sorrow—the good and the evil too—all there is in life, all that one has lived,” she told Brower in the *Piano Mastery* interview. She made some recordings for the Columbia label in the mid-1920s and in 2002 these were re-issued on Ivory in the compact-disc format. Of its *Four Impromptus* by Schubert, the Chopin *Polonaise*, two Rachmaninoff *Preludes*, and Liszt’s *Hungarian Rhapsody*, *American Record Guide* critic Harold C. Schonberg found that the tracks “reveal a superior musical mind coupled to an unerring technique.”

**Books**


*Brower, Harriette, Piano Mastery: Talks with Master Pianists and Teachers*, Frederick A. Stokes Company, 1915.


**Periodicals**


---

**Mike Leigh**

Mike Leigh (born 1943) is a British writer and director whose works have appeared on film, television, and the stage. Leigh’s unusual methodology for writing his works—working in collaboration with the actors who will portray his characters—has resulted in such critically acclaimed films as *Naked* and *Secrets and Lies*.

Mike Leigh was born February 20, 1943, in Salford, Lancashire, England, the son of Dr. Alfred Abraham and Phylliss Pauline (Cousin) Leigh. His physician father was of Jewish descent, and the family name had been changed from Lieberman to Leigh by the time Leigh was born. Dr. Leigh’s practice was in a working-class neighborhood, and Leigh attended local schools like Salford Grammar School.

A fan of films from an early age, Leigh earned a scholarship to college but chose to study acting instead and in 1960 entered London’s Royal Academy of Dramatic Arts. Leigh quit two years later because of the school’s stifling atmosphere, although he did direct a student production of Harold Pinter’s *The Caretaker* before he left.

After leaving the Royal Academy, Leigh continued his education in a number of creative arenas. From 1963 to 1964 he attended the Camberwell School of Art and the London International School of Film Technique. The follow-
Begane Career at Theater

From 1965 to 1966 Leigh was the associate director of the Midlands Art Centre for Young People, located in the industrial city of Birmingham. There he created three plays designed to be performed improv by Birmingham’s inner-industrial city of Birmingham. There he created three plays for the Midlands Art Centre for Young People, located in the city of Birmingham. The Box Play, a play designed to be performed improv by Birmingham’s inner-industrial city of Birmingham, was produced in 1965, and he also directed the production. In 1966 he formed the short-lived Dramagraph production company. Before the company went bankrupt he was able to direct a production of Little Malcolm and His Struggle against the Eunuchs, written by David Halliwell. Leigh did not confine himself to directing and writing for the stage; he fulfilled his acting ambitions by appearing with the Victoria Theatre at Stroke-on-Kent, Staffordshire in 1966. Leigh has continued to appear in occasional films throughout his career.

In 1967-68 Leigh worked as an assistant director of the famous Royal Shakespeare Company. While there, he directed the troupe in production of Nenaa. He also worked in theater-related areas, lecturing in drama at Sedgley Park and de la Salle colleges in Manchester from 1968 to 1969 and the London Film School from 1970 to 1973.

It was while working in the theater in the 1960s that Leigh devised his uncommon scriptwriting method. After he had sufficient funding for a project, he asked his actors to create characters they wished to play, then worked with each actor individually on developing that character’s entire life history. While Leigh had an idea of where he wanted the story to go, it was during rehearsals and improv that the whole script came together. Leigh refined this method while working in television and film later in his career. Though it sometimes was difficult to acquire funding without a finished script, Leigh eventually transcended this difficulty as producers realized that his works often gained an unusual polish and depth because of his writing method.

Made First Film

In 1972 Leigh wrote and directed his first feature-length film, Bleak Moments, after obtaining funding from Memorial Enterprises, a company run by actor Albert Finney, during a low point in the British film industry. Bleak Moments focuses on an unmarried woman, an accountant’s clerk, who lives with her 29-year-old, mentally challenged sister. Although unplanned, Leigh subsequently took a break from film for 17 years, taking instead to the stage and to television, until funding once again became available for the kind of cinema projects he wished to do.

Much of Leigh’s work for stage and television in the 1970s and early to mid-1980s featured themes and character types he would go on to explore in his later films. Many of his works of this period focus on the working and lower middle classes and concern unemployment and family life. Leigh did his first television drama in 1973, Hard Labour, a dark look at a working-class family. In 1977 he wrote and directed both a stage and television-movie version of Abigail’s Party, about a party hostess forced to deal with a guest inconciderate enough to have a heart attack while attending Abigail’s social gathering.

Other notable television movies by Leigh include Home Sweet Home (1982), about three postmen and their respective families, and Nuts in May, about a clash of class that occurs when middle- and working-class couples converge at a campsite. In 1977’s The Kiss of Death an undertaker’s apprentice discovers the fairer sex, while Grown Ups (1980) explores the problems in a working-class marriage which is threatened when the husband leaves his wife.

While Leigh’s theater credits are not lengthy, several of his plays, such as Babies Grow Old (1974), The Silent Majority (1974), and Smelling a Rat (1988), explore similar themes. Produced in 1979, Leigh’s Ecstasy is representative, focusing on the way London’s working-class women are abused and exploited. A number of Leigh’s plays were produced in the United States after their author made a name for himself as a filmmaker.

Perhaps ironically, while Leigh often focused on left-leaning issues in his television movies and stage productions, he was not popular with British socialists and others of the political left because of his negative depiction of working-class people and their issues. Chris Savage King, in New Statesman & Society, praised Leigh’s television work, however, writing that during the late 1970s and into the 1980s many dramatic films produced for British television subjected viewers to a lecture “on some aspect of social malaise or . . . [presented] an uncritical tour around upper-middle-class afflictions. Mike Leigh plays were special, because they were recognizable. The dramas were too close to
home to be seen at any airy distance. And the characters were too insistently and pitilessly themselves to fall into a category of the oppressed.’’

Returned to Cinema

In 1988 Leigh received funding for his second feature film, *High Hopes*. This quiet comedy is set in London and takes place during the regime of conservative Prime Minister Margaret Thatcher. The movie focuses on a free-spirited couple, Cyril and Shirley, who are working-class optimists by choice but with secret hopes and ambitions. The pair are forced to deal with Cyril’s family: his rich sister and her husband and his problematic mother and her yuppie neighbors. While realistic, the play’s naturalism is heightened for comic effect.

*High Hopes* received much critical praise and helped to introduce Leigh to movie audiences in the United States. Critic Jay Carr praised the film in the *Boston Globe* writing that “Leigh is an angry, humane battler trying to keep working-class hopes and ideals alive in what he sees as an increasingly selfish and soul-crushing Thatcherian England.”

Films have remained Leigh’s primary focus throughout much of his career since *High Hopes*, although he continued to venture into television and theater on occasion. In 1990, for example, he wrote the play *Greek Tragedy* (an Australian Comedy) on commission from Sydney’s Belvoir Street Theatre to commemorate Australia’s bicentenary. The play focuses on Greek immigrants to Australia while drawing on the history of Greek tragedies. Though Leigh’s work was criticized by some in Australia, he learned much about the two cultures in the process.

In 1991 Leigh had a small hit on his hands after writing and directing the working-class family comedy *Life Is Sweet*. The story focuses on parents Wendy and Andy and their dreams. Andy, a chef, tries to start his own business selling food from a van while Wendy helps a family friend start a restaurant that soon fails. Their daughters have difficulties as well. Nicola, although intelligent, is a college dropout with an eating disorder while Natalie works as a plumber’s assistant and hones her sarcastic wit on her family and friends. While realistic, *Life Is Sweet* chronicles the minutia of its characters’ lives and, while there are depressing elements, Leigh shows optimism by the end.

*Life Is Sweet* was generally well received by critics. Vincent Canby of the *New York Times* wrote, “Leigh’s films appear to be shapeless, devoid of poetry. They are unforgiving in their portrayal of squalor. They shuffle along on tired feet, seemingly as aimless and inarticulate as their characters. Yet at some point in each of his films there comes a transforming moment when the unbearable and the hopeless fuse together to create an explosion of recognition, sometimes of high, incredible hilarity.”

Challenged Viewers with *Naked*

Leigh’s next film, much darker and more bitter than *Life Is Sweet*, was 1993’s *Naked*. Winning Leigh the Cannes Film Festival’s award for best director, *Naked* shows its writer’s conscious move away from domestic concerns. *Naked* primarily focuses on one character, Johnny (played by actor David Thewlis), who rants and raves his theories as he travels the streets of his working-class London neighborhood. Arriving in London with neither money nor a place to stay, Johnny ends up sleeping at his ex-girlfriend’s apartment. A dynamic character, Johnny is violent and intelligent, both a victim and a victimizer.

While *Naked* was praised by critics as thought provoking, it was better received in the United States than in Great Britain. As Canby wrote in the *New York Times*, “*Naked* is as corrosive and sometimes as funny as anything Mr. Leigh has done to date. It’s loaded with wild flights of absurd rhetoric and encounters with characters so eccentric they seem to have come directly from life. Nobody would dare imagine them.”

Secrets and Lies Garnered Broad Appeal

While *Naked* attracted a larger audience for Leigh than had his earlier works, his next movie seemed almost mainstream. *Secrets and Lies* covers the domestic front; its story focuses on a black ophthalmologist named Hortense, who finds and meets her birth mother, a white, middle-aged, working-class woman named Cynthia. Cynthia hides the revelation from her family at first, but as her husband, his wife, and one of Cynthia’s daughters find out the truth, the film focuses on how it changed their lives. *Secrets and Lies* appealed to a broader audience than any other film by Leigh, earning him Academy Award nominations for best direction and best screenplay.

Leigh’s next two films forged a new path for the director. His 1997 film *Career Girls* focuses on two female friends from college who meet later in their lives. The movie looks at the women’s pasts and their present state, presenting a portrait that is emotionally bleak. Perhaps because of its dark nature, *Career Girls* was not as well received as Leigh’s other works.

Leigh did something very different with 1999’s *Topsy-Turvy*, and was much more successful. Focusing on the collaboration between 19th-century composer W. S. Gilbert and librettist Arthur Sullivan, who collaborated on such popular light operas as *The Pirates of Penzance* and *The Mikado*, Leigh’s period drama begins in 1884 as the pair attempt to stage the newly completed *Mikado*. *Topsy-Turvy*, while very much a backstage story, nonetheless shows how Gilbert and Sullivan related to each other, as well as how their productions were staged. This film was generally well received by critics and audiences alike.

In 2002 Leigh returned to familiar territory with *All or Nothing*, which focuses on the intersecting lives of three dysfunctional working-class London families living in public housing. The couple at the center, Phil and Penny, have marital problems, and Phil cannot make enough as a cab driver to support his family. Their children are equally unhappy, but for differing reasons. Phil and Penny’s neighbors include Maureen, whose teenage daughter is pregnant, and Carol, who is an alcoholic. *All or Nothing*, which takes place in one weekend, incorporated themes of despair and redemption, and of the need by humans to be loved.
Although films such as *Secrets and Lies* and *Topsy-Turvy* have made Leigh a household name in England and established a strong following in the United States, other of his films have been viewed as subversive. With each new film, each new approach, he runs the same risk of negative critical reaction, even in his native country. However, Leigh’s motivation has not been fitting in with the movie mainstream. As he told Desson How of the *Washington Post*, “My ongoing preoccupation is with families, relationships, parents, children, sex, work, surviving, being born and dying. I’m totally intuitive, emotional, subjective, empirical, instinctive. I’m not an intellectual filmmaker. Primarily my films are a response to the way people are, the way things are as I experience them. In a way, they are acts of taking the temperature.”

Books


Periodicals

*Cineaste*, Fall 1996; Winter 2002.

Lillian Leitzel

Lillian Leitzel (1892–1931), known as Queen of the Air, was an aerial performer with the Ringling Brothers and Barnum and Bailey Circus from 1915 to 1931. Leitzel astounded audiences around the world with her act, which involved a series of planges in which she rotated around like a propeller while holding onto a rope with one hand. Leitzel headlined the circus longer than any performer in history. She died after falling while performing her act.

Leitzel was born Leopoldina Alitzka Pelikan in Breslau, Germany, on January 2, 1892. Her nickname, Leitzel, was a variation of her middle name and became her stage name. Leitzel’s parents separated when she was young. Her father, Edward J. Eleanor, was a former Hungarian army officer who became a theatrical empresario. He raised his children as he had managed his troops, demanding obedience and physical conditioning. The willful Leitzel clashed with him frequently when she was growing up and rarely spoke of him as an adult.

Leitzel’s mother, Elinor (Nellie) Pelikan, was a trapeze artist who came from a family of circus performers. Nellie’s mother performed on the trapeze until age 84. An uncle, Adolph Pelikan, originated the stunt in which a clown walks on his head, turns, and walks in the opposite direction with the plank in place. Nellie and two of her sisters performed around the world as the Leamy Ladies, named for their manager, Edward Leamy.

Leitzel had a brother, Arthur G. Pelikan, who became director of the Milwaukee Art Institute. Leitzel’s mother was often on tour, so Leitzel and her brother lived with their maternal grandmother and attended school in Breslau. Leitzel learned to speak five languages and studied music, literature, art, and ballet. Her family and teachers considered that she may become a concert pianist, but by the age of nine, she knew she wanted to become an aerialist.

At nine, Leitzel traveled to England with her grandparents during an extended performance of the Leamy Ladies. Leitzel, who had taught herself trapeze tricks, brought a miniature trapeze to the theater one day and convinced her mother to allow her to join the act. Soon, she was upstaging her mother and aunts.

In 1911, the Leamy Ladies traveled to the United States to perform, but their act did not catch on in America. Leitzel’s mother and aunts returned to Europe to perform in circuses there. Leitzel remained in the United States where she hoped to continue her career. She took a job at a New Jersey nightclub on the promise that New York producers were scouting the act. On the second of her three-night gig, Leitzel fell and landed on both knees. Her legs were sprained and bruised, but she returned the third night and completed her act to thunderous applause. The New York producers offered her jobs in vaudeville acts. She was known as “Lillian Leitzel, the World’s Foremost and Most Daring Aerial Star.”

In 1914, while performing in South Bend, Indiana, she was spotted by an agent for the Ringling Brothers Circus. She was offered a contract unlike any other for a new performer—$250 per week, star billing, and many other perks. She debuted with Ringling Brothers on April 17, 1915, in Chicago. When Ringling Brothers merged with the Barnum and Bailey in 1919, Leitzel was a headline performer.

**Played to the Crowd**

Leitzel was an aerialist, not a trapeze artist. She performed her act on movable ringing, suspended from the tent ceiling. She did not use a safety net. Theatrics was a large part of Leitzel’s act and she played to the crowds who reacted wildly to her showmanship. As her act began, the lights dimmed and a lone spotlight found Leitzel in the tent’s entrance. She entered the ring carried by a giant dressed as a hotel doorman. The contrast between the two accentuated Leitzel’s diminutive size. She stood 4 feet, 9 inches tall and weighed 95 pounds. In the air, she looked like a fairy, but...
close up, her overdeveloped upper-body muscles gave her a gnome-like appearance. Leitzel’s personal maid, Mabel Clemings, accompanied her into the ring and took Leitzel’s robe, revealing her sequined halter, bare midriff, and trunks covered by a sheer skirt.

After playing to the crowd for a while, she kicked off her gold mules before ascending the rope web as the band played Crimson Cradle March. Unlike most performers who simply climbed the webbing to the apparatus, Leitzel ascended the web in a series of rollups, in which she rolled her body up and over itself while holding onto the rope. At the top of the tent, she performed a series of graceful twirls and swings on the Roman rings to the tune of William Tell Overture. She then glided back to the ground.

The second part of her act was Leitzel’s trademark and is what made her famous. When she ascended the web again, all other circus activities stopped. Leitzel was the first person in history to gain such attention. After returning to the top of the tent, she slipped her wrist into a padded rope loop attached to a swivel and ring. She then performed a series of one-arm planges accompanied by a drumroll. A plange is a move in which Leitzel threw her body over her head, swinging around vertically like a propeller. With each turn, the cymbals clashed and the crowd counted, “33, 34, 35 . . . 89, 90 91,” up to 100 or 150 turns. Her record was 249. Late in her career she performed up to 60.

Leitzel’s theatrics continued to the end of her act. She often extended her act beyond its allotted time, angering the performers that followed her. Leitzel piled her long, thick blond hair atop her head and secured it in such a way that it was about to faint. The crowd ate it up.

Leitzel’s mother is said to have first performed the plange, but Leitzel perfected the act. Despite Leitzel’s incredible upper body strength and the ease with which she appeared to perform the act, the plange was a difficult move that took its toll on Leitzel’s body. Every turn partially dislocated her shoulder, which then snapped back into place. Despite attempts to protect her wrist, the rope lacerated it with every turn and she returned to the ground bloodied. She always covered her raw, cracked wrist in bloodied. She always covered her raw, cracked wrist in bandages and ring announcer. Ingalls stood 6 feet tall and could not keep up with his famous wife socially or financially. He often had to ask her for money. He was jealous of the attention Leitzel continued to receive from other men. The last straw occurred when a Chicago sportsman threw Leitzel a party at the Hotel Stevens. The party featured a mermaid swimming in vintage champagne and a gold-plated statue of Leitzel. The host gave each guest a $50 bill and presented Leitzel with a diamond tiara. Ingalls filed for divorce shortly after, in 1924.

In 1928, Leitzel married the love of her life, Alfredo Codona, the “King of the Trapeze.” Like Leitzel, Codona came from a family of circus performers, had begun his career as a child, and had lifted his art to a new level. Many people felt the match was predestined, but the relationship was stormy. There were frequent screaming matches, breakups, and reconciliations.

**Accident Led to Death**

During the Ringling Brothers off-season, Leitzel and Codona performed together and singly in vaudeville shows and circuses around the world. On Friday, February 13, 1931, Leitzel performed her act at the Valencia Music Hall in Copenhagen, Denmark. She was haunted by a nightmare that had awakened her several days earlier. In the dream, she was being hoisted to the top of the ring on a rope. Leitzel watched as the rope unraveled. Below her, her husband could not hear her cries for help. Just as the rope broke, she jolteled awake.

After completing the rings portion of her act on that Friday the 13th, Leitzel began her planges. Early in the performance, the swivel ring broke as a result of repeatedly being heated from the friction of use. Leitzel fell 20 feet to the ground and landed on her shoulders and back. Although she suffered a concussion and spinal injuries, she remained conscious and attempted to continue her performance, but instead was taken to the hospital. Codona, who was performing in Berlin, rushed to her side. Leitzel convinced him that she was okay and insisted that he return to Berlin, which he did. Two days later, on February 15, 1931, Leitzel died of complications from the fall.

People were shocked at Leitzel’s fall. Her husband explained that Leitzel’s injuries were strangely the result of inexperience—she didn’t know how to fall. The only time she’d ever fallen was long ago in the New Jersey nightclub.
Leitzel was cremated and her ashes were interred in Inglewood Park Cemetery, Inglewood, California. Codona built a memorial to his wife in the cemetery. Titled “The Spirit of Flight,” it stands 12 feet high and depicts Codona, with angels’ wings, and Leitzel embracing. Roman rings appear at the base of the statue.

Codona went into seclusion after Leitzel’s death. He later returned to the circus and married Vera Bruce, an equestrienne member of his troupe. He became increasingly reckless in his performances and his career ended in 1933 when he injured his shoulder in a fall. He tended Bruce’s horses for a while, then worked at a gas station. In 1937, Bruce filed for divorce. When Codona met her at her lawyer’s office to work out a settlement, he pulled out a gun and shot and killed Bruce and himself. Codona was buried beside Leitzel’s ashes at the base of the memorial statue.

Books
Ogen, Tom, Two Hundred Years of the American Circus, Facts on File, 1993.

Periodicals
American History Illustrated, July–August 1993.

Online

Jose´ Arcadia Limón

Jose´ Arcadia Limón (1908–1972) is remembered as a pioneer of modern dance and choreography. He firmly established the importance of the male dancer in American modern dance through the heroes he created and the masculine movement style of his choreography for men.

Limon was born in Culiacán, Sinaloa, Mexico. His father, a musician, conductor, and pedagogue, was a widower and father of three when he married 16-year-old Francisca Traslaviña. She bore him 11 children (and another three who died at birth), of which Limón was the eldest. His mother was a devout Catholic and raised the children accordingly.

The Mexican revolution wreaked havoc in Limón’s young life; at the age of five he witnessed the death by gunshot of a young uncle. His father directed various military bands during this period, and the family had to move frequently, to Cananea, Hermosilla, Nogales, and finally across the border to Tucson, Arizona, when Limón was seven. His father worked in various Arizona cities as a musician and conductor and finally settled his family in Los Angeles, California, when Limón was 12. Due to an early humiliation with English, young Limón resolved to master the language, and he continued to develop his prodigious vocabulary throughout his life. He exhibited early talent as both a musician and a visual artist. In high school he was introduced to the glories of Western art, and at about the same time began to study piano.

When Limón was 18, his mother died in childbirth, a tragedy that drove him away from the Catholic Church and his father, both of which he blamed for this devastating loss. After high school he studied painting briefly at the University of California, and then, at the urging of three “bohemian” friends, he moved to New York City in 1928 to study at the Art Students League. There he soon became disillusioned by the painting classes, believing that his classmates and teachers were merely imitating the French moderns. His vision was more influenced by El Greco, but he despaired of ever equaling his idol. By chance he attended a dance performance by German Expressionist Harald Kreutzberg and Yvonne Georgi and knew immediately that he had to dance. He enrolled in classes at the Humphrey-Weidman School, where Doris Humphrey and Charles Weidman became his artistic mentors. Pauline Lawrence, who had left Denishawn at the same time as Humphrey and Weidman, served as school registrar, tour manager, costume designer, stage manager, and accompanist for Humphrey-Weidman. These four lived communally for several years. Limón had become an earnest disciple of a revolutionary new art form, American modern dance. After very little training, he became a member of the company,
performed in Broadway shows they choreographed, and began his own early choreographic efforts.

Limón’s apprenticeship with Humphrey-Weidman lasted over 10 years, during which time he was increasingly featured in their concert work. His first choreographic efforts began early, and in 1930 he formed “The Little Group” with two women from the company, Eleanor King and Ernestine Henoch. The Humphrey-Weidman Company spent several summers at Bennington College, where Limón was named a Choreography Fellow in 1937. The following year he choreographed his first major work, Danzas Mexicanas, one of several dances he made that explored Mexican themes.

In 1940, disgusted with the triviality of commercialized Broadway dance, Limón left for the West Coast to form a duet company with former Graham dancer May O’Donnell and her husband, composer Ray Green. They developed a repertory with a commitment to contemporary American music and themes. World War II had begun in Europe, and Limón suspected he would soon be drafted. In 1941 he married Pauline Lawrence, and the following year returned to New York, disappointed with what he considered the provincialism of the San Francisco public.

In New York he resumed his association with Doris Humphrey, and created Chaconne in D Minor, a solo set to music by Johann Sebastian Bach, to be performed on an all-Bach program that Humphrey was producing. In April 1943, he was drafted. While in the army he was able to continue choreographing and performing in shows for the Special Services. On weekend leaves he began choreographing for a small company under Humphrey’s artistic direction, which was a precursor of the José Limón Dance Company. With dancers Dorothy Bird and Beatrice Seckler, he created Vivaldi Concerto in D Minor, which premiered in 1945.

Humphrey had retired from dance due to a hip injury and ended her long association with Weidman; now she began to choreograph for the new company, with works that took advantage of her former protégé’s exotic good looks and compelling stage presence. Among these works were Lament for Ignacio Sánchez Mejías, Story of Mankind, Day on Earth, Night Spell, Ritmo Jondo, and Ruins and Visions.

Limón invited Pauline Koner and Lucas Hoving to work with him and, returning to his Mexican heritage for inspiration, made La Malinche in 1949, with an original score by Norman Lloyd. The same year, with Hoving, Koner and Betty Jones, he created The Moor’s Pavane, which John Martin, writing in the New York Times, called “a magnificent piece of dance theater . . . one of the major works in contemporary dance repertory.” Based on the tragic story of Othello and set to music by Henry Purcell, this choreographic masterpiece has been continuously performed by ballet and modern dance companies worldwide.

In 1950 the Limón company performed in Mexico City, prompting an invitation to Limón to establish a school and company there. He created several new works for the Ballet Mexicano including El Grito, Quatro Soles, and Tonantzinlta in 1951, but returned to his company in New York and a faculty position at the new Dance Department at the Juilliard School of Music, where he taught for the rest of his life.

The Limón company had been a chamber ensemble until this time, consisting of individual soloists, including Ruth Currier and Letitia Ide. His choreographic experience in Mexico and his work with Juilliard students now motivated him to explore the use of an ensemble. Working with a group of all male dancers, he created The Traitor (1954), Scherzo (1955) and The Emperor Jones (1956). He worked with a mixed ensemble in Symphony for Strings (1955), There Is a Time (1956), Missa Brevis (1958), A Choreographic Offering (1964), The Winged (1966) and Psalm (1967). In addition to these company works, he was creating dances almost every year for the student ensemble at Juilliard.

Limón was best known as a choreographer who made dance dramas, often based on literary or biblical themes. Hoving, lanky, blond and suave, was a striking contrast to Limón, who used him as a dramatic counterpart, particularly in The Moor’s Pavane, Dialogues, The Traitor, and Emperor Jones. Tiny, quick, and dramatic, Pauline Koner was his partner in many works, and in others he used the sweetly lyric dancing of Betty Jones and Ruth Currier to represent feminine attributes. The womanly Letitia Ide had a weighted power that complemented his size. In later years he began to value greater technical virtuosity, in dancers such as Sarah Stackhouse, Jennifer Muller, Louis Falco, and Carla Maxwell, creating dances that challenged their skills while maintaining the breadth and weight of his original movement style.

Mexican themes recur throughout his work, from Danzas Mexicanas, La Malinche, Dialogues, Tonantzinlta, and Los Quatro Soles to later works, The Unsung (1970) and Carlota (1972). Among his literary influences were William Shakespeare and Eugene O’Neill; religious themes appear in The Exiles, The Visitation, The Traitor, There Is a Time, and Missa Brevis, in which Limón’s figure is set apart from the group, alternately appearing as a leader and a doubter.

Another important source of inspiration was the music of his favorite composers, resulting in pure movement pieces. These celebrations of the human spirit were made manifest through exultant dancing, intricate spatial designs, and sensitive musical phrasing. A Choreographic Offering (1964) is an outstanding example—dedicated to Doris Humphrey, its vocabulary is entirely derived from her choreography. Other notable works that were musically inspired include Chaconne in D Minor, Vivaldi Concerto in D Minor, Mazurkas (Chopin, 1958), and the unfinished Beethoven Sonatas, a full-evening work he began in 1970. He was also intrigued with silence, which he incorporated into There Is a Time and The Winged (1966), and then used in three of his last four pieces, The Unsung, the final section of Dances for Isadora, (1971) and Carlota.

Limón became a U.S. citizen in 1946 and a cultural ambassador for the government in 1954, when his company inaugurated the first State Department’s Cultural Exchange Program with a tour of four South American cities. In 1957
the company was sent by the State Department on a five-
month tour of Europe, including “Iron Curtain” countries
Poland and Yugoslavia, which were overwhelmingly recep-
tive. The company returned to South America in 1960, to
the Far East in 1963, and to the Soviet Union in 1973 several
months after Limón’s death, all under State Department
sponsorship. Limón was a guest at the Kennedy White
House in 1962 and performed The Moor’s Pavane at a
White House state dinner in 1967 for Lyndon Johnson and
his guest, King Hassan II of Morocco.

Limón was diagnosed with prostate cancer in 1967. His
wife, Pauline Lawrence Limón died of cancer in 1971, and
Limón died a year later, on December 2, 1972. Upon
Limón’s death, Clive Barnes wrote in the New York Times:
“As a man he was austere, grave and kindly. There was a
courtliness to his every gesture, and he moved through the
world like a prince. As a dancer he was an eagle. As a
choreographer he was extremely gifted and fluent. He was
never a particularly innovative artist, but possessed an in-
nate understanding of that fusion of dance, drama and
music that is the core of his work. He has left half a dozen
ballets, at least, that should find a permanent place in the
American repertory.”

Books
Cohen, Selma Jeanne, editor, The Modern Dance: Seven State-
ments of Belief, 1966.
Garafola, Lynn, editor, José Limón: An Unfinished Memoir,
1998.
Koner, Pauline, Solitary Song, 1986.
Kriegsman, Sali Ann, Modern Dance in America: The Bennington
Years, 1981.
Lewis, Daniel, The Illustrated Dance Technique of José Limón,
1984.
Nadel, Myron Howard and Constance Gwen Nadel, editors, The
Dance Experience, 1970.
Pollack, Barbara, and Charles Humphrey Woodford, Dance Is a
Moment: A Portrait of José Limón in Words and Pictures,
1993.
Siegel, Marcia B., Days on Earth: The Dance of Doris Hum-

Periodicals
Choreography and Dance, 1992.
Current Biography, 1968.
Dance Notation Journal, Spring 1984.
Impulse, 1968.
New York Times, December, 16 1949; April 12, 1953; Decem-

Horace B. Liveright
In 1916 ad agency employee Horace B. Liveright
(1886–1933) and his office-mate decided to go into
the book publishing business. With pooled assets of
$16,500, they planned to reprint modern classics by
British and European authors in inexpensive edi-
tions. Calling their venture The Modern Library of
the World’s Greatest Books, the two entrepreneurs
eventually ranged further afield, publishing works by
up-and-coming writers such as William Faulkner and
Ernest Hemingway. Unfortunately, by 1930 the firm
would find itself on hard times—the result of finan-
cial mismanagement and competition from other
publishing houses—and Liveright was forced out.
Three years later he would be dead of pneumonia.

Horace B. Liveright was born on December 10, 1886, in Osceola Mills, Pennsylvania, to Henry
and Henrietta Liveright. By the time Liveright was
14 he had left school and taken a job as an office boy in
Philadelphia. When he was 17 he penned the text and lyrics
for a comic opera; although the opera went into rehearsal
on Broadway, it never opened due to lack of a financial
backer.

Entrepreneurial Aspirations
Eventually Liveright found work in New York City as a
securities and bond salesman. In 1911 he married Lucile
Elsas, daughter of the vice president of the International
Paper Company, with whom he would have a son Herman
E. Liveright in 1912. With his father-in-law’s backing,
Liveright started his own company to manufacture and sell
toilet paper. He called his product Pick-Quick Papers.

By the end of 1915, the toilet paper venture failed,
Liveright took a job at an advertising agency owned by
Alfred Wallerstein. Liveright hoped to use the ad agency as a
temporary base while he looked for something else to man-
ufacture and market; his father-in-law, meanwhile, said
he would back his son-in-law in only one more business
venture.

Liveright’s co-worker at the advertising agency was Al-
bert Boni, who had recently run a small publishing business
with his brother. After Liveright asked Boni’s opinion about
some of his manufacturing ideas, Boni in turn began telling
his office-mate about his experience in publishing. The
conversation led to a business partnership, with Liveright
putting up $12,500 borrowed from his father-in-law, and
Boni contributing $4,000 and the idea for the publishing
business.

Boni & Liveright
By the beginning of the 20th century, most of the large
publishing houses—among them Dodd, Mead & Company;
E. P. Dutton; Harper & Brothers; Henry Holt; G. P. Putnam’s
Early Titles

In 1917 the initial Modern Library selections included Oscar Wilde's *The Picture of Dorian Gray,* August Strindberg's *Married,* Rudyard Kipling's *Soldier's Three,* Robert Louis Stevenson's *Treasure Island,* H. G. Well's *The War in the Air,* Henrik Ibsen's *A Doll’s House,* *The Enemy of the People,* and *Ghosts,* Anatole France's *The Red Lily,* Guy de Maupassant's *Mademoiselle Fifi,* Friedrich Nietzsche's *Thus Spake Zarathustra,* and Fyodor Dostoyevsky's *Poor People.* Each book sold for 60 cents. Demand for the first set of titles was so great that Boni & Liveright immediately added six more. Boni & Liveright's publication of the works of Russian writer Leon Trotsky, Frenchman Henri Barbusse, and Hungarian Andreas Latzko would be less successful.

End of Publishing Partnership

While Boni and Liveright were temperamentally suited as business partners through their mutual sympathy for radical ideas, they frequently failed to agree on editorial matters and financial affairs. Liveright wanted to publish more unknown Greenwich Village writers as well as some writers with large followings, while Boni preferred sociopolitical works and European novelists. Eventually the two reached an impasse concerning the future direction of their firm and since neither was willing to sell out to the other, the partners decided to settle the matter over the toss of a coin. Liveright won the toss and in July 1918 became the majority owner of Boni & Liveright. Free to lead the company in whatever direction he chose, Liveright turned his attention to writers in Greenwich Village. Meanwhile, Boni departed for Europe in 1919 and eventually made his way to the Union of Soviet Socialist Republics (USSR). There he was imprisoned in 1920 on charges of spying. Upon his release, he returned to the United States where he re-entered the publishing business with his brother.

Liveright showed himself to be a quick study of book promotion and, until 1921, he handled the editorial side of the business. By 1921 the Modern Library consisted of 104 volumes, with each priced at 95 cents. It was clearly the most prestigious offering of Liveright’s firm at this time. Later in the decade Liveright banked on the income from the Modern Library when, realizing the demand for books dealing with sex, he began publishing the works of psychoanalyst Sigmund Freud. Already criticized for his association with radical political works, Liveright achieved additional notoriety after he began publishing books considered outspoken in their treatment of sex.

Loved and Hated

When Liveright further expanded his publishing activities by releasing play scripts in 1924, he removed one of the walls in his office and added a false bookshelf that slid away to reveal a second room in which he hosted lavish—and not infrequently bacchanalian—parties. He gained a reputation for being alternately an exhibitionist, crude, or charming. According to Walker Gilmer in *Horace Liveright: Publisher of the Twenties,* Liveright was “tall, lean, and well-tailored with a shock of long (for the times) black hair, piercing eyes, and a John Barrymore or Mephistophelean profile.” He also
acquired a reputation for treating his employees well: his staff received annual bonuses and never had to ask for raises. Liveright called his publishing house the only socialistic firm in New York, a reference to the fact that he wanted his employees to share in its profits.

Promoted Contemporary Writers

Liveright published the writings of Eugene O’Neill between 1918 and 1930 in 13 volumes, each containing one or more of O’Neill’s play. He also published limited editions of the playwright’s works, as well as reprints of his plays. During each year of the 1920s, except 1923, Liveright published at least one new play by the dramatist. In addition, by 1925 he had published or was about to publish works by Ernest Hemingway, William Faulkner, Roger Martin du Gard, Francois Mauriac, Hart Crane, Robinson Jeffers, and Dorothy Parker. For most of these still young writers, this would be their first publication in the United States.

Sold Modern Library

In 1925 Liveright sold the Modern Library to Bennett Cerf for $200,000. There is a story from that time that tells how Liveright’s associates were furious upon learning of the sale, but that before they were able to dissuade him from going through with the deal a gunman appeared at the offices of Boni & Liveright with the intention of shooting Liveright because the publisher was having an affair with the gunman’s wife. By the time the crisis had been managed, the sale had gone through. Cerf later changed the name of the Modern Library to Random House.

In 1928 Liveright’s wife, Lucile, sued for divorce. However, long before this, as part of a separation agreement Liveright had agreed to repay his wife and father-in-law the large sums of money he had borrowed. Although the sale of the Modern Library averted the potential financial crisis sparked by his divorce, the loss of the Modern Library meant that the company’s foundations would no longer be strong. Over the next few years, Boni & Liveright was dependent on the sales of popular best-sellers, and its fortunes eventually suffered.

In 1927 and 1928 the firm posted the highest gross profits in its history. Encouraged, in 1928 Liveright decided to change the name of the firm to Liveright, Inc. Unbeknownst to Liveright at the time, more changes than the corporate name were in store for him.

Financial Collapse

By 1929 Liveright was having trouble finding new writers. The crash of the stock market that same year sent the firm into a tailspin and by the summer of 1930, Liveright had lost control of his company as a result of his continual borrowings against his majority share, and he was forced to leave.

In July 1930 Liveright left for Hollywood, after announcing that he was taking a leave of absence from the firm. His motivations were entirely financial. The firm’s releases for 1929 and the first half of 1930 had not sold. There was also a book war raging among publishers in which books were sold for ridiculously low prices in attempts to recapture audiences. In setting out for Hollywood, Liveright, who had also suffered major losses in the theatre and stock market, hoped to sell the movie rights to the books he still had an interest in to recoup his fortune.

In Hollywood Liveright found himself dependent on Paramount for a salary. Meanwhile he took to drinking heavily. When his contract with Paramount was not renewed in 1931, the publisher returned to New York with the intention of launching some Broadway plays, but the backing for his show-business ventures did not materialize. After he took to hanging around his old office, he was asked to leave because, he was told, it didn’t look good to have him there.

In 1931 the publishing house of Horace Liveright changed its name to Liveright, Inc. Unfortunately, it never equaled its former successes, and in 1933 the company filed for bankruptcy.

On December 8, 1931, Liveright married Elise Nartlett Porter, an actress who had appeared in several Broadway plays and movies, but by 1932 the marriage was floundering. In January 1933 Liveright was hospitalized for pneumonia and later emphysema. On September 24, 1933, he died at the age of 46 of pneumonia in an apartment on West 51st Street in New York City.

In an article published after Liveright’s death, colleague Cerf attributed Liveright’s failure as a publisher to changes in the publishing industry that Liveright had no control of. In tribute to Liveright, writer Sherwood Anderson was quoted in Horace Liveright: Publisher of the Twenties as writing that “Horace was a gambler and if he believed in you would gamble on you. I have always thought, since the man’s death, that too much emphasis has been put on the reckless splendor of the man rather than on his never-ending generosity and his real belief in men of talent.”

Books


Periodicals

New Yorker, October 10, 1925.
Publishers Weekly, September 30–October 7, 1933.

Online


George Logan

George Logan (1753–1821) was one of the renaissance men who governed the republic in the early days of the United States. Though little known past his lifetime, he ably combined the professions of
doctor, farmer, politician, and diplomat in a career that lasted more than 40 years.

Logan was born September 9, 1753, in “Stenton,” the home his grandfather had built in 1728 and to which his parents, William and Hannah Logan, and older siblings had moved from Philadelphia only four months earlier. At the time the house was located in a rural area in Philadelphia County, Pennsylvania, but it later became incorporated into the city itself. The Logans were a Quaker family; George Logan’s grandfather, James, had been William Penn’s secretary, who had made his fortune in fur trading. James’s son, William, was a farmer who commanded the respect of the colonists and Native Americans.

Logan spent his first seven years entirely at Stenton. At age eight he attended the Friends School in Philadelphia, and in 1768 he began attending the Friends School in Worcester, England. Logan remained in Worcester for three years before returning to Stenton. This was to be the pattern for the rest of his life: no matter where his political and diplomatic careers took him, Logan always returned to his beloved Stenton.

Medical Education in Edinburgh

At this time Logan had his sights set on being a physician, but his older brother, William, had already graduated from medical school and his father thought it better that George apprentice as a merchant. Logan was temperamentally unfit for the life of business and never gave up hope of studying medicine. In 1772, William Logan, Jr., died suddenly and this, along with the coming war (Quakers being pacifists), cleared the way for Logan to study medicine at the University of Edinburgh. Ironically, Logan left for Great Britain in May 1775, a month after the Battle of Lexington and Concord; he spent the first year of the American Revolution in England, studying in preparation for entering the University of Edinburgh.

After his London stay and a tour of western England, Logan finally arrived in Edinburgh in November 1776. The following month he was selected to join the Medical Society, the prestigious student organization founded in 1734. Toward the end of his first spring term at the University of Edinburgh Logan received news that both his parents had died the previous winter. As the oldest surviving sibling he inherited Stenton but remained an absentee landlord the next three years while he pursued his medical studies. On January 27, 1779, when he was in his third and final year at the university, Logan was elected president of the Medical Society, which had only recently been granted a royal charter. He was the first American to hold the post. On June 24, 1779, having passed the rigorous oral and written examinations and published his thesis on poisons (titled Tentamen medicum inaugurale de venenis), Logan was awarded an M.D. from the University of Edinburgh.

By the end of June Logan had abandoned Edinburgh and gone to Paris where he visited Benjamin Franklin, then an envoy to the court of Louis XVI. Though a freshly minted doctor, Logan’s political education and career were about to begin. Over the next year Logan served as courier for Franklin and John Adams delivering letters from the two Americans to their contacts in England. He returned to Stenton late in 1780.

The mansion had fallen to ruin during the war (though it had been briefly used as headquarters by both generals Washington and Howe), yet Logan still used it as a hostel for war refugees. He also practiced philanthropy in other forms, as well as the usual avocations of an eighteenth-century gentleman. He set up his medical practice in Philadelphia and began a courtship with Deborah Norris. The courtship had a touch of Romeo and Juliet; the Logan and the Norris families had been estranged for 30 years, but that ended when Logan married Norris on September 6, 1781. Not too many months later Logan decided to quit his medical practice and take up farming at Stenton as a way of reviving the ancestral home. Over the next few years, and intermittently for the rest of his life, Logan devoted himself to scientific farming. He began employing, and later improving upon, the agrarian reforms first used in England. Logan was also a charter member of the Philadelphia Society for Promoting Agriculture.

Election to the Pennsylvania Legislature

On October 11, 1785, Logan entered the political arena when he was elected to the Pennsylvania state assembly as a member of the Republican party. (Though conservative, this was not the present-day Republican party as within two years most of its members would be known as Federalists.) At that time elections were annual, and Logan served in the state assembly from 1785 to 1789; again from 1795 to 1796; and finally in 1799.

The first political crisis in which Logan became involved was over the Bank of North America, located in Philadelphia. The bank’s charter had been annulled by the previous session, which was controlled by the radical Constitutionalist party (referring to the Pennsylvania state constitution). Though a Republican, Logan maintained an open mind regarding the bank’s recharter, and when he finally rose to speak exerted a moderating influence over the increasingly rancorous debate. He came out in favor of rechartering the bank, but the motion was defeated when a vote was taken. Logan, though, had staked out the political middle in the state assembly. The bank was rechartered when the Republicans gained power.

In 1787 Logan, who was very much a political protégé of Benjamin Franklin, spoke out in favor of ratifying the new federal constitution that would replace the Articles of Confederation. Partly for his efforts, Pennsylvania became the second state to ratify the Constitution by a vote of 43 to 23.

The assembly’s, and Logan’s, next political conflict was over the reforming of the state penal code. In this Logan took a more conservative stance than most of his Quaker class by opposing the idea of incarceration as a means of reforming criminals—though Logan meant people whom, centuries later, would be classified as “career criminals.” In 1788 Logan began publishing essays in the Pennsylvania Mercury and Universal Advertiser under the pen name Cato, in which he argued that justice was interwoven throughout the
fabric of society, specifically in the relationship of rights and duties. The penal code debates marked the beginning of Logan’s independent political streak. Thereafter less and less would he align himself along party and class affiliations. In the late 1780s he opposed Republican measures of protectionism in the state assembly and in his writings spoke of the dangers of the new American aristocracy. The Pennsylvania state constitution of that time forbade any member of the assembly from serving more than four consecutive terms, so with the close of the 1789 session Logan returned to Stenton to resume scientific farming full time.

Logan had been working his fields even while a legislator, but he now spent the next six years farming and working out methods to improve agriculture. These methods included crop rotation. Since 1783 he had been making notes on the best rotation for the fields, and he wrote a report for the Philadelphia Society for Promoting Agriculture. Unfortunately for Logan, the Society and the committee it set up to review his report after it had received a less than hearty welcome when he read it, were dominated by conservatives, many of whom came from the mercantile rather than the agricultural class. Though it was recommended the report be published, it was not fully supported by the Society. This led to Logan’s rupture with the Society. After publishing his report and agricultural experiments in the Independent Gazetteer he resigned from the Society.

Logan’s wariness toward the newly minted aristocracy of the mercantile class did not end there. He saw the new United States Constitution as an extension of their power in the nation. More than most, Logan keenly felt the threat to the country’s agrarian lifestyle. In the early 1790s Logan’s radical opposition to the new federal government—which he was able to observe firsthand since the capital had moved from New York to Philadelphia at the end of 1790—ostracized him from the Quaker community, which felt compelled to take action by issuing a “testimony” against him. Not dissuaded by this, Logan continued publishing anti-Federalist essays in the Independent Gazetteer (under the collective title Letters to the Yeomanry; they were also later published by the National Gazette, edited by Philip Freneau) as well as pamphlets, written under the simple byline “a farmer.” These essays and letters argued against the new economic system being set in place by Secretary of State Alexander Hamilton. In this Logan had a powerful ally—Thomas Jefferson. His activity made Logan one of the leading anti-Federalists in Philadelphia and Stenton the seat of discontent in the area.

By 1793 Logan had become so anti-Federalist in outlook that no Federal policy could appease him, including the plan to build a turnpike linking the western Pennsylvania farmlands with the eastern part of the state. That same year Logan joined the Philadelphia-based Société française des amis de la liberté et de l’égalité, which supported the new French Republic. Following a summer which he spent in the company of none other than Citizen Genêt, Logan’s political fires were temporarily tamped in the fall of 1793 by an outbreak of yellow fever in Philadelphia. He returned to his medical practice to treat the sick and also published his ideas on treatment, which entailed a brief controversy of its own.

In January 1794 Logan joined the Democratic Society of Philadelphia, hoping it and the other Democratic societies throughout the nation would serve as a rudimentary national opposition to the Federalists. He was soon one of the firebrands of the organization—the societies were even attacked by Washington. Having thrown his lot in with the Jacobin French, Logan opposed the 1794 treaty with Britain which John Jay, minister to London and one of the authors of the Federalist Papers, had negotiated. In 1795 Logan again won a seat in the state assembly, but this time he was a changed man politically. He was no longer content to be seen as a moderate. He was reelected in 1796 and proved locally influential in the presidential election that year: Jefferson, around whom the national opposition had coalesced, received 13 of Pennsylvania’s 15 electoral votes. However he lost the election to John Adams.

Secret Trip to France

Logan was mistrustful of Federalist policy toward France, but not even he could sway public opinion when the XYZ Affair (in which three French agents attempted to solicit a bribe and an extortionary loan from three American ministers who were sent to negotiate a commercial treaty) became common knowledge in April 1798. In the United States, as calls for war against the former ally began coming from different quarters and preparations made (these resulted in minor naval skirmishes), Logan chose a different tack. Bearing a letter from Vice President Jefferson as his credentials, Logan traveled to France in a roundabout way with the assistance of the Marquis de Lafayette.

By the time Logan reached Paris on August 7, 1798, the American ministers had all left their posts for the United States. France, they had been assured would negotiate. However France had also placed an embargo on American shipping and imprisoned a number of United States sailors. Logan met with French Foreign Minister Talleyrand and others and the result was a lifting of the embargo and the release of the imprisoned seamen. While Logan appeared to have single-handedly staved off war, the fact was the French Directory (which governed France at the time) was considering those very steps. Logan’s secret diplomacy was the final and convenient evidence they considered. Logan was at once a hero and the source of embarrassment to the Federalist administration.

As a result Federalists in both houses of Congress sought revenge and they managed to exact it in a bill, since known as the Logan Act, which was passed in January 1799 and quickly signed by President Adams. The new law made it a crime for a private citizen to begin or hold “verbal or written correspondence with a foreign government . . . in relation to any disputes or controversies of the United States.”

In July 1801 Logan was appointed by Governor McKean of Pennsylvania to replace Senator J.P.G. Muhlenberg, who had resigned. In December 1801 he was elected by the Pennsylvania legislature by a large majority. (Until 1913 United States senators were elected by state legislatures
rather than popular vote.) By then Jefferson was president and the Republicans had gained power. Logan served as Senator until 1807, thus his term coincided with Jefferson’s administration. By the end of his term Logan’s early support of party policy—he had voted in favor of the Louisiana Purchase—gave way to misgivings about the path, especially the foreign policy of Jefferson and Secretary of State James Madison. Furthermore, Logan had grown weary of politics and declined to stand for reelection. When his term was up he retired to Stenton.

By 1810 Logan was again on a private diplomatic mission, in violation of the law that bore his name. He went to London to avert the ongoing crisis between the United States and Great Britain. As the War of 1812 attests, Logan was unsuccessful. However, throughout the war Logan sought out others who might play the peacemaker, including Tsar Alexander I; he wrote President Madison and Jefferson, and was politely rebuffed. His influence was nil.

Logan spent the remainder of his years at Stenton where he continued farming and writing. He died there on April 9, 1821.

Books
Logan, Deborah Norris, Memoir of Dr. George Logan of Stenton, The Historical Society of Pennsylvania, 1899.

Online

Guy Lombardo
Canadian-born musician Guy Lombardo (1912–1977) was known for his festive approach to New Years’ Eve, and his band’s performance of eighteenth-century Scots poet Robert Burns’s sentimental song Auld Lang Syne quickly became an American tradition.

In his heyday, musician Lombardo created a Big Band sound that was characterized by an exaggerated saxophone vibrato, clipped brass phrases, and a unique vocal styling that was the band leader’s own. To generations of Americans, the New Year’s Eve radio broadcasts by Guy Lombardo and his Royal Canadians playing “Auld Lang Syne” was an annual tradition. Lombardo’s New Year’s Eve Party eventually set a record as the longest-running annual special produced on radio, and between 1929 and 1952 Lombardo and the Royal Canadians charted at least one hit per year. Although Lombardo died in 1977, his theme song “Auld Lang Syne” continues to be requested by North American audiences ringing in the new year.

Beginnings
Gaetano Alberto Lombardo was born on June 19, 1902, in London, Ontario, Canada, to Gaetano and Lena Lombardo. Lombardo senior, who had immigrated to Canada from Italy, worked as a tailor, and the family lived on a small house on Queens Avenue in the town of London. Lombardo was the eldest of seven children—five boys and two girls—born between 1902 and 1924. Lombardo’s parents demanded that their children not speak Italian at home, believing that they would be better able to integrate into the English-speaking culture of pre-World War I Canada if they were not burdened with a dependence on the Italian language.

Of the Lombardo children, five—Guy, Carmen, Lebert, Victor, and Rose Marie—would establish musical careers. Lombardo once said that his father wanted all his children to have a education in music, and because Guy was the eldest he was given violin lessons. Since the violin player was always the band leader, the young Lombardo was given the role he would continue to play later in life.

Early Gigs
Lombardo’s band got its start in 1914 when brother Carmen, playing flute, joined Guy on violin to perform a duet for the local Mother’s Club. Eventually brother Lebert joined the group, along with pianist Freddie Kreitzer. On June 22, 1919, the band was scheduled to play its first professional gig at the Lakeview Casino in Grand Bend. After the club’s owner refused to give the band members an
hour off for dinner—claiming that his customers paid to hear the band perform, not to watch them eat—Lombardo’s father took his sons home and advised them to find another line of work. However, the affair smoothed over and within several months the Lombardo brothers had quit school and were working as full-time musicians. They got no argument on that score from their father, who had always told them that “music is a light load to carry.”

In the spring of 1923 the Lombardo brothers were hired as the house band for the Hopkins Casino at Port Stanley on Lake Erie. Carmen Lombardo, who was by this time playing the saxophone with a Detroit band, quit so he could rejoin his brothers. After the band started its second season at London, Ontario’s Winter Gardens, the 21-year-old Guy decided that the group was wasting its time in Canada. Within a few weeks he obtained the name of a Cleveland, Ohio, booking agent and talked his way into a one-night stand at an Ohio Elk’s Club. Meanwhile, he let his friends back in London think he had booked an American vaudeville tour.

Following the band’s final performance in London, Ontario, on November 24, 1923, the 10-member group was seen off at the train station by about 100 well-wishers. In spite of the lateness of the hour, many were willing to lose sleep to wish the local band good luck. By the time the band returned to Ontario in 1927 as Guy Lombardo and the Royal Canadians, Lombardo was poised for success.

**Career Heated Up**

In the winter of 1923, as Lombardo drove south to Ohio, the odds that his band would make it big were slim. Fiercely competitive, the U.S. music industry was particularly unforgiving of any new talent that had not established a unique, distinctive sound. Although composed of talented musicians, Lombardo’s jazz band did not yet have a sound that set it apart from the competition. Recalling advice from his father, who had urged his sons to play music that people can “sing, hum, or whistle,” the three Lombardo brothers began performing dance music with pronounced melodies but without arrangement or improvisation. The music appealed to the well-to-do audiences of the late 1920s, and reportedly to even a few Prohibition-era gangsters.

Although the Lombardo brothers were convinced that, given the competition, they would never succeed by playing beat-heavy, improvisational Dixieland jazz, the other members of the band felt their creative abilities were stifled by switching to dance music. Although they were at first reluctant to go along, the Lombardos won them over. Guy Lombardo was particularly enthusiastic when he discovered that brother Carmen produced a unique tone on the saxophone that blended extremely well with the sound of the band’s other two sax players. The result would be money in the bank.

Although Lombardo initially had to pay for air time on U.S. radio, it was worth it when the exposure began to attract listeners. After the band began regular live broadcasts its popularity soared. Their agent then came up with the idea of dressing the band members in Canadian Mountie uniforms, but Lombardo balked and countered with a proposal of his own: calling the band the Royal Canadians.

By the time Guy Lombardo and the Royal Canadians arrived at the Granada playhouse in Chicago in the fall of 1927, it had ceased to be a London, Ontario, group. From the Granada it went on to land an engagement at the city’s Palace Theatre, a gig paying $4,000 a week. The music critic for the *Herald & Examiner* described the performance as one where he listened to “the sweetest jazzmen on any stage this side of Heaven.”

In 1929 Lombardo’s band made its first appearance at the Roosevelt Hotel in New York City, later to be the home of its live broadcasts on the CBS radio network. The broadcasts eventually moved, originating from New York’s Waldorf-Astoria.

Although during the band’s heyday rumors circulated in Canada regarding hometown concerts by the Royal Canadians, the band made only a handful of appearances in the country where it began. Lombardo never forgot his friends in Ontario, however, and when Canada’s Thames River flooded in 1937 he staged a benefit for flood victims in Detroit’s Fox Theatre. The band opened this engagement with a rendition of “Home Sweet Home,” moving some in the audience to tears.

**All in the Family**

In 1942 youngest sister Rose Marie Lombardo joined the band as a song stylist. A few years later vocalist Kenny Gardner married Elaine Lombardo. Meanwhile Joseph Lombardo, one of the few siblings who had not become a musician, was hired to redecorate New York’s Roosevelt Hotel, where the band wintered for 33 years. However, another member of the family made running a family business more than a challenge. Victor Lombardo, the youngest of the musical brothers, constantly provoked fights with Guy and on several occasions he left the Royal Canadians to form his own band. Guy proved long-suffering; he repeatedly took Victor back into the fold after each of the younger Lombardo’s failed Big Band ventures.

**Critics Notwithstanding**

Despite Lombardo’s popularity, not everyone was impressed with his music. By the 1950s bobbysoxers were calling the band’s music “square.” Popular singer Bing Crosby once commented that Lombardo and the Royal Canadians had achieved their continued success with only one single arrangement. Back in London, Ontario, some took to calling Guy “Gooey Lumbago,” while others derided Lombardo as the “Schmaltz King,” “Prince of Wails,” and “King of Corn.”

Despite perhaps more than their share of derision, Guy Lombardo and the Royal Canadians outlived most of their critics. The band continued to appeal to the large numbers of listeners who appreciated pure melody. Musicians Louis Armstrong, Louis Prima, and Ella Fitzgerald each counted themselves among Lombard’s fans, and the band set a record for audience attendance at Harlem’s Savoy Ballroom. Between 1929 and 1952 Lombardo’s band had a minimum of one hit per year, 21 of which were number-one songs. As
late as 2000, the Royal Canadians remained the only dance band in the world to sell more than 100 million records.


There is no accurate count of the number of records Guy Lombardo and the Royal Canadians sold during their career, but estimates run between 100 and 300 million. In addition to his recordings, Lombardo himself appeared in several films, including Many Happy Returns (1934), Stage Door Canteen (1943), and No Leave, No Love (1946). Besides his career as an entertainer, he made a number of successful business investments, and in his after hours he was an avid speedboat racer, holding the title of national champion in the late 1940s.

Several generations of Americans heard the strains of Lombardo’s “Auld Lang Syne” resonating from New York’s Waldorf Astoria. The band’s annual New Year’s Eve Party became a tradition, setting the record for the longest running annual radio special program. In 1979 the program celebrated its 50th consecutive broadcast, having first appeared on television in 1954.

End of an Era

Each year between 1929 and 1952 Lombardo managed to place at least one record on the popular music charts, and 1953 marked the first time in a quarter century years that the Royal Canadians failed to release a best-selling record. Other bad news for Lombardo came the same year, in the form of income tax problems with the Internal Revenue Service. To deal with these dual setbacks, Lombardo signed the band up for more tours, especially back home in Ontario. By 1954, the band’s sun had almost set. Their recording of “Young at Heart” climbed to only number 24 on the charts. Rock ‘n’ roll now drove the North American music industry, eclipsing the music Lombardo specialized in.

Despite their waning fame elsewhere, Canada still had a soft spot for the band. In 1955 Guy Lombardo and the Royal Canadians performed at the London, Ontario Centennial, and the centennial organizing committee named a day in the bandleader’s honor. During the next 30 years the band made nearly 20 appearances in Ontario, even as the rest of the world was embracing the Rolling Stones and the Beatles.

Mortality and Immortality

Carmen Lombardo, who created the band’s signature sound, died of cancer in 1971. Carmen’s death left Lombardo professionally and emotionally shattered, as Guy had been closer to Carmen than to any of his other siblings. In 1974 the Royal Canadians were stung by the first-ever unfavorable review published in their hometown paper. The band made its last appearance in London, Ontario, in June of 1977 at an event where no one on the dance floor appeared to be younger than age fifty.

On November 5, 1977, Lombardo died in Houston, Texas, having reached the age of 75. In the years since Lombardo’s death “Auld Lang Syne” has remained North America’s traditional musical accompaniment to the passing of each year. The last musical Lombardo brother, Victor Lombardo, passed away in 1994.

Books


Periodicals


Online

Charles Mackerras (born 1925) is considered one of the most dynamic conductors within modern opera. He spent 30 years at Sadler’s Wells Opera during which he both presented Wolfgang Amadeus Mozart (1756–1791) operas in their intended form, but sung in English, and introduced the work of Leos Janacek, the Czech composer, to the West. He also has specialized in presenting operas from the Baroque period. He is said to have conducted more operas than any other British conductor actively working. He is equally renowned for his work with orchestral pieces.

From Oboe, Checked out Czechs as He Pursued Conducting

Alan Charles Mackerras was born on November 17, 1925, in Schenectady, New York, to Australian parents—Alan Patrick Mackerras and Catherine Brearcliffe. His father, an electrical engineer, was pursuing a scholarship at General Electric in Schenectady at the time. He and his parents returned to Australia, and Mackerras was raised and educated in Sydney. He studied oboe, piano, and composition at the New South Wales Conservatorium of Music in Sydney. He became principal oboist of the Sydney Symphony Orchestra in 1943 at the age of 21. It was during this period that he first began conducting.

Mackerras moved to Britain, where he performed with the Sadler’s Wells orchestra and began studying conducting with Michael Mudie. Mackerras married Helena Judith Wilkins, a clarinet player who was also with the orchestra, in 1947. They would have two daughters. He successfully applied for a British Council Scholarship to study conducting with Vaclav Talich at the Prague in 1947.

“In those days, the only way you could study Slavonic arts or culture was to go to Czechoslovakia,” Mackerras said in an interview with Opera News. “The Iron Curtain really was iron.” He says he would have stayed, but for the fact that Communists came into power in February 1948. “[T]hey became exceedingly suspicious of foreigners. The Czechs hated anything German at that point, even Beethoven—though they still considered Mozart an ‘honorary Czech’ because of his love of their country and his famous opera performances in Prague.”

As Stephanie Von Buchau in Opera News notes, “The year Mackerras spent in Czechoslovakia changed his life. He learned Czech and discovered Janacek.” Mackerras told her: “Of course I knew [Antonin] Dvorak ([1841–1904]) and [Bedich] Smetana ([1824–1884]), but even in Prague in 1947, Janacek was considered an eccentric.” Talich introduced him to Janacek works including Kat’a Kabanova and Jenufa. “I was determined to propagate this composer when I returned to London, and I found a willing victim in my boss at Sadler’s Wells. He helped with the English translation—everything at the Wells was sung in the vernacular then—and in 1951 we produced Kat’a Kabanova, the first Janacek opera ever heard in Britain.”

Debuted on Podium in London

Mackerras had become the conductor at Sadler’s Wells Opera in 1948; he made his conducting debut with Die...
“historically informed” performances. This requires great scholarship on the part of the conductor who must uncover and discover how the composer intended the piece to be played and how it would have been played in the era when it was written. He had begun this work in the 1950s. His 1959 recording of George Frederick Handel’s (1685–1759) “Fireworks Music” with its original wind band instrumentation was the first of this type of work he had undertaken to be noticed.

“I was always interested in how things were performed in their day. And the first thing that made me really aware of it is that I used to have a recording of the Handel Water Music conducted by Sir Hamilton Harty. I knew it was an arrangement, but I had never been aware of how much of an arrangement it was,” he told Classics Today. “But when I was a teenager I got to look at a facsimile of the score and I saw immediately that what we were hearing bore little relationship to what Handel had actually written. And with the Fireworks Music, I saw the original orchestration and I thought ‘My God, I wonder what this must sound like!’ You know, the original has 24 oboes, and all those bassoons and horns.”

The recording was made to commemorate the Handel bicentenary. Mackerras recalled “we got every wind player in London to come for one session, in the middle of the night, and have a go at it. It was all edited and issued very quickly, in just a few days, and I must say I was a bit frightened that it would sound horrible, but of course just the opposite occurred. It sounded marvelous. I was very relieved, let me tell you! We also did the Concerti a Due Cori on the other side of the LP, and even these works hadn’t been played at all since Handel’s day. . . . There’s still quite a lot we don’t know about what really went on in those days.”

Continuing with this idea, in 1965, Mackerras presented Mozart’s Le Nozze di Figaro at Sadler’s Wells Opera in England, “in English, with embellishments and appoggiaturas, those eighteenth-century expressive devices that had fallen into disuse for a century and a half,” notes Stephanie Von Buchau in Opera News. Mackerras himself told her, “I’m sure that we went too far in that Sadler’s Wells Figaro, exaggerating in an effort to get people’s attention, but there wasn’t too much opposition. The ECO was eager for fresh ideas, and the singers who performed with us on the BBC’s Third Programme all wanted to learn correct style. Naturally, the BBC was also sympathetic to the cause of historical performance practice, but I think we turned the corner when I persuaded Elisabeth Schwarzkopf to sing ‘Voi che sapete’ in the highly ornamented version by Domenico Corri. . . . The eighteenth-century Viennese loved coloratura.”

**Conducted Career Around the World**

Mackerras accepted an invitation to conduct the Hamburg State Opera in 1966. During his tenure as principal conductor with that company, he reportedly conducted many works for the first time, some without rehearsal. Among the critically acclaimed productions Mackerras mounted were Igor Stravinsky’s (1882–1971) The Rake’s Progress, Boris Gudonov by Modest Petrovich Mussorgsky.
Mackerras was appointed music director of Sadler’s Wells, whose name was changed to English National Opera, in 1970. He held the post until 1977 or 1978 (published accounts give varying dates). While with the company, he conducted more than 40 operas, which included some works not in the standard repertoire such as Handel’s Semele and Gaetano Donizetti’s (1797–1848) Maria Stuarda, the latter of which was presented as “Mary Stuart” in English. He also established himself as “a major conductor of both Verdi and Wagner,” according to International Dictionary of Opera. In this same general time period, he was the chief guest conductor for the BBC Symphony Orchestra.

Mackerras was rarely idle. He conducted Christoph Willibald Ritter von Gluck’s Orfeo et Euridice in his New York Metropolitan Opera debut in 1972. He returned to Australia in 1973 to christen the Sydney Opera House. He conducted both the inaugural concert and Die Zauberflote; Mackerras was appointed as the Sydney Symphony Orchestra’s conductor in 1982, a post he held until 1985.

He has also been music/artistic director of Welsh National Opera (1987–1992), a guest conductor for the Royal Liverpool Philharmonic Orchestra, and worked with the Scottish Chamber Orchestra, San Francisco Opera, Prague Chamber, and Czech Philharmonic orchestras.

**Enjoyed Vibrant Recording Career**

By virtue of his chosen profession, Mackerras has had an active recording career. His body of work includes not only operas but also orchestral pieces such as the complete Mozart symphonies and concertos. He also has recorded the complete symphonies of Brahms and Beethoven, as well as major works by composers including Handel, Dvorak, Shostakovich, Sibelius, Holst, and Haydn, among numerous others. These works have been recognized with various awards. His recording of Britten’s Gloriana, for example, was named Gramophone Magazine’s Best Opera Recording in 1994.

According to International Dictionary of Opera, Mackerras says he attempts “to hit the happy medium between being a musician and a musicologist.” Yet, he does not like to be confined to any particular specialty. “Generally I prefer conducting works by unusual composers or unusual works by famous composers. I’m always interested in something new.”

Mackerras also had a passion for Gilbert and Sullivan operettas in his youth which he has explored professionally. “When I was young we used to sing Gilbert and Sullivan operettas constantly in all-school productions at school. We sang all the parts, women’s too, in the same treble voices, so I got to know them all very well,” he told Classics Today. “But I used to think how nice it would be if some of these great tunes were somehow arranged into a big symphonic suite.” The result was “Pineapple Poll,” which also became a ballet. “That became a tremendous success, and it was wonderful fun to do. It also opened a lot of doors for me as a conductor because I was able to play the work all around England. Actually, my first recording with the Sadler’s Wells orchestra was of ‘Pineapple Poll.’ I still perform it.”

**Continued Career, Much Lauded**

In a 1995 interview with Opera News, Mackerras said he would take no more permanent positions. He contended to do the best possible work as a music director, one must live in that city to work closely with the orchestra. He continues to be based in London. “Today most conductors are fly-by-nighters, if I were to take a music director’s job, with all my commitments, I’d end up being a fly-by-nighter too. Besides, I don’t like being a pennant [sic] conductor. I’d much rather be freelance!”

Mackerras has received numerous honors throughout his career. He was knighted in 1979 and has been given numerous honorary degrees by universities in the United Kingdom and Czechoslovakia. Mackerras has been conductor emeritus of Welsh National Opera since 1992 and of the San Francisco Opera since 1996. He was appointed to a similar post with the Scottish Chamber Orchestra in 1995. He observed his 70th birthday with in 1995 celebrations with the San Francisco Opera, the Scottish Chamber Orchestra in Edinburgh, and the Welsh National Opera in Cardiff.

Mackerras has conducted more operas than any other active British conductor according to International Dictionary of Opera. This reference cites as exemplars works including Wagner’s Ring Cycle, Aida and Carmen, “his Handel is vital but there has been all too little of it . . . and his Strauss is luminescent.”

**Books**


**Periodicals**


**Online**


**Kunio Maekawa**

Prominent among modern Japanese architects, Kunio Maekawa (1905–1986) served an apprenticeship in France during the 1930s. Well-known for his use of architectural concrete, his post-World War II
contributions included designs for prefabricated structures and high-rise apartments.

Kunio Maekawa was born in May 14, 1905, in Niigata on Northwest Honshu Island. The eldest of three children, he was well bred; the families of both of his parents were descended from the Samurai. His father, Kan’ichi Maekawa, was descended from the li clan of Omi. A civil engineer by profession, Kan’ichi worked in the Japanese Home Ministry, eventually becoming a high-ranking official, called chokuninkan, (imperial appointee). His mother, of the Tsugaru clan of Hiroasaki, was a daughter of Konroku Tanaka. The family lived in a wooden house in the snow country of Niigata before moving to Tokyo’s Hongo district.

Student Years

Maekawa attended elite schools and completed Tokyo First Middle School in 1918, after skipping the fifth year. In 1922 he enrolled at the First Higher School, graduating in 1925. Clearly talented, Maekawa studied architecture at Tokyo Imperial University from 1925 to 1928. There he developed into an avid reader of French architectural publications. In March 1928 Maekawa wrote his university graduation paper on the Swiss modernist architect, Charles Edouard Jeanneret, most commonly known as Le Corbusier. For his final project Maekawa submitted a futuristic design for a ten-kilowatt radio station. It was a new concept in Tokyo, where radio was a new technology that had been introduced only three years prior in 1925. This academic design of Maekawa remains in the collection of Tokyo Imperial University Architecture Department.

Immediately after his graduation ceremony on March 31, 1928, Maekawa left for Paris under an arrangement orchestrated by his mother’s brother, Naotake Sato, who was a member of the Japanese foreign service. Sato was stationed in Paris at that time and opened his home to Maekawa who arrived in the city on April 17. Under the arrangement, Maekawa went to work for Le Corbusier in Paris, entering the architectural office as an unpaid draftsman, as was customary for newcomers to the prestigious firm. Already infatuated with the European modernist movement, Maekawa’s association with Le Corbusier proved to be an unparalleled opportunity to work with many prominent avant-garde designers. In Paris he worked with Alfred Roth, Pierre Jeanneret, and Charlotte Perriand who was Le Corbusier’s premiere interior designer at that time. Maekawa held his own intrinsic affection for many aspects of the modernist movement in his native Japanese, and this two-year sojourn in Paris fueled his interest.

As an entry-level volunteer, Maekawa learned to conform to the rigorous standards espoused at Le Corbusier’s office, and in June 1928 he assisted Le Corbusier with Cité Mondiale (Mundaneum) in Geneva, a structure intended for the League of Nations. Apart from his obligations to Le Corbusier, Maekawa entered various design competitions independently. Individually he submitted a design for the Nagoya City Hall, but it was not one of his strongest works. Some said that the entry resembled a parking garage because of the structure’s prominent side wings, which indeed served as covered parking areas. Additionally he joined with two of his Paris colleagues, Ernest Weissmann and Norman Rice, in entering a competition for the design of a public office building in Zagreb, Croatia, in 1929. After his return to Japan, in the fall of 1930 four of Maekawa’s independent designs were included in a Tokyo exhibition, and in December of that year, three of Maekawa’s designs were featured in the Japanese publication Kokusai kenchiku.

Maekawa departed Paris on April 6, 1930, traveling through Moscow and arriving in Tokyo on April 16, coincidental with Le Corbusier’s emergence among the architectural community of Japan. Japan during the years following World War I remained in a period known as Meiji Restoration that was characterized by a revival of traditional architectural styles. These traditional styles were tempered however by the use of updated, alternate building materials. After his arrival in Tokyo, Maekawa began to work with Bohemian architect Antonin Raymond in August 1930, according to an arrangement by Professor Riki San. This intervention by San was especially fortuitous for Maekawa because architectural commissions at that time were in great scarcity. Antonin, however, was involved in the design of the Imperial Hotel.

As a member of Raymond’s firm, Maekawa served as architect-in-charge for the Viscount Soma residence. In this instance he applied an oblong, horizontal design reminiscent of a residential villa design by Le Corbusier from the 1920s. Maekawa’s design for the Tokyo City Hall competition of 1932 displayed the influence of the Frenchman August Perret. From 1932 to 1934 Maekawa worked in his first independent design, for a Kimura Manufacturing research facility in Hiroasaki. This research structure has since been altered and re-adapted to other uses, and the oblong housing design of Viscount Soma, enhanced by a roof garden, was seen again in the design of the Akaboshi Tetsu housing project in 1934.

Independent Architectural Firm

Still working as a project team member for Raymond in the early 1930s, Maekawa in 1935 left that firm and established his own company out of a home office; he later moved the operation to the Ginza in Tokyo. Makoto Tanaka, Terashima Kotaro, and Kosaburo Sakitani joined Maekawa in this venture. Among their earliest projects were Hinomoto Hall of 1936 and Maekawa’s 1937 design for the Memorial Hall to the Founding of the Nation competition. The use of architectural concrete, extremely large panes of glass, and cast-in-place ceramic tiles characterized much of Maekawa’s work during this period. Having learned the use of these new construction materials from Raymond, Maekawa by the 1960s had matured in his use of ceramic tile work, and it had become a signature characteristic of his designs. Although a dearth of commissions characterized the decade of the 1930s, Maekawa maintained solvency, in part with the release by his father of a trust fund that was earmarked for Maekawa to purchase his first residence.
In 1937 he designed two houses for Sato, including a main residence in Tokyo and a vacation house in Karuizawa. These structures, along with a third residential design for another member of the Foreign Ministry, aspire to the modern style through the use of overlapping roof segments that create an interplay between planes, while maintaining an overall appearance in the traditional style.

Maekawa’s largest single project during this pre-war period was the employee dormitories for Kako Commercial Bank in 1939. For this he opened a satellite office near the project site in Shanghai. Also ongoing from 1938 to 1941 was a project to build three technical schools for mining and manufacturing in the state of Manchuria. It was common practice that contract awards were driven largely through political clout, and designs were subject to the whims of politicians accordingly. Despite his distaste for the design limitations inherent in this system, Maekawa was nevertheless fortunate to be well connected and able to secure contracts as a result. With the expansion of World War II during the 1940s Maekawa’s ability to procure contracts was limited largely to military projects. Functionality and cost constraints were the main consideration for these projects, with uninspired aesthetics that deferred to technical expertise.

After nine years of operating from an office at his home he opened an office in Yotsuda in Tokyo in 1944 and named the establishment Maekawa Institute of Design (MID) Sekkei Kenkyujo. The company was known alternately as MIDO Dojin or the MIDO colleagues. When this first Tokyo office was destroyed during an air raid in May 1945, he moved again to a headquarters in his home in Meguro. There he operated with a skeleton staff because many of his associates by that time had left for the military.

Also associated with his operation Maekawa founded the MIDO Research Institute in 1947. Under the auspices of MIDO he published Maekawa Kunio Kenchiku Jimusho sakuhin shu (the Collected Works of the Maekawa Kunio Architecture Office) that year. In the wake of losing his office, this publication had the effect for Maekawa of providing closure to the wartime and postwar eras.

**Postwar Maekawa**

In 1946–1947 Maekawa designed the first branch of the Kinokuniya Bookstore. Built in Shinjuku, Tokyo, it was the first of 30 projects that he would complete for that vendor. A Keio University Hospital project in Tokyo lasted from 1947 to 1948, and in 1948 he began publication of a new magazine called Plan. Two issues were published in all.

Having survived the difficult war years, Maekawa focused on the mass production of prefabricated structures and did considerable writing on that topic. He took his inspiration in part from Henry Ford’s assembly line theories of mass production for making products accessible to the less wealthy working class. This project was spurred when a major military provider, Manchurian Aircraft Company, ceased operation after Japan’s defeat in World War II. At Maekawa’s suggestion the Manchurian plant at Kayama in Tottori—called San’in Manufacturing—was converted by its parent company, Nissan Heavy Industries, to a construction facility for housing components.

A new company was formed, called Prefabricated Maekawa Ono Kaoru San’in Manufacturing (PREMOS); it was named in part for Kaoru Ono, a professor at Tokyo University and a colleague of Maekawa. In 1946 under the guise of the new company the first two PREMOS units were completed. A small model was manufactured, called #7, which afforded 52 square meters of floor space, with living, dining/kitchen area, and one bedroom and toilet. The first units became a club for the soldiers in occupied Tottori. Other PREMOS units were adapted as housing for railroad workers in Shimonoseki, and one became a coffeehouse in the Ginza; some were used as private homes. Eventually an entire community was planned for the miners at Kokkaido, the site of the Kayanuma mine. The community was to be comprised of 400 PREMOS #73 structures, of which 200 were ultimately constructed.

After five years, 1,000 units had been manufactured, but the PREMOS project came to an end for lack of cost effectiveness. It was nonetheless the prototype for Japan’s great third millennium prefab industry, the largest and most sophisticated industry of its type in the world.

**Later Career**

Among Maekawa’s more significant structures, the Harumi Flats apartment project in Tokyo in 1959 represents one of the earliest high-rise apartment buildings in Japan. Harumi Flats, with its strong use of vertical lines, receding and projecting planes, and sculpted units on the roof, is based closely in a Le Corbusier design. More notable still is Maekawa’s 1961 design for the Tokyo Metropolitan Festival Hall. Recognized as Maekawa’s grandest and best known work, the Festival Hall has been praised for the humanism that finds expression in Maekawa’s various choices of materials such as the dramatic use of marble sheeting on the interior walls. Overall the design pays tribute to rural Japan and draws inspiration from the classic minka (farm house) structure.

The influence of Le Corbusier on Maekawa was seen again in the roof sculptures, ramping, and pyramid forms of his design for the Gakushuin University Library building in 1964, the second of two buildings that he designed at that school, beginning in 1960. Maekawa’s designs were seen in the Japanese pavilion at the World’s Fair at Brussels in 1958 and again in New York City in 1954 to 1965. He contributed a number of articles to literary journals in French, English, and German during the 1960s and 1970s.

His numerous projects of the early 1980s included the Kumamoto Prefectural Concert Hall and Theater (1982), the Kunitachi College of Music Concert Hall (1983), and the Niigata Municipal museum (1985). Many of the later designs that are attributed to Maekawa were overseen largely by the younger associates of his firm.

Kunio Maekawa died on June 27, 1986, in Tokyo.
Annie Turnbo Malone

Annie Turnbo Malone (1869–1957) was an African American entrepreneur and philanthropist during the early 20th century. She manufactured a line of beauty products for black women and created a unique distribution system that helped thousands of black women gain self respect and economic independence. However, her contributions to African American culture are often overlooked because her business empire collapsed from mismanagement.

One of her students, Madame C.J. Walker, created a similar enterprise and is largely credited with originating the black beauty business, a feat that rightly belongs to Malone.

Malone was born Annie Minerva Turnbo born on August 9, 1869, in Metropolis, Illinois. She was the tenth of 11 children of Robert Turnbo, a poor farmer, and Isabella Cook Turnbo. Her parents died when Malone was young and an older sister raised her in nearby Peoria. Although she did attend school, frequent illness caused her to withdraw before completing high school. As a young girl, Malone enjoyed fashioning her own and her sisters’ hair. She became aware of differences in hair texture and sought a way to straighten hair.

Started Hair-Care Business

During the late 19th century, African American women used soap, goose fat, and heavy oils to straighten their hair. Chemical straighteners often damaged the scalp and hair follicles. While living in Lovejoy, Illinois, around the turn of the century, Malone developed a chemical product that straightened African American hair without damage. She claimed to have studied chemistry and to have been influenced by an aunt who was trained as an herbal doctor. She expanded her hair care line to include other beauty products, including her popular Wonderful Hair Grower. Some historians also credit Malone with developing the pressing iron and comb around this time. Malone sold her products locally.

In 1902, Malone moved her business to St. Louis, Missouri, where she hired and trained three assistants. As black women, they were denied access to traditional distribution systems, so they sold the products door-to-door and provided free demonstrations. In 1903, Malone married a Mr. Pope, but she divorced him after a short time because he tried to interfere with her business.

During the 1904 World’s Fair, Malone opened a retail outlet. Visitors to St. Louis responded favorably to her products, prompting her to embark on an innovative marketing campaign aimed at distributing the product nationally. In addition to going door-to-door, she and her trained assistants traveled to black churches and community centers, providing free hair and scalp treatments. She held press conferences and advertised in black newspapers. Malone traveled throughout the South at a time of racial discrimination and violence, giving demonstrations in black churches and women’s clubs. Everywhere she went, she hired and trained women to serve as local sales agents. They, in turn, recruited others. By 1910, distribution had expanded nationally.

One of her Malone’s recruits was Madame C.J. Walker, a former washerwoman who eventually founded her own company with similar beauty products and distribution. She is widely regarded as the most successful black entrepreneur of the early 20th century and founder of the black beauty business in the United States. However, historians credit Malone with having developed her products and distribution system first. Walker sold her own “Wonderful Hair Straightener,” which Malone called a fraudulent imitation. As a result, Malone trademarked Poro, a new name for her product and merchandising systems in 1906. (Poro is a West African word for an organization dedicated to disciplining and enhancing the body spiritually and physically.)

In 1914, Malone married Aaron Eugene Malone, an ex-teacher and Bible salesman. Her husband became the company’s chief manager and president. The young couple did more than just manufacture beauty products. They also provided a way for African American women to improve themselves on many levels. At a time when few career opportunities were available, Poro offered them a chance at economic independence. Malone believed that if African American women improved their physical appearance, they would gain greater self-respect and achieve success in other areas of their lives.

Committed to Black Community

Malone was committed to community building and social welfare. To that end she built Poro College in 1918, a complex that included her business’s office, manufacturing operation, and training center as well as facilities for civic, religious, and social functions. The campus was located in St. Louis’s upper-middle-class black neighborhood and served as a gathering place for the city’s African Americans, who were denied access to other entertainment and hospitality venues. The complex, which was valued at more than $1 million, included classrooms, barber shops, laboratories, an auditorium, dining facilities, a theater, gymnasium, chapel, and a roof garden. Many local and national organizations, including the National Negro Business League, were housed in the facility or used it for business functions. The training center provided cosmetology and sales training for women interested in joining the Poro agent network. It also taught students how to walk, talk, and behave in social
situations. During the early 20th century, race improvement and positive self-image were seen as a way to increase social mobility. By teaching deportment, Malone believed she was helping African American women improve their standing in the community.

By 1926, the college employed 175 people. Franchised outlets in North and South America, Africa, and the Philippines employed some 75,000 women. Malone had become a wealthy woman. It is believed that she was worth $14 million at one point during the 1920s. Her 1924 income tax totaled nearly $40,000. However, despite her wealth, Malone lived conservatively and gave away much of her fortune to help other African Americans. She is one of America's first major black philanthropists. Malone donated large sums to countless charities. At one time, it is believed that she was supporting two full-time students in every black land-grant college in the United States. She gave $25,000 to the Howard University Medical School during the 1920s that, at the time, was the largest gift the school had ever received from an African American. She also contributed to the Tuskegee Institute. Malone was also generous with family and employees. She educated many of her nieces and nephews and bought homes for her brothers and sisters. She awarded employees with lavish gifts for attendance, punctuality, service anniversaries, and as rewards for investing in real estate.

A $25,000 donation from Malone helped build the St. Louis Colored YWCA. She also contributed to several orphanages and donated the site for the St. Louis Colored Orphans' Home. She raised most of the orphanage's construction costs and served on the home's executive board from 1919 to 1943. The home was renamed the Annie Malone Children's Home in 1946. Malone also gave generously of her time in the community. She was president of the Colored Women's Federated Clubs of St. Louis, an executive committee member of the National Negro Business League and the Commission on Interracial Cooperation, an honorary member of Zeta Phi Beta Sorority, a member of the African Methodist Episcopal Church, and a lifelong Republican.

Business Failure

Malone's generosity raised her stature in the community but contributed to the financial decline of her business. While she was spending time on civic affairs and distributing her wealth to various organizations, she left the day-to-day affairs of the business in the hands of managers, including her husband. Some of these managers were inexperienced or dishonest, eventually leading to the dismantling of her business empire.

For the six years leading up to 1927, Annie and Aaron Malone became embroiled in a power struggle over control of the Poro business. The struggle was kept quiet until 1927, when Aaron Malone filed for divorce and demanded half the business. He claimed that Poro's success was due to contacts he brought to the company. He courted black leaders and politicians who sided with him in the highly publicized divorce. Annie Malone's devotion to black women and charitable institutions led Poro workers and church leaders to support her. She also had the support of the press and Mary McLeod Bethune, president of the National Association of Colored Women. Having the support of so powerful a woman helped Annie Malone prevail in the dispute and allowed her to keep her business. She negotiated a settlement of $200,000.

In 1930, Malone moved her business to Chicago, where its location became known as the Poro block. Her financial trouble continued when she became the target of lawsuits, including one by a former employee who claimed credit for her success. When the suit was settled in 1937, she was forced to sell the St. Louis property. Malone's business was further crippled by enormous debt to the government for unpaid real estate and excise taxes. (The federal government required a 20 percent tax on luxuries, including hair-care products during the 1920s.) In 1943, she owed almost $100,000. The government was constantly taking her to court and by 1951, it took control of Poro. Most of the property was sold to pay the taxes.

Malone's business failure tarnished her image. Her former employee, Madame C.J. Walker, often overshadows Malone because Walker's business remained successful and more widely known. Walker is often credited as the originator of the black beauty and cosmetics business and the direct distribution and sales agent system that Malone developed. Many historians believe Malone deserves more credit for her devotion to helping African Americans gain financial independence and her generous donations to educational, civic, and social causes.

Annie Turnbo Malone died of a stroke on May 10, 1957, in Chicago, Illinois. She was 87. By the time of her death, Malone had lost her national visibility and most of her money. Having no children, her estate, valued at $100,000, was left to her nieces and nephews.

Books

Contemporary Black Biography, Volume 13, Gale Research, 1996.

Online


Bruce McCandless

In 1984, American astronaut Bruce McCandless II (born 1937) became the first person to leave a spacecraft in space without a tether. He flew out of the payload bay of the space shuttle Challenger on February 7, 1984, and using a jetpack called a Manned Maneuvering Unit (MMU), flew around the
vicinity of the shuttle as an independent satellite of the Earth. Also, in 1990, flying on the space shuttle *Discovery*, he participated in the deployment of the Hubble Space Telescope, which soon afterwards returned views of interstellar space never before seen.

Joined the Astronaut Corps from the Navy

Bruce McCandless II was born in Boston, Massachusetts, on June 8, 1937, and attended high school in Long Beach, California. After graduating from high school, he went on to the United States Naval Academy in Annapolis, Maryland. He graduated from the Naval Academy in 1958 with a bachelor of science degree.

Following his graduation from the Naval Academy (second in a class of 900), McCandless learned to pilot aircraft at the Naval Aviation Training Command based in Pensacola, Florida, and Kingsville, Texas. He received his Navy aviator wings in 1960 and went on to Key West, Florida, where he underwent aircraft carrier landing training flying F-6A Skyray aircraft.

Next McCandless was assigned to the 102nd Fighter Squadron flying Skyrays and F-4B Phantom II aircraft from the USS *Forrestal* and the USS *Enterprise* aircraft carriers. The latter ship participated in the United States naval blockade of Cuba in the 1960s while McCandless was serving on her.

In 1964, McCandless served as an instrument flight instructor in the 43rd Attack Squadron, based at Apollo Soocce Field at Oceana, Virginia’s Naval Air Station. McCandless continued his education at Stanford University in Stanford, California, through the Naval Reserve Officer’s Training Corps Unit. There, in 1965, he earned a master of science degree in electrical engineering.

During his time as a Navy aviator, McCandless became an expert pilot, gaining proficiency on almost a dozen aircraft, including jets and helicopters. He joined the National Aeronautics and Space Administration (NASA) astronaut corps in 1966, during the height of the space race in which the United States and the Soviet Union competed to be the first to send humans to the moon. In 1971, McCandless served on the support crew for *Apollo 14*, the third mission to touch down on the surface of the moon, and two years later served on the backup crew of the United State’s first mission to its first space station, Skylab. Also during this time, McCandless helped to develop the Manned Maneuvering Unit (MMU), which he was later to test fly on a space shuttle mission.

**Waited 18 Years for His First Spaceflight**

Eighteen years passed between the time McCandless became a member of the astronaut corps and his first flight into space. He was described by his fellow astronauts as something of a loner and appeared to be unwilling to engage in the competitive politics that many saw as a necessity for getting assigned to space missions.

A lover of the outdoors, McCandless was also an avid bird-watcher, an activity that sometimes made him the butt of jokes at the astronaut office. He proved the value of his knowledge of birds, however, after a new runway was built at the Kennedy Space Center in the middle of what had been a bird refuge. Sent to study how accidents involving birds could be avoided by NASA pilots, McCandless learned which birds were likely to nest near the runway, which birds would be frightened by aircraft noise, and in what direction they would most likely fly when startled. Armed with this knowledge, McCandless was able to advise his fellow pilots on how and at what times of the day to fly to avoid accidents with birds. Recalled moonwalking astronaut Alan Bean to Thomas O’Toole in the *Washington Post*, NASA pilots took McCandless’s suggestions “and never had an accident.”

Finally, after 18 years of waiting, McCandless got his chance to fly into space. He did so by serving as mission specialist on the STS-41B space shuttle mission, which flew February 3 to 11, 1984. He was later assigned to a second space mission, STS-31, which flew April 24 to 29, 1990.

**Performed the First Untethered Spacewalk**

The space shuttle *Challenger* lifted off from the Kennedy Space Center in Florida on February 3, 1984. This was the tenth space shuttle mission flown. The main tasks for this mission were the deployment of two communications satellites and to conduct the maiden flight of the MMU. McCandless accomplished this last task, flying each of the mission’s two MMUs for the first time, to become the...
world's first free-flying spacewalker, in effect becoming an independent satellite of the earth. Helping him in this endeavor, and using the MMUs himself, was fellow astronaut Lieutenant Colonel Robert L. Stewart of the United States Army.

To fly independently of the space shuttle, McCandless and Stewart first cycled through the shuttle’s airlock and made their way out into the spacecraft’s payload bay. There, McCandless attached the MMU, essentially a jetpack, to his spacesuit. Next, he disengaged the MMU from its berth in the payload bay, and became, as he was quoted by Thomas O’Toole in the Washington Post as saying, “the smallest spaceship in history.” Flying alongside the shuttle, he circled the globe at 17,500 miles per hour at an altitude of 150 miles.

After first putting the MMU through its paces in the shuttle’s payload bay, McCandless got the go-ahead from mission commander Vance Brand, watching through the shuttle’s windows, to take the MMU 150 feet out into space. After completing that maneuver, McCandless headed back to the shuttle, before getting the go-head to fly 300 feet from the shuttle. As he did so, he compared the sensation to flying a helicopter at 25 times the speed of sound. After returning to the shuttle’s payload bay, McCandless practiced docking the MMU to docking adaptors mounted on the payload bay walls. This was to simulate similar maneuvers that would take place when docking with satellites for future repair missions. Following McCandless’s lead, Stewart conducted his own MMU flight tests using the same MMU. These tests were equally successful, and the two headed back inside the shuttle.

**Performed an Unscheduled Test of Rescue Procedures**

Two days later, McCandless and Stewart again left the shuttle’s airlock to conduct MMU tests. This time they used a second MMU along with the first. Both MMUs were mounted in the shuttle’s payload bay. During this second venture outside of the spacecraft, or Extra Vehicular Activity (EVA), the two astronauts conducted an unscheduled test of the procedures that would be used to rescue an astronaut who had unintentionally floated away from the shuttle. This came about when a foot restraint that McCandless was using to secure himself while completing simulated repairs on a mockup of a satellite in the payload bay came loose. The foot restraint floated free of the payload bay, and shuttle commander Brand, following instructions radioed by McCandless, maneuvered the shuttle so that McCandless could reach out and retrieve the restraint. McCandless joked as he retrieved the restraint that his shuttle crew made pickups as well as deliveries.

After completing their second EVA of the mission, and before going back inside, McCandless and Stewart took a telephone call from President Ronald Reagan, who asked them what it was like working in space without tethers. Replied McCandless, according to Thomas O’Toole in the Washington Post, “The view is simply spectacular, and we’re literally opening up a new frontier in what man can do in space.”

**Instrumental in the Development of Untethered EVAs**

Forty-six years old at the time of his spacewalks, and a captain in the Navy, McCandless had been helping to develop the MMU since 1968. The device had gone through numerous design changes, and during this time McCandless had also lobbied NASA and Congress to convince them to fund it. Many decisionmakers had thought that the backpack would be too expensive and too impractical to be of use to the United States space program, but McCandless proved them wrong on his historic flight.

The first incarnation of the MMU had been flown aboard the Gemini 9 spacecraft in 1966 and was to have been tested by astronaut Gene Cernan (who later became the last person to walk on the surface of the moon). Cernan exited Gemini 9, and, attached to the spacecraft with a tether, worked his way to the back of the spacecraft, where the backpack was stowed. There he found that the design of his spacesuit restricted his freedom of movement so much that he was unable to properly attach the backpack and test it.

A redesign of the backpack was finally successfully tested inside the Skylab space station in the early 1970s. By the time McCandless strapped on his MMU in 1984, the machine had been redesigned 11 times, 9 of those times at McCandless’s instigation. The machine cost $60 million to design and build. McCandless himself participated materially in the design process, on one occasion inventing a way the backpack could be used to stabilize a satellite stranded in orbit. McCandless’s invention prompted one of his colleagues at NASA to call him a “thorough, methodical and brilliant electronics genius,” according to Thomas O’Toole in the Washington Post.

The successful tests of the MMUs by McCandless and Stewart on STS-41B were bright spots on what had been a disappointing mission up until that point. The shuttle’s primary mission was to deploy a pair of communications satellites. The release of the satellites from the shuttle’s payload bay went off without a hitch, but the booster rocket that was supposed to send the satellites into a higher orbit malfunctioned, stranding the expensive satellites in useless orbits.

After 191 hours in space, four of which he spent flying the MMUs, McCandless returned to Earth aboard the Challenger on February 11, 1984, touching down with his crewmates at the Kennedy Space Center’s shuttle runway. It was the first time a shuttle had landed at the Space Center. In 1987, between his two space shuttle flights, McCandless earned his second masters degree, in business administration, from the University of Houston at Clear Lake.

**Another Historic Space Mission**

In 1990, McCandless flew on another historic shuttle flight when the shuttle Discovery lifted off on shuttle mission STS-31 on April 24. This mission launched the Hubble Space Telescope, the pioneering orbiting observatory that subsequently returned the clearest images of the most distant objects ever observed by human beings. This mission also set an altitude record for a space shuttle of 380 miles.
The Space Telescope almost required rescuing by McCandless and fellow astronaut Kathy Sullivan. The telescope's two 20-foot solar panels failed to unfurl properly, and McCandless and Sullivan were ordered into their spacesuits and told to prepare to unfurl the solar panels manually. But, while McCandless and Sullivan waited in the shuttle's airlock for the last of the air to be pumped out so that they could venture out into the payload bay, ground controllers managed to solve the problem. McCandless and Sullivan were told to repressurize the airlock and go back inside.

After 76 orbits of the earth, during which McCandless and his crewmates spent 121 hours in space, Discovery touched down at the Edwards Air Force Base in California, on April 29, 1990. By the time McCandless retired from the astronaut corps (and the Navy as a captain), he had logged more than 312 hours in space on two separate missions aboard the space shuttles.

Hobbies for McCandless include, not surprising for an astronaut, flying airplanes and scuba diving, perhaps the two experiences that come closest to replicating the experiences of being in space without actually going there. He is also an electronics and photography enthusiast and enjoys cross-country skiing. An avid bird-watcher, McCandless is a past president of the Houston Audubon Society. He is married to the former Bernice Doyle, and they have two grown children.

Books

Periodicals
Aviation Week and Space Technology, February 13, 1984; April 30, 1990.

Online

Joni Mitchell

In her nearly four decades as a musician and lyricist, Joni Mitchell (born 1943) has spanned the fields of folk, pop, rock, and jazz with 23 albums. Her willingness to change direction without warning has frequently left fans upset, but her free spirit has endowed her creativity. By 2002, Mitchell had achieved the stature of Bob Dylan and influenced the likes of Madonna and Prince. Even Frank Sinatra recorded one of her songs.

Joni Mitchell was born Roberta Joan Anderson on November 7, 1943, in Fort Macleod, Alberta, Canada. She was daughter of Bill Anderson, a grocer, and his wife Myrtle, a schoolteacher. Mitchell moved with her parents to North Battleford, Saskatchewan, after World War II ended. At the age of nine, she and her family would move again to Saskatoon, Saskatchewan, which Mitchell today considers her hometown.

After a friend introduced her to classical music, Mitchell asked her parents whether she could study piano. Although the seven-year-old aspiring musician did in fact start piano lessons, the lessons only lasted eighteen months. By then Mitchell had had enough of the “knuckle-rapping” school of music that was then in vogue. More importantly, she had discovered that she enjoyed creating her own music more than she did learning to do piano exercises. Also at the age of 9, Mitchell contracted polio, a disease that was often fatal at the time. Cared for by her mother, she eventually recovered. Mitchell also dates her taking up smoking to this period—a habit she continues to indulge in.

In the seventh grade, Mitchell was inspired by an English teacher who encouraged her to write about things she knew and to develop her ability to convey descriptive imagery. Mitchell would later dedicate her first record album to this teacher. Unable to afford a guitar, Mitchell purchased a baritone ukulele, which she played at parties and the local coffeehouse. After she graduated from high school, she enrolled in Calgary’s Alberta College of Art. Finding the classes to be uncreative, she left after a year. Mitchell had,
by this time, become a regular performer at a club in Calgary, so it was not entirely surprising that she left in June 1964 for Toronto to pursue a career as a folksinger.

False Start

Finding success in the Toronto music scene proved to be more difficult than Mitchell had imagined. Unable to afford membership in the musician’s union, she was unable to get many performing jobs. Instead, she was forced to take a job in a department store. In February 1965, she gave birth to a baby girl who had been fathered by her ex-boyfriend from college. Shortly before giving birth, she had met a folk singer named Chuck Mitchell, who had offered to take care of her and the child. A few weeks after the birth of her daughter Joni and Chuck were married. Soon after, Mitchell gave her daughter up for adoption. (Mitchell kept the child a secret for 30 years, not even telling her parents. In 1995, following rumors that appeared on the Internet, Mitchell won a Grammy for Clouds.” In Ladies of the Canyon, Mitchell’s work. Some of her fans took particular issue with the criticisms that Mitchell levelled at society in the album. A year later, Mitchell’s Hejira (1976) found the artist vocalizing about a spiritual journey she had made. On this album a guitar, bass, and drums accompanied her. With songs written for the most part when Mitchell was traveling by car though the U.S., the album was recorded in the summer of 1976. Many of the songs dealt with Mitchell’s concerns about not having a family.

Early Albums

Mitchell’s debut album, Joni Mitchell, was released in March 1968. On the album she declined to record any of her songs that other artists had turned into hits. That December, Judy Collins’ version of Mitchell’s “Both Sides Now” would reach the top of the record charts, earning Mitchell considerable income in royalties. Instead she performed her relatively unknown folk songs. Interestingly, Mitchell’s “Both Sides Now” was written when she was only 21. This fact has amazed many people who have been struck with the deep motion expressed in the song. As Mitchell told W magazine in 2002, “When I did experience these things, I was right, so I seemed to know what I was talking about.”

In April 1969, Mitchell’s second album, Clouds, was released. It included her classics, “Chelsea Morning,” “Both Sides Now,” and “Tin Angel.” Although Mitchell was unable to get to the 1969 Woodstock rock festival due to excessive highway traffic, she chronicled the event with her song of the same name, which became a hit for Crosby, Stills, Nash and Young. In 1970, shortly before Reprise released her third album, Ladies of the Canyon, Mitchell won a Grammy for Clouds.” In Ladies of the Canyon, Mitchell ventured into increasingly complex arrangements, adding woodwinds, backup singers, and a cello to her own performance. Ladies would become her first gold album (with 500,000 copies sold).

At this point, Mitchell decided to take a year off from performing. She began traveling through Europe, visiting France, Spain, and Greece. Her subsequent album, Blue, released in 1971, featured songs she had written during her travels. Blue was also of note because it saw Mitchell alternating between acoustic guitar- and piano-based arrangements. In “For The Roses” (1972), Mitchell used pop-rock arrangements to back up her songs about the problems with being in love and the difficulties of being an artist. The album quickly climbed the charts. Looking back, Mitchell noted that she passed through her folk period rather rapidly. Her rock ‘n’ roll career was equally short-lived, probably, she said, because she was never much of a “druggie.”

In 1974, Court and Spark was released. The album found Mitchell increasingly embracing a “pop” sound, but with the addition of orchestral arrangements and jazz-inspired sounds. Court and Spark had the distinction of appearing when Mitchell was at the peak of her popularity. Her next offering, Miles of Aisles (1974), was a live rock album based on concerts she gave during the summer of 1974 at the Universal Amphitheater, backed up by the L.A. Express. The Hissing Of Summer Lawns (1975), although a top seller, evoked some of the first negative reviews to greet Mitchell’s work. Some of her fans took particular issue with the criticisms that Mitchell levelled at society in the album. A year later, Mitchell’s Hejira (1976) found the artist vocalizing about a spiritual journey she had made. On this album a guitar, bass, and drums accompanied her. With songs written for the most part when Mitchell was traveling by car though the U.S., the album was recorded in the summer of 1976. Many of the songs dealt with Mitchell’s concerns about not having a family.

Don Juan’s Reckless Daughter (1977) was followed by Mingus (1979). It is generally felt that in Mingus, which Mitchell composed with jazz great Charles Mingus shortly before his death, she failed to reach her own, and presumably Mingus’s, expectations. The news was scarcely better a year later when Mitchell released Shadows and Light (1980), which contained live versions of songs that Mitchell had already recorded in the studio on Miles of Aisles. Critics called the album a disappointment.

In December 1980, Mitchell returned to Toronto for her acting debut in a film anthology entitled Love, about women’s perceptions of love. She also contributed the title song. However, the film was never released. But there was also good news—in 1981 Mitchell was inducted into the Canadian Music Hall of Fame. She subsequently left for a six-week Caribbean vacation, during which she took time to paint.
About this time, Mitchell became embroiled in a dispute with a salmon fishing company that wanted to build a hatchery near some property she owned in Vancouver, Canada. The local newspaper sided with the hatchery, arguing that its construction would lead to more jobs, while pointing out that Mitchell was not even a full-time resident. The salmon company, for its part, claimed that Mitchell was just some Hollywood celebrity who was out to ruin its business.

The Limelight of Decline

In 1985, the all-star single, “We Are the World” was released. Mitchell, who was at the time studying yoga, later said her yoga teacher sent her to a psychic dietician who hardly allowed her to eat anything. In response, she recorded “Ethiopia” in 1985, a song about an Ethiopian who is experiencing famine. In Dog Eat Dog (1985), Mitchell complained angrily about increasing trends toward censorship, especially in rock ‘n’ roll music. The response to Dog Eat Dog was, as usual by this time, mostly negative, and the album ended up with only moderate sales. The disappointing reception led Mitchell to cancel her six-month 1986 tour. She instead stayed home and painted.

But there would be bright spots too. In the fall of 1990, the Los Angeles Theater Center put on a revue with five singers performing the songs of Mitchell. The show ran for three months. Then in the early part of 1991, a traveling exhibit of Mitchell’s paintings made the rounds in Europe. In Night Ride Home, released the same year, Mitchell made do without any guest artists, and her vocals came across as deep and rich. Turbulent Indigo (1994) saw Mitchell return full circle in a melancholy mood to her earlier work.

In February 1996, Mitchell received the Orville H. Gibson Award for best Female Acoustic Guitar Player, even though she had by that time switched from acoustic to electric guitar. The Rock and Roll Hall of Fame inducted Mitchell in 1997. On Taming the Tiger (1998), Mitchell played a computerized guitar to produce a sound unlike anything she had achieved before.

Past Prime

With Both Sides Now (2000), Mitchell’s voice came across as ravaged from her years of smoking. The album could not be salvaged even with the backup of a large orchestra conducted by Vince Mendoza. Travelogue (2002) once again saw Mitchell performing well past her prime. On the album, she recorded some of her old songs with the backup of the London Symphony Orchestra, Wayne Shorter, and Herbie Hancock. The album had few admirers. Part of the problem was that by 2002, Mitchell’s voice no longer had the three-octave range of her youth. While her cigarette smoking had contributed, it was also as Mitchell told W magazine, “I don’t take good care of my voice.” But she added that she would rather sound gravelly like Louis Armstrong than pitch-perfect like Streisand.

Parting Shots

Following the release of Travelogue in 2002, Mitchell took aim at the music industry, calling it a “corrupt cesspool,” while announcing her decision to stop recording. Mitchell also said that musicians today are made, not born. She told W magazine, “The artists don’t have to play anything—they can cheat, buy songs and put their name on them, so they can build the illusion that they are creative. And because [the record companies] made you, they can kiss you off. Me, I don’t sell that many records, but they can’t kiss me off so easily.” As she notes, her records have rarely sold large numbers. During her remarkable career she had only one Top 10 record (“Help Me”), and that was in 1974.

In November 1982—although the dates vary—Joni married bass player and sound engineer Larry Klein. Although they separated in 1994, they have continued to collaborate professionally. Besides her marriages to Chuck Mitchell and Larry Klein, Mitchell has been romantically linked to David Crosby, Graham Nash, James Taylor, Warren Beatty, and Jackson Browne.

Books


Periodicals


Online


Kenji Mizoguchi

Kenji Mizoguchi (1898–1956) was a Japanese film director most noted for exploring both personal and broad societal issues such as the status of women. He is, according to The Yomiuri Shimbun “regarded as the dean of Japanese filmmaking.” Gary Arnold, writing in The Washington Times, called his work “a substantial but curiously fragmentary and haunted body of work.” Arnold says his films extract “extraordinary eloquence and pathos from stories of human abandonment, struggle and loss.”

Early Life Fraught with Sorrows

Mizoguchi’s topic selection is seen as reflecting his personal life, which was filled with seemingly constant sorrow. Mizoguchi was born on May 16, 1898, in Tokyo, Japan. He was born to a roofing carpenter and the daughter of a failed herbal medicines trader, one of three children. The family, who were living in the middle-class district of Toyko known as Hongo, was devastated
financially during the Russo-Japanese war by his father’s attempts to sell raincoats to the Army. The business failed. The family was forced to move to Asakusa and to eventually give up their daughter for adoption. The sister’s adoptive family eventually sold her into servitude in a geisha house. Mizoguchi harbored a lifelong hatred of his father.

It was after this move that Mizoguchi first had an attack of rheumatoid arthritis, a condition which ultimately affected the way he walked and persisted throughout his life. He entered elementary school in 1907, but after six years’ schooling, he was sent to relatives in Morioka as apprentice to his uncle, a pharmacist. When he returned home in 1912, Mizoguchi expected to resume his education. His father refused to send him to school, however, so he went to work, though grudgingly. As noted in an essay in World Film Directors, “the resulting sense of inferiority about his lack of formal education stayed with him all his life.”

His mother died in 1915, while Mizoguchi was still in his teens. His sister placed their father in a home and took in his brothers. These formative experiences fueled his passion for artistic expression and shaped his films. Under these frer living conditions, Mizoguchi became interested in art and theater. He moved to Kobe in 1918 to take a position as a newspaper advertising designer.

Industry Strike Provided Opportunity for Directorial Debut

Mizoguchi returned to Toyko, homesick. He moved in with a friend working at the Mukojima film studios who secured a job for Mizoguchi. Originally offered an acting job, Mizoguchi decided to become a jack of all trades—transcribing scripts and organizing sets. He was given his first opportunity to direct during a strike in 1923; he made Aini yomigaeruhi (The Resurrection of Love). He would make 10 more films before the Tokyo earthquake in September that same year. He was able to get equipment and film the destruction for newsreels.

Mizoguchi’s life was rife with emotional episodes played out with various women. A romantic involvement in 1925 interrupted his career. Yuriko Ichijo, a call girl, attacked Mizoguchi with a razor, scarring him for life. The attendant scandal resulted in his suspension from the studio. He returned to work with a new demeanor some called “his reformation.” Four years later, he married, but that relationship was marred with violence and frequent separations.

Arnold says it was that “history of family estrangement and bitterness on one hand and romantic turbulence and susceptibility on the other” that “conspired to create a peculiarly expressive interpreter of primal passions and misfortunes in Kenji Mizoguchi.”

In 1930, Mizoguchi made his first sound film, Furusato (Home Town), which was also the first sound film in Japan. It was in 1935 that he and screenwriter Yoshikata Yoda first teamed for Osaka Elegy (1935). This creative relationship would last until Mizoguchi’s death. The film was considered his first master work, but it was a financial failure.

His next major film was made in 1938, the same year his brother died. Zangiku monogatari (The Story of the Late Chrysanthemums) is considered by some to be represent the pinnacle of Mizoguchi’s career. It is also said to be the most feminist of his films.

Made Epic Ronin

Mizoguchi drew from Japanese history for Genroku Chushingura (The Loyal Forty-Seven Ronin of the Genroku Era or The 47 Ronin, 1941 and 1942). Its script was written by Yoda and Kenichiro Hara. The sprawling epic was made in two parts and was the largest budget film at the time, costing 53,000 Yen. In a review of the re-release of The 47 Ronin in Cineaste, Diane Stevenson calls the film “the most beautiful movie ever made. . . . I’m not sure it’s the greatest . . . but it’s the most beautiful.”

The film is based on a incident in Japanese history that has become legend—revenge of Lord Asano’s loyal retainers following the death of their master, who was forced into seppuku or ritual suicide after being provoked to draw his sword in the Shogun’s palace. The story has been used frequently in theater and film. Mizoguchi’s version of this story delves into explorations of the samurai code, its ceremonies and obligations.

While filming the second half of the epic, Mizoguchi’s wife was committed to a mental asylum. He moved in with his sister-in-law.

Stevenson and other critics wonder about Mizoguchi’s choice to refrain from showing violent acts on screen in that film. “Mizoguchi has been criticized for not showing the dramatic culmination of the story, the loyal retainers finally avenging their master.” In his retelling, she says, the story does not end with the successful revenge, but “the punishment for the revenge, the collective seppuku required of the forty-seven ronin in consequence of their triumph. . . . It may be said that Mizoguchi’s propensity for pathos led him to emphasize the punishment rather than the triumph. But the crucial thing is ceremony. Ceremony is about social order, about social ordering. It is about hierarchy, and the story of the loyal retainers is a story about hierarchy. Like any other etiquette or courtesy, ceremony makes it possible to live with the humiliations of hierarchy. Seppuku is a ritual that makes suicide a social act.”

1950s Brought Awards Streak, Acclaim

During the occupation of Japan after World War II, demand for escapist entertainment and film was at its height. Mizoguchi was depressed, thinking he was tapped and his filmmaking style outmoded. The success of Akira Kurosawa’s Rashomnon was said to have provoked him into making The Life of Ohara in 1952. It was considered to be ambitious and also took Mizoguchi in a new direction. The film was made without the financial support of a studio. The film shared a Silver Lion at the 1952 Venice Film Festival with John Ford’s The Quiet Man.

Among his most enduring and popular films is Ugetsu (1953), a ghost story that plumbs the depths of the post-war Japanese psyche. Time’s Richard Corliss contrasts it with the internationally popular Gojira/Godzilla story, another post-
war film classic. Corliss says *Ugetsu* “critiques . . . [Japan’s] own blood-lust, most profoundly.” The story follows two couples through the degradation of war, “beyond pain, beyond death . . . a horror story and a haunting masterpiece.” It was awarded a Silver Lion and Italian Critics’ Award.

The complexities of *Ugetsu* are explored in a comprehensive 1993 volume by the same name, edited by Keiko I. McDonald. The book contains printed materials including the film script, the two 18th-century tales on which the film was based and critical essays.

Mizoguchi had several frequent collaborators. Among them was Matsutaro Kawaguchi, a novelist whom he knew since they met in elementary school; Shuichi Hatamoto, who worked with him between 1924 and the advent of talkies in Japan; Hiroshi Mzutani, his art director from 1933 on; producer Masaichi Nagata; and screenwriter Yoshikata Yoda. With actress Kinuyo Tanaka, Mizoguchi made 11 films.

His sets were said to have been tense. Yoda observed Mizoguchi “does not have the courage to face persons, things, and ideas that assail him. The anger and resentment which he cannot deal with makes him cry hysterically.” Actors were rarely given license to improvise. His concentration while working on any given film was said to have been legendary. According to *World Film Directors* “his working method tested the endurance of his collaborators, who nevertheless testify to its success as well as the affection he inspired.”

Mizoguchi continued prolifically. *Sansho dayu* (*Sansho the Bailiff*, 1954) shared a Silver Lion with Kurosawa’s *The Seven Samurai, Chikamatsu monogatari* (*Chikamatsu Story*), among his last films, is considered “perhaps the best-loved of all his works among his colleagues and the Japanese critics” according to *World Film Directors*.

**Left Rich and Distinctive Body of Work**

The resultant body of work Mizoguchi left has been studied and pondered by scholars and film buffs alike, mined for meaning and subtext. Much of his work shares similar themes. He used historic tales as well as the works of Guy de Maupassant, Tolstoy, and contemporary Japanese novelists. His work was often contrasted with that of contemporaries, particularly those who worked with him between 1924 and the advent of talkies in Japan; Hiroshi Mzutani, his art director from 1933 on; producer Masaichi Nagata; and screenwriter Yoshikata Yoda. With actress Kinuyo Tanaka, Mizoguchi made 11 films.

His sets were said to have been tense. Yoda observed Mizoguchi “does not have the courage to face persons, things, and ideas that assail him. The anger and resentment which he cannot deal with makes him cry hysterically.” Actors were rarely given license to improvise. His concentration while working on any given film was said to have been legendary. According to *World Film Directors* “his working method tested the endurance of his collaborators, who nevertheless testify to its success as well as the affection he inspired.”

Mizoguchi continued prolifically. *Sansho dayu* (*Sansho the Bailiff*, 1954) shared a Silver Lion with Kurosawa’s *The Seven Samurai, Chikamatsu monogatari* (*Chikamatsu Story*), among his last films, is considered “perhaps the best-loved of all his works among his colleagues and the Japanese critics” according to *World Film Directors*.

Mizoguchi’s own repository was destroyed in the 1923 Tokyo earthquake and then again in World War II. Then too, he was frequently dissatisfied with his work. Arnold says “Mizoguchi was hard-pressed to remember everything he had done—and content to leave the forgotten or unsatisfying projects to oblivion.” Hope remains among cinemaphiles those prints will be found.

**Books**


**Periodicals**

*Asia Africa Intelligence Wire* (From *The Yomiuri Shimbun/Daily Yomiuri*), December 5, 2002.
*Cineaste, Summer* 2000.
*Village Voice*, September 17, 1996; September 24, 1996.

**Gilbert Murray**

The Australian-born British scholar Gilbert Murray (1866–1957) first made a name for himself as an innovative scholar of Greek literature. He taught at Oxford and Glasgow Universities and translated ancient Greek texts. He applied his own unique approach to translating the works of the ancient Greek masters—including Aeschylus, Sophocles, Euripides, and Aristophanes—and in the process generated
new interest for Greek drama on the contemporary London stage. Murray was also a staunch advocate for world peace, and he gained international renown for his efforts in establishing the League of Nations and the United Nations.

Early Life and Career

The future renowned British scholar and political activist Gilbert Murray was born George Gilbert Aimé Murray on January 2, 1866, in Sydney, New South Wales, Australia. When he was 11 years old, he moved with his family to Britain. He attended Oxford University and graduated at the top of his class in 1887.

In 1888, he became a fellow at Oxford. From 1889 to 1899, he was a professor of Greek at the University of Glasgow. Only 23 years old when he started at Glasgow, he was one of the youngest professors ever at the esteemed institution. As a professor, he was noted for his enthusiasm and insight into Greek tragedy. His lectures consisted in large part of his own translations of Greek plays. These translations would later be published and presented in the London theatre. During the period between 1904 and 1912, he directed many stage productions of Greek plays. In doing so, he helped revive the Greek theatre as a vital performance art. When translating the plays, he employed rhymed verse rather than blank verse, trying to restore the rhythmic quality that was such an important element of the ancient Greek literature. In 1908, he became Regius Professor of Greek at Oxford University. He held that position until his retirement in 1936.

Innovative Scholarship

Murray is considered one of the most important scholars of Greek history and culture. As a scholar and educator, he was noted for incorporating anthropology, then an emerging science, into his studies of Greek texts. As a result of this novel approach, he increased the academic world’s understanding of the writings of Homer as well as the ancient Greek religions. A recurrent theme in his scholarly works involved the continuing importance of ancient theology and religions to modern thought. He illustrated this by recounting the many theological trends of ancient Greece.

This approach guided his writing in such scholarly works as The Rise of the Greek Epic, which was published in 1907, and Five Stages of Greek Religion, published in 1925. In the latter work, Murray described the earliest and most primitive rites as well as the classic Greek religion that included the Olympian gods and the later religion of the philosophic schools of the fourth century B.C. By outlining Greek theology in this fashion, he postulated that Christianity resulted from a cultural clash between Greek and Eastern religions. His other well-known works include History of Ancient Greek Literature (1897), The Classical Tradition in Poetry (1927), and Hellenism and the Modern World (1953). His Euripides and His Age (1918) is considered one of the best books written about its subject. Essentially, he ripped the name down from the pantheon of great Greek authors, brought the subject down to earth, and made Euripides a compelling flesh-and-blood figure, placing the writer squarely in the context of his times while emphasizing his continued relevance. “As a playwright the fate of Euripides has been strange,” wrote Murray in Euripides. “All through a long life he was almost invariably beaten in the State competitions. He was steadily admired by some few philosophers, like Socrates; he enjoyed immense fame throughout Greece; but the official judges of poetry were against him, and his own people of Athens admired him reluctantly and with a grudge. After death, indeed, he seemed to come into his kingdom. He held the stage as no other tragedian has ever held it, and we hear of his plays being performed with popular success six hundred years after they were written, and in countries far removed from Greece.”

Commenting about Greek scholarship and the value of the ancient texts, Murray once said, as quoted in Libristory.net, “Between us and [ancient Greek authors], there has passed age upon age of men . . . who sought in the books that they read other things than truth and imaginative beauty, or who did not care to read books at all. Of the literature produced by the Greeks in the fifth century B.C., we possess about a twentieth part; of that produced in the seventh, sixth, fourth and third, not nearly so large a proportion. All that has reached us has passed a severe test and far from discriminating ordeal. It has secured its life by never going out of fashion for long at a time.”
In another scholarly book, with subject matter more anthropological than classical, *Stoic, Christian, and Humanist*, published in 1940, Murray took a look at the world’s earliest rites and religions and considered their relevance to later religions.

**Became Interested in International Affairs**

Murray not only made a name for himself as an important Greek scholar, he also became an important international figure as a peace advocate who was instrumental in the creation of the League of Nations and the United Nations.

In the early part of the twentieth century, Murray’s concerns grew to include world affairs. His interest began in earnest in 1914, as Europe became the center stage of World War I. Murray was stirred by Sir Edward Grey’s speech before the House of Parliament on August 3, 1914, that called for Great Britain’s entrance into the great conflict. Even though it meant his country was going to war, Murray recognized the “rightness” of the decision. From that point on, Murray became active in the cause of world peace. He later supported the Covenant of the League of Nations, drafted by United States President Woodrow Wilson and submitted on February 14, 1919. The document advocated the need for an international organization that could preserve peace and settle disputes by arbitration as opposed to war. The League of Nations Union itself was formed after World War I, and Murray was one of the founding members. He was appointed as a South African delegate from 1921 to 1923. From 1923 to 1938, he was chairman of the League. During World War II, he served as joint president.

During this period, he published several books about international politics, including *Liberality and Civilization: Lectures Given at the Invitation of the Hibbert Trustees in the Universities of Bristol, Glasgow and Birmingham* (1938).

In 1924, while in Geneva, Switzerland, working with the League of Nations Union, Murray took part in a discussion about effective contributions to world peace. He suggested the development of an international students’ group that would provide the intellectual, artistic, and social exchange of ideas among individuals of various national backgrounds. His suggestion led to the creation of the Committee of Intellectual Cooperation. Not only was he instrumental in its development, Murray served as chairman for eight years.

In 1934, Murray was one of the organizers of the famous League of Nations “Peace Ballot” of 1934–1935. More than 11 million British voters supported the ballot as well as Britain’s membership in the League. Murray himself considered the ballot to be the League’s greatest achievement. However, the League’s efforts did little to affect the rising tide of Fascist aggression that came out of Germany and Italy during the 1930s. Murray blamed the failures on the United States’ lack of participation up to that point. However, the eventual outbreak of World War II only caused Murray to be a more staunch advocate in his efforts toward world peace.

**Engaged in Famine Relief**

In 1942, Murray became one of the founding members of the Oxford Committee for Famine Relief, or Oxfam, as well as one of its trustees. The formation of the committee resulted from a situation in Europe directly attributable to the German invasions. In April 1941, when Greece surrendered to Germany, food and supplies belonging to the citizens were given to the German soldiers, which made a bad situation even worse. Before the invasion, the Greek people already suffered shortages due to Allied blockades intended to deplete the German army. A famine ensued and, at its peak, more than 1,500 people died a day. The situation was almost as bad in other occupied countries, including Norway, Belgium, and Poland. Not helping matters was the British government’s stance on relief for the starving countries. It firmly believed that it was the duty of the occupying enemy to feed the citizens. Britain was reluctant to send relief, because it feared that any supplies offered would be given instead to German soldiers, and that could prolong the war. However, awareness of the situation—as well as their government’s stance—grew among the British civilians. A movement was formed to appeal to the government to change its stance. Oxfam was part of this movement. Murray felt that in light of the deaths in Greece, the blockade was unjustifiable.

The committee first proposed a “controlled relief” program that included providing dried milk and vitamins for Greek and Belgian children. The response of the British War Cabinet was pretty much the same as before. The supplies, they believed, would inevitably be taken by the Germans and diverted to its workers in munitions factories and thus help the German war effort. British Prime Minister Winston Churchill was even bold enough to suggest that hunger might help provoke citizens of occupied countries to rise against their oppressors.

Oxfam officially came into existence on May 29, 1942. George Bell, Bishop of Chichester, a man known for his humanitarian positions, and Murray were among the members. Murray, because of his knowledge of Greece as well as the immediate Greek situation, was deemed a valuable advisor to the committee. The committee included academics and public figures. The committee’s goals were to gather information about famine conditions in occupied countries and provide food relief where most needed. To support the committee, a Famine Relief Fund was established that help fund relief that the government deemed permissible. Oxfam was comprised of more than 200 local committees. However, its effect was relatively modest. The British government stuck fast to its policy on the blockade and would only allow relief to Greece. After the war, Oxfam continued its efforts on behalf of the lingering needs of European countries.

Even before Oxfam was formed, Murray had attempted to help stem the growing famine. In October of 1941, the League of Nations Union created the Committee on Starvation in Occupied Countries, and Murray and Lord Robert Cecil were appointed as joint presidents. The two men sought a meeting with the Ministry of Economic Warfare to
see if anything could be done, but the government would not change its policy.

**Helped Form the United Nations**

In 1945, the United Nations Association was formed. It was a direct successor of the League of Nations Union. The purpose was to "help bring about a just, ordered and lasting peace, and better conditions of life for all mankind." Working out of the organization’s first home office in London, Murray was integral to its creation. He was part of the early leadership that also included Viscount Cecil, C.R. Attlee, Lady Violet Bonham Carter, and Churchill. Murray would, in fact, become the first president of the general counsel of the United Nations. He would also serve as its joint president from the end of the war until his death in 1957.

**Passed Away in Oxford**

Murray died on May 20, 1957, in Oxford, Oxfordshire, England. After he had retired from teaching from Oxford University he always remained close to the institution. After his death, his family, friends, and fellow Oxfam supporters created a small capital fund to establish the Gilbert Murray Memorial Lecture Fund. The lectures, held every other year, feature subjects relating to international affairs, particularly relief and overseas development.

**Online**


Pauli Murray

Pauli Murray (1910-1985), a lifelong civil rights advocate, served as a lawyer, college professor, deputy attorney general, and ordained minister. Often the first African American woman to fill the positions she occupied, Murray worked tirelessly to destroy the legal and political obstacles created by racism and racial discrimination and fought at the same time against the Jane Crow stereotypes that limited the lives of women—especially African American women—in equally vicious ways.

Born November 20, 1910, in Baltimore, Maryland, Anna Pauline Murray was, as she noted in her autobiography *Song in a Weary Throat*, the result of "several generations of a generous intermixture of African, European, and Native American stocks." The granddaughter of a slave and the great-granddaughter of a slave owner, she was the fourth of six children born to Agnes (Fitzgerald) and William Murray, a nurse and school teacher. The family was a warm and loving one, but Murray grew up deeply conscious of the Jim Crow segregation laws that circumscribed their lives and affected every aspect of their existence. "[R]ace," she recalled, "was the atmosphere one breathed from day to day, the pervasive irritant, the chronic allergy, the vague apprehension which made one uncomfortable and jumpy. We knew the race problem was like a deadly snake coiled and ready to strike, and that one avoided its dangers only by never-ending watchfulness."

**Orphaned at a Young Age**

Murray’s childhood happiness ended abruptly when her mother died of a cerebral hemorrhage in the summer of 1914. Her father, already weakened both mentally and physically from a nearly fatal bout of typhoid fever years
before, found himself unable to care for all his children. The family was split, and Murray was sent to North Carolina, where she was raised by her mother’s sisters, Pauline and Sarah Fitzgerald, and her grandparents, Robert and Cornelia (Smith) Fitzgerald. Her father’s health and sanity continued to deteriorate; three years later he was sent to Crownsville State Hospital, an asylum, where he was confined until his death in 1923.

A bright and conscientious student, Murray graduated from Hillsdale High School at the top of her class in 1926. She was determined to attend college and refused to consider any of the segregated institutions in the South. She chose Hunter College, a public women’s school in New York City—she first needed to remedy the second-class schooling she’d received in the South. She moved in with a cousin’s family in Queens and attended Richmond Hill High School to prepare for the Regent’s Exam that would allow her to enter Hunter. Studying literally around the clock, she graduated with honors a year later. The next hurdle, saving enough money to fund her studies, required Murray to work still another year, but she entered Hunter College in September of 1928.

At Hunter, her studies, particularly in anthropology, first convinced her that race and racial designations were arbitrary classifications that served only to divide people, fueling, as she wrote in her autobiography, “the poisonous notions of superior and inferior races.” Her conviction that race was an artificial distinction without a biological basis would become the cornerstone of her legal and civil rights work.

**Began Civil Rights Work**

Murray graduated from Hunter with honors in 1933, one of four African American students out of 247. She eventually found a job with the Works Progress Administration (WPA) and taught remedial reading for a year before transferring to the WPA Workers Education Project, an effort to teach workers everything from basic English and simple math to current events and collective bargaining. The job put her in contact with a much broader group of people than she had encountered before, and the experience was enlightening. She noted in her autobiography: “I had never thought of white people as victims of oppression, but now I heard echoes of the black experience when I listened to white workers tell their personal stories of being evicted, starved out, beaten, and jailed. . . . Seeing the relationship between my personal cause and the universal cause of freedom released me from a sense of isolation, helped me to rid myself of vestiges of shame over my racial history, and gave me an unequivocal understanding that equality of treatment was my birthright and not something to be earned.”

Murray’s determination to fight segregation and secure her rights as an American grew, and in 1938 she applied for admission to the University of North Carolina (UNC). As a state university, however, UNC did not admit African American students. Despite the university president’s liberal and sympathetic leanings and a recent Supreme Court decision requiring Missouri to admit a African American student to its state law school, UNC steadfastly rejected Murray’s application. She refused to accept defeat, writing letters to newspapers, the head of the university, and to both Franklin and Eleanor Roosevelt. She also asked the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP) for help, and Thurgood Marshall (a future Supreme Court justice) was assigned to review the situation. Unfortunately, the NAACP decided not to take her case, saying that since she had only recently moved back to her North Carolina she could claim neither state residency nor a right to attend UNC. They wanted an open-and-shut case.

Still searching for a job that would allow her to challenge segregation laws, Murray left the WPA and began to look for other work. While traveling through the South in 1940, however, she and a friend were jailed in Petersburg, Virginia, when they refused to move to a broken seat at the back of the bus to make room for white passengers—15 years before Rosa Parks made history in the Montgomery, Alabama. Her experience with the WPA and UNC had taught Murray well, and she again contacted the NAACP, the Workers Defense League (WDL), and Mrs. Roosevelt, all of whom became involved in the case. Murray and her friend were ultimately convicted by the courts, but the publicity surrounding the case had convinced the local authorities to drop the charges of breaking segregation laws, charging the pair instead with creating a disturbance. “Although we lost the legal battle,” Murray wrote later in her autobiography, “the episode convinced me that creative nonviolent resistance could be a powerful weapon in the struggle for human dignity.”

Following this incident Murray joined the WDL, which had taken up the death-penalty case of Odell Waller, an African American sharecropper convicted of killing his white employer. The prosecutor charged Waller with premeditated murder; Waller claimed self defense. Although the WDL’s efforts were ultimately unsuccessful (Waller was executed in 1942), the work convinced Murray to pursue a career as a civil rights lawyer. She began her legal studies at Howard University, a black university in Washington, D.C, certain that this environment, at least, would be free from prejudice.

**Discovered “Jane Crow” Discrimination**

Murray discovered to her dismay that while racial bias was not a factor, sexual discrimination against women was rampant. “In my preoccupation with the brutalities of racism, I had failed until now to recognize the subtler, more ambiguous expressions of sexism,” she recalled bitterly in her autobiography. “[I]n the intimate environment of a Negro law school dominated by men, . . . the factor of gender was fully exposed. . . . I soon learned that women were often the objects of ridicule disguised as a joke.” This only steeled her resolve to excel.

Murray did pioneering legal work while at Howard, formulating an attack on the 1896 Plessy v. Ferguson Supreme Court decision mandating “separate but equal” treatment and public facilities for African Americans and whites. Murray’s final paper for 1944 proposed a legal challenge to segregation based on the Fourteenth Amendment to the Constitution, which guarantees equal protection
under the law to all Americans. Racial distinctions, she argued, were arbitrary classifications that could not be used to determine legal rights. In addition, segregation was a devastating psychological blow and one that clearly violated the civil rights of African American citizens. In 1951 Murray expanded this thesis into a book, *States’ Laws on Race and Color*. It became the foundation of the NAACP’s groundbreaking work in *Brown v. Board of Education of Topeka, Kansas*, which effectively ended segregation in public schools.

**Denied Admission to Harvard**

Graduating at the head of her class in 1944, Murray was the recipient of a Rosenfeld Fellowship, an honor that was usually a ticket to graduate work at Harvard. At that time, however, Harvard did not admit women—and would not for nearly 20 more years. Murray, unwilling to take “no” for an answer, lodged every possible appeal and even prevailed on her earlier acquaintance with the Roosevelts—FDR sent a letter to Harvard on her behalf—but was ultimately unable to prevail, although her appeals were enough to split the board evenly on the question of whether or not to admit her.

She went instead to the Boalt Hall of Law at the University of California in Berkeley, where she earned a master of laws degree in 1945. She worked as a Los Angeles deputy district attorney before heading back to New York a year later. In 1949, while living in Brooklyn, she made her one and only bid for public office, running for a City Council seat on the Liberal Party ticket. Although unsuccessful, she came in second, prompting her to remark in her autobiography, “Although I had no desire to run for political office again, I thought of that campaign as a harbinger of things to come when, nineteen years later, Shirley Chisholm ran . . . in the same general area of Brooklyn and was elected as the first Negro woman in Congress.”

Murray chronicled her family’s history in 1956 with *Proud Shoes: The Story of an American Family*. In the introduction to the 1978 edition, she recalled that writing the book “became for me the resolution of a search for identity and the exorcism of ghosts of the past . . . I began to see myself in a new light—the product of a slowly evolving process of biological and cultural integration, a process containing the character of many cultures and many peoples, a New World experiment, fragile yet tenacious a possible hint of a stronger and freer America of the future, no longer stunted in its growth by an insidious ethnocentrism.”

She went to Ghana in 1960, driven partly by a desire to learn about her African heritage. She taught constitutional law at the Ghana Law School but soon began to be perceived as a threat to President Kwame Nkrumah’s drive for totalitarian power. With the political situation becoming ever more unsettled, she left the country barely more than a year later to pursue further legal studies; she earned a doctor of juridical science degree from Yale University Law School in 1965.

**Worked for Women’s Rights**

Murray was appointed to the President’s Commission on the Status of Women Committee (PCSW) in 1961, where, just as she had in 1951, she surveyed state laws to compile a catalog of ways in which women were kept from true legal equality. She argued that these could be overturned with a Supreme Court ruling based on the Fifth and Fourteenth Amendments to invalidate these discriminatory laws. Some of the women on the commission wanted to push for the adoption of the Equal Rights Amendment (ERA) to the Constitution (first written and proposed in 1923), but Murray firmly believed, as with race, that the Constitution—particularly the Fifth and Fourteenth Amendments already guaranteed women the rights and protections they needed. Her refusal to endorse the ERA eventually led her to part company with many feminists.

In 1964 Murray used her considerable influence to campaign for the inclusion of sex discrimination in Title VII of the Civil Rights Act. Her efforts (combined with those of others) were successful: the bill was passed by both houses of Congress and became law that year. Murray was keenly aware, however, that the statute would require active enforcement if the status of women, especially African American women, was to improve. The following year she published “Jane Crow and the Law: Sex Discrimination and Title VII” in the *George Washington Law Review*, in which she cited “ways in which the Fifth and Fourteenth amendments and the sex provisions of Title VII would be interpreted to accord women equality of rights. . . . Published . . . at a time when few authoritative legal materials on discrimination against women existed, [the] article broke new ground and was widely cited.”

**Helped Found NOW**

A year later she joined the executive board of the American Civil Liberties Union (ACLU), beginning a seven-year collaboration with fellow ACLU board member Dorothy Kenyon, who also sought legal challenges with which to attack sex discrimination. In 1966 Murray became one of the 30 founding members of the National Organization for Women (NOW), an alliance she hoped would ensure government enforcement of Title VII. The NOW feminists were determined to push for ratification of the ERA, but Murray remained convinced that the Constitution already guaranteed women’s rights. She eventually resigned from NOW’s national leadership when the organization voted to push for ratification of the ERA in 1967.

In 1968 she went to Brandeis University in Waltham, Massachusetts, as a visiting professor in the school’s American Civilization program. She expanded the program into a full-fledged American Studies department two years later and in 1971 was honored with the Louis Stulberg Chair in Law and Politics and a full, tenured professorship in American Studies.

**Ordained an Episcopal Priest**

Yet one more first remained for Pauli Murray. When she was 62, just a few years away from what many would consider retirement age, she entered the master of divinity
degree program at General Theological Seminary in New York City. She became the first American black woman to become an Episcopal priest on January 8, 1977, in the National Cathedral in Washington, D.C. She celebrated her first Eucharist in Chapel Hill, North Carolina, in the little church where her grandmother, a slave, had been baptized in 1854. “All the strands of my life had come together,” Murray recalled in her autobiography. “Descendent of slave and of slave owner ... [n]ow I was empowered to minister the sacrament of One in whom there is no north or south, no black or white, no male or female—only the spirit of love and reconciliation drawing us all toward the goal of human wholeness.”

Pauli Murray died in Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania, on July 1, 1985. In 1990 Orange County, North Carolina, established the Pauli Murray Human Relations Award to commemorate Murray’s life and work. The annual award is given to a youth, adult, and business that, according to the county’s website, “have served the community with distinction in the pursuit of equality, justice, and human rights for all citizens.

Books

Periodicals

Online


William Murray

William Murray, Lord Mansfield (1705–1793) established a body of rules regarding commercial transactions that became the foundation of British commercial law.

A n English Chief Justice of the King’s Bench for over three decades, Scottish jurist William Murray, Lord Mansfield is noted for devising the foundational rules and regulations that established equity in the British system of business law, including rules regarding bills of exchanges, promissory notes, and bank checks. Among Murray’s most lasting contributions are the creation of the marine insurance system and the concept of restitution, in which an injured party is made whole through the restoration of damaged or stolen property or its equivalent.

Born into Upper Class

Murray was born March 2, 1705, at Scone, a town in the former Scottish county of Perthshire. His father, David Murray, Fifth Viscount Stormont, was a defender of the Stuart line of succession to the English throne. As the fourth son of the viscount, William Murray was not in line to inherit the family title or fortune. Fortunately, he showed an aptitude for learning. He was admitted as a king’s scholar at Westminster School in 1719, then entered Christ Church, Oxford. Graduating from Oxford with a master of arts degree in June 1727, Murray embarked on a career in law under the patronage of a family friend, Lord Foley.

Murray was called to the bar in 1731. He was affiliated with the Tory party, which supported the Stuart claim to the throne and the preservation of traditional and social institutions against the expansion in parliamentary power advocated by the opposition Whig party. An educated, well-spoken young man, he took a trip to continental Europe in 1730. He traveled in social circles that included poet Alexander Pope.

Murray’s legal reputation became established after his appearance in several significant Scottish appeal cases. He represented the City of Edinburgh during its legal battle following the so-called “Porteous Riot” of April 1736, during which the city’s guard fired on a mob. Murray’s successful defense of the city gained him public attention throughout Scotland. His reputation was cemented in England in 1737 when he gave a stirring speech before the House of Commons on behalf of a merchant who was petitioning the crown to end the widespread piracy of English trading ships by Spanish nationals. In 1738, with his law practice thriving, Murray married Lady Elizabeth Finch, daughter of the earl of Winchelsea.
Political Moderate

The England of Murray’s day was experiencing the effects of the Industrial Revolution. Amid growing consumerism and prosperity were signs that society was polarizing into a working class and an affluent elite. The reign of Hanoverian King George II also saw an ever-increasing national debt due to involvement in foreign wars, as well as widespread political corruption and an increase in petty crime and lawlessness. Sir Robert Walpole, who had dominated the government under the German-speaking King George I, continued his efforts, following the succession of George II in 1727, to create the small, exclusive political group that evolved into the modern-day cabinet, while he assumed a role tantamount to prime minister and led the Whig party in the House of Lords.

In 1742, amid English involvement in the unpopular War of Austrian Succession, Walpole fell from power, although the Whig-led government continued to promote his agenda. That same year Murray was appointed to the position of solicitor-general, where he remained for 14 years while also serving as a member of the House of Commons for Boroughbridge. A political moderate despite his Tory affiliation, he gained a reputation for keeping his personal politics aside when dealing with legal issues. He led the prosecution of the Jacobite lords Balmerino (Arthur Elphinstone), Lovat (Simon Fraser), and Kilmarnock who, as supporters of the Scottish pretender prince Charles Edward Stuart, fought against England during the 1746 battle of Culloden Field. They were beheaded on London’s Tower Hill. As chief spokesman for the government in the House of Commons, Murray was frequently opposed by opposition leader William Pitt the elder, an influential Whig known for his barbed oratory.

In 1754 Murray became attorney-general and for the next two years was leader of the House of Commons. When a vacancy occurred in the chief justiceship of the King’s Bench in 1756, Murray was granted the post. He was also raised to a member of the cabinet and made Baron Mansfield.

As chief justice, Murray concentrated his efforts on law rather than on politics. The ruling Tory government was fast losing its supremacy. In the new Whig government, Pitt became secretary of state, propelling England into the Seven Years’ War with France, a war that Murray did not support. Five years later, in 1761, Tory leader Lord Bute successfully curtailed Whig efforts to spread the war to Spain. When Pitt resigned from government, Murray returned to the political realm.

A leading member of the Tory party, Murray was a staunch advocate of moderation in his nation’s foreign and domestic policies. He drew upon his vast learning and his understanding of law as the basis for his political stance. Despite this evenhanded approach to politics, in 1770 he was drawn into a hot debate on the issue of political libel and became the focus of satirical essays penned by the pseudonymous “Junius” (Sir Philip Francis). Junius accused Murray of using the law in an arbitrary fashion while overseeing a series of libel cases—one of which involved Junius himself.

Murray remained a member of the cabinet for 14 years, surviving several changes in political leadership. When asked to serve as chancellor in 1765, Murray declined.

Contributions to British Law

In his day, Murray was well known by the English public as a member of the House of Commons, but his lasting fame came from his tenure as England’s chief justice. He had a distinguished career and was respected for his vast learning and his fairness and propriety. A rationalist, he reduced costly delays in the legal system, renovated outdated property laws used by courts since medieval times, and protected the right to freedom of conscience for Catholics and other non-Anglicans.

Murray’s evenhandedness was notable. In one case of alleged witchcraft in which an elderly woman was accused of flying through the air, Murray ruled that the woman should be allowed to return home, and if she did so by flying, no law prevented that. In another case, Murray acquitted the leader of an anti-Catholic mob that set fire to his own house and library during the 1780 Gordon riots. Not all of his rulings gained Murray public approval. His libel ruling in favor of the government against John Wilkes, a publisher and member of Parliament, drew criticism for limiting freedom of speech.

Murray’s major contributions were his development of contract theory and his creation of regulations establishing precedents for commercial case law. Before Murray’s ten-
ure as chief justice, English common law was the only source of guidance in business matters. When cases regarding trade and other commercial matters came to trial, juries had to rely on their wits. Murray established clear-cut guidelines for business litigation. Basing his work on Roman law and contemporary laws in other nations, he set forth basic principles governing business transactions that brought English law in line with international practices. His introduction of the concept of restitution, in particular, helped to make litigation between merchants and consumers more equitable.

Murray’s efforts came at a crucial point in England’s economic history. Industrial manufacture, particularly of textiles, was replacing agriculture as the greatest area of employment, and the increase in spending on manufactured consumer goods created a wealth of new industries throughout England. The country’s newly created turnpike system allowed businessmen to expand their markets, while England’s overseas colonies provided both markets and raw materials.

Murray applied the same learning and logic to other branches of English law, though with less overall success. During debates over constitutional issues, he was frequently opposed by Charles Pratt, Lord Camden, who argued for more liberal approaches to libel, warrants, and the role of juries. Pratt also fought Murray’s advocacy of taxing the American colonies despite their lack of Parliamentary representation.

Murray’s 1772 ruling in the case of James Somerset vs. His Master, Mr. Stewart of Virginia effectively ended the institution of slavery in England, if not in British colonies. “The state of slavery is ... so odious that nothing can be suffered to support it,” Murray wrote in his opinion.

Some contemporaries resented Murray’s efforts as corrupting the traditions of the legal system, but more recent scholars have recognized him for his efforts to adapt these traditions to a changing society. Among jurists heavily influenced by his work was Sir William Blackstone, author of the highly influential *Commentaries on the Laws of England* (1769).

**Earl of Mansfield**

Although he refrained from involving himself in public office later in his life, in 1783 Murray briefly assumed the duties of speaker of the House of Lords. His term as chief justice ended with his resignation in June 1788. Murray was made earl of Mansfield in July 1792. On March 20, 1793, he died at his home in London. With no family members alive at Murray’s death, the title of Lord Mansfield went to his nephew David Murray, 7th Viscount Stormont.

**Books**
Holiday, John, *The Life of William the Late Earl of Mansfield*, 1797.

**Periodicals**
*International Monthly Magazine of Literature, Science, and Art*, August-November 1850.

**Online**
Bruce Nauman

Bruce Nauman (born 1941), an American artist whose prime medium was sculpture, worked in various other media including painting, video, and installation throughout his career. Constantly provocative, his work was uncomfortable even for admirers to view. “Nauman, beyond much dispute, is the most influential American artist of his generation,” wrote Time’s Robert Hughes in 1995. “[H]ardly a corner of the mix of idioms at the end of the 1980s, from video to body pieces to process art to language games of various sorts, escaped Nauman’s influence.” Although critics were polarized in their response to Nauman, his work could be found in museums and private collections throughout the world.

Studied Sculpture

Nauman was born in Fort Wayne, Indiana on December 6, 1941. His father was an engineer for a utility company, and the family was often uprooted. After high school, Nauman attended the University of Wisconsin to study mathematics and music. He changed his major to art, graduating in 1964. Parallels frequently have been drawn between his initial attraction to mathematics and his means of artistic expression.

Nauman undertook graduate studies at the University of California at Davis. There he was exposed to experimental art and concentrated almost exclusively on sculpture. He graduated with a master of fine arts degree in 1966. While still in school, Nauman mounted a solo exhibit at the Nicholas Wilder Gallery in Los Angeles. The show won him praise and immediate attention.

Nauman frequently used materials such as fiberglass, neon tubing, and styrofoam in lieu of traditional sculpting materials. In 1968, he signed a contract with Leo Castelli, an influential New York art dealer. That same year, he had his first solo exhibition in Europe. One of his best-known pieces from this period is “Window or Wall Sign,” a neon spiral with the words “The true artist helps the world by revealing mystic truths.” About this time he began experimenting with sound in spaces and soon embarked on using holography. Gradually, Nauman built a reputation as an exciting new experimental artist.

Works Polarized Critics, Public

His first retrospective show was organized by the Los Angeles County Museum of Art in 1972. He was still in his 30s—relatively young for such a career-spanning display. The exhibit traveled throughout the United States and was shown at museums including the Whitney Museum in New York.

Throughout the 1970s, Nauman continued to make provocative art. Critics variously described his work as humorous or painful. In fact, throughout his career, his work often defied description. It was unclear whether his pieces were sexual, aggressive, conceptual, or thought-provoking. Nauman’s work served as a litmus test for viewers, received either as a pop-psychology experiment or psychological torture, depending on the work and the reaction it elicited. In an interview in 1987 with Joan Simon, quoted in Artforum International, Nauman observed that his 1968 audio-
installation work “Get Out of My Mind, Get Out of This Room” is “so angry it scares people.”

Nauman’s departure into even more non-traditional media, especially his use of video, made him a pioneer in postmodern art. His video pieces frequently included actors involved in bizarre, repetitive acts. Other pieces invited the viewer into oddly shaped constructed spaces in which they soon felt trapped or confined. In some of these installations, the participating viewer’s panic reaction was recorded.

Tortured Artistic Experiments

Nauman worked with a variety of materials—from bronze to video to animal parts—doing sculptures, drawings, videos, and other multifaceted installations. Amei Wallach in a 1995 Newsday review of Nauman’s work, observed: “Bruce Nauman’s subject is the human condition; his range is Shakespearean. But for most of the ‘60s, like other artists of his generation, he smothered any storytelling propensities in a more baldly empirical approach.” His later work was informed by his own reading of accounts of political torture. His response was to build “experiments” that explored how various conditions might affect humans.

Nauman moved to a ranch near Galisteo, New Mexico. The land where he had a home and simple studio had been a Pueblo Indian village. He had, surmises Wallach, “overdosed on too much art-world attention.” He spent his non-working time training horses and caring for the animals on his ranch.

In 1994, Peter Schjeldahl in Art in America called Nauman “a master of black humor and intellectually cunning . . . strategies . . . the best—the essential—American artist of the last quarter-century . . . . Nauman’s art sets the mind on tiptoe and knocks the heart sprawling. When one has been exposed to enough of it, the effect is a sort of rapturous ennui.”

Played with Video Art

As if his previous themes were not disturbing or polarizing enough for American critics, Nauman selected clowns as a metaphor in several video pieces. “Clown Torture” (1987) was a video piece featuring “the hoarse voice of Nauman, dressed as a clown, in a baggy suit of vertical stripes that slyly recalls the garb of concentration-camp prisoners, shrieking, ‘No, no, no, nonono!’ while writhing and jerking on the floor,” wrote Hughes in Time.

Nauman’s work was compared to earlier experimental and conceptual artists, particularly those in the Dadaist movement, such as Man Ray and Marcel Duchamp, as well as to artist Andy Warhol. Nauman, who married painter Susan Rothenberg in 1989, cited John Cage, the minimalist composer, and philosopher Ludwig Wittgenstein as important influences.

His obsession with clown imagery in the 1980s drew comparisons to author Samuel Beckett. This prompted a show in 2000 called “SAMUEL BECKETT/BRUCE NAUMAN.” In his critique of the exhibition in Artforum International, Daniel Birnbaum said the connection between the two men was “exemplary. No other contempo-

rary artist has worked so intensively with repetitions that turn the minor absurdities of the everyday into something unendurable.”

Nauman’s later video installations included “Learned Helplessness in Rats,” a 1988 installation featuring a Plexiglas maze and loud punk rock drumming, and “Violent Incident” (1986), in which a band of video monitors displayed a domestic squabble that ends in a double homicide.

In discussing his video work, Nauman said he was aware of the different means artists in other disciplines were using to structure time in their works. These included composers Steve Reich, La Monte Young, and John Cage; Merce Cunningham, the noted dancer and choreographer; and Warhol, particularly in his films.

“[I]t was interesting for me to have a lot of ways to think about things,” he told the PBS documentary Art21. “And one of the things I liked about some of those people was that they thought of their works as just ongoing. And so you could come and go and the work was there . . . . you could go back and visit whenever you wanted to.”

Later Work

Nauman was recognized with two art awards in 1993 and 1994, the Wolf Prize for sculpture and the Wexner Prize. The Museum of Modern Art mounted a retrospective of his work in 1994. It was Nauman’s first major museum exhibition since 1972, and the critics came out swinging. “There is nothing that can be said against Nauman that hasn’t already been said in his favor,” wrote Perl. Hughes commented that Nauman made “art so dumb that you can’t guess whether its dumbness is genuine or feigned. . . . When it is really silly, the dumbness can be disarming, as it was with Nauman’s predecessor, the American Dada gagman Man Ray.”

Hughes observed that “no show was ever noisier. Go in, and you hit a wall of sound, all disagreeable: moanings and groanings; the prolonged squeak of something being dragged over a hard surface, like a knife on a plate; repetitious rock drumming.” He concluded that Nauman “has cut himself a different role: the artist as nuisance.”

Nauman’s work was called anti-art for its minimalism and the discomfort it provoked. He drew more wrath and inventive than contemporaries such as Donald Judd, Mark di Suvero, and Nam June Paik. “[T]he question that ends up sticking in our minds is why people allow him to bore them on this truly staggering scale,” wrote Perl.

In an interview with Artforum International in March 2002, Nauman explained his 2001 project called “Mapping the Studio,” his first installation work in seven years: “I have all this stuff lying around the studio, leftovers from different projects and unfinished projects and notes. And I thought to myself, Why not make a map of the studio and its leftovers?” He set up a camera in seven different positions and collected six hours’ worth of tape that was projected in the exhibit space. These tapes included images of the nocturnal habits of his cat and the studio mice.

Nauman also made other video pieces based on his daily life at the ranch. “Setting a Good Corner” was a later
piece showing how he went about building a corner on which to stretch a fence and hang a gate. The piece was utilitarian and, Nauman contended, artistic. “I wasn’t sure when I finished it if anybody would take it seriously. It turned out to be kind of interesting to watch,” he said in the PBS documentary.

Art World Split

Nauman divided opinions within the art community like few other artists. “Bruce Nauman is a great artist. There is no other kind or degree of artist he could be,” concluded Schjeldahl in Art in America. “The alternative would be to exclude Nauman from art altogether.”

But Perl contended: “What’s extraordinary isn’t that Nauman shrieks, but that people listen. . . . He’s a control freak—he hurls neon thunderbolts, builds detention chambers, shouts commands.”

His work was placed in the permanent collections of the Whitney Museum and the Museum of Modern Art in New York, in the Los Angeles County Museum of Art, and in the Wallraf-Richartz-Museum in Cologne, Germany.

Books

Periodicals
Art in America, April 1994; June 2002.
Time, April 24, 1995.

Online

Alice Neel

American painter Alice Neel (1900–1984) was known for her Expressionist portraits of both famous and ordinary people. Her notoriety grew later in her career with major showings and a larger following as her style came into vogue and feminists embraced her perspective.

Attended Art School

Neel was born in Merion Square, Pennsylvania, on January 28, 1900, the fourth of five children of George Washington, a department head for the Pennsylvania railway, and Alice Concross Hartley Neel. She grew up in Colwyn, Pennsylvania, a small town where she did not fit in. Though her family was middle class, they were from old, established American stock.

From an early age, Neel wanted to be a painter. To please her traditional parents, she was trained as a secretary and worked in clerical positions as a teenager. She found those jobs very stifling. To break out, Neel began taking art classes at night without anyone in her family knowing.

Telling her parents she was going to study commercial design, Neel entered the Philadelphia School of Design for Women (later known as the Moore College of Art) in 1921. She actually studied art at the school, the first college of art in the United States for women. During the summer of 1924, she attended the Chester Springs summer school at the Philadelphia Academy of Fine Arts. During her time in art school, she learned much about portraiture technique and trained to be a figure painter.

In 1925, she graduated from the Philadelphia School of Design for Women and married Carlos Enriquez, a Cuban artist. She moved with him to Havana. Living with his rich family, Neel painted portraits of poor people and exhibited with Cuban avant-garde artists. Neel and her husband had two daughters, Santillana, who soon died from diphtheria, and Isabella.

Neel, Enriquez, and their young daughter returned to the United States in 1927, settling in New York City. Neel settled on the fringe of the avant-garde movement. She painted Requiem (1928) and The Futility of Effort (1930), inspired by her young daughter’s death.
Suffered Nervous Breakdown

In 1930, Neel suffered a great personal loss when her husband took their daughter back with him to Cuba. He was supposed to get money from his wealthy family so that he, Neel, and their daughter could move to Paris and she could paint there. Instead, Enriquez left their daughter with his family and went to Paris alone. Abandoned, Neel suffered a nervous breakdown and was briefly hospitalized. She returned to Colwyn, tried to kill herself, and was hospitalized again.

After Neel recovered, her personal life continued to be difficult. In the summer of 1932, Neel saw her husband and daughter but then never saw him again and saw her daughter after that only rarely. Starting in 1932, she lived with a sailor, Kenneth Doolittle, in Greenwich Village in New York. An opium addict, he slashed 60 paintings and burned 300 watercolors in 1934 because he was jealous of her work.

She next lived with John Rothschild, who encouraged her work. Neel painted watercolors of their life together in the 1930s. Rothschild would pursue her on and off until his death in 1975. Neel eventually had two sons by different fathers—Jose Santiago, a nightclub entertainer, and Sam Brody, a Marxist filmmaker. Neel became a left-wing activist, protesting social conditions in the United States and international fascism.

Minor Initial Career

In the 1930s, Neel’s career as a painter began to take off. She was funded by the Public Works of America Project in 1933 and by the Works Progress Administration from 1935 to the early 1940s. She had some minor exhibitions, including one at the Contemporary Arts Gallery in New York in 1938 and another at Pinacotheca Gallery in 1944.

Neel’s painting style and subjects in this time period were not particularly in vogue. She painted people, especially her family and those who lived in her neighborhood, capturing their humor and pain. Neel also did some still lifes, landscapes, cityscapes, and narrative and genre scenes. She did much with color and interesting compositions, and her paintings had an unfinished look. At the time, however, abstract art was more in style.

A number of Neel’s portraits featured people who were suffering. Since she rarely painted on commission, she had much control over her subjects. She painted them as she wanted to paint them. She also did a number of portraits of well-known people such as author Joe Gould (1922), poet Kenneth Fearing (1935), and Communist labor organizer Pat Whalen (1935).

Neel’s cityscapes reflected the politics of the day. In 1933, she painted Synthesis of New York—The Great Depression, which featured people in the city with surrealist touches. In 1936, she painted Nazi Murder Jews (1936), which depicted a Communist torchlight parade with a figure carrying a sign with those three words.

Struggled as an Artist

During World War II, Neel lived in Spanish Harlem, struggling as an artist while raising her two sons. She did not exhibit much in the 1940s and 1950s and did even fewer commissions. Reflecting her sympathies for the working class, her subjects continued to be people in her neighborhood. Many were poor or suffering from illness or stress. The subject of T.B. Harlem (1940) was recovering from an operation to fix a collapsed lung brought on by tuberculosis. In 1950 and 1954, she had a major solo exhibition at the ACA Gallery and had another in 1951 at the New Playwrights Theatre.

By the late 1950s, there was revived interest in Neel’s work. She began seeing a psychologist who encouraged her to be more assertive about her career. She sent out pictures for exhibitions and convinced poet Frank O’Hara to pose for her. That portrait was later redone and appeared in Art News in 1960. When her friend Muriel Bettancourt gave her an annual stipend to support her work, she was able to move out of Spanish Harlem to West 107th Street.

Neel’s style changed as well. Her colors and approach became bolder, but a number of critics thought her style was still too casual and clumsy. As Grace Glueck of the New York Times wrote in 1997, “Working in a style that might be called Expressionist-realist, she laid brush to canvas in a plain, straightforward manner, using the paint not fancily but simply to convey an image.”

More Favorable Notice

In the 1960s, Neel began receiving even more critical and financial support. Pop art and photorealism, which were closer to Neel’s approach, were coming into style. She also received attention because of several portraits she did of famous people. They included Andy Warhol, theater producer Joseph Papp, and composer Aaron Copland. Neel often did satirical portrayals of art dealers, critics, patrons, and historians, but she remained sympathetic to the common people she painted from everyday life.

Neel was expert in getting her subjects, including John Perreault (1972), to pose nude. Neel always was very careful about details and emphasized the importance of gesture. One of her subjects, Red Grooms, told Paul Richard of the Washington Post upon her death, “She was famous for her X-ray eye, and for her cruel, biting line, that killer line that describes everything.”

While Neel had a number of shows at the Graham Gallery in New York beginning in 1963 and in other chic galleries, she still favored neighborhood people in paintings like Fuller Brush Man (1965). One of her best cityscapes was 107th and Broadway depicting what she saw from her apartment in 1976. As Theodore F. Wolff wrote in the Christian Science Monitor after her death, “As an artist, Alice Neel always spoke the truth, without embellishments or evasions, and with little concern for the social amenities. Confronted by reality, she preferred to depict it as it was rather than as it should be, and to present it starkly, regardless of whose feelings were hurt or whose ideals were offended.”
Higher Profile

In the 1970s, interest in Neel increased because of the women’s movement. In 1974, she was the subject of a retrospective at the Whitney Museum. This exhibit brought her more of an audience and led to more exhibitions and more awards. Neel had a retrospective at the Georgia Museum of Art in Athens in 1975 and at both the University of Bridgeport, Connecticut, and Silvermind Guild of Artists in 1979. Neel was elected to the American Academy and Institute of Arts and Letters in 1976.

Neel used this higher profile in a number of ways. Because she was able to explain her art to people in an understandable fashion, she did lectures in the 1980s. Neel showed her irreverent side, often telling how she convinced her subjects to take off their clothes. At the age of 80, Neel did her own nude portrait. She also did several paintings of her two sons and their wives. Neel especially favored her daughter-in-law Nancy Neel, who worked as her assistant.

In 1981, Neel became the first living American artist to have a major retrospective exhibition in Moscow. She also painted several portraits that became covers for Time magazine, such as those of feminist Kate Millet (1970) and Franklin D. Roosevelt (1982). Despite the changing climate of art, Neel still did not sell many paintings since the common people who were depicted in many of them could not afford to buy them. By her death, she owned most of her work. Near the end of her life, Neel continued to paint despite illnesses including cataracts.

Neel died from cancer on October 13, 1984, in New York. Many critics believed she was underrated in her lifetime, though at the time of her passing, neo-expressionism was popular and so was she. This did not matter to Neel, who painted for her own reasons. In 1982, Neel told Enid Nemy of the New York Times, “I’ve always been interested, I’ve always been curious, and I’ve always had a profession. Painting is an obsession with me.”

Books


Periodicals

- Feminist Studies, Summer 2002.
- Newsweek, July 1, 2000.
- Time, October 29, 1984.

E(dith) Nesbit

Best known as the author of such children’s novels as The Railway Children and The Story of the Treasure-Seekers, the English writer E. Nesbit (1858–1924) also authored fiction, drama, and poetry for adults. In addition she was active in political causes and together with her husband, Hubert Bland, the playwright Bernard Shaw, and others, founded the Fabian Society in England to further socialist aims.

Early Life

E(dith) Nesbit was born August 15, 1858, in London to Sarah and John Collis Nesbit, a chemist who taught at an agricultural college in south London that had been established by his father. Nesbit’s earliest years appear idyllic as she and her brothers, Arthur and Harry, were free to roam and play on the expansive grounds of the school. This period came to an abrupt end, however, with the sudden death of her father at age 43 in 1862. Nesbit’s mother assumed the role of providing for her family, remaining connected with the college as an administrator until the ill-health of Nesbit’s elder sister Mary prompted the family to relocate to the seaside. For the remainder of her childhood Nesbit alternated between terms at boarding...
school and summer holidays in the country, either in England or abroad. The depiction of one-parent households and siblings spending time together away from adult supervision that characterizes her later fiction is seen to stem directly from the experiences of her own childhood. When she was nineteen years old Nesbit met Hubert Bland, a young man who shared her socialist political ideals. The two wed in April 1880, two months prior to the birth of their first child, Paul.

After their marriage, Bland developed smallpox, an illness that prevented him from working, and Nesbit undertook the financial responsibility of providing for the household. During the 1880s, a period when she gave birth to two more children, Iris in 1881 and Fabian in 1885, she began contributing short stories to magazines and writing verses for greeting cards. It was also during this time that the couple participated in the founding of the Fabian Society, a group dedicated to social justice that proposed the gradual reform of society rather than revolutionary tactics. In addition to the Blands and Shaw, the early Fabians included Sidney and Beatrice Webb, Annie Besant, H. G. Wells, and Havelock Ellis. The society remains active in British politics more than a century after its founding, with Prime Minister Tony Blair and many Cabinet ministers counted among its members.

Nesbit’s liberal outlook extended even to her own domestic arrangements. Bland, who at the time of their marriage was simultaneously engaged to another woman with whom he had a child, proved to be an unfaithful husband, and Nesbit raised as her own the two children he fathered with a third woman, Alice Hoatson. According to biographers, Nesbit also entered into a series of sexual relationships outside her marriage with other writers, including Shaw, Noel Griffith, and Oswald Barron, with whom she collaborated on the short story collection The Butler in Bohemia (1894).

Throughout the 1880s and 1890s Nesbit produced numerous volumes of poetry, romances, horror stories, children’s fiction, and several plays, and edited a series of anthologies of poetry and sketches with Robert Ellis Mack. For the most part Nesbit’s works throughout this period are considered conventional by critical standards though they provided necessary financial remuneration. She and Bland, who after recovering from his illness had turned to political journalism, also collaborated on a novel, The Prophet’s Mantle, published under the joint pseudonym Fabian Bland in 1885. In 1899 Nesbit published her first novels, the Gothic romance The Secret of Kyriels for adult readers and The Story of the Treasure-Seekers, her groundbreaking children’s work.

Success as a Children’s Novelist

The Story of the Treasure-Seekers was published serially, beginning in 1897, and traces the fortunes of the impoverished and motherless Bastable children, who undertake various attempts at increasing their family’s income. The novel represented a significant departure from Nesbit’s previous works and comprised her most notable success. The appeal of the Treasure-Seekers owed much to its point of view, which refrained from direct moral instruction, and to the humor stemming from its lively narrator, Oswald Bastable, considered Nesbit’s most memorable character. Alison Lurie, commenting in Writers for Children, described Oswald as “a child much after [Nesbit’s] own pattern: bold, quick-tempered, egotistic, and literary.” Unlike other children’s works of the era, The Story of the Treasure-Seekers provided a realistic rather than sentimental view of sibling relationships, including squabbling among the family and the resistance of the younger members to be dominated by the elder. Following on the success of the Bastable stories Nesbit issued two additional volumes of their adventures, The Wouldbegoods (1901), in which the children, now comfortably settled in a fine home, try different means of doing good for others, and The New Treasure-Seekers (1904), considered the most serious of the series.

Children’s Fantasy Novels

At the same time that Nesbit was issuing realistic stories of childhood, she wrote a number of fantasy works, including the popular Book of Dragons (1900). In 1902 she published Five Children and It, another children’s work that would bring her renown. In it she depicted a family of children—Cyril, Robert, Anthea, Jane, and their baby brother (known as “the Lamb”)—who undergo a series of adventures, but in this case the adventures are magical. During their summer holidays, the children encounter a Psammead, or sand fairy, who has the power to grant them one wish per day. The wishes, including having the ability to fly or possessing great beauty, all have unforeseen, humorous consequences, and the novel has proved enduringly popular: it remains in print more than a century after its first appearance. In a sequel, The Phoenix and the Carpet (1904), the mythological bird hatches in their nursery fire-place and leads the children on a number of magic carpet adventures. The Story of the Amulet (1906) continues the story, when the children, who are staying with a relative while their parents are out of the country, rediscover the Psammead in a London pet shop, and his gratitude at being rescued leads them on a time-travel adventure to ancient Atlantis and to a utopian future based on Fabian ideals. Their quest throughout the journey is to recover the missing half of a magic amulet that will grant their heart’s desire: the restoration of their family.

The Railway Children

Returning to the realistic adventure tale, Nesbit published The Railway Children in 1906. Her most beloved work, the novel has been adapted for stage, musical theater, cinema, and television. In the story, Roberta (“Bobbie”), Peter, and Phyllis are the children of a government worker imprisoned as a suspected spy. During her husband’s absence, the children’s mother moves the family from their comfortable London home into a rural cottage to reduce housekeeping expenses, and she supports the family through free-lance writing. With little else to occupy them, the children find entertainment in the nearby railway and befriend its station workers. They ultimately become known to an “Old Gentleman” who rides the train each morning
and who is instrumental in clearing their father and restoring their family.

The House of Arden (1908) and Harding’s Luck (1909) center on Edred and Elfilda Arden, who use magic to visit the past in hopes of finding where their family fortune is hidden. Their adventure brings them into contact with Dickie Harding, an impoverished and crippled cousin. The rightful heir to the Arden title and fortune, he chooses to remain in the seventeenth century, where he is no longer lame. In the novel Nesbit uses the device of time travel to illustrate her socialist ideals, portraying Jacobean England as an era of social harmony in stark contrast to the disparity between high society and the slum life Dickie endures in the Edwardian world.

Fiction for Adults

Despite the popularity and critical regard of her novels for children, Nesbit continued throughout her career to think of herself as primarily a writer for adults. Her most successful adult novel, The Red House (1902) concerns a young couple renovating an old country house, a plot drawn directly from her own life and the restoration of Well Hall, the Blands’ home in Eltham. Among her other works for adults are The Incomplete Amorist (1906), a romance centering on an English art student in Paris, and Daphne in Fitzroy Street (1909), a fictionalized account of her relationship with Shaw. Dormant (1911) shares some elements of fantasy with her more successful children’s works. In the story a scientist inherits an estate and falls in love with a woman he discovers in an enchanted sleeplike state in a secret chamber. Her final novel, The Lark (1922) is a realistic depiction of two unmarried women struggling to maintain their financial independence by operating a boarding house.

Nesbit’s husband, Hubert Bland, died in April 1914. She published few new works after that time, and interest in her works declined after World War I. She married Thomas Terry Tucker, a sea captain, in 1917. Financial difficulties and illness plagued her later years, and she died May 4, 1924, in New Romney, Kent.

Reputation and Legacy

In the decades since her death, Nesbit has come to be regarded as one of the most innovative writers for children of the early twentieth century. Her importance, particularly in the development of fantasy literature for children, has prompted numerous critical appraisals. As Daria Donnelly has noted in Commonweal, "Before Nesbit, such literature fell into two types: either the entire action took place in an exotic or fantastical setting, or the child character (Dorothy or Alice) traveled from this world into a fantastical one. But in Five Children and It, a group of middle-class Edwardian children find a prehistoric, ill-tempered thing called a Psammead right in the gravel pit behind their house. And each day, corresponding to each chapter, he reluctantly grants them a wish that results in a new adventure in their very neighborhood. Locating the fantastical in everyday life was Nesbit’s great and enduring innovation.” Colin N. Manlove, writing in MOSAIC X/2, added that “Nesbit’s fantasy is not what one would call great literature. . . . [Her] work is fanciful rather than imaginative. But fancy has its place: and one could claim that in Nesbit’s work it reaches a high point of wit and ingenuity.” Nesbit’s realistic stories, too, continue to please young readers, and new admirers are brought to her works through television and theatre productions of The Railway Children. Summarizing Nesbit’s achievement, Claudia Nelson concluded in the Dictionary of Literary Biography that “in writing for children Nesbit proved her ability to combine humor and sympathy, the personal and the universal. Not only does her popularity in this genre continue today, she also served as a major influence upon other writers for the young, including Edward Eager and C. S. Lewis.”

Books


Nesbit, E., Long Ago When I Was Young, Macdonald and Jane’s, 1974.


Periodicals

Commonweal, November 5, 1999.

MOSAIC X/2, Winter 1977.


Online


Per Nørgård

Danish composer Per Nørgård (born 1932) had a big impact on music in Denmark as he continued to pursue the study of music. His use of the metamorphosis and infinity methods were often unpopular when first presented to the public but later became classics in the history of Danish music.

Per Nørgård was born in Gentofte, Denmark, on July 13, 1932. His parents, Erhardt and Emmely, owned a wedding dress specialty shop called Eva. They lived near the shop. His aunt and grandmother lived around the corner, and he spent a lot of time with them. He also spent time with his brother, Bent, who was five years older than he was, but otherwise he did not have much contact with other children.
**Artistic Skills Unfolded**

Nørgård’s family enjoyed music. His parents had a radio to listen to and a gramophone to play records on. His father played the accordion, and the family would sing along. A piano was purchased, and both boys took lessons, with Per beginning at age seven. Nørgård loved to draw, but he especially enjoyed developing cartoon characters, and he and his brother would provide performances with the cartoons. Nørgård would draw the characters and write the music, while Bent would create storylines and text. They called them ‘Tecnics.’

Nørgård was showing a strong talent in music at a young age, and in 1942, he was admitted to the Copenhagen Municipal Choral School. The school had a strong music program, but no grammar school, so in 1944, he was sent to the Frederiksburg Grammar School. Europe was in the middle of World War II, and often this affected Nørgård. On March 1, 1945, English planes bombed the French School in error. The Frederikberg Grammar School was also damaged.

By the time Nørgård reached his teen years, music and drawing were his main interests. However, when he was 16, his brother was called into military service. Nørgård lost interest in working on cartoons without him and began to focus on music. He was a shy young man but was comfortable playing music in front of people. By 1949, at age 17, he was certain that he wanted to become a composer, and he wrote his first piano sonata.

**Began Serious Study of Music**

Despite his shy disposition, he made a very bold move. He called up Vagn Holmboe, one of the most prominent Danish composers, and asked to be taken on as a student. After Holmboe reviewed some of Nørgård’s work, he agreed to accept him. Nørgård received private lessons from Holmboe until 1951 when he was admitted to the Academy of Music.

The first public performance of one of Nørgård’s pieces took place on March 30, 1951, when the Young Musicians Society included his Concertino No. 2 in a concert. Elvi Henriksen played his piece on the piano. The entire concert received poor reviews.

From 1952 to 1955, Nørgård studied at the Royal Danish Academy. Holmboe was again his instructor in composition. While studying, he met two other young musicians, Pelle Gudmundsen-Holmgreen and Ib Norholm. The three had very different music styles, but worked together to promote music in Denmark. They became very good friends. Nørgård began to become successful during his student years. The Royal Danish Academy was a very conservative school. Nørgård’s work from this time was also conservative.

**Branched Out**

By 1953, Nørgård became very interested in the work of Jean Sibelius. Sibelius was not regularly accepted as a musician because of his unorthodox music, especially the concept of metamorphosis. Metamorphosis is a method of taking a common phrase or strain of music and changing it little by little, until it has become something else. This was very non-traditional and shunned by the conservatives, but Nørgård was intrigued. He sent a letter to Sibelius on July 2, 1954, assuring him that his type of music would endure. Sibelius sent him a thank you note. Nørgård later dedicated his choral work Aftonland op. 10 to Sibelius.

In April of 1955, the Erling Bloch Quartet performed Nørgård’s “First String Quartet” at a concert. The work received very positive reviews. Additional good reviews were received when his “Aftonland No. 10” was performed by the Academy of Music Madrigal Choir on October 19, 1955. Nørgård was beginning to experience a string of successes.

When Nørgård completed his exams at the Academy of Music, he married Anelise Brix Thomsen. They later had two children. Jeppe was born on January 17, 1959, and Ditte was born on May 27, 1961.

On January 17, 1956, the Royal Danish Academy of Music put on a composer’s evening consisting entirely of works by Nørgård. Following this debut, he left for Paris to study with Nadia Boulanger, the well-known music teacher in France. He has been recommended by Holmboe and received the Lily Boulanger Award to help to finance his stay. Nørgård and his wife lived in Paris from January 1956 to May 1957.

**Began to Teach**

In 1957, he became a lecturer to the Funen Academy of Music in Odense. He also began writing music critiques for a newspaper called the Politiken. By 1960, he also began teaching at the Royal Danish Academy of Music, leaving Odense in 1961.

Nørgård and his friends from his study days, Gudmundsen-Holmgreen and Norholm, felt there was a need for new thinking about music in Denmark. They attended the ISCM World Music Days music festival, in Cologne, Germany, together in 1960, where a large number of modern works were performed. After they returned to Denmark, they established a study circle in order to explore new techniques and ideas. They began to meet to discuss these new concepts once a week. He also began working again with his brother, Bent. Together they wrote a children’s oratorio, “And It Came to Pass in Those Days.” This further led to them working together to write an opera, entitled “The Labyrinth,” in 1963.

**Became Established as a Composer**

During this time, Nørgård was working on “Constellations,” a piece for strings which, at the time, was on the edge of traditional tonal relationships. In addition, in 1961, he entered his piece, “Fragment VI,” for orchestra in the famous Gaudeamus Festival in Holland. He won 1st Prize for best foreign work. This accomplishment helped to establish his reputation on the international scene.

He gained further international attention in 1964 when he collaborated with Eugene Ionesco, the famous French dramatist who was looking for someone to compose music
for his ballet. The Danish Broadcasting Corporation commissioned the work, and the final product was transmitted all over Europe on April 2, 1965. During the same year, Nørgård received the Danish Ballet and Music Festival Award.

**Experimented with Music**

Nørgård continued to struggle with the constraints of the conservatism at the Royal Danish Academy of Music. In 1965, he left to join the staff at the Jutland Academy of Music, taking his students with him. Around this same time he began experimenting more, as well as reaching out to different audiences. He moved away from writing concert music and was writing music for films and radio play.

Continuing his experimental streak, he wrote “Iris,” an orchestral piece where he explored different sounds. It was commissioned by The Royal Orchestra and was initially performed May 19, 1967. A companion piece, “Luna,” followed. In 1967, he also received the Harriet Cohen Medal for ballet music.

Nørgård’s music became much more of an exploration of music than storytelling. He would be constantly exploring new ways of creating music. The Economist would later write, “The idea of continuous development has always held special fascination for Mr. Nørgård, both as it relates to his own position within the classical tradition, and in compositional terms.”

One of the best-known Scandinavian compositions of the second half of the 20th century is Nørgård’s “Voyage into the Golden Screen.” The second movement specifically and logically unfolds the infinity series, a style that Nørgård became known for where he worked with different rhythms. It was performed for the first time in March of 1969. That same year he received the Anne Marie Nielsen and Carl Nielsen Commemorative Scholarship.

The Danish Broadcasting Corporation commissioned a piece to be used as background music for the test picture on Danish television. “Kalendermusik” (Calendar Music) was completed in 1970 and was based on the infinity series, expressing the seasons as they unfold. It premiered March 21, 1973, but only played for a few months because of complaints from viewers. His new music was not traditional enough for the common listener.

During this same period of controversy, the Academy of Opera in Stockholm had commissioned *Gilgamesh*. Nørgård completed it in 1972. The premiere was May 4, 1973, by the Jutland Operan Company. The performance was well received.

Despite his inability to sway the general public, many in the music world were impressed with his work. In 1972 the Danish Broadcasting Corporation commissioned him to write his *Third Symphony*, which he worked on until 1975. The piece was first performed on September 2, 1976. It was considered a masterpiece, although parts of it were so busy that some considered it chaotic. In 1974, Nørgård won the Nordic Council Music Award for the opera and his general work as a composer. After the *Third Symphony*, Nørgård began exploring conflict with more depth. He struggled with ways to express conflict to his satisfaction.

In 1979, Nørgård visited an exhibit at the Louisiana Art Gallery entitled “Outsiders,” which displayed work by famous artists who were mentally ill. He was particularly intrigued by the work of the schizophrenic Swiss artist, Adolf Wolfli. This led Nørgård to become more spontaneous in his composing, writing some of his most popular work, including *Wie ein Kind (Like a Child)*, in 1980; *I Ching*, in 1982; and *The Divine Circus* in 1982.

In the 1980’s, Nørgård continued to produce music, providing *Between* for cello and orchestra; *Remembering Child* for viola and orchestra; and *Helle Nacht (Bright Night)* for violin and orchestra. He was the chairman of the Musical Arts Committee under the National Foundation for the Arts from 1983 to 1986. The Danish Broadcasting Corporation commissioned another Symphony in 1986. Nørgård worked on it until 1990, and the 5th Symphony was performed in December of 1990, in a concert where works by Sibelius and Carl Nielsen were also performed, honoring Nørgård as an equal to those he had studied and admired. In 1987 he was awarded the Wilhelm Hansen Family Scholarship and then received the Henrik Steffens Award in 1988.

**Gained Respect**

In 1996, Nørgård won the international Leonie Sonning Music Award. This award garnered a great deal of attention and suddenly there were TV and radio shows about him, as well as coverage in the papers. In the late 1990s, Nørgård had become a legend, and some of his works, now considered classics despite the fact that the public had shunned a number of them, were now being re-recorded.

Nørgård’s *Sixth Symphony* debuted on January 6th, 2000. Works from Sibelius and Carl Nielsen were also heard at the concert, and Nørgård was once again linked with his mentors.

Throughout his career, Nørgård was compelled to continue to discover and learn about music, even when it was unpopular with the public. *American Record Guide*, in the May/June 1997 edition, wrote, “He has created a sound world of his own, and no work of the last 30 years is an easy introduction to his music; but if it is the spiritual and intellectually challenging you want, then Per Nørgård’s music is immensely satisfying.”

**Books**


**Periodicals**


**Online**

Marianne North

Marianne North (1830–1890) was a well-known botanical painter who traveled around the world twice in search of rare flowers and plants. Her paintings of flowers in their natural habitats gave a glimpse of plants inaccessible to most people. In 1882, a gallery of her work opened at England’s Royal Botanic Gardens at Kew. The gallery, still open to the public, houses 832 paintings produced by North over 13 years.

Marianne North was born in Hastings, England, on October 24, 1830. Her father, Frederick North, was a wealthy landowner and a member of Parliament. Little is known about North’s mother. North had a sister, Catherine, who was seven years younger and a brother, Charles, two years younger. North had little formal education, but the family was rich and cultured and she was exposed to well-known artists and botanists. She showed a talent for singing and took voice lessons. In 1847, the family began a three-year trip through Europe where North studied flower painting, botany, and music.

North’s mother died in 1855 and North became the mistress of the family’s homes in Hastings and London. She loved to sing, but when her voice gave way, she took up flower painting, which was considered a respectable hobby for a lady of leisure. Painting was never expected to be North’s career, since wealthy 19th century women were not expected to work. She was also interested in botany and, through her father, knew Sir Joseph Hooker, director of the Royal Botanic Gardens at Kew.

Every summer, after Parliament closed its session, North, her father, and her sister traveled to Europe. They visited Switzerland, Austria, Spain, Italy, Greece, and the Bosphorus. As was a custom at the time, each traveled with a diary and a sketchbook. North’s friends encouraged her to describe her travels. During a trip to Spain, Marianne first attempted landscape painting using watercolors.

In 1864, North’s sister married. After her father lost his seat in Parliament the following year, North and her father spent even more time traveling, visiting Switzerland, the South Tirol, Egypt, and Syria. She searched out plants and painted everywhere she went. Around 1865 North learned oil painting and found that she much preferred it over watercolors. In Visions of Eden: The Life and Work of Marianne North, she said, “I have never done anything else since, oil-painting being a vice like dram-drinking, almost impossible to leave off once it gets possession of one.”

During a trip to the Alps in 1869, Frederick North became ill and North brought him back to Hastings, where he died. North’s father had doted on her throughout her life and she was devastated at the loss. She said of her father in her autobiography, “He was from first to last the one idol and friend of my life, and apart from him I had little pleasure and no secrets.” Painting helped her overcome her grief.

Her large inheritance allowed her to resume her travels. She went to Sicily with her maid, but did not enjoy her companion’s company. Two years later, at the age of 41, North sold the Hastings home and devoted herself to botanical painting. She began a series of trips in search of plants and flowers from all corners of the earth. “I had long had the dream of going to some tropical country to paint its peculiar vegetation on the spot in natural abundant luxuriance,” North said in her autobiography.

Traveled Around the World

Her first trip, in 1871 and 1872, took her to Canada, the United States, and Jamaica. She returned to England, then went on to Brazil where she stayed for eight months and completed more than 100 paintings, working out of a hut in the jungle.

In 1875, she made plans to travel to Japan via the United States, where she visited Yosemite and other California sites. When she encountered lumberers harvesting giant redwoods, she lamented, “It broke one’s heart to think of man, the civiliser, wasting treasures in a few years to which savages and animals had done no harm for centuries.”

North suffered from rheumatic fever in Japan, making it difficult for her to put up with cold weather for the rest of her life. She returned to England in 1877 via Sarawak, Java, and Sri Lanka. While in Sarawak, a British colony on the island of Borneo, North discovered the largest known carnivorous pitcher plant. It became the first of five plants that were named in her honor, *Nepenthes northiana*. The
others are *Northea seychellana*, a previously unreported
tree in the Seychelles; *Crinum northianum*, an amaryllis;
*Areca northiana*, a feather palm; and *Kniphofia northiana*,
an African torch lily.

North exhibited some of her paintings in Kensington
Gallery in 1877. Shortly after, she traveled to India for 15
months and produced more than 200 paintings.

**Encountered Harsh Conditions**

It was unusual at the time for a woman to travel alone,
but that is how North preferred it. Sometimes, she started a
trip with a friend or acquaintance, only to abandon them
partway through the trip. In her autobiography, she claimed
to prefer the company of “less civilized and more interesting
people.”

By less civilized, she apparently didn’t mean native
people, because her extensive diaries barely mention the
indigenous people she must have encountered and they
rarely appear in her paintings. Her diaries also gloss over the
difficult conditions she endured. In the introduction to *A
Vision of Eden* Anthony Huxley described how carelessly
she mentions travel conditions: “Scorching sun, drenching
rain, fearful road conditions, travel sickness, leeches and
giant spiders, and unsalubrious accommodation are all dis-
missed in a few airy words,” Huxley said.

North also had to deal with language barriers, a lack of
doctors, and crude transportation. A typical diary entry
describes how she traveled through India: “I started at four
in the afternoon in a big cabin boat . . . and reached Quilon
about twelve the next day . . . thence on to Nevereveya, where
we left the boat and crossed the boundary in a bullock cart.
We went on in another canoe, hollowed out of one long
tree, for twelve hours more . . . .” Much of the backcountry
she visited was inaccessible by any type of vehicle, forcing
her to tramp through jungles and swamps and scale cliffs
and mountains, looking for botanical specimens. She was
often accompanied by hired servants who carried her gear.
The conditions for painting in the wild were crude and she
was often forced to pack her paintings while they were still
wet, then touch them up when she returned to London.

When she returned from India, she found it so tiresome
to show her paintings to visitors to her London flat that she
housed them in a gallery for two months so they would be
accessible to the public. The show was so successful, she
began to think about a permanent home for her art. She
asked Sir Joseph Hooker if he would agree to building a
gallery for her paintings at Royal Botanic Gardens at Kew, at
her expense. He accepted her offer.

**Gallery Housed Paintings**

North chose the location of the gallery within the gar-
dens. She envisioned it to be a respite for visitors where they
could stop and enjoy a cup of tea or coffee. Refreshments,
however, were not allowed in the gardens. North hired her
friend James Fergusson, a well-known architectural histo-
rian, to design the gallery.

With planning well underway, North resumed her
travels. North was a friend of Charles Darwin and shared his
interest in geographical distribution of plants. In 1880-
1881, North visited Australia, New Zealand, and Hawaii at
Darwin’s suggestion.

After returning, she spent a year arranging the gallery,
which opened in 1882. The gallery features elements of
Greek temple architecture. North arranged the paintings
and designed and painted freizes and other architectural
elements throughout the two rooms. Two hundred forty-six
different types of wood that North collected in her travels
are also displayed in the room. North also compiled and
paid for publication of a catalog of the collection.

North used her brush as people today would use a
camera. Other botanical illustrators of the time described
plants and made sketches, but North’s work stood out be-
cause of its vivid colors. Many of the plants she painted
were barely known at the time so her work became an
important part of the botanical record. Most of the plants in
North’s paintings are depicted in their native environment.
Her interest in zoology is evident in the birds, insects, fish,
and other animals that sometimes appear in her paintings.
As North traveled, she met botanists around the world who
led her to the specimens she sought. Sometimes, her hosts
brought plants to her and these are painted in a more con-
trived setting. Some paintings depict a plant laying on a
table or a combination of blooms arranged in a vase, like a
Dutch flower painting.

In addition to flowers, birds, insects, and animals,
North painted landscapes, some of which show native
buildings and people. These paintings gave a glimpse of
distant lands not easily accessible in her day. Shortly after
the gallery opened in 1882, North went to South Africa to
paint flowers on that continent. When she returned, she
added the new paintings to the gallery.

By the time North traveled to Africa, she was growing
weaker and suffered from nervousness and anxiety. In her
diaries during the African trip, she expressed frustration that
she could not paint faster. Despite failing health and in-
creasing deafness, she traveled to the Seychelles in 1883
and Chile in 1884. In Chile, she searched for and painted
*Araucaria imbricata*, known as the puzzle-monkey tree.

**A Lifetime of Work Displayed**

After returning from Chile, she made her last additions
to the gallery, which now totaled 832 works, picturing 727
genera and 1,000 species. (In total, North completed 848
paintings in 13 years.) The paintings range in size from a few
square inches to 15-by-40 inches. The paintings remain just
as North arranged them; They cover the walls, with little
space between them, making for a colorful visual impact
when people enter the rooms.

North had devoted her life to her work and now that
she had completed her gallery, she retired to a house in
Gloucestershire surrounded by fields, orchards, and gar-
dens. From 1886 until her death in 1890, she spent her time
entertaining guests and transforming her home’s grounds
into a showcase garden filled with rare botanical treasures.
She worked tirelessly on the garden, doing much of the
work herself, despite poor health. Undoubtedly, North’s
failing health was the result of the harsh conditions she had
lived in during her travels. Marianne North died on August 30, 1890, at the age of 59.

North’s autobiography, Recollections of a Happy Life, a two-volume set compiled from her travel diaries and journals, was published in 1892. Her sister Catherine Symonds, who was a lesser-known botanical illustrator, compiled the work, as well as a third volume, Further Recollections of a Happy Life, published in 1893.

Books
Notable Women Scientists, Gale Group, 2000.

Anna Nzinga
One of the great women rulers of Africa, Queen Anna Nzinga (circa 1581–1663) of Angola fought against the slave trade and European influence in the seventeenth century. Known for being an astute diplomat and visionary military leader, she resisted Portuguese invasion and slave raids for 30 years. A skilled negotiator, she allied herself with the Dutch and pitted them against the Portuguese in an effort to wrest free of Portuguese domination. She fought for a free Angola until her death at age 82, after which weak rulers left the country open for the Portuguese to regain control.

Negotiated with Portuguese Slave Traders
In the late sixteenth century and early seventeenth century, Europeans were negotiating interests in the African slave trade. The Portuguese wanted slaves for their new colony in Brazil. Threatened by English and French interests in northeast Africa, the Portuguese moved their slave-trading activities further south to what is today the region of Congo and Angola. The name Angola comes from the Mbundu word ngola, or king.

Nzinga was born to Ngola Kiluanji Kia Samba sometime around 1581 in the kingdom of the Ndongo, a Mbundu-speaking people in southeastern Africa. The king had accepted limited slave trading with the Portuguese, but when the Portuguese pushed further into the country and broke boundaries set up by the king, Ndongo went to war against the Portuguese.

King Kiluanji had become a powerful and oppressive ruler, losing the support of his people and his family. In 1618, Nzinga’s brother, Mbandi, overthrew and killed Kiluanji, taking the throne for himself. Just as ineffective a leader and cruel as his father, Mbandi ordered the murder of Nzinga’s son in an effort to eliminate any threat to his power. The kingdom broke apart as Mbandi fled the capital and Nzinga sought refuge in the nearby state of Matamba.

Nzinga soon had the chance to show her emerging skills as a negotiator. In an effort to restore peace, the Portuguese initiated talks with Ndongo in 1622. Nzinga was sent as Mbandi’s representative to negotiate with the Portuguese governor, Corrêa de Souza, based in Luanda. She arrived resplendent in her royal clothes and retinue. A Dutch artist recorded the historical meeting in a sketch. The story is that only one chair was available at the conference—the governor’s chair—a ploy to make Nzinga stand and therefore seem inferior. Nevertheless, Nzinga signaled to one of her maids who fell on her hands and knees to provide a seat for Nzinga. Now facing the governor on his level, Nzinga was able to talk as equals. Treaty negotiations were successful; Nzinga convinced the Portuguese to recognize Ndongo as an independent monarchy, while agreeing to release European captives taken by her brother.

Perhaps as more of a political move than a religious conversion, Nzinga let herself be baptized by the Catholic Church and took the Christian name Dona Anna de Souza, after the name of the governor. Using religion as a political tool, she reasoned that this would open her country to European missionaries and advanced science and technology. In 1623, she was named Governor of Luanda for the Portuguese and held the position until 1626.

Only a year after the treaty was signed, the Portuguese disregarded the terms of the treaty and resumed their slave-gathering activities. Mbandi was proving to be a weak leader. Desperately wanting to defend Ndongo and her people, Nzinga poisoned her brother and succeeded him as queen of the Ndongo kingdom in 1623.

Nzinga as Queen
An intelligent and visionary political leader, Nzinga declared all the territory of Angola a free country. She offered refuge to escaped slaves, allied herself with Dutch traders who competed against the Portuguese, and dared to encourage revolt among Africans against the Portuguese. However, when negotiations with a series of Portuguese governors failed, the Portuguese attacked, eventually depowering Nzinga and forcing her to escape to the land of the Matamba.

In 1626, the Portuguese replaced Nzinga with a puppet Ndongo ruler named Philip, who was more likely to comply with European demands. Assessing her strategy, Nzinga formed an alliance with the Imbangala or Jaga group, going so far as to marry their chief. With the Jaga behind her, Nzinga conquered the Matamba people in 1630, established the state of Matamba, and declared herself their queen. Soon though, even the Jaga chief betrayed her by attacking Matamba.

Nzinga organized a resistance army using mercenaries and Africans the Portuguese had trained. Despite being in exile, Nzinga was able to influence her people and command their respect. She hand selected soldiers who pretended to be defectors so they could infiltrate the Portuguese armies. Once inside Portuguese ranks, they attacked. This show of loyalty to Nzinga made black troops under Portuguese domination
desert to the queen. Always encouraging rebellion, Nzinga had, by 1635, developed an effective anti-Portuguese coalition that virtually held the Europeans at bay for 30 years. She has been called the greatest military strategist ever to confront the armed forces of Portugal.

While Nzinga was sending ambassadors to west and central Africa to enlist fighters, she was also pursuing good relations with the Dutch, from 1641 through 1648, to help her stop Portuguese advancement, to control the slave routes, and to reclaim Ndongo. This strange alliance with the Dutch marked the first African-European alliance against another European aggressor. She was not above forming alliances with foreign powers and then pitting them against each other, all for the goal of creating an Angola free of European influence.

A setback occurred in 1648 when Portuguese reinforcements arrived from the colony of Brazil who proved to be a formidable force. The Dutch were expelled from Luanda, leaving Nzinga without her most powerful ally. Unwilling to admit defeat, Nzinga resumed peace talks with the Portuguese for the next six years. Although the Portuguese at this time were contained, it became clear that they would not be removed. Nzinga was forced to recognize Philip as king and Portugal’s sovereignty over Ndongo. Nevertheless, Nzinga remained queen of independent Matamba until her death in 1663 at the age of 82.

**A Dynamic Ruler**

A Dutch ally reported that Queen Nzinga enjoyed fighting and sometimes dressed like a man. She survived the Portuguese by her wits and audacity. Although Nzinga was willing to ally herself to Europeans, she is remembered as an Angolan leader who never accepted Portuguese sovereignty. So influential was she, that during her life, she was responsible for holding back the Portuguese invasion into the interior of southwest Africa; after her death, the Portuguese slave trade was able to flourish in the region.

Although Nzinga handpicked her sister, Dona Barbara, to succeed her as queen and married her to the general of the army, a succession struggle ensued after Nzinga’s death. All of the new rulers failed to thwart the influence of the Portuguese, who regained control of the territory in 1648. It was not until three centuries later in 1974 that a military takeover in Portugal forced the government to withdraw its troops from its African colonies.

Nzinga’s rise to power was due to her personal capabilities that overcame the limitations of gender. She displayed practical maneuvers, such as her alliances with the Jaga and Dutch, as well as self-sacrifice during her exiles. Willing to fight for freedom alongside her warriors, Nzinga demonstrated bravery, intelligence, and a relentless drive to bring peace to her people.

**Books**


**Online**


Maruyama Okyo

One of the master painters of Japan’s Edo period, Maruyama Okyo (1733–1795) was the most influential painter and teacher of the 18th century in Kyoto. Although trained in the conservative Kano School of painting, Okyo combined styles from Japanese, Chinese, and 18th century Western influences. With an eye toward realistic perspective and scientific observation, Okyo created naturalistic bird-and-flower studies and illustrated anatomy books. Broadening his range to producing large-scale screen compositions, Okyo accepted commissions from temples and the royal palace in Kyoto. Famous in his own time, he founded the Maruyama School and influenced such noted painters as Matsumura Goshun and Nagasawa Rosetsu.

Encouraged to Pursue Painting

Maruyama Okyo was born to farmers in 1733 in the Kameoka region of Tamba Province, now part of Kyoto Prefecture. Although his parents wanted him to become a monk, he showed artistic talent early in life. As a youngster he apprenticed at a clothing shop, then painted dolls for a toymaker, and then designed accessories for cosmetics shops. Although he had little formal education and was barely competent at the popular art of calligraphy, he excelled at painting.

Encouraged to pursue his talent for painting, at age 16 Okyo entered the three-century old Kano School, the official school of painters for the upper-class during the Edo period. Under master painter Ishida Yutei, Okyo copied the works of Japanese painters, learned to paint large byobu, or screens, practiced Chinese brush work, painted scrolls from preliminary sketches, and studied diverse painting styles favored by Yutei. For his own paintings, Okyo drew on his early life in Kyoto living among the townspeople and farmers and observing the beautiful landscapes and gorges.

Okyo eventually demonstrated more talent than his orthodox contemporaries. Although he continued to employ the monochrome brushwork he learned at Kano, the conservative school was resistant to innovation, prompting Okyo to seek new challenges. Through artist Watanabe Shiko and Okyo’s own independent study, he became exposed to Western artistic influences. From Dutch prints, he learned linear perspective, modeling the human form, and a realistic approach to representation.

Blended Styles to Create His Own

In his early career up through his thirties, Okyo blended his studies of Chinese masters and the concept of perspective from Western painting to create his own style. He studied Chinese prints from Suzhou province and the works of painters in the Nagasaki School, which examined imported Chinese paintings, Western books, and copper-plate etchings. Learning to present various perspectives, Okyo created ukie pictures which depicted a scene observed from a single viewpoint. This method was also employed for his megane-e (eyeglass pictures), which were painted stereographs used in an optical device that presented three-dimensional views of Chinese and Japanese landscapes.
The Western artistic styles introduced to Japan in the early 18th century included vanishing-point perspective and chiaroscuro. Through his exposure to Western style prints, copperplate engravings, and illustrated books, he designed copperplate prints for the new concept of camera oscura. Okyo produced many sketches in various forms, developing a realistic approach from sketches that used outlining brush strokes and wash. Okyo mastered both brush and ink and created a signature style that combined native techniques with Chinese and Western forms that would influence the modern Japanese style.

Despite being influenced by Western art, Okyo retained and explored his traditional Japanese roots. He adapted the decorative compositions created by fellow students of the Kano School, as well as the techniques of the native Rimpa and Tosa Schools. Okyo produced hanging scrolls that exhibited his experimentation with the naturalistic treatment of detail.

Okyo’s work was at first criticized by Nanga School artists who favored literary significance in art and by the traditional Kano painters who incorporated Confucian ideas. But Okyo’s simple combination of birds and flowers popularized in Chinese paintings and of European techniques created plain, easy to understand natural paintings that were appreciated by the merchant class.

After his thirties, Okyo continued to experiment with different techniques, encouraged by his friend Yujo, the abbot of the Emman’in temple in Otsu. Okyo studied and copied foreign books on surgery, used mirrors to help him visualize three-dimensional forms, studied ink paintings of the Muromachi period (1333–1568), and sketched classic Chinese-style bird-and-flower paintings. He experimented with inks, pigments, and the application of shading with a slanted brush to produce various planes. Okyo’s propensity to hold a brush in whatever manner suited the creative nature of his piece, rather than holding it in the upright manner used to create calligraphy, caused controversy at the time. Nevertheless, his drive to develop his own voice propelled Okyo to become one of the most influential artists of the 18th century.

Painted from Nature

In 1774, Okyo returned to Kyoto from his studies with other masters. During the decade, he became an even more prolific painter and created works in larger formats. Okyo revived the practice of producing large-scale screen compositions. He received numerous commissions and painted some of his most important large-scale works for temples, such as Daijoji temple near the Sea of Japan, Kongoji temple in Kameoka, and the Imperial Palace in Kyoto.

Influenced by the era’s boom in scientific discovery, Okyo infused his work with a combination of naturalism and stylization, as evidenced by his hanging scroll “Peacock, Hen and Peonies.” His scientific interests, especially botany, spurred him to sketch directly from nature and models rather than drawing from the imagination. He advocated painting that gave a close account of nature and adopted a first-hand observation style of sketching animals and people. His earliest known sketchbooks, filled with people and places from around Kyoto, date from the 1770s. The detailed and realistic style he used was sometimes referred to as shaseiga (life drawing paintings).

As explained in Okyo’s entry in the Dictionary of Art, “Okyo’s observations about painting . . . show his concern with definition of space in the picture as a whole and in the description of individual forms. His view that an artist must determine the ‘bone structure’ of a figure before attaching the clothing, reflected his familiarity with the Western basis of figure drawing.”

During the Edo period, painters typically lacked the need to paint the natural world. Okyo, however, reveled in the flora and fauna around him and dedicated his works to capturing nature. He presented realism in his animal studies and dogs that he incorporated into landscapes and featured in seasonal portrayals. He painted screens featuring blooming wisteria and misty bamboo groves in the rain on gold-foil paper and used simple brush strokes for the tree trunks. Okyo also made detailed sketchbooks of insects that are featured in the Tokyo National Museum and was known to produce medical and anatomy books.

Soon after being hired in 1790 to help restore the imperial palace in Kyoto, he contracted an eye disease. Continuing to work, he completed the 1794 piece “Waterfall and Pine Trees” for the Omote Shoin at Kotohira Shrine in Kagawa Prefecture. This piece is considered one of his best compositions.

Co-founded Maruyama-Shijo School

Okyo founded his own school for the arts in Kyoto called the Maruyama School or naturalist school. Rejecting the Kano and Tosa Schools’ emphasis on tradition subjects, Maruyama School focused on a study of nature. Due to Okyo’s fame during his lifetime, his school thrived and never wanted for students. His son Maruyama Ozui later succeeded him as head of the school.

Matsumura Goshun (1752–1811), who had trained in the Nanga School under Yosa no Buson (1716–1783), introduced the atmospheric landscape and bird-and-flower style of sketching called Shijo. Goshun joined Okyo and adopted Okyo’s realistic style, although Goshun’s work invoked a more lyrical and subtle feeling, reflecting the Nanga love of poetry.

Goshun created the Shijo division of the Maruyama School that fused Maruyama’s naturalistic style with the Nanga’s idealistic fashion. With its atmospheric washes, free brushwork, and sensuousness, the Shijo style was appropriate for 19th century artists. Other schools, such as Ukiyoe, adopted the style. In the late Edo period, Shikokawa Bunrin (1807–1877) combined the two schools to form the Maruyama-Shijo School, whose style remained prevalent into the 20th century. Maruyama-Shijo School technique incorporated realistic aspects based on perspective derived from Western influence and based paintings on detailed sketching from life, yet retained traditional Japanese themes.

As explained in the Encyclopedia of Visual Arts, Okyo pioneered or revived six painting styles that influenced his
followers: dramatic decorative screens influenced by Western perspective (“Hozu Rapids”), studies of nature in relaxed brushwork (“Wisteria Screens”), unidealized genre paintings (“Seven Happineses and Seven Misfortunes”), Chinese style portraits and bird-and-flower paintings (“Peacocks and Peonies”), displays of ink monochrome (“Dragon Screens”), and soft and misty landscapes (“Spring, Summer”).

Okyo’s legacy of the effects of light and shadow and his experiments with perspective influenced his followers. Many of Okyo’s students became famous: Matsumura Goshun, Nagasawa Rosetsu, Komai Genki, Watanabe Nangaku, Yamaguchi Soken, Mori Tessan, and Hara Zaichu. Rosetsu excelled at a brushwork style influenced by Okyo. Tessan was inspired by Okyo’s sketching from life. Zaichu adopted Okyo’s spatial construction technique.

Created Master Works Featuring Nature

Okyo was a master of depicting seasonal activities, his favorite being winter and summer, the seasons least celebrated in Japanese art. The technical aspects of painting wintery snow scenes particularly challenged Okyo. To create the image of snow and snow drifts in his “Puppies among Bamboo in the Snow, Landscape in Snow” (1784), he used the sotoguma (outside shading) technique of applying ink and washes around areas of blank paper.

One of his finest large screen pieces is “Pine, Bamboo and Plum (Three Friends in Winter),” a pair of six-fold screens composed of ink and gold on paper. Characteristic of his bird-and-flower pieces, “Heron on a Willow Branch” was painted in the classical Japanese yamato-e style, using flat areas of colorful pigments set against an expansive background.

Books


Online


Francisco Manuel Oller

Francisco Manuel Oller (1833–1917) was a major Puerto Rican artist whose portraits of governors and slaves and landscapes of sugar plantations and peasant shacks celebrate both the island’s natural beauty and its social strife. A friend to the great French artists of the late nineteenth century, he took part in the French avant-garde movements of Realism and Impressionism. Oller is cited as the only Latin American painter to play a role in the development of Impressionism.

Although he lived for many years in France and Spain, Oller always returned to Puerto Rico. “Francisco Oller was the first painter to ponder deeply on the meaning of Puerto Rico,” wrote Haydée Venegas in Francisco Oller: Realist-Impressionist, the catalogue of a 1983 Oller retrospective at the Ponce Art Museum in Puerto Rico. His paintings of island life convey a strong, but not uncritical, passion for his native land. Oller’s work was a “profoundly moving perspective on the virtues and defects of the Puerto Rico of his era,” wrote Carlos Romero-Barceló in Francisco-Oller: Realist-Impressionist. Oller was inducted into the Order of King Charles III of Spain and exhibited in Spain, France, Vienna, and Cuba, but much of his art was lost after his death.

Early Years

Oller was born in San Juan on June 17, 1833, the third of four children of Cayetano Juan Oller y Fromesta and María del Carmen Cestero Dávila. At age 11, he began art lessons with Juan Cleto Noa, a painter who ran an art academy in San Juan. Recognizing Oller’s talent, Puerto Rico’s governor, General Juan Prim, offered to send him to Rome in 1848, but his mother felt he was too young. Oller was also a gifted musician and sang with the Puerto Rican Philharmonic Society as a teenager.

From 1851 to 1853, Oller studied at the Royal Academy of Fine Arts of San Fernando in Madrid, under Federico Madrazo y Kuntz, director of the Prado Museum, and became familiar with Spanish art. On his return to Puerto Rico in 1853, he began a successful career as a portraitist, winning the Silver Medal at the Fair of San Juan in 1854 and 1855.

Acquainted with Major Artists

In 1858, Oller traveled to Paris, staying for seven years. While working as a sexton and a baritone in an opera company, he studied under Thomas Couture and the Realist artist Gustave Courbet and mingled with artists and intellectuals in the cafes. He knew Camille Pissarro, Antoine Guillemet, Claude Monet, Pierre Renoir, Paul Cézanne, and other artists who were later known as the Impressionists. “All of these artists helped to mold Oller’s method and style of painting,” wrote Edward J. Sullivan in Arts Magazine. He also enrolled in the Academie Suisse and was admitted to the official Salon. During this period, he painted “El estudiante” (The Student), using Emile Zola as model, according to Peter Bloch in Painting and Sculpture of the Puerto Ricans. The painting has hung in the Louvre and the Metropolitan Museum of Art.
In 1865, Oller returned to Puerto Rico, an island struggling for identity under Spanish rule. “There he used his brush, as he himself put it, ‘to lash out at evil and extol the good,’” wrote Marimar Benítez in Américas. In 1868, Oller married Isabel Tinajero. They had two daughters, Georgina and Mercedes. Oller was part of the privileged Creole class, but he was also a nationalist and a liberal, sharply critical of colonialism and slavery. As a Realist, Oller felt art had a social, political, and religious mission to contribute to society, wrote Albert Boime in Francisco Oller: A Realist-Impressionist.

Oller sailed back Paris in 1873, where he painted “Orillas del Sana” (Banks of the Seine). In 1877, he moved to Madrid, producing his famous “Autorretrato” (Self-Portrait) in 1880, influenced by Spanish painters such as Diego Rodríguez Velázquez. Oller held a successful exhibit of 72 paintings at the Palace of La Correspondencia de Espana in 1883. After a stay in Puerto Rico, he returned to Paris in 1895, embarking on his Neo-Impressionist phase, as shown in two important paintings, “Paisaje francés I y II” (French Landscapes I and II, 1895–1896). These natural scenes “capture the rich atmosphere and coloring of Neo-Impressionism,” wrote Benítez.

In 1868, Oller founded the first of many art schools, the free Academy of Drawing and Painting in San Juan. Known for his interest in geometry and perspective, he wrote a popular book on perspective and drawing. Oller was “a born teacher,” wrote Dr. René Taylor in Francisco Oller: A Realist-Impressionist. Yet his fame never translated into great wealth. “The number of private art patrons was small” in Puerto Rico, notes Bloch.

In his later years, Oller could not pay for art supplies with his small teacher’s stipend. “Apparently unable to buy materials, he was reduced to painting on any surface that came to hand: stray pieces of panel, the lids of cigar and match-boxes, yaguas and even tambourines and smoker’s pipes,” wrote Taylor. He died on May 17, 1917, at the Municipal Hospital in San Juan.

After his death, many of his paintings deteriorated in Puerto Rico’s tropical climate. In the early 1980s, the Ponce Art Museum launched a conservation effort to retrieve and restore his work for “Francisco Oller: A Realist-Impressionist,” a retrospective commenmorating the 150th anniversary of his birth. The exhibit of 73 paintings traveled around the United States, providing a new look at Oller and his contributions to the history of art and the art of Puerto Rico.

Books

Periodicals
Américas, July/August 1985.
Artnews, April 1988.

Max Ophüls

As one of the true cosmopolitan film directors of the twentieth century, Max Ophüls (1902–1957) experienced professional triumph in his native Germany, the United States, and France. He also worked in Italy and the Netherlands. Ophüls’s career can be demarcated into four distinct parts—five if his nine-year theater career is included—and taken together they can be seen as the progression of an artist.

Born Max Oppenheimer in Saarbrücken, Germany, on May 6, 1902, Ophüls began his career as a journalist, but at age 19 gave it up for the theater. At this time he changed his name partly to avoid embarrassing his family—his father was a garment manufacturer—should he fail. From 1921 to 1930 Ophüls worked in Germany and Austria first as an actor, then from 1924 as a director. In 1926 he became a theatrical producer, taking creative control of the Burgtheater in Vienna. In addition to Vienna, Ophüls worked in Berlin, Frankfurt, Stuttgart, Dortmund, Wuppertal, and Breslau. Ophüls was associated with more than 200 plays during that period. By the end of the 1920s, though, Ophüls became interested in film, and he made the career change that would bring him international renown.

First French Period

Working in Germany’s UFA film studios, Ophüls served a brief apprenticeship as an assistant director in charge of dialogue for Anatole Litvak on the film Nie Wieder Liebe (No More Love). His directorial debut came in 1930 with the film Dann schon lieber Lebertran (I’d Rather Take Cod Liver Oil), a film for children. Ophüls went on to direct four more films in Germany in the early 1930s before he left the country in the face of rising anti-Semitism. These early films include Die verkaufte Braut (The Bartered Bride), a 1932 adaptation of the Smetana opera which Ophüls coscripted, and his early masterpiece Liebelei (Flirtation), a love story filmed in 1932–1933 and set in Vienna. It is based on a play by Arthur Schnitzler. By the time the latter film was finished the Nazis had assumed power in Germany and their censors removed Ophüls’s name from the credits. Seeing the obvious handwriting on the wall, Ophüls decamped with his family (his wife was the actress Hilde Wall while his son, Marcel, would become a noted documentary filmmaker) for France.

Ophüls’s first French film, Une Histoire d’Amour (1933), was a French version of Liebelei that used most of the original footage. Other than three films, including an unfinished film he directed in 1940 in Switzerland, L’école des femmes, all of Ophüls’s output between 1934 and 1940 were French productions. In 1934 Ophüls went to Italy and directed La Signora di Tutti (Everybody’s Love) and in 1936 he filmed Komedie om Gold (Comedy about Money) in the Netherlands. The films he directed during his first French sojourn were profitable but are considered workmanlike by film critics and historians. In 1938 the year he acquired
French citizenship, he directed Le Roman de Werther, based on Goethe's classic The Sorrows of Young Werther. With the onset of the Second World War Ophüls was drafted into the French army and after basic training he was transferred to the radio division of the propaganda ministry. During the five-month Blitzkrieg (in which the German army swept through Belgium and France on its way to Paris) Ophüls wrote and directed German-language anti-Nazi radio broadcasts. Following the fall of Paris and the French capitulation to the Nazis in June 1940 Ophüls, who was without doubt on a “wanted” list, again decamped with his family. They first went to southern France, then Switzerland, wherein addition to the unreleased film he directed two plays, Romeo and Juliet and Henry VIII and His Sixth Wife. The Ophüls family emigrated to the safer environs of Hollywood in 1941.

The Hollywood Years

If Ophüls expected Hollywood automatically to welcome him with open arms as a refugee artist he was mistaken. For one thing the Hollywood style of filmmaking was much different than what he was used to, with a few exceptions directors were less the auteurs of the film. Another obstacle was the influx of European directors since the beginning of the war. By the time he arrived in Hollywood Ophüls was neither a novelty nor well known. Ophüls’s talents went unused for more than five years. He eventually found work through the intercession of director Preston Sturges, an Ophüls admirer known for his cynical screwball comedies who was then at the height of his fame. In 1946 Sturges secured for Ophüls a position as director of the Howard Hughes film Vendetta. Ophüls was one of several credited directors on the film, including Sturges, Mel Ferrer, Stuart Heisler, and Hughes himself. Production of the film stopped when Hughes pulled his financial backing. Vendetta was not released until 1949.

Despite that setback Ophüls used his credit as director of the project (during his Hollywood stay he would be credited as Max Opuls) as a launching pad for his Hollywood career. His next film, The Exile (1947), was a costume drama that starred Douglas Fairbanks Jr. and was based on the exile of British king Charles II in the Netherlands. Critics were cool toward the film though they generally praised Ophüls’s direction. It also faced stiff competition from other releases. As a result The Exile was a financial loss (though barely), but Ophüls’s Hollywood career was cemented.

His next film was the best known of his Hollywood years—Letter from an Unknown Woman (1948), another costume drama starring Joan Fontaine and Louis Jourdan. In this film Ophüls truly brought his aesthetic to American audiences. The plot revolves around a woman’s obsession with a pianist, with whom she has had a brief affair and thereby a child. Told from his female protagonist’s point of view it offered a visual sensibility seldom presented in Hollywood at that time. Ophüls female characters were usually better delineated than his male characters, their struggles usually a counterpoint to the lush decors. The critic Andrew Sarris described the prototypical Ophüls woman as someone who “triumphs over reality only through a supreme act of will.” In addition Ophüls used long takes (possibly a residual effect of his theater background) that resisted editing and was fond of tracking shots that made his camera fluid. Another aspect of his theater background that Ophüls carried into his filmmaking was that he shot his films in continuity, which he believed helped the actors realize the characters as well as interact with each other.

Ophüls’s last two Hollywood films, Caught, starring James Mason, Barbara Bel Geddes, and Robert Ryan, and The Reckless Moment, starring Mason and Joan Bennett, are both generally thought of as films noir though that designation is problematic for Caught, which had also been classified as a “women’s film.” John Berry also directed a few scenes in Ophüls’s absence. The noir aspect of the film is the psychological underpinning, which not only hints at violence but is the cause of it. Is has also been postulated that through the character of psychotic millionaire Smith Ohrig Ophüls delivered a devastating portrait of Howard Hughes. The Reckless Moment (1949) is more strictly film noir but with the unmistakable Ophüls touch of having a female protagonist who, unlike most noir women, is not a femme fatale. Filled with irony and Ophüls’s usual long takes and fluid camera, in nearly every respect (except for the female protagonist) it is the reverse side of Caught.

Though he had trouble getting work in his early years in Hollywood and he clashed with and distrusted many of his studio bosses, Ophüls essentially loved the studio system, which generally employed highly skilled people on the technical and production sides. Yet by 1950, with the studio system already in decline, Ophüls decided to return to France. Although his growth as an artist during his Hollywood period was remarkable, Ophüls literally embarked on the most creative period of his career. Ophüls never completely cut his ties with Hollywood, however. In the early 1950s European directors who had been working in Hollywood, such as Fred Zinneman and Billy Wilder, returned to Europe to make “American” films. Ophüls hoped to so the same for independent producer William Wanger, but the deal fell through. Ophüls remained in contact with Wanger and other Hollywood producers for the last five years of his life.

Second French Period

Ophüls made only four more films, but they all furthered his artistic reputation (although Ophüls admirers including film historians, critics, and the public would not become legion until after his death). Furthermore, he gave free reign to the techniques that irked his Hollywood bosses, not just the long takes and the tracking shots, but subverting of close-ups and the use of a more natural sound—Ophüls regarded Hollywood sound as “velvety.”

The first of this quartet was the elegantly filmed La Ronde (1950), which Ophüls and Jacques Natanson based on the Arthur Schnitzler play. Starring, among others, Simone Signoret, Simone Simon, Dannielle Darrieux, and Jean-Louis Barrault, the film depicts various combinations of couples as they take and drop lovers, finally coming full circle, which is the title’s meaning. Upon completing the
film Ophüls debated whether or not to return to the United States, but the overwhelmingly positive reception given _La Ronde_ in France decided the matter for him. In 1950 _La Ronde_ won best story and screenplay at the Venice Film Festival, and in 1952 the film the honors for Best Film—Any Source at British Academy Awards.

His next film, _Le Plaisir_ (1951), was based on a trio of short stories by Guy de Maupassant. Each of the film’s three segments reveals a different aspect of pleasure with its attendant irony and pain. The film featured Jean Gabin and Simone Simon. In 1953 Ophüls made _Madame de . . . (The Earrings of Madame de . . .)_. In a rather convoluted plot in which a pair of diamond earrings are sold and resold many times to pay off debts and given to lovers who in turn sell them, the notion of fate is explored. While the characters seem driven less by psychological means than the usual Ophüls film, since it is the earrings that drive the plot, film historians have noted that the performances of the three featured actors—Charles Boyer, Dannielle Darrieux, and Vittorio de Sica—overcome this shortcoming.

In 1954 Ophüls returned to Germany and began directing the classics on German radio. In 1955 he was back in France directing his final film, and the one on which future film historians would pin the label of genius on Ophüls. This was _Lola Montès_, starring Peter Ustinov. Loosely based on the life of the 19th-century courtesan the film was shot in Cinemascope (wide screen), which Ophüls used to startling effect. Another technique that critics and historians alike have admired was his 360-degree pan shots. Unfortunately Ophüls, whom most contemporary critics thought frivolous, never lived to see his name in the pantheon of great film directors. He died of heart disease in Hamburg, Germany, on March 25, 1957; Ophüls was buried in the cemetery Pére-Lachaise in Paris. His autobiography, _Spiel im Dasein_, was posthumously published in 1959 and in 1966 he was posthumously awarded a FIPRESCI Award at the Berlin International Film Festival.

Books

Online

William Oughtred

Anglican clergyman William Oughtred (1574–1660) is considered one of the world’s great mathematicians due to his writings on the subject and his invention of the logarithmic slide rule.

Although William Oughtred was by profession an Anglican clergyman, he devoted many years of his life to expanding human understanding in the areas of algebra and calculus as well as to teaching mathematics to gifted students. Oughtred was the author of several books on mathematics and has also been credited by most historians with inventing both the linear and circular slide rules. His innovations extended to the use of many unique mathematical shorthand notations, including the notation “X” for multiplication and “::” for proportion.

Raised in Academic Environment

Oughtred was born in Eton, Buckinghamshire, England, on March 5, 1574. His father, Benjamin Oughtred, was a scholar who taught writing at Eton School, and through Benjamin’s connections the younger Oughtred was educated as a king’s scholar at Eton. At age 15 he entered King’s College of Cambridge University and became a fellow there in 1595. Oughtred went on to receive his bachelor’s degree from King’s College, Cambridge, in 1596, followed by a masters of arts degree four years later. Despite the fact that Oughtred’s studies at Cambridge consisted predominantly of philosophy and theology, as early as age 12 he had demonstrated an extraordinary interest and talent in all things mathematical. As a college student, he had built...
on the rudimentary mathematical study provided to him at Eton, studying late into the night after completing his required regular studies. By the time of his graduation from Cambridge, Oughtred had already completed his first work, titled Easy Method of Mathematical Dialling.

In 1603 the 29-year-old Oughtred was ordained an Episcopal minister, a common and well-respected career option for an educated man. Applying to the church soon afterward, he gained an appointment as vicar of Shalford in 1604. In 1610 Oughtred was promoted to a position as rector of Albury, near Guilford, Surrey, in which post he served at an annual salary of 100 pounds. During his first years at Albury Oughtred married and set about tending to his parish. Despite the fame he would eventually acquire as a well-known mathematician, he remained dedicated to his flock and held his position as rector of Albury for nearly half a century, until his death in 1660.

Although never formally trained in mathematics, Oughtred clearly had a genius for the subject. Through his writings, he quickly gained renown as a mathematician and soon began to divide the time left to him after his church duties between personal study and the instruction of others. During the 1620s he began to take on as private pupils young men interested in the study of mathematics. These students—among whom were future mathematicians Richard Delamain and John Wallis as well as Christopher Wren, the future architect of St. Paul’s Cathedral—shared the home and hospitality of their teacher during their mathematical studies. Eager to impart his mathematical knowledge to these brilliant young minds, Oughtred refused payment, maintaining that he was adequately provided for by his salary as a clergyman. A small man with black hair and a quick, penetrating gaze, he became known for impatiently etching mathematical diagrams in the dust that settled on tables and floors. It was not unusual, in the Oughtred home, to find its owner dressed and awake in the middle of the night while hard at work solving a mathematical problem. On his bed he had permanently affixed an ink-horn, while on the nightstand nearby a candle and tinderbox lay in easy reach, ready for the many nights when a mathematical quandary would demand a solution before Oughtred would allow himself to sleep.

In 1628 Oughtred became math tutor to Lord William Howard, son of the earl of Arundel. Desiring a suitable text to supplement his instruction of the young aristocrat, Oughtred wrote out, in summary form, all that was current about arithmetic and algebra. Pleased by the mathematician’s efforts on behalf of his son, the earl of Arundel became a patron of Oughtred’s and encouraged the rector of Albury to publish his work. The 88-page Arithmeticae in numeris et speciebus instituto . . . quasi clavis mathematicae est—known more commonly as Clavis mathematicae—was first published in Latin in 1631. Despite its condensed format, the book quickly drew interest from Oughtred’s fellow mathematicians. By the time the second edition of the work was released in 1658, its author’s reputation had been cemented in the larger community of European scientists.

In his Clavis mathematicae Oughtred describes the Hindu-Arabic system of mathematical notation, sets forth the theory of decimal fractions, and includes a detailed discussion of algebra. Throughout the work he incorporates a number of mathematical shorthand notations he had devised as a way to denote powers, relationships, ratios, and the like. While much of Oughtred’s mathematical shorthand was rejected by readers as being too complicated, two of his symbols—“X” for multiplication and “;” for proportion—have gone on to become part of universal mathematical shorthand, along with those of contemporary mathematician and scientist Thomas Harriot (circa 1530–1621). Although Oughtred utilized the notation π as one of his symbols, its use signified only the circumference of a circle, not the ratio of the circumference to the diameter as it has come to denote.

Developed Logarithmic Slide Rule

The logarithmic slide rule was designed in response to the demands of the scientific renaissance that overtook Europe during Oughtred’s lifetime. The astronomical calculus that grew from the work of such men as German astronomer Johann Kepler (1571–1630) and which would appear throughout the work of English scientist Sir Isaac Newton (1624–1727) demanded a means by which the multiplication and division of both extremely small and extremely large numbers could be performed quickly. These scientific and technical calculations were performed with ease using logarithms, which raise or reduce one number to an abbreviated form through the use of exponents.

The invention of logarithms is usually credited to Scottish mathematician and inventor John Napier, baron of Merchiston (1550–1617), who described his invention in 1614 in Logarithmorum canonis descriptio, although Swiss watchmaker and mathematician Justus Byrgius (1552–1633) also compiled such a system of mathematical shorthand. Napier’s invention was simplified by a colleague at the University of London, professor Henry Briggs (1561–1631), who suggested that the system be designed in base 10 rather than Napier’s base “e.” Logarithms paved the way for the expanded scientific revolution that followed, allowing that complex operations of products and quotients be completed using simpler additions and subtractions. Their use continued until the advent of the digital calculator and the electronic computer of the twentieth century.

The use of logarithms immediately suggested an instrument that could speed calculations, and that instrument was the slide rule, an analog calculator that through its mechanism allows for the processing of the variable data represented by logarithms. In 1620 astronomer and mathematician Edmund Gunter (1581–1626) devised “Gunter’s Line,” a two-foot-long ruler marked with a logarithmic scale. For operations such as the multiplication or division of numbers to several places, lengths along the ruler that are equivalent to the logarithms of the relevant numbers are added and subtracted using a pair of calipers and the result converted back to numeric form through the use of the logarithmic table. Oughtred is believed to have designed the first linear slide rule after less than a year spent
wrestling with Gunter’s Line and its calipers. Using two rules placed parallel to one another and connected, the position of the numbers relative to each other could now be used to calculate the desired results. By discarding the calipers, Oughtred created the prototype of the modern slide rule.

In its earliest manufactured form slide rules were made of wood, ivory, and even bamboo. They also were designed in several versions: Oughtred’s linear and circular versions came first, followed by a cylindrical version, each version adapted for a particular academic discipline. The slide rule quickly gained prominence as a calculating device in every field of science and technology, from astronomy to topography to chemistry to mechanical engineering. However, it was not until the end of the eighteenth century that its importance was made clear by inventor James Watt (1736–1819), who revalued it as a tool of the Industrial Revolution. Demand for slide rules became such that by 1850 they had supplanted the use of Galileo’s compass of proportions, an instrument initially intended for military use. In 1850 French army officer Victor Mayer Andée Mannheim (1831–1906) introduced a transparent slab movable cursor; other modifications and improvements continued to be introduced in the decades that followed, resulting in the slide rule of the twentieth century.

Later Career Overshadowed by Controversy

The positive reception of his Clavis mathematicae within the scientific community prompted Oughtred to write several other books on mathematics. His 1632 work, titled Circles of Proportion and the Horizontal Instrument, described both a sundial and a circular form of slide rule that operated like Oughtred’s linear slide rule: it was constructed using two concentric rings, one seated inside the other and both of which were inscribed with calibrated logarithmic scales. Ironically, this concentric slide rule, which Oughtred designed for use as a navigational instrument, had been described in a book titled Grammelogia; or, The Mathematical Ring published in 1630 by Oughtred’s former student, Richard Delamain. Credit for the invention of the circular slide rule was claimed by both teacher and pupil, resulting in an enmity that lasted for the rest of Oughtred’s life. Despite the likelihood that Oughtred and Delamain each individually devised the instrument, history has ultimately granted Oughtred credit for the circular slide rule.

During the final decades of his life Oughtred published six more books, among them 1657’s Trigonometria, which supplements its discussion of two- and three-dimensional triangles with symbolism and tables setting forth the values of trigonometric and logarithmic functions to seven places. His 1651 work, The Solution of All Spherical Triangles, discusses the means by which the relative measurements of three-dimensional triangles can be determined; other books by Oughtred cover such subjects as the methods by which the position of the sun can be calculated and a discussion of the art of watchmaking.

Oughtred lived during tumultuous times in England. A staunch supporter of the English crown, he was shocked by the execution of the unpopular King Charles I in January of 1649. Like many who supported the cause of Charles I’s son, the Prince of Wales (later Charles II), Oughtred was viewed with suspicion by the Presbyterian-influenced government that desired to take the place of the monarchy through the will of its leader, Oliver Cromwell. During the English Civil War (1642–1646) Oughtred was sequestered and scheduled for trial before Cromwell’s puritanical commissioners. Due to the quick action of the astrologer Lilly and the insistence of influential friends, however, the mathematician and teacher was spared. He remained in England throughout Cromwell’s reign, despite offers from foreign rulers who had heard of his fame. Oughtred died on June 30, 1660, at the parsonage in Albury. Tradition holds that he died of joy at learning that King Charles II had returned to England from Scotland and been restored to the English throne.

Books

Notable Mathematicians, Gale, 1998.

Online


Yasujiro Ozu

Often called the most “Japanese” of Japanese directors, Yasujiro Ozu (1903–1963) created films about middle-class Japanese life and familial relationships with simplicity and austerity. Known for keeping the camera three feet off the ground in order to view the traditional Japanese sitting on the floor, Ozu presented quiet observations of parents and children caught between obligation and the modern world. Ozu, who was an acclaimed director in Japan and whose body of work reached 54 films, first began to gain notoriety in the West late in his life.

Unusual Childhood

Yasujiro Ozu was born in the Fukugawa district of Tokyo, on December 12, 1903, the son of a fertilizer salesman. Rarely seeing his father, he attended a remote school at the family’s ancestral hometown where his doting mother primarily raised him. His unconventional childhood was reflected in many of his films, which invariably dealt with family life and relations between parents and their children.

An unruly youth who disliked school, Ozu favored watching the movies from Hollywood he loved so much,
especially those from Charlie Chaplin, Harold Lloyd, and Rex Ingram. He worked for a few years as an assistant teacher in rural Japan and studied at Waseda University.

Ozu’s break into filmmaking came in 1923 when he landed the job of assistant cameraman to director Tadamoto Okuba at Shochiku Motion Picture Company—the film company at which he would eventually spend most of his professional life. Okuba became Ozu’s mentor who later influenced Ozu’s own films, especially his comedies.

Directed Silent Films

Following a year of military service, Ozu returned in 1926 to become an assistant director at Shochiku. He attributed his desire to become a director to Thomas H. Ince’s 1916 silent epic Civilization. Ozu made his first film in 1927, Zange no yaiba (Sword of Penitence), an uneven silent film that showed his lack of experience. Undaunted and armed with his interest in Hollywood films, he began to adopt an American studio approach to his filmmaking.

Ozu’s first major film was one of the last great silent films. The 1932 comedy/drama Umarete wa mita keredo (I Was Born But . . . ) met with critical and financial success and was named the best Japanese film of the year in the Kinema Jumpo poll. In the film, as seen through the eyes of children, the world of adults is both ridiculous and painful. For this film, Ozu employed the technique that would become his trademark—unobtrusive and static camera work.

During his career, Ozu would win many awards. His 1933 Dekigokoro (Passing Fancy) was another Kinema Jumpo winner. The 1934 silent film Ugikusa monogatari (A Story of Floating Weeds) was one of only a few films Ozu did not make for Shochiku, but for Daiei film company. Based on an American silent film called The Barker, Floating Weeds, a film about the adventures of traveling players in the countryside, is considered a superior work. Still clinging to silent films, Ozu was one of the last directors to relinquish the style, wanting to explore all of the possibilities the medium had to offer, as well as waiting until sound technology was perfected. Sadly, more than half of Ozu’s 30 silent films are lost.

Placed the Camera on the Floor

In the 1930s, Ozu rejected the conventions of both Japanese and Hollywood filmmaking to create his own style and themes. He experimented with camera angles, settling on a concept of simplicity. Describing his decision to limit the camera work, Ozu was quoted in Donald Richie’s book Japanese Cinema, as having said: “For the first time, I consciously gave up the use of the fade-in and fade-out. Generally dissolves and fades are not a part of cinematic grammar. They are only attributes of the camera.” The tactic worked, as Ozu became one of Japan’s most popular and respected directors during the decade.

Ozu became known for his deceptively simple camera technique that used a stationary 50mm lens placed three feet off the ground. This low angle corresponded with the eye level of a person sitting on Japanese tatami mats on the floor of a traditional home. Consequently, sets on Ozu’s films were built with ceilings. Observant but never intrusive, the camera contemplated and chronicled human behavior, presenting only the bare essentials.

Rejecting the more conventional camera direction through a 180-degree space to view action, Ozu focused instead on his characters and their interactions. He rarely resorted to devices such as fades, dissolves, pans, or tracking shots. Rather, through subtle, minimal camera work, simple cuts, and measured dialogue of everyday conversation, he presented scenes that were unhurried. He often textured his films with empty rooms and uninhabited landscapes.

Focused on the Family

The thematic thread linking Ozu’s films was the exploration of the human condition, specifically the domestic problems of the contemporary Japanese middle-class family. Quiet and virtually plotless, his films chronicled human behavior in ordinary situations, evoking nostalgia, duty, and Japanese sensibilities. Not spurred by the actions of heroes or villains, conflict arose from the interaction of ordinary people, usually a parent and adult child, coping with everyday challenges. Home life contrasted with work life, tradition with modern society, parental responsibility with rebellious youth.

Ozu often used repetition in his films to evoke the familiar and the dependable. He would refer back to an outside shot of a building or a pond or leave the camera on a principal character. For example, in the 1956 film Soshun (Early Spring), he charted scenes with a repeated view of early morning in the suburbs. Many of the same actors returned again and again in Ozu’s films to play similar characters. Ozu’s favorite actor was Chishu Ryu, who most often played the father of an adult child he does not understand.

A writer as well as a director, Ozu perpetuated his fondness for repetition, as evidenced in his series of films titled with the seasons. Early Spring, 1956; Banshun (Late Spring), 1949; Bakushu (Early Summer), 1951; Kohayagawa-ke no aki (Autumn for the Kohayagawa Family), 1961; and Akibiyori (Late Autumn), 1960, suggest a circular round of life as well as the figurative spring or autumn of his characters’ lives. He also directed the series Daigaku wa deta keredo (I Graduated But . . . ), 1929; Rakudai wa shita keredo (I Flunked But . . . ), 1930; and I Was Born But . . . , 1932.

Attained Success after the War

At first, Ozu did not fare well with talking pictures. His first two films Hitomi musuko (The Only Son), 1936, a story about maternal love, and Shukujo wa nani o wasureta ka (What Did the Lady Forget?) 1937, about a bossy wife, were described as dull and badly paced.

When World War II loomed, Ozu was drafted and sent to China, and in 1945 he was confined for six months in a British POW camp. He made only two films between 1937 and 1948, continuing to focus on his usual humanist values rather than addressing the war. The 1941 film Todake no kyodai (The Brothers and Sisters of the Toda Clan), about a mother and daughter, was Ozu’s first box-office hit gar-
Ozu, who lived with his mother until her death in 1962, died of cancer on December 11, 1963, just shy of his 60th birthday.

The West was slow to embrace Ozu’s films, which did not appear in foreign theaters or film festivals until the 1960s, shortly before his death. Japanese distributors feared that his work was too subtle for Western audiences who were more familiar with the adventures from Akira Kurosawa and Kenji Mizoguchi, who were winning awards abroad. Nevertheless, Ozu’s simplicity of presentation fortunately gave his films international appeal and a universal desire for family, affection, and security.

Ozu himself has been an influence on such diverse Western directors as Jim Jarmusch, Paul Schrader, and Martin Scorsese. He inspired a documentary by Wim Wenders and was frequently the subject of books by Donald Richie, a scholar of Japanese cinema.

In 1983, Ozu’s devoted assistant Kazuo Inoue produced a documentary profile of the director, called I Lived But . . . The Life and Works of Yasujiro Ozu that featured interviews with Ozu’s production crew and recurring actors, plus excerpts from newsreels, home movies, and clips from two dozen of Ozu’s films. Ozu’s cameraman Yuharu Atsuta shot the film, and his long-time production company Shochiku produced it.

On December 12, 2003, in honor of the 100th anniversary of Ozu’s birth, the Berlin International Film Festival, in collaboration with Shochiku Co. Ltd., will present a retrospective on the Japanese director. The retrospective will go on to screen at festivals in Hong Kong and New York.

**Books**


**Online**


Georg Wilhelm Pabst

Though many of his films became merely historical curiosities, G.W. Pabst (1885–1967) was one of Germany’s leading early film directors. A master of silent realist cinema, Pabst explored various genres, and his post-World War I films show a marked concern with the evils of Nazism and anti-Semitism.

Background in Theater

Georg Wilhelm Pabst was born on August 27, 1885, in what was then Raudnice in Bohemia, a province of the Austro-Hungarian Empire, which dissolved following the defeat of Austria-Hungary in the First World War. Later spelled Roudnice, the city is now located in the Czech Republic. Pabst attended school in Vienna, where the family had moved when he was a child. He studied engineering until 1902, when he began studying at Vienna’s Academy of Decorative Arts. In 1904 Pabst began working as an actor, and the following year he moved to Zürich, Switzerland. Over the next four years he traveled to the European cities of Salzburg, St. Gallen, and Danzig. In 1910 he traveled to New York to direct and act in German-language plays.

Pabst was in France when World War I broke out, and he was arrested and held as an enemy alien in a prisoner-of-war camp near Brest. He remained in that camp for the duration of the war, but nevertheless managed to organize a theater company and direct French-language plays. Pabst returned to Vienna after the Armistice was signed on November 11, 1918, and fit right in with the avant-garde theater of the era. He directed Expressionist theater in Prague, including two plays by Frank Wedekind, König Nikolo and Erdgeist (Earth Spirit). In 1919 Pabst became head of the Neuen Wiener Bühne (New Vienna Stage). But he soon had doubts about the artistic future of theater; film was the obvious next step.

Early Films

In 1920 Pabst relocated to Berlin, where for the next two years he served as a protégé of director Carl Froelich. In 1921 he acted in Froelich’s film, Im Banne der Krolle, and in 1922 Pabst was Froelich’s assistant and scenarist for Der Taugenichts and Luise Millerin. Pabst directed his first film, Der Schatz (The Treasure), in 1923. The film, about a buried treasure that tears apart a blissful family, was Pabst’s only true Expressionist film. Critics and film historians have tended to downplay the effort. Furthermore, it was not a commercial success. Froelich, who had helped fund Der Schatz, once again came to Pabst’s rescue when his protégé could not find work. Because of his own busy schedule he recommended Pabst direct Grafin Donelli (Countess Donelli) in 1924. A less than ordinary melodrama, the film proved to be a commercial success. In fact, the producers tried to entice Pabst to do more work in that vein, but he did not want to fall into the rut of churning out commercial fluff. That year, 1924, Pabst married Gertrude Henning.

In 1925 Pabst directed his first major film Die Freudlose Gasse (The Joyless Street), which starred Greta Garbo and Asta Nielsen. It was his first attempt at cinematic realism, and in it he expressed the cynicism and resignation that gripped a defeated Germany during the years of the Weimar Republic. The film’s opening title card quoted from Dante’s Inferno, “Abandon hope all ye who enter here,” suggesting the despair that gripped everyday life in Germany. While
this was Pabst’s initial move toward the realism that would define his career, the film included melodrama and, to a far lesser degree, Expressionism. Yet this film, whose story included murder, prostitution, starvation, and economic misfortune, was a far less sentimental evocation of the urban environment than most of its contemporaries, especially D.W. Griffith’s Isn’t Life Wonderful?, which was filmed in Germany in 1924. Griffith’s location shots are considered superior to Pabst’s, who employed sets much of the time, but otherwise Pabst was eclipsing the cinema pioneer.

_Die Freudlose Gasse_ was a highly successful film, though censors everywhere made cuts in it, so that in different countries different aspects of the film were emphasized. It was originally ten reels long, but after its premiere it became “a mere shell of a film,” as Lee Atwell wrote in the book _G.W. Pabst_. Despite this, Pabst’s artistic vision still shone through. This is the film that really launched Garbo’s career. Though she had previously acted in a few unknown Swedish films and in Pabst’s earlier film, Garbo’s performance in _Die Freudlose Gasse_ caught the attention of Hollywood moguls.

In his next film Pabst, who was an admirer of Sigmund Freud, turned to psychological drama and the surreal. Through various connections he managed to base _Geheimnisse einer Seele (Secrets of the Soul) (1926)_ on an actual case history. It’s a film about sexual anxiety and impotence, complete with hypnosis and dream sequences and possibly the first overtly psychological use of dreams in German cinema. Although the film is marred by a sentimental ending, it was successful with critics, audiences, and the censors, who found very little to condemn in it.

Pabst’s next major film was 1927’s _Die Liebe der Jeanne Ney (The Love of Jeanne Ney)_ , based on the novel of the same name by Russian author Ilya Ehrenburg. The subject matter reflects Pabst’s growing sympathy with the Left: he was involved with a German film worker’s syndicate named _Dacho_ and in 1928 joined the organization _Volkswerk der Filmkunst (Popular Association for Film Art)_. The Ehrenburg novel is set partially in Russia during the time of the Bolshevik Revolution, all the more remarkable since UFA, the German studio conglomerate that produced the film, was at first run by military men and bankers, two notoriously politically conservative groups. At about the time of the filming of _Die Liebe der Jeanne Ney_ , ownership of UFA was transferring to the equally conservative Hugenberg Press. The film was another artistic leap forward for Pabst in that he used fewer title cards for character exposition, letting the camera reveal the characters. In _Geheimnisse einer Seele_ the camera had played the primary role in revealing the protagonist’s psychological dilemma; now Pabst employed it in a more subtle manner.

**Pandora’s Box**

For his next film Pabst returned to the work of Frank Wedekind, conflating the Swiss-German dramatist’s two “Lulu plays,” _Erdegeist_, written in 1895, and _Die Büsche der Pandora (Pandora’s Box)_ , written in 1905. These were two Expressionistic plays that transformed the Greek myth of Pandora into the modernist Lulu, whose sexual desire consumes men. In Pabst’s hands the Expressionism was toned down by a naturalism that, ironically, Wedekind had revolted against but which Pabst used to magnificent advantage. The resulting film, _Die Büsche der Pandora_ , made in 1928, is generally considered Pabst’s masterpiece. Pabst’s use of American actress Louise Brooks in the title role produced a Lulu who was at once a predator and an innocent: Lulu seduces and abandons men and women and even commits murder, yet she remains loyal to her love, nearly falls victim to a white slave trader, and in the end (in the film’s classically Expressionist scenes) prostitutes herself and falls victim to the notorious London rapist Jack the Ripper. Brooks makes all of this believable. Pabst had originally thought of casting Marlene Dietrich in the role of Lulu, but her screen persona lacked the innocence of the unknown Brooks.

Critics were cool toward _Die Büsche der Pandora_ , dismayed that Pabst had turned away from the social themes that marked _Die Freudlose Gasse_ and _Die Liebe der Jeanne Ney_. The film’s sexual explicitness was decimated by censors or banned altogether. Still, Pabst’s mythic vision of feminine desire has been preserved by cineastes in France and Switzerland who managed to assemble a complete film from existing prints, using Pabst’s shooting script as a guide. The result is one of the greatest films of the silent era.

Pabst’s other film starring Brooks was _Das Tagebuch einer Verlorenen (Diary of a Lost Girl)_ , filmed in 1929. Prior to that, also in 1929, he had made _Die Weisse Hölle vom Pitz-Palü_ , a rather melodramatic film whose plot centers around a mountain climbing tragedy. The film features Leni Riefenstahl, who would gain fame as the most prominent Nazi film documentarian.

_Das Tagebuch einer Verlorenen_ was Pabst’s final silent film. This time he carried the eroticism of _Die Büsche der Pandora_ into the realm of social realism, answering his critics, while he indicted the decadence of Weimar Germany. Brooks plays an innocent caught in society’s sexual hypocrisy: a young woman made pregnant but unable to marry her seducer because her dowry is inadequate. She is forced to give up her child (who dies), is sent away to a reformatory from which she escapes, and ultimately ends up in a brothel. Where _Die Büsche der Pandora_ employed Expressionist techniques to reveal gloom and death in counterpoint to the vital naturalism of Lulu, in _Das Tagebuch einer Verlorenen_ Pabst maintained an unrelenting realism throughout the film. The critics were again unkind to Pabst, who made an alternate ending for domestic German distribution that was devoid of irony and turned the protagonist into a high-society heroine who denounces the cruelty of the reformatory.

**The “Social Trilogy”**

Pabst’s first “talkies” were what Atwood has termed his “social trilogy.” These films include the antiwar _Westfront 1918_ (1930), _Die Dreigroschenoper (The Threepenny Opera)_ , and _Kameradschaft (Comradeship)_ , (1932). In 1930 he also made _Skandal um Eva (Scandalous Eva)_ . Of the social trilogy films, _Die Dreigroschenoper_ is the best known but the weakest in terms of the realism on which Pabst’s reputation rests. _Westfront 1918_ , released the same year as another antiwar classic, _All Quiet on the Western Front_ , is a tale of
four German soldiers in the trenches during the final months of the World War I, living a life of horror framed by boredom. Since Westfront 1918 was Pabst's first sound film, he wanted to express the aesthetic possibilities of the new medium, and most film historians have judged his attempt a success.

Kameradschaft, the final film of the trilogy, is an attempt to portray the friendship between the French and German peoples. The story is about a mine disaster on the border of France and Germany, in the province of Lorraine. Significantly, Pabst used French and German actors, each speaking their own language, to heighten the tension and the realism. In 1958, more than twenty-five years after it premiered, Kameradschaft was chosen by film critics as one of the thirty most important films. When the film was released in 1932 the German press criticized its leftist radicalism, though its artistic quality was beyond rebuke, while the French government awarded Pabst the Order of the Legion of Honor.

In between Westfront 1918 and Kameradschaft was Die Dreigroschenoper. The strangest thing about Pabst's filming of the Bertolt Brecht/Kurt Weill opera was that he did it twice, in German and in French. The well-known story of the London underworld of beggars and thieves and the infamous Mack the Knife (Mackie Messer) featured Lotte Lenya in the German version in the role of Jenny Toler, which she had already made famous. The film relies less on realism than the other two in the social trilogy and employs a kind of Victorian romanticism and some scenes of Expressionism. A success upon its release, it is probably the second most viewed of Pabst's films.

On the day Adolf Hitler assumed power in Germany as chancellor, Pabst left for France. He remained there for eight years, with a brief interlude in the United States, making six films. One of these, Don Quichotte (Don Quixote), (1933) featured Russian basso Fyodor Chaliapin in the title role. In 1934 Pabst made A Modern Hero for Warner Brothers. The film flopped so badly that Pabst wanted to remove it from his filmography. Pabst was totally unfit for the Hollywood system and left for New York in 1935 to plan a film version of Charles Gounod's Faust, but this never materialized. He then returned to France.

The War Years and Afterward

In 1939, five months before the onset of World War II, Pabst returned to Austria, now under Nazi control. He stayed in Germany throughout the war and directed three wartime films. His widow later went public with a story about how the Pabst family was trapped by a series of circumstances in Austria when the war broke out. Others refute her assertions, and the truth regarding Pabst's motives for staying in Nazi Austria has been lost.

The first of three wartime, semipropagandistic films he directed was Komodianten (Comedians, 1941), for which he won the gold medal for best direction at the Venice Film Festival. In 1943 he directed Paracelsus, a story about the 16th-century metaphysician, and in 1944 he directed Der Fall Molander (The Case of Molander), filmed in German-controlled Prague but left unfinished when the Soviet army liberated the city.

In 1947 Pabst made Der Prozess (The Trial), and he again won the gold medal for direction at the Venice Film Festival. The film is a sharp indictment of anti-Semitism and in it Pabst vented his feelings toward Nazism. Pabst made seven more films in Germany, Austria, and Italy, including two more anti-Nazi films: Der Letzte Akt (The Last Ten Days, 1955) and Es geschah am 20. Juli (It Happened on July 20, 1955). Considered Pabst's last masterpiece, Der Letzte Akt depicts the final downfall of the Nazi regime. Es geschah am 20. Juli, about an attempt by German army officers to assassinate Hitler, suffers from being hurried. Pabst directed two films in 1956 and then retired.

Pabst was essentially an invalid for the last decade of his life. For years he had suffered from diabetes, and that was complicated when, in 1957, he was diagnosed with Parkinson's disease. He also suffered from cerebral arteriosclerosis. Pabst died in Vienna on May 29, 1967, from a liver infection.

Books

Online

Al Pacino

Al Pacino (born 1940) has been called one of the best actors in film history. He established himself as a Hollywood icon when he burst onto the scene in The Godfather and followed that critically acclaimed performance with eight Academy Award nominations and more than 20 movies over 30 years. Through it all, Pacino stayed grounded in his first love: theater. But despite three decades of fame and success, the man behind the actor, who cherished his privacy, remained something of a mystery.

The Young Actor

Pacino was born April 25, 1940, in New York City to Salvatore and Rose Pacino. Pacino’s father left the family when Al was a baby and although Pacino visited his father in East Harlem, he was raised by his mother
and maternal grandparents in a bilingual Italian American three-room household. Rose Pacino was ill throughout his childhood, as well as mentally troubled and poor, and died of a heart attack when Pacino was 22. He was under strict rule at home but had a happy, sheltered childhood. He was bored and unmotivated in school. He found his place in school plays and dreamed of a career in acting.

Pacino’s first acting lessons were at the Dover Theater, where he would go with his mother or grandmother to watch movies. After imitating the action on the screen for his grandmother, he was often asked to do the “looking for the bottle scene” from *The Lost Weekend*. Pacino found he could get positive attention with his acting antics. He won admission into Manhattan’s prestigious High School of the Performing Arts but dropped out at age 17. As a teenager, Pacino took acting lessons from Charlie Laughton, who became a friend. Pacino held odd jobs to support the family.

**Broadway**

Pacino moved to Greenwich Village and started to audition. Once on the theater scene, Pacino entered a period of depression and poverty. There were days when he could not afford bus fare or even lunch. He lived for awhile off the pay of his soap-opera-actor girlfriend and future movie star, Jill Clayburgh. He found work where he could, in a coffeehouse, a workshop, a mailroom, a theater, and elsewhere.

Finally, in 1966, he entered the prestigious Actors Studio and studied under Lee Strasberg, known for his Method Approach to acting. In 1967, Pacino won an Obie for his performance in *The Indian Wants the Bronx*, an off-Broadway, one-act play that ran for 204 performances. In 1969, he won the Antoinette Perry (Tony) Award for the Broadway play *Does the Tiger Wear a Necktie?* The play had only a brief run, but Pacino’s work in *Tiger* got him noticed by film director Dominick Dunne.

**Hit It Big with Godfather**

In 1969 Pacino debuted on screen in *Me, Natalie*. But he felt awkward away from the stage and had such a bad experience that he did not return to film for a couple of years. He said to Jimmy Breslin of *Esquire*, “I was used to working on a tightrope onstage. A movie is just a line painted on the floor.” In 1971 he played a junkie in *Panic in Needle Park*, directed by Dunne.

In the early 1970s, such actors as Robert Redford, Warren Beatty, Jack Nicholson, and Robert De Niro sought the role of Michael Corleone in Francis Ford Coppola’s *The Godfather*. But Coppola wanted Pacino, who had given solid performances in *Panic in Needle Park* and on Broadway. After a series of disastrous screen tests, no one—from the producers to fellow actors—wanted Pacino in the film, except for Coppola. Coppola stuck to his guns, and Pacino earned his first Academy Award nomination.

Pacino decided not to ride a wave of Hollywood success into lightweight blockbusters. Instead, he took a series of difficult, important film roles that highlighted his genuine acting abilities. 1973’s *Serpico* was a crime drama spotlighting the mental struggles of a New York cop. Pacino was nominated for an Oscar for *Serpico* and for his portrayal of Michael Corleone in *The Godfather II* in 1974. In 1975, Pacino was nominated for an Oscar for his role in *Dog Day Afternoon*, the story of a man trying to get money for his gay lover’s sex change operation by holding up a bank and taking hostages. In 1977, *Bobby Deerfield* foreshadowed a downturn in his career, but Pacino received another Oscar nomination for best actor for the hard-hitting legal drama *... And Justice for All*.

**A Decade Without a Blockbuster**

Pacino’s career turned south with the controversial *Cruising*, a look at the gay netherworld, in 1980, and *Author! Author!* in 1982. 1983’s *Scarface* met with some criticism, partially for Pacino’s Cuban accent and incessant cursing, but it would later become a cult classic.

*Revolution*—an epic war movie on the Revolutionary War released in 1985—has been called by some critics the worst film of all time. Pacino was in the starring role. *Revolution* had a cursed shoot full of rewrites, Pacino became sick with pneumonia, and upon release the film was savagely attacked by critics. They were Pacino’s first truly awful reviews, and he was criticized again for his accent. He stayed out of Hollywood for the next several years.

**Caught the Limelight Again**

Pacino’s return to Hollywood came in the film *Sea of Love* in 1989, an erotic-romantic film that cast him as a hard-drinking cop. In 1990, Pacino reprised his role of
Michael Corleone in The Godfather: Part III, earning praise for his acting amid mixed reviews for the film. Dick Tracy was also released in 1990, and Pacino got rave reviews for his comedic spoof on a gangster, a type of character he usually played seriously. He was nominated for another Oscar for best supporting actor for Dick Tracy.

Pacino teamed up with Michelle Pfieffer for a romantic role in Frankie and Johnny in 1991. Two years later, Pacino was nominated for Oscars for two roles: a shark-like real estate agent in Glengary Glen Ross and a bitter, blind former army colonel in Scent of a Woman. Pacino was awarded a best actor Oscar for Scent of a Woman. In subsequent years, Pacino turned out many films that were box-office successes. Between 1993 and 2003, Pacino appeared in such hits as Carlito’s Way, Heat, City Hall, Donnie Brasco, Devil’s Advocate, The Insider, Any Given Sunday, Insomnia, and The Recruit. As of 2002, his average salary was $10 million a picture.

Theatre Always His First Love

Even as Pacino’s star was rising in Hollywood, he continued to act in the theater. In 1970 he appeared in Camino Real, and in 1972 he began playing the lead in The Basic Training of Pavlo Hummel in Boston. That story of a Vietnam War recruit began a stint in New York in 1977, with Pacino in the lead, and he won his second Tony.

During his self-imposed exile from film in the 1980s, Pacino immersed himself in theater. According to Breslin, "He stepped back and went to where he always felt at home—three flights up in a drafty place where they can put down enough chairs to call it a theater." He performed in Julius Caesar and gave readings at colleges and small theaters. He directed The Local Stigmatic and filmed it starring himself. It remains unreleased to the public. Stigmatic is a movie adaptation of a Heathcote Williams play that Pacino produced, directed, and starred in.

Pacino often turned down potential hit movies to do theater, he took long breaks between films, and he was constantly involved in independent ventures. Breslin points out, “There is no other recorded case like this in the history of American movie stars. Sure, some big movie actor or actress will occasionally find a spare week or two to throw at Shakespeare. . . . But no movie star has ever created his own work of artistic obsession, let alone two of them. Only this guy.” In 2000, he became involved in the Actors Studio in New York’s Oedipus Rex. In 2002, Pacino was off-Broadway with The Resistible Rise of Arturo Ui and in Oscar Wilde’s Salome opposite Marissa Tomei.

The Personal Pacino

Pacino was an enduring bachelor, one of the few Hollywood men never to marry despite romances with Diane Keaton and other high-profile actresses. Despite his aversion to marriage, Pacino had a daughter, Julie Marie, by acting teacher Jan Tarrant, and a set of twins—Anton and Olivia—with long-time girlfriend Beverly D’Angelo. Breslin wrote, “Pacino is famous mostly because of his extreme, unique, and undeniable talents as an actor and movie star during the past twenty-five of his fifty-five years. But he is also well-known for being hard to figure. . . . He is reluctant to talk to reporters, for example.’’ Pacino has never been comfortable with fame.

When he attained fame in his early 30s, he was unequipped to handle it. He started drinking heavily and became reclusive and unstable. But his friends convinced him to join Alcoholics Anonymous, and in two years he quit both drinking and smoking.

Pacino is a living legend. He "can play small as rivetingly as he can play big. . . . he can implode as well as explode," according to Jeff Giles in Newsweek. Pacino told Bronwen Hruska of Entertainment Weekly, "For me it’s always been the character—‘the play’s the thing’—not my personality. When one overshadows the other, you become more a celebrity than an actor. I hope the perception is that I’m an act."

Books

Contemporary Theatre, Film and Television, Volume 23, Gale Group, 1999.

Periodicals

Esquire, February 1996.
Newsweek, June 3, 2002.

Online


Camille Paglia

Social critic and educator Camille Paglia (born 1947) has outraged or befuddled countless readers with her defiantly iconoclastic writings. She has, for example, argued that pornography constitutes sexual reality, that prostitutes enjoy their work, that bisexuality should be an accepted norm, and that all drugs should be legalized. But as anyone willing to read her books and essays soon discovers, her state-
ments are more often than not well-reasoned conclusions that cannot be dismissed out-of-hand.

Camille Paglia was born on April 2, 1947, in Endicott, New York, to Pasquale and Lydia Paglia, who had immigrated to the United States from Italy. Her father was a professor of Romance languages at LeMoyne College in Syracuse, New York, while his wife, Lydia, worked at home sewing wedding dresses until their daughter was three; after that she worked as a bank teller.

Encouraged in Art of Debate

Paglia’s family had little money when she was growing up; by way of compensation her parents encouraged her to engage her intellectual curiosity. Paglia would later tell an interviewer for Playboy: “I was silent as a child. But it’s true that my father was very opinionated, and he trained me in my earliest years to be an individual thinker. Italian culture is like Chinese culture. There is respect for elders. You never raise your voice to elders. There are no explosions. My father was totally in control.”

Among Paglia’s earliest memories, dating to the age of two and a half, is an episode of rage she experienced when she was not allowed to attend a film because she could not yet read. Rage is an emotion that would serve her well many years later when she became one of America’s leading social critics.

Within a few years of the film brouhaha, Paglia had become something of a tomboy, frequently getting into scuffles with her male cohorts. It must have come as a relief to her father when she finally became interested in ancient Egypt. But by then she was just as much a devotee of Hollywood popular culture as of antiquity. Paglia recalled a lecture she received from her father regarding 18th-century Swiss writer Voltaire’s poor opinion of actors that came just about the time she started collecting pictures of actress Elizabeth Taylor.

Paglia experienced the rebellious 1960s as a high school student. Because she was attracted to women in high school, she assumed she was a lesbian, but, as she told Playboy, “it wasn’t possible for me to do anything about my attraction to women. Lesbianism didn’t exist in that time, as far as I knew... I always felt frustrated and excluded, looking in from a distance.” This stance marked the beginning of her own rebellion against social norms. In later years she would find that lesbians disliked her because of her belief that most women are bisexual. Her relationships with men, on the other hand, continued to be compromised by her lack of patience and unwillingness to assume the role of nurturer.

Although feeling excluded socially, Paglia excelled academically and in college graduated valedictorian at the State University of New York at Binghamton in 1968. She went on to spend four years at Yale University, earning her Ph.D. in English before taking a teaching position at Bennington College in Vermont.

Became College Teacher

Paglia’s seven years at Bennington were unsatisfying, to say the least. As she told Playboy, “I would go to a faculty meeting and be aware that everyone hated me. The men were appalled by a strong, loud woman... [T]he men at the college were terrified because they are eunuchs, and I threatened every ... one of them.” Her interactions even became physical: in one case Paglia left an obnoxious male student sprawled on the cafeteria floor. After several such incidents, Bennington reportedly asked her to leave, but with legal intervention she managed to stay on until 1979. After Bennington College she landed a low-paying faculty position as professor of humanities at the Philadelphia College of Performing Arts (now the University of the Arts).

“Hurricane Camille”

In 1990 Paglia earned the sobriquet “Hurricane Camille” after publishing the 700-page tome on sex, art, and literature titled Sexual Personae: Art and Decadence from Nefertiti to Emily Dickinson. The book, which was nominated for a National Book Critics Circle award, became a bestseller and propelled Paglia to celebrity status. This success did not come without persistence on Paglia’s part, however. After she completed the manuscript in 1981, she submitted it to seven publishers, all of whom rejected it; she finally found a publisher, Yale University Press, to accept it nine years later.

 Appropriately for a work that rivals the Bible in thickness, Sexual Personae opens with the lines: “In the begin-
ning was nature. The background from which and against which our ideas of God were formed, nature remains the supreme moral problem. We cannot hope to understand sex and gender until we clarify our attitude toward nature. Sex is a subset to nature. Sex is the natural in man.” She wastes no time in making her point: on the first page she writes, “Feminists grossly oversimplify the problem of sex when they reduce it to a matter of social convention: readjust society, eliminate sexual inequality, purify sex roles, and happiness and harmony will reign.”

Martha Duffy, reviewing Sexual Personae for Time, attributed the book’s popularity to an emergent backlash among those who had become fed up with feminism. According to Duffy, “Paglia articulates positions that many people of both genders seem to want to hear. . . . To them feminism has gone quite far enough, and they like Personae’s neoconservative cultural message: Men have done the work of civilization and can take credit for most of its glories. Women are powerful too, but as the inchoate forces of nature are powerful. Religion and marriage are historically the best defenses against chaos.”

After setting forth her views in Sexual Personae, Paglia went on to author more essays dealing with feminist issues. Published in 1992, Sex, Art, and American Culture takes on the testimony of Anita Hill, who accused a soon-to-be Supreme Court Justice of sexual harassment, the so-called “beauty myth” coined by feminist author Naomi Wolf, and the decline of education in America while offering personal commentary on Paglia’s own career in journalism and academia. Ann Oakley, writing in Sociology, dubbed the work “essentially an autobiographical record of Paglia’s professional life to date as she sees it.” The 1994 collection Vamps and Tramps: New Essays deals with gay activism, and such celebrity figures as Bill and Hillary Clinton. Mimi Udovitch, writing in ArtForum International, found this collection to be Paglia’s “most enjoyable work to date” and praised it for demonstrating that the author has a joie de vivre that can effectively counterbalance “her excesses.” Paglia is also the author of The Birds, a study of Alfred Hitchcock’s movie of the same name.

**Iconoclast par Excellence**

By the mid-1990s Paglia was a celebrity considered among the most well-known social philosophers in the United States. With a popular image that the Playboy interviewer described as “antifeminist feminist, antigay lesbian and antiliberal liberal,” she had acquired a reputation as an academic attack dog. For her part, Paglia told the interviewer that she considered herself a feminist, but added that other feminists disliked her because she had criticized the women’s movement. Unlike most mainstream feminists, she believes feminism has betrayed women by replacing dialogue between the sexes with political correctness. Given the sacrifices that so-called sexual liberation entails, Paglia maintained that, in the end, it was the children—by way of neglect—who suffered most from the women’s movement.

She has also faulted the movement for the division it has caused between the sexes and traces much of the ongoing confusion about gender identity to the sexual revolution of the 1960s. As she told Playboy, “After the sixties there was a collapse in almost everything we believed in. . . . It all unraveled in the seventies. AIDS, appearing in the early eighties, was the period at the end of the sentence. AIDS forced most people to wake up to the fact that the sexual revolution had failed.” Still, she has remained optimistic about social progress. “Social change is evolutionary, not revolutionary,” Paglia explained. “Deep social change takes time. And slowly the culture is changing.”

**Found Appreciative Readership**

While considered to be at once a humorist, pedant, iconoclast, egotist, and exhibitionist, Paglia and her essays on art, politics, and society were taken seriously by readers frustrated by the false humility characteristic of the late 20th century, and she has continued to inspire others to reconsider society. From the left, Paglia’s writings have provoked animosity, contempt, and outrage. As First Lady of feminism Betty Friedan told the Playboy interviewer: “How can you take [Paglia] seriously? She is an exhibitionist, and she takes the most extreme elements of the women’s movement and tries to make the whole movement anti-sexual, antifecond. And neither I nor most of the women I know are that way.” Paglia, for her part, prefers to compare herself to conservative radio talk-show hosts Rush Limbaugh and Howard Stern, viewing herself as a champion of unbridled discussion.

**Books**


**Periodicals**


**Online**


---

**Phoebe Worrall Palmer**

Phoebe Worrall Palmer (1807–1874) was an evangelist and religious writer involved with the “Holiness” movement. Raised as a Methodist, Palmer became one of the most influential female religious leaders in the latter part of the nineteenth century. At a time when most evangelists were men, Palmer converted thousands of people in the United
States, Canada, Great Britain, and Europe, and she
did much to advance the role of women in religion.

Early Life

Phoebe Worrall Palmer was born in New York City on
December 18, 1807, one of two daughters of Henry
Worrall and Dorothea Blanche Wade. Her father
was born in Yorkshire, England, and came to America in his
early 20s. Her mother was born in America.

Palmer and her sister Sarah were raised in a strict reli-
gious household. Their parents were active members of the
Methodist Episcopal Church in New York City. They in-
stilled in their children strict Methodist values and they
conducted twice-daily in-house family worship services.
Palmer received catechism lessons from Nathan Bangs, a
well-known Methodist leader. Palmer was a pious child,
and by the time she was 11 she was writing religious mate-
rial that expressed her strong commitment to Jesus, includ-
ing a poem she wrote inside her copy of the New Testament
that read: “This revelation—holy, just, and true/Though oft I
read, it seems forever new/While light from heaven upon its
pages rest/I feel its power, and with it I am blessed.”

Palmer was 19 when she married Dr. Walter Palmer, a
respected homeopathic physician. They would have four
children, but only one survived past infancy. That child,
Phoebe Knapp, became a well-known religious composer.

As husband and wife, the Palmers shared deep reli-
gious convictions, they were both involved in the Methodist
Episcopal Church, and they were both raised in strict Meth-
odist homes. Like his wife’s parents, Dr. Palmer’s parents,
Miles and Deborah Clarke Palmer, were committed Meth-
odist leaders. For years, they held “class meetings” in their home, a
Methodist practice that was started by John Wesley in 1742
and later taken up by Walter and Phoebe Palmer as their
religious commitment deepened.

Family Tragedies and Spiritual Struggles

At the outset of the marriage, it appeared that Palmer’s
life would be centered around the church and raising a
family. However, great personal tragedy profoundly influ-
enced the direction her life would take. Indeed, her strong
religiosity and subsequent evangelism appear to be, in great
part, a reaction to intense grief and overwhelming guilt. In
the first ten years of their marriage, the Palmers lost three of
their four children. Rather than embellishing her and turning
her away from religion, the deaths caused Palmer to lean
more heavily on her Methodist faith. The tragedies caused
her to question her motives and the strength of her religious
convictions. She wondered if her love for her children di-
minished her faith and devotion to God.

Her first two children died soon after they were born.
The first, a son named Alexander, was born the day after the
Palmers celebrated their first wedding anniversary in Sep-
tember 1828 and died nine months later. Palmer had de-
layed the child’s baptism so she could finish sewing his
special baptismal outfit. After her child died, she feared that
God had judged her negatively because she had spent so
much time on the clothing rather than proceeding with the
ritual. Her second child, another son, was born in 1830.
Palmer first looked upon the birth as a blessing, believing
that God was replacing her first child. But the child lived
only seven weeks. Again, she believed the loss resulted from
her lack of devotion. Essentially, this was God’s way of
punishing her, she felt. Her response was to increase her
religious pursuits. Thus, she and her husband became more
actively involved in their home church. This was part of
Palmer’s efforts to achieve a more spiritually satisfying life—
a search that, at first, left her unfulfilled.

The Palmers had two more children. The first of these
survived, but the fourth was killed in 1835 when gauze
curtains near the cradle accidentally caught fire. That
child’s death caused Palmer to resign herself totally to God.

While the deaths of her three children and Palmer’s
emotional and spiritual response certainly contributed to
her eventual evangelism, there were other motivating fac-
tors. Starting well before her marriage, Palmer endured a
protracted spiritual struggle as she wrestled with the Meth-
odist belief that an individual’s spiritual conversion should
be a highly emotional and powerful experience. Such a
conversion would lead to an individual’s “Christian Perfection,” a Methodist tenet that referred to purity of heart result-
ing from a cleansing by the blood of Christ. Yet Palmer felt
her own conversion had been more low-key and gradual. In
fact, she could point to no single defining moment of con-
version, and this caused her to question her standing in the
eyes of God and the promise of her salvation. In other
words, she feared she was unworthy of heaven.

Emerged as a Methodist Leader

The significant step toward the resolution of her spiritual
struggle—as well as toward her emergence as an important
female religious figure—occurred when Palmer’s sister,
Sarah Lankford, came to live with her in 1831. Lankford, who
had experienced the required emotional Methodist conver-
sion, helped Palmer understand that belief in God was
enough to assure her salvation. This understanding formed
the basis of the “Holiness” doctrine that Palmer would later
preach. By 1837, Palmer was able to claim that her devotion
to God and her freedom from sin was complete.

Lankford also inspired her sister to assume more of a
leadership role in Methodist prayer meetings for women. Be-

Beginning in 1835, Palmer conducted regular women’s prayer
meetings at her home. These meetings would become a
major part of the “Holiness movement toward Christian per-
fection.” At first, Lankford led these Tuesday “meetings for
the promotion of holiness.” Palmer took them over after her
sister moved away. From that point, Palmer became a
pivotal figure in the movement, basing her teachings on her
own experiences on the path to “Christian perfection.” Her
basic message was that people should place every part of
themselves on the altar of God to ensure that they would
become perfect in love and, thus, holy. Attendance at the
meetings grew from a small group to hundreds, forcing
Palmer and her husband to build extra rooms.
By 1839, the meetings became open to evangelicals of both sexes. Soon, the meetings attracted people from other religious denominations. Attendees included bishops and pastors as well as professors and laypeople.

As her influence grew, Palmer expanded her activities to include “protracted meetings,” another established Methodist practice that had been introduced by revivalist Charles Finney. By this time, Palmer had become a skillful and articulate speaker, and the protracted meetings provided her with a forum where she began her preaching. With her husband, she soon began preaching at Methodist camp meetings and Holiness revivals in other parts of the country. By 1850, the couple traveled throughout the eastern United States and Canada, preaching at camp meetings and other venues.

Wrote Several Books

Palmer became a regular contributor to the Guide to Holiness, the leading publication of the perfectionist movement. She also wrote several books including The Way of Holiness (1843), her best-known book and the one that established her as a leader of the perfectionist movement. She also wrote Entire Devotion to God (1845) and Faith and its Effects (1848).

In 1847, she refined and further developed the concept of “altar theology,” which explained the idea of the “second blessing,” or immediate sanctification. As a basis for this concept, she drew on the Apostle Paul, who had advanced the idea of placing oneself as a “living sacrifice” on the altar of God to represent complete consecration. This “altar theology” simplified sanctification into a three-step process that included consecration, faith, and testimony. This concept, as well as her central theme of holiness of heart and life, gained popularity with Methodists, but it was not widely accepted in the Methodist Episcopal Church. Opponents challenged her, finding her theology less sound than that of church founder John Wesley. Even Bangs, who taught Palmer her catechism when she was a child, disagreed with her. He complained that she was turning sanctification into a simplistic and mechanical process.

Activities Increased

In 1850 she headed the Methodist Ladies’ Home Missionary Society and established a mission in the squalid Five Points neighborhood in New York City. The mission grew out of her belief that holiness was best demonstrated by human service. It also stemmed from her conviction that people needed food, clothing, and shelter to be able to best respond to God. Palmer administered care for the sick and needy within the dangerous slum. She also worked as a corresponding secretary for the New York Female Assistance Society for the Relief and Religious Instruction of the Sick Poor. As far as social issues were concerned, Palmer was a moderate in her stance, but she spoke out against slavery and alcohol, and she advocated more freedom for women in church and society.

By the end of the 1850s, Palmer had reached the high point of her preaching career, as both men and women viewed her as a leader. She not only brought the sexes together in worship, she also advanced the role of female preachers. She had become a prominent religious figure at a time when very few women rose to positions of power in America. Other women involved in leadership roles performed their services in their homes. Palmer was one of the few who took her message on the road and in the process became the recognized spokesperson for the Holiness movement.

Part of her success was attributable to her power as a speaker. She converted thousands of people in the United States, and by the end of the decade she and her husband were preaching in England as well. But she also happened to be in the right place at the right time. Many of her converts had been seeking an alternative to the message of the traditional church. Also, at this point in American history, the revivalist or evangelical approach to religion perfectly suited the temper of the times and the “Manifest Destiny” vision of the United States.

Later Years

By 1862, Palmer’s husband bought the Guide to Holiness, the leading publication of the Holiness movement, and Palmer became the publication’s editor, a position she held for the rest of her life. In 1865, she wrote Four Years in the Old World, a book that chronicled her experiences in England.

After the Civil War, she served as a leader of the National Camp Meeting Association for the Promotion of Holiness. Also, the international reach of her mission extended beyond Canada and Great Britain and into other areas in Europe. In 1867, she and her husband established the National Association for the Promotion of Holiness, which encompassed much of her evangelical work. She also continued holding her Tuesday meetings right up until she died in New York City on November 2, 1874. She was buried in Greenwood Cemetery in Brooklyn. After her death, the new editors of the Guide to Holiness continued printing previously unpublished articles she had written as well as some of her letters and diary entries.

Online

Charles Fox Parham

Charles Fox Parham (1873–1929) is often referred to as the “Father of Modern Day Pentecostalism.” Rising from a nineteenth century frontier background, he emerged as the early leader of a major religious revivlist movement. He emphasized the role of the Holy Spirit and the restoration of apostolic faith. With his evangelistic zeal, he also advanced the concept of “speaking in tongues.” Though his influence in the movement diminished later in life, his enormous impact on the development of Pentecostal faith was widely recognized.

Early Life

Charles Fox Parham was born June 4, 1873, in Muscatine, Iowa, the third son of William and Ann Parham. He lived the American frontier experience, reared on the tenets of populism. In 1878, William Parham packed his family into a covered wagon and moved to Anness, Kansas, where they lived comfortably on a profitable 160-acre farm.

Parham was a sickly youth, suffering from encephalitis and tapeworms. Making matters worse, when he was nine years old, he caught rheumatic fever, which weakened his heart, a condition that troubled him throughout his life.

His parents adhered to no particular religious faith but they were God-fearing people. Parham embarked on his own theological journey, first joining the Methodist faith in 1886 after he was converted during an evangelistic meeting. An intelligent youth and avid reader, Parham taught Methodist Sunday school and then, when he was only 15, he became a minister.

Parham’s religious beliefs and the later teachings of his ministry were greatly influenced by two deeply spiritual experiences he had as a youth. The first occurred, he claimed, when he was 13 years old, when he became bathed in a bright light while performing a repentance prayer ritual. The second event, which he claimed took place when he was 18, involved a miraculous cure of his rheumatic fever and resulting heart condition. Though Parham would continue having heart troubles, he came to see himself on a mission to provide the same healing experience for others.

Beginning in 1890, he attended Southwest Kansas College in Winfield, studying religion and then medicine. After he suffered a recurrence of rheumatic fever that nearly killed him, he returned to his evangelistic pursuits. He earned a minister’s license from the Southwest Kansas Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church, and when he was 20 he became a temporary pastor at the Eudora Methodist Church near Lawrence, Kansas. But Parham was often at odds with his Methodist superiors. Conflicts arose because Parham’s theology veered in the direction of the Holiness movement, a revivlist offshoot of Methodist theology with tenets that included sanctification, baptism by the Holy Spirit, and divine healing.

Started Own Ministry

By 1895, Parham broke with Methodism—in fact, all denominationalism—for good. He started his own independent evangelical ministry in Kansas, where he held revival meetings that emphasized personal salvation. He also advocated a return to the fundamental teachings of the scriptures, or “primitive Christianity.”

In 1886, he married Sarah Thistlethwaite, the daughter of Quaker parents. A year later they had a son. In 1898, as his ministry grew, Parham moved his family to Topeka, Kansas, where he established his base of operations. His other activities included running a rescue mission for the poor and sinners, an employment agency, and an orphanage service and publishing the Apostolic Faith, a Holiness periodical.

For much of this period, Parham took his evangelistic mission through parts of the United States and Canada. When his efforts met with little success, he became discouraged. But his sense of mission was revitalized in 1890 when he studied with Frank Sandford, a well-known member of the Holiness Movement who had started the Holy Ghost and Us Bible School in Shiloh, Maine. Parham’s visit to Shiloh strengthened his beliefs about baptism of the Holy Spirit. Taking that belief a step further, Parham started to believe that the Holy Spirit would enable converts to spontaneously speak foreign languages. This he termed “missionary tongues,” because it would enable the new believers to go out and convert people all over the world. This ability eventually became widely known as “speaking in tongues.”

Parham first heard someone imbued with the power to speak in tongues at Shiloh. However, Sandford placed less significance on it than Parham, believing it to be something that only occasionally happened during intense prayer. But Parham felt that converts could use the ability to evangelize the world.

Credited with Starting Pentecostalism

Now revitalized, Parham returned to Kansas and started his own Bible school in October 1900. Calling it the Bethel Healing Home, he modeled it in part after Sandford’s school, and he taught college-age students the need for a restoration of New Testament Christianity, or a return to “primitive Christianity.” Biblical truth, Parham preached, could be gained only by returning to the teachings of the Apostles and following the words found in the Book of Acts. That part of the Bible, Parham believed, was where the true word of God was found. Parham eventually expanded his theology to include the laying of hands on others during prayer, speaking in tongues, and baptism of the Holy Spirit, which led to purification of the soul. Religious historians regard the opening of Parham’s Bible school as the birth of modern Pentecostalism.

Parham had about 40 students. In late December 1900, Parham left the school for several days to fulfill some outside
preaching engagements. He told his students to pray and study while he was gone. During Parham’s absence, the students participated in intense collective prayer sessions, allowing themselves to be overwhelmed by a spiritual fervor. The students believed they were in the “last days,” as Parham had predicted the world would end in 1925. When Parham returned, he was told that one of his students, Agnes Ozman, spontaneously had gained the ability to speak in tongues during a prayer session.

Apparently, on the last day of 1900, Ozman began speaking Chinese, despite the fact that she never had studied the language. This led Parham to deduce that the baptism of the Holy Spirit would be accompanied by the ability to speak in tongues, a novel conclusion at the time. In Pentecostal historical chronicles, Ozman’s experience is regarded as a significant event, and she is cited as being the first Bible student of modern times to undergo apostolic baptism of the Holy Spirit accompanied by speaking in tongues. According to accounts, within a few days, Parham and about half the students also underwent the same experience. Parham maintained that this sudden collective ability was directly attributable to God. Parham termed the ability to speak in tongues as “xenoglossiae,” which means “foreign tongues” in Greek. The reason God provided this gift, he said, was to allow true believers to go out into all parts of the world and save souls without having to learn a foreign language. In the wake of this collective experience, Parham founded a new movement called the “Apostolic Faith.”

In 1901, Parham closed his school and took some of his students on the road, holding evangelistic services throughout the Midwest. But his efforts met with only middling success. Around this time, Parham endured other troubles. His beliefs were drawing criticism and even ridicule from newspapers and local citizens. Also, his one-year-old son died.

Expanded his Ministry

By 1903, it was being noticed that none of the followers of Parham were leaving the heartland of America to go overseas and evangelize the world. Still, his Apostolic Faith movement entered a period of strong growth. He held a hugely successful revival in Galena, Kansas, which lasted for months and resulted in 800 conversions. Participants also reported hundreds of Holy Spirit baptisms accompanied by the speaking of tongues as well as 1,000 testimonies of healing. Buoyed by this success, Parham decided to expand his ministry into the Southwest.

In 1905, he was invited to preach in Orchard, Texas, on Easter Sunday. His message was well received and it soon spread throughout the state. In the fall, he conducted a huge revival in Galveston, Texas. In December, he opened the Bible Training School in Houston.

In Houston, Parham met William Joseph Seymour, an African American Baptist minister who wanted to join Parham’s school. Despite his own segregationist beliefs, Parham allowed Seymour to attend. Seymour was poor and uneducated. But he would have a huge impact on the development of Pentecostalism. Seymour went to Los Angeles in 1906 and, using the preaching credentials he earned from Parham, he opened a mission in an old warehouse located on Azusa Street.

Meanwhile, Parham traveled to Illinois, where he was well received. His missionaries were beginning to travel to places such as India and Africa. It seemed as if he was finally realizing his vision of an international mission.

In Los Angeles thousands of people were soon attracted to Seymour’s mission, where services were held three times daily, seven days per week. Over the next several years, Pentecostal missionaries who had received the baptism in the Holy Spirit at Seymour’s mission were going across the world, setting up other missions.

The huge success of the Azusa Street mission was a big surprise. During the enthusiastic services, participants reportedly spoke in tongues and engaged in fervent prayer. The mission also gained a reputation as a setting for wild scenes. The meetings began to be filled with fringe figures such as spiritualist mediums, hypnotists, and others who had a deep interest in the occult. Newspapers reported hearing “weird babbling” emanating from the structure. Soon the mission attracted the curious, who had no desire to be saved but merely wanted to witness the events.

Despite the controversy it generated and the curiosity it aroused, the mission also attracted true believers. Hundreds were saved and set out on evangelistic missions. In fact, almost all of the major Pentecostal associations that sprung up in subsequent years could trace their origins back to Azusa Street.

Diminished Influence

By 1907, nearly 13,000 people reportedly had accepted Parham’s Pentecostalism. However, at this point, the movement began to slip away from him, take on a life of its own and move in other directions. The great success of the Azusa mission created an irreparable rift between Parham and Seymour. Parham visited the mission once and was reportedly aghast at the racial integration and the extreme emotionalism demonstrated. Parham tried to exercise some control over the proceedings, but Seymour discouraged his efforts.

Parham’s inability to exercise his influence over the mission marked the start of his decline as a leader. Parham not only alienated Seymour, but others became disenchanted with his judgmental attitude as well as some of his theological concepts. After 1906 and the emergence of the Azusa Street mission, Parham’s name turns up less frequently in the history of Pentecostalism.

Also, in 1907 Parham encountered some legal difficulties that did terrible harm to his reputation. He was arrested in Texas for alleged sexual misconduct involving young boys. However, charges were dropped as no one came forward to testify. Today, it is generally regarded that the charges were without merit and most likely resulted from a conspiratorial campaign to discredit him initiated by anti-Pentecostal religious leaders. Nevertheless, the accusation was enough to do substantial damage, and he subsequently
lost much of his credibility with the neo-Pentecostal movement.

Many of Parham’s most loyal followers began rejecting some of his concepts, including his beliefs about salvation and the coming “Rapture” or end of the world. They also started revising his notions about speaking in tongues. The new Pentecostals reviewed the Bible to gain more understanding of this mysterious phenomenon, and they believed it was an intense and personal spiritual experience that resulted from prayer, but they rejected Parham’s idea that it could be useful in establishing international missions. Many had even less tolerance for his more bizarre ideas. Indeed, some of his beliefs later made him an embarrassment to the movement, particularly his belief in Anglo-Israelism, which claimed that Anglo-Saxons were descended from the ten lost tribes of Israel. The concept was closely tied with the so-called “two seed theory of Christian Identity,” which had racist and anti-Semitic overtones.

The Movement Splintered

By the end of 1913 independent Pentecostal organizations began forming within the movement, including the Church of God in Christ, the Assemblies of God, the United Pentecostal Church, and the Pentecostal Church of God. As Parham watched his influence slip away, he became embittered and resentful. In 1919 Charles Shumway of Boston University published a dissertation, A Critical History of Glossolalia, that was highly critical of Parham and maintained that speaking in tongues was a psychological phenomenon rather than a spiritual one.

In retrospect, religious historians recognized Parham’s importance to the development of Pentecostalism. Many of the individuals who would become leading figures in the movement received their baptism and education in Parham’s ministry. Loyal followers, who remained staunch in their support, downplayed his alleged anti-Semitism by pointing to the love he demonstrated later in his life for Israel and the Jewish people. In 1927, two years before he died, Parham even made a trip to Palestine.

Parham died in his home in Baxter Springs, Kansas, sometime in 1929. The date of his death is not certain. After his death, the Charles F. Parham Center for Pentecostal-Charismatic Studies, an independent research facility at South Texas Bible Institute in Houston, was established. The Center maintains an extensive special library, conducts research projects, and presents public symposiums and other events. Just as Parham was throughout his ministry, the center is non-denominational and strives to serve all churches.

Online


Lucy González Parsons

A multidimensional pioneer, Lucy González Parsons (1853–1942) not only was one of the first minority activists to associate openly with left radical social movements, she emerged as a leader in organizations primarily composed of white males. In her associations with anarchist, socialist, and communist organizations, González Parsons took up the causes of workers, women, and minorities, as well as the homeless and unemployed.

González Parsons’s origins are shrouded in mystery. Much of the mystery is due to her own conflicting accounts of her place of birth, name, date of marriage, and national origins. The best record dating her birth indicates sometime in March of 1853, and her birthplace was probably on a plantation in Hill County, Texas. She publicly denied her African ancestry and claimed only a Native American and Mexican mixed heritage. According to Carolyn Ashbaugh in Lucy Parsons, American Revolutionary, however, there is a very strong probability that she was born a slave, and there is historical evidence that she lived with a former slave of African descent, Oliver Gathing, before her union with Albert Parsons in 1871.

Albert Parsons, a confederate soldier in his youth, was a radical Republican and was the subject of violent mob attacks both as a result of his politics and his marriage to a woman of darker hue. (Albert Parsons was white.) Texas’s hostile environment as a Ku Klux Klan stronghold made the couple’s departure imperative, and in 1873 they took up residence in Chicago.

Experienced Chicago Labor Unrest

Albert and Lucy Parsons arrived in Chicago during a period stamped by an economic crisis and intense labor unrest. The clashes between workers, whose material conditions had eroded drastically, and capitalists, who had enlisted armed support, were daily public encounters. Albert Parsons was a printer by trade, and the couple made their home in a poor working class community. Living among Chicago’s impoverished yet militant workers was
the catalyst for the Parsons’ political transformation from radical Republicanism to radical labor movement activism. The Parsons had two children: Albert Richard, born in 1879, and Lula Eda, born in 1881. Lula Eda died in 1889 from lymphadenoma.

Their initial association with the political left was through the Social Democratic Party and the First International, founded by Karl Marx and Frederick Engels. It was through this contact that the Parsons became aware of the socialist ideology of Marxism. Their ties to these groups, however, were short-lived, since both organizations were disbanded in 1876, the year the Parsons became affiliated. In the wake of the dissolution of the Social Democratic Party and the First International, they joined the Workingmen’s Party of the United States.

Minority Socialists Emerged

The Chicago chapter of the Workingmen’s Party (WPUSA) held many of its meetings in the Parsons’ home. Albert, as a representative of the WPUSA, vied in the 1877 local elections for ward alderman. The year 1877 was a crucial turning point in the history of the United States. It marked the end of the Reconstruction era and the start of the first general strike ever witnessed in this country, the great railroad strike of 1877. While the WPUSA did not start the strike, it was the most active political party to lend organized support to it. It attempted to infuse the strike with socialist propaganda. Out of the strike and the political womb of the WPUSA were born the first minority socialists in the United States, Lucy González Parsons and Peter H. Clark. Clark had joined the Workingmen’s Party in March of 1877 and was affiliated with the Cincinnati branch.

While the party’s work around the strike had considerably enhanced its visibility and membership roll, a political division resulted in the formation of a new party in December of 1877, the Socialistic Labor Party (SLP). (In 1892, the name became the Socialist Labor Party.) The SLP organ, the Socialist, became a means for González Parsons to express her views on the struggles of the working class. In addition to poems, she penned articles denouncing the capitalist class and describing the plight of the workers. González Parsons combined writing for the Socialist, speaking for the Working Women’s Union, and motherhood. The Working Women’s Union, founded some time in the mid-1870s, pressed women’s issues before the SLP and demanded women’s suffrage as a party platform item, as well as equal pay for men and women.

By the early 1880s, both González Parsons and Peter H. Clark had left the SLP. Clark departed due to the neglect of a specific program addressing the issue of black people, while González Parsons left to join the International Working People’s Association (IWPA). The IWPA was an anarchist organization; it called for the abolition of the state, cooperative production, and autonomy of workers through voluntary association. The foremost problem of the SLP, in González Parsons’s view, was its reformism; that is, its peaceful approach to transforming capitalist social relations.

Advocated Violent Overthrow of Capitalism

The IWPA was open to all methods that would lead to the overthrow of capitalism. According to Carolyn Ashbaugh, González Parsons stated: “Let every dirty, lousy tramp arm himself with a revolver or knife on the steps of the palace of the rich and stab or shoot their owners as they come out. Let us kill them without mercy, and let it be a war of extermination and without pity.” González Parsons had no illusions about the peaceful transfer of power, nor any belief in the peaceful coexistence of capitalism and labor. However, she did cling to one of the SLP’s illusions, that racism would immediately be eradicated in class struggle. The SLP believed further that the origin of racist violence was not in racism, but in the dependency of minorities as workers.

Though González Parsons belittled the complexity of the relationship of racism to capitalism, she, unlike most minority leaders in 1886, called for armed resistance. According to Foner, she made the point, “You are not absolutely defenseless. For the torch of the incendiary, which has been known with impunity, cannot be wrested from you.”

This statement is most revolutionary and radical, especially when placed in the context of minority political leadership. For example, the year 1886 was the high tide of Booker T. Washington’s accommodationist posture. On May 1, 1886, González Parsons was a key leader in the strike at Haymarket Square, Chicago, for an eight-hour work day. The strike ultimately resulted in a bombing and the arrest of Albert Parsons and seven other activists. Lucy González Parsons attempted to rally a defense of the “Haymarket Eight” and made over 40 speeches in a tour of 17 states as part of this effort. In 1887, however, Albert Parsons was executed, along with three of his comrades.

González Parsons Founded Newspaper

The added tragedy of the death of her daughter shortly following her husband’s execution did not discourage González Parsons’s involvement in radical politics. In 1892 she started her paper, Freedom, which covered such issues as lynching and peonage of black sharecroppers. By 1905, she became a founding member of the Industrial Workers of the World (IWW). The IWW’s political line espoused the independence of trade unions and their control of the wealth and power. González Parsons insisted that women, Mexican migrant workers, other minorities, and even the unemployed, be full and equal members of the IWW. She also worked closely with William “Big Bill” Haywood and Elizabeth “The Rebel Girl” Gurly Flynn, both of whom later joined the Communist Party.

Organizing the homeless and unemployed, González Parsons led significant battles in San Francisco in 1914 and Chicago in 1915. The cause of political prisoners became a central focus for her in the 1920s and she joined the International Defense Fund. She was involved in the cases of Tom Mooney, the trade unionist, the “Scottsboro Boys,” and Angelo Herndon. She was elected to serve on the national
committee of the ILD in 1927. In 1939, she became a member of the Communist Party.

In 1942 González Parsons died in a fire in her home, which was subsequently ransacked by government authorities. Papers, books, and other sources that captured the long life of a veteran of the political movements of the left were removed. Lucy González Parsons’s legacy was preserved, however, by the younger members of the Communist Party, for whom she had been a source of knowledge, experience, and political wisdom.

Books

Arvo Pärt

Arvo Pärt (born 1935) was a prolific modern composer whose works were noted for their minimalism and deep spirituality. He composed works for full orchestra and chamber groups as well as choral and keyboard pieces. His work was performed in concert halls and incorporated into religious observances.

Began Career in Radio

Pärt was born on September 11, 1935, in Paide, Estonia, and was raised in Tallinn, the Estonian capital. He worked for Estonian Radio in Tallinn from 1957 until 1967 as a sound director. He also composed music for film and television for the Estonian network. His radio work had an unexpected influence on his approach to composition. In a 1998 interview in the Estonian newspaper Postimees, Pärt said: “The high end of audio techniques, which comes from having a high quality apparatus, drove me to the opposite extreme. To music’s being, because audio cosmetics do not speak of substance. Music’s substance is the interaction between two, three or four notes. The first steps, the changes which occur between these notes. For this you don’t need sound techniques, you don’t require a Steinway. This comes from the human voice, it begins with the most primitive instrument. I am not against the progress of audio techniques but you shouldn’t overestimate their importance.”

While at the Tallinn Conservatory, he studied composition with Heino Eller. He graduated in 1963. Pärt won first prizes in the 1962 All-Union Young Composers’ Competition in Moscow for a children’s cantata and an oratorio. He also worked with twelve-tone structure and other experimental forms.

Interest in Early Music

Pärt was first associated with mainstream modernist and avant-garde composition. He particularly explored serial composition, in works such as the orchestral piece “Nekrolog” (1960–1961) and many others up through “Credo” (1968).

Pärt interrupted his career for several years in the 1970s, choosing to study medieval and Renaissance music rather than to focus on his own music. In particular, he examined early chants and polyphony. About this same time, he converted to the Russian Orthodox faith. The only two pieces he wrote during this period were Symphony No. 3, written in 1971, and a cantata composed in 1972.

Pärt resumed composing in 1976. Opera News observed that after his hiatus, “his work has reflected that study, combining elements of early music, Eastern Orthodox spirituality and a search for unity through pristine beauty and simplicity.” Because his music was so experimental and his newer works were concerned with religious ideas, his music was “not recommended” for performance during the 1970s by officials of the Soviet Union, of which Estonia was a member. Estonian student musicians and professionals continued performing Pärt’s works in secret. In 1980, Pärt and his wife left Estonia, first moving to Israel and then to Austria, where he became a naturalized citizen.

“Holy Minimalism”

Pärt was most frequently compared to his contemporaries Henryk Gorecki, a Polish composer of works such as Third Symphony, Op. 36, “Symphony of Sorrowful Songs” (1976), and John Tavener, a British composer. Their genre was dubbed “‘holy minimalism.” Terry Teachout wrote in Commentary in 1995: “There is no commonly accepted term for this style, though it is sometimes referred to as ‘European mysticism’ or ‘holy minimalism.’ . . . All three men are intensely religious, are associated with orthodox faiths, and write both secular scores and music intended for liturgical usage; all three use repetition in a manner broadly reminiscent of the American minimalists.”

Pärt’s music was built on the successes of popular avant-garde minimalist composers such as Philip Glass and Steve Reich. Teachout said “the long road away from Schoenberg and Cage to Henryk Gorecki was paved in part by the easy-on-the-ear minimalism of Philip Glass and his contemporaries, as well as by the accessible avant-gardism of George Crumb. . . . It took classical music a full half-century to escape the cul de sac of hermetic modernism and reclaim the usable past of tonality.”

Pärt called his musical approach tintinnabuli. Jeffers Engelhardt, writing in Notes in 2001, explained it as “an onomatopoeic term recalling liturgical bells. As a musical language, tintinnabuli is concerned with three essential elements: the triad, the linear melodic line, and silence. As a compositional process, tintinnabuli unites these elements with a sacred text in a manner that is at once systematic and
deeply symbolic. . . . What emerges is a constellation of word and tone ranging from the austere to the playful.” According to Engelhardt, the best examples of such works by Pärt were “Zwei slawische Psalmen (1984),” a piece using Psalms 117 and 131, sung in Church Slavonic, and “Te Deum” (1984–1985; rev. 1992).

The Sound of Silence

Another telling characteristic of Pärt’s work was his use of silence within music. In a 1998 interview with Daniel Zwerdling on National Public Radio, Pärt, through an interpreter, referred to those silences as “intervals,” which he said “take up a life of their own when the whole piece is being played in a cathedral. In my music, there is no difference concerning the importance between the musical parts and the parts with the silences. I would even go so far as to say that the silences become a very special life and a very special importance of their own. The score is written in a way that makes it necessary to have the silences for the overtones to create a new layer that vibrates during the silence parts.”

Pärt was usually silent himself, rarely submitting to interviews. And when he did, he seemed evasive, even shy, in answering questions about his works and their meaning. He said he disliked talking and preferred silence. During a press conference, Brian Hunt of the Daily Telegraph said he came to see Pärt’s seeming evasiveness as “a complete misunderstanding. He does not want to say anything without meaning; he does not want to manufacture answers simply to satisfy a questioner; he does not want words to obscure truths which only music can express.”

Pärt said in the 1998 interview in Postimees that it was difficult to use language to describe his music: “There are as many different ways of perception as there are listeners and all of them are justified. From the perception to the words, however, there is a great loss when music is being written about. . . . You can write about your impressions, the music’s structure, its form and perhaps something else. It is much more difficult to put music itself into words. I think it that truth, that exists in art and music, causes a resonance in a person somewhere deep and secret. When they themselves have a need to feel the truth and a gift for the cognition of the truth. Music remains music and a word is still a word. They can very freely and peaceably coexist.”

Pärt frequently based his work on passages from the Bible such as the Psalms or New Testament, while other pieces used religious texts such as the prayers of St. John Chrysostom or church liturgies such as the Russian Orthodox Canon of Repentance. Examples of the latter include “Memento” (1994) and “Kanon Pokajanen” (1997). Many of Pärt’s works were recorded by the Estonian Philharmonic Chamber Choir and the Tallinn Chamber Orchestra.

Difficulty in Simplicity

Tom Manoff, music critic for the National Public Radio program “All Things Considered,” observed that Pärt was a “kind, often funny man. Pärt can communicate the most profound sentiment without solemnity. . . . Pärt’s music may strike the listener as sometimes sparse, but this apparent simplicity does not make for easy performance. His often transparent collage of sound in which an instrument or a voice may suddenly enter and then disappear makes his music difficult to perform.”

Pärt said the act of composition is different for each artist, but it is always difficult. He said in the Postimees interview: “I believe that a true artist is always faced with the situation of making a sacrificial choice. . . . Behind the sacrifice is love. Universal love.” In the same interview, Pärt said his commercial compositions helped him only in “getting money for a sandwich. It doesn’t help me in any other way.”

Critics Divided

Though many contemporary critics found Pärt’s compositions accessible, others thought his work too minimal. In a 2000 Opera News review of Pärt’s “I Am the True Vine,” a piece originally commissioned for the nine hundredth anniversary of the Norwich Cathedral, the anonymous reviewer wrote: “I appreciate this music, respect it and am even moved at times by its plain beauty and its holy treatment of its ancient liturgical texts; I understand how it differs from minimalism and from New Age. Still, in the end, stasis is stasis is stasis.”

“The music of Arvo Pärt can be somewhat polarizing,” observed Rick Anderson in a 2002 review in Notes about Pärt’s “Johannes-Passion,” a recording of a choral piece based on the Passion According to St. John. “While many find the emotional intensity and spirituality of his compositions inspiring and uplifting, others react with less enthusiasm to the relatively static harmonic movement and lack of thematic development that typify his work.”

Will Hermes flippantly pointed out in a 1998 Entertainment Weekly review of “Kanon Pokajanen” that Pärt was “championed by Bjork, Michael Stipe, and descending candle merchants worldwide” but called the recording “a landmark a cappella choral work of brooding majesty based on the Russian Orthodox canon of repentance. Ambient-music fans may be a bit overwhelmed. But enter its exquisite polyphony and Christian pathology, and you will be utterly transported.”

Pärt contended in the 1998 interview that he had no favorite composition: “All the compositions are like my own children. It is not necessarily so that the healthiest or most beautiful child is the most precious. Some piece which has not succeeded and which may never be finished may still be the closest to one’s heart.”

Books


Periodicals

Commentary, April 1995.
The Daily Telegraph, November 1, 1997.
Notes, June 2001; March 2002.
Paul V

Pope Paul V (1550–1621) served as leader of the Roman Catholic Church for almost 16 years (1605–1621). Educated as a lawyer, he was a renowned expert on canon law. As pope, he often mediated political conflicts and sometimes was at the center of disputes, such as one with Venice in 1606 that almost escalated into a war. One of his major accomplishments was completing the construction of the Vatican. He was most famous for clashing with Galileo, forbidding him to publicly support the Copernican theory of the universe.

Early Life and Career

Pope Paul V was born as Camillo Borghese in Rome, Italy, on September 17, 1550. He was a descendant of an influential noble family of Siena. Family members claimed they were related to Saint Catherine, the great mystic. Paul V studied philosophy and law at Perugia and Padua and became an expert canon lawyer. In 1588 he was sent by Pope Sixtus V to Bologna as vice-legate.

His rise through the ecclesiastical ranks was slow but steady. In 1596, he was made cardinal and vicar of Rome by Pope Clement VIII. Paul V became known for showing no favoritism to any particular faction. Politically, that was a liability.

Assumed Papacy

When Pope Leo XI died on May 8, 1605, Borghese was one of several candidates to succeed him. The others included Cardinals Baronius and Robert Bellamine. Paul V's neutral stance toward the Church and society seemed to make him the logical choice. Still, some cardinals favored Cardinal Toschi of Modena. However, Cardinal Baronius said Toschi's lack of education and eloquence would be detrimental to the church. Thirty-two cardinals declared for Baronius. However, Paul V's neutrality made him more acceptable, and he was named Pope on May 16, 1605, becoming Pope Paul V when he was 55 years old.

When he took the reins of the church, he was under no obligation to anyone, and he refused to dispense any special favors. In one of his first acts, he ordered all bishops in Rome to return to their dioceses. He also saw it as his duty to ensure that every right earned by his predecessors was not violated. When he became pope, he immediately sought to restore any such privileges that had been taken away.

The new pope was described as vigorous and youthful for his age. His tall, commanding presence and his dignified bearing made him a charismatic figure, and he gained the respect and admiration of the people. But Paul was criticized for nepotism. It was said that he dispensed favors on his relatives and that he made the Borghese family wealthy while he was pope. However, many popes before him had done similar things.

Paul's reign as pope lasted nearly 16 years. He served from May 16, 1605, until his death on January 28, 1621. During his reign, he canonized St. Charles Borromeo and St. Frances of Rome. He also beatified Sts. Ignatius Loyola, Francis Xavier, Philip Neri, Theresa the Carmelite, Louis Bertrand, Thomas of Villanova, and Isidore of Madrid. Beatification is the last step toward canonization.

Uncompromising Leader

As in his previous positions, Paul V proved to be uncompromising. He enforced rules strictly, contributing to a number of disputes with various states. The dispute with the city of Venice in 1606 was the most serious, almost leading to a war throughout Europe. The controversy involved matters of ecclesiastical jurisdiction and relations between church and state.

There were two major issues. First, Venice defied church law that forbade the erection of new church build-
ings. Second, it arrested two clerics: Scipio Saraceni, canon of Vicenza, and Brandolino Valmarino, abbot of Narvesa. The oligarchs of the city wanted to put the clerics on trial in a secular rather than an ecclesiastical court. The two men were accused of crimes that included rape and homicide. When they were tried and imprisoned without notification to the Roman court, Paul protested. A staunch defender of ecclesiastical immunities, Pope Paul ordered his nephew, Horace Mattis, to secure the release of the imprisoned clerics. Paul intervened himself on their behalf with the Venetian ambassador in Rome. However, Venice denied the request, refusing to excuse the clerics from the jurisdiction of the civil courts.

Paul then demanded that Venice repeal its anti-clerical ordinances and further insisted the clerics be released from prison and given over to the ecclesiastical court. Venice refused to acknowledge his authority in the matter and Paul responded by placing the city under interdict that forbade services. The Venetian government defied the interdict by ordering priests to go ahead with church services. Some clerics refused, and they were expelled from the city. However, many other clerics sided with the city. Venice countered by expelling any papal representatives who tried to enforce Paul’s ruling.

The dispute grew quite harsh and almost developed into a war. Paul even tried to raise an army, but he backed down when England and Holland threatened to intervene on behalf of Venice. The dispute then became a war of words. Cardinals Baronius and Bellarmine stated the case for the church, while Paolo Sarpi, a Servite who was a sworn enemy of the Roman Court, attacked the pope.

Finally, in 1607, King Henry IV of France mediated and settled the matter peacefully. However, it turned out to be a victory for Venice. The city ceded very little and the Pope released it from censure. Still, Paul was extremely grateful to Henry IV for his intervention, and he would develop affection for the king. When Henry IV was assassinated in May of 1610 by a fanatic, Paul was deeply saddened and experienced a period of intense depression.

Paul V also had a dispute with King James of England. At issue was a new oath of allegiance required by the king. Paul felt the oath contained some clauses that would be impossible for Catholics, in good conscience, to accept. Paul wrote a friendly letter to the king in July of 1606, first congratulating him on his accession to the throne and then asking him to revise the oath. (Essentially the oath required that Catholics be loyal to the king above all else.) Paul opposed Galileo’s opinions about the Copernican theory of the universe, which clerics tended to view as heresy.

In the late 15th century, Galileo came to accept the Copernican model of the universe, which states that the Sun is the center of the universe and that the earth experiences annual motion. In the early 16th century, he began experimenting with telescopes and made some important discoveries that supported the theory, including the moons of Jupiter, Saturn’s rings, and the phases of Venus. He also began observing sunspots. In 1611, Cardinal Bellarmine asked Jesuit mathematicians to confirm Galileo’s discoveries. Even though they did, they offered different interpretations for the discoveries. In 1613, clerics started attacking the Copernican theory. Two years later, Cardinal Bellarmine told contemporary scientists to treat Copernican views only as a theory. Meanwhile, a Dominican friar, Niccolo Lorini, who had earlier criticized Galileo’s view in private conversations, filed a written complaint with the Roman Inquisition against Galileo’s views. Galileo wrote to Rome to defend his beliefs about the Copernican theory.

In 1616, a committee of advisors to the Roman Inquisition declared that the Copernican model of the universe was heresy. Galileo would even visit Roman to defend the theory. About Galileo’s visits, Guicciardini, ambassador from the Grand Duke of Tuscany, wrote that, “Galileo insisted on obtaining from the pope and the Holy Office a declaration that the system of Copernicus was founded on the Scriptures. He haunted the antechambers of the court and the palaces of the cardinals; he composed memorial after memorial. Galileo thought more of his own opinions than of those of his friends. After having persecuted and wearied many other cardinals, he at length won over Cardinal Orsini. The latter, with more warmth than prudence, urged His Holiness to favor the wishes of Galileo. The pope, tiring of the conversation, broke it off. Galileo carried into all these proceedings an extreme heat, which he had neither the strength nor the prudence to control. He might throw us all into great embarrassment, and I cannot see what he is likely to gain by a longer stay here.’”

Paul then told Cardinal Bellarmine to order Galileo not to advocate the Copernican theory. Specifically, the cardinal told the scientist not to hold, teach, or defend the theory. At the same time, however, both the pope and cardinal assured Galileo that he would not be put on trial or condemned by the Roman Inquisition. But, in 1633 Galileo was interrogated by the Inquisition for 18 days. In April of that year, he admitted that he might have stated his case too strongly. He even offered to refute the theory in a book. Paul was not impressed with either the admittance or the offer; he decided that Galileo should be imprisoned for an indefinite period of time. The Inquisition sentenced him to prison and religious penances. Later, at a ceremony at the church of Santa Maria Sofo Minerva, Galileo disavowed his acceptance of his previous beliefs, and he was placed in house arrest in Sienna, where he remained until 1642. (More than 300 years later, in 1983, the Church finally admitted that Galileo might have been right.)

**Opposed Galileo's Theories**

Perhaps Paul’s most historically significant dispute involved a matter of science rather than the affairs of nations.
Completing the Vactican

During his papacy, Paul V demonstrated a great love of art. A patron of artists, he commissioned Carlo Maderna to finalize the construction of the Vatican. The Basilica, which had been initiated by Julius II, was not yet complete. As part of the completion project, Paul ordered the construction of some chapels, the choir, the lower portico, a church, and the upper portico for the papal benediction.

During his Papacy, Paul also ordered new institutes for education and charity. He claimed that the increased construction provided two advantages: not only did it improve Rome, it also provided employment for artists and craftsmen who needed the work.

Died in Rome

Paul V died of a stroke on January 28, 1621, in Rome. He was 70 years old. He was pope for fifteen years, seven months, and thirteen days. He was succeeded by Pope Gregory XV. His remains were interred in the Vatican, in the Borghese chapel in St. Mary Major’s, where his monument was erected.

Online


Paco Peña

Spanish guitarist Paco Peña (born 1942) is known for his continued contributions to and explorations of flamenco music. He has recorded frequently, but appears to be in his element when performing in front of an audience, which could be anywhere throughout the world.

Acoustic Guitar noted in a 2002 interview that Peña “is known all over the world for the depth and intelligence of his music and for the breadth of his work as a collaborator, composer, and producer. His primary vehicle has always been the flamenco cuadro, a small ensemble including guitar, singers and dancers and his primary focus has always been on flamenco puro, pure flamenco. . . . However, he has never treated flamenco as something to be kept sacrosanct and separate from other forms of music and has shared the bill with everyone from Jimi Hendrix to Joe Pass to Leo Kottke.”

Childhood Devoted to Learning Guitar

Peña was born in Cordoba, Spain, in 1942 and grew up in Andalucía. He was one of nine children, one brother and seven sisters included. Peña recalled in that same Acoustic Guitar interview that his “mother had a vegetable stall in the market. We lived in a Casa de Vecinos, a house shared by about ten families. We had one very small room upstairs, and one room downstairs. The families lived in various bits of the house and we all shared one toilet and one kitchen,” he said. “In that situation, people made their own entertainment, and the kind of entertainment they made was a kind of flamenco or whatever was going on in the popular music of the time. The inclination of any young child was to join in.”

Peña explained this music to the UCLA Daily Bruin, “Flamenco is similar to the blues. . . . It has a tinge of sadness, an element of fight and rebellion. It is pain and suffering with explosions of great happiness. It is a symbol of Spain.”

Peña’s brother had begun playing guitar, which prompted him to start playing as well. Peña was not formally tutored in the art of guitar; he learned from his brother or friends and neighbors. He joined in with whomever was playing or singing in the neighborhood for fun. Peña was inspired by other musicians he heard on the radio, namely Elvis Presley and Paul Anka. His desire was to emulate them and other successful musicians.

His only musical education came at age nine, when he joined a rondalla, or folk ensemble. He contends his future successes were directly correlated to his desire and talent, which made others in the community invite him to play or participate in concerts. Peña was playing guitar whenever he could with whomever would ask him to play or accompany them.

Peña told Acoustic Guitar, “the thing was to just join in and make mistakes. That’s the way you learn flamenco. I don’t want to sound sad or dramatic, but I didn’t have any money for lessons. I had a friend, about my age, who played guitar in the market square. He had a teacher. He was learning bits from his teacher and I was learning bits from him. You try to absorb what you can.”

By some accounts, Peña began his professional career at the age of 12. He was involved in a government program designed to keep the traditions of various folk music and dances in Spain alive. It was during tours throughout Spain, as a part of this program, that he was hired to tour with a flamenco company. Peña was still attending school, but two years later, he was forced to leave school to help the family. He worked for a notary and in a hardware store while continuing to play.
Knowing that he wanted to pursue a career as a flamenco guitarist, he left for Madrid, then played clubs in the Costa Brava. Performers playing in the Costa Brava had a relatively easy life which consisted of playing guitar each night for about an hour-and-a-half. Days were spent meeting women at the beach and eating good food, but that was not enough.

**Embarked on Career as Soloist**

During a tour, he had been asked to perform a solo, which was atypical within the Spanish flamenco tradition. Peña began to wonder about the possibility of becoming a successful solo performer. In retrospect, he told the *UCLA Daily Bruin* in 1996 that his experience as part of a company left him “disillusioned.” He says he “expected people to be perfect, which was stupid, and when I saw that some people were not seeking artistic endeavors, I felt I was wasting my time and decided to play on my own.” As for the transition to performing solo, he says it was “all quite by accident.”

Peña ultimately moved to London with a flamenco company at the age of 24. Recalling his only solo appearance, the guitarist was tentative about performing alone, but says everything fell into place quickly. “I had a job waiting for me when I arrived. I was the main attraction at Restaurante Antonio in Covent Garden in London. Of course, my intention was to push on. Eventually, a manager saw me and one thing led to another,” he told *Acoustic Guitar*. “I was fascinated with the idea of being a professional, of being able to convince [an audience] with what I was doing.”

One of his first big performances was at a “guitar in” at London’s Royal Festival Hall. Jimi Hendrix was the headlining performer. Peña made his solo debut at Wigmore Hall, also in London. Of that performance, Peña told *Mixdown Monthly* that he was “quite unprepared for the experience of that event. It was very dramatic, because I was quite young, and in a way quite innocent about showbiz and all that.”

About the same time, he began learning technique from other guitarists, both classical and flamenco. He ultimately decided he needed to change his playing technique dramatically in order to improve his playing. Among the other players whom he credits as inspiration include Niño Ricardo, Ramón Montoya—who had been long dead, but whose recordings were an important learning tool—, and Sabicas. “I didn’t learn directly from them, but everything I played was in a way touched by their music. But it was always trying to be my music,” he told *Acoustic Guitar*. “I studied their music, listening to their recordings. I discovered a lot about their personalities through their music, what motivated them, and I fell in love, even more strongly, with their contribution.”

**Attained Notoriety Abroad and at Home**

In 1970, he organized his first flamenco touring company named Flamenco Puro. Since, he has been continually active in creating learning and performing opportunities for those interested in flamenco. He is the founder of a course leading to a degree in flamenco guitar at the Conservatory of Rotterdam, in which he is still actively involved. Peña founded the International Guitar Festival in Córdoba in 1980. His newest troupe, Paco Peña Flamenco Dance Company has toured throughout the world in various productions, each of which seems to generate critical acclaim for their dance and music fusion.

The Connecticut Classical Guitar Society in announcing a performance called Peña not simply a guitarist and composer, but also “dramatist, producer and artistic mentor” who “embodies both authenticity and innovation in flamenco.” For five consecutive years, readers of *American Guitar* magazine voted Peña as “Best Flamenco Guitarist of the Year.”

In a 1994 review in *American Record Guide*, William Ellis called Peña “simply the finest flamenco guitarist of his generation: breath-taking technique, passion to spare, and an ear for compositional improvisation few peers can match.” Ellis also wrote that although “Paco De Lucia may have the name from his cross-over forays into jazz and pop . . . Peña is the real deal, committed to the purity of cante flamenco.” Ironically, it was Peña who was named one of *Billboard* magazine’s Top 10 Crossover Artists of 1988.

Peña composes almost all the music he plays. Perhaps his best known work to date is *Misa Flamenca*, a flamenco-styled mass commissioned for a festival of religious music held in Poland. The piece was performed in collaboration with other flamenco artists as well as the renown Choir of the Academy of St. Martin in the Fields, a renowned British choral group, in 1991. It was later seen at the 1992 EXPO in Seville, Spain, then in worldwide performances. In 1997 Peña was given the Oficial de la Cruz de la Orden del Merito Civil by Spain’s King Juan Carlos.

**Remained True to Flamenco**

In a 2002 review of his Paco Peña Dance Company’s Voces y Ecos or Voices and Echoes, UK reviewer Nadine Meinsner wrote in the *Independent* that the production is “a perfect fusion of flamenco connoisseurship and stage know-how.” Of this same show, Sanjoy Roy wrote in *The Guardian* that it “is no picture-postcard tour of gypsy exotica. . . . Instead, it realises Peña’s open vision of flamenco’s diversity while remaining true to its soul.”

Reviewers have also noted with performances such as these by Paco Peña, “the dark soul of flamenco . . . is not just safe but vibrantly alive,” Jenny Gilbert commented in the *Independent*. “Despite appearances—the man is small, quiet, and cuts an almost absurdly modest figure hunched over his instrument on stage—the Cordóba-born musician knows just where to locate the [essence] of his native art form.”

Peña told *Mixdown Magazine* in 1999 he owns about 20 guitars “because through the years I have gone buying guitars, hoping to find something really good.” The one he plays most is a Spanish guitar built by Gerundino that he plays “endlessly, and still enjoy[s] it the most.” Many of his instruments are custom-made. Peña prefers an instrument that combines the best of the flamenco style guitar and classical guitar. These have very different sounds and construction. “It’s sort of intimate and difficult to explain, but fundamen-
tally what is important is the sound.” He goes on to say, “some guitars sing to you, and some may sound very loud but don’t have the sweet quality that you want to express.”

**Life-Long Loves: Musical Collaboration, Travel**

Peña has been very frank about his life-long love for playing—or, as he calls it, “linking”—with other performers. He says this linking is a creative recharging and learning process. He has played with a variety of other individuals and groups from a wide variety of backgrounds and musical traditions, including Inti-Illimani, a Chilean group; John Williams; and Peter Gabriel.

Peña makes his home in London, but still has family in Córdoba, where he keeps a second home. He told the UCLA Daily Bruin he enjoys touring. “Traveling exposes you to different people from whom you can learn. My travel experiences come back to my music. In fact, everything inspires my musical compositions. Flamenco deals with serious emotions of mankind, and I feel I am in tune with my music in that sense.”

**Periodicals**

*Europe Intelligence Wire (From The Guardian)*, October 22, 2002.
*Europe Intelligence Wire (From The Independent)*, October 21, 2002.

**Online**


---

**Arno Allen Penzias**

At various times—and sometimes all at once—German-born American scientist Arno Penzias (born 1933) has been a researcher, educator, and businessman. Because of that, he has often been called a “renaissance man,” someone who excels and exerts significant influence in a variety of areas. His most notable accomplishments were scientific—particularly in the field of astronomy—and his pioneering research resulted in him receiving the Nobel Prize in Physics. Working from the home base of Bell Laboratories, where he was employed for 37 years, Penzias would make scientific discoveries that provided new knowledge about the origin of the universe. He also was a prolific author, lecturer, and innovative businessman. As a high-ranking corporate executive, his innovative—indeed revolutionary—management strategies help create new paradigms that greatly influenced the direction of the corporate world in the late 20th and early 21st centuries. He has also been described as an engineer, philosopher, and humanitarian.

**Early Life**

Arno Allen Penzias was born April 26, 1933, in Munich, Germany, the eldest son of Karl and Justine Eisenreich Penzias. He had one brother, Gunther. His father was a self-employed leather broker. The close-
knit, middle-class family lived a rather comfortable life in Adolf Hitler’s pre-World War II Germany. However, in 1938, when Penzias was six years old, the Nazis deported Jews of Polish origin, including the Penzias family, to that country. (Penzias’s grandfather was born in Poland, so the Nazis refused to recognize the family’s German citizenship.) When the family arrived at the border, they were told that that Poland’s deadline for accepting immigrants had transpired. The Penzias family was sent back to Germany, a circumstance that most likely saved their lives. According to Penzias, the Polish Jews who had arrived on time were placed in an open enclosure where more than half froze to death.

Once back in Munich, Karl Penzias sought ways to get his family safely out of the country and, hopefully, into the United States. In the first step of their journey, they made it to England. The British government accepted 10,000 Jewish children, including Arno and Gunther, on humanitarian grounds and Penzias’s parents later acquired the necessary paperwork to enter the country. Finally, in 1939, the family obtained passage to the United States, leaving on an ocean liner. They arrived in New York City in January 1940.

Growing Up in the United States

Penzias attended public schools in the Bronx. His father found employment as an apartment building superintendent, which provided the family with rent-free housing. Later Karl Penzias worked in a carpenter shop at the Metropolitan Museum of Art while his wife worked in a coat factory, which provided the family with a much-needed second income. As a teenager, Penzias attended Brooklyn Technical High School. After graduation, he attended City College of New York, where he majored in chemical engineering. He graduated in the top 10 percent of his class in 1954. Also during this period, Penzias met and married his wife, Anne. After graduation, Penzias served for two years as a radar officer in the U.S. Army Signal Corps at Fort Devens, Massachusetts. After the army, he applied to Columbia University in the fall of 1956 and got a research assistantship in the Columbia University Radiation Laboratory, which was then involved with microwave physics.

Began Relationship with Bell Labs

In 1956, Penzias enrolled as a graduate student. For his thesis, he was assigned to build a maser amplifier in a radioastronomy, a device he could then employ in an experiment of his choice. He studied under Charles Townes, a Bell Labs consultant who would later receive the 1964 Nobel Prize in Physics for his invention of the maser and its later advancement, the laser. When Penzias completed his thesis in 1961, he got a temporary job at Bell Labs. Thus began a fruitful association that would last for 37 years. Later, he became a full-time member of the technical staff, conducting research in radio communications (radio astronomy, radio transmission, satellite communications, and radio reception). Employment at the labs provided him with the invaluable opportunity to participate in the groundbreaking, historic Echo and Telstar communications satellite experiments.

The “Big Bang” and Nobel Prize

It was at Bell Labs that Penzias established what would turn out to be a historically significant relationship with Bob Wilson, who was hired as a second radio astronomer by the company in 1963. Together, Penzias and Wilson were soon conducting research in radio astronomy and satellite communications, employing the company’s extremely sensitive radio astronomy antenna. In 1965, using this highly sensitive receiving system to study radio emissions from the Milky Way, they discovered a faint signal—a low-level noise—that seemed to permeate all space. When they first discovered the signal, they attributed it to a number of sources including the Milky Way, the sun, the antenna itself, and even pigeon droppings. After eliminating these possibilities, they found—to their astonishment—that it seemed to emanate from outside the Galaxy. Then they realized the source was the entire universe itself. Later, Penzias had an opportunity to discuss the perplexing phenomena with Princeton physicist Robert H. Dicke, who was developing the Big Bang Theory of the universe. When Dicke went to Bell Labs to see for himself, he helped confirm Penzias and Wilson’s discovery. Further, and more significantly, Dicke concluded that the two young researchers discovered what he had already predicted in his theory, that a background radiation at 3-degree Kelvin left over from the initial Big Bang would exist throughout the universe.

The existence of this microwave background radiation confirmed Dicke’s theory about the creation of the universe. It not only answered the “how” but the “when:” 15 billion years ago. Penzias and Wilson’s discovery, scientists would later say, was one of the most important in the history of the world. It was a major breakthrough in understanding the origin of the universe. In 1978, Penzias and Wilson would receive a Nobel Prize in Physics for their discovery.

Career Advancement at Bell Labs

In addition to his astronomical research, Penzias actively engaged in communications work at Bell Labs. In 1972 he became the head of the Radio Physics Research Department. His duties also grew to include administrative responsibilities. In 1976, he was named director of the Radio Research Laboratory.

His research continued producing scientific landmarks. In 1973, Penzias, Wilson, and co-worker Keith Jefferts discovered the existence of deuterium (heavy hydrogen) in outer space, which provided even more information about the birth of the universe. In 1976, he became the first American to receive an honorary doctorate degree in from the Paris Observatory, a 309-year-old institution founded by King Louis XIV. Penzias eventually would receive more than 20 honorary degrees for the work he did during the 1970s. He was often cited for his groundbreaking research in interstellar chemistry—efforts that would result in the discovery of key chemicals existing among the stars. In this research, he employed his own techniques to observe millimeter-wave radio spectra emanating from space, enabling him and his associates to identify carbon monoxide and other simple molecules in the clouds present in the spaces between stars. Their findings included the nuclear compo-
tion of the constituent atoms of these molecules, which proved to be remnants of burned-out stars and the raw materials for new ones. The impact these discoveries had on the field of astronomy was enormous.

In 1979, in addition to his other functions, he became head of Bell Labs’ Communications Sciences Research Division. Penzias would attribute his enormous success to Bell Labs, which gave him a great deal of freedom as a researcher.

Research Phase of Career Ended

In 1981, his career as a research scientist came to a sudden and unexpected end, thanks to a legal decision. AT&T and the U.S. Department of Justice settled a large antitrust suit by breaking up the Bell System. Because of the situation, Penzias was promoted to Vice-President of Research for the reorganized AT&T, a position he would hold for 15 years. As a result, his interest in astrophysics was soon replaced by an interest in the underlying principles of the creation and effective use of technology in society. This interest resulted in a book, *Ideas and Information*, published in 1989. Essentially, Penzias’s message in his book was that computers made wonderful tools but awful role models; that is, if a worker did not want to get replaced by a machine, then they should not act like one.

In 1995, he became vice president and chief scientist of AT&T Bell Laboratories. A year later, in 1996, Bell Labs split from AT&T and became part of Lucent. Despite the merger, Penzias retained his position. In 1997, he retired from Bell after 37 years. After retirement, he continued working as a senior technology advisor and spokesperson for Lucent. In addition, he became involved with the burgeoning venture capital community in California’s Silicon Valley, serving as an advisor and board member for several new small and mid-sized companies.

Gained Fame as Writer

Besides his research and business activities, Penzias was a prolific author during his career. He wrote more than 100 scientific papers, two books, two science fiction stories, and many technical and business articles. Because of his two books, he was inducted into the New Jersey Institute of Technology’s Literary Hall of Fame. His first book, *Ideas and Information*, received wide acclaim and was translated into most major foreign languages. His second book, *Digital Harmony: Business, Technology and Life After Paperwork*, looked at how new technologies were changing how people worked and lived, and it described how machines could work well together and with their human users.

Innovated Management Strategies

Penzias became almost as well known for his unique research and development management strategies as he did for his scientific discoveries. He would design strategic uses for information systems, and he helped the business world better understand the applications and impact of emerging technologies.

During the managerial phase of his career, he developed new and innovative business strategies that were embraced throughout the corporate world. In his later years with Bell Labs, he helped restructure that company and, in the process, developed new business models that helped other companies restructure their own organizations to be more efficient and profitable. Penzias’s managerial vision focused on integrating new technologies as well as freeing businesses from the traditional vertically integrated hierarchy. The vision also included increased product development and a stronger focus on customer satisfaction.

He also filed a number of patents including ones for a computer-based transportation system, a doubly-encrypted identity verification system, a participant tracking system for telephone conferences, and fraud prevention techniques for calling cards.

After retiring from the East Coast-based Bell Labs, Penzias relocated to California, offering his technical managerial knowledge to emerging technology-based companies in Silicon Valley. In 1997, he joined New Enterprise Associates, a venture-capital firm that specialized in early-stage investments in information technology and medical-and life-science companies.

Activities

Throughout his long and illustrious career, Penzias became affiliated with more than 25 organizations and academic institutions, including Harvard University, Princeton University, the California Institute of Technology, the University of Pennsylvania, and the State University of New York at Stony Brook. He was elected into many major organizations including memberships in the National Academy of Sciences, the International Union of Radio Science, the National Academy of Engineering, and the International Astronomical Union and fellowships in the American Academy of Arts and Sciences and the American Physical Society. He served on the board of directors for Home Wireless Networks, Fibex Technologies, A.D. Little, Duracell, and Warpspeed Communications. His academic activities also included a visiting membership with the Astrophysical Sciences Department at Princeton University from 1972 to 1982. He also became vice chairman of the Committee of Concerned Scientists, a national organization devoted to working for the political freedom of scientists in politically repressive countries.

Online

Oscar Peterson

One of the most admired, though sometimes controversial, pianists in jazz, Oscar Peterson (born 1925) in the post-war era claimed the same sort of status as earlier greats such as James P. Anderson, Art Tatum, Teddy Wilson, Fats Waller, Thelonious Monk, Bud Powell, and Bill Evans. Possibly the most successful artist produced by Canada, he has appeared on well over 200 albums spanning six decades and has won numerous awards, including eight Grammys. During his career he has performed and recorded with, among others, Louis Armstrong, Count Basie, Ella Fitzgerald, Dizzy Gillespie, Duke Ellington, and Charlie Parker.

Peterson came of age during the bebop and swing years of the 1940s. A brute force on the piano, Peterson, similar to his idol Art Tatum, seems to play without strain and with a great command of his instrument. “Oscar told me,” said younger pianist Billy Green to Don Heckman of the Los Angeles Times, “that the first thing he does when he sits down at the piano is to gauge the key drop—how far the keys on an individual instrument need to be depressed before the hammer hits the strings. He says—and he makes it sound so simple—that once he scopes that out, then he’s in complete control of the piano. For the rest of us, of course, there are a lot more steps involved.”

However, Peterson’s abilities proved both a blessing and a curse. His tendency to play at high speeds and overuse of harmonic complexities have led critics to call his technique too overwhelming at times. Furthermore, according to music historians, Peterson’s playing sometimes drowned out expression, leaving the intended musical statement uncommunicated. But perhaps, as many loyalists claim, Peterson just may be too good. And his durability and accomplishments have certainly validated his importance in the history of jazz.

Born with Talent

Oscar Peterson was born on August 15, 1925, in the Canadian city of Montreal, acquiring the musical confidence he exhibits today at an early age. Born with a naturally perfect pitch, he learned to play classical piano from his older sister Daisy, who also taught piano to Montreal pianist Oliver Jones. However, Peterson credits his father with first instilling in him the importance of music. Daniel Peterson, a West-Indian born Canadian Pacific Railroad porter and amateur musician himself, insisted that each of his five children develop musical skills. In particular, he wanted them to be exposed to music outside the values of the family, unlike the hymns that Peterson’s mother (Kathleen Olivia John), a cook and a housekeeper, sang at home.

In 1930, at the age of five, Peterson began on the trumpet and piano, concentrating on the piano alone by seven years of age after a bout with tuberculosis. Although his father was a strict disciplinarian and expected perfection from his children, Peterson says that he remained always his biggest supporter. “He told me, ‘If you’re going to go out there and be a piano player, don’t just be another one be the best.’ He always had the belief in me, for which I’m grateful,” as quoted by Maclean’s contributor Nicholas Jennings. Deriving a sense of dedication from his father, Peterson thus practiced from morning until night, taking breaks only for lunch and dinner.

Later, at the age of 14, Peterson studied with Paul de Marky, a renowned Hungarian-born classical pianist. He discovered through de Marky, who, according to Peterson, could mimic Art Tatum exactly, an interest in jazz. Another teacher, Lou Hooper, led Peterson to recognize the importance of the classics, teaching his students to communicate in phrases such as “I have always felt Chopin was looking at a lovely landscape at the time he composed this piece because everything about it is so lush and green-like,” recalled Peterson, as quoted by Gene Santoro for the New York Times.
Began Professional Career

Also at the age of 14, Peterson’s determination as a child resulted in his winning a Canadian Broadcasting Company radio show competition, and before long he was making regular appearances. Then, in 1942, he accepted an invitation to join the Johnny Holmes Orchestra, a popular Canadian jazz ensemble. Afterwards, in the mid-1940s, he formed his first jazz trio and landed a recording contract with the RCA Victor Canada label. By now, he was already known for his masterful, fluid playing technique. Those that visited the Alberta Lounge in Montreal to witness Peterson and his trio perform included Count Basie, Ella Fitzgerald, and other now-legendary figures in jazz.

On one particular night at the club in 1949, American jazz impresario Norman Granz was so impressed with Peterson that he asked the pianist to come to New York City with him as a surprise guest for his jazz at the Philharmonic (J.A.T.P.) events at Carnegie Hall. At the performance, Peterson shared the stage with the likes of Charlie Parker, Lester Young, and Coleman Hawkins, setting the young musician’s international career in motion. Thereafter, he spent much of the early-1950s touring with Philharmonic ensemble, traveling to 41 cities in North America in addition to appearing in Japan, Hong Kong, Australia, and the Philippines. Meanwhile, Granz became one of Peterson’s closest friends and manager. His record companies recorded a number of Peterson’s recordings, usually teaming the pianist with established artists like Fitzgerald.

The Classic Peterson

For most fans, the classic Oscar Peterson remains his trio organized in 1953, featuring bassist Ray Brown and guitarist Herb Ellis. Although drummerless, Peterson’s percussive style left little room for one anyway. The trio’s recordings together include 1955’s At Zardis, 1956’s At the Stratford Shakespearean Festival, and 1957’s At Concertgebouw. His next trio, in place by the late-1950s, included Brown and drummer Ed Thigpen, who remained with Peterson until 1965.

When Thigpen replaced Ellis, the group shifted from one in which any instrument could provide melody and harmony to the more standard piano, bass, and drums format. From here forward, Peterson would most often record in a standard trio setting. Some departures include Oscar Peterson Trio + 1, with flugelhornist Clark Terry, and the solo outing Tracks, both recorded in 1971.

Beginning in the early 1970s, Peterson embarked on a prolific touring and recording career, mostly for the Pablo Records label. Returning briefly to the drummerless trio, he recorded in 1973 Tracks and The Good Life, both featuring bassist Niels-Henning Orsted Pedersen and guitarist Joe Pass. He also recorded in a number of other settings, from duets with Dizzy Gillespie and Terry to symphony orchestra appearances. Meanwhile, Peterson was growing increasingly popular for his solo concerts, and he was recording during the 1970s and 1980s up to six albums per year.

Other Interests

During the 1990s, Peterson spent less time touring and recording in order to focus more on composing. However, in 1990, he reunited with Brown, Ellis, and drummer Martin Drew for an engagement at New York’s Blue Note, which yielded four releases. In these performances, critics praised Peterson’s emotional depth and softer playing style.

In 1993, Peterson suffered a stroke that diminished his ability to use his left hand. However, Peterson resolved not to give up performing and recording, initially spending hours in therapy to regain flexibility and control. And, as is often associated with strokes, he had to deal with the psychological trauma. “I still can’t do some of the things I used to be able to do with my left hand,” he said to Don Heckman for the Los Angeles Times. “But I’ve learned to do more things with my right hand. And I’ve also moved in a direction that has always been important to me, toward concentrating on sound, toward making sure that each note counts.”

In addition to his output on record, Peterson had been the subject of a 1995 video titled Oscar Peterson: Music in the Key of Oscar, featuring footage of various concerts, and a 1996 documentary called Oscar Peterson: The Life of a Legend. In 2002, the book A Jazz Odyssey: The Life of Oscar Peterson, written by the pianist in collaboration with literary scholar and jazz journalist Richard Palmer, was issued. Two years earlier, in July of 2000, Peterson was the subject of an exhibition at the National Library of Canada called “Oscar Peterson: A Jazz Sensation.”

Positions held by Peterson, who has 12 honorary degrees, include chancellor at York University, from 1991 until 1994. He also founded the Advanced School of Contemporary Music in Toronto. Peterson lives outside the city with his fourth wife, Celine, and continues his career as a concert pianist, though he knows he will one day make a final performance. “When that happens, there’s going to be no fanfare,” he told Jennings. “I’m just going to get up from the piano, take my bows, thank my group, and say, ‘This is it.’ Then I’ll close the piano and that will be the last time I play publicly.”

Books


Periodicals

Billboard, December 12, 1992; September 7, 1996; April 7, 2001.
Commentary, October 2002
Sándor Petőfi

Sándor Petőfi (1823–1849) was the foremost 19th century Hungarian lyricist. He was a master of the Magyar language, the native language of Hungary. His poems celebrated nature, life's joys and sorrows, the Hungarian people, married love, and later in his life, political freedom. Petőfi was a leader in the 1848–1849 Hungarian War of Independence. He died in battle.

Sándor Petőfi was born on January 1, 1823, in the rural community of Kiskörös, Hungary. His father, István Petrovics, was an innkeeper and butcher and his mother Mária Hruz, was the daughter of artisans and peasants. Petőfi had a brother, István, who was two years younger. The family moved to Fălegyházá when Petőfi was a child and he always considered that city to be his birthplace.

Petőfi was born during a time of renewed national pride in Hungary. By the early 19th century Hungary had endured nearly two centuries of warfare. Its native people, the Magyars, were oppressed and living in poverty under the control of the ruling family of Austria, the Hapsburgs. But a wave of national consciousness swept through the country during the first half of the century. This native pride brought a renewal of the Magyar language, in lieu of Latin and Germany. In the Lowlands where Petőfi grew up, he learned to love the Magyar language and the country’s landscape. The poetry for which he became known vividly describes the landscape, villages, animals, birds, and people of the Hungarian Lowlands.

The Petőfi family was considered well-to-do, but when Petőfi was 15, his father’s business failed following a flood and an attempt to expand the enterprise. Subsequent business ventures were never as successful as the inn had been.

Petőfi’s talent for writing poetry emerged when he was a teenager and at the age of 15, he won first prize for a poem written in hexameters. From his earliest works, Petőfi’s poems were noted for their honesty. In Hungarian Writers and Literature, Joseph Remányi said, “While it is somewhat difficult to apply strict literary judgment to his first versifying attempts, the honesty of expression was apparent in his formative years. He knew that creative sincerity must be blended with human sincerity.”

Despite his literary talent, Petőfi performed poorly in school, which frustrated his father. Petőfi attended eight schools by the time he was 16. At one point, he attempted to become an actor. Petőfi’s father disowned him in 1839, when he was 16, because of his disinterest in school. The rift did not diminish Petőfi’s lifelong love for his parents.

Out of frustration, Petőfi enlisted in the Army. He hoped to go to Italy but instead was sent to Graz, Austria, and then to Karlovac, Croatia. While serving in the Army, Petőfi became ill and was hospitalized. When he was discharged from the Army, he was thin and frail. Petőfi moved to Pest (later a part of Budapest), where he took minor jobs in the National Theater and acted in provincial theaters. These were difficult years for Petőfi who traveled on foot and sometimes slept on park benches.

In 1842, Petőfi submitted four poems to a leading literary periodical Athenaeum. Three of the poems were rejected. A fourth, “Borózó” (The Wine Bibber), was published. This was a turning point in Petőfi’s literary career since it was the first time his poetry earned serious recognition. He continued to struggle as a writer and actor for the next two years. In 1844, at the age of 21, Petőfi was desti-
tute. He’s quoted in *Five Hungarian Writers,* by Mervyn Jones: “After a week’s painful wandering I reached Pest. I did not know to whom to turn. . . . A desperate courage seized me and I went to one of Hungary’s greatest men, with the feeling of a card-player staking all he had left, for life or death. The great man read through my poems; on his enthusiastic recommendation the Circle published them, and I had money and a name.”

The great man Petőfi visited was well-known romantic poet Mihály Vörösmarty. He recognized Petőfi’s talent and helped him publish a book of poems in 1844. The same year, Vörösmarty helped Petőfi secure a job as assistant editor of a popular periodical, *Pesti Divatlap,* where he translated foreign fiction. He worked for editor Imre Vahot. The work was routine, but it provided a steady income. Shortly after taking this job, he met 15-year-old Csap Etelke. He was very attracted to her and therefore was deeply affected when she died two months later. Feeling depressed and restless, he resigned his assistant editorship, gave Vahot exclusive right to publish his poems, and traveled to northern Hungary. The poems written during the next 12 weeks indicate that the sojourn helped him overcome his despair.

He returned to Pest, where he fell in love with another young woman, Mednyanszky Berta, the daughter of an estate manager. She inspired Petőfi to write a new series of love poems. Petőfi asked Berta’s father for her hand in marriage, but he refused. Berta, in fact was not in love with Petőfi. During the next year and a half, Petőfi traveled back and forth between northern Hungary and Pest.

This was one of Petőfi’s most prolific periods. He produced a poem almost every other day and his writing matured. His early works included a large proportion of drinking songs. The next period reflected the bitterness he felt. In 1846, his poetry became political; freedom was a frequent theme. In December of 1846, he published a poem in which he associated a struggle for freedom with his own death.

In 1846, Petőfi met Julia Szendrey, the daughter of a member of the landed gentry. They were married a year later, when he was 24 and she was 18. Szendrey’s family opposed the marriage and her father did not attend the wedding. Petőfi’s love for his wife inspired many poems about married happiness and love.

A complete edition of Petőfi’s poems appeared in 1847. The book sold out almost immediately and his fame grew. He read his poems on stage at the National Theater, where he had once run errands.

For the next year and a half, Petőfi wrote some of his best poems. He also wrote newspaper articles on timely topics, unsuccessfully ran for the National Assembly, and became involved in the Hungarian revolutionary movement. The Hungarian people had been dominated politically, economically, socially, culturally, and demographically in their own country for many years. Encouraged by nationalist revolutions sweeping Europe, Hungarians demanded control of their homeland.

Petőfi became the intellectual leader of the revolutionaries who wanted Hungary to be free from imperialist Austria. In March 1848, Petőfi wrote “National Song,” in which he implored Hungarians to rise up for freedom. The poem began:

“Up, Hungarian, your country is calling! Here is the time, now or never! Shall we be slaves or free? This is the question, answer! By the God of the Hungarians we swear, we swear to be slaves no more!”

On March 15, Petőfi read a list of demands on behalf of the revolutionaries and recited “National Song,” also known as “Talpra Magyar” or “Rise, Magyar” at a Pest café. Participants seized a printing press and duplicated and distributed the list of demands and the poem. One of the demands was for a free press and “National Song” was the first document printed in Hungary without censorship. Surrounded by a swelling crowd of students, artisans, and peasants, Petőfi stood on the steps of the National Museum and recited his poem, which helped awaken Hungarians to their rights. Initially, it appeared that the revolution would be peaceful, but the Austrians urged the minority groups in Hungary to take up arms against the Magyars. “Rise, Magyar” became the Hungarian’s rallying cry during the War of Independence that followed.

With the free press, Petőfi published many previously censored poems in which he lashed out at the monarchy. Petőfi witnessed much of the misery and social injustice that Hungarians endured and the poems he wrote during the revolution are filled with anger. Although his political poems were inspired by the Hungarian fight for independence, they have a universal perspective and are appreciated by all people fighting for freedom. When the war advanced, Petőfi volunteered for the military. Shortly after he enlisted, Julia gave birth to a son, Zoltán.

Petőfi served as a major in the National Army in Debrecen and later in Transylvania. In Transylvania, he was an aide-de-camp to General Ben, who tried to keep Petőfi away from danger zones. Ben also attempted to buffer the clashes Petőfi had with the higher military authorities. At one point, Petőfi resigned after being punished for insubordination. In 1849, a typhus epidemic killed Petőfi’s parents.

Petőfi fought in several battles against the Russians, who allied with the Austrians. In July 1849, General Bem attempted a surprise attack on the much larger Russian forces near Segesvár. Petőfi died in this unsuccessful battle. He was last seen alive on July 31, 1849. It’s believed that he is buried in a mass grave along with other Hungarian soldiers who died in the battle. He was 26 years old.

Russian intervention helped the Austrians defeat the Hungarians. They continued to struggle for liberty and in 1867, the Austro-Hungarian Compromise granted them limited self-rule. The continued conflicts between ethnic groups in Hungary eventually contributed to World War I, after which Hungary became a part of the Soviet bloc.

Petőfi’s poetry continued to gain popularity after his death. By the turn of the century, a million copies of his poems had been sold. No Hungarian poet had ever gained such a following. His lyric poems celebrated nature, everyday life, married love, family life, and patriotism. Petőfi also published narrative and epic poems.
Statues of Petőfi were built throughout Hungary. He was recognized internationally as well. A bust of Petőfi appears in the Cleveland (Ohio) Public Library and in a public garden in Buffalo, New York. In Rimini, Italy, there is a Petőfi street.

Petőfi’s poems have been translated into countless languages. He is the subject of numerous books and critical essays by Hungarian writers and scholars. Thirty booklets about Petőfi’s life and work were published and titled Petőfi Könyvtár (Petőfi Library). In 1896 a complete edition of his works in six volumes was published. Many of his poems have been put to music, resulting in some 510 compositions by 184 composers, including Franz Liszt.

His role in the War of Independence is remembered in Hungary. The events of March 15 are a source of pride and are celebrated every year as a national holiday.

Books


**Mark Plotkin**

Ethnobotanist Mark Plotkin (born 1955) has, since the 1980s, scoured the tropical rain forests of Central and South America in search of plants with the power to heal. In his quest Plotkin has enlisted the help of the powerful shamans, or witch doctors, of the Amazon region. For Plotkin, the search has been a race against time, as more and more of the rich resources of the tropical rain forest fall to the bulldozers and land-clearing crews feverishly making way for the inexorable march of civilization.

Throughout the world, during the 20th century man’s destruction of the tropical rain forest advanced at a frightening pace. According to ethnobotanist Mark Plotkin, 90 percent of the original forest cover was gone on the island of Madagascar by 2000. Matters were even worse in eastern Brazil where 98 percent of the tropical rain forest was destroyed. One area that has remained relatively untouched has been the northeastern corner of the Amazon region, in and around Surinam, and it is there that Plotkin has done much of his research. At the urging of his mentor, the late Richard Evan Schultes, a pioneer ethnobotanist and professor of botany at Harvard University, Plotkin first traveled to the northeastern Amazon in 1977. “I came down to Surinam actually as a gofer,” he told an interviewer on the online *Shaman’s Apprentice*, “just following around some other biologists, trying to get the lay of the land, and figuring out if this is really for me.” To Plotkin, whose research has depended on close cooperation with the native peoples of the rain forest, one of the most alarming phenomena has been the disappearance of the rain forest cultures, which have dropped from sight even faster than the forests themselves.

**Intrigued by Dinosaurs as a Boy**

Plotkin was born in New Orleans, Louisiana, on May 21, 1955. One of two sons of George (a shoe store owner) and teacher Helene (Tatar) Plotkin, he attended Newman High School, graduating in 1973. Fascinated by nature as a child, he spent most of his free time crawling through nearby swamps, collecting snakes and other wildlife. Like a lot of boys his age, Plotkin was also intrigued by dinosaurs, and credits the discovery that dinosaurs had become extinct with his decision to become an environmentalist.

After graduating from high school, Plotkin enrolled at the University of Pennsylvania in Philadelphia to study biology. Disappointed by the preoccupation with molecular and cellular biology at the school’s science department, he dropped out but soon found himself in Cambridge, Massachusetts, working with the herpetology collection at Harvard University’s Museum of Comparative Zoology. One of the perks of Plotkin’s job at the museum was free tuition for night classes at Harvard. His decision to enroll in a class called “The Botany and Chemistry of Hallucinogenic Plants,” taught by Schultes, quite simply changed his life. On the very first night of class, Schultes showed students some slides he had taken on one of his many trips to the Amazon. One slide in particular fascinated Plotkin. It showed three men wearing grass skirts and bark masks. Schultes described the photo’s subjects as Yukuna Indians performing a sacred dance under the influence of a hallucinogenic potion, pointing out that the man on the left in the photo had a Harvard degree. “That one slide did it,” Plotkin told an interviewer for *Life*. “First of all, the rain forest in the background looked just like the pictures in my old dinosaur books. Second, it was wonderful to think of this straight-laced professor down in the jungle, wildly hallucinating on an Indian psychedelic. Third, I wanted to save the world, and I realized that reptiles couldn’t save the world, but plants could.”

Determined to become an ethnobotanist, Plotkin threw himself into his studies at Harvard’s extension school, earning his bachelor’s degree in 1979. Two years later he received a master’s degree from Yale University’s School of Forestry, then got his Ph.D. from Tufts University in 1989. During his student years Plotkin traveled to the Amazon region and other tropical forests in the Americas whenever he could get away. On one such journey he met Costa Rican conservationist Liliana Madrigal, whom he later married and with whom he has two daughters, Gabrielle and Ann Lauren. The topic of Plotkin’s doctoral dissertation was the use of plant-based medicinals among the Tirio tribesmen of Surinam, and he found the rain forests of the country an ideal location for his research due to the presence of not only native tribes but also of “maroons” of African descent as well as several ethnic groups from tropical Asia.
Sought Plants with Medicinal Potential

Since plants had played a vital role in the development of one-quarter of all existing prescription drugs, Plotkin hoped that with the help of the Amazonian shamans he might be able to uncover still more tropical plants with medicinal potential. He told Christopher Hallowell of Time about a 1987 trip to the Venezuelan rain forest to learn more about a hallucinogen he thought might have some medicinal benefits. Deep in the Venezuelan rain forest, an ancient shaman blew a bit of hallucinogenic powder into Plotkin’s left nostril. The ethnobotanist reacted immediately, he told Hallowell, feeling as though he “had been hit with a war club.” He saw tiny men dancing before his eyes. When he asked the shaman who they were, the old wise man replied, “They are the hekuri, the spirits of the forest.” Subsequent research by French scientists has indicated that one of that powder’s ingredients—sap from a nutmeg tree—has the potential to fight fungal infections.

On an earlier visit to Surinam in 1982, Plotkin found himself suffering from an annoying fungal infection on both of his elbows. He showed the rash to a Tirio shaman, his host at a tiny village deep in the Amazon rain forest. Without a word, the shaman walked over to a nearby tree and slashed it with a knife. Out oozed a brilliant orange sap, which the shaman smeared on Plotkin’s elbows. Within two days the infection had disappeared. It was a pivotal moment for Plotkin. “I had always heard that there were things in the jungle that worked, but I had never experienced them,” he told a People contributor. “I was stunned and excited.” By the early 1990s Plotkin had catalogued more than 300 plants used by Amazonian shamans to treat viruses, skin disease, coughs, colds, and even diabetes. “Rain forests are immense libraries of future drugs and medicines,” he explained, pointing out that only 94 plant species are currently being exploited for medicinal purposes. Among the better known plant-derived drugs are quinine, used to treat malaria; digitalis, taken by those with heart conditions; and vincristine, which has proven useful in the treatment of Hodgkin’s disease and Kaposi’s sarcoma.

In the late 1980s Plotkin joined the World Wildlife Fund to become its director of plant conservation, a position he held for four years. In 1993 he became a research associate at Harvard’s Botanical Museum and also joined Conservation International as vice president for plant conservation. In 1995 Plotkin, along with his wife and Canadian environmentalist Adrian Forsyth, co-founded the Amazon Conservation Team (ACT), an organization dedicated to the preservation of the biological and cultural integrity of the Amazon rain forest. Plotkin serves ACT as its president and also serves as research associate for the Smithsonian Institution’s Department of Botany.

Called Attention to Amazonia’s Plight

To call the public’s attention to the growing plight of Amazonia as well as to the region’s treasures, Plotkin wrote several books, the first of which, Sustainable Harvest and Marketing of Rain Forest Products, published in 1991, received little notice outside scholarly circles. Two years later, he published the very popular Tales of a Shaman’s Apprentice: An Ethnobotanist Searches for New Medicines in the Amazon Rain Forest. This book, which went through numerous printings, was also published in Dutch, German, Italian, Japanese, and Spanish. Working with illustrator and co-author Lynne Cherry, author of The Great Kapok Tree, Plotkin in 1997 turned out a children’s version of the best seller. The Shaman’s Apprentice: A Tale of the Amazon Rain Forest was hailed by Smithsonian magazine as an outstanding environmental and natural history title. More recently, Plotkin coauthored The Killers Within with Vanity Fair staff writer Michael Shnayerson. This 2002 work calls attention to the threats posed by drug-resistant bacteria.

Interviewed by Eleanor Imster for Earth & Sky.com, Plotkin was asked to explain the controversy surrounding the search for medicinal plants in the tropical rain forests. “The whole issue of intellectual property rights has come to the fore, as well it should,” he noted. “Ethnobotany, or really any type of research in the tropics, was really a ‘rape and run’ operation. They had information we wanted. They had plants we wanted . . . everything from pineapples to curare. We took advantage of the stuff, and the local people never really benefitted in a big way. So there’s been a huge hue and cry about the need to make sure local peoples—and I’m talking about both the indigenous peoples and local governments—would benefit from this type of development of plant resources—as well it should.”

Campaigned for Reciprocity

Plotkin remains outspoken in support of measures he believes will ensure that indigenous peoples are compensated for the ways their know-how and native plant species advance the cause of medicine and science. In an interview for AccessExcellence.org, he discussed some of the barriers he has experienced in seeking reciprocity for native peoples. “If I go to the pharmaceutical company that is making $100 million per year from rosy periwinkle alkaloids (used for cancer treatment) and say, ‘that came from Madagascar, one of the poorest countries in the world, how about giving 1 percent of the proceeds back to Madagascar?’ they will tell me to take a hike. However, if I go to the big pharmaceutical company and say, ‘Hey, the market for antivirals is going through the roof, we are looking at hundreds of millions per year. If you will put up some money to help the natives of the Northeast Amazon, money to train local scientists, money for equipment to upgrade labs, and if you will promise a percentage of profits for a trust fund the local people, we can do some great research,’ then the company will be more receptive.” He pointed out that a number of large pharmaceutical companies have begun doing just that, based on the reciprocity model established by a small company called Shaman Pharmaceuticals.

In the third decade of his career, Plotkin’s work goes on. He continues to travel to the rain forests frequently, combing the region’s depths in search of plants that hold the promise of a cure. Asked by Earth & Sky.com about the importance of preserving our natural environment, Plotkin was passionate in his reply. “People need to learn that the environment is way too important to be left to environmentalists. We all need clean air. We all need clean water. We
all need medicines when we get sick. It doesn’t matter if
you’re a Republican or a Democrat or whatever. Everyone
everywhere needs these things. Environmentalism is about
life on Earth and making it better for everyone.”

Books

Periodicals
People, December 6, 1993.

Online
“A Conversation with Mark Plotkin,” http://www.theshamans
apprentice.com/shaminterview1.html (February 16, 2003).
time.com/time/community/transcripts/2000/042000plotkin
.html (April 20, 2000).
eashtsky.com/edge/profiles/plotkin.html (October, 2002).
“The Shaman’s Apprentice: Mark Plotkin Talks about Rain Forest
Time Warner Bookmark, http://www.twbookmark.com/authors/

Roman Polanski
Polish film director Roman Polanski (born 1933) inun-
dates cinema with black humor, alienated and isolated
characters, violence, and suspense. Plagued, yet moti-
vated by a lifetime of personal tragedy, Polanski is a
director sympathetic to individuals caught in desper-
ate circumstances, an inherent theme throughout his
work. The most significant films of his lengthy and
unpredictable career are: Rosemary’s Baby, Repulsion,
Chinatown, Tess, and The Pianist.

Holocaust Survivor
Horrible experiences have shaped Polanski’s life
and worldview. Many of Polanski’s films may
have been influenced by his intense and tragic
childhood experiences during the Nazi Holocaust. Polanski
was born in Paris on August 18, 1933. His father was a
Jewish man from Poland who married a Russian immigrant,
and the family moved back to Poland when Polanski was
three.

The Nazis invaded Kraków’s Jewish ghetto when
Polanski was six years old; his father and a Polish policeman
helped him escape before both of his parents were sent to
concentration camps. His mother died at Auschwitz, but his
father survived at a different camp. Polanski made it through
World War II by hiding with Catholic peasant families and
occasionally fending for himself. This did not prevent him
from being used once for target practice by the Nazis and
from being seriously injured in a war-related explosion.
Often he hid in movie theaters to escape attention and
seeing all those films under conditions of severe stress
shaped his later thinking about the meaning and purpose of
cinema. After the war, his father returned and remarried,
and Polanski survived another near-tragedy when a serial
killer almost made him his next victim, beating him over the
head with a rock.

Polanski left home to go to a technical school and then
an art school, where he studied film. He began acting in
radio and plays in Kraków and made his screen debut with a
small part in Andrzej Wajda’s Pokolenie (A Generation), in
1954. He was accepted that year into the select directors’
course at the prestigious Łódź Film School. There, he
learned to make stripped-down films with a hand-held cam-
era and few other resources. This training gave his films a
spare, simple power.

Polanski was almost expelled from the state-sponsored
film school for staging and filming Rozbijemy Zabawe
(Break Up the Dance), in which he paid hoodlums to crash
and disrupt a student party. A similar brand of absurdist
humor attracted critics attention in his next short film, Two
Men and a Wardrobe, which won five international awards.
After graduating, Polanski moved to Paris and made another
short film, La Gros et el Maigre, a dark comic view of a sado-
masochistic relationship.
Breakthrough and First Exile

Polanski’s first feature film, Knife in the Water, a stark psychological thriller about a couple who invite a young hitchhiker about a sailboat and spar with him, won a British Academy Award as the best film of 1962. During the shooting, the lead actress was so unresponsive that Polanski fired a pistol near her ear to get her to react. It’s the only feature film Polanski made in Poland. But it was denounced by the ruling Communist Party for showing too many negative features of Polish life.

His funding cut off by the Polish government, Polanski relocated to England after several abortive attempts to escape from behind the Iron Curtain by hiding in the false ceiling of a railcar rest room. His brief marriage to actress Barbara Kwiatkowska (also known as Barbara Lass) in 1959 had already ended in divorce. In England he wrote and directed his classic thriller, Repulsion, starring Catherine Deneuve as a woman forced into contemplating murder. Reviews compared it to the work of Alfred Hitchcock, and the film brought Polanski to the attention of critics worldwide as a masterful young maverick. The film was Polanski’s personal favorite.

Polanski usually wrote his own screenplays or at least collaborated on them. That was the case on his second film in England, Cul-de-Sac, another story about people trapped in doomed relationships. His next effort, The Fearless Vampire Killers, or Pardon Me but Your Teeth Are in My Neck, was a comic vampire film with dark overtones. It failed to make much of an impact.

Hollywood Success and Tragedy

After establishing himself as an European auteur, Polanski moved to Hollywood. There he made his most popular feature, Rosemary’s Baby, a classic horror film that paved the way for many cheap imitations in subsequent years by other directors mining the vein of Satanism. Polanski was nominated for an Academy Award for best adapted screenplay for the film, which managed to make mass audiences cringe and critics rave. In this and other films, Polanski made fear and terror palpable mostly through his use of brooding psychological techniques; his films were slow and deliberate, though spiked with sudden outbursts of violence, and he never indulged in cheap shocks.

With the success of Rosemary’s Baby and his marriage to young actress Sharon Tate, Polanski at age 35 seemed to have the world at his fingertips. Then another tragedy struck. In 1969, Tate, who was pregnant, and three friends were brutally murdered by Charles Manson and his followers in a sensational crime publicized worldwide. Through it all, Polanski somehow continued to work. His next feature, Macbeth, released in 1971, was a faithful adaptation of Shakespeare’s play, but Polanski drenched the climactic scenes in blood, in an obvious reflection of his own torment over his wife’s death.

Polanski continued to take small acting parts, and he usually appeared somewhere in his own movies. In his masterful noir suspense drama, Chinatown, released in 1974, Polanski has a cameo as a thug who slices the nose of Jack Nicholson’s protagonist, Jake Gittes. The character, a private investigator trying to puzzle out a web of criminal intrigue connected with a political scandal, spends the rest of the film with his nose in a bandage, adding to his absurdity. The nose injury was one of many Polanski touches that helped elevate the celebrated Robert Towne screenplay to a masterpiece. Polanski made the climax of the film more brutal and hopeless than Towne had scripted it. Chinatown, which earned Polanski his second Oscar nomination, this time for best director, showcases a mature director at the height of his powers, weaving a spellbinding tale and coaxing great performances out of Nicholson, Faye Dunaway, and John Huston. The film won a British Academy Award and propelled Polanski once again to the front ranks of directors.

Permanent Exile

But again, just as he was at the pinnacle of success, personal troubles would topple Polanski. His follow-up to Chinatown disappointed many critics. It was the dour and frightening psychological thriller The Tenant, in which the director-writer cast himself in the lead role of a paranoid, nearly insane man whose face looks haunted and guilt-ridden. Bizarre, overwrought, and complete with a gruesome, outrageously ending, The Tenant, shot in the same neighborhood where Polanski had lived in Paris, seemed to show that Polanski had not purged himself of his personal demons. Like many of his films, it features a misfit who seems to be losing his moorings.

In 1977, Polanski’s Hollywood career imploded when he was arrested for statutory rape. He fled the country rather than face jail time after pleading guilty to charges of having sex with a 13-year-old girl. The famous director entered a long exile, returning to France. There, he suddenly abandoned his customary themes of fear, terror, and alienation and directed a lustrous, serene, intoxicating, old-fashioned love story, Tess, based on the Thomas Hardy novel Tess of the d’Urbervilles. It starred his newest lover, 17-year-old Nastassia Kinski, but was dedicated to Tate. A critical success though hardly a commercial blockbuster, the 170-minute period romance was the most expensive film ever made to date in France, and it netted Polanski another directorial Oscar nomination.

After Tess, however, Polanski found it difficult to get his movie ideas funded and produced. He grew increasingly active as an opera producer, theater director, and actor all over Europe. He directed and starred in an adaptation of Amadeus in Warsaw in 1981 and took the show to Paris in 1982. In 1988, he played the lead role in a Paris production of Kalka’s Metamorphosis. In 1997, Polanski’s musical Dance of the Vampires, an adaptation of his movie The Fearless Vampire Killers, opened in Vienna.

His movie career proceeded in fits and starts. Following the release of Tess, seven years passed before he wrote and directed another movie, and that was the uncharacteristically lightweight spoof Pirates, a swashbuckling satire starring Walter Matthau in a role Polanski had intended for Nicholson. The film went nowhere and was one of his
biggest flops. Next, he directed Harrison Ford in the Hitchcock-like thriller *Frantic,* about a man trapped in an impossible situation in a foreign land—just as Polanski was. It also was disappointing at the box office and among critics.

In 1989, Polanski was in his mid-50s when he married actress Emmanuelle Seigner, who was in her early 20s. Seigner had appeared in *Frantic.* The two had a daughter, Morgane, in 1992.

Polanski, now a permanent exile from Hollywood, continued to take acting roles, mostly in French films, and in 1992 directed *Bitter Moon,* an erotic suspense film that introduced Hugh Grant and included Seigner. Polanski fared a little better among critics, but no better at the box office, with his 1994 film *Death and the Maiden,* an adaptation of an Ariel Dorfman play starring Ben Kingsley and Sigourney Weaver. *Los Angeles Magazine*’s Ivor Davis called it “an intriguing and ambitious tale of torture, brainwashing, revenge and possibly false memory.”

In 1996, Polanski directed the experimental short film *Gli Angeli,* based on a music album by Vaco Rossi, then returned to mainstream territory with the thriller *The Ninth Gate* in 1999. That film, based on a best-selling Spanish novel about a book collector hunting for an obscure Satanic text, starred Johnny Depp and Seigner. Around the time of the release of *The Ninth Gate,* Polanski told Gary Arnold of the *Washington Times,* “There are stacks of great books I would have loved to film” but added that the circumstances were rarely right. “Sometimes I think I am always living in the wrong time,” he concluded.

Repeated attempts to resolve Polanski’s legal situation in the United States proved unsuccessful, even though his victim, Samantha Geimer, had gotten what she wanted in a civil suit reportedly settled for $225,000 and said she felt he should be able to return. “I have suffered enough,” Polanski told Ivor. And he told the *New Yorker:* “I’d like to be able to return . . . to just be able to work in a normal fashion. I miss the logic and efficiencies of the Hollywood system.”

**Coming Full Circle**

Polanski was in his late 60s when for the first time he made a feature film about the event that had shaped his whole life—the Holocaust. Polanski had toyed with the idea of making a movie about his own experiences, and he had advised Stephen Spielberg on the script for his Holocaust film *Schindler’s List* and even had turned down an offer to direct that film. *The Pianist,* released in 2002 and starring Adrien Brody, won critical acclaim worldwide. The story of a Jewish concert pianist who somehow escapes destruction while the world falls apart around him in Warsaw during World War II, the film has obvious autobiographical overtones even though it is based on pianist Wladyslaw Szpilman’s memoirs.

*The Pianist,* which received the Palm d’Or at the 2002 Cannes Film Festival, marked a triumphant comeback for Polanski. At Cannes, Polanski said he had wanted to make “a neutral, low-key movie about events that speak for themselves,” and said the memoirs “helped me recreate the events without talking about myself or people around me.” Polanski was nominated for his fifth Academy Award with a best director nomination for *The Pianist* for the 2003 Oscars. Polanski won the Oscar but due to his exile was unable to accept the award in person. Two additional Academy Awards were given for work on *The Pianist:* Brody was recognized as Best Actor and Ronald Harwood won the Oscar for Writing (Adapted Screenplay).

Assessing Polanski’s body of work is ultimately a daunting task. Many of his films are demanding, and some are puzzling. But they are almost always intriguing. D. Keith Mano of *People* described Polanski’s directorial career as “a hard-to-pigeonhole mixture of obsession, brilliant self-indulgence and honest commercial pragmatism.” J.P. Telotte and John McCarty, in an essay in *The St. James Film Directors Encyclopedia,* conclude: “Roman Polanski’s importance as a filmmaker hinges upon a uniquely unsettling point of view. All his characters try continually, however clumsily, to connect with other human beings, to break out of their isolation and to free themselves of their alienation.”

His films, in other words, are a reflection of the struggles of his own difficult life.

**Books**


**Periodicals**

*Asia Africa Intelligence Wire,* October 21, 2002.


*People Weekly,* March 5, 1984.


*Variety,* June 3, 2002.


**Online**


**Sigmar Polke**

German artist Sigmar Polke (born 1941) has boldly ventured to creative realms where few have dared to tread. As a result, he has had a great influence on young American artists, especially in the 1980s. With an ironic, mocking sense of humor, he parodied artistic movements early in his career and even created his own style called “Capitalist Realism,” which commented on German culture and society. A trailblazer in more ways than one, Polke revolutionized painting in the second half of his career by using non-art materials and chemical sub-
stances to “paint” canvases. These magical and mutable pieces earned Polke the title of “alchemical artist.”

Polke was born in Oels, Germany, on February 13, 1941. As a 12-year-old boy, Polke escaped from East to West Berlin in 1953 by faking sleep on a subway car. The formative experience of crossing the border would have a major impact on the content and style of his art in later years. After apprenticing as a glass painter for a brief time, he went on to study at the Dusseldorf Art Academy from 1961 to 1967, where he became deeply influenced by his teacher Joseph Beuys. As Robert Hughes wrote in *Time*, “He seems to have got two big things from Beuys: first, the idea of the artist as clown, shaman and alchemist; second, a healthy reluctance to believe in the final value of categories of style. Hence his early parodies of the sacred modes of Modernism.” Polke and two fellow students, Gerhard Richter and Konrad Fischer-Leug, formed a movement of artistic style called “Capitalism Realism,” a term they used ironically to refer to the modern art of the West.

1960s: Capitalist Realism and Artistic Parody

Capitalist Realism was the merging of Pop Art style with images emblematic of a postwar German consumer society. Polke, although aware of American Pop art, was not interested in the conventions of graphic design. Rather than translating graphic advertising images into painted forms, Polke’s, Capitalist Realism “was about objects of desire, seen from a distance,” as Hughes put it. The artist’s main focus in the early years was to portray these objects of desire, and he did so in a flat somewhat unappealing way. The mundane, and often trite objects portrayed in Polke’s paintings of the era—cakes, plastic tubs, liverwurst—were represented in a less flashy way than the substance of American Pop, but they possessed a political significance relating to the historical context in which Polke was situated. These objects, common in Polke’s current world, were symbolic of the split between East and West Germany, and their presence on canvas called attention to their absence on the Eastern side of the Berlin Wall. Hughes wrote, “The split between East and West, for ordinary Germans, lay along the ruts of consumption rather than the peaks of rhetoric.”

Works like *Plastik Wannen* (Tubs, 1964), which uses the plastic wash basins and food containers that were hard to get at the time in Eastern bloc countries as its subject, poke fun at consumerism, while revealing the reality of a culture still suffering from the deprivations of war. These early works mark a break with the abstract expressionist style that was prevalent in prior years. Polke’s paintings mirror life as it is directly experienced through human consciousness.

Whereas Polke’s mid-’60s paintings were concerned with plain, immediate, ordinary subjects found in the everyday world, his paintings from the latter part of the decade took up art as their theme, often in a humorous way. Polke responded with a certain sense of irony to American Pop art. His huge raster grids were inspired by Roy Lichenstein’s bold Benday dots and Andy Warhol’s early use of photographic transfer made its way into his work. Polke’s mysterious juxtaposition of disparate images came from James Rosenquist, while Francis Pachabia’s late paintings acted as important influences. Polke made fun of conceptual art in *Solutions*, 1967, and he satirized geometric abstraction in *Modern Art*, 1968. The same year, he produced *Higher Beings Command: Paint an Angle!,* a simple “L” drawn in black ink on a piece of notebook paper with the title typed below. His sense of humor is present in this work, for he did it “at a time when art circles in Germany, and the U.S. too, were still given to overheated ‘spiritual’ rhetoric about the transcendent powers of all sorts of abstract art... As an art joke, it gets close to the mustache on Mona Lisa,” Hughes wrote in a 1999 article in *Time*. Polke even suggested the silliness of his work in an installation called *The Fifties*, 1969, for which he placed 12 of his previous pieces over colored trelliswork. The idea was that even his own art had been tritely stylized to fit the times.

Conveyed Layers of Consciousness

In the ’70s and ’80s Polke brought disparate images together, reflecting poetic and bizarre movements of the mind. The mental states being conveyed were often drug-induced, and the artist masterfully brought the experience of such consciousness to his viewers. Polke took up Francis Picabia’s technique of layering images one on top of another, and American artists like David Salle and Julian Schnabel sought to imitate him, while looking to breathe new life into their painting in the midst of Conceptualism.
In pieces like *Alice in Wonderland*, 1971, Polke’s work overtly suggests altered states of consciousness and an awareness affected by marijuana. He has painted the scene from Lewis Carroll’s story in which Alice talks to the hookah-smoking caterpillar, there are loud printed fabrics on the sides, over which he has painted a phantom white basketball player. As John Caldwell wrote in *Sigmar Polke*, “The artist has succeeded in creating a precise visual analogue of drugged consciousness, just as he did for the consumer goods that fixated much of the 1950s and early 1960s. The painting depicts the experience of watching sports on television after consuming a drug. . . .” Caldwell also said, “Polke’s discovery of a way to depict several layers of consciousness at the same time by means of superimposing one or more figural motifs over a ground of printed fabric was one that he would return to repeatedly during the years to come.” Again, in 1983 with *Hallucinogen*, Polke gave his viewers a direct experience of the human mind, not by portraying consumer items like cakes and wash bins, but by making onlookers feel as if they are truly on psychedelic drugs. The artist’s process of allowing chance reactions between his compositional materials to determine the look of the painting suggests a great deal about the effect of the art on the viewer. The uncontrolled randomness of the painting, with its patches of deep purple and clouds of dark, unidentifiable matter makes it both a groundbreaking piece of artwork, as well as an intense sensory experience for viewers.

**Focused on Germany’s Past**

In the early ‘80s and ‘90s Polke’s subject matter dealt primarily with Germany’s Nazi past as well as the reality of people’s lives during the country’s split between East and West. The canvases became courageous testimonials to the horror of the Holocaust, and Polke’s entry into the use of non-art materials turned them into powerful experimental works with a life of their own. *Lager (Camp)* 1982, for example, portrays a concentration camp with its barbed wire fencing and electric lights, painted partially with embers. The canvas bears the burn holes that prove the existence of fire and convince us that the camp and its terror are real. This painting is also an example of Polke’s signature ability to merge abstraction with form in one work. The iridescent purples, both paint and fabric, act as vaporeous clouds that sometimes shroud forms and sometimes reveal them. Similarly, depending on the distances from which the piece is viewed, different visual information is given and various figurative representations become apparent or disappear. Thus, a lamp assumes the form of a helmet, seen from one perspective.

Before the fall of the Berlin Wall, Polke continued working with a favored subject, Germany’s East/West split and its relationship to consumerism. In his 1987–1988 *Watchtower with Geese*, the menacing border guard tower acts as a symbol of the country’s internal division. It is placed on one side of the canvas, while on the other is a piece of black fabric patterned with “kitsch emblems of leisure”—beach umbrellas, sunglasses, deck chairs—and in between the two a gaggle of outlined geese, with no clue as to whether they are citizens of West or East,” wrote Hughes.

The overwhelmingly large scale of the *Hochsitz (Watch tower)* series from the mid-’80s is both terrifying and arresting, especially because viewers are placed in the position of feeling like they are in the camps, hunted prey. Polke used his trademark technique of placing fabric swatches with gaudy patterns as the backdrop for pop culture images and overlaid drawings. As Dorothy Valakos mentioned in a biographical sketch of Polke, “[They] suggest the frightening, mechanized impersonality of fascism and dictatorship, and the social conformity and complicity that permits them to exist.” Their gold and black colors created by silver bromide, iodine, and chloride, are connected to some of his later abstract works, which are made of alchemical mixtures of silver nitrate, resins, meteor particles, and unstable pigments, among other non-art materials. The stuff of these paintings suggests both the poisons of industrial by-products and the magic of alchemical change.

**Alchemical Art**

“In the early 1980s Polke embarked upon a series of experiments that continue down to the present, which have often been termed alchemical and in which the paintings themselves, as real, physical objects, effectively serve as his laboratory and at the same time the objects of his experiments,” wrote Caldwell. *The Spirits that Lend Strength are Invisible*, 1988, is a series of five risky pieces, created for the Carnegie International exhibition in Pittsburgh. The title fittingly comes from a Native American saying, while the paintings pay tribute to the New World by containing materials from the Americas, rather than Europe. Polke attached unconventional materials and objects to the canvases—pure tellurium blown onto artificial resin, ground meteor particles, layers of nickel and silver nitrate, as well as Neolithic tools—thus creating another set of paintings that were not exactly painted. They are toxic in their constitution, but refer abstractly to nature without having a specific, identifiable subject matter. In his description of the series, Caldwell noted, “We are in a strangely empty, yet magical landscape, in which the dust of meteors and of obscure chemical elements is moved about by silent, unfelt winds.”

Another series of six paintings from this time period, *Speigelbilder (Mirror Images)*, 1986, “present images of cosmic forces interacting, erupting, exploding. From galactic detritus to vapidous congealing lacquer surfaces, these paintings ‘mirror’ processes of abstraction’s spiritual essence . . . By employing complicated, alchemical mixtures of resins, violet pigments and silver nitrate, Polke’s surfaces trap, conduct and model light in refractive, elusive ways,” wrote David Moos in *Art/Text*.

From 1982 on, the artist continually created pieces that transformed themselves based on the passage of time or on their surroundings. Works like *Lager* and *Watchtower II* reveal various images based on the angle the viewer takes. In the latter painting, the guard tower vanishes and reappears as the onlooker shifts positions. In addition, the painting’s very color alters as the external conditions of temperature and humidity shift around it. In Pittsburgh, the piece had a purple hue, while in Los Angeles it turned green. In 1986, Polke’s big wall painting in the German Pavilion at the
Venice Bienale changed its appearance based on humidity, his 1988 mural in Paris responded to temperature, and a series of canvases including *The Spirits that Lend Strength Are Invisible IV*, 1988, revealed little or nothing at first, but then gradually began displaying images, as if painted in invisible ink. Aside from disturbing the viewer's sense of logic, these mutable paintings play an important role in creating art forms that are irreproducible—unique and almost supernatural in their inability to be pinned down by photography. In that sense, they move counter to art in the modern world, which can lose its magic, in a sense, due to its ability to be copied. Polke's shifting canvases are truly original works, acting as living creatures that have the potential to react to their environment.

Although it was primarily his early works that were exhibited in the foremost United States museums in the '90s, in 1999, *Art News* dubbed Polke one of “Ten Most Important Living Artists.” The same year, New York City’s Museum of Modern Art showed *Works on Paper: 1963–1974*, which included *The Ride on the Eight of Infinity*, four overwhelmingly large pieces that suggested the non-linear streams of consciousness and collaging of images that were to come in the next 20 years. In Los Angeles and Minneapolis Polke exhibited some of his manipulated photographs, paintings from the '80s and early '90s, and collaged images. In Germany, however, museums across the country exhibited a thorough, retrospective show called *Three Lies of Painting*.

Polke's approach through the '90s was a continuation and deepening of the anti-art, alchemical technique he had begun to experiment with decades before. His work included the use of resins, enamel-like coats of color, and other man-made chemical and metallic combinations applied to layers of see-through polyester fabrics. This time, though, the artist's subject, rather than being stimulated by Pop culture was inspired by literature, mythology, and history, along with the under-current of social and political commentary that infused his earlier work. Still, he employed the raster dot patterns he became known for in his early days. In 2002, Polke's artistic lifetime achievements earned him the distinguished honor of receiving the Japan Art Association’s 14th Premiun Imperiale Award for painting. Along with his diploma and medal, he was presented with $125,000 for his contribution to international arts and culture.

Although Polke's art has been called one of appropriation, it is much more than that. True, his installations, paintings, drawings, collages, and photography do grab images from sources belonging to both high and low culture—from William Blake to comic books and silly advertisements. Often, there is no linear narrative and the artist leaps from one visual to the next, creating a free-spirited and mad dance for the eyes. It is important to remember, though, that Polke creates entirely new art forms and particular states of consciousness with his work. It transcends art as viewers have traditionally been trained to think of it and blasts them into a mystical world of abstract, unidentifiable substances and concrete images—masterfully combining form and formlessness.

Books

Periodicals
*Art/Text*, Fall 1998.

Judith Graham Pool

Judith Graham Pool (1919–1975) was a researcher who made an important discovery in the treatment of hemophilia. In 1964, she developed cryoprecipitation, a way to produce concentrated amounts of antihemophilic factor, or AHF, a blood component necessary for clotting. The discovery of cryoprecipitation revolutionized the treatment of hemophilia, making it easier and safer.

Early Interest in Science

Pool was born Judith Graham on June 1, 1919, in Queens, a borough of New York City. Graham was the oldest of three children of Leon Wilfred and Nellie Baron Graham. Nellie Graham was a teacher. Leon Graham was a native of England who worked as a stockbroker. Pool earned good grades in high school and especially loved science. She majored in biochemistry at the University of Chicago, where she was a member of Phi Beta Kappa and Sigma Xi.

While at the University of Chicago, Pool married political science student Ithiel de Sola Pool. She graduated with a bachelor of science degree in 1939 and pursued graduate studies while working as an assistant in physiology at the university.

In 1942, the Pools moved to Geneva, New York, where Ithiel Pool got a job as a political science professor at Hobart and William Smith Colleges. Pool began teaching physics at the same institutions. The Pools had two sons, Jonathon, born in 1942, and Jeremy, born in 1943. The couple divorced in 1953.

Overlooked in Frog Research

While working and caring for her young family, Pool worked toward her Ph.D. in physiology. Her dissertation was on the electrophysiology of muscle fibers. She worked in the laboratory of neurophysiologist Ralph Waldo Gerard at Hobart College. In 1942, Pool, Gerard, and another researcher published a paper in which they described the use of a microelectrode to record electromagnetic impulses in frog muscle fibers. Gerard furthered the research and was nominated for a Nobel Prize in 1950 for his work. Pool’s
contribution was largely overlooked, according to the book Women of Science: Righting the Record.

Pool received her Ph.D. from the University of Chicago in 1946. The Pools returned to Chicago when Ithiel Pool developed tuberculosis and began a long hospital stay. Pool worked a variety of jobs, including as a secretary, an English and physics teacher, a cancer researcher, and a teacher in a school for mentally handicapped children.

Ithiel Pool eventually recovered and moved the family to California when he was hired at Stanford University’s Hoover Institution on War, Revolution and Peace. Pool became a researcher at the Stanford Research Institute. In 1953, she joined the staff at Stanford University’s School of Medicine as a research fellow supported by a grant of the Bank of America-Giannini Foundation. With the exception of a year in Oslo, Norway, as a Fulbright research fellow, she spent the rest of her career at Stanford Medical School.

Breakthrough in Hemophilia Treatment

When Pool came to Stanford, her research focus changed from muscle physiology to blood physiology, an area she had no experience in. Nonetheless, the results of her research greatly improved the way hemophilia was treated. Until that time, hemophiliacs were treated with transfusions of plasma. Because the plasma contained low concentrations of antihemophilic factor (AHF), the component that aided blood clotting, the patients needed huge quantities of mostly useless fluid in order to receive adequate quantities of AHF. These massive transfusions carried a risk of circulatory overload and congestive heart failure.

Pool discovered a way to separate AHF from plasma so patients could get greater quantities of it. Pool discovered that when fresh frozen plasma is slowly thawed, it separates into layers. The bottom layer has heavy concentrations of AHF, ten times more than fresh plasma. Pool removed this layer and refroze it. The concentrated residue was called cryoprecipitate, or cryo for short, because it was precipitated by extreme cold.

Pool and her colleagues first published the procedure in the journal Nature in 1964. She co-wrote a similar article in the New England Journal of Medicine in 1965. The procedure quickly became the standard in blood banks for treating hemophiliacs. Cryo had many advantages over previous treatments. It was more convenient and safer for patients, it could be refrozen and stored for a year, and it was relatively inexpensive and easy to prepare.

As a result of Pool’s discovery, she was recognized as a leader in hemophilia research. She was awarded the Murray Thelin Award of the National Hemophilia Foundation in 1968 and the Elizabeth Blackwell Award from Hobart and William Smith Colleges in 1973. She delivered several lectures, including the Paul M. Anggeler Memorial Lecture in 1974. Pool became a member of the national scientific advisory committee of the National Institutes of Health and the American Red Cross Blood Program. In 1975, the University of Chicago gave her its Professional Achievement Award. After her death, the National Hemophilia Founda-

tion changed the name of its grants to the Judith Graham Pool Research Fellowships.

In Journey, a book about hemophilia, Pool modestly said of her discovery, “I had no greater insight than anyone else. I just happened to be there at the right moment.” Pool remained a senior research associate at Stanford until 1970, when she became a senior scientist. In 1972, when many academic institutions promoted women because of affirmative action, she was named a full professor, without having been in the lower professorial ranks.

Continued Recognition

Pool continued her research in blood coagulation for the remainder of her life. She devoted the later years of her career to advancing opportunities for women scientists. She was elected co-president of the Association of Women in Science in 1971. She was first chairwoman of the Professional Women of Stanford University Medical Center.

When she was 44, Pool gave birth to a daughter, Lorna. In 1972, Pool married Maurice Sokolow, professor of medicine and hematology, but the marriage lasted only three years.

Pool died of a brain tumor on July 13, 1975, in Stanford, California, at the age of 56. The book Notable American Women: The Modern Period reports that after Pool was diagnosed, she said, “The last few years of my life have been, I think, very unusual in that they have amounted to an experience for me of feeling overrewarded, overrecognized, overgratified beyond what anyone could expect, so there is no possibility of feeling cheated or regretful about what I will not have had as a result of dying earlier than expected. Quite the converse; it has almost been embarrassing in the other extreme.”

An international medical journal published a tribute to Pool in 1988. It said, “One of the greatest contributions to the treatment of classic hemophilia was made by Dr. Judith Pool and her associates in 1964 and 1965. Dr. Pool’s name will always be associated with greatness in the hemophilic and blood coagulation community for this discovery. Her place in the history of the treatment of hemophilia is secure and deservedly so.”

Books

Notable Women Scientists, Gale Group, 2000.

Online

Charley Frank Pride

Charley Pride (born 1938) was country music’s first African American star. For the past 25 years, Pride has been ranked among the top 15 best-selling recording artists of all time. During his career, he has had 36 number-one hit singles, and he has sold over 25 million albums. He has had 31 gold albums, 4 platinum albums, and 1 quadruple platinum album. Pride was elected to the Country Music Hall of Fame in 2000, the highest honor a country musician can receive. As an RCA Records recording artist, Pride is second in sales only to Elvis Presley.

Mississippi Delta Childhood

Charl (mistakenly changed to “Charley” on his birth certificate) Frank Pride was born on March 18, 1938, in Sledge, Mississippi. Like many other Mississippi Delta towns, Sledge consisted only of little more than a “grocery store, a barber shop, a hardware and farm supply store, a general merchandise store, a café, and a gas station.” In the pre-civil rights era that coincided with Pride’s childhood, life for African Americans in the Mississippi Delta was strictly regulated by enforced codes of segregation that governed who could use rest rooms, attend schools, and purchase housing.

The fourth of eleven children—eight boys and three girls—Pride grew up in a family headed by Mack and Tessie B. Stewart Pride. Pride’s parents worked as sharecroppers and picked cotton. The family shared a three-room tin and cracked-wood “shotgun” house, so named because a person could “fire a shotgun through the front door and out the back without hitting anything.”

Although the Pride family was poor, Pride’s mother insisted there were people with a lot more money who would give millions for what her son had. She pointed out to him, as an example, that he had all of his fingers and both eyes.

Pride and his siblings suffered frequent beatings at the hands of their father, a stern disciplinarian. Said Pride, “He showed concern for his children by using the strap to keep us on a straight and narrow path and he showed tenderness by protecting us and caring for us. We all survived the hardships of our youth and turned out to be reasonably solid citizens.”

Charley’s father, Mack Pride, was a deacon in the Baptist church, but Pride later said that it was his mother who seemed the more spiritual of his parents. In his autobiography, Pride: The Charley Pride Story, Pride said that he grew up not liking his father very much. “I loved him and there was a lot about him that I admired but I didn’t like him,” he wrote. Elsewhere in the book, Pride added, “Over time, I have come to realize that Daddy was not unfeeling; he was just unable to express his emotions in the normal way.” But he went still further, saying, “However I account for him in my own mind, it doesn’t change one thing—how much I regret that there was no warmth or tenderness between us.”

As a young boy, Pride had little choice in how he spent his time and was made to pick cotton. In his autobiography, Pride recalled telling his father. “I just don’t want to be a cotton picker, Daddy.” His father reportedly replied, “You don’t want to pick cotton? Well. What do you think you’re going to do?”

Pride grew up listening to country music on the radio and learning the songs of Hank Williams and Roy Acuff. From the age of six, Pride became a devotee of the Grand Ole Opry radio broadcasts. A neighbor began calling Charley “Mocking Bird” when the boy showed a reluctance to do much besides sing and play baseball. Although Pride dreamed of being a country music star, he was actually planning on becoming a baseball player.

At the age of 14, Pride bought a guitar from the Sears, Roebuck catalog after saving for most of year to buy it. He then began teaching himself to play a few chords. He eventually began mimicking songs on the radio, using his index finger as a capo and playing open bar chords. After he accidentally left his guitar outside one night in a heavy rain, he was forced to tinker with make-shift instruments, including a comb, for a while.
Between Baseball and Country Music

Pride’s mother died in 1956. After her death, Pride’s ties to Sledge, Mississippi, were largely severed. By his late teens, Pride had left home and traveled to Memphis. At 17, one day after entering a talent contest at Lave’s Grand Theater in Memphis, Pride left for baseball training camp. He recalls having to walk seven miles to pitch nine innings, and then having to walk the seven miles back home again.

About this time, one of Pride’s teammates asked him why he was not pursuing a career as a singer, and Pride told him, “I want to go to the major leagues. Years from now, when they ask who hit the most home runs, I don’t want the answer to be Babe Ruth, I want it to be Charley Pride.” Jackie Robinson had broken the color barrier in the major leagues in 1947, and by the mid-1950s every major league team had two or three black players on its roster.

In 1955, Pride joined the American Negro League, playing for Detroit, Michigan; Memphis, Tennessee; and Birmingham, Alabama. Pride met his wife Rozene, a cosmetologist from Oxford, Mississippi, while playing baseball in Memphis. The couple later had three children, Kraig, Dion, and Angela. Meanwhile, Pride’s baseball career was interrupted by a two-year hitch in the service.

The Mighty Casey

In 1958, Pride resumed his career with the American Negro League, now playing for the Birmingham Black Barons. After Pride was cut from the Memphis team in 1959, he decided to go to Montana where he ended up taking a job at the Zinc Smelting Manning Company and playing semi-professional baseball at night. He also sang in a nightclub two nights a week.

Pride later said of his time in Montana, “Montana wasn’t just geographically far removed from the South, but the thinking was pretty isolated too. When the sit-ins and boycotts and protest marches began in the south, guys I worked with would ask things like, ‘What’s going on with y’all down there.’”

By 1960, Pride had abandoned semi-professional baseball and the American Negro League for a Major League C-team. After rejections from the Angels, Pride tried the Mets, whose coach, the legendary Casey Stengel, told him, “We ain’t running no damn tryout camp down here.” Stengel went on to suggest that Pride go out in a cow pasture where someone else could look at him. Pride decided to give up a baseball career following that episode.

RCA Recording Contract

Returning home from the debacle with Casey Stengel, Pride auditioned for songwriter and record producer Jack Clement in Memphis. Chet Atkins, then vice-president of RCA recording in Nashville, was sufficiently impressed with Pride that he offered him an RCA recording contract.

In 1966, Pride was named best country and western male vocalist after having recorded 13 songs. By 1975, he released 22 records, and had 12 gold singles. Among his most popular recordings were “Snakes Crawl at Night” and “Just Between You and Me.”

Medical Problems

In 1968, Pride was hospitalized following a USO tour with symptoms of manic depression that included an inability to sleep, delusions, and hyper-activity. Told that he would need to take medication for the rest of his life, Pride refused. After the symptoms recurred in 1982 though, Pride began taking lithium carbonate to control his manic swings. He then stopped taking the medication after he developed a skin rash that he thought was a lithium side-effect, but after another episode in 1989, he finally came to terms with his need to take the medication. Pride explained in his autobiography, “I’ve taken lithium regularly for the past few years and have had no further bouts with manic depression. I’ve always been a hyper person, one who needed to be doing something physical all the time. I had difficulty sitting through business meetings or any other sedentary activity. I’m still that way, but I run on an even keel—no wild highs, no migraines, and no imagining things that aren’t there. And I sleep very well.”

On Top

In 1969, Pride scored his first number one single with the release of “All I Have to Offer You (Is Me).” Over the next 15 years, he would go on to top the charts with more than 36 number one country singles, bringing him within close range of becoming Billboard magazine’s all-time record holder in that category.

Some of Pride’s songs, like “Kiss an Angel Good Morning,” are now considered classics. Other big hits have included “Is Anybody Goin’ to San Antone?,” “I’m So Afraid of Losing You Again,” “Mississippi Cotton Pickin’ Delta Town,” “Someone Loves You Honey,” “When I Stop Leavin’ I’ll Be Gone,” “Burgers and Fries,” “Mountain of Love,” and “You’re So Good When You’re Bad.” “Kiss An Angel Good Morning” helped Pride capture Country Music Association’s awards as Entertainer of the Year (1971) and Top Male Vocalist (1971, 1972).

Businessman

By the 1980s, Pride was dividing his time between his careers as musician and businessman. His business activities included banking, broadcasting, and real estate. He holds the most shares in Texas’s largest minority owned bank and has real estate holdings across the country. He also owns a music publishing company and a production company.

Career Achievements

On May 1, 1993, Pride was inducted into the Grand Ole Opry, where he had first performed 26 years earlier. Pride received the Academy of Country Music’s Pioneer Award in 1994, the same year he released his autobiography, Pride: The Charley Pride Story. Pride opened the 2000-seat Charley Pride Theatre in Branson, Missouri, in June 1994. He performed there for four years, doing approximately 200 shows a year.

Pride received the Trumpet Award from Turner Broadcasting in January 1996 in recognition of his outstanding
achievement as an African American. The state of Mississippi adopted his “Roll On Mississippi” as its official song and named a stretch of highway in the state for him. Also that year, he performed in a special Christmas program at the White House for President and Mrs. Clinton. In 2000, he was elected to the Country Music Hall of Fame.

Pride still works out each year with the Texas Rangers baseball team, fulfilling a boyhood aspiration. He also enjoys playing golf when he is not on tour or recording.

Besides the U.S., Pride has performed in Europe, Australia, New Zealand, Japan, Fiji, and Canada. He frequently appears on USO tours, entertaining military personnel stationed overseas. Once during a USO tour, after being heckled by black soldiers for singing country music, Pride told the mixed race audience, “I’m singing for my brothers on this side of the room, and for my brothers on this side. I told you in the beginning. I’m not James Browne. I’m not Sam Cooke. I’m Charley Pride, country singer. I’m just me and that’s what you get.”

Pride currently splits his time between his homes in Dallas, Texas, and Branson, Missouri.

Books

Online

Thomas Pringle
Scottish writer Thomas Pringle (1789–1834) is considered the father of South African poetry. He lived in South Africa for six years, during which time he established a family settlement in the Eastern Cape. Unable to make a living as a writer in South Africa, he moved to London where he worked for the abolition of slavery. Pringle is recognized in South Africa as the first successful poet to publish in English. His poems and narratives describe South Africa’s landscape, native people, and social conditions.

Pringle was the third of seven children of Robert and Catherine Haitlie Pringle. He was born January 5, 1789, in Kelso, Linton, Roxburghshire, Scotland. Tragically, his mother died in 1795, when Thomas was six years old, leaving his father to remarry.

When Pringle was three months old, his nanny accidentally dropped him, dislocating his hip. The nanny was afraid to admit her mistake, with the result that Pringle not given medical care until it was too late to correct the damage. Consequently, he walked using crutches throughout his entire life. Perhaps out of guilt, the nanny lavished attention on him, allowing him to become headstrong and unmanageable.

Because he was lame, Pringle was unable to participate in athletics and did not follow his family into farming. To prepare for a profession, his father sent Pringle to Kelso Grammar School and Edinburgh University where he became interested in writing. He wrote every day, producing letters, journal entries, poems, and essays.

Began Writing Career
Pringle left Edinburgh University without earning a degree and took a job in the General Register Office, where he worked as a clerk from 1808 to 1817. He continued to write and in 1811 published, with Robert Story, “The Institute,” a satire on the Edinburgh Philanthropic Society, a literary group. The first of his poems to gain attention, “Autumnal Excursion,” was published in 1816. The poem celebrates the Scottish land where Pringle grew up and includes vignettes from his childhood. Among those who read the poem was noted novelist Sir Walter Scott. Pringle and Scott soon formed a friendship that lasted until Scott’s death in 1832.

In 1817 Pringle became joint editor of the Edinburgh Monthly but resigned after a disagreement with the magazine’s publisher, William Blackwood. He later edited both The Star, a newspaper, and Edinburgh Magazine. Also in 1817 Pringle married Margaret Brown, a woman nine years older than Pringle, and two years later he published his first volume of verse, The Autumnal Excursion and Other Poems.

Affected by Economic Downturn
Unable to make a living as a writer, Pringle returned to the register office for a short time. His family, like many throughout Scotland during the early 1800s, was encountering financial difficulties; a decline in agriculture had forced Robert Pringle to move south to a farm in England.

In addition to agricultural problems, Great Britain and most of Europe were suffering economic difficulties as a result of the political restructuring following the Napoleonic wars. The British government now offered thousands of its residents the opportunity to resettle in South Africa, promising free land and inexpensive supplies for those willing to make the trip to colonize this new addition to the British Empire, recently purchased from the Dutch. Pringle pursued this opportunity and in 1820, through his friendship with Scott, obtained free passage for himself and his extended family to travel to the eastern cape of South Africa.

Settled in South Africa
The Pringles sailed for 75 days, then traveled inland for another month before arriving at their new home in Glen Lynden, located in the upper valley of South Africa’s Baavians River. The location proved to be a good choice, as colonists who settled closer to the coast experienced difficult weather conditions that proved disastrous for farming.
It took two years for Pringle, his father, and the rest of the family to establish the family homestead, which eventually comprised 20,000 acres of land. As he had done prior to the family’s traveling to South Africa, Pringle served as the family spokesperson and conferred with government and military officials. His influence helped the family succeed in South Africa whereas many other immigrants did not. After his family was settled Pringle himself moved to Cape Town, where he worked in the newly created South African Public Library and pursued his writing career.

To supplement his small income from the library, the enterprising Pringle opened a school with a friend from Scotland, John Fairbairn. In 1823 he also started a newspaper, the South African Journal, and a magazine, the South African Commercial Advertiser, in which he and his staff published editorials advocating reforms of the British colonial system. After both publications were censored by the government Pringle resigned. After his reformist views also led to the failure of his academy, he resigned from the library and in 1824 returned to his family’s settlement. For the rest of his time in South Africa Pringle continued to fight for freedom of the press and improvement in the position of the native people.

Most of the poetry and prose Pringle published while living in South Africa deals with local matters. It contains images of the land and its native people and is imbued with its author’s passion for promoting independence and spreading Christianity. Published in 1824, Pringle’s Some Account of the Present State of the English Settlers in Albany, South Africa describes the landscape, the housing, and the experiences Scots settlers encountered in South Africa. Unlike the Pringle family, many settlers did not find life to be that which they had been promised. Their crops failed and inclement weather destroyed most of what they had. Pringle concluded that, despite all, Scots immigrants should remain in South Africa, and he began efforts to appeal to Britain for humanitarian aid.

Ultimately, the harsh conditions in South Africa took their toll, and the idealistic Pringle and his wife were forced to leave his father and returned to London in 1826, financially ruined. A recently published article about slavery in South Africa had attracted the attention of the British Anti-Slavery Society, which now offered Pringle a job as secretary. The job suited Pringle perfectly: his craving for independence extended to blacks as well as Scots, and he had firsthand knowledge of the conditions of Native Africans. He worked with noted abolitionists William Wilberforce, Thomas Clarkson, Zachary Macaulay, and Sir Foxwell Buxton, his anti-slavery writings earning him recognition around the world.

Pringle earned a modest living through the Society that he supplemented by working as editor of an annual literary publication. He continued to write poetry based on his South African experiences and in 1828 published Ephemeredes; or, Occasional Poems, written in Scotland and South Africa. The South African poems in particular proved very popular, placing him in the ranks of Britain’s favorite poets shared by William Wordsworth, Samuel Taylor Coleridge, George Byron, Percy Shelley, and John Keats. As the first poet from South Africa to write in English, Pringle had a captive audience that consumed everything he wrote, including his 1834 work Narrative of a Residence in South Africa. A travel adventure about the land, animals, and the native people of South Africa, Narrative of a Residence in South Africa is considered his greatest work. It stands out because it was written from the perspective of a man who, although a native Scot, considered South Africa to be his homeland. Traveling to places where few non-Africans visited, Pringle shared his observations with his readers, along with his love for the land and its people.

Life’s Work Completed

Pringle’s work with the Anti-Slavery Society ended when Parliament abolished slavery on August 23, 1833. Emancipation came after a decree signed by Pringle was published on June 27, 1834. The next day, Pringle showed the first signs of an illness, which was later diagnosed as tuberculosis. Doctors recommended a milder climate, and Pringle prepared to return to South Africa. Unfortunately, the disease advanced rapidly and on December 5, 1834, he died in London at age forty-five.

Pringle died having reached many of his life goals. He had published a book of poems that he hoped would establish his place in South African literature. He had published a narrative about his adopted homeland. And his work with the Anti-Slavery Society had succeeded. Decades after his death, his poems continued to attract attention. Though generally considered to be a minor poet, he is credited with beginning the modern South African literary tradition. His best-known poem is “Afar in the Desert,” which was originally published in the South African Journal in 1824. The magazine’s circulation was very limited and the poem attracted little initial attention, but when it was included in George Thompson’s Travels in Southern Africa Samuel Taylor Coleridge read the poem and wrote to Pringle. As quoted in John Robert Doyle, Jr.’s biography Thomas Pringle, Coleridge exclaimed of the poem: “I do not hesitate to declare it, among the two or three most perfect lyric poems in our language.”

Books


Kunitz, Stanley I., editor, British Authors of the Nineteenth Century, H. W. Wilson, 1936.□

Stanley Ben Prusiner

Stanley Prusiner (born 1942) won the Nobel Prize in Physiology for Medicine in 1997 for his discovery of the prion, originally described as a disease-producing agent in animals and humans that, unlike any other known pathogen, contains no RNA or DNA. The prize was widely seen as a vindication of Prusiner’s research and methods.
Grew Up in Midwest

Prusiner was born on May 28, 1942, in Des Moines, Iowa, to Lawrence and Miriam Prusiner and named for his father’s younger brother who died of Hodgkin’s disease at age 24. In those World War II years, his father was drafted into the Navy shortly after Prusiner was born. The family moved to Boston so his father could attend officer training school. When he left for the South Pacific, his wife and son moved to Cincinnati, Ohio, to live near her mother. In his autobiography for the Nobel Foundation, Prusiner wrote fondly of his maternal grandmother and paternal grandfather, Ben Prusiner, who as a child immigrated to the United States from Moscow in 1896 and grew up in Sioux City, Iowa. At the end of the war, the reunited Prusiner family moved back to Des Moines.

In 1952, the family moved back to Cincinnati, where Prusiner’s father worked as an architect for the next 25 years. Prusiner attended Walnut Street High School and studied Latin for five years. “I found high school rather uninteresting,” he wrote in his autobiography for the Nobel Prize committee. He felt, however, that college was a different matter. “The intellectual environment of the University of Pennsylvania was extraordinary,” he said, recalling how surprisingly willing the faculty members were to take time for undergraduates. He studied science, philosophy, history of architecture, economics, and Russian history. In the summer of 1963, he began a research project with Sidney Wolfson that continued through Prusiner’s senior year, and he decided to stay at the university for medical school “largely because of the wonderful experience of doing research with Sidney Wolfson.” Prusiner received his bachelor’s degree in 1964.

Chose Biomedical Research Career

In his second year of medical school, Prusiner began a study of fluorescence and brown fat that led to spending much of his fourth year at the Wenner-Gren Institute in Stockholm working on a related topic. That “exciting time” helped him choose to pursue a career in biomedical research.

In 1968 Prusiner returned to Philadelphia and received his M.D. He began a medical internship at the University of California, San Francisco (UCSF), as a prerequisite to a post in the U.S. Public Health Service at the National Institutes of Health (NIH). While in San Francisco, he met and married Sandy Turk, a high school math teacher. They subsequently had two children, Helen and Leah.

Once at the NIH, Prusiner spent three years studying glutaminases in *E. coli*. He called the period “critical in my scientific education” and said, “I learned an immense amount about the research process.” Following the NIH post, he chose a residency in neurology rather than postdoctoral fellowships in neurobiology as “a better route to developing a rewarding career in research.”

Began to Study Slow Viruses

A key event in his career came about in September 1972, while he was serving his residency in neurology at UCSF. He admitted a patient dying from Creutzfeldt-Jacob disease (CJD), a rare, fatal condition in which the brain deteriorates. Prusiner learned that CJD did not elicit the body’s usual immune response and behaved in ways uncharacteristic of viral pathogens. He was fascinated and over the next two years read “every paper that I could find” on the CJD family of diseases, known then as “slow virus” diseases because they appeared relatively late in life.

In 1974, as an assistant professor of neurology at UCSF, Prusiner set up a lab to study scrapie, the “slow virus” disease that affects sheep. He secured funds for the project from the Howard Hughes Medical Institute (HHMI) and eventually the NIH. A temporary career crisis arose when (1) his research into scrapie failed to yield the viral pathogen he expected, (2) the HHMI ended its funding, and (3) UCSF denied him tenure. The crisis was short-lived. He streamlined some of his methods and found two new funding organizations, R. J. Reynolds Company and Sherman Fairchild Foundation, which he credits with buying the enormous number of mice and hamsters he used. His tenure denial was also reversed. NIH funding continued, amounting to $56 million between 1975 and 1997, according to one source.

Over the next eight years, Prusiner pursued the pathogen responsible for the so-called slow virus diseases and also became a professor of neurology and biochemistry at UCSF. In the spring of 1982, *Science* magazine published his first article on his research, which, in Prusiner’s words, “set off a firestorm.” He broke with scientific orthodoxy,
announcing that his years of work had identified not a virus but a protein as the agent causing a set of diseases known as transmissible spongiform encephalopathies (TSEs) (the same group formerly known as the “slow viruses”). He also coined the term “prion,” derived from “proteinaceous infectious particle,” for his discovery. (Gary Taubes, writing in Discover magazine, says Prusiner tinkered with the spelling of his coinage for euphony’s sake. Prion rhymes with Leon.)

The TSEs include Bovine Spongiform Encephalopathy (BSE), also known as Mad Cow Disease because of the way infected cattle behave; scrapie, documented in the eighteenth century in Iceland and in the 1940s in Scotland, where shepherds named it for the way infected sheep scrape their wool against fence posts; several other forms affecting animals; and the forms found in humans, including CJD, Gerstmann-Straussler-Scheinker (GSS) disease and familial insomnia, each of which affects a very small number of related individuals, and kuru, a disease of indigenous people on New Guinea and now virtually extinct. All are fatal. All end in degeneration of brain tissue into a mass riddled with holes, like a sponge—accounting for the “spongiform” part of their collective name. The ones affecting humans threaten only a very small number of people, perhaps one in one million (the number in the United States with CJD has been put at some 225), but in the 1980s and 1990s, a new threat arose when BSE “broke the species barrier”: Infected cattle apparently transmitted something that caused a form of CJD in humans who ate infected beef. Some 100 people, mostly in the United Kingdom, were thought to have contracted the disease in this fashion, and at least 130,000 British cattle were affected. Many were destroyed to avoid further spread of the disease. The specter of an unchecked spread panicked Europeans who consumed British beef.

**Theory Described Novel Protein Behavior**

Prusiner’s work sparked controversy immediately. “His findings go against the central dogma of biology, which is that you can transmit information only with DNA and RNA,” said Michael Shelanski, chairman of the department of pathology at Columbia-Presbyterian Medical Center. Infectious agents recognized in orthodox science include bacteria, viruses, fungi, and parasites, all of which contain DNA or RNA. While efforts to prove and disprove Prusiner’s prion theory are ongoing, it has achieved a wide acceptance, especially the idea that prion proteins are involved in some way in the diseases like CJD. The theory itself has evolved since 1982. Regardless of the theory that achieves consensus in the end, Prusiner’s work and the work of his critics have enriched the science associated with these diseases. In 2001, for example, WebMD reported that Prusiner’s lab had identified at least two drugs, chlorpromazine and quinacrine, that may be effective against CJD contracted from BSE-infected beef.

Based on his work with mice and hamsters infected with scrapie, Prusiner concluded that prion protein (PrP) occurs naturally in white blood cells and brain cells. Its function is not understood, but ordinarily it is harmless. PrPs can be altered, however, so that their normal helical, or spiral, shape becomes flat and rigid. Collections of these flat, rigid prions form rods that group together into sheets or plaques that kill nerve cells, producing porous, spongy brain texture, dementia, and death.

The agent causing normal prions to change conformation is novel: As Prusiner explained to Rae Frey of Australian Radio National, “the abnormal protein is capable of recruiting the normal one into the abnormal form. . . . Once the abnormal form of the prion protein is in the body, it then grabs on to the normal form and co-opts it and turns it into a rogue, or an abnormal form. . . . It becomes a chain reaction and more and more of the abnormal form accumulates . . . and eventually kills the host.” The process is very slow. Prusiner says experiments in his lab confirmed the ability of scrapie-infected prion protein (PrPSc) to cause normal, helical PrP to change conformation.

Prion diseases arise in three ways: by infection (1 percent of human cases), by heredity (5-15 percent), and by no known cause, said to be sporadic (all the rest). Sporadic cases are thought to be genetic. The particular gene that carries the instructions for the amino acid sequence that makes up the prion protein has been pinpointed, and Prusiner has found a mutation that produces the “rogue” protein—provided the mutant gene is present on both “halves” of its chromosome.

**Several Areas Drew Criticism**

Prusiner concluded the “villain” in scrapie and the other prion diseases was not viral but protein on the basis of several pieces of evidence. For instance, procedures that normally kill viruses did not destroy the ability of the material he extracted from infected laboratory animals to infect others in turn; the agent works very slowly—behavior uncharacteristic of viruses; it does not trigger the immune system to produce antibodies (a virus does); enzymes that destroy nucleic acids (the building blocks of DNA and RNA, which all viruses contain) do not kill it; and scientists have been unable to find a viral agent in more than thirty years of searching. Several other pieces of evidence support Prusiner’s claim of a protein agent: Protein-damaging enzymes destroy its infectivity, and when the gene that encodes the prion protein is removed from laboratory animals, exposure to PrPSc does not lead to the disease; no PrP means no possibility of PrPSc, so therefore PrP must be present for the disease to occur.

Prusiner’s theory is controversial not only because it is unorthodox, scientists have also accused him of claiming his lab work proves things it does not (perhaps the stunning degree to which the best-trained scientific minds can disagree on the design, conduct, and interpretation of scientific experiments reflects how very complicated the area is) and of failing to credit earlier workers, for instance researcher Pat Merz, who identified rigid protein plaques in the brains of mice with scrapie in 1978 and published her findings in 1981. Prusiner is said to have ignored her work in his 1982 paper, in which he claimed to have discovered prion rods. Others have alleged Prusiner rushed to the press early on with the suggestion that Alzheimer’s and other diseases of
brain-riddling amyloid protein plaque might be related to prion diseases. “It is an astounding finding,” Prusiner told the New York Times in 1983 that, “we never would have dreamed that amyloid and prions are the same. The implications of the findings may be enormous.” Alzheimer’s expert George Glenner said there was no proof at the time that Alzheimer’s amyloids and scrapie proteins were the same (and their difference has since been confirmed). Glenner explained in Discover, “I have the greatest respect for Stanley, but he wanted to get in the press fast. I do not think it should have been released at all.” Prusiner as recently as 1999 still expressed optimism that his discoveries would link up with Alzheimer’s, which affects far more people than does CJD and related diseases and therefore attracts more research dollars. He told an interviewer in Australia that once drugs for treating prion diseases are discovered, “The blueprint for going after drugs, for producing drugs that will stop Alzheimer’s Disease, will stop Parkinson’s Disease will be laid out. . . . Once you have one success, then many other successes will follow much more quickly.”

**Nobel Award Deviated from Norm**

Prusiner’s Nobel Prize was unusual in several ways. First, the annual prize in physiology or medicine is usually shared by more than one person. Prusiner was the first single winner in ten years and one of only six singletons in the preceding 40 years. Moreover, the Nobel is usually awarded after major controversies have been resolved, but one member of the Nobel award committee, Dr. Lars Edstrom, suggested the committee may have taken a side. In a New York Times article, Dr. Edstrom noted: “There are still people who don’t believe that a protein can cause these diseases, but we believe it.” Prusiner’s prize was also unusual because he was the second person to win for work on TSEs. Dr. Carleton Gajdusek won in 1976 for his work with kuru. With two awards in the area, the committee would be unlikely to award a third, which could dampen the enthusiasm of other researchers in the area; the clout, the glory, and the $1 million that go with the Nobel are mighty incentives in science.

Lately it seems that prions alone may not explain how PrPSc forces PrP (or PrPC, the normal, “cellular” PrP) to trim rigid, clump together, and kill brain cells after all. In his research summary on his UCSF Web page, Prusiner says an additional agent now seems to be involved. He calls it “an as yet to be identified factor that we have provisionally designated protein X.” Protein X “binds to PrPC. The PrPC/protein X complex then binds PrPSc; by an unknown process, PrPC is transformed into a second molecule of PrPSc. We are attempting to isolate protein X.”

One or two of Prusiner’s critics have suggested his protein X sounds suspiciously like a viral agent proposed in the 1970s by three scientists of the British Neuro-pathogenesis Unit in Edinburgh, Scotland. They were trying to isolate the agent causing scrapie and hypothesized it was “a small piece of nucleic acid protected by a protein made by genes in the host, rather than genes in the agent.” They called it a “virino.” Will it turn out to be Prusiner’s protein X, or will protein X reveal itself as virus X? The end of the story has yet to be written. Perhaps some words of Francis Bacon are apt to the issue. “He that will not apply new remedies must expect new evils; for time is the greatest innovator.”

**Periodicals**

*Chemistry and Industry,* October 2, 2000.
*JAMA,* November 12, 1997.
*Science,* October 10, 1997; October 22, 1999.

**Online**

Bernard Rands

Bernard Rands (born 1934) is a major composer and conductor in contemporary music, publishing more than 100 works in a wide range of performance genres. Born in England but now an American citizen, Rands studied in Italy under Luciano Berio, Luigi Dallapiccola, and Roman Vlad. His distinguished academic career included professorships at York University, Oxford University, and the University of California San Diego. His composition “Canti del Sole” won the 1984 Pulitzer Prize in Music, and his orchestral suites “Le Tambourin” won the 1986 John F. Kennedy Center Friedheim Award. Rands has been called one of the most important musical voices of our time.

Career in Composition and Academia

Rands was born March 2, 1934, in Sheffield, England. He studied music and English literature at the University College of Wales, Bangor, earning a bachelor’s degree in music in 1956 and a master’s degree in 1958. After completing his academic degrees, he traveled around Italy for two years to study composition and conducting under Roman Vlad in Rome, Luigi Dallapiccola in Florence, and Bruno Maderna. Rands’s most influential teacher in Italy was Luciano Berio from Milan. From 1961 to 1964 he attended the summer courses of Boulez at Darmstadt.

Rands’s early compositions in the 1960s explored new instrumental techniques. He employed a mature style that was lyrical, dynamic, and sensitive. He superimposed original timbres on an intuitively derived chromatic pitch content. His writings for voice accompaniment for orchestra and chamber ensemble were treated with elegance.

Rands demonstrated an impressive academic career and held fellowships at numerous universities. He was a guest lecturer at the University of Wales from 1963 to 1967, and in 1966 acted as composer-in-residence and visiting fellow at Princeton University and composer-in-resident at the University of Illinois until 1970. He was a member of the faculty in music and Granada fellow of creative arts at York University from 1968 to 1975. From 1972 to 1975, Rands was a fellow in creative arts and professor of music at Brasenose College at Oxford University.

In 1975 he emigrated to the United States and became professor of music at the University of California at San Diego. In 1983, Rands became a US citizen. Eventually traversing the country, he served as professor of composition at Boston University and simultaneously as a faculty member of Juilliard School of Music in New York City. He was also composer-in-residence at Aspen, Colorado, and Tanglewood, Massachusetts, festivals. From 1989 to 1996 he was composer-in-residence for the Philadelphia Orchestra.

Rands also had a career as a conductor with ensembles and orchestras around the world. Composers, performers, audiences, and critics praised him for his performances of a large and diverse repertoire of contemporary music. An impressive list of fellow conductors led orchestras in Rands’s music, such as Pierre Boulez, Luciano Berio, Bruno Maderna, Neville Marriner, Zubin Mehta, Riccardo Muti, Seiji Ozawa, Helmuth Rilling, Esa-Pekka Salonen,
Wolfgang Sawallisch, Gunther Schuller, Giuseppe Sinopoli, Leonard Slatkin, Christoph von Dohnanyi, and David Zinman.

**Affiliations and Awards**

Some of his many organization affiliations include membership in the American Society of University Composers and a seat on the advisor board of the Boston Modern Orchestra Project. He has been chosen as the Walter Bigelow Rosen Professor of Music at Harvard University and serves as the Walter Channing Cabot Fellow also at Harvard.

The beginning of Rands’s long record of honors and awards was his receipt of the 1966 Harkness International Fellowship of the Commonwealth Fund of New York. Starting in 1977, Rands received a total of three National Endowment for the Arts grants and earned an American Academy of Arts and Letters award. He received the 1978 California Arts Council Award and earned a 1982 Guggenheim Fellowship. He was also honored by the Fromm and Koussevitzky Foundations, Pew Trust, and Carey Trust.

With his musical voice demanding to be spoken, Rands has shined in the past two decades. His compositions have won prestigious awards, such as the 1984 Pulitzer Prize in Music for “Canti del Sole,” which Rands wrote for tenor and orchestra and which was premiered by Paul Sperry and the New York Philharmonic, conducted by Zubin Mehta. In 1986, Rands won the John F. Kennedy Center’s prestigious Friedheim Award for his orchestral suites “Le Tambourin.”

**Received Commissions from Around the World**

Over the years, Rands has been perused for commissions from major ensembles, orchestras, and festivals around the world. International commissions have come from the Suntory Concert Hall in Tokyo, the BBC Symphony Orchestra in London, the Israel Philharmonic, and the Internationale Bach Akademie in Stuttgart. Commissions in the U.S. were awarded from the Boston Symphony Orchestra, the Choral Arts Society of Philadelphia, Los Angeles Philharmonic, Chicago Symphony, and the Eastman Wind Ensemble.

Rands wrote a piece for the New York Philharmonic’s 100th anniversary, a cello concerto for the Rostropovich celebration of this 70th birthday, and a piece for a consortium of orchestras and soloists for Meet the Composer. Recently he wrote for the Cleveland Chamber Symphony, the Dale Warland Singers, and the Mendelssohn String Quartet, which has performed a world premiere of his string quartet.

Rands received two commissions from the Serge Koussevitzky Music Foundation in the Library of Congress. The first was in 1983 for his “Suite No. 2–Le Tambourin.” The second was presented in 1994 by The Serge Koussevitzky Music Foundation and the Koussevitzky Music Foundation, Inc. to Rands and to the Philadelphia Orchestra, where he was composer-in-residence. The new work was premiered in May 1995, under the direction of music director Wolfgang Sawallisch.

The San Francisco-based Chanticleer vocal chamber ensemble commissioned a set of pieces from Rands for inclusion in its 1991 Colors of Love album. Rands wrote “Canti d’Amor,” a set of fifteen poems from James Joyce’s Chamber Music, a volume of verse published in 1907. Chanticleer selected seven of Rands’s pieces, including “Winds of May that dance on the sea” and “Silently she’s combing her long hair,” that evoked complex harmonies for a warm and sensuous experience. Colors of Love won the Grammy award for Best Small Ensemble Performance. Rands’s commission of “Canti d’Amor” was paid for by a grant from the Meet the Composer/Reader’s Digest Commissioning Program, in partnership with the National Endowment for the Arts and the Lila Wallace/Reader’s Digest Fund.

**Influenced Performers and Conductors**

Rands is known for composing for a wide range of performance genres. He expresses an original and distinctive style that has been described as “plangent lyricism” with “dramatic intensity.” His music drew parallels between text and musical structure in his compositions.

Rands developed his elegant technical mastery from his studies in Italy. Berio had a lasting musical influence on Rand’s music, evidenced by Rands’s early compositions, the 1971 “Metalepsis II” and the 1980 “Canti Lunatici,” for the way Rands approached word settings and his choice of multi-lingual libretto. Influenced most conspicuously by his teacher Berio, Rands infused his music with his enjoyment of solo virtuosity and in his approach to verbal language.
Rands himself influenced the next generation of performers. He was the main composition teacher of British modernist singer and composer Vic Hoyland, who attended York University in the late 1960s. Rands’s enthusiasm for the Italian approach to music and composition imparted an impression on Hoyland.

Rands’s 1998 album The Works of Bernard Rands, performed by the Cleveland Chamber Symphony, features three works connected with Rands’s teacher Luciano Berio. “Metalespisis II,” dedicated to Bruno Maderna, was conducted by Berio. The five short movements of “Madrigali” were inspired by Berio’s “Il Combattimento.” The final piece was the world premiere of Rands’s “Triple Concert,” dedicated to Berio and commissioned by the Core Ensemble. Reviewer Hubert Culot wrote of the album, “This wonderful release undoubtedly provides for a thought-provoking survey of Bernard Rands’ musical journey and also a good introduction to his often beautiful sound world and his honest and serious musical thinking.”

Rands’s 2000 album featuring his piece “Ceremonial for Symphonic Wind Band” is a collection of new-band music. A send up of “Bolero,” “Ceremonial” presents a single repeated melody that becomes progressively elaborate generating its own harmony. In his review of the composition in Fanfare magazine, Robert Carl noted that the effect was like a grave procession, gathering in substance throughout the piece. “What could in other hands be a great aesthetic miscalculation instead sounds imaginative and personal, proving that a good idea can continue to live in new guises,” Carl said.

Concerts and Guest Appearances

In demand all over world, Rands has been guest composer at many international festivals and was the featured topic at the Rands Symposium held at Brigham Young University in November 1994. Also in 1994, the Aspen (Colorado) Music Festival commissioned Rands to write a piece for its 50th anniversary. For the festival, Rands wrote his first chamber opera, “Belladonna,” 1 of 160 new works that premiered at Aspen. Japanese mezzo-contralto Makiko Narumi, a Juilliard Opera Center performer, sang the role of Agatha Liu in the world premiere of “Belladonna.”

Rands was one of 50 composers featured at the 35th National Conference of the Society of Composers, Inc. hosted by Syracuse University’s Setnor Auditorium and performed by the Center for New Music at the University of Iowa. The three-day marathon in March 2001 highlighted works by live composers from around the country. Rands’s selected piece “Concertino for Oboe and Ensemble,” commissioned by the Philadelphia Network for New Music in 1998, displayed imagination, originality, and technical mastery.

In November 2001, the Colorado College’s Great Performances and Ideas Series presented a concert of Rands’s solo and chamber works, performed by the college’s Lanner Faculty artists, the Da Vinci Quartet, and the Italian Contemporary Players. In December 2001, the concert group The Ensemble Sospeso in New York presented the world premiere of a newly commissioned work by Rands. Sospeso’s oboist Jacqueline Leclair performed the piece.

Rands’s works are a popular source of music for various organizational events, such as the 2001 Netherlands-America Foundation (NAF) fundraiser concert by the NAF Fellows and NAF beneficiaries. Rands’s “Memo” for solo soprano was presented at Southeast Alaska’s CrossSounds 2002 music festival.

Books


Online


Razia

A descendant of the Moslems of Turkish extraction who invaded India in the eleventh century, Razia (died 1240) was the only woman ever crowned in the Delhi sultanate, which ruled parts of India from 1210 to 1526. Razia reigned for approximately three and a half years (1236–1240), and although she made important reforms in government, she was ultimately unable to reconcile her Muslim nobility to her ruling as a woman.

The Delhi Sultanate

In 1192 A.D., the Turkish leader, Muhammad of Ghur, defeated the Rajputs at the second battle of Tarain, gaining control of the Kingdom of Delhi. After establishing his reign, Ghur returned to Afghanistan, leaving his conquest in the hands of his trusted slave, Qutb-ud-din Aibak.
When Ghur died in 1206 without leaving an heir, Qutb-ud-din declared himself Sultan of Delhi. Qutb-ud-din's reign marked the beginning of the Delhi sultanate under the Slave dynasty—so named because many of the sultans of this time were former slaves. Qutb-ud-din is best remembered for his destruction of Hindu and Jain temples and for building mosques.

Ilutmish

Although Qutb-ud-din's son Aram Baksh inherited the throne in 1210 following the death of his father, he quickly proved himself to be incompetent. Following an abbreviated reign, Qutb-ud-din's son-in-law, Shamsuddin Ilutmish, assumed power.

Ilutmish had come to Delhi as a slave. After gaining the confidence of his master, Qutb-ud-din, he rose to become a provincial governor. Upon Qutb-ud-din's death, Ilutmish had the backing of the Amirs—the Turkish nobility—to succeed Qutb-ud-din as sultan.

At the time of Ilutmish’s death in 1236, he had been in power for 26 years. As sultan, he had consolidated Turkish control of northern India and his empire extended from Prashar in the northwest to the Brahmaputra River in Bengal and Gujurat and Orissa in the south. Ilutmish had introduced important reforms to the Delhi sultanate—including a monarchy, a ruling class, and coinage—and had left a legacy as a patron of the arts.

Razia Sultana

Ilutmish became the first sultan to appoint a woman as his successor when he designated his daughter Razia as his heir apparent. (According to one source, Ilutmish’s eldest son had initially been groomed as his successor, but had died prematurely.) But the Muslim nobility had no intention of acceding to Ilutmish’s disregard of tradition in appointing a woman as heir, and after the sultan died on April 29, 1236, Razia’s brother, Ruknuddin Feroze Shah, was elevated to the throne instead.

Ruknuddin’s reign was short. With Ilutmish’s widow Shah Turkaan for all practical purposes running the government, Ruknuddin abandoned himself to the pursuit of personal pleasure and debauchery, to the considerable outrage of the citizenry. On November 9, 1236, both Ruknuddin and his mother Shah Turkaan were put to death—after only six months in power.

With reluctance, the nobility next agreed to allow Razia to reign as sultana of Delhi. As a child and adolescent, Razia had had little contact with the women of the harem, so she had had little opportunity to learn the customary behavior of women in the Muslim society that she was born into. Even before she became queen—during her father’s reign—she was reportedly preoccupied with the affairs of state. As sultana, Razia adopted men’s dress; and contrary to custom, she would later show her face when she later rode an elephant into battle at the head of her army.

A shrewd politician, Razia managed to keep the nobles in check, while enlisting the support of the army and the populace. Her greatest accomplishment on the political front was to manipulate rebel factions into opposing each other. At that point, Razia seemed destined to become one of the most powerful rulers of the Delhi sultanate.

But the sultana miscounted the consequences that a special relationship with one of her Assyrian slaves, Jamal Uddin Yaqt, would have for her reign. According to some accounts, Razia and Yaqt were lovers; other sources simply identify them as close confidants. In any case, before long she had aroused the jealousy of the Muslim nobility by the favoritism she displayed toward Yaqt. Eventually, the governor of Bhatinda, a childhood friend named Malik Ikhtiar-ud-din Altunia, rebelled, refusing any longer to accept Razia’s authority.

A battle between Razia and Altunia ensued, with the result that Yaqt was killed and Razia taken prisoner. To escape death, Razia agreed to marry Altunia. Meanwhile, Razia’s brother, Muisuddin Bahram Shah, had usurped the throne. After Altunia and Razia undertook to take back the sultanate from Bahram through battle, both Razia and her husband—neither one more than 30 years of age—were both killed on October 14, 1240 (some sources say October 13). Bahram, for his part, would later be dethroned for incompetence.

End of the Delhi Sultanate

The Slave dynasty would come to an end some fifty years after the death of Razia. The most memorable of her successors was Balban (1266–1287), who succeeded in establishing a strong, central government and saw the position of sultan elevated to divine status. Following his death in 1287, the Slave dynasty would continue three more years under the competing rule of his inept grandsons.

Under other dynasties, however, the Delhi sultanate would persist until 1525, achieving its maximum physical extent under the reign of Muhammad ibn Tughluk in the first half of the fourteenth century, when most of the subcontinent was under the sultan’s dominion. But in 1398, Timur the Lame (Tamurlane) plundered Delhi. By the early fifteenth century, the sultanate consisted only of Delhi and immediately adjacent lands. Although the Delhi sultanate regained control of most of northern India in the early sixteenth century, it was finally destroyed by Babur, founder of the Mughal empire, in 1526.

Early Sources

The Tabakat-I-Nasiri is a generalized history of Delhi that ends at about 1259, about twenty years after the death of Razia. The work’s author, Minhajus Seraj, served Ilutmish, Razia, and Balban. Although Minhaj’s history of the times is considered to be among the most reliable sources of information about Razia, Mihaj spent the last years of his life in the service of Balban, who had brought an end to Razia’s rule.

Minhaj’s point of view is therefore suspect given that he was unlikely to have included details in his account that would have brought embarrassment to his patron. Every other chronicle of the times is based on Minhaj’s history.
Rafiq Zakaria, writing in his book, Razia Warrior Queen of India, quotes Minhaj on Razia as follows, “[She was] a great sovereign, sagacious, just, beneficent, the patron of the learned, a dispenser of justice, the cherisher of her subjects and of warlike talent, and was endowed with all the admirable attributes and qualifications necessary for kings. . . . She was endowed with all the qualities befitting a king, but she was not born of the right sex and so in the estimation of men all these virtues were worthless.”

In his research, Zakaria consulted early sources to put together a work of historical fiction based on the life of the sultana. In Zakaria’s portrayal, Razia was essentially hamstrung by her emotions. Zakaria believes that Altunia was deeply in love with Razia, but that he was repeatedly rebuffed by her aloofness. Zakaria speculates that the queen may have been too preoccupied with the affairs of state or may have been psychologically blocked—possibly from her upbringing—to have given sway to her emotions.

Zakaria argues that besides the prejudice Razia would have faced because of her sex, she would also have been targeted for her racial tolerances. On one hand, she met criticism from the Turkish Amirs, who were the royal multi-tribal leaders, and the Maliks, who led the small communities, for the favoritism she showed toward her Abyssinian slave, Jamaluddin Yaqt. Whether Yaqt was Razia’s lover has been debated for centuries, but even if he was not, Zakaria feels that the fact that he continued getting promotions to higher ranks would have elicited the envy of the Maliks. (Casting a new slant on the historical debate, Zakaria points out that Altunia would probably not have married Razia if he had been convinced she had had an affair with her slave Yaqt.) In any case, Razia aroused the jealousy of the nobility, and some have held this jealousy to have been a major factor in her dethronement.

Razia’s marriage to Altunia was apparently endorsed by their followers, and it proved central to the revolt against those who had dethroned her at Delhi. Razia’s popularity with her subjects must have further aroused the envy of the Amirs and Maliks, setting the nobles against her on yet another score. According to Zakaria, it was because Minhaj shared the attitude of the nobles and of his patron Balban that he portrayed her in his writings as a coward—for example, saying that she met her death hiding in a corner where she was killed by Hindu robbers—in the final battle with Balban that claimed her life.

Besides Minhaj, there are two other contemporary chroniclers of Razia’s life: Fakhr-I-Mudabbir and Sadruddin Hasan Nizami. But their accounts have never achieved the authority of Minhaj’s. Two later historians, Isami and Barani, attempted to reconstruct the facts from family accounts (Isami) or independent analysis (Barani). Isami’s history is noteworthy for its contradiction of Minhaj’s account of Razia’s death; in Isami’s telling, the sultana fought along with Altunia in two battles before she was finally killed. Other sources, while providing valuable details about the time that Razia lived, attribute little significance to her life.

**Razia’s Legacy**

As sultana, Razia reportedly sought to abolish the tax on non-Muslims but met opposition from the nobility. By way of response, Razia is said to have pointed out that the spirit of religion was more important than its parts, and that even the Muslim Prophet spoke against overburdening the non-Muslims. On another occasion, Razia reportedly tried to appoint an Indian Muslim convert from Hinduism to an official position but again ran into opposition from the nobles. In this case she yielded, having concluded that the bonds of Islam were weaker than old prejudices.

Razia was reportedly devoted to the cause of her empire and to her subjects. There is no record that she made any attempt to remain aloof from her subjects, rather it appears she preferred to mingle among them. Her tolerance of Hinduism would later bring her criticism from Muslim historians.

Razia established schools, academies, centers for research, and public libraries that included the works of ancient philosophers along with the Koran and the Traditions of the Prophet. Hindu works in the sciences, philosophy, astronomy, and literature were reportedly studied in schools and colleges.

**Razia’s Tomb**

Today Razia’s unpretentious tomb lies among the narrow lanes of Old Delhi in Northern India. Crumbling and covered by dust and grime, the tomb has clearly suffered the ravages of time. The grave is surrounded on all sides by unattractive residential buildings. Meanwhile modern-day encroachers have placed plastic sheets around the tomb and started to live in it, turning it into an urban ghetto.

In the thirteenth century, the site of the tomb was a jungle, and no one knows how Razia’s body ended up where it lies today. Though a second grave accompanies Razia’s, the identity of the occupant is unknown. Some of the local residents have turned the tomb into a place of worship, where prayers are conducted five times each day.

**Books**


**Online**


Sumner Murray Redstone

Sumner Redstone (born 1923) built a multi-billion-dollar media empire starting with a string of movie theatres in the Boston area. After fighting successfully for ownership of a little-known cable TV company, Viacom, in 1987, Redstone went on to build Viacom into a personal kingdom that controlled MTV, Nickelodeon, VH1, TV Land, Comedy Central, UPN, TNN, Country Music Television, Showtime/TMC, CBS, Paramount Pictures, Simon & Schuster, Blockbuster, Infinity Broadcasting, and Paramount Parks. In 2002, Redstone's personal fortune was valued at $9 billion.

Early Interests

Sumner Murray Redstone was born on May 27, 1923, to Max and Belle Rothstein in Boston, Massachusetts. Redstone’s father got his start selling newspapers on the streets of Boston, then became a linoleum salesman and eventually got into the nightclub business, buying Boston’s Latin Quarter from Lou Walters, the father of Barbara Walters. Max Rothstein, who later changed the family name to Redstone, opened the third drive-in theater in the United States, on New York’s Long Island, and built a small chain of drive-ins that did well in the years after World War II. But Redstone insisted the real driving force in the family was his mother, who used to turn the clock back when he was practicing piano to make him work a little bit longer.

After spending his early years in a tenement which had a bathroom shared with other tenants, Redstone attended the Boston Latin School. There he headed the debating team and graduated at the top of his class. Redstone pursued undergraduate studies at Harvard. During World War II, with classes interrupted, he worked with his professor of Japanese, Edwin Reischauer, on a project aimed at deciphering Japanese military code. After the war, he attended Harvard Law School.

In 1951 Redstone became a partner in the Washington, D.C. law firm of Ford, Bergson, Adams, Borkland & Redstone. But in 1954 he abandoned law and returned to Boston to work with his father in the movie theater business.

National Amusements

At that time his father’s company, National Amusements, was able to attract only second-run movies from Hollywood. But after Redstone brought a lawsuit against the Hollywood studios, National Amusements acquired access to Hollywood’s best films. Under Redstone’s direction, National Amusements would grow from 59 screens in 1964 to 129 in 1974.

In 1972, Redstone, by then reasonably wealthy, served as co-chairman of Senator Edmund Muskie’s presidential campaign. A liberal Democrat, Redstone also became a friend and supporter of Senator Edward M. Kennedy.

During a screening of Star Wars in 1977 Redstone reportedly rushed out of the theatre to place an order for 25,000 shares of stock in Twentieth Century Fox. The investment would bring him $20 million when he sold the stock in 1981. He picked up another $40 million by buying and selling stock in Columbia Pictures and MGM/UA.

Trial By Fire

In 1979, the 55-year-old Redstone checked into Boston’s Copely Plaza Hotel, where he planned to attend a party for a Warner Brothers Pictures branch manager. Sometime after midnight, Redstone awoke to the smell of smoke. After opening the door to his room, he found himself engulfed in flames. Making his way to the window, he climbed out on a tiny ledge and hung on until a hook-and-ladder fire truck rescued him. He suffered third-degree burns on over 45 percent of his body.

Doctors initially feared for his life, then said he’d never walk again, and later expressed concern that he might lose an arm to infection. After five operations, lasting a total of sixty hours, one of his doctors told him, according to an
article in *Broadcasting*, “Listen, everything we know is on your body. Bone grafts, skin grafts, and the reason you’re alive is you.”

In 2001, Redstone wrote in his autobiography, *A Passion to Win*, “The most exciting things that have happened to me in my professional life have occurred after the fire but not because of it. It doesn’t take near death to bring you to life. Life begins whenever you want it to begin.” He eventually recovered fully except for a right arm that hung limply from his shoulder and a purplish cast to the skin on his hand.

**Viacom Acquisition**

In 1987, at the age of 63, Redstone set out to buy Viacom, which at that time operated the tenth-largest cable system in the country and owned several cable networks, including MTV, Nickelodeon, and The Movie Channel. Although Redstone had no experience with cable television or rock videos, he saw them as competitors to movie theaters. He was also astute enough to realize that the home entertainment market was poised for tremendous growth.

Acquiring Viacom was easier said than done. Redstone was forced to raise his offer for the cable company three times in a bitter takeover war with Viacom executives before he finally seized control.

**Paramount Merger**

By 1993, Redstone’s original stake in Viacom was worth $5.5 billion, and he had set his sights on acquiring Paramount Communications, which owned Paramount Pictures, the Paramount television production unit, and a library of nearly 900 films. Also held by Paramount was the publisher Simon & Schuster, which owned Prentice-Hall, Macmillan, Scribner, and Pocket Books; Madison Square Garden; the National Hockey League’s New York Rangers; the National Basketball Association’s New York Knicks; and cable’s MSG Networks. Redstone’s stated goal in acquiring Paramount was to create the leading software-driven media company in the world.

But when Paramount indicated it was willing to be acquired by Viacom, Redstone wondered why. He concluded that Paramount’s CEO Martin Davis trusted and had a genuine affection for him and that Davis preferred to do business with him rather than with others who were also trying to take over Paramount. But Redstone also gave Davis credit for recognizing the combined strength of the company that a merger would create. When Redstone announced Viacom’s acquisition of Paramount and the creation of Paramount Viacom International on September 12, 1993, he said “This is a deal only a nuclear war will tear asunder.”

But with the merger Redstone had on his hands an unwieldy giant burdened by debt. However, by selling off Madison Square Garden and some cable systems and radio stations and a video game company, Redstone slashed his debts from $11 billion to less than half that. He also scored a coup with his sale of Simon & Schuster’s educational division to Pearson for $4.6 billion, far more than industry analysts expected him to get.

**New Directions**

In the late 1990s, with Viacom’s Blockbuster Video in trouble, it appeared that Redstone’s fortunes would diminish along with those of his company. But Redstone hung on, redesigning Blockbuster’s business mode, patching up marketing and distribution problems, and bringing in a new chief executive. As a result, new life was pumped into the video subsidiary.

Redstone, meanwhile, required that Paramount make movies developed by its Viacom cousins, MTV and Nickelodeon, against initial opposition from the reluctant partners. But the arrangement worked, and Paramount and MTV made a string of profitable movies, while Nickelodeon did very well with its *Rugrats* movies.

Making movies was the most difficult side of Viacom’s business. Its bread was buttered by its cable networks and their strong brands, low overhead, and high profit margins. Nickelodeon ranked at the top in children’s viewing; MTV received top billing for those between 12 and 24; and VH1 gained popularity among baby boomers with its music offerings. There was also growing interest in TV Land and Comedy Central.

MTV and Nickelodeon began reversing losses overseas as Redstone looked abroad for Viacom’s future. He told *Fortune* in 1999, “Anybody who ignores the fact that 96% of the world’s eyeballs are outside the U.S. is going to pay for it.”

On September 7, 1999, Viacom and CBS announced the merger of the two companies, with Viacom purchasing the television network for $37.3 billion. Although Redstone until that time had shown no interest in purchasing a major television network, he was attracted by CBS’s assets, which included production houses and radio stations. Redstone later wrote in his autobiography, “Bigger is not necessarily better, although it is certainly true that bigger is better than smaller. But this merger was not about bigness; it was about putting together two groups of assets that would produce an extraordinary company.”

About the time the merger between CBS and Viacom was falling into place, Redstone’s wife decided to divorce him after 52 years of marriage. According to Redstone, the divorce hit him “like a bullet,” even though he claimed the marriage had been troubled for a long time.

**Proving Critics Wrong**

Redstone met success through relentless persistence, not by marketing a new technology or selling a personal vision. He reportedly viewed his company’s stock price as a public scorecard. And rather than wearing him down, work seemed to rejuvenate the entertainment mogul. For the tightly focused Redstone, there was reportedly no life outside his company. He told *Fortune* magazine, “Viacom is me . . . I’m Viacom. That marriage is eternal, forever.”

Redstone encountered plenty of naysayers along his path to success. Initially dismissed as a “two-bit theater operator from Boston” by the Viacom old guard, he was later called “the foolish boss of a bloated empire” after the troubles at Blockbuster surfaced.
But Redstone always enjoyed proving his critics wrong. And he did not seem to hold a lot of grudges; he even suggested future business deals with those who opposed him in the past. He told Fortune, “It’s a mistake, if you want to run your company right, to let history get in the way of the future.” The much-maligned Paramount merger paid off. Redstone told Fortune, “The deal from hell has become a helluva deal!”

**Simple Tastes**

Redstone reportedly had no designated heir apparent waiting to take over upon his departure. He assured investors that neither his son Brent, a Denver attorney, nor his daughter Shari, who presides over National Amusements, would assume the Viacom reins when he left.

Although Redstone made more money from the entertainment industry than any other human being, he spent most of his life out of the glare of publicity. Part of the reason is that Viacom lacked the romantic appeal of Disney or AOL Time Warner. But in his trademark cheap suits, Redstone also lacked the charisma of Ted Turner.

Redstone kept an apartment in New York’s Pierre Hotel, but he still lived in the same home in the Boston suburbs that he bought for $43,000. His wants seemed simple, his aspirations without bound. He told Fortune magazine, “To me, staying in a bungalow at the Beverly Hills Hotel, walking out and being surrounded by flowers, and then going down the path to play tennis—that’s the height of my material aspirations . . . Then I get in the car to go to the studio.”

**Books**


**Periodicals**

Electronic Media, April 26, 1999.
Forbes, October 17, 1994.
Fortune, April 26, 1999.
Time, September 27, 1993.

---

**Ishmael Reed**

A novelist, journalist, and playwright, American writer Ishmael Reed (born 1938) has been cited by critics as among the greatest contemporary African American literary figures of his generation.

According to Lee Hubbard in American Visions, Ishmael Reed is “an unorthodox writer who has taken on the media, the writing establishment, feminists, politicians, blacks, whites and [the] American institution of higher learning.” Reed’s satire has been controversial, to say the least, but he has nonetheless joined novelists Toni Morrison and Samuel Delany as among the most important forces in the distinct African American culture that developed during the 20th century.

**Early Years in New York**

Reed was born in Chattanooga, Tennessee, but grew up in Buffalo, New York, in a working-class neighborhood. He graduated from Buffalo public schools in 1956 and enrolled as a night student at Millard Fillmore College. While there, Reed wrote a short story about a young African American man and showed it to his English professor. Impressed with Reed’s abilities, the professor aided Reed in enrolling for day school at the University of Buffalo, where he attended classes from 1956 to 1960. Financially unable to remain in college, however, Reed dropped out before graduating but continued to write. While in Buffalo he wrote a jazz column for the Empire Star Weekly, an African American community newspaper, and co-hosted a Buffalo radio program that was canceled after Reed interviewed controversial black leader Malcolm X.

Reed moved to New York City in 1962, where he worked as an editor for a Newark, New Jersey, weekly and organized the American Festival of Negro Art. Reed established himself as a founder of the East Village Other, a respected underground newspaper, and as a member of the Umbra Writers Workshop. The workshop, in the words of Robert Elliot Fox in The Oxford Companion to African-American Literature, was “one of the organizations instrumental in the creation of the Black Arts movement and
its efforts to establish a Black Aesthetic.” The goals of the workshop—especially the establishment of a black aesthetic—would stay with Reed for the rest of his career. While in New York City, Reed befriended Langston Hughes, a major influence in African American poetry who became a major influence in Reed’s work. Hughes was also instrumental in getting Reed’s first novel published.

Established Neohoodism

Unhappy with the African American literary movement on the east coast, Reed relocated to Oakland, California, where he settled permanently, living at least part of the time in the city’s so-called black ghetto. That same year, 1967, his first novel, The Freelance Pallbearers, was published. With his first novel, Reed established the various themes and styles that would become his trademark. The Freelance Pallbearers was a satire heavily critical of the Western European Christian tradition, the formal literature of that tradition, and African Americans within different black communities. It was Reed’s second novel, Yellow Back Radio Broke Down, published in 1969, that established his usage of “HooDoo” and folklore.

“Neohoodism is the name Reed gave to the philosophy and aesthetic processes he employs to take care of business on behalf of the misguided and mishandled,” explained Fox. This African American version of voodoo appealed to Reed because of its mystery and especially its ecstatic nature. It became a way for Reed to avoid using Western literary traditions while creating a new multi-ethnic voice. Reed respects voodoo as a world view due to its ease of adaptation, its flexibility, and its way of eating and dissolving into itself other ways of living. His written work is known for satirizing and challenging existing social and literary conventions, According to Hubbard, Reed is a “self-proclaimed multiculturalist who consistently incorporates different aspects of other people’s cultures into his work.”

Multi-faceted Career in Oakland

With his stints in Buffalo and New York City in radio, his editing work, and the publication of his first novel, Reed set his sights on building a multifaceted career. He has since become known not just for his novels, but for his extensive collections of essays, his poetry, his journalism, his editing, publishing, play-writing, song-writing, television producing, lecturing, teaching, and founding of various organizations. In most of these fields, Reed has been honored for his accomplishments and talents, making him a one-man tour de force.

In 1970 Reed’s first collection of poetry, Catechism of D Neoamerican HooDoo Church, was published. Around this time he also started teaching at the University of California in Berkeley, where he remained on staff for upwards of 20 years (even without tenure). In 1971 Reed started the Yardbird Publishing Co., which published, among other things, the magazine Y’Bird.

Reed’s Mumbo Jumbo, a novel published in 1972, was his first book to achieve widespread notoriety. It has also been considered by many to be his best work, along with Neo-HooDoo Manifesto, a collection of essays published the same year. Manifesto was nominated for a National Book Award along with Conjure: Selected Poems, 1963-1970, also published in 1972. In 1973 Reed published another collection titled Chattanooga: Poems. Meanwhile, he co-founded another publishing enterprise, Reed, Cannon & Johnson Communications. This new publishing company published Quilt magazine, which was designed for students, minorities, and writers living and working on the West Coast of the United States.

A Voice for Many Causes

The year 1974 saw the publication of another novel by Reed, The Last Days of Louisiana Red. In 1976 the novel Flight to Canada was published to critical acclaim and was praised as among his best works. Also in 1976, Reed co-founded the Before Columbus Foundation, a multiethnic organization promoting a cross-cultural America. The Before Columbus Foundation has often been cited as Reed’s most important contribution to U.S. society.

In 1978 Reed published a volume of poetry titled Secretary to the Spirits as well as a volume of essays titled Shrovetide in Old New Orleans. By 1980 he was involved in the world of theater and wrote and produced the play The Ace Boons. He published two more plays in 1982: Hell Hath No Fury and Mother Hubbard.


In 1990 Reed published Tell My Horse: Voodoo and Life in Haiti and Jamaica, in which he presents an account of Haiti as the country of origination for Voodoo. Reed also notes that Voodoo—or HooDoo—because of its flexible qualities, has existed throughout history in many subversive forms. He told Reginald Martin in a Review of Contemporary Fiction interview: “I’ve decided that gospel music is just a front for Voodoo…. I think when they’re praising Jesus, they’re really singing about Legba or something like that.”

Battled Mainstream Media

In 1992 Reed organized a boycott of major television networks that was led by the Oakland chapter of the international writers’ organization PEN. The boycott was only one step in the author’s ongoing battle against mainstream media. Reed has claimed that the media systematically undermines and unfavorably portrays minorities in the United States, and these inaccurate portrayals have been detrimental to the production of a healthy, multiethnic society and a healthy African American self-view. He spent years moni-
toring the media’s portrayal of people and wrote letters whenever necessary. He has also attacked the media in his essays, novels, and poems. “The state of American journalism in its portrayal of minorities is horrible,” Reed commented to Holland, and further expanded on his views of the media in his 1993 essay collection *Airing Dirty Laundry*.

In 1993 Reed published the novel *Japanese by Spring* and four years later edited the anthology *MultiAmerica: Essays on Cultural Wars and Cultural Peace*, which showcases writers communicating about race relations in the United States.

**Life and Time of Reed**

Besides having taught at the University of California at Berkeley since the late 1960s, Reed has held visiting appointments at such places as Harvard University, Yale University, and Dartmouth College. In Germany and Switzerland he has lectured to standing-room-only crowds. Among his continuing projects is a musical titled *Gethsemane Park* and a novel about the O. J. Simpson trial. He has received a Pulitzer Prize nomination to accompany his two National Book Award nominations, as well as many other awards, grants, and fellowships. He founded I. Reed Books as well as the journal *Konch* and wrote a libretto for the San Francisco Opera Company. Reed is married to Carla Blank, a dancer and choreographer. The couple has one daughter, Tennessee, and Reed has another daughter from a previous marriage.

Hubbard called Reed “the establishment agitator who has been called a conservative, a radical, a black nationalist, a sexist and a crazed fool;” he has also been called America’s best satirist since Mark Twain. Reed’s work, known for its principle of collage and cited as having its roots in the Yoruba tradition of West Africa, has been criticized for incoherence. It has also been praised for its multicultural-ness, revolutionary-ness, and Reed’s awareness of mythic archetypes. In his own defense against such criticism, Reed told Martin, “I don’t think there is any standard English. I think there is such a thing as protocol English.” Reed writes with neither. His English is a “HooDoo” English, full of an awareness of multiethnicity and concerned with a multi-race—and a distinctly African American race—of writers.

**Books**


**Periodicals**

*Callaloo*, Fall 1994.

**Online**


---

**Alain Resnais**

French film director Alain Resnais (born 1922) was one of the most noted innovators in the history of twentieth-century film. His many film credits include *Night and Fog*, *Hiroshima, Mon Amour*, and *Marienbad*.

After paying his dues as an actor, editor, screenwriter, and assistant director in the 1940s and 1950s, Resnais emerged as a leading member of the French cinema’s New Wave. His themes, which frequently involve memory, history, and time, revolutionized film conventions. Resnais’s films typically involve characters who, though their outward appearances seem conventional, inevitably find themselves caught up in existential dilemmas. In the course of his career Resnais has collaborated with many top writers, among them Marguerite Duras, Alain Robbe-Grillet, Jean Gruault, Jorge Semprun, and Jean Cayrol. As one of the foremost proponents European art cinema, Resnais has profoundly influenced other film makers, if only by forcing them to examine their own assumptions about their craft.

**Early Life**

Resnais was born on June 3, 1922, in Vannes, Morbihan, Bretagne, France. Like his hero, French novelist Marcel Proust, the young Resnais was educated at home because he suffered from asthma. By most accounts Resnais became interested in film-making at an early age, and his first work, titled “Fantomas,” was filmed with the help of friends when he was 14. The 8mm film, which runs only three minutes, employed several cinematic “tricks” designed to vary the appearance of the characters.

Despite this early effort, Resnais had no youthful aspirations toward a career in cinema. As he told Joan Dupont in *Interview*: “I never had any special appetite for filmmaking, but you have to make a living and it is miraculous to earn a living working in film. My father and grandfather were pharmacists, but I couldn’t become one because you needed the baccalaureate [high school diploma] and because my health was bad, I failed.” In any case, after finishing his preparatory studies, Resnais entered the Institut des Hautes Études Cinématographiques in Paris, where he became thoroughly immersed in the world of film.

Resnais’s early films, which were shot in black and white on 16mm film, are short documentaries dealing with art and artists. In 1948, for example, he made the film *Van Gogh*, which was followed by another filmed in 1950 and titled *Gauguin*. During the 1950s he also shot and edited scenes for other directors. Resnais’s own early films foreshadow certain themes that the filmmaker would take up in
the 1960s: including time, memory, post-capitalist imperialism, and the role of the artist. He remained concerned with the role of the artist in society throughout much of his career.

Three Masterpieces

In 1955 Resnais made the 30-minute documentary-style film Night and Fog (Nuit et brouillard), which presents a riveting look at German concentration camps. The film juxtaposes grainy black-and-white historical footage of the Nazi-run concentration camps during operation with color footage of the same camps as they appeared a decade after they were abandoned. Archival footage from Bergen Belsen, Buchenwald, Auschwitz, and Einstanz Gruppe was used by Resnais to create this collage of atrocities, and the film’s script was written by poet and former prison-camp inmate Jean Cayrol. In Night and Fog, Resnais explores the ambiguities between cinematic and real time, as well as between memory and conscience. The film expresses the message that although individual people would like to evade responsibility, ultimately it is collective humanity that must bear the responsibility for the Nazi horrors.

Discussing Night and Fog, Resnais told Dupont that with “little money and few documents, we had nothing. So I used formal techniques to make the film more perceptive emotionally. For the first time, I used a mix of black and white with color In the editing room, I asked myself, ‘What are you doing manipulating corpses this way?’ It was repugnant, but it was the only way to communicate.”

American film director Errol Morris commented in Filmmaker that many people’s beliefs about the Holocaust were influenced by Night and Fog. According to Morris, although the film was successful in bringing the Nazi atrocities into popular consciousness, it also had the effect of muddling history. For example, Morris noted that there is no mention in the film of the role French gendarmes played in the Holocaust. According to James Monaco, writing in his Alain Resnais, in the original film a French gendarme is clearly visible in one of the photographs. Because this version was unacceptable to French censors, the gendarme’s uniform was edited out of the film before it was screened publicly.

Resnais followed Night and Fog with Le Chant du styrene (1958), in which he attempts to capture a plastics factory in cinematographic poetry. The film traces the manufacture of polystyrene from the finished product back through the industrial pipelines to the raw starting materials. Monaco dubbed Le Chant du styrene the most remarkable “industrial” film ever made.

In 1959 Resnais filmed the full-length 35mm black-and-white feature Hiroshima, Mon Amour, based on a script by novelist Marguerite Duras. The film, which explores the relationship between history and memory, was awarded the Cannes Film Festival’s International Critics Prize. In the film a French actress on assignment in Japan and a Japanese architect have a brief, adulterous affair. The actress is haunted by her past in occupied France, where she had an affair with a German soldier, and the architect is haunted by his family’s sufferings during the atomic bomb attack on Hiroshima. In Hiroshima, Mon Amour Resnais uses the medium of film to break down the linearity that encapsulates time and memory and creates a dream state. The clean, modern lines of the hotel where the affair takes place are contrasted in the film with the natural curves of the lovers, the rivers that wind through the town, and the memories in the protagonists’ pasts.

In discussing Hiroshima, Mon Amour with Dupont, Resnais explained that he and Duras “had this idea of working in two tenses: The present and the past coexist, but the past shouldn’t be in flashback. The heroine’s memory, her affair with the German soldier, was the past, but the sound was in the present; we hear the sounds of Tokyo.” Film critic John Francis Kreidl, writing in Alain Resnais, agreed with Monaco that the film ultimately turns out to be about the impossibility of making a documentary about Hiroshima.

In Resnais’s 1961 work Last Year at Marienbad, a man and woman meet in a palatial home. The man insists that the two have meet before and, further, that they had an affair the year before at a spa in Marienbad. Resnais uses the couple’s encounter to examine memory, imagination, desire, and fulfillment. Of Last Year in Marienbad Resnais told Dupont, “I never thought of Proust; I thought of Andre Breton. [The film’s screenwriter] Alain Robbe-Grillet and I were very impressed by surrealism. . . . Most of what happens is in the characters’ imaginations, so the memory of silent film was a big influence.” Monaco found the film to be essentially a story about storytelling.
Of Time and Remembrance

Resnais’s next film, Muriel (1963), concerns a middle-aged woman who invites an old lover to visit her and her stepson, who has just returned from the war in the Algeries. The soldier is troubled by memories of a young girl who had been tortured to death in his presence, while the two former lovers suffer from their own painful memories. In the film Resnais uses time to explore the ways the past influences present experiences. Relating also to the historical present, Muriel captures the constraints placed on freedom in France by the Algerian war in 1962, and the mood associated with that period. To the director’s disappointment, many critics disliked this film.

After creating what are considered to be Resnais’s three masterpieces—Night and Fog, Hiroshima, Mon Amour, and Muriel—Resnais gained a reputation as one of the leading New Wave film directors. However, as he later explained to Dupont, Resnais did not consider himself “part of the New Wave, but thanks to [the impact made by its directors], I made movies . . . . Before, you had to be an assistant on nine films, and you couldn’t just go from making a short to a feature. Finally, a producer asked me to make a feature, and I made three in a row, but after Muriel, which wasn’t a success, I stopped for a while.”

When he returned to his position behind the camera, Resnais again chose to dwell on time and remembrance. His richly emotional 1966 work La Guerre est tinie concerns an aging Leftist, while Stavisky (1974) tells the story of a Russian-Jewish swindler in 1930s France. Providence, filmed in 1977 and Resnais’s first English-language effort, deals with a dying novelist.

In Mon Oncle d’Amérique (1980) Resnais examines the interconnections in the lives of three individuals and interprets these connections using the biochemical theories of French biologist Henri Laborit about the workings of the human brain. In the film contrasts—distance and emotion, surrealism and the natural—are used to force the audience to an awareness of new possibilities. By playing disparate moods, tones, and styles off against each other, Resnais attempted to draw the viewer into a closer relationship with the film’s characters.

On one level, 1983’s Life Is a Bed of Roses tells the story of a wealthy count who constructs his “temple of happiness” during the 1920s. On another level, it presents a symposium on alternative education held at the site of the former temple.

Resnais’s later films, which have not always been as well received by critics as were his work of the late 1950s and early 1960s, include L’Amour e mort (1984), Melo (1986), I Want to Go Home (1989), and Smoking and No Smoking (1993). In 1992 he directed a one-hour tribute to U.S. composer George Gershwin.

Looking Back

It has been reported that Resnais refuses to view any of his early films. “I don’t think about them and can’t stand seeing them again,” he told Dupont. “It’s painful, either because the people onscreen have died, or because I don’t think the direction is good. There’s always something.” The films of other directors are a different matter, however. “When I was twelve, the passage from silent film to the talkies had an impact on me—I still watch silent films. I don’t think that there is any such thing as an old film; you don’t say, ‘I read an old book by Flaubert,’ or ‘I saw an old play by Moliere.’ ”

Resnais’s obsession with time and memory reflects a French tradition that goes back to Henri Bergson and Proust. In Night and Fog, for example, he attempts to recapture the past through a combination of archival film footage and poetry, while in Hiroshima, Mon Amour he adopts an imitation documentary format to examine the repercussions of the atomic bomb attack on Japan. In Last Year at Marienbad the film’s characters attempt to rewrite their own history at a European spa.

Resnais told Luc Honorez of Le Soir that his life could be summarized by listing the names of some of the most influential individuals of the twentieth century: Sigmund Freud, Pablo Picasso, Gershwin, Hergé, and Franz Kafka. Still, he added, in spite of his advanced age he wanted to move on to other passions. The director insists that becoming fixated on any one of his many influences would be equivalent to signing up to die. The introduction of video and DVD technologies has allowed Resnais to study the films of fellow directors Fritz Lang, Alfred Hitchcock, Clint Eastwood, Victor Minnelli, F. W. Murnau, Jean Renoir, Tati, Charles Laughton, and Martin Scorsese.

According to Resnais, of all the arts only cinema is an absolute mystery because of the juxtaposition of objects, the attitudes of the actors, and the use of music. However, he views much of modern cinematography as a failure because the promotion of a film has become more important than what the film ultimately is. His own approach to his art has been determined by memories, including loves and sorrows, many of which originated in films, books, or songs. Regarding the power of twentieth-century cinema, Resnais has cited that the most effective films are those able to connect with those instinctive emotions people attempt to mask in order to appear less “animal-like.”

Books

Kreidl, John Francis, Alain Resnais, Twayne, 1977.
Monaco, James, Alain Resnais, Oxford University Press, 1979.

Periodicals

Filmmaker, Spring 2000.
Interview, November 1999.
Le Soir, May 21, 2002.

Condoleezza Rice

Condoleezza Rice (born 1954) is a classic over-achiever. Growing up in segregated Birmingham, Alabama, Rice refused to let the boundaries set by society limit her. She has become a close adviser to
President George W. Bush, involved in decisions that shape the future of the United States of America.

Rice Groomed For Success

Condoleezza Rice was born in Birmingham, Alabama, on November 14, 1954. Her father, John Wesley Rice, was a school guidance counselor during the week and a Presbyterian minister on the weekends. Her mother, Angelena, was a schoolteacher. The family lived in a middle-class, black community called Titusville, where education was a high priority for children who were expected to succeed regardless of any prejudices or boundaries.

John and Angelena Rice tried to give everything possible to their young daughter, providing intangible support by developing her sense of pride, faith, and responsibility. “They wanted the world,” Connie Rice (a second cousin to Rice) said in a biography by Antonia Felix entitled Condi: The Condoleezza Rice Story. “They wanted Rice to be free of any kind of shackles, mentally or physically, and they wanted her to own the world. And to give a child that kind of entitlement, you have to love her to death and make her believe that she can fly.” John Rice coached football and taught his daughter everything he could about tactics and strategy. Rice grew to love the game and would follow football wherever she went.

Terror in Birmingham

In the early 1960s, the civil rights movement landed in Birmingham. Schoolchildren were encouraged to participate in marches and other demonstrations. The Rice family did not join in but sometimes went down to watch history unfold. “My father was not a march-in-the-street preacher,” Rice said in the biography. “He saw no reason to put children at risk. He would never put his own child at risk.” Unfortunately, sometimes the police would use fire hoses to spray the children, or dogs would chase the children. Some of the young adults arrested were John Rice’s students. Television cameras caught it all on tape for the nation to see.

Events that were stirring the emotions of the nation were occurring right in Birmingham when Rice was only eight years old. Vigilantes bombed the home of a family friend, Arthur Shores, twice in the fall of 1963. On September 15, 1963, the 16th Street Baptist Church was bombed, killing four young girls attending Sunday school. One of the girls, Denise Nair, was Rice’s friend from school. Rice had heard the explosion and felt the shudder of the blast. She remembers her father and the other men from the neighborhood organizing to patrol the streets at night with shotguns. She was growing up with terrorism. The Rice family watched on television when President Lyndon Johnson signed the Civil Rights Act on July 2, 1964. Not long after, the family went to dinner at a previously all-white restaurant in Birmingham.

Rice was a bright student and skipped both first and seventh grade. Her parents encouraged her to do well in everything she tried, and they provided lessons in piano, ballet, violin, French, and skating, and instruction in dress, grooming, and manners. In 1965, she was the first black student to attend music classes at Birmingham Southern Conservatory of Music.

When Rice was 11 years old, her father accepted a position in Tuscaloosa, Alabama, as a college administrator. Two years after that, he accepted a position as vice chancellor at the University of Denver in Colorado. For the first time, Rice attended integrated school at St. Mary’s Academy, a private Catholic school. During her first year, a school counselor advised her that she was not college material, despite her excellent grades and musical and athletic accomplishments. “Condi was stunned, but her parents—immune to talk of limitation or failure—didn’t flinch,” stated Felix in the biography. “They assured her that the assessment was wrong and that she should just ignore it.”

Became Interested in Politics

At age 15, Rice graduated from high school and started attending the University of Denver, hoping to become a concert pianist. She won a young artist’s competition and was invited to play Mozart’s Piano Concerto in D Minor with the Denver Symphony Orchestra. Although she was a talented performer, she knew that the competition for professional performers was stiff. Partway through college, she decided she would never become a concert pianist. She took a course called “Introduction to International Politics.” Her professor, Dr. Josef Korbel, a Soviet specialist and the father of Madeleine Albright (who later became secretary
of state under President Bill Clinton), inspired her. She changed her major to political science. Rice was an avid student, and in 1974, she earned her bachelor’s degree in political science (cum laude and Phi Beta Kappa) at age 19. She was awarded the Political Science Honors Award for “outstanding accomplishment and promise in the field of political science.” She went on to get her Master’s degree in government and international studies at Notre Dame University in just one year. She returned to Denver, unsure of what to do next.

“I thought I had a job as executive assistant to a vice president of Honeywell,” she told Nicholas Lemann in the New Yorker. “Before I could go to work, they reorganized, and I lost the job.” She taught piano lessons and applied to law school. Then, when she was down at the university, Dr. Korbel recommended that she take some classes. By 1981, she had received her Ph.D. in international studies from the University of Denver.

She was awarded a fellowship at Stanford’s Center for International Security and Arms Control. It was the first time the Center had ever admitted a woman. The fellowship was supposed to be for one year, but Rice made a big impression and was offered a job as an assistant professor of political science at Stanford University, which she accepted. In her classes, Rice often used football analogies in her lectures, comparing war to football. Her classes were popular and attracted many athletes.

To Washington

In 1984, Rice attended a faculty seminar where Brent Scowcroft, then head of President Reagan’s Commission of Strategic Forces, spoke on arms control. During the dinner following the seminar, Rice asked Scowcroft some challenging questions. Scowcroft was impressed. “I thought, This is somebody I need to get to know. It’s an intimidating subject. Here’s this young girl, and she’s not at all intimidated,” he told the New Yorker’s Lemann. Scowcroft began arranging for her to attend seminars and conferences. In 1986, she was appointed as the special assistant to the Director-Joint Chiefs of Staff position at the Pentagon through a Council on Foreign Relations Fellowship. Then, in 1989, when Scowcroft became National Security Advisor, he appointed Rice to the National Security Council as the chief authority on the Soviet Union. She was involved in forming the American reaction to the fall of the Berlin Wall, the dissolution of the Warsaw Pact, and the demise of what was then considered the Soviet Union.

During this time period, Rice had been doing a lot of writing. In 1984, she published Uncertain Allegiance: The Soviet Union and the Czechoslovak Army 1948-1963. She also wrote The Gorbachev Era with Alexander Dallin in 1986. Rice joined the Board of Directors of the Stanford Mid-Peninsula Urban Coalition in 1986. The organization provided vocational and academic assistance to minority students at high risk of dropping out of high school.

Rice returned to Stanford in 1991. She was appointed to the board of directors of Chevron. She apparently served them well, as they named a tanker after her in 1993, and she went to Rio de Janeiro to christen it. She also served on the boards for TransAmerica Corporation and Hewlett Packard.

Rice Chosen as Provost

During meetings to help select a new president for Stanford, Rice impressed the man who was given the job, Gerhard Casper. He appointed her to the number-two position of provost. She entered the position during a difficult time. There were large deficits in the budget and cuts were necessary. Rice took on the job with her usual efficiency. Forbes reported, “In her first year, Rice, 39, balanced the university’s $410 million unrestricted budget without dipping into reserves for the first time in six years.” When she stepped down, six years later, the $40 million deficit had become a surplus.

In 1995, she and Philip Zelikow co-authored, Germany Unified and Europe Transformed: A Study in Statecraft. The book was awarded the Akira Iriye International History Book Award for 1994-1995.

Rice and President George W. Bush

In July of 1999, she took a leave of absence from her provost position to become the foreign policy advisor for Texas Governor George W. Bush’s presidential campaign. When Bush won the election, he tapped Rice for the position of National Security Advisor. As National Security Adviser, Rice has to balance some strong personalities and viewpoints and pull all of the information together for the president. Evan Thomas of Newsweek reported, “By law, the secretary of state is the president’s chief foreign-policy advisor; the national security adviser runs no department and commands no troops. But he or she (Rice was the first-ever woman to get the job) is usually the first to see the president in the morning and the last at night.”

On September 11, 2001, Rice immediately recognized the planes striking the World Trade Center as a terrorist attack. She called a meeting of the National Security Council. When a plane hit the Pentagon, they were ordered to evacuate the White House and take shelter in an underground bunker. She made calls throughout the day to heads of state throughout the world, assuring them that the United States government was up and running. She was suddenly thrust into the spotlight, as the Bush administration evaluated their next steps.

Rice works very hard not to reveal her own views, but instead to gather the information provided and present it to the president. Newsweek’s Thomas stated, “She has often said that she is ‘determined to leave this town’ without anyone outside Bush’s tight inner circle ever figuring out where she stands on major issues. She claims that she ‘rarely’ tells the president her private opinions, and if she does, she never shares her advice to the president, not even with her closest aides.”

Rice is very dedicated to her physical fitness and gets up at 5 a.m. to exercise. She has never married, has no brothers or sisters, and her parents have passed away. Her job is the main focus in her life, and she regularly works 15-16 hour days. She relaxes by playing the piano. She enjoys shopping, and Newsweek’s Thomas reported that Saks Fifth
Avenue has been known to open up for her after hours. Her aides affectionately refer to her as the “Warrior Princess,” according to Thomas. Her faith is strong, and she prays every night and sometimes during the day as well. She is passionate about football and often states that she would someday like to become the commissioner of the National Football League.

Newsweek’s Thomas summed it up when he stated in an article on September 9, 2002, “At an early age, she drove right through the boundaries of race and chased excellence and accomplishment all the way to the northwest corner office of the West Wing.”

**Books**


**Periodicals**

*New Yorker*, October 14, 2002.

**Online**


---

**Gerhard Richter**

German artist Gerhard Richter (born 1932) is considered one of the most significant and challenging artists of the last quarter-century. His diverse paintings cover a range of artistic genres, from Realism and Naturalism to Impressionism, Pop Art, Conceptualism, and Post-Abstract Expressionism. Richter often painted from photographs, either clipped from newspapers and various other sources or shot by the artist himself, and worked mainly in groups of paintings numbered sequentially.

In Richter’s portrayals, one always senses a sense of faith coupled with cruelty. For instance, nature to Richter is at once sublime but indifferent to the human condition, and popular culture transmists people who would otherwise think as individuals into submissive followers. His works furthermore contain a darkness and reveal a mistrust of any sort of dogma. However, faith and beauty remain underlying elements. Indeed, Richter sees art as the highest form of hope. “I constantly despair at my own incapacity, at the impossibility of ever accomplishing anything, of painting a valid, true picture or of even knowing what such a thing ought to look like,” Richter once wrote, as quoted in the *New York Times*. “But then I always have the hope that, if I persevere, it might one day happen.”

**Childhood Experiences**

Born in Dresden, Germany, on February 9, 1932, and raised in the outlying villages of Reichenaunau and Waltersdorf, Richter grew during a tumultuous and horrific period in world history, coming of age just after World War II. Undoubtedly, Richter’s early experiences—including the teachings and beliefs of his parents and living his first 13 years under the Nazis—impacted his development both artistically and intellectually, leading him to later depict subjects as varied as a Nazi uncle, fighter planes, religion, landscapes, gangs of young German terrorists, and his own wife and child.

By comparison, Richter’s parents seemed ill-matched for one another. His father, a conventional-minded schoolteacher, embraced Nazism and fought for the regime on the Eastern and Western fronts. He died, as did Richter’s uncles, during the war. Richter also had a mentally disabled aunt who perished in a Nazi euthanasia program. Richter’s mother, in contrast, was raised in a cultured and at one time wealthy family. The daughter of a talented pianist and bookseller, she exposed Richter to literature, philosophy, and music, and encouraged his interest in painting and drawing.

Following the collapse of the Third Reich, Richter lived for another 16 years under the oppressive hand of East Germany. But he would later recall that by the age of 17,
“my fundamental aversion to all beliefs and ideologies was fully developed,” as quoted by Jay Tolson for U.S. News and World Report. Richter left grammar school at 15 years of age, taking a series of temporary jobs like assisting a local photographer, decorating banners for the East German communist regime, and painting sets for a theater located in the small town of Zittau.

School of Socialist Realism

Intent on studying art more formally, Richter, in 1952, after failing to gain acceptance on the first try, won admittance into the Hochschule für Bildende Kunste in Dresden. At the art academy, where he trained until 1957, Richter gained a thorough knowledge of the masters and studied extensively with Heinz Lothmar, a former Surrealist and supporter of communism who headed the mural painting department. Ironically, this department allowed students the greatest degree of freedom of self-expression, due largely to the fact that the strict enforcers of the state-sanctioned Socialist Realist aesthetic considered the painting of murals as merely “decorative.”

Upon graduation, Richter obtained work painting murals. His first official commission, a mural of bathers for the German Hygiene Museum, was executed in the approved bombastic style. Soon thereafter, Richter was attracting recognition as well as a steady income, allowing him the opportunity to travel outside East Germany.

Confronted by Western Art

On one excursion to the West in 1959, Richter received permission to visit Documenta 2 in Kassel, West Germany, discovering for the first time Abstract painting. Today, the Documenta exhibition takes place every five years and has evolved into a major site for experiencing contemporary art on the worldwide circuit. But at the event’s inception in 1955, the exhibition held an immense political and cultural significance for art in Germany. By surveying international modern and contemporary art, the sponsors of Documenta hoped to fill the void in German cultural history that had occurred during the 12-year period of domination by the Nazis, who had stigmatized modern art as degenerate. Consequently Germany, through Documenta, intended to reaccede into the culture what it had in the past sought to destroy.

Attending Documenta was a turning point in Richter’s career, and he began to feel an internal pressure to engage in the dialogues of modern art. Many of the artists represented at the event were completely unknown to Richter at the time. Lucio Fontana and Jackson Pollock, among others, impressed him most of all. Thus, in 1961, shortly before the erection of the Berlin Wall, Richter fled Dresden for West Berlin.

A Second Education

Upon the advice of a friend who had already made the move to West Germany, Richter promptly enrolled in art school in Düsseldorf at the Staatliche Kunstakademie. In many ways, Richter, before graduating in 1964, unlearned everything he had been taught at the conservative school in Dresden. At Düsseldorf, he studied with Art Informel or gesture painter Karl Otto Gotz and also worked for a brief period in an aggressive style influenced by Alberto Burri, Jean Dubuffet, Jean Fautrier, and Fontana. The same year Richter entered the school, Joseph Beuys, who would become the most famous artist of the post-war era, was named professor of monumental sculpture. Richter kept his distance from Beuys throughout his years as a student. But the two became faculty colleagues when the Richter himself was appointed professor at the academy in 1971.

At school, Richter also met German trendsetters Sigmar Polke and Blinky Palermo (also refugees from the East), as well as Konrad Lueg (who later changed his name to Konrad Fischer). Along with Lueg and Polke, Richter developed an interest in the burgeoning Pop Art scene. They particularly enjoyed the work of Andy Warhol, Roy Lichtenstein, and Claes Oldenburg. Another area of intrigue for Richter and his friends was the group Fluxus, an international art movement influenced by Marcel Duchamp and John Cage, which held “events” that could either resemble to chaotic Pop Art “happenings” or remain quite simple and subdued.

Photorealism

In 1963, Lueg and Richter traveled to Paris, introducing themselves to art dealer/gallery owner Ileana Sonnabend as German Pop artists because they did not view the movement as strictly an American or British domain. Returning home unsuccessful yet undeterred, they mounted one year later two exhibitions/demonstrations of their own work. These events provided the first occasions for Richter to show his photo-based paintings. One of his earliest works is the modest 1962 painting “Table.” A depiction of an ordinary, institutional-style metal table, the canvas is split horizontally with a dark gray floor beneath a lighter gray wall. On the painting’s surface is an aggressive brush of gray paint in looping arcs, forcing the viewer to look through the scribbles to see the room.

Richter continued for the next several years to concentrate on the blurred but precise photographic style that became his trademark. Unlike other artists who employ photographs only as a reference aid, Richter uses photographs—either found or taken by the painter himself—as if they were reality. And although he cares about what the images are of, he often chooses a subject that he has no independent experience of, such as, for example, a clipping from a newspaper. In transferring the subjects, Richter first traces meticulously onto canvas the details of the photographic image, then introduces any number of distortions. In effect, when looking at a photorealistic painting by Richter, one is simultaneously seeing but not seeing.

Uncovering a new way of looking at the relationship between photographs and painting was an exciting moment for Richter. “I was surprised by photography, which we all use so massively everyday,” he told Michael Kimmelman in an interview for the New York Times Magazine. “Suddenly, I saw it in a new way, as a picture that offered me a new view, free of all the conventional criteria I had always associated with art. It had no style, no comparison, not judgment. It freed me from personal experience. For the first
time, there was nothing to it: it was pure picture. That’s why I wanted to have it, to show it—not to use it as a means of painting, but use painting as a means to photography.”

Beyond Photo-based Paintings

In the mid-1960s, Richter turned to painting his series “Color Charts,” similar to the paint charts found in stores but larger and with the colors situated in no certain order. They were actually, according to Richter, picked at random. For Richter, the group appeared to serve as a renouncement of the clichés of Abstract art. The paintings contained elements of Pop Art and Minimalism, though they were neither. Furthermore, they were not classifiable as simply Conceptual.

From the color chart pieces, Richter in the late-1960s turned to art inspired by the works of Carl Andre, Sol Lewitt, Robert Ryman, and Dan Flavin, as well as the techniques of Conceptualism. His paintings of this period are minimal landscapes and seascapes, exemplified in the monochromatic series “Gray Pictures.” In the early-1970s, Richter moved to an impressive photo-based series of figurative works entitled “48 Portraits” (also known as “Achtundvierzig Portraits”).

Richter also exhibited for the first time “Atlas,” an ongoing massive inventory of every source used in his paintings. It includes thousands of new photos, snapshots, postcards, and drawings. Richter next focused on the series “Abstract Paintings,” featuring an array of incongruous stylistic gestures. These paintings signified yet another departure for Richter from his figurative work, naturalistic paintings, and non-figurative charts.

Throughout his career, however, Richter repeatedly took a different course that what others expected or desired, received critical opinion as suspect, and refused to let post-modernists label him as any sort of specified artist. “My works are not just rhetorical, except in the sense that all art is rhetorical,” Richter said to Kimmelman. “I believe in beauty.”

In the 1980s, Richter, after beginning a series of “Candle Paintings,” returned to photorealism with what is considered one of the most significant series in this domain with “October 18, 1977,” also known as the Baader-Meinhof paintings. The group consists of 15 modestly sized, mostly black pictures of individual figures, crowd scenes, jail cells, and buildings. With this series, Richter succeeded in making the larger issues surrounding the subject matter more important that the subject matter itself. One does not have to know the story of the Red Army Faction—led by street hustler Andreas Baader and radical journalist Ulrike Meinhof, and responsible for a string of robberies, shootings, and bombings of American Army bases—to understand the meaning of the paintings. “They set a new standard for me,” expressed Richter, quoted by Village Voice contributor Jerry Saltz.

Forty Years of Painting

Since the late-1960s, Richter’s work has been the subject of numerous monographs, exhibitions, and retrospectives, and is represented in permanent collections throughout Germany and the Guggenheim Museum in New York. The first major retrospective in the United States opened in February of 2002 at New York’s Museum of Modern Art. “Gerhard Richter: 40 Years of Painting” featured a vast collection of paintings covering the artist’s prolific, 40-year career.

Richter married three times and divorced twice, first in 1957 to Marianne (Ema) Eufinger, with whom he had a daughter named Betty; then to artist Isa Genzken in 1982; and finally in 1995 to Sabine Moritz, with whom he had a son named Moritz and a daughter named Ella. He lives and works—in a studio in front of his home—in a suburb outside Cologne, Germany.

Books


Periodicals

Artforum, Summer 2002.
Europe, May 2002.
Interview, September 2001.
New Republic, April 1, 2002.
Newsweek, March 25, 2002.
Time, May 6, 2002.
Village Voice, March 5, 2002.

Eslanda Goode Robeson

A distinguished cultural anthropologist in her own right, Eslanda Goode Robeson (1896–1965) is remembered also as the wife and long-time business manager of singer/actor Paul Robeson Sr. Highly educated and cultured, she traveled widely in pursuit of her own career and that of her husband until the couple was effectively grounded by a passport revocation in the mid-1950s. They resumed their travels only
Robeson was born Eslanda Cardozo Goode in Washington, D.C., on December 15, 1896. Known as "Essie" to her family and friends, Robeson was the youngest of three children and was the only daughter of Eslanda (Cardozo), a one-time schoolteacher, and John J. Goode, a U.S. War Department clerk who died when his daughter was four. Robeson's father was a mixture of Native American, English, and Scotch. Her mother was descended from a wealthy Spanish-Jewish immigrant who, against all social taboos, had boldly married an octooon (someone of one eighth black ancestry) slave. Thus, although she was a Negro, Robeson was very light-skinned in appearance. After the death of her father, she and her brothers were raised by their mother who brought them to New York where she operated a beauty shop in order to support them. The next move was to Chicago in 1912.

Highly confident and intelligent, Robeson was raised in a cultured environment. She possessed a particularly pleasing singing voice and at the urging of her high school music teacher, Theresa Armitage, took private singing lessons for approximately one year. After graduating from high school at age 16, Robeson enrolled in a domestic science program at the University of Illinois on a full scholarship. She soon lost interest however in both her curriculum and in the school environment and transferred instead to Teachers College of Columbia University in New York City. There she undertook a more challenging program in the physical sciences and graduated with a Bachelor of Science in chemistry in 1920. According to some accounts, Robeson earned a chemistry degree from the University of Illinois in 1917, although United States Federal Bureau of Investigation (FBI) files, which were opened on Robeson during the 1940s, suggest that the prior is true.

Married Paul Robeson

She met her future husband, Paul Robeson, in 1920 at Presbyterian Hospital where she had secured a student job in the surgical pathological laboratory. Also a student at Columbia, Paul Robeson was enrolled in the law school and was hospitalized with a football injury when they met. The two were married on August 17, 1921, and she continued to work at the hospital until 1925. In 1920, largely at his wife's insistence, Paul Robeson accepted the title role in a Harlem YMCA production of Simon the Cyrenian. He later appeared in Taboo and performed in London when the play closed in early October they moved to Villefranche-sur-Mer at the foot of the Alps and remained there until December of that year. Robeson was deeply in love with her husband at that time and was happy with her life in general. She later wrote in Paul Robeson, Negro of the small French Riviera town where they lived on Cap Ferrat, calling it, "One of the most beautiful harbors in the world." Likewise of her singer-husband she wrote, "I've married the most beautiful Voice I've ever heard."

Upon her return to the United States, she felt an urgent desire to conceive and bear a child, although her husband remained ambivalent to the notion of parenting, citing her past frail health as the reason for his reluctance. Robeson's determination prevailed, and she became pregnant. Their son and only child, Paul Robeson Jr., was born in New York City on November 2, 1927. Paul Sr. at the time of the birth was performing in Paris, France. Robeson rejoined him five months later, in May of 1928, in London. After they settled early on in Hampstead, Robeson sent for her mother and son in the United States to join her and her husband. She remained in England until October of 1929 and returned on December 28, 1931.

In the late 1920s Robeson had begun work on her first published manuscript, which was a biography of her husband. After numerous rewrites, the book entitled Paul Robeson, Negro was published by Harper in 1930. Also in 1930, she starred with her husband in a relatively obscure silent film drama called Borderline. Written and directed by Kenneth MacPherson, the movie presents the story of an adulterous relationship between a black woman Adah, played by Robeson, and a white man named Thorne.

Personal Career Success

Two years later, Robeson informally separated from her husband. She enrolled in graduate school at London University from 1933 to 1935, specializing in anthropology with a focus on the colonized black people of the world, who were commonly called Negroes in the context of the times. She graduated in 1937 from the London School of Economics.

During these years as a student in England, she made her first trip to Africa, in 1936, in realization of a life-long dream, but only after considerable difficulty in obtaining a visa. Such a visa clearance to Africa, as she learned in the process, was rarely given to a Negro. Despite bureaucratic obstacles, she obtained the necessary papers after citing her academic curriculum as the purpose behind her visit. Accompanied by her young son, then eight years old, she embarked on a three-month junket, with an itinerary extending from Cape Town, South Africa, to Cairo. In her second full-length writing, African Journey, published by Day in 1945, she provided a diary-formatted chronicle of the 1936 excursion. Among her observations in the book, Robeson reported on the superior political awareness that
she perceived among black Africans in comparison to black Americans. The book went into a second printing soon after publication, and Greenwood Press reprinted the volume in 1972.

After anthropological visits to Costa Rica and Honduras in 1940, the Robesons moved from New York City to Enfield, Connecticut, where they purchased an estate, called The Beeches, in 1941. In Enfield, they were the only family of color in the entire town, with the exception of migrant tobacco farmers. Paul Jr. was sent to high school in Springfield, Massachusetts.

World War II

Always socially aware, Robeson’s community involvement accelerated during the years of World War II. She was heard widely in her lectures on race relations and worked professionally with Pearl Buck. In 1949 the two co-authored a book, An American Argument, published by Day. Also during the 1940s Robeson enrolled at the Hartford Seminary in Connecticut where she earned a Ph.D. in 1945.

With her marriage seriously fractured by 1945 she remained active on other fronts. Working from her home base in Enfield, she maintained a high visibility through community involvement, participating in the Red Cross Motor Corps and keeping active as a writer. She held a seat on the staff of the Council of African Affairs (CAA) and traveled to San Francisco in the capacity of CAA observer to the formation of the United Nations. She made a visit to India during which she struck up a friendship with the Indian National Congress leader, Jawaharlal Nehru. After her return she maintained a friendship with him by mail and later entertained his nieces, the Pandit sisters, in her Enfield home when they attended college at Harvard’s Wellesley College.

Robeson returned to Africa in 1946, where she visited the Congo, French Equatorial Africa, and Ruanda-Burundi (now Rwanda). During this visit she noted a growing sympathy for socialism among black Africans. Robeson had traveled to the Soviet Union in 1934 while on tour with her husband, and both of her brothers had emigrated from the United States and lived there for many years. Yet she had come to regard that nation with skepticism, in part based on feedback from her brothers.

Persecution under McCarthyism

Political sympathies notwithstanding, during the 1950s, Robeson and her husband were caught up in the phenomenon known as McCarthyism, by which a large number of Americans—many of them prominent entertainers—were investigated by the U.S. government and placed under suspicion of conducting un-American activities. Many of these individuals were blacklisted in their professions and had their careers ruined, including Paul Robeson.

The FBI opened a file on the Robesons in the early 1940s. On July 7, 1953, Robeson was subpoenaed by the United States Senate and asked if she was a member of the Communist Party. Although she was known to subscribe to the Daily Worker, she had never held party membership. Regardless she refused to give testimony, citing her constitutional rights under the Fifth Amendment. She offered instead unsolicited statements and accused the Senate committee of pursuing a racially biased agenda. “I am Negro, and this is a very white committee . . .” she said, as quoted in Contemporary Black Biography. Her passport was revoked as was her husband’s, but the pair made use of the confinement, which lasted until 1958, and joined the vanguard of the growing U.S. civil rights movement.

Without a passport, Robeson was nonetheless able to participate with a group from the United Nations that traveled to Trinidad in the spring of 1958. The trip, in conjunction with a celebration of the independence of the British West Indies, was for anthropological purposes. Robeson joined the tour in the capacity of correspondent for the New World Review. In the course of the two-week trip, which lasted from April 17 through April 30, she lectured on race relations in Africa and the United States and also visited Port-au-Prince and Jamaica.

Her passport was restored only as a result of a Supreme Court decision of June 16, 1958, prohibiting the FBI from revoking passports by reason of a person’s Communist Party affiliations. Less than one month later, having secured the return of their passports, Robeson and her husband departed for Europe on July 10, 1958, with plans to live in London. They continued on to the Soviet Union, and from there she made a third trip to Africa, to attend a conference in Ghana, which had recently attained independence.

Robeson remained in the Soviet Union until 1963. At that time, suffering from breast cancer, she returned with her husband to the United States, stopping en route to East Germany where she was honored with the German Peace Medal and the Clara Zetkin Medal. She died at Beth Israel Hospital in New York City on December 13, 1965.

Robeson’s avocations included many sports, among them basketball, swimming, and bowling. She was also a talented photographer, and her pictures—in particular from her African travels—were very well received by the public.

Books
Contemporary Black Biography, Volume 13, Gale Research, 1996.
Robeson, Eslanda Goode, Paul Robeson, Negro, Harper & Brothers, 1930.

Other

Randall Robinson

Randall Robinson (born 1941) is an internationally recognized author and foreign policy activist. In 1977, he founded TransAfrica—a lobbying group dedicated to promoting “enlightened and progressive” U.S. foreign policy toward countries in Africa.
and the Caribbean. As president of TransAfrica, Robinson led the U.S. campaign to bring democracy to South Africa, putting an end to that county’s apartheid policies.

Beginnings

Randall Robinson, the son of Maxie Robinson and his wife Doris, was born on July 6, 1941, in Richmond, Virginia. He spent the first 15 years of his life in a ground-floor flat in the African American section of Richmond. Maxie Robinson taught history by day and coached athletics in the evening, while Doris was a full-time homemaker. Robinson’s parents were both college graduates. 26-year-old Maxie Robinson and 18-year-old Doris Jones had met in Richmond, Virginia, at Virginia Union University. Doris was attending the school as preparation for a teaching career. Maxie was a star athlete. They married on August 31, 1936.

Robinson states in his autobiography, Defending the Spirit: A Black Life in America, that his grandmother raised his father to be “a highly principled teetotaler, unaccustomed to the social domesticities of family life and with small gift for intimacy.” Robinson’s paternal grandparents had married in Richmond, Virginia, when they were still adolescents. They divorced shortly after Maxie was born. Maxie’s father subsequently left for Baltimore where he remarried and lost contact with his son. Robinson’s grandmother, meanwhile, remarried a recovered alcoholic who worked for the railroad.

According to Robinson, his mother, born Doris Alma Jones, was raised in Portsmouth, Virginia, in a large, white two-story house. She was the first of seven children born to Nathan and Jeanie Jones. Robinson wrote of his family heritage in Defending the Spirit, “Mama’s family was deep and eternal. Daddy’s was small and patched.”

Childhood

One of four children born to Maxie and Doris Robinson, Robinson was surrounded by books when he was growing up. His older sister, Jewell, was an excellent student and eventually won a scholarship that allowed her to become the first African American student to attend Goucher College. Robinson’s brother, Maxie Jr., who won an even more lucrative scholarship, became the nation’s first African American news anchor on ABC’s World News Tonight. Robinson, however, was more of a late bloomer and headed off for Norfolk State College on a basketball scholarship, later transferring to Virginia Union University. His younger sister, Jeanie, would eventually become an elementary school teacher in Washington, D.C.

On May 17, 1954, 13-year-old Robinson was sitting in his science class when his teacher announced that the Supreme Court had just ruled that public school segregation violated the U.S. Constitution. Robinson later said he never expected the ruling—but in any case, he later pointed out, forty-three years after the decision was handed down, Richmond’s schools were still as segregated as they were in 1954.

Robinson claims he never met a white person until he was drafted into the Army in 1963. Following his discharge from the service—which came just as the United States was beginning to build up its forces in Vietnam—he re-enrolled in Virginia Union University.

Harvard Law School

In the fall of 1967, following his graduation from Virginia Union, Robinson was admitted to Harvard University Law School. But after one year of Harvard, Robinson says he knew he would never practice law. He would nevertheless go on to pass the Massachusetts bar exam.

In late summer 1970, Robinson left for Tanzania. By then his first marriage was severely strained, and, though it would continue for another seventeen years, Robinson traces its eventual disintegration to his marrying before he really knew himself. Meanwhile, in Tanzania, he found a country riddled with problems. He concluded, “I could best serve Africa by going home to America, for America had become a substantial contributor to Africa’s problems. . . . The United States was doing Africa a terrible disservice and African-Americans, in general, were none the wiser,” Robinson later wrote in Defending the Spirit.

In 1971, Robinson was hired by the Boston Legal Assistance Project (BLAP) to provide legal representation in civil and juvenile court matters to the poor. But after he made the
tactical mistake of demanding that the BLAP bring in African American leadership, he was fired. Robinson wrote in *Defending the Spirit*, “My legal career, after less than a year, had mercifully come to an end.”

From 1972 to 1974, Robinson worked for the Roxbury Multi-Service Center as a community organizer. Among his first assignments was to put together a campaign against Gulf Oil in protest of that company’s support of Portuguese presence in Africa. In the campaign, Robinson targeted Harvard University for its holdings of Gulf Oil stock.

**TransAfrica**

Robinson worked as an administrative assistant to Congressman Charles C. Diggs from 1976 until Diggs was forced to resign from Congress prior to being sent to prison for graft in 1978. Shortly thereafter, in 1977, Robinson opened an office for an organization he called TransAfrica in a made-over apartment in Washington, D.C. TransAfrica’s two-person staff consisted of Robinson as executive director and Dolores Clemens as his assistant.

TransAfrica’s immediate agenda was to change American policy toward South Africa. The United States was at the time still sympathetic to white rule in South Africa. Robinson wrote in his autobiography, “Americans had to be made aware of all the needless hurt that had been caused in their name. African-Americans had to be made to understand that this American policy afront to Africa was an insult to them as well.” Toward this end, Robinson testified before Congress and even joined Senator George McGovern in a debate with two U.S. senators over U.S. policy in South Africa.

Robinson faced criticism from some U.S. African Americans that there were domestic racial problems that needed to be addressed before America looked to correct apartheid abuses overseas. But Robinson countered that domestic and foreign policy issues need not be addressed separately.

In 1981, a disgruntled employee of the U.S. State Department handed over to Robinson a sheaf of classified documents outlining U.S. support of white-ruled South Africa. Robinson in turn turned the documents over to a writer for the *Washington Post*. On May 29, 1981, the story hit the front pages of that newspaper. A year later, Robinson leaked to the *Washington Post* a classified State Department memo describing South Africa’s intention to obtain a new loan from the International Monetary Fund.

Robinson met his second — and current — wife, Hazel, about this time. She was an international banking analyst who had moved to Washington to volunteer her knowledge of economic affairs in the Caribbean to TransAfrica. They were married in 1987.

By 1989, with the election of F. W. deKlerk as South Africa’s leader and the release of Nelson Mandela from prison the next year, Robinson was allowing himself to believe that democracy would ultimately prevail in South Africa. Wrote Robinson in *Defending the Spirit*, “I had marched, testified, written, orated, debated, petitioned, proselytized, and committed repeated acts of civil disobedi-

ence…. We had done everything seemly and imaginable in our efforts to turn the United States onto a humane course and keep it there.”

Ironically, after coming to power, South Africa’s black African National Congress (ANC) virtually cut off all ties to TransAfrica. According to Robinson, the ANC has preferred to work with “the American Establishment and its multinational corporations.” Robinson feels this policy may ultimately be self-defeating, given that American political parties come in and out of power with unpredictable frequency.

More recently, Robinson undertook a twenty-seven-day hunger strike in support of democratic reforms in Haiti and in opposition to U.S. policy against accepting Haitian refugees. Partly as a result, the U.S. in 1994 organized a multinational campaign to return Haiti’s first democratically elected government to power, after it had been overthrown. Robinson also went on record as opposing the Mengistu government in Ethiopia and corruption in Nigeria. He also fought attempts by the U.S. to end Caribbean access to Europe’s banana markets.

**The Debt**

In *The Debt: What America Owes to Blacks* (2000), Robinson argued that the United States owes major reparations to the descendants of African American slaves. He told *Black Issues in Higher Education* in 2001, “It is not complicated and difficult to argue that when you expropriate the value of a people’s labor for 246 years of slavery, and follow that with a century of formal discrimination based on race with government involvement that those who were in the beneficiary group stood to gain from the expropriation of the value of that labor. And those who had the value of their hire stolen from them stood to suffer, hence this enormous economic gap yawning still and static, separating blacks from whites in the United States and throughout the world.”

Robinson believes the reason that most Americans, whether they be black or white, oppose reparations is that they are uninformed. And for Robinson, that is the crux of the matter. He feels that the American citizenry is in a state of denial about the suffering that the United States has caused to people in the U.S. and in other parts of the world.

When *Black Issues in Higher Education* asked Robinson in 2001 how optimistic he was about the prospects of the reparations movement, he replied, “I’m very optimistic. I put no clock on these things, you see. I don’t know if it will happen in my lifetime in the same way I didn’t know if apartheid would end in my lifetime. . . . But you fight prepared to go the long term, and if your life won’t cover the term of the struggle, then you hand off your progress to the next generation. Seen in that light, I’m extremely optimistic (reparations) will happen.”

**Recognition**

Robinson has been awarded nineteen honorary doctorates. His contributions to altering U.S. foreign policy have been recognized by the United Nations, the Congressional Black Caucus, Harvard University, the Essence Magazine Awards Show, the Martin Luther King Center for Non-
Violent Change, the NAACP, and the Ebony Magazine Awards Show. He has also been named ABC-News Person of the Week. Robinson has appeared on ABC’s Nightline, CBS’s 60 Minutes, NBC’s Today Show, CNN, C-Span, and other American television programs.

Robinson is the author of three books, Defending the Spirit, The Debt: What America Owes to Blacks, and The Reckoning: What Blacks Owe to Each Other. He has begun work on a fourth book, about the past and ongoing impact of U.S. foreign policy on English-speaking nations in the Caribbean. He makes his home on the Caribbean island of St. Kitts with his wife and daughter.

Books

Periodicals

Lola Rodríguez de Tío
Lola Rodríguez de Tío (1843–1924) is a revered figure in both Cuban and Puerto Rican history. She is considered to be Puerto Rico’s premier nineteenth century lyric poet and one of Latin America’s most important early feminists.

Rodríguez de Tío was born September 14, 1843, in San Germán, Puerto Rico. Born into the island’s ruling class, she was the daughter of Don Sebastián Rodríguez de Astudillo, Dean of the Magistracy of Puerto Rico, and Doña Carmen Ponce de León, a descendant of Ponce de León, the explorer and first governor of the colony. Rodríguez de Tío was a bright child who showed early promise as a poet. Her education in religious schools and by private tutors was guided by her mother, who was described in the Enciclopedia Puertorriqueña Ilustrada as “an educated, well-read woman with a fine spirit and the wide-awake intelligence of a child.” It was rare for women to be educated in Puerto Rico; most women, especially poor women, were illiterate. It was rarer still for a woman to be an intellectual, but Rodríguez de Tío was supported and encouraged in her progress as a poet by poet Ursula Cardona de Quinones. Her understanding of the disparity of opportunity for women made her one of Latin America’s most influential early feminists.

Became Revolutionary Poet and Patriot
Rodríguez de Tío married at age 20; her husband, Bonacio Tío Segarra, was a respected and influential journalist and poet. Partners in life and politics, the couple were a thorn in the side of the government. As a colony, Puerto Rico had been long abused, suffering corruption and brutality under Spain’s colonial governors. Puerto Rico’s visionary patriot Eugenio María de Hostos was an important influence on Rodríguez de Tío. Hostos spent most of his life in exile. His eloquent writings inspired many others to call for independence from Spain. Rodríguez de Tío’s home in Mayaguez became a salon where the leading intellectuals, including Hostos, discussed politics and called for revolution. Forthright in her opposition, she boldly challenged the government.

The work for which Rodríguez de Tío is best known, and which caused her to be deported, was “La Borinquena.” In 1868, she composed a fiery lyric for a traditional melody; she read it aloud at a literary gathering at her home to immediate acclaim. It begins: “Awake, Borinquenos, for they’ve given the signal! Awake from your sleep, for it’s time to fight!” “La Borinquena” became Puerto Rico’s national anthem, but Rodríguez de Tío’s lyrics were later replaced with the more sentimental lyrics of Manuel Fernandez Juncos. The Lares Uprising of 1868 brought about a repressive response from the government—Rodríguez de Tío and her husband were given hours to leave the island. They went into exile in Caracas, Venezuela, where Hostos was already living. They grew closer to Hostos during their time in Venezuela; Rodríguez de Tío was a bridesmaid at his wedding in 1878.

Finally, the family was allowed to return to Puerto Rico in 1885, but once again, Rodríguez de Tío’s writing infuriated the government. “Nochebuena,” a tribute to political
prisoners, was published in 1887, the “terrible year” of the “Componte.” Rodríguez de Tío and her family were exiled in 1889 to Cuba, never again to live in Puerto Rico. However, she devoted the rest of her life to achieving independence for both her homeland and Cuba.

Found a Second Homeland

Their political activity for Cuban independence caused Rodríguez de Tío and her husband to be expelled from Havana in 1892. They joined a group of Cuban exiles in New York City, where Rodríguez de Tío met José Martí, the legendary Cuban patriot and poet. This period in her life was one of intense political activity—the group of political exiles created the Cuban Revolutionary Party in 1895. Martí regarded Rodríguez de Tío as an equal in art and in politics. When Martí was killed in Cuba in 1895, the exiles carried on their efforts through political clubs. Rodríguez de Tío was elected president of “Ríus Rivera” in 1896, and secretary of another club, “Caridad,” in 1897. She and her family returned to Cuba in 1899 after the Spanish-American War, and she devoted the rest of her life to social justice and the betterment of the condition of women in Cuba.

Rodríguez de Tío is considered a leading literary figure and a national hero: she was named to the Cuban Academy of Arts and Letters in 1910 and Patron of the Galician Beneficent Society in 1911. She continued to be active in politics and served as inspector general of the private schools in Havana, as well as in the Ministry of Education. Like many other feminists of her time, Rodríguez de Tío also sought to reform women’s fashions. Federico Ribes Tovar described her attire in Enciclopedia Puertorriqueña Ilustrada: “This strange woman with her radical thoughts, wore a skirt of a very peculiar design, like an Amazon’s, and wore a blouse with a high neckline and a wide bow tie, and her hair was cut like a man’s.” He also reported that she was considered to be devout, a fine wife and mother, and an “exemplary friend.”

Referred to as “Daughter of the Isles”

Rodríguez de Tío’s importance as a poet is a matter of dispute among literary critics, but her place in Puerto Rican letters is not. Referred to in the Encyclopedia of Latin American Literature as that country’s “most distinguished 19th-century lyric poet,” her style is sometimes dismissed as derivative, but her verses are well known and very influential. No less an authority than Ruben Dario, considered Spanish America’s greatest modern poet, praised Rodríguez de Tío, calling her “the Daughter of the Isles.”

As a disciple of Romanticism, Rodríguez de Tío was influenced by Spanish Golden Age poets and the traditional stanza. She published three books: Mis Cantares, in 1876 (My Songs); Claros y Nieblas, in 1885 (Bright Intervals and Mist); and Mi Libro de Cuba, in 1893 (My Book on Cuba. One of her most famous verses, “Cuba and Puerto Rico,” was quoted by Fidel Castro in a 1966 speech: “Cuba and Puerto Rico are/of one bird, the two wings/they receive flowers and bullets/in the same heart.” However, he mistakenly attributed it to Jose Martí. Rodríguez de Tío’s poem does capture her affection for both Puerto Rico and her adopted homeland: it concludes: “What a lot if in the illusion/that grows red in a thousand tones,/ Lola’s muse dreams/ with fervent fantasy/ of making one single homeland/ of this land and of mine.” She died on November 10, 1924, in Havana, Cuba, at the age of 81.

Books


Tío, Carlos F. Mendoza, Contribución al Estudio de la Obra Poética de Lola Rodríguez de Tío, 1974.


Charlemae Hill Rollins

Charlemae Hill Rollins (1897–1979) was a Chicago librarian and author who was dedicated to improving the image of African Americans in children’s literature. She served as an advisor to authors, teachers, and publishers, encouraging them to disregard negative stereotypes and honestly portray black culture and history. Rollins taught two generations of children to love books and appreciate their ethnic heritage.

Charlemae Hill Rollins was born October 21, 1897, in the small farming community of Yazoo City, Mississippi. She was the oldest child of Allen G. Hill, a farmer, and Birdie Tucker Hill, a teacher. The family was poor, but Rollins remembered a childhood rich in family life, the result of growing up among a large extended family. Her grandmother, a former slave, was a wonderful storyteller who shared her book collection with her grandchildren. Rollins recalled her grandmother’s influence in More Books by More People: Interviews with 65 Authors of Books for Children: “She gave us all the books that belonged to her master who was the father of her children, one of whom was my father. We enjoyed the books in his library, even though most of them were medical books. But I would read anything and everything.”

The Hill family moved to the Indian Territory—now Oklahoma—when Rollins was still a child. She attended a school for African Americans founded by her family, and her mother was one of the first black teachers in the territory. As Rollins grew older few educational opportunities existed for blacks nearby, so she enrolled in black secondary schools in Missouri, Mississippi, and Kansas. She graduated from a segregated boarding school in Quindoro, Kansas, in 1916.
After graduating, Rollins taught briefly in Beggs, Oklahoma, before enrolling in Howard University in Washington, D.C. After a year at Howard she returned to Oklahoma where she married Joseph Walter Rollins in 1918. The couple had a son, Joseph Walter Rollins Jr., in 1920. They moved to Chicago, where Joseph Sr. worked for the Young Men’s Christian Association.

Began Career as Librarian

In 1927 Rollins combined her love of books and teaching by taking a job as a children’s librarian at the Harding Square Branch of the Chicago Public Library. When the George Cleveland Hall Branch Library opened in 1923 she was named head of the children’s department there. This branch was the first to be located in the city’s black neighborhoods and it served a diverse population representing all socioeconomic levels.

The library system helped Rollins continue her education. She enrolled in library training at Columbia College of the University of Chicago and remained a children’s department librarian at Hall Library for 36 years. Serving the community in a caring, imaginative way, she guided two generations of young patrons to discover and love books and reading. Rollins organized events to draw people into the library and was dedicated to educating patrons on the contributions of black people. Storytelling sessions were a major part of her work, as she explained to an Illinois Libraries contributor: “Storytelling is a wonderful way of breaking down barriers, or getting acquainted with new people, and drawing groups and individuals together. Hearing a wonderful story well told, can bring escape from hunger, from drab surroundings, from hate and rejection, and escape from injustices of all kinds.”

Advised Publishers

Rollins believed that children’s programs could only be effective if the adults in the children’s lives also took an interest. Encouraging and teaching parents and teachers to become involved with children and books, she organized a reading guidance clinic for families and maintained close contact with Parent-Teacher Association groups. Rollins’s library programs often centered on black history. She felt a strong need to teach children about their heritage, but she was frustrated by the lack of books available on the topic during the 1930s. She found that when children asked for her help with a school paper about a black person, there were no appropriate books in the library. “For many years books about Negro children followed a stereotyped pattern,” Rollins was quoted as remarking on the University of Mississippi Library web site. “The characters portrayed were the barefoot menial, or the red-lipped clown. Rarely did the Negro character in a story where there were other children ever take part in the story as equals. Illustrators, it seemed, could not resist presenting the quaint ‘pickaninny’ type.”

Rollins wanted her young patrons to read books that honestly portrayed African Americans in all phases of life. “Children as they are growing up need special interpretations of the lives of other peoples,” she maintained, “[and] must be helped to an understanding and tolerance. They cannot develop these qualities through contacts with others, if those closest to them are prejudiced and unsympathetic with other races and groups. Tolerance and understanding can be gained through reading the right books.”

Rollins made it her mission to improve the image of blacks in children’s books and to teach her young patrons about their heritage. She formed a Negro history club and a series of appreciation hours in which she taught children about the contributions of blacks. She researched and collected materials for her programs and made publishers aware of the need for books about African American culture and history. “I got to be quite a nuisance for the publishers, writing them letters on top of letters for more information,” she told a contributor to American Libraries.

Her interest in African American books led Rollins to complete a research paper on the topic of blacks in children’s books for one of her library classes at the University of Chicago. She became recognized as an evaluator of children’s literature and became a member of the Chicago Public Library’s advisory committee on book selection. Rollins transformed her research paper into a mimeographed list of books relating to blacks that was used by children’s librarians. This list evolved into one of the first significant publications on African American literature for children. Published in 1941 by the National Council of Teachers of English as We Build Together, A Reader’s Guide to Negro Life and Literature for Elementary and High School Use, the pamphlet includes introductory text about how to
write and select books about blacks and an annotated bibliography of recommended books. *We Build Together* raised the level of consciousness among librarians, teachers, and publishers to the need for more honest portrayals of African Americans in children’s literature. The landmark publication was revised in 1948 and 1967.

**Earned National Recognition**

Her 1941 publication earned Rollins a national reputation as an authority on African American children’s books. Publishers, becoming aware of the stereotypes they presented in their books, began seeking Rollins’s and other black librarians’ and teachers’ advice. Many publishers and authors sent manuscripts to Rollins for evaluation, and she was asked to serve on the editorial advisory boards of *World Book Encyclopedia, American Educator,* and *Bulletin of the Center for Children’s Books*. She chaired the Jane Addams Book Award committee for the Women’s International League for Peace and Justice in 1964–1965 and in 1962 traveled to Oslo, Norway, to present the award to Aimee Sommerfelt, author of *The Road to Agra*.

Many universities and professional associations invited Rollins to teach, write, and lecture on African American books. She contributed articles to many journals, including *American Childhood, Illinois Libraries and Junior Libraries*. She lectured at Fisk University, Morgan State College, the University of Mississippi, Rosary College, San Francisco State College, and the University of Chicago, and taught a class in children’s literature at Roosevelt University in Chicago.

Rollins also became involved in professional associations. She was active in the Illinois State Library Association, the Catholic Library Association, and the American Library Association (ALA). She worked on many ALA committees and became the association’s first black president in 1957. In 1972 she was the first African American to receive an honorary lifetime membership in the ALA.

Rollins retired in August 1963 at the age of 66. She had been involved with books her entire life and had met many authors in her role as a children’s librarian. In retirement she began writing books of her own, among them juvenile biographies of black men and women. Among her books are *They Showed the Way*, 1964; *Famous American Negro Poets for Children*, 1965; *Famous Negro Entertainers of Stage and Screen*, 1967; and *Black Troubadour*, Langston Hughes, 1971. Her biography on Hughes was inspired by her own friendship with Hughes, whom she had met during the 1930s at a Works Project Administration-sponsored writer’s project hosted by her library.

In 1963 Rollins wrote *Christmas Gif*: An Anthology of Christmas Poems, Songs, and Stories Written by and about Negroes. The title, *Christmas Gif*, was based on a holiday tradition celebrated by her family that originated in the days of slavery. The book includes selections from Hughes, Paul Laurence Dunbar, Booker T. Washington, and Pulitzer Prize-winning poet Gwendolyn Brooks, who had been a patron at the George Cleveland Hall Branch Library as a child.

**Received Many Awards**

Rollins’s role in elevating the status of African Americans in children’s books earned her many awards from library, education, and humanitarian organizations. She received the American Brotherhood Award from the National Conference of Christians and Jews in 1952, the Library Letter Award from the ALA in 1953, and the Grolier Foundation Award from the ALA in 1955. She also received the Good American Award of the Chicago Committee of One Hundred in 1962, the Children’s Reading Round Table award in 1963, and the New Jersey Library and Media Association’s Coretta Scott King Award in 1971. In 1974 Columbia College, Chicago awarded Rollins a doctorate of humane letters, and three years later the Chicago Public Library dedicated a room in her name at the Carter G. Woodson Regional Library.

Rollins died in Chicago on February 3, 1979. She was 81 years old. In her memory, the School of Library and Information Science at North Carolina Central University presents the biennial Charlemae Hill Rollins Colloquium, while the ALA’s Library Service to Children division presents the Charlemae Rollins President’s Program at its annual summer conferences.

The research Rollins conducted in her lifetime included studies of Head Start, African American bibliography, and segregation. Her papers and journals are housed at the African-American Resources Program at the School of Library and Information Sciences, North Carolina Central University.

**Books**


**Periodicals**


*Public Libraries*, Fall 1982.

**Online**


---

**Samuel Romilly**

English lawyer and law reformer Sir Samuel Romilly (1757–1818) divided his time between the law and public service. He served as chancellor of Durham from 1805 to 1815 and was a member of Parliament beginning in 1806. A supporter of the social and political views of the Swiss Enlightenment philosopher Jean-Jacques Rousseau, Romilly devoted his life to advocating on behalf of the lower classes and worked to reform England’s criminal law by abolishing capital punishment for minor crimes.
Inspired by French Ancestry

Born in London, England, on March 1, 1757, Romilly was the second son born to Peter and Margaret (Garnault) Romilly. Both of Romilly's parents hailed from French families whose members had fled France for England after the revocation of the Edict of Nantes by French King Louis XIV in 1685. The wealth of the Garnault family allowed Margaret Romilly and her family, now newly of London, to live in comfort while her husband established a business as a watchmaker and jeweler.

In addition to gaining a basic education, Romilly worked in his father’s shop where he began to learn the watchmaker’s trade. A good student of the classics, he also excelled at the study of French literature, and when he inherited a legacy of 2,000 pounds from a French relative, he left his father’s shop and went to work in a London law office. There Romilly determined to become a clerk in the Court of Chancery—a judicial body presided over by the Lord Chancellor wherein litigants could directly petition the king for justice. To this end he set about training himself and saving up sufficient funds to purchase the office. In 1778, however, the 21-year-old law clerk, determined to go to the bar, had entered himself at Gray’s Inn, one of the four inns of court that conferred the rank of barrister.

In 1781 Romilly traveled abroad and visited Geneva, where he met Pierre Etienne Louis Dumont (1759–1829), a Swiss democrat who had been a protegé of politician and orator the Comte de Mirabeau during the French Revolution. The influence of the Enlightenment that inspired Dumont and Mirabeau would also inspire Romilly, and he eventually came to know Encyclopédie collaborators Denis Diderot and Jean d’Alembert.

Called to the bar in 1783, Romilly appeared briefly in circuit courts but spent most of his time working in the Court of Chancery. A reading of Martin Madan’s Thoughts on Executive Justice with Respect to Our Criminal Laws inspired him to contemplate the issue of capital punishment and resulted in Romilly’s first published book in 1786, the Observations of a Late Publication, intitled, Thoughts on Executive Justice. During work on his response to Madan, Romilly was introduced to Mirabeau himself and spent much time with the French politician.

While Romilly busied himself in the Court of Chancery, across the English Channel France was in the throes of political upheaval. In 1789 economic and class anxieties came to a head as King Louis XVI and his wife, Marie Antoinette, were imprisoned and political power fell to a new body, the Estates-General. Due to his influence, Mirabeau quickly gained power in the Estates-General, and he turned to Romilly for help in acquiring a procedural manual of the English House of Commons for use as a model. Intrigued by the revolution and its ideals of equality and brotherhood, Romilly visited Paris and in 1790 published a pamphlet titled Thoughts on the Probable Influence of the Late Revolution in France upon Great Britain. His larger work, Letters Containing an Account of the Late Revolution in France, more fully expressed the alignment of his political sympathies with those of the revolutionary leadership, albeit the theoretical aspects rather than the terrifying reality of bloody revolution.

During the next decade Romilly’s practice at the Court of Chancery flourished, and in 1800 he was honored by the government. In 1798 he married Anne Garbett of Herefordshire. In 1805 he was appointed chancellor of the county court of Durham. Due to his philosophical leanings, Romilly had become known to many in the Whig party. In 1806, on the succession of the Whigs to power under Lord Grenville, he was knighted and appointed to the position of solicitor-general. Because Romilly would not qualify for the post unless he was a member of Parliament, it was arranged that the newly knighted Romilly stand for Queensborough in the House of Commons.

Throughout his tenure as solicitor-general, Romilly began the legal reform that would occupy the rest of his life. In keeping with his position, he instituted several changes in England’s bankruptcy procedures. Although Romilly lost the post of solicitor-general when the Tories regained control of the government, he kept his seat in the House of Commons where he sat for Horsham, Wareham, and Arundel. During his tenure in Parliament, he became a strong advocate of social reform, using his skills as an orator, his firm grounding in the law, and his belief in democracy and equality for the benefit of the English people.
Active in Social Reform

Despite a growing public outcry to abolish the institution of slavery in England and its colonies, the issue of slavery had been politically controversial for several years. By 1804 however, the slavery question began to attract renewed interest, in part due to the influx of new Irish members, who tended as a whole to be abolitionists. Noted abolitionist and member of Parliament William Wilberforce (1759–1833) first introduced his Abolition Bill in 1804 and then 1805, both times without success. In 1806 Wilberforce published an influential pamphlet advocating Abolition and drumming up enough interest to force the issue once again to a Parliamentary vote. With sufficient support from the Whigs, the Abolition Bill passed on February 23, 1807, by an overwhelming majority of votes. One of the bill’s staunchest advocates, Romilly added his voice to support of the bill, praising Wilberforce for his efforts and receiving a standing ovation from the House of Commons. Abolition would be the first of many social issues that would benefit from the new member of Parliament’s support.

Reform of England’s Penal Code

At the turn of the 19th century the social and economic landscape of England was in a state of flux due to the effects of the Industrial Revolution. The widening rift between poorer working classes and the wealthy elite had created tensions that the unfolding French Revolution continued to fuel. Police and guard details found themselves constantly short-handed when faced with ever-increasing crimes, riots, outbreaks of mob violence, and other types of social disorder. Larger cities often relied on English troops to reestablish order, while smaller towns called on their local militias when needed.

As a practicing attorney confronted with the burgeoning cases brought to trial each year, Romilly had become aware of the many inequities in England’s criminal justice system. Often ill-conceived and frequently cruel, the nation’s statutory laws governing criminal activity doled out the death penalty as a punishment for 220 crimes, many of them minor infractions that did not warrant it. Children as well as adults were subject to these outdated laws, many dating back to the more brutal age of Queen Elizabeth I and some applying to minimal crimes—among them pickpocketing, pulling down turnpike gates, stealing fish from ponds, and highway robbery when the goods taken were valued greater than a penny. Because the execution of all those men, women, and children whose crimes demanded death according to the statutes was infeasible, the death penalty eventually began to be enforced randomly. Many of the condemned—including children, who would remain subject to the death penalty until 1908—were given a less harsh sentence after their initial condemnation; of course, there were others who received the prescribed penalty because of the personal whims of the judge or some other arbitrary reason.

Romilly believed that it was the certainty of punishment rather than the severity of punishment that was the true deterrent to crime. He gathered statistics showing that despite the increasing use of the death penalty during the 18th century, the number of crimes had not decreased, in fact, crime had increased. In 1808 he managed to begin the process of repeal in the case of an Elizabethan statute which made petty theft a capital offence. Unfortunately, his success in this instance resulted in opposition from the House of Lords in the person of Lord Ellenborough, and three other pieces of reform legislation were discarded. Romilly continued to fight for reform, but ultimately waged a losing battle. Success came in 1812, when he requested the repeal of an even more unjust statute that declared it a capital offence for an English soldier to beg without written permission from his commanding officer. In 1813, after attempting to introduce a bill before the House of Commons that would repeal the law, making it a capital offence to steal goods of a minimal value from a store or warehouse, he watched the bill pass by a two-to-one margin in the House of Commons on March 26 and then be thrown out of the House of Lords scarcely a week later.

For the remainder of his career in Parliament, Romilly continued his efforts at penal reform and during the same period he saw little legislative progress. However, his well-articulated arguments for change did not fall on deaf ears, for he wisely published them in widely read periodicals such as the Edinburgh Review and the changes he envisioned were eventually enacted.

Romilly soon became famous throughout Europe, where his 1810 work Observations on the Criminal Law of England was widely known. Other writings by the legal reformer would be published posthumously, among them a collection of his speeches published in 1820 and a version of his memoirs, edited by his sons and published in 1840.

Tragically, Romilly’s long career of public service ended too soon. On the Isle of Wight on November 2, 1818, three days after his wife died following a long illness, he descended into a grief so great that he took his own life. Following his death at age 61, Romilly’s work to reform England’s penal codes was continued by Sir James MacNtosh, who in early March of 1819 succeeded in establishing a Parliamentary committee to review the uses of the death penalty. Many of Romilly’s proposed changes in English law were made later in the 19th century during the reign of Queen Victoria. Romilly’s second son, John, Baron Romilly, followed in his father’s footsteps, becoming solicitor general in 1848 at age 46 and attorney-general in 1850.

Books

—, The speeches of Sir Samuel Romilly in the House of Commons, 2 volumes, James Ridgway & Sons, 1820.
Patrick Roy

Over the course of his 18–year professional career, Canadian hockey player Patrick Roy (born 1965) proved to himself and hockey fans everywhere his outstanding skills and instincts as a goaltender. His heroic actions to defend his team, even when ill or suffering from appendicitis, in addition to his outstanding skill in front of the net made him a popular icon. When he retired from professional hockey in 2003, he left as the National Hockey League’s (NHL’s) all-time career leader in victories and games played as a goaltender. In addition, his playoff performances are marked by records as the goaltender with the most playoff wins, games played, minutes played, shutouts, and consecutive wins in the post season.

Patrick Roy was born on October 5, 1965, in Quebec City, in the province of Quebec in Canada. His parents lived in the nearby suburb of Sainte Foy. He came from athletic stock: his mother was a nationally ranked synchronized swimmer and his father was an accomplished tennis player and amateur baseball player. Roy grew up cheering for his home-province team, the Quebec Nordiques.

The Early Years

Roy began playing hockey at age six. He did not start out at the goal, but when one of the neighborhood kids was injured he stepped into the net and never left. When he was seven he strapped pillows to his legs with his dad’s belts to create goalie pads. He eventually played goalie for local midget and junior leagues.

Roy’s family was highly respected within their community, and the young hockey fan’s father held high-ranking government positions. While his brother and sister both attended school in English, Roy continued his education in French and concentrated on hockey and goaltending. Most children from his neighborhood went on to college and professional careers, but in 1982 Roy dropped out of school in the eleventh grade and, with the support of his parents, played hockey for the Granby Bisons of the Quebec junior league. The team did not do well, winning only 16 of 44 games. “It was tough playing [for the Granby Bisons],” the competitive Roy later recalled in A Breed Apart: An Illustrated History of Goaltending. “But I got a lot of work and it was a good experience. I learned to deal with the frustrations of losing and now I appreciate more the enjoyment of winning.” Despite his team’s record, Roy was named the Quebec Junior League’s top goaltender.

Skated with the Pros

In 1984 the Montreal Canadiens chose Roy as their fourth-round pick in the 1985 National Hockey League (NHL) draft. Then 19 years old, Roy was the 51st draft pick overall. The Canadiens sent Roy to play for their American League affiliate, the Sherbrooke Canadiens, where he watched the game as a third-string goaltender. Then, during the American League playoffs, opportunity knocked on Roy’s door after Sherbrooke’s regular starter, Paul Pageau, took time off for the birth of his a child at the same time that the team’s second-string goalie had trouble with some of his equipment. Roy joined the team on the ice in front of the net. He stayed there, winning 10 out of 13 playoff games, and Sherbrooke won the Calder Cup championship. The next fall Roy was called up to the Canadiens. “It was a dream come true, to be playing in my province and for Canada’s team,” he told an interviewer for Sports Illustrated for Kids.

During Roy’s 1985–1986 rookie season, the Canadiens won their 23rd Stanley Cup championship. Roy had an awesome average of 1.92 goals per game during the playoffs, was voted Most Valuable Player, and won the Conn Smythe Trophy. Despite his professional performance, he
still acted like a kid, playing street hockey, living in a basement apartment, and subsisting on a diet of hamburgers, French fries, and potato chips. Eventually his team brought in a nutrition expert to teach Roy to use food to fuel his body in order for him to have enough energy to last throughout the game. This may have led to Roy’s routine of eating spaghetti and water at 1 p.m. on game days.

Quirks and Superstitions

Very superstitious, Roy adopted many routines that fans came to recognize. Before each game he skated out to the blue line and stared at his net, beaming thoughts to his goal posts. “I talk to my posts,” he admitted in A Breed Apart. “It’s a superstition. The forwards talk to each other. The defense is always close, but the goaltender is alone.” He would also not skate on the blue or red lines. He wrote the names of his children on his sticks before each game and kept a puck from every shutout during the season in his locker.

Roy earned an eight-game suspension at the beginning of the 1987–1988 season for slashing the leg of Minnesota’s Warren Babe. However, as soon as he was back, he impressed the crowd by shutting out Chicago 3–0. During the 1988–1989 season he won the Vezina Trophy, an award given to the goaltender playing the most games on the team with the most Goals Against Average. Roy became his team’s main goalie during the 1989–1990 season and played more than 50 games. He won another Vezina Trophy that year and was named to the All-Star team.

The Building of a Legend

During the early 1990s Roy slowly climbed his way back into the public’s favor. By the time the 1992–1993 playoffs rolled around he recorded the most wins of any goaltender—16 of 20 games—and the lowest goals against average—2.13. He set a record with ten straight sudden-death wins, gaining immortality in Canadian lore. During game four of the Stanley Cup finals against the Los Angeles Kings, the score was tied and Tomas Sandstrom was taking multiple shots on Roy. Partway through the third period Sandstrom stormed the net attempting a rebound, but Roy smothered the puck. Roy looked up at Sandstrom and winked. The TV cameras caught the wink and played it repeatedly, and it became one of the lasting pictures of the playoffs. “I knew Sandstrom was taking lots of shots, but not getting anything,“ Roy told a Saturday Night interviewer. “And I knew he wasn’t going to beat me. Roy led the team to another Stanley Cup win and again walked away with the Conn Smythe. Montreal rewarded him with a new four-year contract for $16 million.

During the 1994 playoffs Roy became even more of a legend. He was diagnosed with appendicitis and hospitalized, but convinced his doctors to let him out of the hospital without surgery. Loaded up on antibiotics, he played in game four, stopping 39 shots and helping Montreal win 5–2. He then returned to the hospital for the surgery and was back on the ice a few days later. Roy’s position on the Canadiens seemed secure.

Tantrum Led to Trade

Unfortunately for Roy, things are not always as they seem. On December 2, 1995, he became irritated with Canadiens coach Mario Tremblay after Montreal star Vincent Damphousse was allowed to play despite the fact that he showed up only minutes before warm-ups. Roy made his feelings known to Tremblay before the game. Out on the ice the Canadiens took a beating from the Detroit Red Wings, and Tremblay let Roy simmer in the net for nine goals before pulling him out late in the second period. Furious, Roy went over to Canadiens president Ronald Corey, who was seated behind the Montreal bench, and declared publicly that he had played his last game for Montreal. “The only thing I regret is raising my hands” in mock salute to fans, who had cheered sarcastically after a save, Roy explained in Sports Illustrated. “They’d been great to me. It showed a short memory on my part.” His tantrum and obvious insubordination ended his career with Montreal, and he was traded to the Colorado Avalanche within four days. Roy worked well with the Avalanche, which coincidentally used to be his childhood favorite Quebec Nordiques. A few weeks after the trade the Avalanche played against the Canadiens and won. After the game Roy flipped a puck at Tremblay. “It made me feel so good. It was a mistake, but I don’t regret it.” Roy was quoted as saying according to Hockey’s Greatest Stars. “I’m an emotional person. I let my emotions go. I know sometimes it gets me in trouble, but I know it sometimes helps me to play better too.”

Six months later the Avalanche went to the 1996 Stanley Cup to play against the Florida Panthers. That year the Panther fans had taken to throwing plastic rats out onto the ice when their team scored. During the first two games, Roy only let one goal in each game. But in the third game, the Panthers scored two goals quickly, and the ice was showered with plastic rats. As the maintenance crew picked them up, Roy skated over to the Avalanche bench and told his teammates, “No more rats,” according to Hockey’s Greatest Stars. There was not another goal scored against Roy during the rest of the series, and the Avalanche won the cup in a triple-overtime shootout in game four.

Unique Style Proved Effective

Roy’s signature style, known as the butterfly, where he kneeled on the ice with his legs at right angles to his body, is physically impossible for most mortals. His flexibility enabled him to cover the entire bottom of the net with his goalpads, reducing the number of goals scored against him. In October of 2000 Roy’s technique helped him beat Terry Sawchuk’s record of 447 regular-season wins to result in an all-time high. He was so entrenched in the Avalanche success story that a ceremony honoring him was held at the Pepsi Center in Denver, Colorado. The mayor announced he had named a street after Roy, and the state’s governor proclaimed Patrick Roy Week. Team owner Stan Kroenke displayed a bronze bust of Roy. Perhaps the attention was too much for Roy; just 24 hours later the police were called to his home where he had lost his temper and was ripping doors off their hinges. He spent six hours in custody on charges of misdemeanor criminal mischief in connection
with domestic violence. Roy was quickly back out on the ice minding the net, and in 2001 he won another Stanley Cup with the Avalanche as well as another Conn Smythe Trophy.

In May 2003 Roy retired from the NHL. He made the decision to leave the game while still playing at the top of his game. Indeed, he left the NHL with impressive records in both regular season and playoff games. His regular season records include being the goaltender with the most victories (551) and games played (1,029), and his post-season play is marked by his records as the goaltender with the most playoff wins (151), games played (247), minutes played (15,209), shutouts (23), and consecutive wins in the post season (11 in 1993).

Despite his inability to control his emotions outside the game, Roy’s personality quirks seemed to help him on the ice. “His teams have always fed off his energy,” Stars center Mike Modano told a contributor to Sporting News. “He’s like the guy at the carnival dunking booth, daring you to dunk him. But very few can.” Perhaps it all started with another of Roy’s rituals: that of leading his teammates through an elaborate stick-and-glove tapping ritual before the opening face-off of every game.

Books

Periodicals
Hockey Digest, May 2002.

Online

Donald Harold Rumsfeld

Donald Rumsfeld (born 1932) became the United States 21st Secretary of Defense on January 20, 2001. Before assuming that position, he was a Navy pilot, President Gerald Ford’s Secretary of Defense, President Ford’s White House Chief of Staff, U.S. Ambassador to NATO under President Richard Nixon, a U.S. Congressman from Illinois, and chief executive officer at two Fortune 500 companies.

Donal Harold Rumsfeld was born in Chicago on July 9, 1932, the son of George Donald Rumsfeld, a real estate salesman, and Jeannette Huster Rumsfeld. He was raised in Winnetka, Illinois, a wealthy suburb on Chicago’s North Shore. At New Trier High School, Rumsfeld was a champion wrestler in the 145-pound class. He would marry his high school sweetheart in 1954.

Following his graduation from high school, Rumsfeld attended Princeton University on an academic and NROTC scholarship and became captain of the football and wrestling teams. There is a legend about Rumsfeld during his college days that says he would do one-armed push-ups for money. Rumsfeld admitted years later that he did not have much money in college, and that he did the push-ups because he needed to scrape together some cash. In any case he graduated from Princeton with an A.B. degree in 1954 with a major in political science.

In 1954, he began three years of service in the U.S. Navy as an aviator and flight instructor. In 1957, he transferred to the Ready Reserve. As a member of the reserve, he continued his flying and administrative assignments during drills until 1975. (Upon becoming Secretary of Defense in 1975, he would transfer to the Standby Reserve. In 1989, he was re-assigned to the Retired Reserve with the rank of captain.)
Washington Bound

In 1957, Rumsfeld moved to Washington to serve as administrative assistant to a congressman. Two years later, he became a congressional staff assistant. Rumsfeld left Washington from 1960 to 1962 to serve as a representative of the Chicago investment banking firm, A.G. Becker and Company. But in 1962, at the age of 30, Rumsfeld won election to the U.S. House of Representatives from Illinois. He would also go on to win re-election in 1964, 1966, and 1968. But in 1969, he gave up his seat in Congress to join the Nixon administration as director of the Office of Economic Opportunity, assistant to the president, and member of the president’s cabinet.

In 1971, Rumsfeld was named counselor to the president and director of the Economic Stabilization Program, while continuing in his role as a member of the president’s cabinet. Two years later, he was appointed U.S. ambassador to the North Atlantic Treaty Organization (NATO) in Brussels, Belgium. Rumsfeld returned to Washington in 1974 to serve as chairman of President Gerald R. Ford’s transition team, and stayed on as President Ford’s White House chief of staff and member of Ford’s cabinet.

Thirteenth Secretary of Defense

On November 11, 1975, the U.S. Senate confirmed Rumsfeld’s appointment as the 13th Secretary of Defense. Taking office nine days later, he became the youngest person, at 43, to serve as defense secretary in the nation’s history. His tenure would continue until January 20, 1977, when the Carter administration took office. In 1977, Rumsfeld was awarded the Presidential Medal of Freedom, the highest award that can be given to a U.S. citizen.

CEO

The change of administrations resulted in a time-out in Rumsfeld’s political career. Between 1977 and 1985, he served as president and chief executive officer of the multinational pharmaceutical company, G.D. Searle & Co. At Searle, Rumsfeld increased profits on such mundane products as Metamucil by introducing orange and lemon flavors. His greatest success, however, was bringing NutraSweet to market. Rumsfeld’s achievements at Searle brought him to the North Atlantic Treaty Organization (NATO) in Brussels, Belgium. Rumsfeld returned to Washington in 1974 to serve as chairman of President Gerald R. Ford’s transition team, and stayed on as President Ford’s White House chief of staff and member of Ford’s cabinet.

CEO

The change of administrations resulted in a time-out in Rumsfeld’s political career. Between 1977 and 1985, he served as president and chief executive officer of the multinational pharmaceutical company, G.D. Searle & Co. At Searle, Rumsfeld increased profits on such mundane products as Metamucil by introducing orange and lemon flavors. His greatest success, however, was bringing NutraSweet to market. Rumsfeld’s achievements at Searle brought him awards as the Outstanding Chief Executive Officer in the Pharmaceutical Industry from the Wall Street Transcript (1980) and Financial World (1981). On June 1, 1985, he became the first person in the company’s history who was not a member of the Searle family to serve as chairman of the board.

While still with Searle, Rumsfeld also found time to serve the Reagan administration as a member of the President’s General Advisory Committee on Arms Control (1982–1986); special envoy on the Law of the Sea Treaty (1982–1983); special envoy to the Middle East (1982–1984); senior advisor to the President’s Panel on Strategic Systems (1983–1984); and member of the U.S. Joint Advisory Commission on U.S.-Japan Relations.

Rumsfeld’s resume shows him to have been in private business from 1985 to 1990. On May 30, 1986, the Wall Street Journal announced that he planned to seek the Republican nomination for president for the 1988 election. But by March 2, 1987, he had apparently changed his mind and announced that he would not seek the presidency after all. From 1987 to 1990, Rumsfeld was a member of the National Commission for Public Service. He served on the National Economic Commission from 1988 to 1989 and as a member of the Board of Visitors of the National Defense University from 1988 to 1992.


Rumsfeld remained in private business after 1993, becoming chairman of the board of directors of Gilead Sciences, Inc., and a member of the boards of Asea Brown Boveri, Ltd., Amylin Pharmaceuticals, and the Tribune Company. He also served as chairman of the Salomon Smith Barney International Advisory Board and an advisor to a number of companies, including Investor AB of Sweden. In the public sector, he served as chairman of the U.S. Commission to Assess National Security Space Management and Organization.

Political Ties

Rumsfeld continued to maintain alliances with Republican causes and commissions while pursuing his business career. In 1996, he worked with Bob Dole’s presidential campaign in an attempt to unseat incumbent Bill Clinton. From 1998 to 1999, he served as chairman of the Commission to Assess the Ballistic Missile Threat to the United States. From 1999 to 2000, he was a member of the U.S. Trade Deficit Review Commission and in 2000 served as chairman of the Commission to Assess United States National Security Space Management and Organization.

Twenty-first Secretary of Defense

Rumsfeld became the 21st Secretary of Defense on January 20, 2001. When Rumsfeld took office, he was initially faced with the task of whittling down the Pentagon’s $300 billion budget. At that time, he attempted to portray himself as a champion of the taxpayers who was trying to keep money from being wasted on political and military boondoggles. But in a war with the Pentagon in which his mission was to reduce military waste, most Washington insiders were betting that Rumsfeld would fail. The military, finding itself left out of planning Rumsfeld’s reforms, began taking potshots at him in press conferences. Before the terrorist attacks of September 11, 2001, Rumsfeld seemed to be headed toward marginalization, a fate often reserved for politicians who have no further ambition. But after September 11, Rumsfeld found himself confronted with prosecuting a war instead of fighting Pentagon bureaucracy.

Rumsfeld began revamping Department of Defense strategy and reworking the model used to assess the country’s military manpower needs. With presidential au-
After authorization, he undertook to reorganize the United States' worldwide command structure (into the U.S. Northern Command and the U.S. Strategic Command). Rumsfeld also looked at the nation's military capabilities in space and developed a model of strategic deterrence that reduces nuclear weapons. He also beefed up missile defense research and testing.

With the declaration of the war on terrorism, many of Rumsfeld's deficits seemed to turn into assets, including his marked tendency toward arrogance. Jeffrey Krames, writing in *The Rumsfeld Way*, quotes from Rumsfeld's speech to members of the U.S. Armed Forces on the day after the September 11 terrorist attack, "Great crises are marked by their memorable moments. At the height of peril to his own nation, Winston Churchill spoke of their finest hour. Yesterday, America and the cause of human freedom came under attack, and the great crisis of America's twenty-first century was suddenly upon us." Krames wondered whether Rumsfeld really meant to imply that he was up to dealing with the hand of destiny.

In the war against the Taliban in Afghanistan in 2001, shortly after the September 11 attacks, Rumsfeld initially seemed bent on taking personal control of the war. He urged the Central Command to put more ground troops on the battlefield, after the commanding general failed to achieve any progress with bombing raids. But he eventually decided that the best way to win a war is to let the senior military run it—winning him more than a few points with the Pentagon.

Also during the Afghanistan war, Rumsfeld acquired a reputation of speaking in plain English at press conferences, instead of using the military speak many reporters had become used to. Criticism of Rumsfeld initially remained sparse following the September 11 attacks, if only because there was a fear of being branded a traitor if one did not sign up to his cut-and-dry agenda.

But by 2003, when the war on terrorism had transformed itself into a "showdown with Saddam Hussein," Rumsfeld's reputation as a plain speaker seemed to be unraveling, and dissenters were finding their voice. Mike Moore, senior editor of the *Bulletin of the Atomic Scientists*, accused Rumsfeld of deliberately distorting the difference between a preventive and pre-emptive war in his public statements. Citing the Department of Defense's own Dictionary of Military Terms, Moore pointed out that a pre-emptive war is one "initiated on the basis of incontrovertible evidence that an enemy attack is imminent," while a preventive war is "initiated in the belief that military conflict, while not imminent, is inevitable, and that to delay would involve greater risk." Moore argued that while a pre-emptive war may be morally and legally justified, a preventive war is unworthy of any law-abiding nation and a violation of international law.

In 2001, *U.S. News and World Report* quoted Henry Kissinger as saying, "Rumsfeld afforded me a close-up look at a special Washington phenomenon: the skilled full-time politician bureaucrat in whom ambition, ability, and substance fuse seamlessly."

**Private Citizen**

Rumsfeld's civic activities have included service on the Boards of Trustees of the Chicago Historical Society, Eisenhower Exchange Fellowships, the Hoover Institution at Stanford University, the Rand Corporation, and the National Park Foundation.

Among honors that have come to Rumsfeld are the Distinguished Eagle Scout Award (1975), the George Catlett Marshall Award (1984), the Woodrow Wilson Award (1985), the Dwight Eisenhower Medal (1993), and many honorary degrees. In 1977, he was awarded the nation's highest civilian award, the Presidential Medal of Freedom.

Rumsfeld married Joyce Pierson in 1954. They have three children and several grandchildren. Rumsfeld has a ranch in Taos, New Mexico, where he skis and sometimes ropes cattle.

**Books**


**Periodicals**


**Online**


Edith Sampson

Edith Sampson (c. 1901–1979) became America’s first African American female judge after succeeding as a social worker, a lawyer, and an international advocate for democracy and free market trade. As a representative of the State Department during the Cold War, Sampson traveled around the world, defending the United States against Soviet propaganda. As a judge, she was known as a compassionate, efficient, and powerful mediator.

Trained as Social Worker

Sampson was born Edith Spurlock in Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania, on October 13, but the exact year is unknown. It was probably earlier than 1901, because some sources say her younger brother was born in 1900. She was one of eight children born to Louis Spurlock and Elizabeth McGruder Spurlock. Louis Spurlock was a shipping clerk in a cleaning and dying business. Elizabeth Spurlock worked at home making buckram hat frames and switches of false hair. The family worked hard, owned its own home, attended church, and obeyed the law. Sampson told Readers Digest, “I suppose we were poor, but we never knew it. We wore hand-me-down clothes, and we all worked.”

At age 14, Sampson left school and got her first full-time job, cleaning and deboning fish in a fish market. She eventually resumed her education, earned good grades, and graduated from Peabody High School.

After Sampson graduated, her Sunday school teacher helped her get a job with Associated Charities, a New York social work organization. Associated Charities arranged for her to attend the New York School of Social Work. There, she excelled in a criminology class taught by George W. Kirchwey of Columbia University School of Law. He told her she would make a good attorney and advised her to enroll in law school. Instead, Sampson completed her social work degree.

Excelled in Law School

After she graduated from college, Sampson married Rufus Sampson, a field agent for the Tuskegee Institute, and the couple moved to Chicago. Sampson worked with the Illinois Children’s Home and Aid Society and the Young Women’s Christian Association (YWCA). She worked with neglected and abused children, placing them in foster and adoptive homes. When Kirchwey passed through Chicago to deliver a speech, her former instructor again encouraged her to pursue a law career. This time, she followed his advice and enrolled in the John Marshall Law School, attending classes at night while working full-time as a social worker. She excelled in law school and received a special dean’s commendation for ranking highest among the 95 students in her jurisprudence class.

Eventually, her marriage to Rufus Sampson ended in divorce, but she retained his name throughout her life. She never had children of her own but raised her sister’s two children after her sister died.

Sampson received her bachelor of law degree in 1925 and took the bar exam but failed. She attributed the failure to overconfidence and later said failing the exam was the best thing that could have happened because it motivated her to work harder. She enrolled at Loyola University law
school and in 1927 became the first woman to earn a master of law degree from that university. That same year, she passed the bar exam and was admitted to the Illinois bar.

While in graduate school at Loyola, Sampson had worked as a probation officer. In 1927, she opened her own law firm on the south side of Chicago while also working as a referee for the Juvenile Court of Cook County. She said working with the court taught her the practical side of law. Her law firm specialized in criminal law and domestic relations, offering legal advice to many poor, African American people who could not otherwise afford it.

In 1934, Sampson was admitted to practice before the U.S. Supreme Court. She was one of the first African American women to earn this distinction. In 1938, she and Georgia Jones Ellis became the first African Americans to join the Chicago chapter of the National Association of Women Lawyers. Sampson joined many other professional and civic organizations, including the League of Women Voters, the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP), and the National Council of Negro Women. In 1947, Sampson was appointed assistant state's attorney of Cook County.

In 1934, Sampson married attorney Joseph Clayton. The couple worked as law partners for more than ten years. Clayton died in 1957.

**Anti-Communist Spokeswoman**

During the late 1940s, when Sampson was serving as chairwoman of the executive committee of the National Council of Negro Women, she was selected to represent the group in a 72-day world lecture tour. The tour included representatives of various American groups who spoke out on current problems in radio broadcasts called “America’s Town Meeting of the Air.” Its purpose was to promote American democracy, countering Soviet Cold War propaganda.

Sampson overcame stage fright during the tour and spoke eloquently about democracy. She was often confronted with difficult questions about U.S. civil rights. The Soviet Union used America’s record of racial discrimination as a tool against the United States. Sampson countered many misconceptions about African American people in America. She later commented that people seemed to think that African Americans were living behind barbed wire. Sampson pointed out the progress African Americans had made since emancipation and emphasized that she was a powerful example of a successful, educated African American.

When people criticized the United States for its civil rights record, she acknowledged problems, but defended democracy for what it offered African Americans. The New York Times reported that at one stop she quieted a heckler when she said, “You ask, do we get fair treatment? My answer is no. Just the same, I’d rather be a Negro in America than a citizen of any other country. In the past century we have made more progress than dark-skinned people anywhere else in the world.”

During a speech Sampson made in Pakistan, the prime minister’s wife collected $5,000 to offset Sampson’s tour costs. Sampson graciously accepted the gift, then promptly donated it to the League of Pakistani Women for charitable work.

When the tour ended in 1950, the World Town Hall Seminar became a permanent organization to promote democracy around the world, and Sampson was named its president. The trip changed her life. Although she still practiced law, it was no longer the sole focus of her career. She devoted herself to promoting peace and world unity.

**Worked With United Nations**

Sampson’s work with the World Town Hall Seminar caught the attention of President Harry S. Truman, who appointed her an alternate delegate to the fifth regular session of the General Assembly of the United Nations. She was the first African American woman to be named an official American representative to the U.N. She served on the U.N.’s Social, Humanitarian and Cultural Committee, which worked for land reform, reparation of prisoners, repatriation of Greek children, and efforts to stop governments’ jamming of radio broadcasts. She was reappointed alternate delegate in 1952 and later was named member-at-large of the U.S. Commission for United Nations Educational, Scientific and Cultural Organization (UNESCO) during President Dwight Eisenhower’s administration.

Sampson served as a spokesperson for the State Department throughout the 1950s. She visited Europe, the Middle East, and South America, addressing the status of African Americans. Ebony magazine called her “one of the coun-
try’s most potent weapons against Communist distortion of the Negro’s status in the U.S.’” Sampson strongly criticized Soviet distortions of the lives of African Americans. She once told Soviet U.N. delegate Andrey Vyshinsky, “We Negroes aren’t interested in communism. We were slaves too long for that.”

Sampson acknowledged racial discrimination in her speeches, but she chose to emphasize the positive aspects of democracy for African American people. She described a 1950 trip to Austria with Ebony magazine: “There were times when I had to bow my head in shame when talking about how some Negroes have been treated in the United States. . . . But I could truthfully point out that these cases, bad as they are, are the exceptions—the Negro got justice for every one where justice was denied. I could tell them that Negroes have a greater opportunity in America to work out their salvation than anywhere else in the world.”

In 1961 and 1962, Sampson was appointed to serve on the United States Citizens Commission on the North Atlantic Treaty Organization (NATO). In 1964 and 1965, she was a member of the U.S. Advisory Committee on Private Enterprise in Foreign Aid.

**Pioneered as Judge**

Sampson was a friend and supporter of Chicago Mayor Richard Daley. This relationship helped her when she ran for a judgeship and Chicago African American leader William Dawson opposed her. In 1962, Sampson became the first African American female judge in the United States when she was elected associate to the Municipal Court of Chicago. She handled divorce, custody, and other domestic disputes. She was known as a mediator who tried at all times to preserve families.

In 1966, Sampson was elected to a seat on the Circuit Court of Cook County, where she heard landlord-tenant disputes. She was the first African American woman to hold this position. She served poor neighborhoods of Chicago and quickly moved to clear up a huge backlog on the court docket, hearing as many as 10,000 cases a year. Although she handled cases quickly, she took an interest in the parties, offering social services referrals when needed. She tried to avoid evicting tenants if it was clear that they could not afford to pay their rent.

Some civil rights leaders criticized Sampson, saying that she downplayed the barriers African Americans faced and did not sufficiently support the country’s civil rights movement. Sampson described her philosophy in Reader’s Digest: “Don’t tear down the old homestead until you have a clear idea of what you’ll build in its place. Just because you are impatient with moving at only five miles an hour, it doesn’t follow that accelerating to 150 will solve your problems. We are beginning to move. We haven’t reached cruising speed yet; but we are moving toward a better America at an ever-increasing pace.”

Sampson received several honorary degrees, including a doctor of law degree from the John Marshall Law School. She retired from the bench in 1978. Her favorite pastimes included interior decorating, playing canasta, canning preserves, and making jelly. Although she had no children, she was very close to her nieces and nephews. Two of her nephews became judges: Oliver Spurlock of Chicago and Charles T. Spurlock of Boston. Sampson died on October 8, 1979, in Chicago.

**Books**


**Periodicals**


**Online**


---

**Sanapia**

Sanapia (1895–1979) was a Comanche medicine woman whose healing practices were documented by graduate student David E. Jones in the early 1970s. Sanapia did not begin practicing as a doctor until after she reached menopause. She had received her training from her mother and maternal uncle while still a young girl.

**Powerful Forebearers**

Although it is impossible to trace the origin of the Comanche tribe, there are indications that it first emerged in present-day Wyoming, between the Yellowstone and Platte Rivers. According to legend, two groups of the tribe disagreed about how to divide up a slain animal and decided to separate. One group went north, where it became known as the Shoshone. The other turned east and south and became the Comanche.

Sanapia, whose Christian name was Mary Poafpybitty, was born in the spring of 1895 in a tepee pitched near Fort Sill, Oklahoma. Her family had travelled to Fort Sill to obtain rations. Because she was unsure of the actual date of her birth, Sanapia later adopted an arbitrary date of May 20, 1895. The sixth of eleven children born to her Comanche father David Poafpybitty and Comanche-Arapaho mother Chappy Poafpybitty, Sanapia grew up with five older brothers, three younger brothers, and two younger sisters.

Among the Comanche, it was believed that religious power could be obtained from a supernatural being through dreams. Sanapia’s mother and maternal uncle were both Comanche shamans or eagle doctors. Sanapia’s maternal uncle was also active in the Comanche peyote cult. Her paternal grandfather was a Comanche chief, and her mother’s brother was an Arapaho chief.
Sanapia's mother refused to accept white culture and would not even speak English in a white man's presence. Sanapia's father, however, became a Christian. After he embraced Christianity, he turned his back on his Comanche heritage, and although he never directly attacked the old Comanche beliefs, he ignored or withdrew from them. But Sanapia did not recall any instances of her father interfering with her mother's Indian healing or peyote practices.

Sanapia was also raised with the help of her maternal grandmother, who made sure Sanapia learned the old ways and old stories. As a result, Sanapia was exposed to the Christian ideas of her father, her uncle's peyote practices, and her mother's vision quests as an eagle doctor.

Eagle doctors identified the eagle as their source of power. According to Sanapia's account of the origin of eagle doctors, a stingy old woman's grandson turned himself into an eagle after his grandmother refused to give him food. He then flew into the sky and dropped a feather with the promise that whoever found it would have his help whenever he or she needed it to help other people.

**Training as Eagle Doctor**

At the age of seven, Sanapia began attending Cache Creek Mission School in southern Oklahoma. Her attendance at the school marked her first prolonged contact with white society. During her summer vacations, she learned to identify herbal medicines as part of her training to become a medicine woman.

At the age of 14, Sanapia left school. She spent the next three years studying with her mother and uncle, acquiring the knowledge of an eagle doctor. Sanapia also learned the rituals associated with the collection of certain plants and methods for turning the plants into usable medicine. She was taught to administer the medicines and to diagnose and treat illnesses. She also had long talks with her mother and uncle about the proper deportment of a doctor. By the time she was 17, she had all the skills, knowledge, and supernatural powers she would need to become a medicine woman.

During her training, Sanapia was watched over by her mother, her maternal uncle, her grandmother, and her paternal grandfather. Each of these individuals had to give Sanapia his or her blessing before she would be allowed to practice. While her mother assumed responsibility for Sanapia's training as a doctor, her maternal grandmother and paternal grandfather taught her the proper system of values, morals, and ethics.

**Transmission of Power**

The eagle doctor's powers were believed to be concentrated in the doctor's hands and mouth. In the first phase of power transmission, Sanapia's mother transferred live coals into her daughters' hand without burning her. Then her mother drew two eagle feathers across Sanapia's mouth. In the second phase, her mother inserted an “eagle egg” into Sanapia's stomach. In the next phase, Sanapia acquired her medicine song. The culmination of Sanapia's training as an eagle doctor was her participation in a vision quest—four days and nights of solitary meditation.

After Sanapia's mother explained to her what was involved in the vision quest, including encounters with supernatural spirits, Sanapia was too frightened to go through with it. Although she spent the days of the quest sitting on the hill where her mother had sent her, she returned to her house at night and slept under the front porch. In the morning, she would go back to the hill without her mother or uncle knowing what she had done. Sanapia later attributed her suffering as a young woman to this deception.

Shortly after the vision quest, Sanapia's mother gave up doctoring, convinced that she had transmitted her skills and powers to her daughter. Sanapia was not expected to become a doctor for many more years, however, until she had reached menopause.

**Marriages and Troubles**

Having completed her training, Sanapia was considered ready for marriage. Her husband, a friend of her brother, was picked out by her mother. While Sanapia had no objections to the marriage, she was not in love with her spouse. After giving birth to a son, Sanapia left her husband at the urging of her mother. Within a year she was married again, to a husband she stayed with until his death in the 1930s. Her second marriage produced a son and daughter.

Following the death of her second husband, Sanapia drank excessively, engaged in promiscuous sex, and exhibited violent tantrums. She also acquired a taste for gambling. Informants attributed Sanapia's behavior at this time to her grief at the loss of her husband. Sanapia later referred to this time as her “roughing-it-out” period. During this phase of her life, one of Sanapia's sisters asked her to heal her sick child. The child recovered, and Sanapia took the recovery as a sign that she should begin doctoring.

**Eagle Doctor**

Some time around 1945, Sanapia married for the third time. She abandoned her problematic behavior and began doctoring seriously. Doctors were expected to lead exemplary lives, and any bad behavior was thought to bring disgrace on the doctor and on her medicine; in the worst case, it could even cause the doctor's death.

The doctor was expected to be always accessible and was not permitted to refuse to treat anyone. The doctor was not supposed to boast of her powers; to do so would be to deny that the doctor's power was a gift. The doctor was not allowed to approach a patient with the offer of a cure but was to wait for the patient to come to her. The amount of payment for services rendered was always left up to the patient.

After Sanapia began her healing practice, she began to have “real” dreams, which she distinguished from ordinary dreams by their power to change her behavior. These dreams frequently dealt with the peyote ritual. But Sanapia considered the power of peyote subordinate to the power possessed by the spirits of her mother and uncle. She considered peyote a gift of the Christian God to the Indian people.
Ghost Sickness

Sanapia felt that ghosts were probably the spirits of evil persons who had died and who were destined to wander the earth forever. The ghosts were believed to be jealous of the living. (The spirits of good people who had died were believed to reside in another realm.) According to Comanche beliefs, ghosts had the power to deform their victims by causing facial contractions or hand and arm paralysis. Ghosts were believed to attack people when the victims were outside and alone at night. According to Sanapia, ghost sickness was called “stroke” by white people, but she nevertheless made a distinction between the two ailments and would not treat a stroke victim.

According to David E. Jones, writing in Sanapia, Comanche Medicine Woman, a more closely drawn analysis suggests that ghost sickness actually corresponds to Bell’s palsy, a paralysis of the muscles on one side of the face. Bell’s palsy, which results from an inflammation of the facial nerve, has a sudden onset that typically occurs at the time of awakening. The modern treatment may involve facial massage. Although Bell’s palsy is the most common cause of facial paralysis, its cause is unknown.

In treating ghost sickness, Sanapia initially had her patient bathe in a stream. Following prayers in which she asked the eagle to help heal her patient, Sanapia “smoked” the patient with cedar smoke. She then chewed recumbent milkweed and applied it to the parts of the patient’s body that exhibited the ghost sickness. She then began sucking on the contorted part of the patient’s face to draw out the sickness.

If the patient had not responded to three treatments by the end of the first day, Sanapia called a peyote meeting, and the patient was given a tea made from the peyote plant. The tea was also applied to the patient’s head, hands. Applications of sweet sage and charcoal from the peyote drum followed.

Sanapia’s last resort was to invoke the intercession of the medicine eagle. To do so, she sang her medicine song repeatedly until she felt the spirits had come to her. At that point, she returned to the patient and continued doctoring, using only her medicine feather and smoke. She did not touch the patient at this point, for fear that she might kill him. By this time, the treatment would have lasted three days.

Sanapia’s Pharmacopoeia

Sanapia’s medicine kit consisted of both botanical and non-botanical medicines. Botanical cures included red cedar to dispel the influence of ghosts; sneezeweed to treat heart palpitations, low blood pressure and congestion; mescal bean for ear problems; rye grass for the treatment of cataracts; prickly ash to treat fever; iris for colds, upset stomachs and sore throats; gray sage for insect bites; sweet sage for use in the sucking ceremony; recumbent milkweed for ghost sickness, broken bones, and menstrual cramps; and broomweed for treatment of skin rashes. Peyote was Sanapia’s medicine of general use; it was employed in the treatment of any type of illness, and she kept several peyote buttons with her at all times.

Non-botanical medicines included crow feathers to protect against ghosts; slivers of glass to make incisions; a piece of cow horn used in sucking sickness from the bodies of her patients; charcoal from a peyote drum to retard the spread of pain and swelling; white otter fur and porcupine quills to treat infants; fossilized bone to treat wounds and infections; a Bible to help in her quest for power; a medicine feather from a golden eagle to fan her patients; beef fat to treat burns; mouth wash to kill poisons that entered her mouth while sucking, and red paint for treating ghost sickness.

According to the doctoring tradition of her people, the medicine power needed to be transferred to someone willing and worthy of the responsibility. It is unclear whether or not Sanapia forwarded her power to a successor. Perhaps out of a concern that she would be unable to pass her power on to the next generation, Sanapia allowed anthropologist David E. Jones to record the details of her life and the medicine tradition beginning in 1967. The result was several articles and a book (Sanapia, Comanche Medicine Woman). Sanapia died in 1984 in Oklahoma and was buried in the Comanche Indian cemetery near Chandler Creek, Oklahoma.

Books

Online

Alexander Schindler

Rabbi Alexander Schindler (1925–2000) thought he was going to be an engineer. But when he saw Jews emerging from Dachau in Germany—a concentration camp—at the end of World War II, his plans changed. He returned to the United States to a lifelong pursuit of religion and social studies, becoming one of the most prominent Jewish figures of the century. He became a creating force in Reform Judaism—leading the movement for over a quarter of a century—and innovatively offered Judaism to whoever might be interested.

Growing Up

Schindler was born on October 4, 1925, in Munich, Germany, to a Hasidic, Yiddish poet, Eliezer Schindler, and his wife, Sali. When Schindler was 12 years old, the boy and his family fled Germany and the Nazi regime and settled in New York City around 1937.
Schindler studied engineering until he enrolled as a United States soldier in World War II. He found his way into the Alpine Patrol ski troops in Europe as a corporal and said at the National Museum of American Jewish History website, "We fought our way through the Apennines." Schindler distinguished himself in war with three combat ribbons for bravery, a Purple Heart, and a Bronze Star.

Life Changed

Schindler was overseas near the Yugoslav border when the war ended. A forward observer for the artillery, he borrowed a jeep from his captain and went to Germany to observe what had happened. Curious about his relatives in Germany, he traveled to Munich to find them. He ended up in Dachau, where the concentration camp was just releasing many of the Jewish prisoners. Schindler said at the Jewish History website, "It subconsciously had a great impact on my life's development."

When Schindler returned to the United States, he dropped his engineering studies to pursue social studies and social sciences as well as Jewish studies, Jewish history, Yiddish, and Hebrew. He entered City College (College of the City of New York) and graduated in 1949. Meanwhile, he involved himself at the Jewish Theological Seminary, Hebrew Union College—the Reform Judaism movement's seminary—and the New School. He was studying society and Judaism "in [an]... effort, I suppose, to find out why [the Holocaust] happened," Schindler shared at the Jewish History website.

Early Career

In 1953, Schindler graduated from Hebrew Union College's Jewish Institute of Religion in Cincinnati, Ohio, with a Masters in Hebrew Letters and a rabbinical ordination. He took on his first congregation in 1953—Temple Emanuel in Worcester, Massachusetts—and spent six years there honoring his Reform convictions. Schindler met 24-year-old Rhea Rosenblum during his appointment in Worcester. He proposed marriage to her the day that they met, but she left, as previously planned, for Israel soon after. Upon her return, Schindler and Rosenblum married on September 29, 1956.

The Schindlers moved to Boston in 1959, where Schindler founded the New England Coalition of Reform Synagogues, propelling him into leadership in the national Reform Movement. Soon after relocation to New York, Schindler was appointed director of the Union of American Hebrew Congregations (UAHC) New England regional office. By 1963, Schindler was the national director of education for the UAHC in Manhattan; by 1967, he was the vice president of the UAHC; and by 1973, he was the president. Schindler would serve in this position for more than 20 years and use it as a springboard to reach many Americans and many Jews worldwide.

Controversial Reforms

The Interfaith Family website noted, Schindler "[viewed] Judaism as a dynamic faith that evolved through its dialogue with tradition." Schindler was a pioneer for justice and equality both inside and outside of the Jewish community. He helped carve a place for Reform Jews in the Jewish communities both in the United States and worldwide. He helped imbue Reform Judaism with respectability with his friend-winning personality, while at the same time making reforms that were often controversial and anti-mainstream.

Schindler fought for the equal treatment of Jewish gays and lesbians, helping secure a place for them in Reform Judaism temples. He worked hard for women's rights in the temple, as well. Early during his time of leadership with the UAHC, the first woman rabbi was ordained. Schindler also fought for women's rights outside the Jewish faith. He had a passion for people with physical handicaps and worked to have hearing assistance devices installed in temples, as well as other modifications to aid the physically handicapped. Schindler also worked for the causes of the poor and those inhibited by racism.

Most importantly, Schindler helped to enlarge the sphere of Jewish outreach, not only through his work with the gay and lesbian communities, but through outreach to traditionally shunned members of the "Jewish family." In 1978, Schindler enacted the "Outreach" program which targeted spouses of Jews, aiming to have them accepted—and their Jewish spouses restored—to the Jewish faith. This move, along with others, reversed more-than-500-year-old traditions against proselytizing. Schindler was known to welcome any honest soul into the Jewish way of life. One of Schindler's most controversial actions was to reach out to patrilinage descendants of Jews. Traditionally, only matrilineal descendancy was accepted as true Jewishness, but
Schindler would embrace any child of a Jew who was given a proper Jewish education.

An online Interfaith Family article claimed that “Schindler built the [Reform Judaism] movement into one of the most vigorous forces in American religious life. He was renowned for his unrelenting commitment to issues of peace, social justice, and equality.” Juli Cragg Hilliard quoted Schindler in Sarasota Herald Tribune as having said, “Social activism is part of God’s mandate to congregations.” Schindler certainly took his own advice seriously and ended up changing the face of Judaism in America.

Other Accomplishments

In the political arena, Schindler was deeply involved. He said to Hilliard, “Religion and politics are inextricable.” In the late 1970s he served as Chairman of the Conference of Presidents of Major Jewish Organizations. The coalition led Jewish bodies to act as a liaison between the United States and Israeli governments. Schindler also became a confidant of Israeli Prime Minister Menachem Begin. His work with the Israeli peace process led him to be awarded the Rubick Prize of Hebrew University. Schindler also worked to get Switzerland and other countries to return property stolen from Jews during the Holocaust. Schindler claimed that the displaced Jews needed restoration as a matter of principle but also to rectify the fact that many of them were living lives of “destitution.” Begin was quoted on the Interfaith Family website calling Schindler one “who has written his name into the pages of the Jewish people’s story of freedom, dignity, and strength.”

Schindler authored and oversaw the publication of the first Torah commentary in the Reform tradition, The Torah: A Modern Commentary. He also served on various committees and organizations, including president of the International Memorial Foundation for Jewish Culture, vice president of the World Jewish Congress, Co-Chairman on the Commission on East-West Relations for the World Jewish Congress, representative for various sects of Judaism regarding peace in the Middle East, and lay leader for the Memorial Foundation. He also acted to further the work of Reform Judaism’s social program and the Reform Judaism Reform Action Center in Washington, D.C. His work for Jewish equal rights culminated in the founding of the Association of Reform Zionists of America (ARZA). A Jewish National Fund forest of 500,000 trees in Israel bears his name. Schindler retired from many of his committee duties in the 1990s—including the presidency of the UAHC in 1996—but maintained an involved schedule. He said to Hilliard, “Retirement, I think, is a problem only for people who have forgotten how to start anew.”

Schindler had a history of plaguing cardiac complaints and suffered two heart attacks, one in the 1960s and one in the 1980s while visiting Masada, Israel. He died at his Westport, Connecticut, home on November 15, 2000, from a coronary arrest in his sleep. He died before waking. Schindler had recently celebrated his 75th birthday and was still serving as president of the Memorial Foundation for Jewish Culture and vice president of the World Jewish Congress. He left behind him his wife of 44 years, Rhea Rosenblum Schindler; children Elisa Ruth, Debra Lee, Jonathan David, Joshua Michael, and Rabbi Judith Rachel Schindler; and 9 grandchildren.

Periodicals


Online


Olive Schreiner

Author of what most consider the first great novel—The Story of an African Farm—to come out of South Africa, Olive Schreiner (1855–1920) is perhaps equally well remembered as an eloquent spokesman for feminist and pacifist causes. Plagued by asthma and severe bouts of depression throughout her life, Schreiner campaigned vigorously against the more predatory aspects of Cecil Rhodes’s imperialist philosophy and the British role in the Anglo-Boer War of 1892–1902. Schreiner also set herself apart with her brazen rejection of the prevailing code of Victorian decorum, particularly as it applied to the women of her time.

Largely self-educated, Schreiner read voraciously and was particularly influenced by the writings of naturalist Charles Darwin and philosophers Herbert Spencer and John Stuart Mill. Adopting a progressive outlook on life, she rejected the generally accepted gender roles of her era and advocated “an equality of shared labor between men and women,” according to Ruth First and Ann Scott, co-authors of Olive Schreiner. Although Schreiner first gained attention as a novelist, most of the writings published during her lifetime consisted of social and political essays, including her controversial feminist credo, as outlined in Women and Labour.

Experienced Difficult Childhood

Schreiner was born Olive Emilie Albertina Schreiner at Wittenbergen Mission Station in the South African territory of Basutoland (now the country of Lesotho) on March 24, 1855. The ninth of 12 children born into an impoverished missionary family, she had an unsettled childhood of great
hardship. Traveling with her family from post to post, Schreiner experienced little permanency in her early years. The family’s difficulties worsened when her father, Gottlieb, a Boer, was expelled from the London Missionary Society for supplementing his meager missionary salary with income from private trading transactions. Schreiner’s mother, English-born Rebecca Lyndall, was also a missionary. Because their father was hard-pressed to support his large family, 11-year-old Olive and her 9-year-old brother Will were sent to live in Cradock, a town in South Africa’s Cape Colony. There they lived with their older brother, Theo, who was the headmaster of a school in Cradock. It was just the first stop for Schreiner, who spent the next several years boarding with family and friends.

Although she received no formal education to speak of, Schreiner read extensively, happily digesting the contents of every book she could find. At the age of 15, already depressed by the sudden death of a younger sister, Schreiner rejected the strict religious principles of her parents. By 1872, the 17-year-old Schreiner had found an informal position as a governess for a family in Dordrecht, a village in South Africa’s Eastern Cape. While working in Dordrecht, Schreiner experienced her first love affair—a brief dalliance with Swiss businessman Julius Gau. She ended the affair and once again moved in with brother Theo, who had since relocated to South Africa’s diamond fields. Shortly thereafter, Schreiner began working full time as a governess for wealthy Boer families in the Cape Colony. During her free time, she wrote. During 1874 and 1875, Schreiner largely completed work on three novels, Undine, which was published posthumously in 1929; The Story of an African Farm, published in London in 1883; and Man to Man, also published posthumously in 1924.

First Novel Published in England

In 1881, Schreiner left South Africa for England, where she hoped to become a nurse and get her novels published. She was forced to give up her dream of becoming a nurse when an asthmatic condition from her days in the diamond fields became chronic not long after she relocated. She did, however, continue her search for a publisher that might be interested in her writing. In 1882, Schreiner’s semi-autobiographical The Story of an African Farm was accepted for publication by Chapman and Hall of London with the proviso that it appear under the pseudonym, Ralph Irons, to overcome the prevailing bias of the era against women authors. Although the novel, first published in 1883, stirred considerable controversy with its liberal views on marriage and religion, it was widely acclaimed as the first realistic description of life in South Africa. It was eight years before the true identity of the book’s author could be revealed when a second edition was published in 1891.

Schreiner’s novel examines in detail the lives of two orphaned cousins. One, Em, is a fairly traditional young woman, who feels her happiness will be complete when she has found a husband and become a mother. The other, Lyndall (the character thought to represent Schreiner) is an outspoken, sometimes stubborn embodiment of the “New Woman” ideal who refuses to marry her lover after he impregnates her. Although Lyndall and her child eventually die, the rebellious cousin’s hopes for the future remain intact. “In the future ... perhaps,” Schreiner wrote, “perhaps, to be born a woman will not be to be born branded.”

Joined London’s Inner Circles

Although the true identity of the novel’s author was kept from the public until 1891, Schreiner’s accomplishment was well known to a small group of England’s prominent, young socialists, who quickly welcomed the South African author into their inner circle. Members of this exclusive group included Edward Carpenter, George Bernard Shaw, W.E. Gladstone, and Eleanor Marx. Another close associate of Schreiner during her years in England was noted “sexologist” Havelock Ellis, with whom Schreiner had a brief love affair. Although the affair was over almost before it began, Ellis and Schreiner remained lifelong friends. In 1885 Schreiner was invited to join the Men’s and Women’s Club, an exclusive discussion group headed by Karl Pearson, a one-time attorney who had taken up a second career as a professor of mathematics. Smitten by Pearson, Schreiner tried unsuccessfully to take their friendship to a higher level. Frustrated by Pearson’s lack of response, she set off on a tour of England, France, Germany, and Italy. During her travels she began work on From Man to Man, a novel she never was able to finish. In 1889 a brief romantic relationship with novelist-poet Amy Levy ended in tragedy when Levy committed suicide.

Increasingly troubled by her asthmatic condition, Schreiner in 1889 returned to South Africa, settling in the country’s pollution-free central high plateau known as the Karoo. Through her brother, William, who was then attorney general in the Cape Colony government of Cecil Rhodes, she met and developed a close friendship with the controversial prime minister. The friendship was to last only a few years, ending in 1892 when the two became locked in a bitter dispute over the future direction of South Africa’s political and social development.

Married Ostrich Farmer

Less than two years after her split with Rhodes, Schreiner married ostrich farmer Samuel “Cron” Cronwright, who shared many of her convictions and was extremely supportive of her writing career. Although Schreiner retained her maiden name, her husband took the joint surname Cronwright-Schreiner, perhaps hoping to trade on his wife’s growing fame as an author. Cronwright worked at a variety of jobs—including farmer, estate agent, and land dealer—before being elected in 1902 to a seat in the parliament of the Cape Colony. In April 1895, Schreiner gave birth to a daughter, who died only 16 hours later, setting off a deep depression in the author. In 1897, Schreiner published Trooper Peter Halkett of Mashonaland, an anti-war allegory extremely critical of Britain’s imperialism and racism in South Africa. Convinced that Rhodes was likely to push South Africa into war, Schreiner wrote An English South African’s View of the Situation, an impassioned plea to head off a conflict between the majority Afrikaners and
the British. But her plea fell on deaf ears. The Anglo–Boer War of 1899–1902 was a difficult period for Schreiner. For her outspoken support of the Afrikaner cause, she was interned by the British for more than a year. Even more devastating was the burning of her house, in which were stored all her manuscripts, including the notes for her feminist credo Women and Labour.

Released from detention by the British at the end of the war, Schreiner feverishly struggled to reconstruct her notes for Women and Labour. When the book was finally published in 1911, it quickly developed into the “bible” of the early-20th-century feminist movement. Although Schreiner expressed some disappointment with her final product, the book was widely acclaimed as an important statement of feminist aspirations. In the book, Schreiner, a strong supporter of universal suffrage who in 1908 founded the Women’s Enfranchisement League in Cape Town, argued that the vote was “a weapon, by which the weak may be able to defend themselves against the strong, the poor against the weak.” In making her case that there was essentially no difference between the productive potential of men and women, Schreiner wrote: “When all the branches of productive labor be considered, the value of the labor of the two halves of humanity will be found so identical and so closely to balance that no superiority can possibly be asserted to either as the result of the closest analysis.”

**Develoeped a Heart Condition**

The asthma that had plagued Schreiner for years eventually led her to develop a heart condition. In 1914 she made plans to visit Italy for treatment but was forced at the last minute to divert to England after war was declared. She remained in England for the entirety of World War I, working on a new book that examined pacifism within a feminist and socialist moral framework. During the war she also championed the rights of conscientious objectors. In the early fall of 1920, convinced that death was near, Schreiner returned to South Africa, where she suffered a heart attack and died on December 11, 1920. Before her death, she had requested that her remains, along with those of her infant daughter and longtime pet dog, be entombed on a mountain in the Karoo, not far from Cradock. Schreiner’s husband, Samuel Cronwright, saw that this wish was carried out.

Cronwright, Schreiner’s sole heir and the executor of her will, was, however, less faithful in discharging some of his late wife’s other requests. In her will, Schreiner had insisted that only a select few of her unpublished works be submitted for publication. Specifically, she expressed the wish that only The Child’s Day and a series of essays under the general title of Stray Thoughts on South Africa be published. Cronwright, from whom Schreiner had long been estranged though never divorced, decided instead to submit a number of her other works to publishers, hoping that he might continue to profit from his wife’s celebrity. Under his direction, Schreiner’s From Man to Man, or Perhaps Only was published in 1926. The book, a collection of essays outlining Schreiner’s political and sociological philosophies, dealt with a wide variety of subjects, including the exploitation of women in prostitution and marriage, the promise of sisterhood, the importance of death within the context of life, and the moral obligation of whites to promote anti-racism in their dealings with blacks. Potentially even more damaging to Schreiner’s legacy was the publication in 1928, authorized by Cronwright, of Undine, the unfinished first novel written by the author.

Despite Cronwright’s callous disregard of Schreiner’s last wishes, the author’s reputation appears to have survived unscarred. She will be long remembered not only for her writing but for her unwavering commitment to feminist and pacifist causes. Schreiner’s ultimate goal is perhaps expressed best through the voice of Lyndall, the author’s heroine in The Story of an African Farm, who argued that “the world will never come right, till . . . the female element of the race makes its influence felt.”

**Books**

*Contemporary Authors*, Gale Group, 2000.

**Online**


**Charlotte Angas Scott**

British-born Charlotte Angas Scott (1858–1931) was pivotal in the development of mathematics education in the United States. She was among the first faculty members at Bryn Mawr College and the school’s first head mathematics teacher. She devised the curriculum at the college and standardized minimum mathematics requirements nationally through the College Entrance Examination Board. She also helped organize the American Mathematical Society.
Uphill Battle to Learn Math

Scott was born on June 8, 1858, in Lincoln, England. She was the daughter of the Reverend Caleb and Eliza Ann Exley Scott. Her father was president of Lancashire College, located near Manchester, England. He was also a Congregationalist minister. Her grandfather was also an educator. Both men were social reformers and presidents of Congregational Church colleges. Scott, one of seven children, was tutored in mathematics beginning at age seven by students from her father’s school.

In that era, women were not encouraged to seek anything beyond a basic education. The prevailing wisdom was that intellectual pursuits would damage a young woman’s health and marital prospects. Despite this, her family wanted Scott to have a university education and encouraged her academically from a young age.

Scott was awarded a scholarship to Hitchin College (now Girton College, the women’s division of Cambridge University). There were only ten other women in her class, and they were forced to sit behind a screen that separated them from the male students and obscured their view of the blackboard. Unescorted women found on the school grounds could be carted to the Spinning House, a prison for prostitutes.

But during Scott’s stay at the university, conditions were changing. Starting in 1872, undergraduate women were allowed to take the 50-hour-long oral examinations for third-year students in mathematics on an informal basis. Scott took the examination in January 1880 and placed eighth among all students. University policy was not to reveal the results, but word of her accomplishment spread. Scott was not recognized at the awards ceremony, save by a few young men who shouted “Scott of Girton!” when her name should have been read. Women were not permitted to be at the commencement exercises, but Scott was reportedly “crowned with laurels” in a private ceremony.

“Her spectacular achievement in a ‘man’s field’ sparked a movement that culminated in a resolution enabling all resident women to take Cambridge examinations and to have their names publicly announced with those of men,” wrote Patricia C. Kenschaft in The College Mathematics Journal in 1987. Cambridge allowed women to take examinations with the male students beginning in February 1881.

Earned Pioneering Degree

Scott continued her studies at the University of London under Arthur Cayley, her doctoral adviser and mentor. Scott began attending his lectures in 1880. “Students had to pay extra to attend university lectures,” noted Kenschaft, quoting from a Girton administrator, “and as the daughter of a Congregationalist minister, she was probably poor, but she could go as a chaperone to students without paying.”

Scott received her bachelor of science degree in mathematics from the University of London in 1882. She attended Cambridge for nine years, but Cambridge did not award degrees to women until 1948. She also lectured at Girton until 1894. Her studies concentrated on algebraic geometry, specifically, analyzing singularities in algebraic curves. Scott was the first British woman and the second woman in the world to be awarded a doctoral degree in this field.

Started Bryn Mawr Career

Scott left England for the United States in 1885. That year, the Society of Friends opened Bryn Mawr College in Pennsylvania. It was the first women’s college to offer graduate degrees. Cayley’s recommendation helped Scott get a teaching appointment. The college’s executive committee noted in its discussion of hiring Scott that Cayley had given her “a high recommendation for her attainments and her capacity for original work. [The] Mistress of Girton College testifies to C.A. Scott’s popularity as a teacher, her success in organizing the mathematical department of the College, and her personal courtesy and friendliness to students.” The report added that she “has two defects—she is decidedly hard of hearing, and is in delicate health. Yet neither of these has thus far proved a bar to her being a really able teacher.”

Scott joined the faculty as an associate professor of mathematics, the only woman on the six-person faculty when the college opened. She soon became instrumental in beefing up the school’s admissions criteria. Scott pushed for entering students to have basic competency in mathematics, including courses in arithmetic, algebra—including studies of quadratic equations and geometrical progressions—and plane geometry. Those students unable
to pass admissions examinations in solid geometry and trigonometry were required to pass classes on these subjects prior to graduation.

Scott became a professor of mathematics in 1888. In 1891, she became an active member of the New York Mathematical Society (later the American Mathematical Society).

In a letter she wrote to the president of Bryn Mawr in 1918, her conservative upbringing was apparent: “Now I object very much to smoking by women. . . . But also I hold a strong objection to any discrimination between members of the teaching staff as men or women. . . . I grant that the example is bad for the students; but I am not convinced that the boils that may arise from this discrimination are not fully as serious. May I add that I think fully as undesirable an example is set to the students by certain foolish young women on our teaching staff whose ‘make up’ is so conspicuous? I certainly was taken aback the other day to see one of these, in our Faculty Cloakroom, renewing the make-up of the face between two classes.”

Scott founded the College Entrance Examination Board and was its chief examiner from 1902 to 1903. The policies she established have changed little since their adoption. Scott received Bryn Mawr’s first endowed chair in 1909.

Key Contributions to Mathematics

Scott published An Introductory Account of Certain Modern Ideas and Methods in Plane Analytical Geometry in 1894. This textbook was very important in its field. As Kenschaft explained, the book covered “such then recent concepts as groups, subgroups, invariants and covariants, and her treatment of projective geometry. . . . Since analytic geometry played a far more important role in the college curriculum then than now, the book had enormous impact. . . . Scott’s smaller book on ‘school’ geometry, which appeared in 1907, was not as successful because its innovations were not adopted by the mathematical public.”

She also contributed heavily to the then-new field of algebraic geometry through her work on singularities in algebraic curves. “Her specialty was interpreting all possible geometric manifestations of particular algebraic expressions of degree higher than two; that is, describing plane curves that were neither linear nor conics,” wrote Kenschaft.

Scott was named co-editor of the American Journal of Mathematics in 1899. She held the post until two years after her retirement. She also served on the Council of the American Mathematical Society and was its vice-president in 1905. Scott was active in various European mathematical societies including the London Mathematical Society and Deutsche Mathematiker-Vereinigung.

Throughout her career, Scott had an impressive amount of published articles, including eight papers published in European journals between 1896 and 1906. Her work was also cited frequently. Among Scott’s most notable achievements was her paper “A Proof of Noether’s Fundamental Theorem,” published in 1900 in a European mathematics journal.

Scott’s development of the mathematics program at Bryn Mawr into one that enjoyed a worldwide reputation was among her leading achievements. She was reportedly an excellent teacher who “had the rare gift of lucid explanation combined with an intuitive perception of just what the student could grasp,” according to Isabel Maddison, one of her students, quoted in Notable American Women, 1607–1950. “Nor did she spare any effort to help a stupid student who really tried, though she was ruthless with the lazy or casual.” Scott’s reputation attracted other female mathematicians to the school, including Emmy Noether and Anna Pell Wheeler. In one poll, her peers ranked her 14th among the world’s leading mathematicians.

Personal Life

Little is known about Scott outside her professional life. According to Notable Scientists: From 1900 to the Present, her “own personal life was . . . circumspect, clouded further by the fact that all her personal correspondence was apparently disposed of or lost.”

At first, she lived on the Bryn Mawr campus in a small apartment lined with her collection of books. Scott, who never married, eventually rented a house from the college, where she lived for 31 years. Her cousin Eliza Nevin stayed with her as a housekeeper and companion.

Despite Scott’s role as a trailblazer for women in colleges, she was not a staunch feminist. She believed men would give credit as due to intelligent women and did not want women’s education to differ from men’s.

“A friendship of peoples is the outcome of personal relations. A life’s work such as that of Professor Charlotte Angas Scott is worth more to the world than many anxious efforts of diplomatists,” said Alfred North Whitehead, the renowned English philosopher, speaking in 1922 at a meeting of the American Mathematical Society held in Scott’s honor at Bryn Mawr. An estimated 70 former students and an equal number of members of the American Mathematical Society gathered for the event. It was Whitehead’s first appearance in the United States, and he had reportedly turned down requests to speak at Columbia and Harvard during his visit, saying that he did not want to detract from the celebration for Scott. Whitehead said Scott “is a great example of the universal brotherhood of civilisations.”

Returned to England

Scott retired from her teaching career in 1925. After her retirement, she stayed on until her last doctoral student graduated. That student, Marguerite Lehr, succeeded Scott on the staff. Scott then spent her time traveling, visiting family and colleagues, and mentoring young women mathematicians. Eventually she returned to England.

Rheumatoid arthritis caused some health problems for Scott, as did a worsening deafness. When her doctor advised her to take up gardening to improve her health, Scott cultivated a new species of chrysanthemum. She also started playing golf.

Scott died on November 10, 1931, in Cambridge, England, at the age of 73. She was buried in a family plot in St.
Giles’s Churchyard next to Nevin, who had died in 1928. Her textbook on analytical geometry was reissued in 1961 as *Projective Methods in Plane Analytical Geometry*.

**Books**


**Periodicals**


**Online**


**Ntozake Shange**

When African American writer Ntozake Shange’s (born 1948) *for colored girls who have considered suicide/when the rainbow is enuf: a choreopoem* appeared on the theater scene in New York City in 1975, it achieved immense popularity. Ten years later, it was still being produced in various theaters throughout the United States. With this “choreopoem”—a performance piece made up of a combination of poems and dance—Shange introduced various themes and concerns that continue to characterize her writings and performances. Her works are often angry diatribes against social forces that contribute to the oppression of black women in the United States combined with a celebration of women’s self-fulfillment and spiritual survival.

Ntozake Shange was born Paulette Williams, the oldest of Paul and Eloise Owens Williams’s four children, on October 18, 1948, in Trenton, New Jersey. Shange experienced what Sandra L. Richards described in *African American Writers* as a “childhood blessed with material security and loving parents who traveled widely, maintained an international set of friends, and transmitted a pride in African and African American cultures.” Shange explained her parents’ influence to Claudia Tate: “My parents have always been especially involved in all kinds of Third World culture. We used to go to hear Latin music, jazz and symphonies, to see ballads. . . . I was always aware that there were different kinds of black people all over the world. . . . So I knew I wasn’t on this planet by myself. I had some connections with other people.”

The family moved to St. Louis, Missouri, in 1953 when Shange was five years old, and she was one of the first children to integrate the public school system. However, the young Shange rebelled at an early age against her parents’ middle-class complacency, identifying with the live-in domestic help who took care of her when she was a child. In 1961 the Williams family moved to Lawrenceville, New Jersey. At Morristown High School, Shange wrote poetry centered on black themes and subjects. Although she was published in the school magazine, her choice of subject matter was criticized, and she began to realize her need for black women role models. As she told Michele Wallace in the *Village Voice*, “There was nothing to aspire to, no one to honor. [Nineteenth-century civil rights advocate] Sojourner Truth wasn’t a big enough role model for me. I couldn’t go around abolishing slavery.”

In 1966 Shange enrolled at Barnard College and separated from her husband, a law student. She attempted suicide several times, frustrated by what Richards termed “a society that penalized intelligent, purposeful women.” Nonetheless, she graduated with honors in American Studies in 1970 and entered the University of Southern California at Los Angeles, where she earned a master’s degree in American Studies in 1973.
In 1971 Shange adopted her Zulu name: Ntozake means “she who comes with her own things,” and Shange translates as “one who walks with lions.” She explained to Allan Wailach in Newsday that the name change was due, in part, to her belief that she was “living a lie:” “[I was] living in a world that defied reality as most black people, or most white people, understood it—in other words, feeling that there was something that I could do, and then realizing that nobody was expecting me to do anything because I was colored and I was also female, which was not very easy to deal with.”

**Feminist Perspective**

Moving to California put Shange in touch with a feminist perspective. She related to Claudia Tate in Black Women Writers at Work that she didn’t “start out to write feminist tracts.” She continued, “I was writing what I had to write, and the people who wanted to hear what I was writing were women.” She soon joined a Third World Women’s Cooperative, which she explained to Tate was “supportive and instrumental” in her development: “I didn’t really do anything about integrating feminism and black consciousness. We met together in groups by ourselves: black, white, Asian, and Native-American women. We did our work for our own people, and all of my work just grew from there.”

While living in California and teaching humanities and women’s studies courses at Mills College in Oakland, the University of California Extension, and Sonoma State College, Shange began to associate with poets, teachers, performers, and black and white feminist writers who nurtured her talents. Lesbian poet Judy Grahn’s 1973 *The Common Woman* provided the model for Shange’s *for colored girls*. Shange also discovered other women poets who were exploring the “implications of liberation movements as they affected the lives of women of color” and “rejecting the claims of patriarchy,” observed Richards in *African American Writers*. Shange and her friends began to perform their poetry, music, and dance in bars and coffeehouses in the San Francisco area, and feminist presses like Shameless Hussy and the Oakland Women’s Press Collective began to publish women’s writings.

**Theater**

Shange’s first experience with women’s theater also occurred while she was in California. Because of her exposure to New World African religions, choreographer Halifu Osumare cast Shange as a priestess in *The Evolution of Black Dance*, a dance-drama performed in Oakland and Berkeley public schools in 1973 and 1974. Richards remarked that Shange “became imbued with Osumare’s confidence in the legitimacy of their own women-centered/African-centered vision.” When she left the company, Shange began to collaborate on poems, dance, and music that would form the basis of *for colored girls*.

*for colored girls who have considered suicide/when the rainbow is enuf* is a mixture of genres—poems, narratives, dialogues, dance—dramatized through the voices of and interaction among the seven women characters who represent the black woman “[who has] been dead so long/closed in silence so long/she doesn’t know the sound/of her own voice/her infinite beauty.” “The collage of danced poems,” a choreopoem, according to Richards, “is a gift or a song calculated to restore [the black woman] to life. . . . Because the women play multiple unnamed characters, what emerges is not an individual protagonist but an essential Everywoman.” As one of the characters says, we want to “sing a black girl’s song. . . . Sing a song of life, she’s been dead so long.”

Remaining in New York until 1982, Shange produced several plays, including *Spell #7: A Geechee Quick Magic Trance Manual*, which received some positive reviews. In this production, Shange returns to the choreopoem structure, building the play on a series of poetry and dance vignettes that contemplate what it is like to be black in the United States. The main icon of the play is a black minstrel mask that dominates the set, providing what Richards referred to in *African American Writers* as “a specific historical context and a temporally undifferentiated psychic terrain . . . a hideous representation of blacks in the American popular imagination.” At the turning point of the play, the characters begin to rip off their masks and to journey to a land behind the masks, where, Richards observed, “blacks are free to create identities unfettered by white assumptions.” In this “exorcised space,” Richards continued, “the actors explore a complexity seldom accorded black characters.”

**Began Writing Fiction**

During her New York years, Shange also began writing fiction. *Sassafras: A Novella* was published in 1977 and was expanded into her first novel, *Sassafras, Cypress & Indigo*, in 1982. Her second novel, *Betsey Brown*, was published three years later. In *Betsey Brown*, the writer shifts her focus to more autobiographical settings and themes. Betsey, the thirteen-year-old heroine, is a black girl growing up in St. Louis in 1959. Like Shange herself, Betsey is involved in the integration of public schools and is forced to ride three different buses “to learn the same things with white children that she’d been learning with colored children.” Betsey asks, “Why didn’t the white children come to her school?” Like many other young black heroines in coming-of-age stories, Betsey must ultimately learn to reconcile her cultural heritage with the white environment she becomes a part of through integration.

Just as in her theater pieces and novels, Shange’s collections of poetry, such as *Nappy Edges* (1978), *A Daughter's Geography* (1983), and *Riding the Moon in Texas* (1987), push the limits of generic conventions. She uses nonstandard spelling, punctuation, and line breaks to convey her concerns with what she has called the “slow erosion of our humanity” and to capture the rhythms and sounds of vernacular black speech patterns. Shange told Tate in *Black Women Writers at Work* that she “really [resents] having to meet somebody else’s standards or needs, or having to justify their reasons for living.”

Shange cites LeRoi Jones (Imamu Baraka) and Ismael Reed among her models for her use of “lower-case letters,
slashes, and spelling” in her poetry and explained to Tate that she is interested in the way poetry looks on the page. The writer further offered that she likes letters and words that “dance” on the page because they stimulate visually and encourage the readers to become “rigorous” participants. Her irregular spellings, she told Tate, “reflect the language as I hear it.”

Shange has many awards to her credit. For colored girls won the 1977 Obie, Outer Critics Circle, Audelco, and Mademoiselle awards and received Tony, Grammy, and Emmy nominations. In 1981 she won an Obie for her adaptation of Brecht’s Mother Courage and Her Children and earned a Guggenheim fellowship. Shange is a member of the New York State Council of the Arts and is an artist-in-residence at Houston’s Equinox Theater.

In 1977 Shange married musician David Murray—whom she later divorced—and their daughter, Savannah Thulani Eloisa, was born in 1981. She left New York two years later to become a Mellon Distinguished Professor of Literature at Rice University in Houston for the spring semester and an associate professor of drama in the Creative Writing Program at the University of Houston. Shange returned East in 1989 to be closer to the New York arts scene, an environment that African American Writers’ Richards suspected “allows for greater artistic experimentation.”

In 1993 Shange directed Ina Cesaire’s Fire’s Daughters for the Ubu Repertory Theater. Fire’s Daughters takes place on the eve of the 1870 rebellion by former slaves against French colonialism on the island of Martinique. A mother and two daughters conceal a wounded rebel in their home, a man in whom their neighbor, Sister Smoke, is interested.

In 1994 Shange’s third novel, Liliane: The Resurrection of the Daughter, was published. Liliane is set in Mississippi during the last days of legal segregation and in the Bronx, New York, in the midst of conflict within the African American community. Many voices are interwoven into the novel: the main character’s childhood friends and current lovers, her own artistic visions, and her dialogue with her analyst. By coming to terms with her past experiences, Liliane pieces together a “landscape of her future.”

Subsequent writings include a children’s book and a collection of essays. Whitewash (1997) is the story of a young African American girl who is traumatized when a gang attacks her and her brother on their way home from school and spray-paints her face white. If I Can Cook You Know God Can (1998) is a series of conversational essays about the culinary habits of African Americans, Nicaraguans, Londoners, Barbadians, Brazilians, and Africans. Recipes range from the traditional, like collard greens, to the exotic, like turtle eggs and feijoada. As Booklist notes, the recipes are interwoven with a “fervent, richly impassioned chronicle of African American experience” that examines political turmoil and relates “how connections are made beyond issues of class or skin color.”

In 2002, Shange’s works Float Like a Butterfly and Daddy Says were published. Float Like a Butterfly, a biography of Muhammad Ali, is a picture book piece that explores the forces that shaped Ali in his ascent to the top of the sports world, including his childhood in the segregated South and the influence of his parents’ support on his future success. The African American rodeo scene is the backdrop of Shange’s young adult novel Daddy Says. Shange weaves a tale around adolescent sisters Lucie-Marie and Annie Sharon and their father, Cowboy “Tie-Down,” as they work through the death of their mother, Tie-Down’s wife.

**Books**


Tate, Claudia, editor, Black Women Writers at Work, Continuum, 1983.

**Periodicals**

Booklist, January 1, 1998.


Mother Jones, June 1985.

Ms., September 1976.

Newsday, August 22, 1976.


The Progressive, January 1983.

Publisher’s Weekly, September 16, 2002; November 25, 2002.


**Paul Signac**

French painter Paul Signac (1863–1935) was one of the leading figures of Neo-Impressionism, the school of painters that followed the Impressionists. The extraordinary quality and quantity of his artistic work, which included oils, watercolors, etchings, lithographs, and pen-and-ink pointillism, was matched by the breadth of his interests as a writer and, toward the end of his life, his deep opposition to fascism.

Paul Victor-Jules Signac was born in Paris on November 11, 1863. His father, Jules Jean-Baptiste Signac, was a harness and saddle maker, as was his grandfather. Signac’s mother was Héloïse Anais-Eugénie (Deudon) Signac. The Signac family lived above the shop run by his
father. As a child Signac was described as delicate and high
strung by his father. During the Franco-Prussian War (1870–
1871) he was sent to northern France to live with his mater-
nal grandmother and her second husband. By 1877 Signac
was enrolled at the Collège Rollin in Montmartre (now the
Lycée Jacques Decour); he remained a student there until
1880, the year his father died of tuberculosis. Soon after his
father’s death the family business was sold, thus releasing
Signac from having to maintain it.

The year 1880 was pivotal for Signac. In April he visited
the fifth Impressionist exhibit and began making sketches
after a painting by Edgar Degas. Gauguin, no less, spotted
him and threw the 16-year-old Signac out of the building.

Six or seven others, formed an informal literary society,
under the tutelage of journalist Félix Fénéon (1861–1944),
who became one of Signac’s staunchest allies. He also began selling his paint-
ings that year. In May 1884 Signac met Monet in Paris and
soon after met Georges Seurat (1856–1891), with whom he
had a close friendship. On June 11, 1884 Signac, Seurat,
Charles Angrand (1854–1926), and Henri Edmond Cross
(1856–1910) formed the Société des Artistes Indépendants
and from mid-December 1884, through January 17, 1885,
the group held its first exhibition in Paris to benefit cholera
victims.

Another important figure in fostering Signac’s career
was Pissarro, whom he met in early 1885. The next year the
Pissarro connection came through when Signac was invited
to exhibit in New York City at an exhibition titled “Works in
Oil and Pastel by the Impressionists of Paris,” although none
of his six paintings sold. By then Signac had painted “The
Junction at bois-Colombes, The Gas Tanks at Clichy,” and
“Passage de Puits-Bertin, Clichy,” all in the divisionist style,
in which dots of contrasting color are placed side-by-side to
create a luminous visual effect. In the spring of 1886 Signac
exhibited at the eighth and final Impressionist exhibition,
though his and Seurat’s presence in the exhibition caused
something of a controversy that was only smoothed over
through Pissarro’s intercession. On September 19, 1886, the
term “néo-impressioniste” was used for the first time in a
review by Fénéon of the second exhibition of the Independ-
ents. However the term did not come into general use until
1892. Signac was on the exhibition’s hanging committee
and exhibited ten paintings.

In 1887 Signac met Vincent Van Gogh (1853–1890) in
Paris. The two not only became friends but painted together
in April and May 1887. By the end of that year Signac,
Seurat, and Van Gogh had exhibited together.

In late January 1888 Signac traveled to Brussels to
exhibit at the Salon des XX. He also wrote a review of the
exhibition using the pen name Neo that was published in Le
Cri du People. By this time the exhibitions of the Société des
Artistes Indépendants were well-established annual events
thanks to Signac’s efforts as an organizer. Although Seurat
was given first place among the Neo-Impressionists, critics
had begun to appreciate Signac’s contribution to the move-
ment.

Leader of Neo-Impressionists

On March 29, 1891, Seurat died suddenly in Paris. The
death of his friend thrust Signac into a primary position
within the Neo-Impressionist movement. Pissarro, however, predicted the end of pointillism without Seurat. Indeed, Signac abandoned the technique in the early 20th century. Soon after Seurat’s death Signac anonymously published an article titled “Impressionistes et révolutionnaires” in the literary supplement of La Révolte. That summer he sailed in several regattas off the coast of Brittany, and in 1892 had seven paintings exhibited in the eighth exhibition held by the Neo-Impressionists. Later that year he exhibited his work in Antwerp and in December showed seven paintings in the first Neo-Impressionist exhibit, among them “Portrait of My Mother,” “The Dining Room,” and “Woman Arranging Her Hair.” Signac also made the first of many trips to Saint-Tropez to paint and relax.

At the end of 1893 the Neo-Impressionist Boutique was opened in Paris and in 1894 Signac had an exhibition there of 40 of his watercolors. He exhibited widely in the late 1890s and early years of the 20th century in Paris, Brussels, Provence, Berlin, Hamburg, the Hague, Venice, and elsewhere. In the 1890s he became more involved with writing, working on a journal he had begun in 1894. In 1896 the anarchist journal Les Temps nouveaux published a black-and-white lithograph by Signac titled “The Wreckers.” Politically, Signac was, and had been for some time, squarely in the anarchist camp: in 1898 he signed a collective statement supporting Emile Zola’s position in the infamous Dreyfus Affair and in 1906 placed an antimilitary drawing in Le Courier européen.

In 1896 Signac began working on his study of Delacroix and in mid-1899 published D’Eugène Delacroix au néo-impressionnisme, excerpts of which had already appeared in French and German journals. In 1903 the German edition was published.

In 1909 Signac exhibited three pieces at the International Exhibition, better known as the Odessa Salon: “Traghetto Lantern,” “Diables,” and “Port Decorated with Flags, Saint-Tropez.” After Odessa the exhibition went to Kiev, Saint Petersburg, and Riga. Beginning in 1910 Signac slowed his output from the incredible pace he had maintained for more than 20 years. His sole painting that year was “The Channel, Marseilles,” and in 1911 he painted only “Towers, Antibes.” From there his output increased to nine paintings in 1912–1913, but he never again painted at his earlier, youthful pace.

Signac and his wife, Berthe, permanently separated in 1913, but they never divorced. The separation was amicable and the pair remained in contact with each other, Signac providing his wife with financial support. Signac then began living with his lover Jeanne Selmersheim-Desgrange, who gave birth to their daughter, Ginette-Laure-Anais on October 2, 1913. Less than a year later, in August 1914, World War I began. Signac was deeply affected by the war and painted very little—in 1917 he acknowledged that he had only painted seven pictures in three years—despite the fact that in 1915 he was named as a painter to the department of the navy. The annual exhibitions held by the Société des Artistes Indépendants were suspended, Signac himself rejecting a call to resume the exhibitions during wartime. By the time the war ended Signac was involved in taking care of his finances, specifically the welfare of Selmersheim-Desgrange and their daughter. In December 1919 he entered into an agreement with three art dealers, turning over his artistic output to them at the rate of 21 oil paintings per year. The contract was renewed annually until 1928, when it was renegotiated.

**Elder Statesman of French Art**

In early 1920 the Société des Artistes Indépendants renewed their annual exhibition (their 31st that year) though Signac was too ill to fully participate. However he recovered sufficiently by spring to assume the post of commissioner of the French Pavillion at the Venice Biennale, where he mounted a special Cézanne exhibit. All 17 of Signac’s works exhibited at the Biennale were sold within a month. Long acknowledged in the communities of artists and collectors, his fame was further cemented in 1922 when he was the subject of a monograph by Lucie Cousturier. In 1927 Signac published a monograph of his own devoted to the painter Johan Barthold Jongkind. In late 1928 he accepted a commission to paint the ports of France in watercolors. He began with the eastern Mediterranean port of Sète in January 1929 and worked his way south, then west, and then northward. He continued working on the series until April 1931. Politics and finances occupied Signac in the last years of his life, which coincided with the Great Depression. In December 1931 Signac met with Mahatma Gandhi (1869–1948) in Paris. Despite his close friendship with Marcel Cachin, director of the French Communist Party daily newspaper, L’Humanité, Signac refused to join the party. He did, however, lend his support in 1932 to the Bureau of the World Committee against War and often attended meetings of the Vigilance Committee of Anti-Fascist Intellectuals.

In January 1933 Signac testified on behalf of Henri Guilbeaux, who had been sentenced to death in absentia for high treason in 1919. Guilbeaux ultimately returned from the Soviet Union and was acquitted. At the end of 1933 Signac was made a commander of the Legion of Honor. In failing health by 1934 he prepared for the 50th anniversary of the Société des Artistes Indépendants and its 45th exhibition. In February he published an attack on the Ecole des Beaux-Arts in Monde. Signac’s health generally deteriorated as the year wore on, and on November 7, 1934, he resigned as president of the Société and was succeeded by Maxi-milen Luce.

In January 1935 Signac participated in the 46th exhibition of the Société des Artistes Indépendants; it was his final one. That March he was invited to tour the USSR but declined for health reasons. In May 1935 the Société named Signac its honorary president. The following month he took to his bed with what turned out to be his final illness. Signac lingered for most of the summer but died in Paris on August 15, 1935. In 1947 fragments of his journal, edited by George Besson, were published in Arts de France.

**Books**

Pauline Smith

South African writer Pauline Smith (1882–1959) is remembered for works of realistic fiction chronicling life among Afrikaner settlers in the western cape region of South Africa. Her best-known volume, the short story collection *The Little Karoo* (1925), was praised by the South African novelist Alan Paton in the *New York Herald Tribune Book Review* in 1959 as “one of the most remarkable collections of Afrikaner stories ever written.”

**Childhood on Two Continents**

Smith was born in Oudtshoorn, South Africa, on April 2, 1882, the daughter of physician Herbert Urmon Smith and his wife, Jessy (Milne) Smith, a nurse. Her parents had immigrated to South Africa from England during the 1870s in hopes of relieving symptoms of ill health that plagued Herbert Smith. He was the first trained doctor to settle in the area and he traveled widely to treat his patients. Smith accompanied her father, learning a great deal about the landscape and the people who farmed, herded goats, or raised ostrich in the fertile region.

The Dutch-speaking Afrikaners, also known as Boers, were descendants of Dutch colonists who were the first European settlers in the area. They subscribed to a strict interpretation of Christian doctrine and valued hard work. Their society was characterized by racial prejudice and gender inequality: one of Smith’s stories, for example, concerns a father who sells his daughter in order to keep his farm.

Smith and her sister, Dorothy, enjoyed a happy though isolated childhood and were educated at home until 1895, when they were sent to school in Scotland. In a 1947 letter recalling this period and quoted by biographer Sheila Roberts in the *Dictionary of Literary Biography*, Smith wrote: “In my own case, and my sister’s, we lost far more than we gained by being sent to ‘boarding school in England’ 6,000 miles away from our parents—and the loss was our parents’ too—I look back upon that break in our happy childhood as a tragedy for us all. . . .”

Smith’s father died in 1899, and she left school soon afterward, in poor health and grieving for her father. During this period she began to write. She later noted in the essay “Why and How I Became an Author,” which first appeared in the journal *English Studies in Africa*, that she hoped through her stories “to set down for [her] own comfort the memories of . . . happier days.”

Smith’s first published story, “A Tenantry Dinner,” was published in the Aberdeen *Evening Gazette and Weekly Free Press* in 1902 under the pseudonym Janet Tamson, and she continued to contribute sketches and poetry, often with Scottish subjects, to the *Gazette* over the next two years. In 1905 she returned to Oudtshoorn for a visit and recorded her impressions of the region in what became known as her “1905 Diary.”

Smith returned to Europe and began working on a novel and a series of stories for children. While vacationing in Switzerland in 1908 Smith met the English novelist Arnold Bennett, and he took an interest in her writing. Rather than flatter her with praise, Bennett offered honest assessments of weaknesses and strengths in her work and identified the unique value of her writings about Afrikaner life. Of this encounter she wrote in “Why and How I Became an Author,” “The ‘damning’ of my novel brought me an astonishing sense of relief, and established my faith in the critic’s judgment as no praise would have done. . . . I began to work, with a clearer purpose, for this self-appointed master.”

**The Little Karoo**

Smith returned to Oudtshoorn for a year and worked on a new set of stories set in a region called the Little Karoo. Among these was “The Sisters,” published in the *New Statesman* in 1915, and her first significant success, “The Pain,” published by John Middleton Murry in the *Adelphi*. These stories and others, including “The Sinners,” “The Miller,” and “Ludovitje,” were later collected in the volume *The Little Karoo*, which initially drew attention for documenting a passing era in a little-known colonial region. Bennett supplied an introduction for the volume in which he characterized his protégé’s writing as a “strange, austere, tender and ruthless talent.”

Among the best-known stories in *The Little Karoo* is “The Pain,” a portrait of aging byowners, or sharecroppers. In the story, an elderly couple—tenant farmers whose rustic, isolated existence has consisted of working relentlessly for their simplest needs—are thrust into the world of modern medicine in a regional hospital and cannot endure the pain of being separated by the regulations of the institution. Commenting on “The Pain,” a contemporary review in the *Cape Times*, reprinted in *Twentieth-Century Literary Criticism*, asserted, “No lovelier tale of old age has ever been written, and it reveals at once the chief secret of the writer’s power. She has a rare gift of insight.”

Other stories in *The Little Karoo* treat themes of isolation, loss, injustice, oppression, suffering, and religious obsession, presenting an unrelenting tragic picture of life. In “The Miller,” the title character waits too long to offer a gesture of tenderness to the wife he has treated cruelly, dying in her arms unable to articulate his remorse and repentance. In “The Schoolmaster,” the teacher’s stifled emotion, stemming from his desire for a female student, Engela, erupts during a drive with his pupils, when he wildly assaulst the cart mules that will not cross a stream and
gouges out their eyes. He leaves and later is found drowned in the same stream. "The Sisters" chronicles the dealings of two rival farmers, one of whom is driven to madness by his desire to extend his property. In his blind desire to acquire water rights from his neighbor, Burgert de Jager offers his daughter Marta to Jan Redlinghuis, who owns the land de Jager wants. Marta's sister, Sukey, is rebuked by Redlinghuis when she offers herself in place of her delicate sister. Eventually, Marta is humiliated by Redlinghuis who treats her as property, and she dies, with Sukey left trying to comprehend the situation in terms of the Christian meaning of sin and redemption.

In addition to the poignancy of its subjects and themes, the collection has been praised for rendering in English the rhythms and speech patterns of Afrikaans, but, with the exception of "Ludovitje," it fails to treat the important subject of race relations. In that story, a young boy who is not highly valued by members of his own family has a deep spiritual impact on the African laborers who serve as grav-diggers in the area. One worker is so moved by the boy's spirituality that when the boy dies the worker converts to Christianity and offers to prepare a special grave for the child. He is rewarded by the boy's family with a place to stay and the promise of favorable treatment.

Reviewing the volume in the Saturday Review of Literature, critic Brooks Shepard wrote that Smith "has succeeded overwhelmingly in breathing life into the Karoo, with its remote farms and hamlets, its laborious journeyings in a rumbling ox cart, its stern, sober, simple, shrewd men and women, its utter detachment from the world and civilization . . . ; but she has succeeded also in picturing the man and woman in each of us, so that the people and the country of which she writes with strange brooding pity seem only incidental to her brooding upon mankind." When the collection was reprinted in 1990, Sybil Steinberg, writing in Publishers Weekly, commented that "the stories still ring true in their empathetic yet clear-eyed portrayal of a stern, obstinate tribe of white settlers at war with an unforgiving God."

**The Beadle**

A more extended examination of Afrikaner life, Smith's novel *The Beadle* was published in 1926. Set in the late 19th Century, the story centers on Andrina, an Afrikaner teenager who is the illegitimate child of a woman now dead and Aalst Vlokman, a minor church official, who has never admitted his paternity. Raised by her mother's sisters, Andrina is seduced by a visiting Englishman and flees the community when she discovers that she is pregnant. Through her predicament, Vlokman gains the courage to publicly admit that he is her father and to go in search of her. Ultimately, the birth of Andrina's own illegitimate child brings reconciliation with her father.

Because of its setting within a pious, isolated community, "The Beadle" is often compared with Nathaniel Hawthorne's *The Scarlet Letter*. George Dale, writing in *Crux*, asserted that the novel "ranks a high place in any company, for its theme is universally valid and the characterization convincing." South African novelist and critic Nadine Gordimer praised the simplicity and unity of the novel in a 1963 review in the *New York Times Book Review*, declaring, "This is one of the great novels that should never be allowed to go out of print. It will always be rediscovered with astonishment and admiration."

**Later Career and Legacy**

Smith's volume of children's fiction and poetry, *Platkops Children*, was published in 1935. Later considered interesting primarily for their autobiographical elements, the stories offer character sketches and scenic descriptions in a rhythmic language heavily influenced by Smith's early reading of the Old Testament. Critic Sheila Scholten commented in the book *Pauline Smith*, edited by Dorothy Driver, that the ballads "although not literary . . . are delightfully evocative," and she concluded that ""[i]n the poems as well as the stories of *Platkops* . . . Smith has achieved an authentic picture of life in a small Karoo town at the turn of the century."

Smith wrote little after the death of her mentor Arnold Bennett in 1931, though she did publish a memoir of their friendship, *A. B. . . . A Minor Marginal Note, (memoir)* in 1933.

In an article published in 1945 in the journal *South African Opinion* and reprinted in *Twentieth-Century Literary Criticism*, the South African poet and novelist Herman Charles Bosman concluded: "Smith's stories are . . . for ever a part of South African literature. They depict South African life with a truth and a beauty which no writer has so far achieved in the short story form written in Afrikaans." However, Smith was not widely known when she died in Broadstone, England, on January 29, 1959. A revival of Smith's works coincided with the centenary of her birth in 1982, and after that various editions and collections were published with regularity. Her minor writings appeared in such volumes as *The Unknown Pauline Smith: Unpublished and Out-of-Print Stories, Diaries and Other Prose Writings* (1993) and *Secret Fire: The 1913–14 South African Journal of Pauline Smith* (1997), a result of continuing academic interest in Smith's body of work.

**Books**


**Periodicals**

Catherine Helen Spence

Among the more prolific writers of nineteenth-century colonial Australia, Catherine Helen Spence (1825–1910) provided valuable insights into life in South Australia through her various novels, magazine articles, and lectures. A dauntless social activist, she dedicated much of her life and time to the education of girls and to improving conditions for poor children. Near the turn of the twentieth century, Spence became increasingly involved with the struggle for women’s suffrage and contributed to the success of that movement in her adopted homeland.

Catherine Helen Spence was born in Melrose, Scotland, on October 31, 1825. She was the daughter of David S., an attorney, and Helen (Brodie) Spence. The fifth of eight siblings, Catherine Spence was well educated as her parents were well to do. The family moved to Adelaide, South Australia, for a fresh start in November 1839, after their father lost a sizeable fortune as a result of untimely speculation in the wheat market. The South Australian territory at that time was a newly established British colony on the verge of a gold rush that peaked from 1850 to 1860.

Pioneer of the Australian Novel

Spence, who never married, went to work as a governess at age 17. As an advocate for destitute children during the course of her lifetime, she opened her home to three separate families of orphaned siblings and devoted much of her effort to the education of girls. Over time her concern for children led her to open her own school.

Encouraged by relatives and teachers, she entertained a notion also of pursuing a career as a writer. After authoring articles for local publications, her first piece of fiction was published anonymously in 1854 through J. W. Parker of London. Clara Morison, A Tale of South Australian Gold Fever, is widely regarded as her best work. It was the first of seven novels written by Spence and was the first novel to be published about Australia by an Australian writer. The story, which she had written in her spare time over a period of years, has been likened to a Cinderella tale. Described as a domestic novel by the author, the book offers a quasi-autobiographical point-of-view in the supporting character of Margaret Elliott who charms the reader by means of her self-satisfaction. Elliott’s ability to maintain a strong sense of self—despite her status as an unmarried woman—provided a provocative and incongruous notion to Spence’s contemporaries.

After expenses, Spence received a sum of 30 pounds sterling for the book, which was republished by Rigby in 1971 and again in 1986, during a two-decade long revival of Spence’s works related in part to the Australian bicentennial. Additionally, Clara Morison was included in the Queensland University Press Portable Australian Anthology, as part of an author-specific volume on Spence.

Spence’s second novel, Tender and True: A Colonial Tale, was published in two volumes by Smith & Elder of London in 1856. She received a payment of 30 pounds sterling for the manuscript, which like Clara Morison was published anonymously. A second edition of Tender and True was published in 1862 and was printed as a single volume. An 1867 novel, Hugh Lindsay’s Guest, appeared in serial form in the Adelaide Observer, and Bentley published the work in book form under the title The Author’s Daughter. Although she sometimes hid her identity as a female and abandoned fiction altogether during her final years, Spence is regarded highly among the genre novelists of the Australian gold rush era.

Activist Calling

From the 1850s onward, the parliaments of the six Australian colonies were voted by the populace. Although a variety of electoral methods prevailed, each permitted victory by a simple one-vote margin. In the late 1850s, Spence espoused the political theories of Thomas Hare regarding proportional representation in government and strengthened her resolve to bring about social reform in this arena. Her awareness of the need for a more egalitarian government soon permeated her writing. Hare’s promise of pure democracy became a foundation of Spence’s political beliefs throughout her lifetime. Among her early political writings, an 1861 pamphlet, entitled A Plea for Pure Democracy, touted the Hare system of proportional representation. Although South Australia would not convert to a preferential voting system until 1929, other colonies converted earlier, beginning with Queensland in 1892.

Also high on Spence’s political agenda was the need for gender equality. In 1859 she began to work as a correspondent for the Adelaide Argus, but she was forced to assume the identity of her brother, John Brodie Spence, or risk certain exclusion from assignments over the issue of her gender. Overall publishers feared that her notions were too extreme to gain acceptance and frequently greeted her radical ideas regarding feminism and egalitarian government with apprehension. Several of her works could not be sold during her lifetime because publishers viewed them as too extreme.

In her serialized novel, “Uphill Work,” Spence deals directly with the issue of gender discrimination and with poor working conditions and wages among middle-class women. The installments were published in the Adelaide Weekly Mail in 1863 and 1864, for which she received 50 pounds sterling altogether in payment. A book-length manuscript was published in three volumes as Mr. Hogarth’s Will, by Bentley of London in 1865. Spence received one-half of the profits for the publication of the novel, with her share totaling 35 pounds sterling. It was the first of her fiction works to be published under her true name. The editor of Argus prior to his death acknowledged that the novel by Spence served as a motivation behind his gift of 5,000 pounds sterling per year—left in his will—to Mel-
bourne charities. He left an additional sum to Victoria causes.

Feminist on the Early Lecturer Circuit

Spence on an 1865–1866 lecture trip to Britain included a return visit to Scotland for the first time since her early childhood. Over the next two decades her public presence increased, beginning in 1868 when she became the first woman ever to receive an invitation to read papers at the South Australian Institute. Having earlier converted from her traditional Scottish Presbyterian religious beliefs to Unitarian, she became a preacher in her newly adopted faith. Some years later, in 1884 she penned a memoir-like chronicle of her Journey through Conversion. The manuscript was published by Williams and Norgate of London. In 1904 she published Each in His Own Tongue: Two Sermons through Vardon & Pritchard.

As her writing grew more political in orientation, in 1878 she advanced her theories of social reforms through a collection of articles that she had published in the Melbourne Review. The causes that she endorsed included child welfare, parliamentary reform, and tax reform. Also among these articles were essays about the lives and works of her contemporaries, including George Eliot (Mary Ann Evans) who was a personal friend of Spence’s. Coincidently with her contributions to that journal, in 1878 she secured a position as a regular outside contributor to The Register. She penned word games, wrote book reviews, and proffered views on a wide variety of social topics, from children’s issues to industrialization and electoral reform. Her articles included such as “Some Social Aspects of South Australian Life” (1878), “A Literary Calling” (1880), and “The Australian in Literature” (1902).

In 1879, in association with the South Australian Minister of Education, she wrote a text for children, entitled The Laws We Live Under, With Some Chapters on Elementary Political Economy and the Duties of Citizens. The manuscript was published by the Government Printing Office in Adelaide in 1880 and was adopted by the South Australian Schools as a civics/social studies text in 1881.

Spence’s futuristic novel, Handfasted, was completed in 1879, but the manuscript failed to win recognition when submitted to a competition sponsored by the Sydney Mail. Radical in tone and theme, Handfasted in fact remained unpublished until 1984, long after the author’s death. In the book, Spence describes a utopian society in an American valley called Columba. The story, which advocates a revision of social standards, espouses enlightened humanism. The term handfasting refers to a legendary custom of trial marriage.

Her 1881 novel Gathered In is seen as one of her best works, second only to Clara Morison. Although her efforts to find a publisher in 1878 went unrewarded, the tale appeared in serialized form in the Observer, Brisbane Courier, and Queenslander. Publication of the manuscript in book form, however, was delayed for nearly 100 years, until 1977.

“A Week in the Future,” believed to be Spence’s final work of fiction, was serialized in Centennial in 1889. This science fiction piece relates a tale of a utopian London in the year 1988. The first book-length publication of “A Week in the Future” was delayed until 1987 when it was published in anticipation of the 1988 setting in which the story takes place.

From the 1890s until her death she devoted her efforts almost exclusively to the furtherance of social reform programs. She joined the South Australian Women’s Suffrage League in 1891, and as vice president of that organization she helped to bring about the women’s right to vote in state elections and the women’s right to stand for the state parliament. These measures were accepted in South Australia in 1894, at which time the women of that colony distinguished themselves as one of the first communities in the world to enfranchise women. Spence was instrumental also in founding the Effective Voting League in 1895. She worked toward establishing a South Australia chapter of the National Council of Women and continued to fight for women’s suffrage in other sections of Australia. In part through the efforts of Spence, the women of Western Australia earned the franchise in 1899 as did the women of New South Wales in 1902.

In 1893 Spence went to the United States as a representative of the South Australian State Children’s Council at the International Conference on Charities and Correction. At the end of that conference, which was scheduled in conjunction with the Chicago World’s Fair, she extended her tour, traveling throughout the United States and Canada. In the course of her travels she presented lectures on a number of political issues, not the least of which was women’s suffrage. She toured England and Scotland the following year and in 1897 made an historical run for office, becoming at that time the first Australian woman to place her name in candidacy for the federal convention elections. The significance of the event was not diminished by her loss in the election.

In 1907 Spence published State Children in Australia: A History of Boarding Out and Its Developments, in support of her ideas that orphaned children should be migrated from public institutions into private foster homes. At the time of her death, on April 3, 1910, in Adelaide, Australia, she was involved in writing her autobiography. The book, published as Catherine Helen Spence: An Autobiography, was completed by Jeanne F. Young, a close friend of Spence.

Books

Mark Spitz

American swimmer Mark Spitz (born 1950) is considered to have been the fastest swimmer in history. For six years, beginning in 1966, he dominated the sport, winning a world record seven gold medals in the 1972 Olympics held in Munich, West Germany. This was the most gold medals won by anyone in a single Olympiad, and each of his medal-winning performances broke a world swimming record. Spitz was also named World Swimmer of the Year in 1969, 1971, and 1972.

Encouraged in Competitive Swimming by His Father

Spitz was born on February 10, 1960, in Modesto, California, to Arnold and Lenore Spitz. Spitz’s family relocated to Hawaii when Spitz was two years old. There Spitz’s father taught Spitz how to swim. When Spitz was six years old, the family moved back to California, settling this time in Sacramento. At the Sacramento YMCA, Spitz began to train in competitive swimming for the first time. Sensing that Spitz had surpassed the training available at the YMCA, Arnold Spitz took his son to the Arden Hills Swim Club, where he began to train under Sherm Chavoor, a well-known swim instructor. Chavoor was to remain a mentor to Spitz throughout his career.

Spitz’s father was a driving force behind Spitz’s swimming career, drilling into his son the maxim, as reported by M. B. Roberts on ESPN.com, “Swimming isn’t everything; winning is.” Spitz took his father’s advice to heart; by the time he was ten years old, he held 17 national swimming records for his age group and one world record. He also earned the title of the world’s top swimmer in the 10-and-under age group.

When Spitz was 14 years old, Spitz’s father realized that his son was ready for a new level in his training. He decided to move the family to Santa Clara so that Spitz could train under a new coach, George Haines, who was based at the famous Santa Clara Swim Club. This move increased Spitz’s father’s commute to work to 80 miles each way, but he wanted more than anything else for his son to become the best swimmer he could.

The move paid off. Spitz continued to reach new levels of excellence in swimming, including in the butterfly stroke. This stroke, considered by many to be the most difficult stroke in swimming, became Spitz’s favorite. When Spitz was 16 years old, he won the 100-meter butterfly title at the National Amateur Athletic Union (AAU) Championships. It was the only the first of 24 AAU titles he would win during his career.

Entered His First Olympics in 1968

The year 1967 saw Spitz’s rise to international prominence. That year he won no less than five gold metals at the Pan-American Games, held in Winnipeg, Canada. These were for the 100-meter butterfly, the 200-meter butterfly, the 400-meter freestyle relay, the 800-meter freestyle relay, and the 400-meter medley relay.

Spitz seemed perfectly poised to sweep the 1968 Olympics, held that year in Mexico City. He boasted that he would win six gold metals there. While he did shine at the Olympics, he fell short of the goals that he had set for himself, winning two gold medals in team events—for the 4 x 100 and 4 x 200-meter freestyle relay events. He also won two metals for individual events—a silver metal for the 100-meter butterfly and a bronze for the 100-meter freestyle event.

Spitz was disappointed in his showing at the Olympics, and he vowed to try harder. He knew that physically he had what it took to win gold at the Olympics; what he needed to work on was his mental preparation. He began to develop a cool demeanor, an attitude of relaxed concentration that was in marked contrast to the boastful air he had assumed in the 1968 Olympics. Following the 1968 Olympics, Spitz entered college at Indiana University, there to train with famous swimming coach Doc Counsilman. Counsilman had been Spitz’s coach in Mexico City, and it was at his instigation that he went to Indiana University.

At Indiana, Spitz began a pre-dental program while continuing to swim competitively. In his freshman year, he won the 200-meter and the 500-meter freestyle, as well as
the 100-meter butterfly competition at the NCAA swimming championships. He also won the 100-meter butterfly competition at the NCAA championships the following year. The year after that, 1971, he again won the NCAA championship in the 100-meter butterfly, as well as the 200-meter butterfly. His achievements earned him the Sullivan Award in 1971 for being the best amateur athlete in the United States. He was also awarded the title of World Swimmer of the Year in 1969, 1971, and 1972.

Won Seven Olympic Gold Medals in 1972

Spitz graduated from Indiana University in 1972, just in time for the 1972 Olympics, held in Munich, West Germany. This time, he vowed to take home no less than seven gold medals. And he did. Spitz swept the swimming events exactly as he promised to do, collecting his seventh gold medal on September 4, 1972. No other athlete had ever taken home that many gold medals at a single Olympics. He won gold medals for four individual events and three team events. His first win was for the 200-meter butterfly. Next, he won the 200-meter freestyle, followed by the 100-meter butterfly. This last event was Spitz’s favorite, and he won it by a full body length, reaching the finish in just 54.27 seconds. Spitz’s final gold medal-winning performance in individual competition was for the 100-meter freestyle event.

In addition to his four individual gold medals, Spitz also won three gold medals for relay races. These were for the 4 x 100-meter freestyle relay, the 4 x 200-meter freestyle relay, and the 4 x 100-meter medley relay. With each gold metal-winning performance Spitz, then just 22, set a new world record for performance. He won all of his gold medals over a period of eight days.

Spitz’s euphoria over his record seven gold metals was marred by tragedy. In the early morning hours of September 5, members of a Palestinian terrorist organization invaded the dormitory where the Olympic athletes were sleeping. They killed two Israelis and kidnapped nine others. The terrorists passed over Spitz and his American teammates, who were sound asleep not far away.

The crime rattled Spitz, who is Jewish. He made a brief statement to the press that day, saying, as reported by M. B. Roberts on ESPN.com, “I think the murders in the village are very tragic. I have no further comment.” He immediately left Germany for London, without waiting to attend the Olympics’ closing ceremonies. Meanwhile, the nine hostages were all killed during a botched rescue attempt.

Returned to the U.S. a Hero

In spite of the tragedy overshadowing Spitz’s unprecedented achievements at the Olympics, he returned home to the United States a major celebrity, comparable in stature to Charles Lindbergh, the first person to fly nonstop across the Atlantic Ocean. He was also called by some the second most recognized person in the United States, after then-president Richard Nixon. Spitz cancelled his plans to become a dentist and looked forward to making a career as a corporate spokesperson.

Soon after his return to the U.S., Spitz landed several lucrative corporate endorsement contracts. He earned about $7 million in a two-year period, and, helped by his photogenic looks, established himself as a well-known corporate spokesperson. Companies and organizations for which he endorsed products included the Schick Company, the California Milk Advisory Board, Adidas, Speedo, and many more. A photograph of Spitz wearing a swimsuit and his seven gold medals was made into a poster, and it quickly became a best seller.

Also during the year following the 1972 Olympics, Spitz courted and married Suzy Weiner, the daughter of one of his father’s business associates. At the time Weiner was a theater student at the University of California at Los Angeles (UCLA) and also a model.

Spitz’s bid to become a Hollywood star was less successful than either his swimming career or his career as a corporate spokesperson; viewers were highly critical of his performances in television commercials and shows, which included a Bob Hope special, the Sonny & Cher show, and the Johnny Carson show. He managed to maintain a presence as a sports commentator for a few years, but after that he largely dropped out of the public eye.

Still, Spitz and his wife now had plenty of money, and he took up sailing as a hobby. Eventually he started a real estate agency in Beverly Hills, California. The business proved successful and it gave a thriving new career to the former swimming champion.

As the 1980s drew to a close, Spitz decided to come out of retirement and become an Olympic swimmer for the first time since 1972. In 1989, now 39 years old, Spitz began to train for the 1992 Olympic Trials. This decision was not completely out of the blue; in 1984 he had raced against Rowdy Gaines, who at the time held the world record time for the 100-meter butterfly—and beat him. After two years of training, Spitz was ready to attempt to qualify for the 1992 Olympics. In 1991 he raced against Tom Jager and Matt Biondi, both Olympic swimmers. The races, two separate 50-meter butterfly races, were televised on ABC’s “Wide World of Sports.” Unfortunately, Spitz lost both races. He also fell just over two seconds short of the qualifying time of 55:59 he needed to rejoin the U.S. Olympic swim team.

Mark Spitz settled in Los Angeles, where he continues to live with his family. Spitz enjoys to sail and has added traveling to his list of hobbies. No longer in the real estate business, he has involved himself in various other business ventures. He has also returned to his role as a spokesperson for prominent companies and organizations, including the U.S. Olympic Committee. He was found to have abnormally high cholesterol levels in 1995. He cut those levels in half through a program of diet, exercise, and medication, and then embarked on a national campaign to educate people about the risk of heart disease brought about by high cholesterol.

Spitz has not lost his competitive spirit. His backyard contains a swimming pool, but he has vowed never to race his sons in that pool. As he told Martin Fennelly in 2000 in the Tampa Tribune, “I never race them. I never race. Be-
cause I’ve taught them that when I swim against somebody, I don’t care if you’re my son, I’m going to kick your butt.”

**Periodicals**


**Online**


---

**Christina Stead**

Australian-born novelist Christina Stead (1902–1983) is best remembered as the author of *The Man Who Loved Children* (1940), a depiction of dysfunctional family life based to a significant extent on her own childhood in suburban Sydney. Living the greater part of her life outside Australia, Stead employed a variety of settings in her fiction, including London, Paris, and Washington, D.C., and often used her fiction to highlight such political and economic issues as the oppression of workers and the parallels between paternalistic colonial authority and gender inequality.

**Early Life**

Stead was born in Rockdale, near Sydney, on July 17, 1902, the daughter of David George and Ellen Butters Stead. Her father was a marine biologist who worked for the government and supported socialist ideals. Her mother died when Stead was two years old, and her father remarried in 1907. With his new wife, David Stead had six more children, and the ensuing dissatisfaction of their domestic life provided the basis for Stead’s best-known novel, *The Man Who Loved Children*. Stead was educated in Sydney and enrolled in Sydney Teachers’ College in 1920. She began teaching in 1923, working as a demonstrator and lecturer in psychology at the college, but it proved a short-lived career, and she turned to clerical work while writing children’s stories in her free time.

In 1928 Stead left Australia for England, following Keith Duncan, a graduate student with whom she had begun an affair in Australia. She took a job in London as a secretary in a grain company, where she met William Blech (later Blake), a Marxist economist and a married man who was to become her life partner. She moved to Paris with Blake in 1929, where he took a position in an investment bank, but they did not marry until 1952 when he finally obtained a divorce from his wife. During the early 1930s Stead worked as a bank clerk in Paris while seeking a publisher for her novel *Seven Poor Men of Sydney* and for the short story collection *The Salzburg Tales*, both of which were published in 1934.

**Early Works**

*Seven Poor Men of Sydney* offers an impressionistic portrait of seven working-class men (and one woman) and through them, Stead examines issues of class oppression and colonialism in Australia during the opening decades of the twentieth century. Among the central characters, Michael is a shell-shocked veteran of World War I who commits suicide by jumping off a cliff into Fisherman’s Bay, and his sister, Catherine, is a woman so marginalized by the male-dominated political and economic structures that she spirals downward through society and ends in an asylum for the mentally ill. One character espouses Communist ideals as a means of transforming society, while another immigrates to the United States in pursuit of a better life. None of the seven is able to achieve a satisfying, economically secure life in Australia.

During the mid-1930s Stead also became involved in various leftist causes and attended the First International Congress of Writers for the Defense of Culture in Paris in June 1935. She later produced “The Writers Take Sides,” an account of the proceedings, published in the periodical *Left Review*. She and Blake traveled to Spain in 1936 on the eve of the Spanish Civil War. That same year her novel *The Beauties and Furies*, a chronicle of a disappointing love
affair, was published. After briefly returning to London, Blake and Stead moved to the United States, where they remained until 1946. In America she was associated with leftist journals and for a time worked in Hollywood as a scriptwriter for Metro-Goldwyn-Mayer (MGM).

In Stead’s next novel, *House of All Nations* (1938), which is significantly named after an infamous Parisian brothel, she presented an epic fictional treatment of the world of international finance that also provided a Marxist critique of global capitalism. Focusing on the fictitious Banque Mercure, headquartered in Paris and based on the bank in which Stead and Blake worked during the 1930s, the novel depicts the cunning schemes and illicit deals that lie beneath the surface of international monetary operations. Biographer R. G. Geering, quoted in *Contemporary Authors* judged *House of All Nations* as “Stead’s greatest intellectual achievement—it’s knowledge of the workings of international finance and its revelation of the greed, the ruthlessness, the energy, the sheer luck, and the genius that go into money-making, are by any standards remarkable.”

**The Man Who Loved Children**

*The Man Who Loved Children*, which was described by Pearl K. Bell in the *New Republic* as a “profoundly original triumph of imagination and memory,” is an ironically titled work that describes a dysfunctional family whose life together is characterized by bitterness, violent outbursts, and gender inequities. Though the story is set in the United States, the novel is based Stead’s own experiences growing up in Australia. Sam Pollitt, modeled on her father, David Stead, is a tyrannical, self-centered civil servant whose escalating quarrels with his embittered wife, Henny, spark murderous thoughts in their adolescent daughter, Louisa. In the end Henny commits suicide, and Louisa, like Stead, leaves home to start life abroad. Bell concluded that its achievement earned “this remarkable writer a permanent place in the pantheon of literature.”

In a work that extends themes introduced in *The Man Who Loved Children*, *For Love Alone* (1944) focuses on a young woman whose background is similar to Louisa. In this novel, Teresa Hawkins emigrates from Australia to England, where she hopes to escape her domineering father and the stifling atmosphere of provincial political and economic life. She succeeds in London, where she falls in love and embarks on a literary career. *For Love Alone* was closely followed by *Letty Fox: Her Luck* (1946), a satirical novel set among the intellectual Left in New York.

Following World War II, Stead and Blake returned to Europe but established no permanent home until 1953 when they settled in London. During these years Stead continued writing, but her works found little favor with publishers, and only *A Little Tea*, a *Little Chat* (1948) and *The People with the Dogs* (1952) were published. Set in New York during the war, *A Little Tea*, a *Little Chat* comprises a piercing character study of a scoundrel told largely through his own self-serving monologues. However, the novel was faulted at the time as overlong, and later critics have relegated it to minor status. *The People with the Dogs* fared better with critics. Centering on Edward Massine, a wealthy New Yorker with a country retreat in the Catskills, it was praised for its insightful examination of American manners and its sharp presentation of character. According to Bill Greenwell in *New Statesman*, *The People with the Dogs* is “an astonishing novel, one which sprawls, ripples and explodes beneath the fingers. . . . *The People with the Dogs* is genius on the loose.”

**Career Revival in the 1960s**

Coinciding with the Cold War years in international politics, the blacklisting of Communist writers, and the general turn away from Marxist influence in literature, Stead had difficulty securing publication of her works. She and Blake wrote journalism and worked as researchers in an effort to meet the barest financial needs. This situation was at last relieved when *The Man Who Loved Children* was reissued in the United States in 1965 with a highly approbatory introduction by the American poet Randall Jarrell. Stead’s financial woes were somewhat alleviated by literary prizes and, rediscovered by the academical world, she became a fixture in the late-twentieth-century canon of feminist literature.

In 1966 she produced *Dark Places of the Heart* (also published as *Cotter’s England*), an examination of English society in the postwar era, when working-class empowerment gave currency to socialist ideals. Focusing on the Cotter family, particularly on Nellie Cotter Cook, a writer married to a labor organizer, and her philandering brother Tom, the novel presents a bleak assessment of contemporary British culture and politics. According to Louise Yelin in *British Writers*: “Left-wing political theory, like political action, reaches a dead end in *Cotter’s England*,” and Nellie effectively represents “the rage and despair that characterized Stead’s life during the Cold war years, when she wandered from one European city to another and struggled to support herself by writing.” A lesser work, the novella collection *The Puzzleheaded Girl* was published in 1967. In the four short works included in the volume, Stead followed four American, female protagonists navigating the changing social and sexual landscape of the postwar era.

**Later Career and Reputation**

In 1974 Stead drew on her travel experiences in Europe for the novel *The Little Hotel*, and in *Miss Herbert* (1976) she traced the career of an English beauty from her youthful pursuit of conventional happiness through marriage and motherhood to maturity. According to Helen Yglesias in a review in the *New York Times Book Review*, *Miss Herbert* is a “supremely English novel, infused with the troubled, cocky and half-defeated spirit of contemporary England.” She concluded, “Stead has created a stunning addition to her stunning body of work.”

Blake died in 1968 and shortly afterward Stead visited Australia for the first time in forty years. In 1974 Stead returned to live in Australia and remained there until she died, in Sydney on March 31, 1983. Since her death Stead has been elevated in critical circles to the position of a beloved, major writer, particularly in Australia where her works were not even published until the mid-1960s. In
response to growing interest in Stead, several new collections of her fiction have been issued as well as reprint editions of her works. Her writings remain a fertile source for academic research. Yglesias commented in the *New York Times Book Review* that “Stead novels are great to read—long rich, funny, moving, utterly surprising in their rambles through a marvelously rendered and varied scene, the whole built solidly on ground chosen and controlled by a master.” And the English novelist Angela Carter concurred in the *London Review of Books* in 1982, writing, “To open a book, any book, by Christina Stead and read a few pages is to be at once aware that one is in the presence of greatness.”

**Books**

*Contemporary Authors*, Gale Group, 2000.

**Periodicals**

*New Statesman*, August 21, 1931.

---

**Jakob Steiner**

Swiss mathematician Jakob Steiner (1796–1863) made groundbreaking intellectual contributions to the field of mathematics in the area of geometry.

Beginning his education at the age of 18, Steiner attended universities in both Berlin and Heidelberg, then worked at a Prussian school while developing the mathematical theories that caused him to be hailed by many as the most eminent geometer since Apollonius of Perga (250–220 B.C.), whose study of conic sections earned him the title “the Great Geometer.” He developed the Steiner surface and the Steiner theorem, the building blocks of what we now know as projective, or modern geometry, and ended his career as an esteemed professor of mathematics at the University of Berlin.

**Demonstrated Skill with Sums**

The eighth child born to farmer Niklaus Steiner and his wife, Anna, Steiner quickly found that his aptitude for mathematical calculations was useful. Born in Utzendorf, a farming village near Bern, Switzerland, on March 18, 1796, he was the youngest child in a family where hard work won out over formal education. At the age of 14 he learned to write, and the mastery of this skill Steiner saw as a way to escape the harsh life of a farmer. Despite his parents’ objections, in 1814 the 18-year-old farmer’s son left home and traveled to Yverdon, where educational reformer Johann Heinrich Pestalozzi (1746–1827) had established a school.

Highly influenced by the theories of Swiss enlightenment philosopher Jean Jacques Rousseau outlined in Rousseau’s 1762 novel *Emile* Pestalozzi was an adherent of the philosophy that the state of nature is the best teacher. Dedicated himself to the education of the poor, he used his school to put a number of his educational theories to the test, in 1805 opening a secondary school at Yverdon. Steiner was a willing subject. His methodology, which has since become a foundation of elementary educational theory, takes into account the unique needs and talents of each student; traditional classroom repetition and memorization are replaced by hands-on learning and the resulting development of critical-thinking skills. Steiner shared the naturalistic approach to education promoted by his teacher and flourished under Pestalozzi’s tutelage. Within a year and a half he was teaching math to other students and had adopted an innovative approach to his subject. Although he left Yverdon at age 22, he continued to draw on Pestalozzi’s approach. With his innovative, open-minded approach to mathematics, Steiner excelled as a researcher, and during his tenure as a university professor, he also encouraged his students to think “outside the box.”

**University Career in Germany**

In the fall of 1818 Steiner left his native Switzerland and moved to Germany to attend the University of Heidelberg, where he fell into the company of other mathematicians, such as Norwegian-born Niels Henrik Abel (1802–1829) and German mathematician Carl Gustav Jacobi (1804–1851), both of whom independently derived elliptical functions. His teaching experience at Yverdon was sufficient to allow him to fund his education by working as a tutor, and his days were divided between attending lectures in algebra, combinatorial analysis, and differential and integral calculus by such renowned mathematicians as Ferdinand Schweins and fulfilling his own teaching duties. Three years later, in the early spring of 1821, he followed the suggestion of a friend and moved to the Prussian capital city of Berlin in hopes of finding a teaching post and then enrolling at the city’s prestigious university.

The lack of a formal, structured education came back to haunt Steiner in Berlin. In order to be allowed to teach in the cosmopolitan Prussian capital, teachers were expected to be well-rounded in their education, and examinations in a variety of subjects were required. Although his ability at math was great, Steiner was less adept at history and literature, and his stubbornness, belligerent nature, and unwillingness to work out with licensing officials a way to overcome any academic deficiencies made things worse. He was only able to earn a partial teaching license, and the best job he could find was a teaching post at a *gymnasium*, the German version of the North American high school. Although he was dismissed within a few months due to his unconventional teaching methods, the resourceful young man managed to replace this job with work as a tutor, and
by November of 1822 Steiner was enrolled at the University of Berlin.

Leaving the university in August of 1824, Steiner found a post at a Berlin technical school and spent the next decade teaching mathematics there, first as assistant master and after 1929 as senior master. Although his role as educator to younger students relegated him teaching basic mathematical concepts, he challenged his intellect outside the classroom with theoretical work and published some of his most significant findings beginning in 1826 with his most notable work, “Einige geometrische Betrachtungen,” which appeared in a periodical published by his friend, A. L. Crelle, the Journal für die reine und angewandte Mathematik (Journal for Pure and Complex Mathematics).

Developed Projective Geometry

During the course of his career, Steiner contributed over 60 articles to Crelle’s Journal für die reine und angewandte Mathematik as he continued his research in geometry. These articles combine with his book-length works Systematische Entwicklung der Abhängigkeit geometrischer Gestalten voneinander (1832), the two-volume Vorlesungen über synthetische Geometrie (1867), and Allgemeine Theorie über das Berühren und Schneiden der Kreise und der Kugeln (1931) to encompass Steiner’s foundational work in the area of what has since become the discipline of projective, or pure geometry.

Steiner was convinced, as Euclid had been, in what he termed the “organic unity of all the objects of mathematics”: that there are interrelationships between what were then considered to be unrelated geometric theorems. He desired to uncover these interrelationships, thereby allowing mathematicians to deduce such theorems by means of logical deduction. “Here the main thing is neither the synthetic nor the analytic method,” he wrote in Systematische Entwicklung, “but the discovery of the mutual dependence of the figures and of the way in which their properties are carried over from the simplest to the more complex ones.” Steiner’s work developed from a single principle: the stereographic projection of the plane onto the sphere.

The principle underlying Steiner’s projective geometry is the principle of duality, an algebraic concept that holds that if A equals B, then what holds for A holds as well for B. Algebra is the area of mathematics that uses letters or other symbols to describe the properties and relationships among complex numbers and other abstract entities. In contrast, geometry developed from ancient man’s desire to measure the earth, a goal impossible to accomplish except by abstract means. Where algebra concerns itself with numerical abstractions, geometry concerns itself with the study of the properties of constant entities, such as angles, points, lines, and one- and multi-dimensional surfaces. Steiner reasoned that what held for complex numbers should hold also for complex shapes, and through his work he proved that if two geometric operations are interchangeable or dual, then whatever results are true for one are also true for the other.

Following from his original work, Steiner derived other mathematical theorems and relationships. The Steiner ellipse is an ellipse that passes through the vertices of a triangle with points A, B, and C and also shares the centroid of those points as well as a fourth point, called the Steiner point. The Steiner surface contains an infinity of conic sections; the Steiner theorem states that the points of intersection of corresponding lines of two sets of geometric objects form a conic section. The Steiner problem relates to triangle geometry: Given a plane containing three straight lines [l, m, n] and three points [P, Q, R], construct a triangle ABC such that the vertices A, B, and C lie on lines l, m, n and sides BC, CA, and AB pass through points P, Q, and R.

Steiner also extrapolated the work of his colleague, French geometre Jean Poncelet (1788–1867), a military engineer and professor of mechanics at the University of Paris. Like Poncelet, Steiner believed that geometry was a tool that encouraged creative thinking while algebra merely reiterated existing numerical complexities. In an example of the ability of geometry to create new relationships, the Poncelet-Steiner theorem proves that a single given circle with its center and a straight edge are needed for any Euclidian construction.

A Dedicated Educator

Through the efforts of Jacobi as well as other noted German intellectuals, on October 8, 1834, the 38-year-old mathematician was honored by the University of Berlin, which established a chair of geometry for him. Steiner remained an extraordinary professor at the university until his death 29 years later. He never married, but dedicated much of his adult life to his students. A blunt and somewhat coarse manner combined with surprisingly liberal social attitudes to make Steiner a unique and memorable individual, particularly to students used to seeing his impassioned lectures on mathematical subjects. He was known for both the startling nature of his lectures and the originality of his research, and influenced many of his students, including the noted mathematician Georg Friedrich Bernhard Riemann. Inspired by Steiner, Riemann (1826–1866) went on to become professor of mathematics at Göttingen and developed the system of elliptical space that Albert Einstein would one day draw on in his formulation of the Theory of Relativity.

Over the course of a long career, many honors came his way. Again through the influence of Jacobi, an honorary doctorate from the University of Königsberg was conferred upon Steiner in 1833, and the following year he was elected a fellow of the Prussian Academy of Science. He also became a corresponding member of the French Academie Royale des Sciences after a winter of lecturing in Paris in 1844 and 1845, and held membership in the Accademia dei Lincei as well.

A successful career as a teacher and lecturer combined with the frugal nature developed during childhood to provide Steiner with a comfortable income throughout his adult lifetime. Living conservatively, he amassed a significant estate which at his death was valued at 90,000 Swiss francs. In his will Steiner bequeathed a third of his fortune to the Berlin Academy to establish the Steiner Prize. In addition, he directed that an endowment of 750 francs be presented to the public school in his native village of Utzensdorf to establish prizes for students adept at mathematics. To his
Steiner left Germany in the final ten years of his life, with a kidney ailment confining him to his home in Switzerland for much of the year. He returned to German to lecture during the winters until he became bedridden. Steiner died at age 67 in Bern, Switzerland, on April 1, 1863, mourned by students and colleagues who revered him as both a brilliant mathematician and a dedicated and inspiring teacher. Steiner’s articles and books were eventually collected and published in the two-volume Gesammelte Werke in 1881–1882, while many of his problems and theorems continue to be included in modern texts, providing challenges for future mathematicians.

**Books**


Dörrie, Heinrich, *One Hundred Great Problems of Elementary Mathematics, Their History and Solution*, translated from the German by David Antin, Dover, 1965.


Stark, Marion Elizabeth, and Raymond Clare Archibald, *Jacob Steiner’s Geometrical Constructions with a Ruler, Given a Fixed Circle with Its Center*, Scripta Mathematica, Yeshiva University, 1970.


**Online**


---

**Juanita Kidd Stout**

Juanita Kidd Stout (1919–1998) aspired to be a lawyer when few African Americans and few women were in the profession. When Stout was elected judge of the Court of Common Pleas in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, she became the first African American woman to be elected to the bench. Almost 30 years later, Judge Stout became the first African American woman to serve on a state supreme court, when she was sworn in as an associate justice in Pennsylvania.

**Early Life**

Stout was born Juanita Kidd on March 7, 1919, in Wewoka, Oklahoma, the only child of two schoolteachers, Henry and Mary (Chandler) Kidd. From an early age, the value of an education and the importance of achievement were instilled in the little girl. She could read by the time she was three, and when she began school at the age of six, she started school in the third grade. She also began to study piano at the age of five.

Stout was a top student in both grade school and high school. However after graduating high school at the age of 16, she had to leave Oklahoma to find an accredited college that would admit an African American woman. She moved to Missouri and for two years attended Lincoln University in Jefferson City. She later transferred to the University of Iowa where she earned a bachelor of arts degree in music in 1939.

**Became a Teacher**

At only the age of 20, Stout began her teaching career in Seminole, Oklahoma. She taught grade school and also taught music at the Booker T. Washington High School. She remained in Seminole for two years. Her next teaching assignment was near Tulsa, Oklahoma, in the town of Sand Springs. It was there that she met her future husband, Charles Otis Stout, who was also a teacher and the boys’ counselor.

As the daughter of two teachers, Stout believed that in order for learning to occur, there had to be rules and discipline; the students needed to know she was in charge. However, many of Stout’s students were bigger than she was, and she sometimes had problems. She started to send her “problem” students to her future husband, Charles Otis Stout, who was also a teacher and the boys’ counselor.

Over time, the relationship between the two teachers grew. They spent a lot of their spare time together. However, after a year of teaching together, World War II broke out.
Charles Stout went into the Army, and Juanita Stout decided to go to Washington, D.C. with another teacher.

**Settled in Washington, D.C.**

The two young women found Washington, D.C. more exciting than Oklahoma, and they decided to stay there and find jobs. Stout found employment as a secretary. However, she soon observed that others were given opportunities that she was not. She quit her job, but a promising job lead quickly followed. She learned that the prominent law firm of Houston, Houston, and Hastie was seeking an additional secretary. Since Stout was excellent in typing and shorthand and had a genuine interest in the law, she was hired. She worked directly with Charles Hamilton Houston.

**Marriage and Law School**

When Juanita Stout and Charles Stout left Sand Springs and went their separate ways, there was no discussion about the future or marriage. However, her future husband tracked her down through their former high school principal. On his first leave from the Army, he went to Washington, D.C. to renew the relationship. The couple married on June 23, 1942. They had no children.

In many interviews Stout gave throughout her life, she reflected that she had wanted to be a lawyer from an early age. Although Stout had “never even seen a woman lawyer, never mind a black woman lawyer,” she stated in a 1990 telephone interview with Emery Wimbish, Jr., “it was my dream.” In an interview with *Ebony*, Stout recalled that her husband’s response to her dream of becoming a lawyer was “selfless and swift.” He used his Army GI educational funds to put her through law school.

Although Stout began her legal studies at Howard University in Washington, D.C., she soon transferred to Indiana University, where her husband was working on his doctorate degree. She earned her law degree from Indiana in 1948 and a graduate law degree in 1954. In 1966, her alma mater presented her with an honorary graduate law degree.

**Began Law Career**

Stout returned to Washington, D.C., and it was here that her law career truly began. According to *Contemporary Black Biography*, Stout took a job as secretary to William Hastie, a prominent African American lawyer, in 1950. Hastie was soon appointed by U.S. President Harry S. Truman to the U.S. Court of Appeals in Philadelphia. He was first African American appellate court judge in U.S. history. Hastie asked Stout to accompany him to Philadelphia, and there she continued to serve as his administrative secretary.

In 1954, Stout passed the Pennsylvania bar exam and began a private law practice. Two years later, she accepted a position as assistant district attorney for the city of Philadelphia. A few years later, Stout was promoted to chief of appeals, pardons, and paroles division of the district attorney’s office, but still maintained her private practice.

In September of 1959, Pennsylvania Governor David L. Lawrence appointed Stout to fill a vacancy on the municipal court, making her the first African American woman to sit on the bench in Philadelphia. Two months later, she was elected to a ten-year term, beating her opponent by a two-to-one margin. Stout had made history, becoming the first elected African American female judge in the United States. She would serve a ten-year term on the municipal court and was then elected to two ten-year terms on the court of common pleas.

**“Tell It to the Judge”**

Stout quickly developed a reputation as a tough but fair judge. “She was a strong proponent of education,” a colleague shared with writer Suliya Abdur-Rahman of the *Philadelphia Inquirer*. “She was outspoken against gang violence, deadbeat dads, the exclusion of blacks from juries—and bad grammar.” Attorney John F. Street (who was elected mayor of Philadelphia in 1999), added, “I tried cases in her courtroom, and she was a very, very stern taskmaster. You left that courtroom a better lawyer, a better person, and a better citizen.”

During the mid-1960s, Stout received national attention for her tough sentencing of juvenile offenders and gang members. She was featured in a 1965 issue of *Life* magazine, in an article entitled “Her Honor Bops the Hooligans.” That same year, the National Association of Women Lawyers named Stout the outstanding woman lawyer of the year. The Philadelphia Bar Association noticed that she “was a mentor for younger attorneys and an example for all lawyers.” However, not everyone was a fan of the judge. She received death threats from gang members and was criticized by some groups, including the American Civil Liberties Union.

However, the judge knew she was making a difference. In a 1989 interview with *Ebony* magazine, she recalled passing down an 18-month sentence on a young gang member in the 1970s. “He was the best little gang leader in Philadelphia,” Stout recalled. “He was bright but had gotten mixed up with the wrong crowd.”

Three years later, the young man came to her office, to thank her for being tough on him. The young man told her, “The day you sentenced me, I said if I ever got out, I would make something of myself.” The young man went on to graduate from college and law school, “and the next time he appeared in Stout’s courtroom, it was as her law clerk.” The young man eventually established a successful law practice in Philadelphia.

*Contemporary Black Biography* recounted a similar story about Judge Stout. One day, a woman Stout did not know stopped her on the street. The woman explained that she had been inspired to switch careers after serving on a jury in Stout’s courtroom. The woman shared that had returned to college, finished law school, and passed the bar exam.

Many believe that Stout’s success is due to her genuine love of the law. She once shared with the *Philadelphia Tribune*, “I cannot understand how a person can work eight hours a day or more at a job that they do not like. I love my job. I just love the law. I enjoy it.” When she received the Henry G. Bennett Distinguished Service Award in 1980, she
was described as a “tireless and relentless public servant . . . a champion of justice.”

**Appointed to State Supreme Court**

In January of 1988, Stout made history a second time. Governor Robert P. Casey appointed her to the Pennsylvania Supreme Court. When she was sworn in as an associate justice, she became the first African American woman to serve on a state supreme court. That same year, the National Association of Women Judges named Stout the justice of the year. Despite these professional accomplishments, Stout also experienced a personal loss. Her husband passed away in August of that year.

With her achievements, Stout was quick to recall those who influenced her along the way. In *Notable Black American Women*, Stout remembered her parents, “who taught her the value of education and moral living,” and acknowledged “the unswerving support of her husband.” Perhaps they inspired Stout’s famous quote: “A person educated in mind and not in morals is a menace to society.”

**A Lifetime of Honors**

In 1989, Justice Stout reached the state supreme court’s mandatory retirement age of 70 and was forced to step down. She returned to the court of common pleas as a senior judge in the homicide division. She served on this court until her death.

During her career Stout was active in many professional and service organizations and received many honors. Her memberships included the American Bar Association, the Pennsylvania Bar Association, the Philadelphia Bar Association, the National Association of Women Lawyers, and the American Judges Association. She also served on the boards of Rockford College, Saint Augustine’s College, and the Medical College of Pennsylvania, the first medical school that was established for women. Her abilities and contributions have been recognized by eleven colleges and universities, which have awarded her honorary degrees.

In 1981, a very special event occurred. Her home state of Oklahoma, the place she was forced to leave in order to get her college education, inducted her into its Hall of Fame. Two years later, she was inducted into the Oklahoma Women’s Hall of Fame. In 1988, Stout received the Gimbel Award for Humanitarian Services by the Medical College of Pennsylvania and was named a Distinguished Daughter of Pennsylvania by the governor.

Her alma maters also remembered her. The University of Iowa named her a distinguished alumnus in June of 1974, and in 1992 Indiana University presented her with the Distinguished Alumni Service Award.

On August 21, 1998, Stout died of leukemia in Philadelphia. Although she had not heard cases for several months, she had planned to be back on the bench in the fall. Posthumous honors followed. In December of 1998, Stout received the Oklahoma Human Rights Award, and in 2002, as it celebrated its 200th year, the Philadelphia Bar Association named Stout as a “legend of the law.”

Shortly after her death, writer John Shelley reflected on the impact Stout made during her career. He wrote, “We’ll miss this lady . . . Particularly the swift and sure justice she handed out to criminals, regardless of race . . . The nation could use thousands more like her.”

**Books**


**Periodicals**


_Legal Intelligencer*, January 9, 2002.

_Life*, July 9, 1965.


**Online**


**Meryl Louise Streep**

A versatile screen actress known for immersing herself in her characters, Meryl Streep (born 1949) distinguished herself with two Academy Awards and has been nominated 13 times, more than any other actor in history. Intelligent, commanding, and unafraid to play unglamorous and difficult women,
Streep embodied an increasing realism for female characters in major studio films.

Standout Thespian

Streep was born in Summit, New Jersey, on June 22, 1949, to wealthy parents. Her mother was a commercial artist and her father a pharmaceutical executive. She has two younger brothers. Raised in Bernardsville, New Jersey, she took operatic voice lessons as a child and started acting at Bernards High School. She was also a varsity cheerleader, Homecoming Queen, and an academic stalwart.

Though her ambition was to be an interpreter for the United Nations, Streep continued her theater work at Vassar, where she was the star of the drama department. She spent one semester at Dartmouth and then enrolled in the prestigious Yale Drama School. There she appeared in more than three dozen productions with the Yale Repertory Theater and became well-known for her astounding range and the intensity of her performances.

Streep went directly from Yale to the New York theater scene. She appeared at the Public Theater—its impresario Joseph Papp was her mentor—in the musical Alice in Concert. Soon Streep arrived on Broadway, and she was nominated for a Tony Award in 1977 for Tennessee Williams’s 27 Wags Full of Cotton.

While playing a lead role in a Shakespeare in the Park production of Measure for Measure, she met and fell in love with actor John Cazale, with whom she would work in The Deer Hunter. They never married, but she cared for him until he died of cancer in 1978. A few months later, she married sculptor Don Gummer.

A Woman of Substance

In 1977, Streep made her debut on the small screen in the made-for-TV movie The Deadliest Season and on the big screen in Julia. In 1978, she won an Emmy Award for playing a Jewish woman persecuted by the Nazis in the TV miniseries Holocaust. Also that year, Streep was nominated for the first time for an Academy Award for a small but stirring role in The Deer Hunter as a woman in love with two men during the Vietnam conflict.

The Deer Hunter made many Hollywood directors eager to work with Streep. The first to grab her was Woody Allen, who cast her as his hostile ex-wife in Manhattan. In that role and in others to come, Streep demonstrated she was comfortable portraying an unlikable character.

In fact, Streep was perfectly suited to play the new roles that were opening up because of the feminist movement. Though Streep was a blonde with elegant features, she was rarely glamorous, and she could easily suppress her beauty and look ordinary. Playing a woman conflicted about divorcing her husband in Kramer vs. Kramer in 1979, Streep embodied the difficult choices facing millions of women.

“In 1979, nobody was talking about depression,” Streep later told Entertainment Weekly’s Mark Harris, “but this woman probably thought about killing herself once or twice a day.” One of the first movies to treat divorce from an egalitarian standpoint, Kramer vs. Kramer was a cultural landmark in American film. Streep’s portrayal merited an Academy Award for Best Supporting Actress and made her a household name.

Also in 1979, Streep showed her versatility by portraying a sexy attorney who snags a politician in The Seduction of Joe Tynan. Two years later, she was nominated again for an Academy Award for a supporting role, playing two characters (the mistress of a Victorian gentleman and a modern actress playing her) in The French Lieutenant’s Woman. Critics and the public, especially female moviegoers, embraced her. Already hailed as the greatest actress of her time, she won the Academy Award as Best Actress for Sophie’s Choice in 1982. In that film, she adopted a convincing Polish accent after enrolling in a Berlitz course.

Oscar’s Favorite

What was unusual about Streep was not just her willingness to take on difficult roles, but her ability to utterly disappear into her characters. A thorough researcher, she could adopt a different era, nationality, accent, or personality. Some critics, however, most notably Pauline Kael of the New Yorker, criticized her work as too stylized. To such detractors, Streep came off as a masterful technician who lacked warmth and genuine emotion. Reacting to this common criticism, Streep, in an interview in the Washington Times in 2002, said that she approached her roles instinc-
tually rather than analytically: “I like to think I am the opposite of technical. I only worked once with a voice coach, and it was a disaster.”

However she had accomplished it, in five years Streep had gone from a virtual unknown to the pinnacle of Hollywood stardom. In the noir thriller Still of the Night, Streep again attempted a seductive character, but did not fare well. “I didn’t know what I was doing in that!” she told Entertainment Weekly’s Harris. “I didn’t know who my character was. I hate noir. It’s not about playing a person, but a representation.”

Able to pick and choose her roles, she next took on an openly political character, playing a nuclear power industry whistleblower in the biographical picture Silkwood. To this role she brought a convincing recklessness and courage, and once again she was among the Best Actress nominees on Oscar night.

Again switching gears, Streep followed up with a romantic role opposite Robert DeNiro in the film Falling in Love, which flopped despite featuring the biggest male and female stars of the day—possibly because audiences could not picture either of them in a romantic pairing. Streep returned to serious drama in 1985 with Plenty, playing a woman in the French Resistance who has trouble piecing her life back together after World War II. The next year, in Out of Africa, Streep gave another Oscar-nominated performance as a Danish woman having an affair in Kenya. Her next picture was the comic romance Heartburn, which was filmed while she was pregnant.

Streep got her by-now-customary Best Actress nominations in 1987 and 1988 for Ironweed, in which she played a Depression-era alcoholic, and for A Cry in the Dark, in which she took on the thankless role of a much-reviled Australian woman accused of murdering her own child. She later told Liz Smith in an interview in Good Housekeeping that this was her favorite role, explaining: “I’m drawn to disagreeable women. . . . I loved trying to put somebody out there that you wouldn’t normally look at or care about.” Ty Burr, in a 1996 Entertainment Weekly article that named Streep number 37 among the 100 greatest movie stars, opined: “She’s the movie star as medicine: good for you, but not much fun. . . . She inhabits her roles with a craft that can occasionally seem academic.”

Ranged Far and Wide

With her career direction in question, Streep decided to try comedy. She gave her voice to a character in the animated television sitcom The Simpsons. Streep shocked almost everyone by appearing opposite comic Roseanne Barr in She-Devil, a notable flop. Next, she played Carrie Fisher’s alter ego in Fisher’s semi-autobiographical Postcards from the Edge—the first movie she made in Hollywood. It netted her another Oscar nomination. She followed that with a starring role in Richard Brooks’ comedy Defending Your Life. None of these comic roles attracted much attention, but Streep was funny in the over-the-top satire Death Becomes Her, playing a zombie-like character opposite Goldie Hawn.

Having proven she could act in comedies, Streep returned to drama in the harrowing The House of the Spirits, in which her ten-year-old daughter Mamie appeared. She decided to show her children she could be adventurous by doing her own whitewater rafting in her next film, The River Wild, a harrowing tale about a family expedition that goes wrong.

Streep had to cry for entire days during the filming of the tear-jerking romantic drama The Bridges of Madison County, a guaranteed box-office success because it adapted one of the decade’s most popular novels. For this part, playing an Iowa farm wife wooed by a photographer, she put on weight and shed makeup. After a five-year absence from Oscar night, the role earned her a tenth Academy Award nomination.

In 1996, Streep played the mother of a teenage boy accused of murder in Before and After. The same year, she appeared in Marvin’s Room, playing the mother of Leonardo DiCaprio. During her career, Streep also played the real-life role of mother on a secluded 89-acre estate in rural Connecticut with Gummer and their four children: Henry, Mary Wills (Mamie), Grace, and Louisa. She turned down theater roles because they would take her away at night, and she tried to maintain a normal family life as much as possible, guarding her children’s privacy. In 1998, she told Smith in the Good Housekeeping interview: “I always feel like my life is straining at the seams. . . . Basically I’ve now decided I can do one movie a year.”

Discussing her daughters and how they influenced her acting choices, Streep told Dana Kennedy of Entertainment Weekly: “I want them to see not just examples of beautiful young women, I want them to see that women are beautiful throughout their lives and important and formidable and exciting, because I think those fantasies are what you build your dreams on. I know I did when I was a kid.” Kennedy observed that “by sheer strength of personality,” Streep “could probably command the U.S. armed forces in addition to tending to her acting career, her husband, and her four children.”

Second Wind

By the mid-1990s, Streep’s flirtation with comedy was over, and she had returned to playing the kind of drama that had made her so famous, and with an assured maturity. She played a terminally ill wife and mother in The Bridges of Madison County, garnering another Oscar nomination, and added an Irish brogue to her linguistic repertoire in Dancing at Lughnasa. She played an inner-city violin teacher in Music of the Heart, netting her 12th Academy Award nomination.

After lending her voice talents to a role in A.I.: Artificial Intelligence in 2001, Streep returned to the stage to star in a Broadway adaptation of The Seagull, directed by Mike Nichols. Newsweek’s Cathleen McGuigan said “Streep commands the stage—but never steals scenes—in a wonderfully funny, wrenching performance.”

Having turned 50, Streep was determined not to fade away as too many great actresses do in middle age. In 2002, she returned to the forefront with two critically acclaimed performances. In the offbeat comedy Adaptation, she
played New Yorker columnist Susan Orlean, who falls for the subject of her article and book, a scraggly gap-toothed orchid thief in Florida. She won a Golden Globe as a supporting actress and also landed a Golden Globe nomination for her standout performance in _The Hours_, in which she played a New York book editor throwing a party for a longtime friend dying of AIDS. About that portrayal, David Ansen of _Newsweek_ raved: “Few actresses can express their inner lives without a line of dialogue as eloquently as Streep: her warm, flustered performance allows us to become mind readers.” Her Academy Award nomination for Best Supporting Actress for _Adaptation_ allowed her to pass Katherine Hepburn as the most Oscar-nominated actor in movie history. Director Alan Pakula said: “If there’s a heaven for directors, it would be to direct Meryl Streep your whole life.”

For her part, Streep told _Daily Variety_ that she was proud of the integrity of her career, of “this eccentric, quirky collection of movies I’ve done, all with their idiosyncratic pleasures. They’ve never said about my movies, ‘What’s the sequel?’ and ‘Can we merchandise this?’”

Utterly rejecting the idea that she approached acting mechanically, Streep said in the _Washington Times_ interview: “We need art like food. I’m not religious but I think of my work—this is so pretentious—a bit like going to the altar. Like going to God. . . . You can’t get ready for it, I believe. Acting is surrender. All you really have to do is listen.”

**Books**

**Periodicals**
_Washington Times_, February 20, 2002;

**Online**
Tamara

The Kingdom of Georgia in Asia Minor, located on the easternmost fringes of the thirteenth-century Christian world, reached the pinnacle of its political power during the reign of Queen Tamara (1169–1212), who reigned from 1184 to 1212. Tamara ruled over the largest territory ever to come under the control of Georgia; during her reign, the kingdom stretched from Azerbaijan, north of present-day Iran, to the borders of Cherkessia, in the North Caucasus.

With an official title of “Tamar Bagrationi, by the will of our Lord, Queen of the Abkhazians, Kartvels, Rans, Kakhs and the Armenians, Shirvan-Shah and Shah-in-Shah and ruler of all East and West,” Tamara successfully defended her kingdom against multiple incursions by hostile forces. But within 20 years of her death, Mongol invasions would destroy the governmental and military foundations of the country.

Historical Context

Although the trans-Caucasian state of Georgia in Asia Minor first emerged as an independent state in the first millennium B.C., its Golden Age did not begin until the reign of David Aghmashenebeli (1089–1125), also known as David the Builder. At a time that coincided with the Christian Crusades, David drove the Seljuk Turks from the boundaries of his kingdom. Encouraged by his early success, he then refused to pay tribute to the Turks and urged Georgians to return to their homes from their places of refuge in the mountains. Having gained control of the rural areas of Georgia, David next set out to defeat the Turks in their strongholds in the cities. Finally, on August 12, 1121, David and his Armenian, Kipchak, Ossetian, and Shirvan allies defeated Sultan Mahmud of Iraq at Didgori. In the following year (1122), David took Tbilisi.

By the time of David’s death in 1125, Tbilisi was the capital of an empire that stretched from the Black Sea in the east to the Caspian Sea in the west. But David’s immediate successors were too embroiled in dispute with each other to be effective rulers, and Georgia would not flourish again until the reign of David’s great-granddaughter, Tamara.

Tamara

In 1177 or 1178, David’s grandson, King Georgi III, crowned his 19-year-old daughter by the celebrated beauty Bourduhan, Tamara, co-ruler of Georgia. He also named her as his successor as part of his plan for instituting an orderly succession upon his death, which would take place six years later.

Upon assuming the throne in 1184, the 25-year-old Tamara initially was made a guardian of her paternal aunt, Rusudani. The nobility, anxious to have an heir to the throne, quickly arranged a marriage for the queen. Tamara would marry twice—first in 1187 to a Russian-born prince by the name of George Bobolybski (also known as Georgi Rusi or Prince Yuri) who fell out of the Queen’s favor after he sent troops off to fight the Muslims and Persians while he stayed home in debauchery. Within two years the marriage had ended, and Tamara exiled Bobolybski. In 1189, Tamara married again—this time to an Ossetian prince named David Sosland who had been raised in the Georgian court. She would bear David Sosland two children—a son and a daughter; both would later ascend to the throne of Georgia.
Following his exile, Bobolybski attacked Georgia with the aid of Russian troops. Meeting two defeats, Bobolybski fled in exile to the south where he allied himself with Turkish forces. He once more attacked Georgia, but was once again defeated. In May 1204, after Tamara led her troops to victory over the Turks at the Battle of Basiani, she was proclaimed “Our King Tamara.” Following her victory over the Turks at Basiani, she won another major victory at Kars in 1205.

During her reign, Tamara tried to play off various factions within the nobility by giving political appointments to generals and nobles. About the time that her son was born in 1194—followed by her daughter one year later—Tamara successfully quelled a rebellion in the mountainous regions of her kingdom. After Byzantium was taken by the Christians during the Fourth Crusade, she sent troops in support of her relative, Alexios Comnenus, who would become the Byzantine emperor in 1205. She maintained firm control over her Muslim semi-protectorates and exacted tribute from some of the provinces in southern Russia.

Several years later, in 1209, the Emir of Ardabil attacked Georgia, killing 12,000 Georgians. Tamara responded by attacking the Emir’s forces, killing him and 12,000 of his followers, and taking many others captive as slaves during raids into Persia. Tamara then proceeded with her army into North Persia and neighboring regions.

Queen Tamara of Georgia died on January 18, 1212. Medieval chronicles indicate that some of her subjects offered to die in her place when the queen was on her deathbed. Tamara left her kingdom to her son, Georgi IV Lasha (1212–1223).

Upon learning of the Christian Crusades to Palestine, Georgi Lasha initially made plans to join the campaign. A Mongol attack on Armenia in 1220, however, followed by incursions to the north into Georgia changed his mind, and he instead chose to engage the invaders in battle. But Georgi Lasha and his 90,000 mounted soldiers proved no match for the Mongols, and he died in battle in 1223. Upon his death, Georgi Lasha’s sister, Rusudan, became queen. After the Mongols attacked Tbilisi in 1236, Queen Rusudan sought refuge in Kutaisi as the Mongol hordes swept through the country. Following their victory, the Mongols dominated Georgia for more than a century.

It would not be until the fourteenth century that Georgia would finally obtain relief from Mongol rule. Under Georgi V (1314–1346), the country would stop paying tribute to its Mongol overlords and would finally succeed in casting off its oppressors. Under Georgi V, Georgia would once again enjoy some of the prosperity it had experienced under Queen Tamara.

Gender Issues

Although some have argued that Tamara’s gender was irrelevant to her reign, there clearly were instances where it played a role. Tamara was by some accounts forced by the nobility into her disastrous first marriage by the Georgian nobility, which was anxious to have an heir to the throne in place. The nobles also hoped to find in Tamara’s husband a military leader. In still another example, in 1205, the Seljuk ruler Rukn ad-Din gave as the reason for his decision to invade Georgia that fact that Tamara was a woman—a common perception of the time being that women rulers weakened the authority and military power of a kingdom.

According to a source cited by Antony Eastmond, writing in an essay entitled “Gender and Orientalism in Georgia in the Age of Queen Tamar” in Women, Men and Eunuchs: Gender in Byzantium, there are indications that men actually when out of their minds after falling in love with Tamara. One is even said to have pined to death.

In the mid-nineteenth century, Mikhail Lermontov wrote a poem entitled “Tamara” that raised even deeper questions about the role of Tamara’s gender on her kingdom. In Lermontov’s interpretation, Tamara was a slave to her sexual desires and was reduced to seducing a different lover every night to satisfy her lusts. Wrote Lermontov, “That tower on the desperate Terek/Belonged to Tamara, the Queen;/Her beautiful face was angelic,/Her spirit demon and mean.”

But at almost the same time that Lermontov was writing his poem, engravings intended for mass audiences depicting the Queen as passive, gentle, and saintly were in circulation. The inspiration for these engravings was thought to have been a thirteenth-century wall painting of Tamara that had recently been uncovered. The wall painting, which was restored, appeared to have originally shown Tamara to have been a classical Persian beauty, with an oval face, pale coloring, and eyes like pearls. Under restoration, Tamara’s face showed more European features with almost virginal beauty.

According to Antony Eastmond, “All accounts of Tamara’s reign rely in the end on the assessment of the society from which she came and its attitudes towards women. To Lermontov, Georgia was an exotic, ‘oriental,’ society with all the attraction and excitement associated with those terms. . . . This orientalist view was adopted by many other nineteenth-century writers.”

Today Lermontov’s portrayal of Tamara scarcely registers serious comment among historians who attempt to reconstruct her life. But the engravings, which were based on the reconstructed wall painting, are probably equally misleading in their coloring of the Queen by sentimental yearnings. As a result, Tamara has tended to be portrayed by history as either a siren or a saint.

Legacy

During the reign of Queen Tamara, the Kingdom of Georgia experienced a burst of activity in architecture and literature. The kingdom also enjoyed advancements in science and agriculture. Under Tamara’s rule, palaces and churches were built throughout Georgia. Construction of the Metekhi Church was completed after she was enthroned and even the minor churches in the kingdom were adorned with frescoes. Shota Rustaveli wrote his epic “The Knight in the Panther Skin” as an ode to the Queen. Book illumination reached new levels and metalworking thrived.

During Tamara’s reign, Tbilisi occupied an important position along the trade routes. Traders traveling east and
west passed through the city, as did merchants from the mountains in the north and the lands to the south. A variety of languages must have filled the streets as merchants haggled over the prices of such exotic goods as spices and carpets. Bubier states paid tribute to the queen. During his travels through the country some years after Tamara's reign, Marco Polo (1254–1324) reportedly called Georgia "a handsome city, around which are settlements and many fortified posts."

Under Tamara's rule, Georgia acquired a parliament; this achievement came approximately 25 years before the Magna Carta was signed in England (1215). It was reportedly at the parliament's direction that Tamara divorced her first husband.

Antony Eastmond quotes from a text that is reputed to date from the early thirteenth century which mourns Tamar[a]'s passing: "In those times we had nothing but the name of Tamar[a] on our lips; acrostics in honor of the queen were written on the walls of houses; rings; knives and pilgrims' staves were adorned with her praises. Every man's tongue strove to utter something worthy of Tamar[a]'s name; ploughmen sang verses to her as they tilled the soil; musicians coming to Iraq celebrated her fame with music; Franks and Greeks hummed her praises as they sailed the seas in fair weather. The whole earth was filled with her praise, she was celebrated in every language wherever her name was known."

The Russian Orthodox Church added Tamara to its roster of saints in recognition of her good works, among which the Church enumerated concern for the poor, widows, and orphans and contributions to the Church.

Books

Online
"Tbilisi, the Golden Age (1100–1300)," http://www.georgian-art.com/articles/jwright/golden.html (February 2003).

Helen Tamiris
Helen Tamiris (1903–1966) was one of the founders of modern dance in the United States. Trained in ballet and influenced by social issues of the 1920s and 1930s, she developed the concert dance form of modern dance. A white woman, Tamiris choreographed eight dances that were known as the Negro Spirituals between 1928 and 1941, which rank among her finest and most often restaged works. Later in her career, she entered musical theater and choreographed Broadway plays such as Annie Get Your Gun and Showboat. She received the Antoinette Perry Award in 1949 for best choreography for Touch and Go. After co-founding the Tamiris-Nagrin Dance Company with her husband, Daniel Nagrin, in 1960, Tamiris continued to teach and dance until her death in 1966.

Studied Rigid Ballet Techniques
Born Helen Becker on April 24, 1903, in New York City to parents who emigrated from Russia, Tamiris grew up on the Lower East Side of New York City. At the age of eight, she began studying dance with Irene Lewisohn at the Henry Street Settlement then studied with the children's chorus of the Metropolitan Opera Company and later learned Italian ballet techniques at the Met. From 1918 to 1920 she studied modern dance at the Neighborhood Playhouse before the Playhouse began to teach the style of Louis Horst.

Tamiris also studied natural dancing at an Isadora Duncan studio but disliked its emphasis on personal expression and lyrical movements. Restless at the studio, she soon left to develop her own approach to dance, a quest that would make her one of the pioneers in modern dance. She spent a couple of years as a specialty dancer playing in stage shows of movie houses and making nightclub appearances.

In 1922, Bracale Opera Company borrowed Tamiris from the Met to dance lead solo ballet in its productions that toured South America. Traveling outside the United States exposed her to international dance forms. When she returned to New York, she resigned from the Met and abandoned the rigid Italian ballet style she had been taught. For the next year she studied Russian ballet techniques with Mikhail Fokine and danced with his company in Gilbert Miller's production of Casanova.

At this time, Tamiris chose the stage name Tamiris (later calling herself Helen Tamiris) to project an exotic appeal. In 1924 and 1925, she was a principal dancer in John Murray Anderson's Music Box Revue. The next year, she toured the country as a soloist in moving picture presentation units under Anderson.

Concert Debut in 1927
Disappointed at not finding what she wanted to do with dance, Tamiris took a year off to develop her own techniques and voice. Rejecting such dance elements as mimed stories, theatricality, and technical tricks, she turned to concert dance. During the 1920s and 1930s, she became a
leader in concert dance, choreographing solos or shared programs for herself and for small groups of female dancers.

On October 9, 1927, Tamiris made her concert debut at the Little Theatre in New York. With Horst playing piano, Tamiris performed a program of solos, including her pieces Florentine, Portrait of a Lady, Impressions of the Bullring, and Circus Sketches.

Tamiris’s concert career lasted from 1927 to 1944, during which time she created works for herself and her contemporaries, such as Martha Graham, Doris Humphrey, and the choreographers of the New Dance League and Group, of which Sophie Maslow, Lily Mehlman, and Anna Sokolow were members.

Tamiris was establishing herself as a choreographer who searched for flow and ease of movement in her pieces. She had a striking appearance and buoyant personality. Her dances expressed her central concern for human dignity, clear expression, range, and economy. For a program book, she declared, “Dancing is simply movement with a personal conception of rhythm,” according to the International Encyclopedia of Dance.

Viewing life as a conflict, she expressed herself verbally and artistically, preparing works that were vigorous and exuberant. In her choreography, she infused her dances with unique accompaniment to reflect social commentary. In her dances, she complemented urban life with sirens, evoked an aura of Ernest Hemingway with flashing colors, and made a statement on sex with frank voluptuousness. Her dancers also used kettle drums, carried instruments, beat their elbows on drums, and played triangles and cymbals.

**The Negro Spirituals**

With a penchant for exploring traditional American themes and believing that American dance must use indigenous sources, Tamiris was probably best known for choreographing a series of eight pieces under the umbrella title *Negro Spirituals* between 1928 and 1941. Dance critic Margaret Lloyd said, “The *Negro Spirituals* were the musts of her programs. Every new one was hailed with hurrahs. This was the thing she could really do, this was what she did best,” according to Black Tradition in American Dance.

Tamiris, who was white, blended her sympathy for oppressed human beings with her uninhibited nature and love of the unpremeditated. She reviled in the emotional energy of black music and dance and incorporated black themes and movement styles into her work, which was influenced by the jazz, Harlem, and African ceremonial dances of the time. The *Negro Spirituals* were simple in design and execution, displaying slicing or staccato arms anchored in a deeply weighted body. For her spirituals she also used arrangements of J. Rosamond Johnson and Lawrence Brown. Not only did she produce such dances, but she broke through color barriers by choosing black performers as well. Tamiris was instrumental in introducing African American dancer Pearl Primus to the public.

Her second solo concert in 1928 featured two *Negro Spirituals*, “Nobody Knows de Trouble I See” and “Joshua Fit de Battle ob Jericho.” They were very successful, and she went on to perform them in Paris and Berlin. In April 1929, she added a version of “Swing Low, Sweet Chariot” to her program in New York. By 1932, she had danced six *Negro Spirituals*, her latest being “Gris-Gris Ceremonial,” which included percussive gourds shaken in a West African tradition. In 1933, she appeared in Lewisohn Stadium, in the outdoor concert season of the Philharmonic Orchestra, performing that piece with the Bahama Negro Dancers.

Her 1937 *How Long, Brethren?*, one of her best known concert pieces, was danced to songs of protest. Dramatized in dance from Lawrence Gellert’s “Negro Songs of Protest” and sung by a black chorus, the piece depicted the despair of unemployed Southern blacks.

**Founded Dance Companies**

In 1930, Tamiris was a major organizer of the Dance Repertory Theatre. Modern choreographers such as Martha Graham, Doris Humphrey, and Charles Weidman joined together to create a place where they could produce and perform their individual works. Tamiris was president of the company during its first two years. At the same time she worked for the American Dance Association and the Works Progress Administration’s Federal Dance Project, where she encouraged the inclusion of dance and served as principal choreographer from 1937 to 1939. From 1930 to 1945, Tamiris was director and teacher of the School of American Dance.

Tamiris and her company of dancers called Her Group excelled in modern dance in the mid-1930s. Dances took on social issues, made statements on freedom and decadence, denounced war, and highlighted the schism between the haves and have-nots. Tamiris created one of the best compositions of her career with her 1934 *Walt Whitman Suite*, a set of six related dances based on themes from Whitman, set to music by Genevieve Pitot. This project, which contained three solos, demonstrated the maturity of the work by Tamiris and her troupe.

For the next few years, she had a satisfactory extended tour with her group; was one of the primary organizers of the weeklong First National Dance Congress and Festival in 1936; and choreographed the Dance Project in New York from 1937 to 1939. In 1938, she presented some of her solo dances at the Salzburg Festival, and in 1939 she produced the first big modern ballet, *Adelante*, a 75-minute, all-dance work on Loyalist Spain. From 1930 to 1945, she taught extensively outside her own school, including body movement for actors and directors, while continuing to perform and produce.

**Choreographed for Broadway**

In addition to her concert work, Tamiris had a successful Broadway choreography career. From 1943 to 1957 she choreographed modern dances in 18 musical comedies and worked with Nagrin as her assistant on six musicals. Her first theatrical works were created for experimental groups and were staged for the Provincetown players, the Group Theatre, and the Federal Theatre Project.
As noted in the *International Encyclopedia of Dance*, “Rather than using chorus lines or technical displays to advance the script or to enhance the music, Tamiris integrated dance into such theater pieces as *Up in Central Park* (1945), *Annie Get Your Gun* (1946), *Inside USA* (1948), and *Plain and Fancy* (1955).” She also choreographed *Park Avenue* (1946) and *Showboat* (1946). Her choreography for *Touch and Go* (1949) won the Antoinette Perry Award. Some of the Broadway shows she worked on toured in Europe.

In her productions, she strove to create clever characterizations and evoke the spirit of America’s regions and periods. She integrated her dance numbers with acting, song, and stage pictorialisms. Also noteworthy was the caliber of dancers in her shows, such as Lilija Franklyn, Joseph Gifford, George Bockman, Dorothy Bird, J.C. McCord, Pearl Lang, Valeri Bettis, Rod Alexander, Claude Marchant, Talley Beatty, and Pearl Primus.

Tamiris continued to dance and teach later in her life. In 1951, she performed in Donald McKayle’s *Games* that premiered at Hunter College. She performed the modern dances *Pioneer Memories* (1957), *Dance for Walt Whitman* (1958), and *Memoir* (1959).

She taught at Perry-Mansfield School of Theatre and Dance in Colorado and Maine in 1956 and taught stage movement for directors at the American Dance Festival in Connecticut. In 1960, she co-founded the Tamiris-Nagrin Dance Company with her husband and worked on *Women’s Song* (1960) and *Once Upon a Time* (1961). In 1962, she conducted summer workshops with Nagrin at C. W. Post College of Long Island University.

On August 4, 1966, Tamiris died of cancer in New York City. In 1996, she posthumously received the Scripps/American Dance Festival award with Pearl Primus. Nagrin accepted the award in her memory.

**Remembered and Recreated**

Tamiris’s works were rarely choreographed for other companies, and her philosophy was that each dance must create its own expressive means and focus on bringing out what was unique about each dancer. Consequently, it was difficult to bequeath a “Tamiris” style or technique to her followers.

In the late 20th Century, there were attempts to reconstruct some of her most important works, such as the *Negro Spiritual* series (1928–1942), *How Long, Brethren?* (1937–1942), and sections of the *Whitman Suite* (1934), especially “Salut au Monde” and “I Sing the Body Electric.” As early as 1965, the *Negro Spirituals* were restaged at the School of the Performing Arts in New York City, and they were recorded in 1967.

In 1986, Arizona State University in Tempe published *The Tamiris Conference*, edited by Nagrin. Nagrin is also the author of *Helen Tamiris and the Dance Historians: Why Has She Been Neglected by Contemporary Historians?*, parts of which were presented at the Society of Dance History Scholars Conference held at the university in 1989. Portions of the *Negro Spirituals* were restaged at Emory College, and the University of Utah restaged her “Dance for Walt Whitman.” Dianne McIntyre re-created the *Negro Spirituals*, which were performed in the 1990s by the Scripps/American Dance Festival.

**Books**


**Online**


Andrei Arsenyevich Tarkovsky

**Russian film director Andrei Tarkovsky (1932–1986)** was, arguably, the greatest filmmaker of his nation. **While perhaps not the innovator that fellow Russian Sergei Eisenstein was, Tarkovsky nevertheless imbued each of his films with a poetry that embraced life and sought to reveal the myriad ways in which humanity manifests itself.**

Andrei Arsenyevich Tarkovsky was born on April 4, 1932, in the Russian town of Zavrazhye, located on the Volga River, about 500 kilometers northeast of Moscow in the Kostroma Region. Members of the Tarkovsky family were members of the Russian intelligentsia. His father, Arseny, was a poet and a translator while Tarkovsky’s mother, Maria Ivanovna, was primarily an editor at the First State Publishing House in Moscow and also an actress. Tarkovsky also had a younger sister, Marina, who became a philologist. Tarkovsky was four years old when his parents separated; they ultimately divorced. His father remarried twice, but his mother never married again. Their separation evoked a deep crisis in Tarkovsky that he later explored in his autobiographical film *The Mirror*. Tarkovsky and his sister lived with his mother and his grandmother and much has been made of the feminine sensibility that influenced Tarkovsky as a child. In their book *The Films of Andrei Tarkovsky: A Visual Fugue* Vida T. Johnson and Graham Petrie revealed that, in contrast with the “official” version of his youth, Tarkovsky spent a good deal of time rebelling against this sensibility, especially during his teenage years. During World War II—called the Great Patriotic War in his
As a student Tarkovsky was involved in two collaborative films: "Ubiytsy (The Killers," based on the short story by Ernest Hemingway) and "Segodnya uvolneniya ne budet (There Will Be No Leave Today)," a docudrama airing on Soviet television in 1959. The first film for which he took full directorial credit was his 1960 diploma film, "Katok i skripka (The Steamroller and the Violin)," for which he received high marks. It is a fairly conventional film in the Soviet-Realist tradition—although at 46 minutes longer than the usual student film of that period—about the relationship between a young boy who is studying the violin and a steamroller driver who protects the boy from bullies and guides him toward manhood. Tarkovsky tried to enlist the services of internationally renowned cameraman Sergei Urusevsky, among whose credits is "The Cranes Are Flying," but failed. However Urusevsky’s cinematographer, Vadim Yusov, would work often with Tarkovsky. Overall, the Russian press lauded Tarkovsky’s first solo effort.

**Built on Early Success**

Tarkovsky’s first feature film was "Ivanovo detstvo," released in the United States as "My Name is Ivan." Completed in 1962, it immediately brought Tarkovsky international fame. The film tells the story of a 12-year-old boy whose mother (played by Tarkovsky’s wife, Irma Rausch) is murdered by the invading Germans during World War II and who subsequently serves as a scout for the Soviet army. Ivan’s lost childhood, shown in idyllic dream sequences, is contrasted with the stark devastation caused by the war. The filmmaker’s former teacher, Romm, not only gave the film his exuberant stamp of approval, but praised Tarkovsky to the audience and critics at the film’s first official showing. Internationally "Ivanovo detstvo" was also a success, sharing the coveted Golden Lion at the Venice Film Festival with "Cronaca familiare." Overnight Tarkovsky’s name became known to cineastes around the world.

After this success Tarkovsky chose as his second feature the epic film "Andrei Rublev," having submitted the proposal for the film to the Mosfilm studio in 1961, even before completing "Ivanovo detstvo." This was to become his general working procedure while in the Soviet Union. Tarkovsky and scenarist Andrei Mikhalkov-Konchalovsky—Tarkovsky’s friend since his VGIK days and also a well-known director—worked on the script for two years before filming began. Nominally about the struggles of medieval Russian monk and icon painter Andrei Rublev, the film is also about the triumph of art in the face of barbarism; the function of art as an aspect of humanity’s spiritual nature as personified by Rublev’s spiritual journey; and the idea of art being integrated deeply into the lives of common people. The Soviet government did not fail to notice the allegorical critique that lay just below the film’s surface, and "Andrei Rublev" was not released in the Soviet Union (or the USSR: Union of Soviet Socialist Republics) until 1971. Meanwhile, critics hailed it as a masterpiece: in 1969 it was shown out of competition at the Cannes Film Festival and awarded the Federation Internationale de la Presse Cinematographique (FIPRESCI) award, and two years later it was named best foreign film by the French Syndicate of Cinema Critics. In the film Tarkovsky made use of both black-and-white and

---

**Film School**

After graduating from high school in 1951 Tarkovsky entered the Institute for Oriental Studies in Moscow where he studied Arabic, but left during his second year. Various reason have been cited for his leaving, ranging from poor health to lack of interest. Whatever his motives, after leaving school Tarkovsky spent time in Siberia working on a geological expedition, and while there he decided his career direction. When he returned to Moscow he entered the Soviet State Film School where he became 1 of 15 students from a pool of 500 applicants selected to study under noted film director Mikhail Romm. In 1957 Tarkovsky married Irma Rausch, a classmate who was also studying directing, but switched to acting. The couple’s son Arseny was born in 1962.

Like all parents of her class, Maria Ivanovna sought to instill a love and vocation for the arts and the intellect in her children. Tarkovsky initially studied painting, literature, and music; initially enamored of the classic Russian composers, he later came to love the Germans, especially Bach. As a youth he carried on his person the poems his father wrote, which poems were unpublished at the time. Though their meetings were infrequent, Tarkovsky felt a great affinity for his father that fueled his natural rebellion against the parental authority wielded by his mother.

Native Russia—Tarkovsky and his family lived in the town of Yuryevets, but returned to Moscow at the war’s end.

As a student Tarkovsky was involved in two collaborative films: "Ubiytsy (The Killers," based on the short story by Ernest Hemingway) and "Segodnya uvolneniya ne budet (There Will Be No Leave Today)," a docudrama airing on Soviet television in 1959. The first film for which he took full directorial credit was his 1960 diploma film, "Katok i skripka (The Steamroller and the Violin)," for which he received high marks. It is a fairly conventional film in the Soviet-Realist tradition—although at 46 minutes longer than the usual student film of that period—about the relationship between a young boy who is studying the violin and a steamroller driver who protects the boy from bullies and guides him toward manhood. Tarkovsky tried to enlist the services of internationally renowned cameraman Sergei Urusevsky, among whose credits is "The Cranes Are Flying," but failed. However Urusevsky’s cinematographer, Vadim Yusov, would work often with Tarkovsky. Overall, the Russian press lauded Tarkovsky’s first solo effort.

**Built on Early Success**

Tarkovsky’s first feature film was "Ivanovo detstvo," released in the United States as "My Name is Ivan." Completed in 1962, it immediately brought Tarkovsky international fame. The film tells the story of a 12-year-old boy whose mother (played by Tarkovsky’s wife, Irma Rausch) is murdered by the invading Germans during World War II and who subsequently serves as a scout for the Soviet army. Ivan’s lost childhood, shown in idyllic dream sequences, is contrasted with the stark devastation caused by the war. The filmmaker’s former teacher, Romm, not only gave the film his exuberant stamp of approval, but praised Tarkovsky to the audience and critics at the film’s first official showing. Internationally "Ivanovo detstvo" was also a success, sharing the coveted Golden Lion at the Venice Film Festival with "Cronaca familiare." Overnight Tarkovsky’s name became known to cineastes around the world.

After this success Tarkovsky chose as his second feature the epic film "Andrei Rublev," having submitted the proposal for the film to the Mosfilm studio in 1961, even before completing "Ivanovo detstvo." This was to become his general working procedure while in the Soviet Union. Tarkovsky and scenarist Andrei Mikhalkov-Konchalovsky—Tarkovsky’s friend since his VGIK days and also a well-known director—worked on the script for two years before filming began. Nominally about the struggles of medieval Russian monk and icon painter Andrei Rublev, the film is also about the triumph of art in the face of barbarism; the function of art as an aspect of humanity’s spiritual nature as personified by Rublev’s spiritual journey; and the idea of art being integrated deeply into the lives of common people. The Soviet government did not fail to notice the allegorical critique that lay just below the film’s surface, and "Andrei Rublev" was not released in the Soviet Union (or the USSR: Union of Soviet Socialist Republics) until 1971. Meanwhile, critics hailed it as a masterpiece: in 1969 it was shown out of competition at the Cannes Film Festival and awarded the Federation Internationale de la Presse Cinematographique (FIPRESCI) award, and two years later it was named best foreign film by the French Syndicate of Cinema Critics. In the film Tarkovsky made use of both black-and-white and
color stock, the latter at the end of the film as the camera slowly pans on actual icons painted by Rublev in the 15th century. Grounding the film in reality provides a powerful ending to a dramatic story that reconnects art—and the film itself as a work of art—to its own spiritual beginnings.

While working on Andrei Rublev Tarkovsky separated from his wife, who played the part of the holy fool in the film, and began living with actress Larissa Pavlovna Yegorkina. Tarkovsky and Yegorkina were married in 1970, the year their son Andrei was born.

Science Fiction and Autobiography

During his five-year battle with the Soviet bureaucracy, Tarkovsky began working on his next film, Solaris, based on the science-fiction novel of the same name by Polish writer Stanislaw Lem. While Solaris is not the director’s only science-fiction film, it is unique in the Tarkovsky oeuvre in that it features a love story, though it is slanted to reflect Tarkovsky’s personal take on the subject. Set on a space station orbiting the planet Solaris, the film focuses on scientist Kris Kelvin, who has arrived to study the possibility of shutting down the station and returning its three inhabitants to earth. However one of the men, Kelvin’s friend, has died and the other two are struggling with a force emanating from the planet that tests their sanity, as it will soon test Kelvin’s. Solaris has the power to summon into actuality those who populate the memories—or perhaps the imaginations—of Kelvin and his fellow cosmonauts. In Kelvin’s case it is his wife, who years earlier had committed suicide. Kelvin and his faux wife—he had been estranged from his real wife at the time of her death—renew their love in a manner that while physically gratifying is in reality an illusion. By the end of the film, through Tarkovsky’s manipulation of time and narrative structure the camera pulls back to reveal that more than love is an illusion. In 1972 Solaris won both the Grand Prize and the FIPRESCI Award at Cannes.

Tarkovsky next embarked on his most personal film. In Zerkalo (The Mirror, 1975), he relives his own childhood and the dissolution of his family. Here the filmmaker goes beyond simply using color and black-and-white stock, incorporating other film clips to tell his story. Zerkalo actually begins with “found” footage showing a psychologist examining a young boy with a speech impediment who resorts to hypnotism to cure him. As the film continues, the filmmaker’s subconscious seems to become unblocked and his filmic voice recounts the turmoil endured by a young boy old enough to be affected by the events of separation, family dissolution, and war. Zerkalo is intensely personal and few feature-length films have approached it in that respect, its subject matter and nonnarrative stream-of-consciousness structure more commonly the purview of experimental filmmakers. In a bit of Freudian revelation, the actress who plays the mother as a young woman also plays the narrator’s wife. Tarkovsky adds to the film’s subjectivity—which critics have noted verges on being almost too personal and cloying but is never completely so—by having his own mother play the elderly mother in the film. Tarkovsky’s father is also in the film: he reads his poetry as a counterpoint to the actual narrator. Tarkovsky also cast his second wife and step-daughter in the film. Not surprisingly, Zarkalo was another of Tarkovsky’s films that ran afoul of the Soviet bureaucracy.

In 1977 Tarkovsky took a break from film directing to stage a version of Shakespeare’s Hamlet that was poorly received by Moscow critics. This setback had little effect on his career, and he was soon immersed in his next film, 1979’s Stalker. Based on the science-fiction novel Roadside Picnic, by Boris and Arkady Strugatsky, Stalker proved to be Tarkovsky’s most problematic film from a production standpoint and the finished film required no cuts from Soviet censors. In the film a stalker—a person licensed to enter a mysterious “zone” which is devoid of life and in which the physics of reality are reshaped—agrees to lead two other men, a skeptical professor and a cynical writer, into the zone. After journeying into the zone the trio reach a room at the area’s heart but decline to enter, instead retreating to their more comfortable worlds.

Numerous complications dogged filming of Stalker, not the least of which was that in April of 1978 Tarkovsky suffered a heart attack. Furthermore, he was unhappy with his shooting script; worse still was the revelation that more than halfway through the shooting it was discovered that the film stock was defective. Tarkovsky received permission to reshoot everything and the Strugatsky brothers rewrote the script to suit him. Their efforts were worth it; Stalker won the Ecumenical Jury prize at Cannes in 1980.

Asylum in Western Europe

In 1979 Tarkovsky worked in Italy directing the television film Tempo di Viaggio (Time of Travel). He also met with his friend, screenwriter Tonino Guerra, a colleague of Italian director Michelangelo Antonioni. Tarkovsky and Guerra had been planning a film for years, but little had come of it; now the two began planning what was to become the film Nostalghia (Nostalgia, 1983). New trouble with Soviet authorities arose when he applied for an exit visa for himself and his family to work in Italy: he and his wife were allowed to go but their son, Andrei, was denied a visa on the assumption that if they were together abroad the Tarkovskys would then apply for asylum. Nevertheless Tarkovsky would direct Nostalghia and when it was completed he did indeed decide to remain in Western Europe. Another battle with Soviet authorities ensued as he attempted to claim his son.

Nostalghia, cowritten by Guerra and Tarkovsky, is a personal film, though less intentionally so than The Mirror. The protagonist—also named Andrei—is a Russian poet living in the northern Italian province of Tuscany who is researching a biography of Russian composer and expatriate Pavel Sorosovskiy. (The model for the fictional Sorosovskiy was Maximillian Beryozovskiy, an 18th-century Ukrainian composer.) Andrei, like Tarkovsky himself, finds that he is caught between two worlds: his homeland and his adopted land. Aside from Andrei Rublev, Nostalghia is considered Tarkovsky’s most poetic film. At Cannes it was awarded the Ecumenical Jury prize and the FIPRESCI award, while Tarkovsky shared best director honors with Robert Bresson, director of L’Argent.
After Nostalghia Tarkovsky remained in Western Europe. He shot what would be his final film Offret (The Sacrifice, 1986), in Sweden with cinematographer Sven Nyquist. Offret revolves around a man’s sacrifice to avert a nuclear holocaust, but Tarkovsky again plays with dreams and reality to keep the viewer off balance. At Cannes in 1986 Offret won the Ecumenical Jury prize, the Jury grand prize, and the FIPRESCI award, and went on to win a British Academy award for best foreign film two years later. Tarkovsky became ill during the filming of Offret, but it was not until after filming had been completed that he was diagnosed with lung cancer. Chemotherapy and other procedures failed to stem the disease, and, sensing the filmmaker’s imminent death, Soviet authorities finally allowed his son an exit visa. Tarkovsky died in Paris on December 28, 1986, just a few weeks after his son rejoined him. He was posthumously awarded the Lenin Prize in 1990.

Tarkovsky’s small body of work ranks among the world’s greatest films, his greatest talent the ability to blend the natural into the unreal and vice versa. In many of his films Tarkovsky integrated classical art into the scene. In addition to the iconic art of Rublev, he filmed works by Breughel (in Solaris) and Jan Van Eyck’s Ghent alterpiece (in Stalker). In Nostalghia Piero della Francesca’s Madonna of Childbirth is seen in the opening sequence.

Tarkovsky has been described often as a poet of nature for his ability to capture the beauty and sometimes the horror to be found in the landscape and often employed the natural elements as visual metaphors. But if there is a single recognizable metaphor that runs through every one of his films it is water: Rivers, lakes, oceans, puddles, dripping water, rain—especially rain—in sudden torrents that seem to catch the characters by surprise. No filmmaker has been able to capture the movement—or the stillness—of water like Tarkovsky, and certainly none has used it so artistically throughout his career.

Books


Online


Kateri Tekakwitha

Kateri Tekakwitha (1656–1680) is the first Native American to be venerated by the Roman Catholic church. As a Christian convert, in an Iroquois community that possessed a longstanding hostility to all things French, Tekakwitha became an outcast in her village and was forced to flee to a mission near Montreal, where she died at the age of 24. Some-time called “the Lily of the Mohawk,” she was beatified by Pope John Paul II in 1980.

Caught Between Two Cultures

Tekakwitha was born in 1656 in Ossernenon, near what is modern Auriesville, New York. Her father, Kenneronkwa, was a Mohawk and member of its Turtle clan. Her mother, Kahenta, was Algonquin and hailed from a village near Trois Rivieres, Quebec. Kahenta had been converted to Christianity by early missionaries to the area. The Algonquin were one of first Native American populaces to ally with French traders but were bitter foes of the Mohawk. The Mohawk were part of the mighty Iroquois League, a confederation of Mohawk, Oneida, Onondaga, Cayuga, and Seneca nations. Politically organized and known as fierce belligerents, the Iroquois began trading with the Dutch and obtained firearms from them and used the weapons to renew hostilities with their neighbors beginning with a 1649 attack on the Huron. Several other communities were dispersed, among them the Algonquin to which Tekakwitha’s mother belonged.

War had decimated the Iroquois ranks, however, and it became standard practice to take their defeated as prisoners and subsume them into the population of their Five Nations. Tekakwitha’s mother had been captured by the Mohawk around 1653 and became part of a community in this way. Her union with Kenneronkwa resulted in a son and daugh-
ter, Tekakwitha. In 1660, when Tekakwitha was four years old, a smallpox epidemic decimated the community, and both her parents as well as her brother died. She survived the outbreak, though it left her face scarred and her vision impaired. She was taken in by her uncle, a village chief, who was a great foe of the Roman Catholic missionaries from France in the area. When Tekakwitha was ten years old the French emerged victorious over the Iroquois League, and the peace treaty permitted the determined order of Jesuit priests, whom the Native Americans called “Black Robes,” access to Mohawk villages in order to convert the residents to Christianity.

Refused an Arranged Marriage

Tekakwitha's uncle was forced to be hospitable to three Jesuits fathers named Fremin, Bruyas, and Pierron, and assigned the 11-year-old Tekakwitha to look after them. She was reportedly impressed by their exemplary manners and conduct, and though she likely knew her mother was Christian, this may have been her first genuine introduction to Christianity. Eventually the Jesuits established St. Peter's Mission in 1670 and consecrated a chapel inside one of the traditional Iroquois longhouse dwellings. Two missionaries who took over noted that as a teen Tekakwitha became increasingly devout and rejected her family's attempts to arrange a marriage. They grew increasingly angry at her behavior and sometimes denied her food for her obstinacy.

It is likely that Tekakwitha had heard about a community of unwed women in Quebec who lived together in devotion to their Roman Catholic faith, as the Jesuits did; these women were called the Ursuline sisters. There was also some history of virgins and voluntary chastity in the Iroquois nation. However, Europeans had reportedly given these women alcohol and their behavior had brought shame on the Iroquois; such professions of celibacy had subsequently been prohibited. Tekakwitha's determination to remain unmarried was helped by the arrival of the Jesuit James de Lamberville in 1674 at St. Peter's. Tekakwitha confided in him that she wished to fully convert, and he encouraged her in that goal. After catechism classes, she was baptized on Easter Sunday of 1676 and given the name “Catherine,” or Kateri.

Shunned by Community

Immediately Tekakwitha became a pariah in her village. “Her new religion angered her relatives and the villagers, who saw her conversion as a traitorous embracing of the white man’s religion and a rejection of their own customs,” noted America writer George M. Anderson. She remained there six months and was forbidden food on Sundays and Christian holidays because she refused to work in accordance with Christian doctrine. Her relatives and the other villagers increased their harassment campaign and even accused her of attempting to seduce other women’s husbands at the remote prayer site she liked to visit.

To rescue her, Lamberville sent Tekakwitha to the Jesuit mission of Saint Francis Xavier, at Kanawake, Quebec, on the Sault Saint Louis straits. She made the 200-mile trip in 1677 with the help of other converted Native Americans, at a time when her vision was worsening. Her relatives were furious and sent a search party after her, but she was able to hide in tall grasses and elude them with the help of her traveling companions. The Saint Francis Xavier mission had several Christian Native Americans in residency, about 150 families, and Tekakwitha found a sympathetic spiritual mentor in Anastasie Tegonhatsiongo, who had known her mother. Tegonhatsiongo, however, agreed with Tekakwitha’s family and believed it would be best if she married.

Known for Her Piety

Tekakwitha was still determined to become a nun, however, and at one point made a trip to Montreal and met the sisters of the Hotel-Dieu hospital there. She had gone with two other Native American women, and the three resolved to form their own religious community back at Kanawake. Tegonhatsiongo requested the intervention of one Father Cholenc, who consulted his superiors on the matter; all agreed that it was far too early for an exclusively Native American cloister, but Tekakwitha was finally granted her wish and allowed to take her vow of chastity on March 25, 1679, the Feast of Annunciation.

Tekakwitha’s devotion to her religion was legendary. Her “penances,” wrote Anderson in America, “went far beyond such standard practices as fasting and vigils. Walking barefoot in snow and whipping herself with reeds until her back bled were among the milder ones.” She ate little, and sometimes mixed what she did with ashes first. She stood for hours barefoot in the snow before the cross, praying the rosary, and spent more hours inside the mission’s unheated chapel on bare knees on the stone floor. She reportedly slept on a bed of thorns for three nights and even arranged to be flagellated. Such ascetic practices were the hallmarks of the truly devout Catholic saints, but they also had some precedence in Iroquois spirituality as well. Its system of belief held great store in dreams, which were termed “the language of the soul.” To not dream, the Iroquois believed, was unhealthy, and so for those that could not attain or remember their dreams, there were means to induce a trance—either via a sweat-bath, fasting, chanting, or even acts of self-mutilation. The mixing of food and ashes that Tekakwitha tried also had its origins in these practices.

In the end, Tekakwitha’s punishing penances were debilitating, and she died at the age of 24 on April 17, 1680. According the Jesuits who prayed over her body afterward, the smallpox scars on her face miraculously disappeared some 15 minutes after she died. On this account she was beatified by Pope John Paul II on June 30, 1980. A petition for her canonization was submitted to the Vatican in 1884, and her sainthood requires proof of one more miracle. There are quarterlies in her honor, among them Lily of the Mohawks, and Native American Catholics consider her an important historical and spiritual figure. She is also the patroness of the environment and ecology.

Books


Notable Native Americans, Gale, 1995.
Mary Church Terrell

For 70 years, Mary Church Terrell (1863–1954) was a prominent advocate of African American and women’s rights. She traveled around the world speaking about the achievements of African Americans and raising awareness of the conditions in which they lived.

Mary Eliza Church was born in Memphis, Tennessee, on September 23, 1863, to two recently emancipated slaves. Her father, Robert Reed Church, was the son of a white river boat captain and a black house servant. After settling in Memphis, Robert Church operated a saloon. Mary’s mother, Louisa Ayers Church, had been a house servant who was well educated and well treated before her emancipation.

Robert and Louisa Church were both light-skinned African American blacks who lived a comfortable life in a white neighborhood outside Memphis where Louisa operated a successful hair salon. Mary, known as Mollie, had a brother four years younger. She grew up with white friends and knew little about the condition in which most African American people lived until she was about five years old. When her maternal grandmother, a former house slave, told her stories about the brutality of slave owners, Terrell began to understand the history of African Americans. In her autobiography, *A Colored Woman in a White World*, Terrell described how she cried when she heard her grandmother’s stories and her grandmother comforted her, saying, “Never mind, honey. Gramma ain’t a slave no more.”

Robert and Louisa Church divorced when Mary was very young and Louisa moved north to New York where she opened another, equally successful, hair salon. Because educational opportunities for African American children were poor in Memphis, Terrell was sent north to live with her mother when she was six years old. Terrell was one of only a handful of African American children in the school she now attended, and she was sometimes ridiculed because of her race. When studying the Emancipation Proclamation, a fellow student made a rude remark to Terrell. In her autobiography she described her reaction: “I resolved that so far as this descendant of slaves was concerned, she would show those white girls and boys whose forefathers had always been free that she was their equal in every respect. . . . I felt I must hold high the banner of my race.”

Terrell eventually attended Oberlin High School in Oberlin, Ohio, and from there enrolled at Oberlin College where she earned a bachelor of arts degree in 1884. After graduating she returned to Memphis, where her father had remarried. By this time, Robert Church had become very wealthy. In 1879 Memphis experienced a yellow fever epidemic, causing residents to evacuate the city in a panic, selling their property for next to nothing as they fled. Robert Church invested all of his money in real estate during the evacuation and within a few years he was a millionaire.

Began Teaching Career

Robert Church was opposed to his daughter working; he wished her to remain in Memphis and marry. But Terrell was restless; she had been looking forward to a teaching career and promoting the welfare of her race. After a year in Memphis she returned to the Midwest, taking a teaching job at Wilberforce University, near Xenia, Ohio. Her father was incensed that she had defied his wishes and for a time he refused to communicate with her.

In 1887 Terrell moved to Washington, D.C. where she taught Latin at the M Street Colored High School. After a year, her father, with whom she had by now reconciled, sent her to study in Europe. She spent two years traveling in France, Germany, and Italy, countries free from racial discrimination. She considered staying in Europe, but said in her autobiography, “I knew I would be much happier trying to promote the welfare of my race in my native land, working under certain hard conditions, than I would be living in a foreign land where I could enjoy freedom from prejudice, but where I would make no effort to do the work which I then believed it was my duty to do.”
Terrell returned to the M Street School, where she was reunited with her supervisor, Robert Heberton Terrell. Robert Terrell was one of the first African Americans to graduate from Harvard University, and he had paid court to Terrell before her trip to Europe. In 1891 the two were married, and they made their new home in Washington, D.C. Marriage marked the end of Terrell’s teaching career, since married women did not work. Robert Terrell attended law school at night and left teaching to work as an attorney and eventually became the first African American municipal judge in the nation’s capitol city.

The first few years of the Terrells’ marriage were marked by illness and disappointment. Mary Terrell was often sick and within five years had lost three babies shortly after their birth. Her fourth child, a girl named Phyllis, was born healthy in 1898. The couple adopted Mary’s ten-year-old niece, also named Mary, in 1905.

**Raised Awareness of Discrimination**

Terrell devoted her life to improving the lives of African Americans and especially women. Her public service began when she was appointed to the Washington, D.C. school board. The first African American woman on the board, she served from 1895 to 1901 and again from 1906 to 1911.

Terrell and her husband were both advocates of women’s suffrage. Terrell often marched for women’s rights in front of the White House and Capitol Hill. At meetings of the National American Woman Suffrage Association, a group led by suffragist Susan B. Anthony, Terrell encouraged the group to include African American women in their agenda. In 1898 Anthony invited Terrell to address the group on “The Progress and Problems of Colored Women.” A few years later she spoke again, this time without regard to race, on “The Justice of Woman Suffrage.” Terrell soon earned a reputation as an effective speaker and activist.

After passage of the 19th Amendment to the U.S. Constitution giving women the right to vote, the Republican Party named Terrell director of Colored Women of the East. She organized efforts in eastern states encouraging women to use their right to vote.

Advocating on behalf of African American women led Terrell to found the National Association of Colored Women in 1896. She served two terms as the group’s president and then was named honorary president for life. She was also a charter member of the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP).

Terrell’s oratory skills earned her a position as a professional lecturer for Slayton Lyceum Bureau. She traveled throughout the south and east speaking of the achievements of African American women and advocating for justice and education for African Americans and people of color around the world. Terrell was surprised at how little white people knew about the conditions in which African Americans lived, and she worked to raise awareness of discrimination, disenfranchisement, and lynching. She also wrote numerous magazine and newspaper articles highlighting civil rights issues.

**On The Road**

It was not easy or safe for an African American woman to travel alone in the South during the early 20th century. Terrell was light skinned and was sometimes mistaken for a white person. Although she did not advocate African American people crossing “the color line” and living as white, she did not draw attention to her race if she could get away with using white accommodations. When she was recognized as African American, she was prohibited from eating in restaurants, traveling in Pullman cars, or staying in most hotels. She described many examples of such discrimination in her autobiography.

Despite her political activism, Terrell was devoted to her children and never left home for more than three weeks at a time. Her mother lived with her family for 15 years and cared for the children when Terrell was away. Daughters Phyllis and Mary both graduated from college and became teachers. Daughter Mary was a musician as well.

Terrell’s speaking engagements took her abroad for the first time in 1904, when she spoke at the International Congress of Women in Berlin, Germany. Her speech raised awareness in Europe of the race problem in America. She spoke at the International Congress of Women again following World War I in 1919. Although the conference included women from around the world, Terrell was the only woman of color in attendance. She felt that she represented not only the United States, but all the non-white countries of the world. In her speech she emphasized the importance of justice and fairness for people of color, stressing that a lasting peace will never come to pass while inequality exists among the races.

**Elderly Activist**

Robert Terrell suffered a stroke in 1921 and died four years later. Terrell was 62 years old when she was widowed. Six years later she fell in love again, but because the man was married the relationship ended. In 1937, when Terrell was aged 73, her brother died, leaving her to raise her ten-year-old nephew, Thomas Church.

In 1940 the 77-year-old activist’s autobiography, A Colored Woman in a White World, was published. The book describes Terrell’s childhood, education, and her years of travel and advocacy on behalf of African American rights. Terrell described the prejudice she encountered in restaurants, hotels, theaters, education, employment, while buying a home—virtually every aspect of her life. She described times when, weak with hunger, she had to pass by restaurants in Washington, D.C. because they did not serve African American people. She recounted how she was offered jobs or club memberships, only to have the offers revoked when it was discovered that she was African American. While Terrell intended the book to be a forthright account of the prejudice she had experienced, the autobiography described events in polite terms and was less critical of American society than she perhaps intended. In contrast, her diaries reveal a more emotional response to the treatment she had endured.
As she aged Terrell became more forceful in her fight for civil rights. She appeared before the U.S. Congress to urge passage of an anti-lynching bill. In 1946 she applied for membership in the American Association of University Women. When her application was rejected, she appealed and after three years the board finally voted to admit African American women.

In 1949, when she was 86 years old, Terrell was invited to be honorary chairperson of the coordinating committee for the Enforcement of the D.C. Anti-Discrimination Law in Washington, D.C. The District of Columbia had on its books 1872 and 1873 laws prohibiting exclusion of African American people from restaurants, theaters, and other public places, although these statutes had never been enforced. In fact, they had been illegally deleted from the District Code in the 1890s. Terrell, not satisfied with being honorary chair, became the group’s working chairperson. She presided over meetings, spoke at rallies, and on January 7, 1950, led a group of four African American people to Thompson’s cafeteria, located two blocks from the White House. Terrell and her companions put soup on their trays and sat down to eat. They were asked to leave, prompting the committee to file a lawsuit charging the restaurant with violating their civil rights.

While the suit dragged through the courts, Terrell and her group met with restaurant and store owners trying to convince them to open their lunch counters to everyone. Some businesses complied, but many more remained closed to African Americans. Terrell encouraged boycotts and picketed the holdouts. For two years Terrell, now aged and stooped, led the picket line day after day, in all kinds of weather. In Black Foremothers: Three Lives, a younger picketer is quoted as recalling: “When my feet hurt I wasn’t going to let a women fifty years older than I do what I couldn’t do. I kept on picketing.” One by one, the restaurants gave in and on June 8, 1953, the U.S. Supreme Court ruled in Terrell’s favor.

Terrell continued to fight battles on behalf of her race until her death. Her 90th birthday was marked by a party for 700 people and included a White House reception. Addressing the gathering, she pledged to see an end to racial discrimination within Washington, D.C. by the time she reached 100 years of age. Her wish would not be granted; however, a few months later, on July 24, 1954, Terrell died of cancer at her summer home in Highland Beach, Maryland. Her body lay in state in the headquarters building of the National Association of Colored Women, which she had co-founded nearly 60 years earlier. Thousands paid their respects.

Books

Terrell, Mary Church, A Colored Woman in a White World, Randsell Inc., 1940.

Theano

Theano (born c. 546 B.C.), the wife of the Greek mathematician and philosopher Pythagoras, ran the Pythagorean school in southern Italy in the late sixth century B.C. following her husband’s death. She is credited with having written treatises on mathematics, physics, medicine, and child psychology. Her most important work is said to have been an elucidation of the principle of the Golden Mean.

Theano’s husband, Pythagoras (c. 582–500 B.C.), was inspired one of the most influential sects in the ancient world. Best known for devising the Pythagorean Theorem—which states that the sum of the squares of the sides of a right triangle is equal to the square of the hypotenuse—Pythagoras was considered the greatest scientist of antiquity by classical Greek scholars and is considered to have been the first mathematician. However, given that Pythagoras lived seven generations before Plato, most of the information about him comes from fairly late sources—a few as late as the third century A.D. Another problem is that some of these sources are of doubtful reliability. However, references to Pythagoras’s ideas can be found in earlier writings, including those of Empedocles, Heraclitus, Herodotus, Plato, and Aristotle.

Influenced by Her Husband

Theano’s husband is believed to have been born on the large island of Samos, just off the coast of Asia Minor. Pythagoras reportedly left the island when he was 18 and began traveling throughout the Mediterranean world to study with a variety of teachers, including Thales in Miletus. According to some accounts, he also spent time in Egypt, Babylon, Crete, and Sparta. He is believed to have moved to the Greek colony of Croton in southern Italy around 531 B.C., at the age of about fifty-six.

In Croton Pythagoras established a quasi-religious society dedicated to mathematical and philosophical speculations about the nature of the universe. He is reported to have taught purification of the spirit through study and proper diet and to have urged self-control and self-awareness through meditative techniques. However, because the Pythagorean community swore its members to secrecy very little about the society was made public during Pythagoras’s lifetime.

There is, however, evidence that Pythagoras’s academy accepted men and women on an equal basis. By some accounts there were at least 28 women teachers and students in the school, which is said to have eventually numbered some 300 adherents. Concerned with the quasi-religious, quasi-political study of mathematics and philosophy, the academy’s religious ideas tended to be mystical, while its approach to natural philosophy was entirely rational.
Theano

Peter Gorman, writing in Pythagoras: A Life, cited Porphyry’s account of Pythagoras’s arrival in Croton. According to Porphyry, Pythagoras was at that time “tall,” with “great charm and elegance in his voice.” The mathematician reportedly spoke to the council of elders at Croton “with many fine words” and later addressed the school children and, finally, the women. Porphyry added: “One of the women is especially famous, Theano by name.”

According to Gorman, Theano was the daughter of the Orphic disciple Brontinus. The Orphics were members of a religious group that centered its beliefs around the death and resurrection symbolism in the Egyptian deity Osiris. The Orphics further believed in reincarnation and an afterlife spent with the gods. Like the Orphics, the Pythagoreans owed many of their beliefs to Egyptian mythologies, so it is not surprising that Brontinus eventually became a disciple of Pythagoras. More significantly for the historical record, he would eventually become Pythagoras’s father-in-law.

Brontinus’s daughter—and Pythagoras’s future wife—Theano also became Pythagoras’s student. Pythagoras was reportedly Theano’s senior by 36 years. According to Gorman, Theano would later bear Pythagoras a daughter named Damo and a son named Telauges. By other accounts, Pythagoras and Theano had three daughters, Damo, Myria, and Arignote, and two sons.

Theano is said to have eventually become a teacher of mathematics at the school in Croton. Legend has it that Pythagoras ran his school without discrimination based on gender. If true, this policy would have set him apart from his contemporaries, who granted no educational or political rights to women. In Pythagoras’s time, women were usually considered property and relegated at best to the roles of housekeeper or spouse.

According to some of Pythagoras’s earliest biographers, the philosopher and mathematician had other female students besides Theano. One source identifies a woman by the name of Aristoclea as a member of the early community. A third-century A.D. source lists 16 women who belonged to Pythagoras’s school. Some historians have argued that the survival of these women’s names so long after Pythagoras’s lifetime attests to the importance of women scholars in his school.

Death of Pythagoras

After Pythagoras’s academy gained control of the local government of Croton, the local populace grew to resent the Pythagorean aristocracy and destroyed the school. The teachers and students were reportedly either killed or exiled. By some accounts Pythagoras himself was killed during this uprising.

Surviving the attack, Theano reportedly ran the dispersed Pythagorean School following her husband’s death with the assistance of two of her daughters; in fact, one source says that Theano’s daughter Damo was responsible for safeguarding her father’s writings following his death. Theano has been credited with writing treatises on mathematics, physics, medicine, and child psychology, and there are reportedly references to her work in the writings of Athenaeus, Suidas, Diogenes Laertius, and Iamblichus.

Theano and her daughters acquired reputations as excellent physicians. According to the Pythagoreans, the human body is a miniature copy of the universe as a whole. In a debate with the physician Euryphon on the nature of fetal development, Theano and her daughters reportedly prevailed with their argument that the fetus is viable after the seventh month.

Offshoots of the Pythagorean academy continued for some 200 years after its founder’s death. In the fifth century B.C. there were reportedly still several prominent women members of the Pythagorean school.

Theano’s Writings

There were reportedly many individuals—both teachers and students—living communally at Pythagoras’s school. Because all writings were published under Pythagoras’s name, it is difficult to determine who was actually responsible for which work. However, given that Theano was a member of the Pythagorean academy, certain facts of her existence can be taken for granted.

There are no surviving written works by any of the Pythagoreans; all that is known of them comes from the writings of others, including Plato and Herodotus. Whenever one refers to the writings of Pythagoras or his students, one is in fact referencing a body of work that was done between approximately 585 B.C. and 400 B.C. The discoveries of the Pythagoreans were considered to be the common property of all members of the school, which was organized along the lines of a brotherhood or secret society.

According to one source, Theano’s principal works included a Life of Pythagoras, a Cosmology, The Theorem of the Golden Mean, The Theory of Numbers, The Construction of the Universe, and a work titled On Virtue. None of the primary sources that remain, however, reveals anything of her personality.

Theano’s most important work is said to have been the principle of the Golden Mean. Like the geometrical constant pi, the Golden Mean is an irrational number that shows up in many relationships in nature. Its decimal value is approximately 1.6180. In geometry, a “golden” rectangle is one whose sides are related by the Golden Mean ratio, for example 13:8. Both the ancient Greeks and Egyptians designed buildings and monuments with proportions based on the Golden Mean. It is now known that some growth patterns observed in nature occur in accordance with the Golden Mean, examples being the spirals in the nautilus shell and the ratio of clockskwise to counterclockwise spirals in a sunflower.

In a treatise on the construction of the universe attributed to Theano, she reportedly argues that the universe consists of ten concentric spheres: the Sun, the Moon, Saturn, Jupiter, Mars, Venus, Mercury, Earth, Counter-Earth, and the stars. The Sun, Moon, Saturn, Jupiter, Mars, Venus, and Mercury move in orbit about a central fire. The stars are fixed and are not considered to move. In Theano’s theory, the distances between the spheres and the central fire are in
the same arithmetic proportion as the intervals in the musical scales.

The Pythagorean mathematical investigations into the relation between numerical ratios and musical intervals reportedly extended to other areas as well. According to one tradition Pythagoras could cure ailing psyches with his music.

In the Pythagorean school, matter was held to be discontinuous. According to Aristotle, the Pythagoreans believed numbers to be the ultimate component of material objects. Because astronomy and music are ultimately reduced to arithmetic and geometry in the Pythagorean framework, even those disciplines were considered to be mathematical subjects. Thus numbers for the Pythagoreans played much the same role that atoms do in modern scientific theory. Significantly, the Pythagorean cosmology, with later modifications by Plato, Eudoxus, and Aristotle, formed the basis of natural philosophy during the Middle Ages.

A Second Theano

The confusion surrounding Theano’s life is compounded by the existence of a second Pythagorean woman of the same name who reportedly lived in the fourth century B.C. According to a tenth-century source known as the “Suda,” this Theano was a Pythagorean woman from Metapontum, a town along the coast of southern Italy not far from Crotone.

Based on this Theano’s surviving writings, it would appear that women were still influential participants in the Pythagorean school in the fourth century. In fact, a literature directed to female readership had evolved by then. Some historians have speculated, however, that the writings attributed to this Theano were actually written by men, using the name of Pythagoras’s wife as a pseudonym.

Books


Alma Woodsey Thomas

Abstract painter Alma Woodsey Thomas (1891–1978) devoted her life to the youth of Washington and other local communities, both as a teacher and as an organizer of cultural events. In 1924 she became the first graduate of Howard University’s School of Fine Arts. She possessed a natural sense of genius for color and form and upon retiring from teaching at age 68 embarked on a successful career as a professional artist.

Born Alma Woodsey Thomas on September 22, 1891, in Columbus, Georgia, she was the eldest of four daughters of John Maurice Harris, a teacher, and Amelia (Cantey) Thomas. Highly cultured and socially involved, the Thomas family owned a large Victorian home on 21st Street in Columbus’s Rose Hill district, where Thomas was born and lived until the age of 15. As children, Thomas and her sisters enjoyed memorable visits to the home of their maternal grandparents, on a plantation near Fort Mitchell, Alabama. In her youth, she displayed a fondness for nature and the outdoors and enjoyed molding teacups and other pottery from the plentiful red Georgia clay.

The Thomas family remained in Georgia until the idyllic pace of life was disturbed by a period of racially motivated rioting in the fall of 1906. Unnerved by the violence, Thomas’s parents took the family to Washington, D.C., arriving on July 31, 1907, after traveling by train from Georgia. They set up housekeeping at a new residence at 1530 15th Street NW, where Thomas was to live most of her life for the next 71 years, until her death in 1978.

Washington, like many of the southern United States, remained segregated in the early 1900s. Regardless, the Thomases anticipated better educational opportunities for their four children and greater cultural exposure for the family as a whole. Opportunities for employment were more plentiful too, for John Thomas as well as for his wife, who as a dress designer catered in her craft to the affluent women of Washington.

Talented in math and possessing an artistic bent, Thomas attended Armstrong Manual Training High School from 1907 to 1911, where she excelled in architectural drawing. For two years after high school she specialized in early child development at Miner Normal School, obtaining a teaching certificate in 1913. She took her first teaching job with the Princess Anne, Maryland, school district.

Two years later, in 1915 Thomas moved to Wilmington, Delaware, to the Thomas Garrett Settlement House. There she lived and worked at the community-operated school for resident children, teaching arts and crafts. She also devoted her time to making costumes for various school productions and to community arts productions.

Art Educator

In 1921 Thomas entered Howard University, initially contemplating a career in costume design. With that goal in mind she enrolled in a home economics program but changed paths by the end of her first semester, enrolling instead in the school’s newly launched fine arts program at the urging of professor James V. Herring who recognized her talent and became her mentor.

Thomas’s artwork during her years at Howard was founded almost exclusively in realism. In addition to many costume sketches and designs, she painted with oils
and sculpted in ceramics. Also among her many three-dimensional works is the plaster “Bust of a Young Girl,” completed around 1923, which is believed to be constructed in the image of her youngest sister, Fannie Cantey Thomas, then deceased. Among Thomas’s most recognized works as a student is a still life done in oils in 1923. It is an untitled study depicting a vase with flowers; the bust of a woman appears to the right of the vase, in front of a draped background. Some experts believe that Thomas personally endowed the bust with the specific features and head covering that impart its distinctively African appearance and that the original model did not appear that way.

Thomas received a bachelor of fine arts degree in 1924, becoming the first ever to graduate from the Howard program. She moved briefly to Pennsylvania to teach at the Cheyney Training School for Teachers, returning to Washington after one term, to join the teaching staff at Shaw Junior High School. On February 2, 1925, she began teaching at Shaw, and in the process opened the door to a 35-year career at that school.

At Shaw, Thomas immersed herself totally in her life choices both as an educator and artist. She spent her summers in New York, at Teacher’s College, Columbia University, where in 1934 she received a master’s degree in fine arts education. In 1935 she summered in New York City as a student of England’s premiere marionette maker, Tony Sarg. Thereafter she worked in collaboration with a Washington-based painter, Lois Mailou Jones, creating colorful string-operated puppets together. With Thomas contributing the design and fashioning the pieces of the puppets from balsa wood, Jones gave the toys a personality, using watercolors to paint faces on the wooden heads. Together the women created entire puppet troupes and sponsored performances at local venues such as the Phillis Wheatley Young Women’s Christian Association and Howard University’s Gallery of Art. Thomas produced popular children’s classics—such as Alice in Wonderland—as puppet shows and wrote assorted scripts of her own. The need for these cultural events was especially acute because it came at a time in U.S. history when African American children were denied access to similar programs at the National Theater.

In 1936 she organized the Washington School Arts League. This program, also geared toward children of African American descent, was devised to sponsor and encourage tours, lectures, and other presentations at cultural venues such as museums and colleges. In 1938 she conceived of a program to create art galleries within the Washington schools. Beginning with a temporary exhibit at Shaw, she borrowed selected art works from the Howard Gallery and expanded the program from that starting point.

Community Arts Patron

Thomas with her cultural influence made deep inroads into the Washington community, extending well beyond the youth programs with which she is most frequently associated. In 1943 she contributed to the efforts of two Howard professors, Herring and Alonzo J. Aden, to found the Barnett Aden Gallery at their residence at 126 Randolph Street NW. The gallery quickly found its niche in the Washington cultural scene and became a popular gathering place for local society. Barnett Aden attracted patrons from diverse social, political, and artistic backgrounds within the national capital. Near the end of the decade, Jones and Céline Tabary opened a more casual space, called “The Little Paris Studio,” at Jones’s 1220 Quincy Street NE residence. There, too, Thomas could be found frequently, not only with her students, but also relaxing in private.

As the Washington artistic community experienced major growth throughout the 1940s, Thomas in 1950, at age 59, enrolled at American University to continue her education and expand her study of art. A subsequent metamorphosis from full-time educator to full-time artist ensued. Her works from this early period are characterized as somber and heavy, both in color and mood. Blues and browns predominate, with rough, dense shapes. Among her many oils on canvas, she painted “Grandfather’s House” in 1952, evoking the natural serenity of the Cantey homestead in Alabama. The complacent emotion of the plantation is represented predominantly in blues with heavy brown trees and foliage. The painting hangs at the Columbus Museum in Georgia.

The artist’s evolution toward color and abstraction can be traced through the progression of her impressionist still life paintings. “Joe Summerford’s Still Life Study,” also dated 1952, is heavy with detail; dark shadows and olive tones are used freely. Her migration toward abstraction is foreshadowed only in the reflective surfaces such as the face of a clock and the glassy bulb of an empty vase. The objects appear on a table of brown wood, and the exposed background wall is brown also and significantly darker.

“Still Life with Chrysanthemums,” from 1954, retains a sense of realism in the foreground objects while fading to abstraction with allusions to sun and foliage in the background. By 1958, with “Blue and Brown Still Life,” Thomas’s reality fades into coherent blocks of color, while allowing for specific images such as the cat tossing yarn and the appearance of vessels in the background. The environment overall is noncommittal, in shades of browns and blues.

Emergence of Color and Abstraction

After spending the summer in Europe in 1958, Thomas’s work underwent a gradual migration toward vivid color as she abandoned the use of oils, deferring to watercolor. The browns were colorfully split apart to reveal the reds and yellows as seen in “City Lights” and “Yellow and Blue,” both from 1959. Increasing levels of activity in the paintings are depicted by black brush strokes in the foreground, as reds emerge and sometimes overpower the backgrounds. This style is seen prominently in “Macy’s Parade” and “Untitled Study” in red and green, both from 1960. Having retired on January 31 of that year, Thomas held a solo exhibition at Washington’s Dupont Theatre Art Gallery from September through December. By 1961 her move toward abstraction and geometric form was all but complete with “Blue Abstraction.”

Yet the total abandonment of impressionism was yet to be accomplished by Thomas. Her devotion to realism is vividly evident in “March on Washington,” completed in 1964.
The painting, with its infusion of a socio-political backdrop, employs the new reds and yellows of her 1960s period, while reprising her moody blues from the 1950s. Thomas in fact participated in the August 28 March on Washington in 1963, and this work serves as her commentary.

**Maturity of Style**

Thomas in her signature style of later years employs an abundance of square stripes of acrylic color that flow about the canvas. Aerial views and bird’s eye representations of trees, leaves, rivers, and brooks typify this period. Primary colors break forth from muted backgrounds, as in her 1969 “Azaleas.” Also during these years she produced her Earth and Space series, including “Light Blue Nursery” and “The Eclipse,” in 1968 and 1970, respectively.

Working from her first floor quarters in the same 15th Street NW home of her adolescence, Thomas was inspired most distinctively by a holly tree that grew within the view of a bay window in the living area. There, by means of the holly tree, the indoor world was insulated from the rush of traffic on the busy street outside, and her impressions of the holly tree surface repeatedly in the imagery of her brush-stroke patterns.

By the 1970s Thomas worked with increasing frequency on very large canvases of 72 by 52 inches, sometimes combining two or three of these large panels into a single image. Often she tied a strip of elastic around the frame as she painted, to guide the movement of the color. “Wind and Crepe Myrtle Concerto” and the paneled “Elysian Fields” from 1973 are typical of this phase of her art. A sense of movement characterizes her work from this time and is evident especially in the progression between the panels of “Red Azaleas Singing and Dancing Rock and Roll Music” in 1976.

News of Thomas’s work, ripe with personal cachet, seeped into the cosmopolitan art world in 1972 when the Whitney Museum in New York held a solo exhibit of her paintings. The Corcoran Gallery in Washington held a retrospective of her work that year, and in 1973 the Martha Jackson Gallery featured her work also as a solo exhibit.

Suffering from arthritis and having tripped and broken her hip at home in 1974, she was inactive for two years while convalescing. She resumed painting in 1976. A second exhibit at the Martha Jackson Gallery opened on October 23, 1976, and was in retrospect Thomas’s final solo exhibition prior to her death in 1978. In all she was featured in 16 solo exhibitions from 1959 to 1976.

On February 24, 1978, she died at Howard University Hospital in Washington, D.C., after emergency surgery to repair a damaged artery. She had carried her paint box and drawing pad with her to the hospital, where she arrived by ambulance. The luminous “Rainbow” of 1978 is her last known work.

Thomas defined both abstraction and impressionism on her own terms in the mid-twentieth century. She was a contemporary of those artists who comprised the Washington Color School of painting—including Gene Davis and Kenneth Noland—yet she rejected the practice of staining her canvases to create the void of relief that typifies that movement. Thomas’s paintings in contrast forced texture to the forefront and her layered acrylics exhort the feel of the colors.

**Books**


**Periodicals**

Art in America, January 2002.


---

**Bertel Thorvaldsen**

During the early 19th century, Danish artist Bertel Thorvaldsen (1770–1848) was considered the greatest sculptor in Europe. A student of classical art, he incorporated the styles of ancient Greece and Rome into his own work. In doing so, he became one of the leaders of the Neoclassical movement, which spanned the 18th and 19th centuries.

**Born in Denmark**

Bertel Thorvaldsen was born in Copenhagen, Denmark, on November 13, 1770. He was the son of Gottskalk Thorvaldsen, an Icelandic woodcarver, and Karen Dagnes (Grønlund). His father was something of a failed artist and he drank heavily. However, Gottskalk’s habits or lack of success did not have a negative impact on the young Bertel. Determined to avoid the fate of his father, Thorvaldsen decided that he would become a great sculptor.

Pursuing his ambition, Thorvaldsen gained entrance into the finest art schools of his time. His formal artistic training began at the Royal Danish Academy of Fine Arts School, where he studied freehand drawing. In 1796 he entered the Copenhagen Academy of Fine Arts, and a year later went to Rome, Italy, on a scholarship. The move would have enormous impact on his life, as Italy provided the kind of academic environment that spurred his growth as an artist. He soon began developing his own style, basing it on classical sculpture, which proved to be his greatest inspiration.

**Influenced by Ancient Artists**

Thorvaldsen remained in Rome until 1838, then returned to his homeland to teach for intermittent periods. Although he would never marry, while residing in Rome Thorvaldsen fathered two children with Anna Maria Magnani: a son, Carlo Alberto (1806–1811) and a daughter, Elisa (1813–1846). In his early years in that city, Thorvaldsen was able to study examples of classical art up...
close. Influenced by the ancient works as well as by the contemporary neoclassicists, he came to hold the ancient Greco-Roman sculptors in high regard, believing that they were the only sculptors who had achieved purity of formal beauty without respect to content. Like these artists he took many of his subjects from ancient literature and mythology; also like them he attempted to recreate the human form in sculpture with clear outlines, smooth surfaces, pleasing proportions, and idealized facial features. He believed that imitation of ancient classical works of art was the best way to become a great artist. The strategy worked for Thorvaldsen; he soon joined Italian sculptor Antonio Canova as of the major artists of the Neoclassical movement.

Neoclassical Movement

The Neoclassical art movement embraced the values of the art of ancient Greece and Rome, and its emergence was a reaction to the previous, more fanciful Rococo and Baroque styles. It was part of the larger, overall movement that revived neoclassical thought and included writing, painting, and philosophy. Influential German art historian Johann J. Winckelmann helped initiate the art movement when he identified the most important elements of classical works: the noble stillness and simplicity and the calm grandeur. Neoclassical sculptors were also inspired by the excavation of the ancient cities of Pompeii and Herculaneum in Rome, which began in 1748 and provided the world with the opportunity to rediscover classical works. Neoclassical artists sought to capture the quality of these works by copying the ancient artists’ styles and subject matter. Like these artists, neoclassical-inspired sculptors strived for a purity of form, creating idealized figures in white marble that possessed a severity of structure and clear, hard contours.

The Neoclassical movement lasted from the mid-18th century to the mid-19th century. At first, Canova was the leading neoclassical sculptor, but Thorvaldsen would eventually emerge as Canova’s recognized peer. By 1808 the Danish sculptor began to receive recognition as a great artist, and after Canova’s death he became recognized as the greatest living sculptor in Europe and the pre-eminent neoclassical artist.

Like other neoclassical artists, Thorvaldsen produced most of his works in white marble. These included relief sculptures, monuments, and portrait busts. His fidelity to the classical style was revealed in his early works, including his Jason (1802–1823), depicting the adventurous figure of Greek mythology who traveled the seas with his Argonauts, and Janus (1803), the Roman god of gates and doors who possessed two faces looking in either direction. These works provided Thorvaldsen’s artistic breakthrough and brought him international fame. The choice of subjects for one of his best-known works, Hebe, especially reflects his intent. In mythology Hebe was an attendant to Venus, the goddess of beauty, and she served as the cup bearer for the gods. Because she possessed pure beauty as well as everlasting youth, she proved an appropriate subject for Thorvaldsen. His most famous works are allegorical reliefs and statues of classical subjects. Other famous works include Venus with the Apple (1806) and Amor and Psyquis in the Sky (1807).

Opened a Workshop

It was Thorvaldsen’s fame and demand for his work that helped advance Neoclassicism as a movement. As demand increased from around the world, he fulfilled many international commissions for clients who specifically asked for a work of art that exemplified the Neoclassical style. Many of the commissioned artworks he created included busts and statues of famous Europeans.

Thorvaldsen’s artistic output during his lifetime was huge. He produced 550 sculptures, reliefs, and portrait busts. In 1797, with demand growing and his workload increasing, he felt compelled to establish an efficient studio workshop which employed the services of his pupils and assistants.

During this period, he produced works for his home country, including the decorative scheme of marble statues and reliefs for the new Church of Our Lady in Copenhagen that features a striking Christ figure. Thorvaldsen himself created the figures of Christ and St. Paul; the rest were made by his assistants from Thorvaldsen’s models. Thorvaldsen also created works for clients throughout Europe. These include historical portrait sculptures of Pope Pius VII and Conradin, last of the Hohenstaufen, as well as the design for the world-famous memorial sculpture Lion of Lucerne (1819–1821) erected in Switzerland. This much-celebrated allegorical sculpture was created on the wall of what had once been a mine. It commemorates the destruction of the
Swiss Guard during the storming of the Tuileries in Paris in 1792, near the close of the French Revolution. The fallen Swiss are memorialized as a dying lion. The most remarkable element of the **Lion of Lucerne** is the sad expression on the lion’s face; American writer Samuel Clemens (Mark Twain), when visiting Europe and observing the sculpture, remarked that it was “the saddest and most moving piece of rock in the world.” Thorvaldsen’s students performed the actual carving of the stone.

Thorvaldsen was also greatly admired in Russia. For the Russian czar’s court he created sculptures of Countess Elizabeth Ostermann-Tolstaya (1815) and Czar Alexander I (1820).

Thorvaldsen’s artistic activities were not restricted to sculpture. He would also perform restorations, believing along with his contemporaries that restoration projects provided a rewarding creative process. One of his most famous projects involved restoring ancient Aegينetan marbles, a task he performed for Prince Louis of Bavaria.

By 1820 Thorvaldsen employed 40 assistants to help complete the commissions, and his workshop was a fascinating place, bustling with activity. When producing a sculpture, Thorvaldsen began with a plaster model. After the finished artwork was delivered to a client, this plastic model remained in the workshop. Thus, the facility was filled with many stunning figures, the number of which grew over the years. Eventually, the sculpture envisioned the creation of a museum where his work could be viewed by the public. This seed of an idea would eventually grow to fruition.

**Returned to Denmark**

Although Thorvaldsen spent most of his life in Rome where he lived from 1797 to 1838, he was also active in Copenhagen. He became professor at the Royal Danish Academy of Fine Arts in 1805 and directed the Academy from 1833 to 1844. He also served as a professor at Rome’s St. Luca Academy in 1812, eventually becoming vice president (1826) and president (1827–1828) there.

When he returned permanently to Copenhagen to live in 1838, Thorvaldsen was welcomed home with great enthusiasm. By that time he was considered the greatest sculptor in Europe, and his countrymen regarded him as a national hero. In fact, his fame was so great that several of the era’s most well-known painters chose him as a portrait subject, including Russian painter Orest Kiprensky, whose 1833 portrait of Thorvaldsen hangs in the museum in St. Petersburg, Russia. His renown spread across the sea as well, and many American sculptors traveled to Europe to study with Thorvaldsen.

**Donated Works for Museum**

Thorvaldsen’s will bequeathed a large collection of his works—as well as collected works of other artists—to the city of Copenhagen. In 1839 the city began building a museum—appropriately designed in the neoclassical style—to house the aging sculptor’s valuable collection.

Thorvaldsen had first broached the idea of the remarkable bequest in 1827, in a letter to Danish Crown Prince Christian Frederik (eventually King Christian VIII). The idea was then taken to King Frederik VI, who was asked if Denmark would be willing to build a museum for the collections if Thorvaldsen decided to donate. The king took the idea to the people and, later, initiated a fundraising campaign. The idea moved forward in 1830, when Thorvaldsen drew up his first will, a document that bestowed parts of his collections to Denmark.

A national appeal for money was started in 1837, to raise money for the museum construction. The Danish people responded enthusiastically and their support funded the project. A year later, when Thorvaldsen returned to Copenhagen after living in Rome, King Frederik VI designated a site for the envisioned museum adjacent to the Christiansborg Palace. The Royal Coach House, which stood on the proposed site, was to be rebuilt to accommodate Thorvaldsen’s collections. A building committee was appointed, which included four architects who designed the basic elements of the reconstruction, and work began in 1839. Architect Michael Gottlieb Bindesbøll was appointed to lead the project, which took almost a decade to complete. The Thorvaldsen’s Museum finally opened on September 18, 1848, the first museum to be built in Denmark.

The museum includes the original plaster models of Thorvaldsen’s sculptures, the original design sketches, and many original pieces of his artwork, including his **Self Portrait** (1839). It also includes many priceless items that Thorvaldsen amassed over the years, including his extensive collection of paintings, drawings, engravings, antiques, and books.

**Died in Birth City**

Thorvaldsen passed away in Copenhagen on March 24, 1848, reportedly while attending the theater. He died only a week after his museum opened, at age 68. His funeral was held in the Cathedral Church of Our Lady in Copenhagen, and his coffin was eventually interred in the inner courtyard of the Thorvaldsen Museum.

During his lifetime, Thorvaldsen was a member of a large number of academies of fine arts, societies, and associations throughout Europe, Russia, and the United States. He became a member of the Danish Royal Academy of Fine Arts in 1805 and the St. Luca Academy in 1808. He also was named a Citizen of Honor in Mainz in 1835, in Copenhagen in 1838, and in Stuttgart in 1841.

**Books**


**Online**

“Bertel Thorvaldsen, Danish Sculptor,” http://arthistory1.school.dl.frame...Thorvaldsen.htm (December 27, 2002).

Samuel Chao Chung Ting

Nuclear physicist Samuel C. C. Ting (born 1936) shared the 1976 Nobel Prize for physics with Burton Richter for discovering the existence of a new particle called $\psi$. Ting’s study of the physics of electron-positron pairs produced during a nuclear reaction led to the discovery of a new particle. This particle, $\psi$, supplied nuclear theorists with the key to a suspected fourth quark and opened research into a fourth type of subatomic particle whose existence had until then been speculative. Ting’s work during the latter decades of the twentieth century found him involved in what was dubbed “Big Science,” experimentation requiring financing by top-notch teams of scientists, expensive state-of-the-art equipment, governing boards, and an international approach. Ting was especially suited for work in such a high-pressure environment. An *Economist* contributor noted in profiling the American physicist that he “is determined to get authoritative results, and demands that his associates be similarly single-minded. An experiment run by Dr. Ting is not a casual affair; to say that he is strict is... an understatement. He can be charming. He can also be ruthless.”

Raised in War-torn China

Ting was born January 27, 1936, in Ann Arbor, Michigan. His parents, Kuan Hai Ting, an engineering professor, and Tsun-Ying Wang, a psychology professor, were graduate students at the University of Michigan; while they had intended to return to their native China before Tsun-Ying gave birth, the infant was born two months early. He was the first of three children born to the Tings.

Two months after Ting’s birth, his parents returned to mainland China, where he was raised by his parents and maternal grandmother. Because of the disruption caused by the Japanese invasion of China during World War II, Ting was not able to enter school until he was 12. His early education fell to his family, especially to his maternal grandmother, a independent-minded widow and teacher who raised her daughter and put both herself and Ting’s mother through college during a time when women in China were not usually so self-reliant. Both his parents worked throughout Ting’s childhood, and through their affiliation with academics from several Chinese universities they instilled in their son an interest in learning. As Ting noted in his autobiography for the online *Nobel e-Museum*, “Perhaps because of this early influence, I have always had the desire to be associated with university life.”

During his teens he and his family moved to Taiwan, where his father taught engineering at the National Taiwan University. Accepted at one of Taipei’s most acclaimed senior high schools, Ting excelled in chemistry, physics, mathematics, and history.

Encouraged by his parents to attend their alma mater, Ting was accepted to the University of Michigan. On December 6, 1956, he arrived at Detroit’s Metropolitan Airport with a hundred dollars and only a few words of English. Fortunately, the dean of the university’s engineering school was a friend of Ting’s father, and he and his family opened their home to the 20-year-old student. While his inability to communicate with his fellow students caused Ting difficulty as a college freshman at Michigan, he quickly gained skill in English and was relatively fluent by his sophomore year.

Little Money, Large Goals

Ting was determined to excel in his studies. He was able to obtain enough scholarship and grant money to fund his degree, and after switching from the School of Engineering to the School of Science, he earned his B.S. in engineering mathematics and physics in 1959. Ting earned his M.A. the following year and by 1962 received his Ph.D. in physics, a remarkable feat considering that Ting had only a weak grasp of English six years previously.

Ting courted a young architect named Kay Louise Kuhne; they married in 1960 and had two daughters, Jeanne and Amy, before their eventual divorce. With his Ph.D. completed, in 1963 Ting and his family moved to Geneva, Switzerland, where he served as a Ford Foundation postdoctoral scholar at the European Organization for Nuclear
Research. There, Ting worked alongside Italian physicist Guisseppe Cocconi on a new type of particle accelerator called the Proton Synchrotron, emulating the Italian physicist’s exacting methodology.

Returning to the United States the following spring, Ting joined the faculty at Columbia University, where he worked with a number of well-known physicists and became interested in the physics of electron-positron pair production. Electrons and positrons are similar subatomic particles, with electrons negatively charged and positrons positively charged. In the process of atomic decay, electron-positron pairs are produced.

During Ting’s second year at Columbia, he heard about an interesting experiment using Harvard University’s Electron Accelerator, with results seemingly in violation of accepted predictions of quantum electrodynamics (the interaction of matter with electromagnetic radiation). In the Harvard experiment, photons collided with a nuclear target, creating electron-positron pairs.

Perplexed by the Harvard results, in March 1966 Ting took a leave of absence from Columbia and went to the Deutsches Elektronen-Synchrotron installation in Hamburg, Germany, to see if he could duplicate the Harvard experiment. With a team of colleagues, he constructed a double-arm spectrometer, an instrument capable of verifying that the quantum electrodynamics description of particle emissions is correct to distances as small as one hundred-trillionth of a centimeter. Using this spectrometer, Ting was able to study the physics of electron pairs, particularly the way such pairs are created during the decay of photon-like particles. The instrument also allowed Ting to view the angles of particulate deflection from the beam of radiation, facilitating calculations of particulate mass and allowing scientists to view the relationships between specific particles.

In 1967 Ting returned to the United States and joined the physics faculty as an assistant professor at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology; he became a full professor two years later. In early 1972, Ting led his research team in a follow-up experiment at the Brookhaven National Laboratory on Long Island, New York. To aid his research into the production of electron-positron pairs, Ting designed a more advanced version of the double-arm spectrometer. This new version, using a higher-energy proton beam, was able to increase the beam’s energy in small increments and monitor the effect of those incremental changes on particle pair production. Ting hoped that the change would create a heavier particle that would decay into electron-positron pairs. The new spectrometer proved effective, and Ting’s reputation among his colleagues was greatly enhanced by his demanding quest for irrefutable findings while at Brookhaven.

The J Particle

In August 1974 the experiment at Brookhaven produced a surprising reading, a spike in the production of electron-positron pairs at 3.1 billion electron volts. This reading diverged from then-current atomic theory. Believing the reading to denote the presence of a yet-unknown high-mass particle, Ting analyzed the experimental data for months, reporting his finding to colleague Giorgio Bellettini, director of Italy’s Frascati Laboratory. Bellettini confirmed Ting’s discovery, and in November the physicists jointly presented their findings in papers published in Physical Review Letters. Ting had discovered a new elementary particle three times heavier than a proton, with a narrow range of energy states, and with a longer life span than anything known in physics. Since Ting’s work involved electromagnetic currents bearing the symbol “j,” and because the Chinese character representing the word “Ting” is similar in form to the letter “J,” he called his discovery the “J particle.”

Shortly after Ting’s announcement, Stanford University’s Linear Accelerator Center director Wolfgang Panofsky notified Ting that Stanford University physicist Burton Richter had also recently demonstrated the existence of a new particle, dubbed the “psi particle,” by forcing collisions between electrons and positrons in Sanford’s accelerator. When the two physicists met and compared their results, they realized the particles they had each discovered were the same. The dual discovery by Ting and Richter of what is now called the “J/psi particle” sparked research by other physics laboratories, providing nuclear theorists with the first experimental evidence of the existence of a fourth fundamental subatomic particle or “quark,” dubbed “charm,” whose existence some nuclear theorists had predicted as early as 1970. It was speculated that charm unified electromagnetic forces with other, weaker forces, balancing such forces at high energy.

Nobel Prize

In 1976 the 40-year-old Ting joined Richter in sharing the Nobel Prize in physics for their discovery of a heavy elementary particle of a new kind. Because less than two years had passed since the announcement of their dual discoveries, the two physicists set a record for the briefest period between discovery to Nobel recognition in the award’s history. Although the speed with which the award was bestowed concerned some members of the scientific community, Ting and Richter’s discovery has stood the test of time. Earning the Nobel Prize solidified the reputation of both physicists. Ting was hailed as a daring, precise experimentalist who approached his work with great insight and attention to detail.

Other kudos quickly followed. Immediately following his Nobel win, Ting was presented with the Ernest Orlando Lawrence Memorial Award for Physics from the U.S. Energy Research and Development Agency, followed by the Ehringen medal in 1977 and the Forum Engelberg prize in 1996. In 1978 the University of Michigan honored its esteemed graduate with a Doctoris Honoris Causa. Other honorary degrees came from the Chinese University in Hong Kong in 1987, the University of Bologna in 1988, Columbia University and China’s University of Science and Technology in 1990, Moscow State University in 1991, and the University of Bucharest in Romania in 1993.

Research into Atomic Construction

After his Nobel win, Ting continued to involve himself in large-scale, expensive experiments in his continued
search for new subatomic particles. In 1979 he worked with researchers at China’s University of Science and Technology to verify the existence of gluon, which transmits energy between quarks. In the late 1980s he became active in the scientific community’s advocacy of a proposed superconducting super collider, a $8-plus billion particle collider supported by President Ronald Reagan. In 1990 Ting and his team were one of three groups competing for the contract to build the giant particle detector required for use with the Texas-based super-collider. Ting’s proposed detector was not chosen for the project.

In 1989 Ting led a team of physicists in an experiment based in France that attempted to prove the existence of yet another subatomic particle, the “Higgs boson,” a force recognized as a key to understanding the origins of mass—the quality that causes objects to have inertia and requires the application of some degree of force in order to move them. In 1996 Ting joined a group of astrophysicists in positioning an antimatter detector called the Alpha Magnetic Spectrometer on a NASA space shuttle.

As well as serving on the MIT faculty, in 1977 Ting was named MIT’s first Thomas Dudley Cabot Institute Professor, and he has traveled to Beijing Normal College, Jiatong University in Shanghai, and the University of Bologna to serve as honorary professor to advanced physics students at those institutions. He was made a fellow of the American Academy for Arts and Sciences, the Pakistani Academy of Science, Academia Sinica, the Russian Academy of Science, the Hungarian Academy of Science, the Deutsche Akademie Naturforscher Leopoldina, and the National Academy of Sciences. Ting also belongs to physical societies in both the United States and Europe.

In April 1985 Ting married his second wife, educator Susan Carol Marks, with whom he had a son, Christopher. A soft-spoken yet authoritarian person with well-known ambition, Ting was as meticulous in his experimentation and analysis as in his dress. Noted for his uniform of a dark suit and tie, he retained the same drive to uncover new facets of the physical world as he did as a young student on his way to America in pursuit of knowledge.

Books

Periodicals
Discover, April 1996.
Omni, July 1981.
Smithsonian, March 1989.

Online

Jean Toomer
Refusing to be labeled black or white, writer Jean Toomer (1894–1967) was first exalted, then criticized, ignored, and forgotten. However, during the Harlem Renaissance of the 1960s and 1970s, Toomer was not only rediscovered but also “hailed as one of America’s finest African American writers,” noted the University of North Carolina’s (UNC) website dedicated to English studies. Thus, he became “something he wouldn’t have liked”—labeled. Toomer believed that “my racial composition and my position in the world are realities which I alone may determine,” quoted the Southern Literary Journal.

Raised Both Black and White
Born Nathan Eugene Pinchback Toomer on December 26, 1894, in Washington D.C., Toomer, until the age of 18, was perceived by others and lived alternatively as a black and as a white young man. After his father abandoned the family when Toomer was only one year old, he and his mother, Nina, moved in with her father, Pinckney Benton Stewart Pinchback, the first United States governor of African American descent.

While living with his grandfather in Washington D.C., Toomer attended an all-black elementary school, but lived in an affluent white neighborhood. However, when his mother remarried and moved her new family to New York, Toomer’s life turned 180 degrees. In New York, he entered an all-white high school but lived in an all-black neighborhood. In 1909, after his mother’s death, Toomer’s life once again turned 180 degrees. He moved back into his grandfather’s home in Washington D.C. and graduated from an all-black high school.

Living in both black and white worlds affected Toomer greatly. He saw that the world—both the black world and white world—had labeled him based on his appearance. Being a “fair-skinned, straight-nosed, straight-haired” African American, as UNC online described him, allowed Toomer acceptable entrance into the white world. However, by not looking absolutely “passable” white also allowed him entrance into the black world. This dual-entrance ability “added to his sense of isolation from any group identity,” noted Black Issues Book Review. As a result, Toomer, by 1914, began rejecting all attempts to be classified by anyone in any world as “black” or “white.” Toomer became the only label he would never refuse, “American.”

Prepared to Be a Writer
Throughout the mid-1900s, Toomer continued his education by attending a variety of colleges including the University of Wisconsin and the City College of New York. He also studied many subjects such as agriculture, psychology,
and literature. Yet, he never earned a degree. Unbeknownst to even himself, Toomer was not preparing for one career, but for his life as a seeker of knowledge and for his life as a writer.

Toomer began his life as a writer in 1918; for the next few years, he wrote many short stories and poems. Most reflected Toomer’s steadfast idea that there was not a black or white race, but a “new race, that I was one of the first conscious members of this race . . . American,” quoted Darwin Turner in The Wayward and the Seeking. However, these short stories and poems were not widely accepted or read by a popular audience. Unaffected, Toomer continued to write but abruptly stopped just two years later.

Adopted New Philosophy

In 1920, Toomer met writer Waldo Frank. Frank believed that a writer’s or artist’s duty and responsibility was to “[shape] American culture and society,” stated Black Issues Book Review. Since Toomer had proclaimed that he was of no race but American, he adopted Frank’s philosophy that as an American he should use his writing to “[set] the cultural agenda in a way that legislation or political activism could not.”

Shortly after adopting Frank’s beliefs, Toomer discovered a new philosophy—the philosophy of idealism. In order to delve into this new philosophy, Toomer stopped writing, Seeking knowledge, he began to study idealism which led him to believe that “in life nothing is only physical. There is also the symbolical. White and Black . . . In general, the great contrasts. The pair of opposites,” further quoted Turner in The Wayward and the Seeking. Toomer’s role in this philosophy was not so much that of a writer, but as a “reconciler” between the great contrasts of black and white.

To further his role as a “reconciler,” Toomer sought out other writers who believed in and who demonstrated this idealistic philosophy in their work. He found the Imagist poets or Symbolists: Charles Baudelaire and Walt Whitman. These writers, with “their insistence on fresh vision and on the perfect clean economical line was just what I had been looking for,” commented Toomer in The Wayward and the Seeking. Yet, it was not only these writers or this new philosophy which would result in Toomer’s most praised and most criticized novel. It was another geographical move—this time to the South.

Published a Literary Masterpiece

In 1921, Toomer began working and living in Sparta, Georgia. During this time in American history, the segregation of the races could be most blatantly seen in the rural South. No longer could Toomer remain focused on being only a “reconciler,” a seeker of knowledge, or believe in one race, American. In the South, race could not be ignored. This indisputable fact forced Toomer to confront his own personal views on what others had labeled him—both black and white. How he did so was by writing Cane.

Like Toomer’s own three-part identity—black, white, American—the structure of Cane is segregated into three sections. The first focuses on African American life in the South. By detailing the lives of six African American women, Toomer, in this section creates “the idealization of rural African Americans” noted the Southern Literary Journal. In section two, Toomer presents the opposite identity from section one—the urban North. He portrays this urban North as “a place of shallow, materialistic and antimystical striving,” further noted the Southern Literary Journal. The third section once again shifts identities this time back to the rural South. However, Toomer focuses on an artist plagued by what role he should play in the world—should he represent the African American race or strive to become unidentified with any race.

Hailed by many critics of the time as a literary masterpiece, Cane nevertheless faded into obscurity. However, the ending of the book has provided clues as to why Toomer never again specifically focused on the black and white races as separate identities and how these identities can be harmoniously blended. Cane ends with the plagued artist watching a sunrise. As the sun rises, he theorizes that a bridge between races is not possible, yet a “bridge between himself and the universe” is, noted the Southern Literary Journal. Toomer’s subsequent writings emphasized this philosophy.

Challenged Others to Think

Over the next 27 years, Toomer, unlike Cane, did not fade into obscurity. He married twice, became a father, and continued to challenge himself and others to think about their perception of the world. His belief that there is no
black or white race, only American, never wavered; yet, how people should discover this belief changed with each new philosophy Toomer studied. For example, in 1938, Toomer traveled to India where he began writing about spiritual enlightenment. However, he struggled with India’s “a life of withdrawal from the world,” noted biographers Cynthia Kerman and Richard Eldridge in The Lives of Jean Toomer: A Hunger for Wholeness.

During the 1940s, Toomer continued to struggle to connect his understanding of idealism to another religion: Quakerism. He tried to work through this struggle by organizing a living space called the Mill House. The Mill House welcomed both Quakers and laymen and offered an opportunity for both to dismiss all separations of religions and cultures. One member of Mill House praised Toomer for the “opened doors we were ready to walk through,” quoted BANC! Toomer wrote many essays and lectured frequently about Mill House; however, unlike Cane, they were not widely read. By 1950, Toomer stopped writing altogether, slowly withdrew from public life, and on March 30, 1967, in Doylestown, Pennsylvania, he died.

Rediscovered Masterpiece and Writer

Why Toomer remained forgotten until the Harlem Renaissance has been widely debated. One popular theory is that Toomer was “frustrated by his inability to market much of his work,” noted African American Review. Therefore, because of the time in which Toomer had been writing, he had been labeled a black writer. And, the white society had been taught not to read a novel, an essay, a poem, or other works by a writer identified as “black.”

The Southern Literary Journal has offered another popular theory as to why Toomer was forgotten. Toomer created his own obscurity by showing two faces—the “good” Toomer and the “bad” Toomer. The good Toomer “briefly and tactfully uses race to contain literary ambiguity [in Cane], but the bad Toomer jettisons both race and literary ambiguity.” In other words, Toomer was seen as a race traitor because he “challenged his culture’s demand for absolute distinctions between white and black,” noted African American Review. Consequently, because Toomer maintained his belief that he was no race but American, he pushed himself into obscurity.

However, this view changed during the 1960s and 1970s. Toomer was no longer seen as “bad” or a “race traitor.” During this time of the Harlem Renaissance, “Toomer’s rejection of race sounded, more importantly, like a rejection of white cultural hegemony,” stated Black Issues Book Review. Therefore, Toomer became a cultural African American icon who, like civil rights activist Malcolm X, promoted the African American race as a separate identity.

Yet, by the 1990s, another theory would once again re-emphasize that Toomer was not rejecting the white race or the black race. He accepted and truly believed that there is only one race, American. Integrating Roland Barthes classic 1956 essay Myth Today, Charles Harmon in the Southern Literary Journal offered his own interpretation of Cane using the philosophy of “neither/norism.”

This philosophy, Barthes defined as “stating two opposites and balancing the one by the other so as to reject them both,” Harmon quoted. Thus, Toomer, in Cane, which had presented both the black viewpoint and white viewpoint while ultimately rejecting both, had done just what Barthes defined. Therefore, Toomer should not be seen as “good” or “bad,” rejecting the white hegemony, or as a race traitor—or in effect, a two-faced writer. What Toomer should be seen as is a writer who courageously challenged a belief by writing a masterpiece.

Ultimately, Toomer has been remembered as a significant writer—a significant African American writer. Although still labeled, Toomer’s own words live on to reject that label. As quoted by the African American Review, Toomer never worried about how others saw him. He had always “simply gone and lived here and there. I have been what I am.” And, as he further commented on racial identity, he urged people to realize that “both white and colored people share the same stupidity.” However, it is Toomer’s message to writers and artists that may truly silence his critics and his labelers: “Art . . . embraces all life . . . its noblest function . . . is to expand, elevate, and enrich that life.”

Books

Periodicals
African American Review, Fall 1998.
BANC! 2, 1972.

Online

Joseph Burr Tyrrell

Canadian geologist Joseph Burr Tyrrell (1858–1957) inadvertently made one of the most important discoveries of dinosaur bones in North America in 1884. The skull and skeleton he dug up by accident in a remote part of Alberta proved to be the Albertosaurus sarcophagus, a slightly smaller cousin of Tyrannosaurus rex and the first of its genus found anywhere in the world. Tyrrell’s findings aroused international interest and brought hordes of paleontologists to dig in this unpopulated part of western Canada. Tyrrell was one of Canada’s most famed geologists and explorers and mapped out vast stretches of its northern lands.
Avoided Career in Law

Tyrrell was born on November 1, 1858, in Weston, Ontario, a town his father had founded. It later became part of metropolitan Toronto. His father’s family was an esteemed Irish clan that hailed from Castle Grange in County Kildare. The elder Tyrrell emigrated to Canada and made a fortune as a stonemason in Ontario before marrying Elizabeth Burr, whose family roots in the New World dated back to 1682. In Weston, the Tyrrell family lived in an immense 24-room stone house. As a child, Tyrrell suffered a bout with scarlet fever that left him partially deaf; his vision was impaired as well, but he wore glasses to correct it. He studied at Upper Canada College as a teen and went on to an arts course at the University of Toronto.

The senior Tyrrell steered his son into a career in law, but Tyrrell was fascinated by the natural world and studied biology, botany, and other branches of science in his spare time. He even conducted research on his own with a microscope and published a paper in the *Ottawa Field Naturalist* on mites that cause feline ailments. Professors introduced him to associates of the Geological Survey of Canada (GSC), the government agency formed in the 1840s with a mandate to search out coal fields and other potential sources of revenue for what was then the province of Quebec and Ontario. The agency and its staff expanded considerably over the next few decades as Canada became a full-fledged confederacy.

After Tyrrell finished at the University of Toronto in 1880, he began studying for the bar and working at a local firm, as was the custom in the era before law schools became commonplace, but he was still weak from a bout with pneumonia a few years earlier. His physician suggested that outdoor work would restore him to health, so Tyrrell found a temporary post as an assistant at the GSC, which was moving its offices from Montreal to Ottawa and needed additional staff. His first task was to unpack and sort through hundreds of specimens of Canadian rocks.

Ventured into Rough Terrain

One of the GSC’s leading names was George Mercer Dawson, a member of the International Boundary Commission. While surveying lands along the 49th Parallel, Dawson discovered the first dinosaur bones in southern Saskatchewan and Alberta in 1874. Such fossil finds were a relatively recent development. In 1770 in Holland, the first ancient skeleton of what was thought to be an immense marine lizard was unearthed. In 1800, the first ancient specimen uncovered by Europeans in North America was a set of fossilized dinosaur tracks in Connecticut.

Dawson, impressed by Tyrrell’s dedication to his job, invited him to accompany a GSC survey that was planned to help the Canadian Pacific railroad determine its westward route through the foothills of the Rockies in 1883. Tyrrell eagerly accepted. After having spent his life in Toronto and Ottawa, he found the Canadian West a lawless but exciting place, where horses were stolen if camps were not guarded well enough. The trip was an arduous one, both for the surveying work itself—which involved counting the number of steps taken and taking compass measurements—but also for the terrain. “Black flies without number from six a.m. till noon,” Tyrrell wrote in his journal, according to Alex Inglis’s biography, *Northern Vagabond: The Life and Career of J. B. Tyrrell, the Man Who Conquered the Canadian North.* “At eight o’clock the bull-dog flies came to their assistance and made the horses’ lives a burden to them until evening. There was a short respite, then the mosquitoes arrived to prevent any rest for the night.”

Discovered Immense Dinosaur Fossil

In 1884, at the age of 26, Tyrrell was given his own field party to lead. He and his assistants traveled by canoe to an area north of the Bow River in southwestern Alberta. On a mission to search for coal deposits in the Red Deer River valley, on June 9 Tyrrell and his party instead found a giant skull in the area. Digging further, he unearthed a large cache of bones and arranged to have them taken to Fort Calgary. The load was so heavy that it broke the axle of the wagon. From there they were shipped to Philadelphia for verification, and Professor E.D. Cope termed the skeleton *Laelaps incassatus* and dated it as 70 million years old. It was later reclassified as an *Albertosaurus sarcophagus* by American Museum of Natural History scholar Henry Fairfield Osborne in 1905. It was the first of its genus ever discovered and confirmed as a smaller cousin of *Tyrannosaurus rex*.

News of the find sparked what became known as the Great Canadian Dinosaur Rush in the Red Deer River valley, and many more important discoveries were made. Yet Tyrrell was not a paleontologist and was far more interested in the bituminous coal deposits that were found in the area. The area where he found *Albertosaurus sarcophagus* soon became the large mining center of Drumheller, which thrived well into the 20th Century.

Canada’s Forbidding “Barren Lands”

Tyrrell lived in an Ottawa boarding house during the winter months when not traveling on behalf of the GSC. Despite the hardships of his job, he enjoyed the work very much. “My idea of peace and comfort was a tent by a clear brook anywhere north of 50 degrees of North Latitude,” he wrote in his log, “a ground-sheet and blankets enough, a side of salt pork and a bag of flour. . . . For glory I had the stars and the Northern Lights.” His nomadic lifestyle presented certain challenges for his bride, Mary Edith Carey, the daughter of an Ottawa Baptist minister, whom he wed in 1894. The couple were often separated for long periods of time. At other times, he brought along his brothers Grattan or James to serve as his assistants.

Tyrrell’s next major assignment was a lengthy GSC expedition of what was known as the Barren Lands, the area west of the Hudson Bay and north of Winnipeg. His trip beginning in 1893 would secure his place in Canadian history, for the area had only recently come under Canadian sovereignty. It was formerly held by the Hudson’s Bay Company, a fur-trading enterprise, and there were very few settlers there. To prepare for his trip, Tyrrell read the journals
of David Thompson, the Hudson’s Bay surveyor who measured much of the Canadian wilderness in the 1780s and 1790s.

Sometimes Presumed Missing

Over the course of the next four years Tyrrell and his party of seven made lengthy trips that brought back a wealth of information about the region. It was an arduous journey, marked by bitterly cold temperatures and supported by a bare minimum of food supplies. They traveled by canoe, dog sled, and snowshoe, meeting many communities of Athapascan Indians and Inuit along the way. At times they camped with the indigenous people and shared native delicacies such as fried moose. Tyrrell thought it interesting that when he offered an Athapascan a job as a guide, it was the man’s wife who decided if he should take it. Nearly half of the thousands of square miles Tyrrell and his party covered had been utterly unknown territory and had not even been surveyed by the Hudson’s Bay Company.

At times, Tyrrell’s party was delayed by weather or other mishaps, and rumors spread that they had perished. Based on his explorations, Tyrrell became intrigued by glaciation, a relatively new field of study at the time. In 1897, he delivered a paper before the British Association for the Advancement of Science in which he agreed with Swiss-American geologist Louis Agassiz, whose 1840 *tude sur les glaciers* posited that the continents were formed by movements of glaciers during the various ice ages. Supporting Agassiz’s theory, Tyrrell wrote that he had found scratches in the Manitoba granite that showed glacier movement; furthermore, he noted, it was not a single movement but rather a series. He argued that the glaciers had moved south and west to the valleys of the Ohio and Mississippi rivers. Tyrrell also asserted that underneath the Barren Lands were large swaths of Precambrian rock, which later proved true when the entire Canadian Shield was mapped.

Established Lucrative Business

Tyrrell had gone to the Klondike area, a region of the Yukon Territory just east of Alaska, in 1898 to take part in its famous “Gold Rush” that year. Though he did not become rich, he saw how easy it was for fortunes to grow overnight, and he vowed to change careers. In January 1896, Tyrrell and his wife had become parents, and the expanded household strained their finances. Over the years, he had often struggled to make ends meet, for he failed to earn what he thought was an appropriate salary at the GSC despite his renown. The ostensible reason was that he lacked the academic credentials, but there was some backbiting within the agency and others seemed resentful of his fame.

Realizing that one of the little nuggets he saw panned by others was equal to his month’s salary, Tyrrell resigned from the GSC effective January 1, 1899, and went back to the Yukon later that month. In Dawson City he opened a mining consulting business, though he had little actual experience save for his vast knowledge of the area’s geography. The business proved quite successful in investigating possible claims. He moved his firm to Toronto in 1907 to be closer to his family and take advantage of the cobalt and silver rush taking place in northern Ontario. In 1924, he made a wise investment in the Kirkland Lake gold mine in eastern Ontario, and it made him a millionaire.

In the later years of his life, Tyrrell edited the journals of Thompson for publication by the Champlain Society. He settled on a farm and orchard outside of Toronto, which was later subsumed by the city zoo. He died on August 26, 1957, in Toronto, Ontario, at the age of 98. The Drumheller, Alberta, museum near where he made his *Albertosaurus sarcophagus* discovery housed the skeleton and was named the Royal Tyrrell Museum of Paleontology.

Books

Mitsuko Uchida

In a career that has spanned almost 30 years, Mitsuko Uchida (born 1948) has earned her title as one of the greatest classical pianists of the 20th century. She is most readily associated with her ability and recordings of Mozart’s piano works and is a sought-after concert pianist worldwide.

Mitsuko Uchida was born in Tokyo, Japan, on December 20, 1948. She was the third child of Fukito Uchida, a diplomat, and Tasuko Uchida, a homemaker. Before Uchida was born her father had served in Europe in the Japanese diplomatic corps during World War II.

Uchida began her piano lessons when she was three years old as part of a traditional Japanese education. She quickly developed a love for classical music, especially Mozart, as she listened to her father’s collection of European composers’ recordings. She told the Detroit Free Press, “as a small child I remember vividly listening to Mozart again and again.” Mozart would prove to be her life’s passion at the piano. Although her parents probably never envisioned their daughter becoming one of the most important pianists of her generation, her gift was instantly recognizable from early on. Her father would proudly ask her to play for anyone who would listen. But as she told a group of students at Johns Hopkins once, “My parents wanted me to be an ordinary Japanese housewife. They gave me piano lessons so that I could make them proud. . . .” Little did they know that she would go on to become one of the great treasures of current classical music and considered one of the best interpreters of Mozart.

Uchida was an inquisitive youth with questions not only about her music but also about life in general. Her curiosity remained unfulfilled while living in Japan. In addition, the Japanese approach to teaching also seemed stifling to Uchida. “There is a tradition in Japanese society that one is not to question,” she explained to the New York Times. The customary technique to music education in Japan focused more on the mechanical aspect of training, but Uchida sensed the need for a more interpretive training.

Without the background of the Western music tradition, Japanese teachers taught the pure mechanics of the instrument instead of its musicality. She resented the endless rules about notes and formulas because she just wanted to be able to feel and play the music.

At the age of 12, Uchida and her family moved to Vienna, Austria, where her father was a member of the Japanese diplomatic mission. It was in Vienna that Uchida’s eagerness for Western music could be satiated. Though the culture was accessible to her, she still did not seem to find what she was searching for musically. While she learned German and began her musical studies in the Viennese school of music under Richard Hauser at the Vienna Academy of Music, she still felt restricted by her instructors. As she related to the New York Times, it was “full of fixed ideas. There are masses of do’s and don’ts, and ‘music should be played this way.’ So I had to get out of that.”

London Gave Uchida Her Freedom

Once she came to this realization, Uchida moved to London and ended her formal education at age 22. Enticed by London’s independent musical atmosphere, it was there that English became her third “first” language and where she still makes her home. In London Uchida was finally free to explore music on her own terms. For the next several
years, Uchida taught herself. She spent all her time studying and listening to music, especially the recordings of the celebrated pianists and conductors of the 20th century. She was especially drawn to Fritz Busch’s recordings of Mozart, and her music seemed to go in a new direction. Busch’s tasteful liberties with Mozart influenced Uchida to concentrate on the immortal composer’s music with great detail, especially the sonatas and piano concertos.

It was playing Mozart’s music that gave Uchida her first taste of success. Though she placed first in Vienna’s Beethoven Competition in 1969 and second in both Britain’s Leeds International and the Warsaw Chopin Competition, these competitions did little to advance or even begin her career. This was acceptable to Uchida, however, who held the belief that a career could and should unfold slowly and at the one’s own pace. As she told to Ovation, “My life has been built very slowly and securely. If the career goes ahead of you, there will be one day when you fall off of it.”

Broke into Music World with Style

Clearly to Uchida the music is more important than the public image. But the public, once they heard Uchida’s mastery, applauded her as one of her profession’s finest. It was in 1982 when she gave a series of concerts of the complete Mozart sonatas when listeners in great numbers sat up and took notice of her talent for the first time. Though clearly regarded as one of the finest composers, Mozart’s piano sonatas have sometimes been dubbed simplistic. This simply was not so under the careful study and performance of Uchida, who captivated spectators with her thoughtful and intense interpretation of the pieces.

Her reviewers of this series had nothing but radiant praise to bestow upon her. Biography Today quoted a London Times critic who noted: “She does not sing the music; she exists in it.” The interviewer had an astute observation; Uchida feels strongly about her interpretation of the music she plays and the relationship she has with the composer. She also has a humble opinion of her ability. From an interview that she had with Catherine Pate of the London Symphony Orchestra Uchida confided, “All I want is that the people will pick up the beauty of Mozart. I don’t care if they forget it was me playing it as long as they feel the music!”

A few years after her innovative performances of Mozart’s sonatas, she presented all 21 piano concertos in a series of concerts with the English Chamber Orchestra. She conducted these concerts from the piano over the 1985–1986 concert season. Again both audiences and critics were smitten by her ability and expression. She had made the music of Mozart her own while still keeping his intent in the forefront of the music in a way that few performers had been able to achieve. As she revealed in Time, Mozart’s music is a “kind of world in itself . . . so complete that you can forget about the rest. Then you come out, and you are blinded.”

The series of sonata and concerto concerts propelled Uchida into the worldwide spotlight. Soon she was performing in concert halls all over the world and recording award-winning CDs. She has recorded her performances of Mozart’s piano concertos and sonatas, as well as pieces by Beethoven, Chopin, Debussy, and Schubert, just to name a few. Her 2001 recording of the Schoenberg Piano Concerto has won four awards including a Gramophone Award for the best concerto recording.

In preparation for her career and indeed, her mastery of any piece that she chooses to perform, Uchida undertakes the task with intricate deliberation. Not only does she study the music and writings of the composer, but she also searches for insight into what the composer was thinking and how his ideas came about. It was this knowledge of music she craved as a youth in Japan but could not find. Now on her own she was free to discover it. She does this in part by examining music theory with Heinrich Schenker, a theorist, editor, and pianist who is known for his revolutionary method of musical analysis. He has been a great influence on her as she told a group of students she spoke to in 1998 at Johns Hopkins University. “I have found his analysis fascinating . . . .”

Uchida brings this knowledge and careful preparation to her performances, where audiences and critics alike are privy to it. Critics have praised her incessantly. Time wrote that she “plays . . . with a remarkable combination of energy and tenderness, a considerable rhythmic freedom and a lovely tone.” In the American Record Guide Shirley Fleming wrote “Her range of touch is extraordinary. . . . Perhaps her overriding characteristic is lyrical flow, captured in . . . complete elegance of phrasing.” Louis Gerber identified her as an artist with “refreshing interpretations of Beethoven’s works and clear and pure playing.” Uchida has absolutely
earned her reputation as one of the world’s supreme concert pianists.

By most standards, Uchida is conservative in how many concerts she will give in a year. She tries to keep the number between 50 and 60 a year, though she has done 70 once. She told the New York Times, “It was excessively hard for me. If you stick to two piano concertos plus one recital program, you can play 100 concerts. But I like to play different things. The repertory is so vast.” In addition to wanting to play a more varied concert program, she is careful to restrict her numbers to ward off burnout. Even so, she is incredibly busy as an artist. In 1998 she was named the first woman director of the Ojai Music Festival in California. At the same time, she was acting as co-director of the Marlboro Festival in Vermont. She was also an Artist-in-Residence at the Cleveland Orchestra.

Undaunted by the bias the profession has for younger musicians, Uchida has already made plans to perform a series of concerts in 2018. According to Biography Today, “She is already preparing for a series of concerts she plans to give . . . when she turns 70. That year, she plans to perform Bach’s Goldberg Variations and all 48 of his Preludes and Fugues.” The music will take her years to prepare, but she is looking forward to it. It is still a joy for her to play the instrument after so many years.

Life outside of performing for Uchida is still consumed with the piano and music. She is a confirmed Londoner and lives in a house there with a separate studio that houses her five pianos. She has never married and has never had children, believing, according to Biography Today, that her career would not have been possible if she had had a child. Because of the travel required, as well as preparation, both children and her work would have suffered greatly. In this way, though she enjoys other activities such as reading and theater, she has little time for much else other than music and it is a positive choice that Uchida has made. As she told Catherine Pate in an interview, “I have no other passions. I like other things, but I only have enough room for one real passion, and that is music.”

Books
Harris, Laurie Lanzen, Biography Today, Omnigraphics, Inc., 1999.

Periodicals
Ovation, October 1988.

Online

Al Unser
Alfred Unser was born on May 29, 1939, in Albuquerque, New Mexico. The youngest of four brothers, he grew up in a racing family. His father Jerry and uncles Louis and Joe were or had been race car drivers, and although they never made it to the Indianapolis 500 they were annual competitors in Colorado’s Pikes Peak International Hill Climb starting in 1926. Joe Unser was the first member of the Unser family to lose his life racing, dying in 1929 following an accident in Colorado while test-driving a FWD Coleman Special.

A Family Affair
Unser’s eldest brother, Jerry, a rising star in the racing world, was the reigning national stock car champion in 1956. Jerry Unser became the first family member to compete in the Indianapolis 500 in 1958, finishing 31st. A year later, he lost his life following a fiery crash during a practice run, leaving other family members to compete in his stead. By 2002 six Unsers had competed in the Indy 500: brothers Al and Bobby, as well as Al’s son, Al Jr., with a combined nine victories, had walked away with over a quarter of all Indy first-place wins. Bobby Unser (born 1934) made his first appearance in the Indy 500 in 1963 and won the race in 1968, 1975, and 1981. Al Unser, Jr. (born 1962) went on to become the first second-generation Indy 500 champion. Besides Al Jr., other Indy competitors in the Unser family include Jerry’s son Johnny and Bobby’s son Robby.

The Indy 500
The first Indianapolis 500 was held on Memorial Day 1911, at the Indianapolis, Indiana Motor Speedway. Built in 1909 as a testing ground for Indiana’s then rapidly expanding automobile industry, the Indianapolis Motor Speedway was originally used to promote automobile sales. Affectionately known as “The Brickyard,” the track was originally surfaced with paving bricks. Although the modern track is covered by asphalt, most of the original paving bricks are still in place under the asphalt surface. Running 2.5 miles in length, the track has four turns linked by two long straight sections and two short straight sections. Today, billed as the Greatest Spectacle in Racing, the 500-mile competition is

America’s premier automobile race, pitting drivers against each other as they travel at average speeds well in excess of 150 miles per hour (mph).

In 1957 18-year-old Unser began driving modified roadsters in Albuquerque. He first drove in the Pike’s Peak Hill Climb in 1960, taking second in that race to his older brother Bobby’s first. He also won the dirt track “Hoosier Hundred” four years in a row. In 1964 Unser made his Indy car debut in Milwaukee, Wisconsin. Later the same year he won the Pikes Peak Hill Climb, putting an end to his brother Bobby’s six-year winning streak. During this time he also raced sprints and midgets.

In 1965 Unser entered his first Indy 500, finishing ninth after starting in the last row. That same year he also captured his first “champ car” victory at Pikes Peak. In 1967 he came in second in the Indy 500, finishing behind A. J. Foyt, and claimed his first lead position by posting the fastest qualifying speed. Racing United States Auto Club stock cars, Unser was named Rookie of the Year, and in 1968 won five consecutive races and took five poles—the pole, or lead starting, position is awarded to the car with the fastest qualifying time. He was unable to compete in the 1969 Indy 500 due to a broken leg, but the year nevertheless saw him win five races in 19 starts.

“Everything Went Right”

In 1970 Unser drove his Johnny Lightning Special to an Indy 500 victory after leading for all but ten of the 200 laps and maintaining an average speed of 155.749 mph. Among his competitors in the race was his brother Bobby. Aided by a pit crew able to provide the driver with lightning-quick pit stops, Unser went on to accumulate a total of ten victories on oval road and dirt tracks during the 1970 season, earning him the United States Auto Club national championship. In the same year, he took eight poles, including at Indianapolis. Unser would later tell ESPN.com: “Everything went right that year. Everything, The car was right. The mechanics. I was right. You find that very seldom. I was almost unbeatable.”

In 1971 Unser repeated his previous year’s Indy 500 victory, averaging 157.735 mph to become one of only four back-to-back winners. He has maintained that the biggest difference in his two victories was that, after the second one, he did not have any trouble finding the victory lane. There was a near tragedy during the 1971 race, however, when Unser’s brother Bobby was involved in a two-car crash. Unser, though he saw the accident, didn’t find out whether his brother was alright until the next lap, when he saw Bobby standing beside the track waving at him.

Life in the Slow Lane

Following his 1971 repeat Indy 500 win, Unser went four years with only a single major racing victory. In 1972 he just missed his bid to become the first person to win the Indy 500 three times in a row after he finished second to Mark Donohue. In 1973 Unser joined the Penske racing team, posting ten top-five finishes and claiming a second PPG Industries championship.

In 1977 Unser won races at Pocono, Milwaukee, and Phoenix. He also came in second in Indy-car points—points are awarded to the fastest qualifier and to the driver leading by the most laps in a race—and won the International Race of Champions (IROC) championship. The following year he took racing’s Triple Crown by winning at Indianapolis, Pocono, and Ontario. He also recaptured the IROC championship.

A Long Shot

Entering the 1978 Indianapolis 500 in a FNCTC Chaparral Lola, Unser was considered a long shot in that year’s race. Then, during the 75th lap, he took the lead. With less than a third of the race remaining, his closest competitor blew an engine and Unser went on to win the race with an average speed of 161.363 mph. Unser’s combined victories at Indianapolis, Pocono, and the California 500’s in 1978 made him the first driver to clinch what were quickly dubbed “Triple Crown” honors.

In 1983 Unser became the first driver to race against his son, Al Jr., in the Indy 500, then went on to capture the Championship Auto Racing Teams (CART) championship series. Two years later, at the age of 46, he became the oldest ranking Indy car-CART champion after defeating Al Unser, Jr. by one point.

The Old Man

The year 1987 marked Unser’s most exciting Indy 500 victory. That year car owner Roger Penske dropped the 48-year-old Unser from his racing team in favor of a younger driver named Danny Ongais. After Ongais crashed his car into a wall during practice shortly before qualifications, both the driver and Penske’s car were out of commission. The Penske team quickly began readying a used 1986 March that had been sitting in a hotel lobby in Pennsylvania and installed a Cosworth DF2 engine in the March after they were unable to find a preferred Chevy engine for it. Penske asked Unser to race the car at Indy.

Accepting Penske’s offer, Unser took his first practice laps in the March only three days before the second weekend of Indy 500 qualifications. On race day, after starting in the 20th position, Unser took the lead during the 183rd lap and sped to victory with an average speed of 162.175 mph. The win—Unser’s fourth—tied him with A. J. Foyt for the most wins in the Indy 500. At the same time, Unser also broke his brother Bobby’s record as the oldest Indy 500 winner. A year later, in 1988, Unser became the record holder for the most laps led—625—at the Indy 500.

Retirement and Legacy

Unser announced his retirement on May 17, 1994, a day after the 54-year-old race-car driver attempted to qualify for his 28th Indy 500 race. As Unser told ESPN.com, “I always said if the day came when I wasn’t producing the right way, if I wasn’t happy, I’d get out. . . . The time has come. A driver has to produce 100 percent. You can’t just come in and strap one of these cars on and expect to give answers to the team that they need. I finally realized that it just wasn’t there, and I wasn’t producing like I should.”
At his retirement Unser ranked first in points earned at the Indianapolis 500; second in miles driven and total money won; and—a tie—in total number of Indy 500 starts. In a racing career lasting from 1964 to 1994 he won the Indianapolis 500 four times—in 1970, 1971, 1978, and 1987—and earned victories in 35 other races. By the time he called it quits, Unser’s 39 career CART victories placed him third behind A. J. Foyt’s 67 and Mario Andretti’s 52 wins. Before retiring in 1994, Unser had won over $6 million on the Indy car circuit. He also achieved distinction as one of only three drivers to win on paved ovals, road courses, and dirt tracks in a single season, a feat he accomplished three years running (1968, 1969, and 1970). Unser was inducted in the Motorsports Hall of Fame in 1991. Andretti, in an interview with ESPN.com, praised Unser as one of the top five racers who had ever lived.

Books

Online

Urraca
Queen Urraca (c. 1078–1126), who ruled the Kingdom of Leon-Castilla (also known as Castille-Leon) in northern Spain from 1109 to 1126, was the only woman during the Spanish medieval era to rule in her own right. The failure of her political marriage, which had been designed to unite the kingdoms of Leon-Castilla and Aragon, ultimately led to a civil war.

Background
Between 985 and 1002, the armies of the Muslim Caliphate of Cordoba repeatedly defeated the Christian armies of northern Spain. But with the death of the Muslim dictator’s son and successor in 1008, the Cordoban caliphate began to collapse. With the fall of the caliphate, the dynasties of northern Spain began to rebuild themselves.

But fighting ensued between the Spanish provinces of Leon, Castilla, and Navarra. The Navarrese king eventually took control of both Castilla and Leon—the largest of the northern Christian states—giving rise to a new kingdom under the rule of the king of Navarra. When King Fernando I died in 1065, he divided his empire between his three sons. Fratricidal fighting followed, with Fernando’s eldest son, Alfonso VI, becoming king.

Urraca
Urraca was the daughter of King Alfonso VI and Queen Constance of Burgundy. Constance was the second of the king’s wives, both of them French, a reflection of the monarch’s wish to strengthen his territorial claims.

Urraca’s first husband, Count Raymond of Burgundy, came to Spain around 1086. Evidence suggests that he was almost immediately betrothed, and possibly married, to Urraca, who was then no more than eight years of age. Although canon law set a minimum age for marriage at twelve years for women, exceptions occurred. Records indicate that the marriage of Raymond and Urraca was formalized by 1090, when Alfonso VI issued a charter to the church of Palencia in their name.

In late September 1107, following Count Raymond’s death, Urraca succeeded her husband as ruler of Galicia, the Zamora district, and lands to the southeast. As the wife of Raymond, Urraca was familiar with the politics of the royal court. She was about 27 years old, with two children. Her first child, Sancha, was born sometime before 1095. Her son, Alfonso Raimundez, who would later become Alfonso VII, was born on March 1, 1105. There may have been as many as seven other conceptions that ended in miscarriages, stillbirths, or childhood deaths during the marriage of Urraca and Raymond.

Political Marriage
Before Alfonso VI died, he arranged to have Urraca marry her relative, Alfonso I of Aragon. When the king died on June 30, 1109, Urraca ascended to the throne and, in accord with her father’s wishes, married Alfonso I around October 1109. The alliance meant that Leon-Castilla would be governed by a male warrior who was related to Urraca by blood but who stood above local divisions within the kingdom. Alfonso I was about 36 at the time of the marriage, Urraca about 29. For Alfonso the match held political advantage and promise, while for Urraca it meant a loss of the power she had held since 1107.

The marriage agreement between Urraca and Alfonso I stipulated that if either party left the other against the other person’s will, he or she would forfeit the loyalty of his or her followers. Alfonso had to promise not to leave Urraca for reasons of blood relationship or excommunication. If Alfonso were to have a son by Urraca, the child would inherit his territories in Aragon jointly with Urraca following Alfonso’s death. If no child was conceived, Urraca and her heirs would be the inheritors. If Urraca died first, Alfonso would be entitled to the profits from her lands until he died; following his death the lands would fall to her son by her first marriage, Alfonso Raimundez.
Although Alfonso I would become the greatest warrior of his time—in 1118, he would defeat the great taifa of Zaragoza—he proved too weak to compel acceptance of the alliance with Leon-Castilla. He also failed to father a child with Urraca as quickly as expected. Urraca accused him of physical abuse. Finally, after the Church condemned the marriage on the grounds of consanguinity, there was no way the marriage could continue.

Marital Discord and Civil War

The Muslims threatened to occupy Aragon in the summer of 1109, but Alfonso, accompanied by Urraca, defeated the Muslim forces on January 24, 1110. The following summer, Urraca and Alfonso separated. Two years later, Urraca led her forces against those of Alfonso in an attempt to retake Castilla, which had been seized by her husband. By 1113, Alfonso laid claim to Toledo, Leon, Castilla, and Aragon. The marriage between Urraca and Alfonso was annulled in 1114.

With continued fighting between Urraca and Alfonso I, Urraca made her son by Count Raymond, Alfonso Raimundez, her co-ruler and heir. By the winter of 1116, Urraca had reclaimed most of Castilla from her ex-husband. By that time, Alfonso I was planning on laying siege to the Muslim stronghold of Zaragoza. To free his hand, Alfonso agreed to negotiate a truce with Urraca. The truce would hold until Urraca's death nine years later. And so, in 1117, Urraca chose to hold Castilla at the expense of giving up Zaragoza.

Alfonso I captured Zaragoza from the Moors in 1118. He spent the next five years consolidating that victory, capturing Calatayud in 1120, and many other towns after that. In 1125 he raided Andalusia, raising Christian morale, while encouraging Christians in Muslim lands to settle in his domain. Meanwhile, Urraca focused her attention on securing Toledo.

In 1120, Urraca made the tactical mistake of briefly seizing the prelate Bishop Gelmirez, who had served her father but favored a faction surrounding her son following the death of Alfonso VI. The act placed her at risk of excommunication and could have led to her deposition and replacement by her son. But by appealing directly to the pope, she was able to counter her enemies at home.

Death of Urraca

Urraca died on March 8, 1126, at Saldana on the Rio Carrion in the Tierra de Campos. (Some sources give the date of her death as March 9.) It is not known whether she died of an extended illness.

Some writers have stated that Urraca took as lovers Count Gomez of Candespina and Count Pedro Gonzalez of Lara. It has also been speculated that Urraca used her relationships with suitors as a weapon to achieve political gains, since there is no record that she was ever dominated by any of her reputed paramours. In speeches attributed to Urraca, the queen referred to herself as a lone, poor, weak woman, but her motivation for making these statements is not clear. Possibly they were only meant to appeal to sympathetic listeners.

Urraca's son and heir Alfonso VII was initially refused the crown in favor of Urraca's consort, Count Pedro Gonzalez of Lara and his brother, Rodrigo Gonzalez, Count Astururias de Santillana. But with the support of his allies, Urraca's son ascended to the throne as Alfonso VII in fairly short order, inheriting a kingdom internally at peace. He then set about to recover lands that had been lost to Alfonso I. In 1134, he defeated Alfonso I, who was killed in the battle. Urraca's daughter, Sancha, who never married, played no further role in the monarchy.

Urraca's Legacy

Of Urraca's seventeen years on the throne, only four did not involve a military campaign. Still, Urraca was probably fortunate because the Muslim threat to Leon-Castilla reached its peak at the end of the reign of her father.

During her reign, Urraca made four major policy decisions: to end her Aragonese marriage in 1110–1112; to associate her son with herself in governing her kingdom in 1111 and 1116; to make a truce with Aragon in 1117; and to seize the Archbishop Gelmirez in 1120.

Urraca left 118 known charters. Urraca's administration appears to have been successful, given the paucity of surviving documents. Her society was chiefly agricultural, with a limited exchange of goods locally. Her government would have been expected to arbitrate disputes rather than establish social directions. A number of coins from Urraca's reign survive, some bearing her likeness.

In the 12th century, the Church was involved at every level of political, social, economic, and religious dispute. The bishops of Leon-Castilla opposed Urraca's marriage with Alfonso I, supported her son, and organized military expeditions in defense of her kingdom against the Aragonese in the east and the Muslims in the south. Urraca was able to secure papal support to achieve her own purposes. She avoided excommunication in 1110–1111 over her marriage and persuaded the Church to bless her truce with Alfonso I in 1117.

Books

Online
Theodore Newton Vail

Theodore Newton Vail (1845–1920) was an American entrepreneur who made his fortune in the telephone and mining business and became the first president of the Bell Telephone Company (later American Telegraph and Telephone or AT&T). President of the company for two separate tenures, he was instrumental in establishing telephone service, both local and long distance. A true visionary when it came to running a corporation, Vail oversaw the building of the first U.S. coast-to-coast telephone system, and it was his dedication to basic science that initiated a new research arm for AT&T’s Bell Laboratories.

Vail was born on July 16, 1845, near the town of Minerva, Ohio. His family was rich and influential, its members descended from John Vail, a Quaker preacher who settled in New Jersey in 1710.

Strong Family Heritage

Affluence was not the Vail family’s only attribute. There was a strong tradition of mechanical innovation, business acumen, and foresight. Vail’s relatives were builders, inventors, and engineers. His grandfather, Lewis Vail, was a civil engineer who moved to Ohio and made his name building canals and highways, relatively new infrastructures at that point in American history. One of his uncles, Stephen Vail, was founder of the Speedwell Iron Works, near Morristown, New Jersey. The Speedwell company built a great deal of the mechanical technology that went into the first steamship that crossed the Atlantic Ocean.

 Appropriately enough, other relatives were involved in communications. Vail’s uncle Stephen, together with Stephen’s sons George and Alfred Vail, funded inventor Samuel F. B. Morse with the money for his wireless transmitter. Cousin Alfred Vail invented the dot-and-dash alphabet utilized by Morse’s telegraph. In 1848 Vail himself learned to operate this telegraph when he moved to New Jersey and worked as a clerk in a drugstore. By the time he turned 19, he was working at the Western Union Telegraph Company in New York City.

Married, Vail had one adopted daughter, Katherine, who was actually the daughter of his brother, William Alonzo Vail. She would become one of the founders of Bennington College in Bennington, Vermont.

In 1866 Vail moved his family to Iowa. Three years later, he joined the U.S. Post Office, working in the postal railway service. Like family members before him, he proved to have a knack for innovation. He started the “Fast Mail,” the first mail-only train service, which in 1875 began operations between New York City and Chicago. In 1876 Vail became general superintendent of this railway mail service.

Besides being an innovator, Vail was also an investor and entrepreneur. However, not all of his investments flourished. In 1889 he lost a great deal of money when an enterprise he was involved in, the Boston Heating Company, went out of business.

Joined Bell Telephone

In 1878 Vail left the Postal Office to become general manager of the recently established American Bell Telephone Company, which was started on July 9, 1877. The company had been organized by Gardiner G. Hubbard,
father-in-law of Alexander Graham Bell. It was Hubbard who lured Vail from the postal service to the new company. Hubbard became familiar with Vail when he was involved in congressional investigations into Post Office methods of payment for mail transportation. Hubbard recognized in Vail the qualities that would be necessary to head a new and technologically innovative company. For his part, Vail recognized the viability of the new invention and realized its potential applications. Though his friends and family advised him against the move, Vail accepted the position.

At Bell, Alexander Graham Bell, inventor of the telephone, became the company’s “electrician,” earning a nominal salary of $3,000 annually. Bell’s assistant, Thomas A. Watson, recipient of the world’s first-ever phone call, was named superintendent in charge of research and manufacturing, while Vail held the managerial position until 1887. Years later, Vail would come out of retirement to lead the company a second time.

During his first tenure, Vail demonstrated both a knack for anticipating technical developments and the vision for combining technologies. One of his major accomplishments was directing the expansion of local telephone exchanges. In 1881 he directed the first long-distance phone system, which extended from Boston, Massachusetts, to Providence, Rhode Island. In addition, he organized the financing and business structure of the system. By 1885 Vail had created a vertically integrated supply division as well as a network of affiliates licensed by the parent company. Perhaps even more significantly, he had created a highly creative and effective research and development branch of the company. This division essentially changed the way the people of the world electronically communicated with each other. Also, he helped establish the Western Electric Company, a division of Bell Telephone that built telephone equipment.

Vail proved to be an appropriate choice to head the company, as he introduced business practices than facilitated the almost unparalleled growth of Bell Telephone. At first, however, he might have often questioned his own decision. As a new invention, the telephone was viewed as little more than a “toy,” and the public was at first slow to accept the instrument. During Vail’s first tenure with the company, less than ten percent of the population had embraced the telephone. Vail also had to deal with legal opposition from communications rival Western Union Telegraph Company. However, after years of legal battles the phone company prevailed in court.

Eventually Vail left Bell following a dispute with the company’s board of directors. Board members wanted higher dividends; Vail wanted to put more money back into the company.

Vail played a large part in the success of Bell Telephone due to his strong business sense and his forward-looking vision. He has been credited with seeing the company as more than just a communications business. He recognized early on that the overriding concern was customer service. Vail stated as much to his management staff and brought them all in line with that vision. Later, when he returned from retirement to head the company a second time, he clarified this notion as “universality of service.” The strength of the Bell System, he wrote in the company’s annual report to shareholders in 1907, resided in its universality, which “carries with it the obligation to occupy and develop the whole field.”

## Retirement and Return

Vail retired from the Bell Telephone Company in 1889. True to his entrepreneurial spirit, he then involved himself with investments in mining, waterpower plants, and railway systems in Argentina. When not in South America, he reportedly lived a peaceful life on his Vermont farm. However, the company would eventually come calling again, and Vail was lured out of retirement in 1909.

Vail was 62 years when he went back to work, lured by financier J. P. Morgan, who now controlled the company. By this time the Bell Telephone Company had become American Telephone & Telegraph (AT&T). Vail’s mission was to save the troubled organization, which had gotten into trouble because its phone patents had expired and other smaller companies were coming into the telephone communications business.

Vail was repositioned in his previous job but faced a situation and territory that had changed substantially. AT&T now faced competition. When Bell’s telephone patents expired in 1893 and 1894 many independent telephone companies entered the game. By 1900 almost 6,000 new companies provided service to nearly 600,000 customers. Vail confronted this new problem with three workable solu-
tions. First and most importantly, he decided AT&T should offer the best phone system possible. To this end he focused the company on establishing a long-distance phone network that would encompass all of the United States. To accomplish this ambitious aim, Vail knew he would have to commit large-scale investments into the area of scientific research. This commitment resulted in the creation of the company’s own research branch, Bell Laboratories.

Vail’s most significant accomplishment in the direction was establishing a connection with all existing phone companies into the AT&T system. This resulted in the creation and implementation of the envisioned long-distance system. On January 25, 1915, the first transcontinental phone line was up and running. Vail himself was part of this first transmission that connected Alexander Graham Bell in New York to Thomas Watson in San Francisco. The connection would also include President Woodrow Wilson in Washington, D.C. Only a year later, long-distance phone service was established to Europe.

Vail’s second solution involved cooperation with competitors and leasing them use of his company’s phone lines. Third, and perhaps most tricky, he convinced the U.S. government that the best possible phone service—his concept of “universal service”—could best be accomplished through a monopoly. At first the government had balked at the idea. Federal regulators were unhappy with what it felt was the ruthless behavior the company demonstrated during the interim between Vail’s two leadership tenures. In addition to prohibiting smaller companies the use of its network, AT&T also held a stranglehold on long-distance circuits. The smaller companies, lacking the funds to battle a giant like AT&T, were swallowed up by the larger company. In fact, not only was the government unhappy with AT&T; the public was, too.

To counter the government’s resistance, Vail advanced a rather interesting argument: that telephone service essentially amounted to a natural monopoly, like postal service, and that everyone was best served by such a monopoly. The government saw the merits in this notion. In 1913 the legal department of President Woodrow Wilson’s administration granted AT&T a phone monopoly in exchange for certain concessions. For one thing, AT&T had to agree to allow independent companies to connect to its network. This agreement was known as the Kingsbury Commitment, as it was initiated by AT&T Vice President Nathan C. Kingsbury, who understood that such an agreement would diminish the perception that his company was a bullying giant. The agreement was concluded without the public’s knowledge, and it would stand for decades until the deregulation that came late in the 20th century.

Benevolent Monopoly

The company’s monopoly served both the company and customers well, and AT&T grew both financially and technologically. In the ensuing decades it became the most advanced and reliable phone system in the world. In the process, the telephone—in the hands of AT&T—had a profound effect on society and business. Indeed, as early as 1934 telecommunications had become so firmly entrenched that Congress felt compelled to create the Federal Communications Commission.

A great part of the great transformation wrought by the industry is directly attributable to Vail’s vision as a leader. When he combined the engineering departments of AT&T and Western Electric he created a research department—Bell Laboratories—that produced innovations that would have far-reaching implications, such as the transistor, touch-tone telephones, data networking, and optical and digital technologies. Through the years Bell Labs and its researchers would be honored with six Nobel Prizes, nine U.S. Medals of Science, six Medals of Technology, and many other awards.

Second Retirement

Vail retired a second time in 1919. He joined the company’s board of directors, but died a year later on April 16, 1920, in New York state. He was survived by his adopted daughter, Katherine Hurd; two sons, Theodore N. V. and Andrew C.; 14 grandchildren; and nine great-grandchildren.

After his death, the Vail Award was established to honor his memory. It is awarded to individuals who perform above and beyond the call of duty on their jobs or who display unusual bravery or heroism during emergencies.

Periodicals


Online


Luisa Valenzuela

Luisa Valenzuela (born 1938) is an Argentine writer of both fiction and journalistic works. She is among her nation’s most significant writers, best known for the style of writing that blends magical and fantastic elements into prose known as magical realism, a style often associated with Latin-American writers such as Gabriel Garcia Marquez and Julio Cortazar. Valenzuela is also one of the most widely translated female South American writers. As Naomi Lindstrom wrote in World Literature Today, Valenzuela “has
created numerous narratives in which authoritarian rule in society is mirrored by patriarchal domination in relations between men and women.”

Luisa Valenzuela was born November 26, 1938, in Buenos Aires, Argentina, to parents Pablo Francisco Valenzuela, a physician, and Luisa Mercedes Levinson, a writer of note in Argentina. Valenzuela, an insatiable reader since childhood, attended a British school in her youth.

Began Journalism Career as a Teen

Given her parents’ place in society and the family’s connections with academics, Valenzuela was able to meet writers such as as Jorge Luis Borges, Ernesto Sabato, and Peyrou in her youth. Her parents were a formative influence: “As a child I thought writing was dreary, drab, but they loved it,” recalled Valenzuela in Americas, “They could be quite obnoxious but funny. That impressed me that writing was more lively than one would think.” While she originally hoped to become a painter or a mathematician, writing eventually won out over those early career aspirations.

Valenzuela’s first journalistic work appeared in magazines including Esto Es, Atlantida, Quince Abriles, and El Hogar while she was still in her teens. Her first short story, “Ese Canto,” was published in 1956. Valenzuela also worked for a time at the Biblioteca Nacional, where Borges was the library’s director. She went on to earn a bachelor of arts degree from the University of Buenos Aires.

In 1958 Valenzuela married Theodore Marjak, a French merchant marine and moved with her husband to Normandy, where her daughter, Anna-Lisa, was born. It was while living in France that Valenzuela wrote her first novel, published in 1966 as Hay que sonreir (published in English as Clara), which she wrote while her daughter was napping. In a review of the book, a reviewer for Publishers Weekly called the tale a chronicle of “the bizarre, brutal existence of characters on the fringes” and a “harsh, provoking yet graceful tale of exploitation.”

Divorcing her husband after five years of marriage, Valenzuela moved to Paris and began working as a writer for Radio Television Francaise. She returned to Buenos Aires in 1961 and worked as an editor at La Nacion, the Buenos Aires newspaper, as editor of the Sunday supplement from 1964 to 1972. “I learned a lot from journalism because when I began to work for the supplement to La Nacion I stayed there for nine years,” Valenzuela commented in an interview with Matrix. “I had a boss, Ambrosio Vecino, who was a literary man and was very keen on style. He taught me how to express ideas in a very concise way.” Journalism “allows for a horizontal view of facts, as opposed to the vertical, in-depth, literary vision,” she went on, adding: “I still appreciate journalism because I’m so interested in the world, and there are many issues that make me want to express an opinion, so I still use journalism as a tool and write columns and keep my fiction free of ‘messages.’”

Fellowship and Grant Allowed for Travel

A collection of short stories titled Los hereticos was published in 1967. Valenzuela was subsequently awarded a Fulbright grant in 1969 that allowed her to participate in the International Writers Program at the University of Iowa. The result of this fellowship award was the novel El gato eficaz, which was published in 1972 and translated as Cat-o-Nine-Deaths.

Valenzuela began her freelance journalism career and started lecturing about writing in 1970. Over the course of the next two years she traveled to Barcelona, Paris, and Mexico on a grant from the National Arts Foundation of Argentina. Her journalistic work appeared in publications in the United States, Mexico, France, and Spain, as well as in various publications based in Buenos Aires. These publications included La Nacion, New York Review of Books, Vogue, and the New York-based Village Voice.

Left Argentina

Returning to Buenos Aires in 1974, Valenzuela discovered that the political situation in Argentina following the death of Juan Peron had degenerated into a paramilitary dictatorship rife with violence and repression. Between 1976 and 1983 some 20,000 Argentine citizens “disappeared.” Continuing to work as an editor, Valenzuela also found fictional inspiration in the political regime under which she now found herself living, resulting in another short story collection, Aqui pasan cosas raras, published in 1975. Valenzuela had been teaching at Columbia
University periodically since 1973; in 1979 she was offered a writer-in-residence position and decided to move to the United States to escape the political repression. “I decided to leave in order not to fall into self-censorship,” she told a contributor to *Belles Lettres*. “Exile may be devastating, but perspective and separation sharpen the aim.” At Columbia University she became a teacher in the school’s writing division from 1980 to 1983, the year she was awarded a Guggenheim fellowship.

Her fellowship allowed Valenzuela to move across town to New York University, where she was appointed visiting professor in 1985. She held that post until 1990, traveled frequently to lecture, and was a guest speaker at writing conferences in locations throughout the world, including the Americas, Israel, and Australia.

**Political Repression Informed Fiction**

Valenzuela became a fellow at the New York Institute for the Humanities in 1982 and belonged to the Freedom to Write committee of PEN’s American Center. Her concerns with human rights issues prompted her to join Amnesty International.

As an essayist noted in the *Dictionary of Hispanic Biography*, Valenzuela’s work continues to revolve around themes of politics and women’s issues. Also rooted within her work is the violence and suffering experienced in many Latin American countries under authoritarian regimes. In her novel *Cola de lagartija*—translated as *The Lizard’s Tail*—the protagonist, a cruel sorcerer, is based on Jose Lopez Rega, Isabel Peron’s Minister of Social Welfare.

Z. Nelly Martínez, writing in *World Literature Today*, observed that Valenzuela’s “main pre-occupation throughout the years has been the repressive character of our primarily masculinist Western culture. Thus the fate of women . . . as well as that of all marginalized peoples, is at the center of the fictional realms she creates.” Martínez maintained that through the power of language Valenzuela “has obsessively defied the established order,” be it masculine, political, or religious, “with her own fictional practice.”

“Another salient feature of Valenzuela’s style is her approach to language as not only the means of conveying a theme, but also as the object of the story,” added an essayist in the *Feminist Writers*. For Valenzuela, “Language is supple and malleable, its purpose can be different for different people, and the denial of access to its multiple ranges of applications is seen as another form of oppression. Valenzuela contends that, as a writer, she is always discovering new meanings to words and that she hopes to unlock their secrets each time she endeavors to write something new.”

**Eventual Return to Argentina**

With democracy restored to Argentina in April of 1989 Valenzuela returned to Buenos Aires. Returning on occasion to New York City, she continued to write prolifically, as evidenced by the publication of the novels *Novela negra con argentinos*—translated as *Black Novel (with Argentines)*—and *La travesía* as well as the 1990 short-story collection *Realidad nacional desde la cama* (*Bedside Manners*). A *Publishers Weekly* contributor, in a review of *Black Novel (with Argentines)*, dubbed the work “powerful, unusual and unsettling.” Reviewing 2001’s *La travesía*, Lindstrom described the novel as, while “not the most strikingly innovative of Valenzuela’s fictions,” nonetheless a book with “a good dose of social satire, a tricky and fast-paced plot whose diverse strands are well coordinated, and a cast of memorably weird secondary characters.”

Valenzuela’s works have been translated into English and have appeared in anthologies. Among the published collections to appear in translation is *Strange Things Happen Here: Twenty-Six Short Stories and a Novel* (1979), which includes the novel *Como en la guerra* (*He Who Searches*) as well as stories from *Aquí pasan cosas raras*. Among her best known works in translation are *Other Weapons*, *The Lizard’s Tail*, *Black Novel (with Argentines)*, and *Bedside Manners*. Much of her work has been published in translation outside the Americas, including Japan, and her books can be found in French, German, and Portuguese translations, leading to her acclaim as the most widely translated of the South American female authors.

“Valenzuela could be placed into the post-boom generation of Latin American writers, following on the heels of the explosion of popularity of authors who enjoyed a widely translated readership in Europe and North America,” concluded the *Feminist Writers* essayist. “She is emphatic, however, that the Latin American boom was a sexist phenomenon, since all the writers recognized within that group were men, and since women whose writing was of comparable quality were virtually ignored.”

**Books**

*Dictionary of Hispanic Biography*, Gale, 1996.


**Periodicals**


**Online**


Gregorio Vázquez Arce y Ceballos

South American artist Gregorio Vázquez de Arce y Ceballos (1638-1711) was the most important painter of the Spanish Colonial era in Columbia. He worked during an era dominated by the Hispano-American Baroque style that flourished from 1650 to 1750. Vázquez has come to be regarded as the great-
Gregorio Vázquez de Arce y Ceballos was born May 9, 1638, in Bogota, Columbia. Raised in that city, he grew up in the Creole society that first settled there in 1630. He was descended from a family of Andalusian ancestry, his family emigrating from Seville, Spain, settling in South America in the late 16th century.

The area where Vázquez grew up possessed a vibrant and artistic culture. This greatly influenced the young artist, providing him with an environment that fostered his artistic ambition. Still, Vázquez had to work long and hard to develop his artistic talents. To accomplish this, he often copied the styles and techniques of famous European artists.

Vázquez received his early education in a Jesuit seminary. When he was 15 years old, his father, Bartholomew Vázquez, recognized in his son an artistic talent that needed nurturing, and he encouraged the boy to paint. Through his father’s efforts, Vázquez was able to study under Balthasar de Figueroa, one of the most famous artists of the day and a member of an artistic family. Even though his education with Figueroa did not last long, Vázquez learned a great deal and was inspired to begin producing works on linen cloth. One of his first works was painted for the convent of Santa Clara de Tunja in 1657, when the artist was only 19 years old.

Diverse Artistic Influences

In addition to his studies as a disciple of Figueroa, Vázquez was inspired by European drawings and engravings as well as by the major works of art produced by European masters. His main inspirations included the Spanish artist Juan de Valdés Leal (1622–1690), who painted in the baroque style. Other influences included Italian Painters Sassoferrato (1609–1685) and Guido Reni (1575–1642), Flemish Painter Peter Paul Rubens (1577–1640), and Bartoleme Murillo (1617–1682), another Spanish painter, all of whose works found their way to Columbia. It is believed that Vázquez met Murillo’s oldest son, who lived in Bogota from 1678 to 1700, and was able to see up close the works of the Spanish master.

Painted in the Baroque Style

Because of his technique and his use of color, Vázquez is considered a baroque painter. The baroque painting style emerged as a movement in Europe around the beginning of the 17th century as a reaction against the Mannerist style which dominated the late Renaissance period with its intricate and formulaic technique. The baroque style developed in Italy and then spread throughout Europe and into the Latin-American colonies. Baroque artists strove for a simpler, more realistic approach that would be emotionally engaging, and the movement was encouraged by the Catholic Church, then a major patron of the arts. Members of the Church regarded the baroque style as more traditional and spiritual. In this way, baroque painting demonstrates an influence of the ancient Greek and Roman art through its use of idealized human figures. The greatest artists of the baroque movement were Caravaggio, Peter Paul Rubens, Rembrandt, Gian Lorenzo Bernini, and Jan Vermeer.

More specifically, Vázquez belonged to the School of Colonial Painting, which combined Spanish baroque with the influence of the Italian, Flemish, and French schools and which is sometimes called “Creole art.” What drove the development of colonial painting was the encouragement of the ecclesiastical powers, such as the Catholic Church, who saw art as a way to interpret religious beliefs for natives. In general, Spanish colonial art is very ornate, rich in color, and features strong delineation. The earliest of the Creole painters were Gaspar, de Figueroa, and Vázquez himself. The style flourished in the 1600s before declining in the early 18th century.

Even though Vázquez is generally regarded as the most outstanding Creole painter of his generation, his work has often drawn criticism. His style was said to lack a “dynamic impulse,” though his forms were elegant, and he personalized his paintings with a series of signature gestures that identified his work. His work is viewed as lacking originality of composition, as he often copied European masters, but he remains a painter of note due to his skillful and compelling use colors.

It has been said of Vázquez that, like many other artists of his era, he largely ignored the world around him. For one
thing, there seemed to be no recognition of the rich racial mosaic that surrounded him in Bogota, as his works mainly depicted Caucasians and Creoles. Also, his works display no great interest in the surrounding landscape, either in urban or rural settings, and reveal very little about Bogota in the 17th century. Even though he lived in a tropical landscape with lush foliage, he rarely depicted the local vegetation. When he painted fruits or flowers he usually used those that existed in Europe and America. Little, if anything, is seen of indigent tropical fruits such as mangoes or pineapples.

Became a Prolific Artist

Vázquez was said to have been a prolific artist and, unlike other artists of his era, he left behind a great number of drawings. He operated a studio located in the Candelmas district, where he trained many of his students. Here he kept busy completing commissioned works. Working with him at the studio were his wife Bernal, who often served as his model, his brother Juan Baptist, his son Bartholomew Luis, and his beloved daughter Feliciano. At this studio, he produced a great many works of varying subjects and sizes which he painted on linen canvases. His works were later displayed in temples and convents as well as in houses around Bogota.

At his studio Vázquez also taught students, among whom it is believed were Camargo and Francisco de Sandoval, two other artists who became well known. As a result of Vázquez’s teaching and commissions, a great output of work came from this studio. Unfortunately, it has often been hard to distinguish his original paintings from the works of his students, who copied his style. However, there are a number of his works whose titles and dates of origin are known. One of the oldest, signed in 1657 is "Huida a Egipto," or "Escape from Egypt."

During the mid-1600s the painter spent almost 20 years producing little original work, instead copying the works of other artists. Around 1669 he copied the work of Murillo in "Vision de S. Antonio" and the work of Sassoferato in "Virgen Modestissima." His "Virgen de los Angeles" is dated to 1670 and follows the style of Reni, though Vázquez only employed the vaguest of associations. The next year he created "La Anunciacion" for the Convent of Mongui. Ten paintings produced by Vázquez can be found at this famous Franciscan convent, and it is believed that he spent a good deal of time there. In 1674 he produced his highly regarded "Jucio Final" for the Church of Saint Francisco in Bogota. For this work he was most likely inspired by the anatomical drawings of Juan Valverde and Hamusco. When he was 32, he painted his first-large scale work on linen, "Purgatorio," for the parochial temple of Funza.

In 1680 Vázquez entered a very significant period in his career and was at his most prolific, producing many works for the convents in Bogota. This also was the period when he produced his "Self Portrait" (1685), which appeared in the cathedral of Bogota. During this time Vázquez was also commissioned to produce a series of works for the Church of the Shrine in Bogota. In this major project he was once again influenced by European models, after the founder of this church, his friend and patron Gomez de Sandoval, brought back from a trip to Spain a series of stamps by Rubens.

During this period also he painted "S. Ingacio" for the Jesuits, completing this work in 1686. In 1698 he completed "Calvario" and "Predicacion de S. Francisco Javier," two more of his best-known works. Many of the paintings produced during this period of intense activity are now at the Museum of Colonial Art in Bogota, which contains 76 oils and 106 drawings by the artist. The museum was originally constructed by Jesuits who arrived in Colombia in the 17th century.

Later Life

The start of the 18th century marked the beginning of what would be a very difficult period in Vázquez’s life. In the short span of time his wife died and his daughter was seduced away from her father’s home and went on to lead a life of hardship. Friend and patron Gomez de Sandoval also passed away. In addition to personal troubles, the painter endured financial difficulties and was briefly confined in prison. Still, Vázquez found the inspiration to paint even in confinement and produced six large works on linen cloth that eventually decorated the arches of the Chapel of the Shrine. Toward the end of 1710, only months before his death, Vázquez produced his final work, “Concepcion.” Vázquez died in 1711 in Bogato, Colombia.

Online


Yvonne Vera

Yvonne Vera (born 1964), one of Africa’s most esteemed writers, has been showered with awards and her work has landed on feminist and African studies curriculums at universities across the world. Vera was born and raised against the backdrop of faltering colonialism and vicious guerilla warfare in 1970’s Rhodesia, Southern Africa. Her childhood was spent watching men go off to war, many never to return, and watching women struggle to survive in a society where being a woman meant being a second-class citizen at best, ignored and abused at worst. Vera was just 15 when the guerilla armies triumphed over the colonialists, and Zimbabwe, declaring its independence, was born.

As Vera finished her secondary studies, Zimbabwe was fitfully learning how to be a post-colonial nation. Though the country’s white oppressors had
been shaken off and black men were enjoying new freedoms, black women were learning that freedom would not yet be theirs. Traditional culture kept them down, in the kitchen, in the fields, in the bedroom, quiet and submissive. Paraphrasing the title of Vera’s 1997 book, Zimbabwean women were expected to keep things “under the tongue,” to suffer in silence. These oppressions—colonialism, racism, war, and sexism—have fueled Vera’s writing.

Educated Amidst Revolution and Sexism

Vera was born in Bulawayo, Zimbabwe’s second largest city, on September 19, 1964. Her mother was a schoolteacher and her father, unlike many Zimbabwean men, supported his daughter’s education. Even as a schoolgirl, Vera showed the promise of the future writer she would become. According to literature professor Charles R. Larson writing in The World and I, “A love of books was established before [Vera] began attending primary school (she could read and write before her formal education). Perhaps more important, she began writing when she was still a child. She remembers leaving notes and poems she often wrote for her mother. In school, other students identified her as ‘the writer.’”

Of her early education Vera told The World and I, “I had an idyllic education in the sense of landscape. I was first educated in the rural schools of Matabeleland. It was marvelous. We ate, played, slept, and read under the moon. We had wild fruit and smoke from fires. Then I came back to the city and attended school in the townships of Luveve and Mzilikazi.” Vera continued, “This offered a contrast and a forceful idea for change. In Zimbabwe, as perhaps in Africa, the landscape is the main city, on September 19, 1964. Her mother was a schoolteacher and her father, unlike many Zimbabwean men, supported his daughter’s education. Even as a schoolgirl, Vera showed the promise of the future writer she would become. According to literature professor Charles R. Larson writing in The World and I, “A love of books was established before [Vera] began attending primary school (she could read and write before her formal education). Perhaps more important, she began writing when she was still a child. She remembers leaving notes and poems she often wrote for her mother. In school, other students identified her as ‘the writer.’”

Of her early education Vera told The World and I, “I had an idyllic education in the sense of landscape. I was first educated in the rural schools of Matabeleland. It was marvelous. We ate, played, slept, and read under the moon. We had wild fruit and smoke from fires. Then I came back to the city and attended school in the townships of Luveve and Mzilikazi.” Vera continued, “This offered a contrast and introduced me more fully to the urban African milieu, with all its contradictions and spontaneity. This was in the seventies, and all the rumblings of an armed struggle were about.” This contrast between the beauty of the land and the horror of war has also become a dominant theme in Vera’s writing.

Became a Writer in Canada

Following her secondary education in Zimbabwe, Vera traveled to Europe and encountered Western art and culture. Art galleries and the cosmopolitan lifestyle of the cities impressed her. This experience helped motivate her to apply to York University in Toronto, Canada. There she majored in film criticism and literature eventually earning a bachelor’s degree, a master’s, and a doctorate. She also penned her first work, 1992’s Why Don’t You Carve Other Animals?, a collection of short stories. Of her segue into the role of writer she told The World and I, “Writing crept upon me and surprised me, then I discovered that I loved the process and art of writing. It came by degrees, through my fingers to my body. . . . I wanted to be a writer and could answer at airports and immigration points and borders that I was a writer.”

Vera was still living in Toronto when she wrote her first novel, Nehanda, a historical novel based on Mbuya Nehanda’s struggle to lead Zimbabwe out of the clutches of colonialism. Brinda Bose wrote in World Literature Today that Nehanda “speaks to both post-colonialism and feminism in the historical context of Zimbabwe. Nehanda [embodies] the essences of both the hope and the despair that mark the story of Zimbabwean.”

Unlike her first work, which was published by a Toronto company, Nehanda was published by Baobab Books, a Zimbabwean publisher based in Harare. This collaboration marked the beginning of a very close relationship between Vera and Baobab Books. The company has since published all her works. Though the loyalty of this relationship has allowed Vera to truly explore her themes, some critics noted that this same relationship may have been what has kept Vera from the international literary radar for so long. Regardless, the literary awards that have been heaped upon her work have declared Vera one of the top African female writers. Nehanda received Second Prize for the Zimbabwean Publishers Literary Award for Fiction in English and special mention for the Commonwealth Writers Prize for Africa Region.

Spoke the Unspoken

With the 1994 publication of Without a Name, Vera began to explore darker themes, such as the tragedies that effect women. Without a Name details one woman’s struggle during the tumultuous war of pre-independence Zimbabwe. A victim of rape caught between the ruthless, racist regime of the colonialists and the violent uprisings of guerilla fighters, she sees escape and a new beginning far from her rural home in the city of Harare. However, even worse consequences await her there and in desperation she kills her newborn child and returns to mourn in her hometown. This novel was short-listed for the Commonwealth Writers’ Prize.

In her third novel, Under the Tongue (1996), Vera tackled another taboo subject that gnaws at the hearts of women—incest and rape. As in her previous novel, Zimbabwe’s war for independence is a major character in the novel. Under the Tongue won first prize in the Zimbabwe Publishers’ Literary Awards, was awarded the 1997 Commonwealth Writers’ Prize (Africa region), and two years later won the prestigious Swedish literary award “The Voice of Africa.”

Butterfly Burning was published in 1998 and set in a black township of Southern Rhodesia in the late 1940s. It is a bittersweet love story between a young girl and her much older lover. As he spends more and more time away on construction projects, she begins to follow her own life and is selected to train as one of the first black nurses in the country. When an unwanted pregnancy jeopardizes her training, she retreats alone to the harsh land and, with the long thorn of a bush, performs her own abortion.

Of the recurrence of normally private, painful themes in her novels, Vera told The World and I, “The position of women needs to be reexamined with greater determination and a forceful idea for change. In Zimbabwe, as perhaps elsewhere in the world, there is limited understanding of each moment of a woman’s worst tragedy or her personal journey. Women have been expected to be the custodians of our society as well as its worst victims, carrying on no matter how hemmed in they feel and how abandoned in their need.” By bringing the shameful, hidden tragedies that
mar women’s lives to the surface, Vera demanded that her culture change.

**Became Director of Art Gallery**

During these prolific years, Vera moved back to Bulawayo. She told *The World and I*, “I spent eight years in Toronto trying to grow up. I finally realized the necessity of my return to Zimbabwe and my hometown. I have never regretted it.” In 1997 she was appointed Director of the National Gallery in Bulawayo. Voicing the challenges of running a gallery in her hometown, Vera told Radio Netherlands, “There is no word for gallery in Ndebele, the local language of Bulawayo. The building used to be a huge, half empty room with paintings. In a country where as many as 17 people have to live together in one room, which is maybe 3 meters by 3 meters, all that space was senseless.” With that in mind, Vera has focused on making the gallery relevant to the community and to the townships. She has installed local folk and fine art and instituted workshops for women and children.

*The Stone Virgins* was published in early 2003. In it Vera tells the story of two sisters, Thenjiwe and Nonceba, living in the rural village of Kezi following the independence of Zimbabwe from Britain in the early 1980s. A soldier murders Thenjiwe and then rapes and mutilates Nonceba. Vera once again calls to the forefront the terror of war and the heavy price that women in her culture have paid in the process.

**Periodicals**

*The World and I*, June 1, 1999.
*World Literature Today*, January 1, 1995; June 1, 1996; Spring 1999.

**Online**


**Vigilius**

Pope Vigilius (died 555), whose pontificate lasted from 537 to 555, schemed as a deacon to become pope, only to suffer more pains for his ambitions than personal rewards. His pontificate was almost entirely dedicated to resolving a dispute with the Emperor Justinian of Constantinople over a question of Church dogma.

The argument between the pope and the emperor concerned certain writings that had been endorsed by the Council of Chalcedon in the fifth century. A sect of Christians known as the Monophysites objected to these writings. The Monophysites, who were numerous in the eastern part of the Roman empire, had the support of the emperor, who wished to see them brought into the Church.

Vigilius spent the last eight years of his life as a house prisoner of Justinian in Constantinople because of his refusal to condemn the disputed writings. Although Vigilius eventually agreed to censure the writings, he also attempted to reconcile his condemnation with the decisions made at the Council of Chalcedon. With the emperor satisfied, Vigilius was allowed to depart from Constantinople. He died shortly thereafter en route to Rome.

**The Monophysite Dispute**

The Council of Chalcedon, which first convened in 451, endorsed several writings that seemed to suggest that Jesus Christ had two distinct natures, one human and one divine, with the two natures united in one person. This idea had been advanced by the Patriarch Nestorius in the fifth century. The writings seemed to be given legitimacy in 519, when the Emperor Justin I enforced the Chalcedonian definition of faith.

By the sixth century, the Monophysites, who held that Jesus had a single divine nature, and not two as held by the Nestorians, constituted a large Christian sect in the eastern half of the Roman empire. Unable to reconcile their belief...
with the rulings of the Council of Chalcedon, the Monophysites remained outside the Church.

In 544, hoping to reconcile the Monophysites to the Church, the Emperor Justinian issued an edict that condemned Nestorian writings endorsed by the Council of Chalcedon on the grounds that they contained unorthodox ideas. This edict, known as the Three Chapters, was a list of condemnations of the writings of three authors: Theodore of Mopsuestia, Theodoret, and Ibas. Since the Council of Chalcedon had already cleared these authors of any heresy, Justinian’s edict was interpreted as a slight to the council and an encouragement to the Monophysites.

The edict confused many members of the Church because parts of the condemned writings were in fact considered orthodox. The Second Council of Constantinople in 553 would also condemn the writings but would uphold the Chalcedonian canons. The Nestorian interpretation of Christ’s dual nature was promulgated outside the Roman Empire in the sixth century by missionaries in Arabia, China, and India. By the 14th Century, however, the idea had begun to disappear.

Papal Ambitions

Pope Vigilius, who reigned as pope from 537 to 555, was descended from a Roman family of distinction. Vigilius’s father, Johannes, had received the title of consul from the emperor, and the pope’s brother, Repartus, was a Roman senator.

In 531, Vigilius was made a deacon of the Church. That year, a decree was issued allowing the pope to select his successor. Pope Boniface II (530–532) selected Vigilius to succeed him. But the clergy at St. Peter’s opposed the idea. Boniface retracted his choice and destroyed the decree that allowed him to name a successor.

Representative to Constantinople

Boniface’s eventual successor, Pope Agapetus I (535–536), made Vigilius a papal representative to Constantinople. There, the actress, theologian, and empress Theodora attempted to enlist Vigilius’s help in gaining support for the Monophysites, including the Monophysite Patriarch Anthimus who had been deposed by Agapetus, in exchange for her help in making Vigilius pope and reportedly some seven hundred pounds of gold. Vigilius is said to have agreed to intervene on behalf of the Monophysites.

Following the death of Agapetus in April 536, Vigilius returned to Rome with letters from the Court of Constantinople and the money the empress had given him. But by then Silverius had already been made pope, with the help of the King of the Goths. A short time later, the Byzantine commander Belisarius stationed troops in Rome, which was facing a siege by the Goths.

The Empress Theodora wrote to Belisarius, asking him to pressure Silverius into restoring Anthimus as patriarch of Constantinople. Belisarius summoned Silverius to his headquarters and falsely accused him of scheming to help the Goths gain entry to Rome. The Byzantine commander demanded that Silverius reinstate Anthimus and lend his support to the Monophysites. Following Silverius’ refusal, the pope was seized and officially deposed.

Elevated to Pope

Under pressure from Belisarius, Vigilius was elevated to pope, being consecrated and enthroned on March 29, 537. Meanwhile the falsely maligned Silverius was kept in Vigilius’s custody, where he soon died from the harsh treatment he received.

With the enthronement of a pope sympathetic to the Monophysite cause, all should have been well between Rome and Constantinople. But the Empress Theodora soon discovered that Vigilius was just as much opposed to the Monophysites as his predecessor Agapetus had been. Although a letter that has been attributed to Vigilius expresses the pope’s sympathies for the Monophysites, some feel it is a forgery. In any case, Vigilius did not restore Anthimus to his former position as patriarch.

In 540, Vigilius wrote two letters to Constantinople outlining his position on Monophysitism, one addressed to the Emperor Justinian and the other to the Patriarch Menas. In them, Vigilius supported the rulings of the Council of Chalcedon and approved the deposition of Anthimus.

Other letters from the first years of Vigilius’s reign have survived that shed further light on his pontificate. In March 538, for example, he wrote to the Bishop of Arles about the Austrasian King Theodobert’s marriage to his brother’s widow. Also in 538, he sent a letter to the Bishop of Braga about Church discipline.

Disputes over Dogma

Meanwhile, fundamental disagreements over Church dogma were developing with Constantinople. In 543, the Emperor Justinian published a decree that condemned the heresies of Origen and sent copies to the patriarchs and to Vigilius. In an attempt to refocus Justinian’s interventions, the Bishop of Caesarea pointed out that condemnation of Nestorianism would make it easier to bring the Monophysites into the Church.

Justinian had wanted to placate the Monophysites. But he also had a preoccupation with questions of dogma. After he was told that a condemnation of three fifth century ecclesiastics who had exhibited Nestorian tendencies—but had been endorsed by the Council of Chalcedon—would placate the Monophysites, Justinian issued an edict toward that end. Vigilius refused to accept Justinian’s edict. In response, the emperor called the pope to Constantinople to resolve the matter.

Called to Constantinople

Vigilius was celebrating the feast of St. Cecilia when he was called away from the service and ordered by an imperial official to depart at once for Constantinople. The pope was taken to a ship. Meanwhile, the Goths under Totila were laying siege to Rome, causing tremendous misery to the populace. As the ship taking Vigilius to the eastern capital departed, stones were thrown at it and the pope cursed. The ship reportedly left on November 22, 545, and...
arrived in Constantinople around the end of that year. Although Vigilius sent ships laden with grain back to Rome, they were apparently captured en route.

In Constantinople, Vigilius tried to persuade Justinian to provide assistance to the Romans and Italians under siege by the Goths, but Justinian was preoccupied with his edict. Especially in the West, the Three Chapters had raised opposition because they seemed to condemn men who had long ago died in good standing with the Church and because the condemnation was seen as an insult to the Council of Chalcedon. It was also felt that the emperor had no business making Church doctrine. Nevertheless, there was nothing unorthodox about the Three Chapters.

Justinian pressured Vigilius into supporting the edict. Caught between the emperor’s demands that he support the Three Chapters, and the western Church’s insistence that he reject them, Vigilius wavered and then initially agreed to support Justinian’s edict.

Facing the opposition of his own retinue of western bishops, Vigilius next retracted his support for the edict, prompting Justinian to make him a house prisoner. After Vigilius escaped, fleeing from a window by a suspended rope, the emperor persuaded him to return by proposing a general council.

The Council of Constantinople

Justinian called for the council to be in Constantinople. Vigilius preferred it to be held in Sicily or Italy so that more western bishops could attend. Nevertheless, it assembled in Constantinople on May 5, 553, at Hagia Sophia Cathedral, with the Patriarch of Constantinople presiding. Vigilius boycotted the council because the eastern bishops outnumbered those from the west. While the council was approving the Three Chapters, Vigilius condemned them.

On May 14, 553, Vigilius issued his Constitution, which rejected 60 propositions of Theodore of Mopsuestia. Vigilius’s Constitution also refused to condemn either Theodore or Ibas because the testimony of the Council of Chalcedon had removed all suspicion of heresy against them. But on June 2, 553, the council once again condemned the disputed writings, siding with Justinian.

After thinking over the matter for six months, Vigilius decided that ending the persecutions of the emperor against his clergy would be well worth the cost of his endorsement of the council. So in December 553, after a residence of eight years in Constantinople, Vigilius reached an understanding with the emperor in which Vigilius agreed to censure the disputed writings while endorsing the canons of the Council of Chalcedon. Once again, his decision brought criticism in the west.

Justinian allowed Vigilius to depart for Rome with the promise that the pope would share temporal power there. Vigilius began his journey home in 555. But before reaching Rome, he died en route at Syracuse on June 7, 555, leaving a troubled legacy to his successors. His body was taken to Rome and buried in the Basilica of Sylvester.

Books
Brusher, Joseph S., Popes through the Ages, Nefi-Kane, 1980.

Online


Jean Vigo

Film director Jean Vigo (1905–1934) had a brief career encompassing only four films, all of which were shot during the beginning of the sound era, but only one of which was full-length. Yet the critical acclaim of the poetic beauty of his work, which came posthumously, has been nearly unanimous.

Vigo was born Jean Bonaventure de Vigo in Paris on April 26, 1905, the son of anarchists Emily Claro and Miguel Almereyda (real name: Eugène Bonaventure de Vigo). In the early 1900s Almereyda was arrested numerous times and in 1901, at age 18, was sentenced to a year in prison for the manufacture of a bomb that failed to explode. He served nearly his entire sentence in solitary confinement. In 1904 Almereyda attended an antimilitarist congress in Amsterdam out of which sprang the Association Internationale Antimilitariste (AIA). Almereyda became one of the leaders of the French AIA. As such he was arrested and sentenced to prison in December 1905. He was released on an amnesty in June 1906. That same year he cofounded a weekly newspaper, La Guerre Sociale (The Social War).

Thus the tone was set for Vigo’s early life. The anarchist and plotting were broken only by his father’s jail sentences. In 1908 Almereyda was given a two-year prison sentence for praising a mutiny in the pages of La Guerre Sociale. He was released in August 1909. In 1913 Almereyda left La Guerre Sociale and cofounded the weekly, Le Bonnet Rouge, which became a daily the following year. Almereyda was named editor-in-chief. When war broke out in August 1914 Almereyda slowly began to inveigh against the military in the pages of his paper. Eventually the militarists who had maintained the upper hand in French politics had enough and he was arrested on August 6, 1917. He died in his cell under mysterious circumstances a week later. There is little doubt that Almereyda was murdered, though he was extremely ill with a ruptured appendix and peritonitis. Jean Vigo was 12 years old at the time.

Poor Health and Boarding Schools
Throughout his childhood Vigo was plagued by poor health, which worsened in the year after his father’s death. Furthermore Vigo’s mother shunted him off to relatives and boarding schools. Since his father’s name was still notorious...
in France, Vigo was often forced to enroll under an assumed name—Jean Salles. Beginning in 1919, though, he spent two weeks with his mother in Paris every September. In the early 1920s he was in contact with his father’s friends, who related to him facts about Almereyda’s life and personality. In 1922 Vigo began attending Lycée Marceau, a boarding school in Chartres. His studies concentrated on Latin and science, but more importantly he was near his mother, with whom he spent his vacations and occasional weekends. Enough time had elapsed since his father’s death that he was able to enroll under his own name. In his late teens Vigo’s health improved and he not only participated in sports at Lycée Marceau, but he excelled in the 100-meter dash and football, where he was a goalkeeper. This almost semidydlic period in his life was to come to a sudden end, and the result was Vigo’s estrangement from his mother.

Vigo was well versed in his father’s work and legend, but the facts of Almereyda’s death had always been glossed over, especially his mother’s role in the legal drama that occurred afterward. From reading Le Mystère de Fresnes (Fresnes was the prison where Almereyda died), by Albert Monnrot, Vigo discovered that his mother—in order to win a lawsuit that would ensure Vigo’s interests—had consented to the lawyer’s hypothesis that Almereyda’s murder had been ordered by his own accomplices in order to stave off treachery to the cause. In 1924 the 19-year-old Vigo spent his summer vacation assembling a file that (he intended) would prove his father innocent of treachery.

Met Lydou at a Sanatorium

In June 1925 Vigo left Lycée Marceau. His original plan was to enroll in a university, thereby extending his military deferment. Already Vigo, imbued with his father’s antimilitarism, had managed to have his military physical postponed from December 1924. In late 1925 Vigo took some courses at the Sorbonne. It has been conjectured that it was at this time that Vigo decided to embark on a career in cinema. In early 1926 he fell ill once again and went to southern France to recuperate—first with his relatives, the Aube’s (who had taken him in after Almereyda’s death), then at a sanatorium, Font-Romeu, near Andorra, by the Spanish border. Because of his illness Vigo had to forgo the possibility of working on Abel Gance’s film, Napoléon, but upon recovering and returning to Paris at the end of 1926 he set about using whatever contacts he had to gain entry into the French film industry. Within a few months Vigo had a relapse of his illness and was back at Font-Romeu. To make matters worse, his continually deteriorating relationship with his mother left Vigo weakened and depressed. On and off he remained in such a state for more than a year, despite assistance from many friends (which at times left Vigo feeling guilty).

In 1928 his life and outlook began to take a positive turn. It was at the sanatorium that year where he met 19-year-old Elisabeth Lozinska, known as Lydou. She was the daughter of a Polish industrialist who had been studying in Switzerland. If anything Lydou’s condition was worse than Vigo’s, as she was bedridden for most of her first year at Font-Romeu. In November 1928 the two were well enough to return to Paris and announce their engagement. They were married on January 24, 1929.

Vigo soon had his first job in film, assisting the cameraman on a film titled Vénus. When the film ended, though, he was out of work and the couple relied on Lydou’s father to help them financially. With the money his father-in-law sent Vigo purchased a secondhand Debié film camera with which he set about filming the animals in the zoo. This first attempt ended in disaster and Vigo never worked as cameraman on any of his other films. However, he was undismayed and began planning a script centered on the city of Nice, where he and Lydou had traveled. Unfortunately before he could begin production of his film his health, and that of Lydou’s, took another bad turn. The couple returned to Paris for medical consultations. By then Vigo had met Boris Kaufman, possibly the youngest brother of the pioneering Soviet filmmakers Dziga Vertov (real name Denis Kaufman) and Mikhail Kaufman. Kaufman would eventually serve as cameraman on all of Vigo’s films. After Vigo’s death, he immigrated to Hollywood where he worked on such films as On the Waterfront, Twelve Angry Men, and The Pawnbroker.

Directed A Propos de Nice

With Kaufman behind the camera, the young director saw that most of his sketchy film plan would not translate well to the screen, thus prompting him to create a serious outline for his project. The film that resulted was the short “documentary” A Propos de Nice. Vigo’s anarchistic politics and his sense of satire are both strong elements of the film, which contrasts the wealthy and the poor in the city of Nice. It has often been compared to two other “city films” of the period: Berlin, The Symphony of a Great City, directed by Walter Ruttmann and Vertov’s The Man with a Movie Camera, which was set in Moscow.

However A Propos de Nice differs from those films in an important way; it is less reliant on temporal chronology in its structure. Thus while Ruttmann and Vertov both shaped a narrative around a “day in the life” (of Berlin or Moscow), Vigo opened his film with fireworks at night. Secondly, Vigo used toys as symbols for people and juxtaposed seemingly unrelated scenes. These elements moved the film away from being solely a documentary. In fact A Propos de Nice, with a running time of approximately 20 minutes, is at once a highly subjective critique of the city and a documentary of the gap between the rich and the poor. Filmed in 1929, A Propos de Nice debuted in Paris on May 28, 1930.

Vigo’s next film is the least known and shortest of his quartet, and, likewise, the least appreciated. Taris (also known as Taris, roi de l’eau and Taris, champion de natation), filmed in 1931, is a short film featuring French swimming champion Jean Taris. The film included voiceover by Taris describing swimming techniques, but the outstanding aspect is how Vigo once again turned the genre of documentary inside out, though Taris is neither as subjective nor as anarchistic as A Propos de Nice. When discussing Taris critics and film historians generally focus on the film’s underwater shots and by extension the silence that
engulfs the film. Both of these elements give Taris a dreamlike quality that is enhanced by the ending in which Taris is seen walking on water.

**Zero de Conduite**

Critics and film historians continue to debate which of Vigo’s films is his masterpiece with many acknowledging that the title belongs to his third film, the 41-minute-long *Zero de conduite* (*Zero for Conduct*). Others consider Vigo’s last film, *L’Atalante*, his masterpiece. *Zero de conduite*, shot in 1933, was Vigo’s first film that had a narrative structure in the usual sense, though in the filmic sense the story was far more poetic than realist. The film’s plot revolves around the children of a boarding school who decide to revolt against the strict rules of behavior. The film highlights the child’s world from beginning to end: it opens with two boys delighting each other on a train with tricks and games as they return to school after a vacation. These tricks reveal their own awakening sexuality and imitation of adulthood. They, along with a third boy, will become the chief plotters in the revolt after having been given a “zero for conduct.” *Zero de conduite* was banned in France until 1946, but thereafter became an inspiration for many French New Wave filmmakers, especially Francois Truffaut who directed his own film about children, *The 400 Blows*.

Despite the fact that *Zero de conduite* was banned Vigo managed to secure studio backing for his next project, *L’Atalante* (1934). It was Vigo’s final film and the only one he directed that was feature length. *L’Atalante* is the story of two newlyweds who sail France’s waterways on a barge, named L’Atalante. When the wife grows tired of barge life she abandons her husband for Paris, but the city overwhelms her. The husband sets out to find her, but in the end it is the half-crazy bargeman (portrayed by Michel Simon) who discovers her and returns with her to the barge.

The film was first shown in Paris in April 1934, and its first public performance was in September 1934 under the title *Le Chaland qui passa*. Less than a month later Vigo finally succumbed to the tuberculosis from which he had suffered for years. He died in Paris on October 5, 1934. At the time of his death Vigo had left behind more than two dozen unrealized projects, including scripts by himself, Claude Aveline, and Blaise Cendrars. *L’Atalante*, which had been reedited and retitled during his final illness, was eventually restored and the world would come to recognize Vigo’s genius.

**Books**


**Online**


Mary Edwards Walker

Mary Edwards Walker (1932–1919) was a dress-reform advocate and women’s rights activist who served as a physician for the Union army during the Civil War. She challenged the social and cultural mores of the Victorian-era middle class to their limits and in the process “out-raged the sensibilities even of those who believed themselves tolerant and progressive,” as Elizabeth D. Leonard points out in her book Yankee Women: Gender Battles in the Civil War. Yet Walker refused to back off from her lifelong insistence that women deserved nothing less than full equality with men.

Mary Edwards Walker was born on November 26, 1832, in Oswego, New York. She was the youngest daughter of Alvah Walker, a farmer, teacher, and self-taught physician, and Vesta Whitcomb Walker, who was also a teacher. Influenced by reform movements advocating abolition and sexual equality that swept through their part of the state during the 1820s and 1830s, the Walkers were very liberal thinkers by the standards of the time. They supported the idea of equal education for boys and girls and urged all of their children—five daughters and a son—to aspire to professional careers and personal independence.

As a child, Walker attended a local school run by her parents. Later, she continued her education at a seminary in Fulton, New York, but left there in 1852 to teach. Within two years, however, Walker had made up her mind to become a doctor instead, challenging society’s belief that teaching was the only appropriate job for a woman. She enrolled in Syracuse Medical College (one of the few institutions that admitted women) in 1853 and graduated two years later, then practiced briefly in Columbus, Ohio, before relocating to Rome, New York. There she married a fellow physician named Albert Miller, and together they set up a medical practice. But most people were not ready to accept the idea of a woman doctor, and the practice soon failed. So, too, did the marriage: Walker and Miller separated in 1859 and divorced ten years later.

Several years earlier, Walker had enthusiastically embraced the tenets of the emerging reform movement in the United States. One of the first and most symbolic confrontations with the establishment was over women’s clothing, which at the time featured tight corsets and awkward, ankle-length hoop skirts. Walker had always felt constrained by such attire and resented having to conform to what society deemed acceptable for a proper lady of the middle class. Thus, when the “bloomer dress” (invented by feminist and temperance activist Amelia Bloomer) became a political statement for radical women’s rights advocates during the early 1850s, Walker was among the first to hem her skirt to just below the knee and replace her petticoats with a pair of long, full trousers that eventually came to be known as “bloomers.”

Walker’s activities on behalf of the dress-reform movement claimed ever-increasing amounts of her time during the rest of the decade. Beginning in January of 1857, she became a regular contributor to the group’s newspaper, The Sibyl: A Review of the Tastes, Errors, and Fashions of Society, and later that same year, she attended a convention of dress-reform supporters held in Middleton, New York. By the end of 1857, she had made a name for herself as a writer
and lecturer on the topic, and in 1860, she was elected to serve as one of the vice-presidents of the National Dress Reform Association. Meanwhile, she also began to turn her attention to other controversial issues in the women’s rights movement, speaking out on subjects such as education, marriage, abortion, and the concept of equal pay for equal work.

Shortly after the Civil War broke out, Walker headed to Washington, D.C., where she tried to obtain an official commission to serve as a surgeon in the U.S. Army. When that was not forthcoming, she resolved to stay in the nation’s capital and keep trying to persuade the War Department of her qualifications and willingness to serve. In the meantime, she volunteered her services to the Indiana Hospital, a makeshift facility that had been set up in a crowded section of the U.S. Patent Office to treat wounded and sick troops from Indiana.

However, Walker could not afford to work without pay indefinitely, so in early 1862, she left Washington to take some classes at New York Hygeio-Therapeutic College in the hope that the additional schooling would enhance her medical credentials. During the fall of that same year, she moved one step closer to her goal when she began working in an unofficial capacity as a contract surgeon at a couple of field hospitals in Virginia.

Once again, however, Walker soon found herself in need of a more dependable source of income, so she turned her attention to providing other kinds of assistance. One of her first projects was organizing the Women’s Relief Association, a group that helped female visitors to Washington find a safe place to stay. Walker raised funds from local suffrage groups to rent a house and turned it into a women’s lodging facility. In exchange for her services, she was allowed to live there free of charge. The enterprising Walker also started a service that helped women locate their loved ones in the various hospitals around Washington. But her attempts to set up and run a private medical practice during this same period were not as successful. Nevertheless, she enjoyed a reputation around the capital as someone who was genuinely interested in the welfare of soldiers and their families.

In late 1863, Walker headed to Tennessee on her own to provide medical aid to the survivors of the Battle of Chickamauga, one of the bloodiest confrontations of the war. Denied permission to work as a doctor, she served instead as a nurse until early 1864, when her persistence, combined with the army’s desperate need for medical personnel, finally paid off. In late January, over the objections of male army doctors who were openly hostile to the idea of a woman practicing medicine, Walker received a long-awaited official appointment to the post of assistant army surgeon with the rank of lieutenant—a first for a woman.

By the time Walker obtained her commission, however, the troops of her regiment were in relatively good health. The same could not be said of the civilian population living in the communities around the camp. So Walker routinely crossed over into Confederate territory to deliver babies, treat various diseases, pull teeth, and perform all-around medical care for the war-weary local citizens. Many people believe that she may have also worked as a Union spy while behind enemy lines, although there is no solid evidence to back up that claim.

It was also around this time that Walker quit wearing women’s clothes entirely and donned exclusively male attire, a practice she observed for the rest of her life. She made slight modifications to a typical officer’s uniform and wore that instead to make it easier to move around and work under difficult conditions in field hospitals.

As far as Walker was concerned, such clothes were far more sanitary and practical than long skirts that dragged through the dirt and hindered natural body movements. Society did not see it quite that way, however, and she was arrested numerous times for disturbing the peace or “masquerading in men’s clothes” as she strolled around in pants—a matter of great pride for the defiantly non-conformist physician.

On April 10, 1864, Walker was captured when she rode alone and unarmed deep into Confederate territory. She was held in Richmond, Virginia, until being released on August 12, at which time she made her way back to Washington. Accepting the somewhat ambiguous post of “surgeon-in-charge,” she served first as head of a hospital for female Confederate prisoners in Louisville, Kentucky, where her constant run-ins with a resentful and uncooperative staff eventually led her to request a transfer in March 1865. Walker then spent the final weeks of the war running a home for orphans and refugees in Clarksville, Tennessee. She ended up leaving government service altogether in June.
of that year and several months later was awarded the Medal of Honor for “meritorious services,” making her the only woman ever to receive the nation’s highest military decoration for bravery in combat.

After the war, Walker tried to secure a commission as a peacetime army surgeon, setting her sights on a position as a medical inspector with the new Bureau of Refugees and Freedmen, but her request was turned down in late 1865. Following a brief stint as a journalist with a New York newspaper, she headed back to Washington. She then tried to open a medical practice but instead found herself becoming involved again in both the women’s movement and the dress-reform movement. She also petitioned Congress to secure military pensions for Civil War nurses and proposed that they deserved the right to vote in light of their service to the country.

In 1867, following a lengthy visit to England, where she delivered speeches on temperance, dress reform, and her Civil War experiences, Walker stepped up her efforts on behalf of women’s suffrage. She lectured on the topic throughout New England, the Midwest, and the South and even testified before Congress. But she could not support the suffragists’ call for the adoption of a special amendment to the Constitution granting the vote to women. Her position on the amendment certainly did not spring from any belief that women shouldn’t have the right to vote; according to Walker’s interpretation of the Constitution, women already had the right to vote. Therefore, she insisted, the suffragists’ actions were pointless. By refusing to budge on this issue, Walker drove a wedge between herself and more mainstream activists such as Elizabeth Cady Stanton and Susan B. Anthony, who feared her extremism would paint the movement in a negative light and jeopardize its goals.

As the years went by, Walker grew increasingly eccentric in both dress and personal behavior, which only managed to alienate more moderate reformers and make her a target of abuse and mockery. Finding a steady means of support was also a nagging problem. Walker’s efforts to obtain compensation for her wartime service were only partly successful; she drew a pension from the government that amounted to only half of what men of her rank received. Repeated attempts to establish her own medical practice failed because male doctors continually questioned her credentials and dismissed her as a quack. A brief stint working for the government in the Pension Office mailroom ended in 1883 when she was fired for insubordination. The next few years were especially difficult; beginning in 1887, Walker resorted to talking about her Civil War experiences in a traveling show known as a “museum” to earn a little extra money.

In 1890, Walker returned to the family homestead in New York. She remained there for the rest of her life and ran the farm. She also continued to work on behalf of women’s rights and pursued a somewhat more militant agenda that included founding a commune for women in 1897 named “Adamless Eve.” In addition, she ran a sanatorium near Oswego for tuberculosis patients.

During a visit to Washington in 1917, the same year her Medal of Honor was revoked for lack of proper War Department documentation (it was restored sixty years later by President Jimmy Carter), Walker fell on the Capitol steps and suffered injuries from which she never fully recovered. She died two years later at her home in Oswego at the age of 86, alone and virtually penniless, remembered more for her peculiarities than for her brave and honorable wartime service to her country.

**Books**

**Periodicals**
*Smithsonian*, March 1977.

---

**Jeff Wall**

Art, a form of self-expression, can create or reflect reality. Canadian artist Jeff Wall (born 1946) expresses himself by recreating paintings as photographic panoramas and by reflecting a natural but staged reality. His work is “clearly the work of a man with a deft visual sense and an interestingly complicated mind,” noted Jed Perl in the *New Republic*.

Jeff Wall was born in 1946 in Canada. Growing up in Vancouver, British Columbia, Wall pursued his artistic talent with support from his family. Yet, his decision to attend the University of British Columbia and not an art school surprised his relatives. This would be only one decision that seemed out of character for an artist. Wall earned a master’s degree in art and continued his doctoral education at the Courtauld Institute in London. However, “feeling that he had acquired enough learning to serve his creative purposes,” commented Lee Robbins in *ARTnews*, Wall left the Institute and began a career, not as an artist, but as a teacher.

Throughout the 1970s and 1980s, Wall taught art history at the Nova Scotia College of Art and Design and at Simon Fraser University. By 1987, Wall accepted a position at his alma mater, the University of British Columbia, where he remains a member of the faculty. Other personal information Wall has kept private. He believes that “this information is [not] relevant to an understanding of his art,” reported Robbins in *ARTnews*. However, the public has learned that Wall is married and has maintained a close relationship to his family—they have appeared as models in his photographs.
Recreated Old Masters into Photographs

Wall’s journey as an artist began in the 1960s. During this time of dropping out, establishment rejection, and free love, Wall discovered that “the best tool for expressing his own conceptual ideas was photography” and taught himself how to use a camera,” Robbins stated in ARTnews. By the early 1970s, Wall had successfully revealed his artistic ideas by blending both written text and photographs to create a documentary of everyday life.

By the late 1970s, Wall had tired of creating documentaries. He wanted to “move back toward pictorial art,” ARTnews further affirmed. He wanted to create powerful images that represented, and not just documented, life but was unsure of how to do so. Inspiration struck when Wall noticed how lighted advertisements on city streets captured his attention. “I thought immediately that the medium although it was used for advertising—in fact did not belong to advertising in any essential sense,” he told ARTnews. “It was a free medium, one inherent to photography and film.”

Wall explored this new, free medium by recreating legendary paintings as photographic backlit transparencies. For example, in 1978, Wall reflected the past with his work, The Destroyed Room. Taking the theme of hidden violence within the home from Delacroix’s 1827 work Death of Sardanapalus, The Destroyed Room offered its own depiction of modern life. Wall connected the two works by restaging “compositional elements . . . in contemporary urban settings, tempering them with an aura of 20th-century banality,” noted ARTnews.

For the next 10 years, Wall continued recreating paintings into photographs. In 1979, he even “metaphorically [placed himself] in the role of Manet’s obtrusive male customer-spectator” in his recreation of that artist’s Picture for Women noted Reed Johnson in the Daily News. Wall’s reasoning for these recreations are “not out to bury art in worshipful attitudes, but to grapple with its most exacting standards.”

Art critics praised Wall for his ingenuity in using backlight for his photography and for his honorable attempts to bring masterful paintings new life through pictures. More praise was to come because Wall’s true self was not a recreative photographer. As the Times (London) stated, Wall’s true self was much more theatrical: “Wall has the hands and the eyes of a photographer, but in his veins the blood of a cinematographer flows.”

Turned Photography into Film-Making

During the 1990s, Wall began seeing photography as a medium to connect film and literature to art. To create such a connection, Wall first redesigned his studio, modeling it after “cinematic film production-miniaturized.” stated ARTnews. Next, he began shooting his photographs much like a Hollywood movie; he built and dressed large sets, gathered costumes, and hired models. The resulting photographs were a representation of the natural world. However, Wall had not simply happened upon a scene and clicked a picture. He artificially recreated the natural scene where he controlled the image.

This control of the image dominated much of Wall’s future works. Art in America writer Richard Vine noticed that in these works the “forced stillness, irreal lighting and blatantly artificial composition” question their reality. For example, in his 1995 photograph Man on the Street, Wall juxtaposes one man sitting on a bench, his gaze downward, smiling with that of the same man walking down the street, his gaze still downward, frowning. The viewer recognizes that the scene is staged, but by “blatantly devising his shots, he induces us [viewers] to ask exactly what is we ordinarily read as “natural”—and why,” Vine further commented.

Wall’s artification of the natural world drove him to search everywhere for subjects and themes for his work. He told Robbins in ARTnews that “a subject can emerge from anything at all . . . Reading something, meeting a person whose appearance sets something off, a place . . .” In 1997, a place inspired Wall to create his next work, but this time his work would not be a backlit photograph, but a “photograph in iron,” quoted Daniel Birnbaum in Artforum.

Discovered New Media

Commissioned by the Dutch government to create a monument for Rotterdam’s Wilhelminapier, Wall leapt into a new medium for his art-iron. And, he actually gathered trash—ropes, luggage, crates—and used them as pieces of the monument. “These discarded possessions bear witness to a specific moment,” Birnbaum noted in Artforum. The intended effect of this specific moment was that he wanted people walking down the pier to “find themselves inside a completely artificial world, reminiscent of a stage set.” And, once inside this world, they would be able to feel that they’ve discovered “some quite ordinary things that have been forgotten and the complex experience of relating to things from the past.”

Also in the late 1990s, Wall, still maintaining his love for recreating reality through artification, stepped away from that artificial world and stepped into landscape photography. This photography became a “more personal . . . artistic adventure . . .” stated the Times (London). However, Wall’s “devious intention” of making his landscapes look like snapshots continued his theme of artification even in these photographs. “I am interested in getting these pictures to look like they could have been snapshots, partly because that is the way photographs are expected to look,” Wall told the Times (London). “Moreover, most very beautiful and successful photographs have looked that way.”

Critically Praised and Rewarded

In 2002, Wall enjoyed critical success when he was awarded the Hassleblad Foundation International Award in Photography. With this recognition, the world was reminded that photography—whether it recreates history or reflects nature in a staged reality—is an important art medium. And, Wall’s ability to “marry his high intentions with the easy accessibility of his chosen format . . . is real genius,” hailed the Independent. However, Wall’s technologi-


cal genius is not the only quality that sets his photography apart from other art. As Time Canada writer Deborah Solomon suggested, it is his ability, his self-expression through his photography that makes it “hard to think of another living photographer whose work leaves us with so potent a record of how actual life actually feels.”

Periodicals
Art in America, April 1996.
Independent, March 19, 1996.
Time Canada, March 1, 1999.
Times (London), December 10, 2002.

Nancy Ward

Nancy Ward (1738–1822), a mixed-blood Cherokee woman who lived during the eighteenth century, was the Cherokee nation’s last “Beloved Woman.” At a time that the Cherokee nation was frequently at battle with American troops and white settlers who had occupied their traditional lands, Ward made repeated attempts to establish peace between the various parties.

Early Life

Nancy Ward is believed to have been born around 1738 in the Cherokee village of Chota, in what is today Monroe County, Tennessee. Chota, the Cherokee capital, was known as a “City of Refuge,” meaning that it was a place where those in distress could seek asylum.

When Ward was growing up, Cherokee lands were bordered by the Ohio River in the north and the Tennessee River in the south. They extended to the headwaters of the Coosa, the Chattahoochee, the Savannah, the Saluda, and the Tugaloo Rivers. Today the traditional Cherokee lands correspond to the area where the states of Tennessee, Georgia, South Carolina, and North Carolina come together, at the edge of the Great Smoky Mountains.

As a child Nancy Ward was known as “Tsituna-Guske” (Wild Rose). Her mother, Tame Doe, was a member of the Wolf clan and the sister of Attakullacull (another source says she was the sister of Oconostota), a Cherokee chief. Although there is separate tradition that Ward’s father was a member of a Delaware tribe, most sources seem to agree that she was the daughter of Francis Ward, the son of Sir Francis Ward of Ireland. According to some sources, Francis Ward married Tame Doe after settling in the Tyger River area of present-day Spartanburg County, South Carolina. There is also a tradition that Francis Ward was eventually banished from the Cherokee nation. According to Harold W. Felton, writing in Nancy Ward, Cherokee, Ward learned both the Cherokee and English languages from her mother.

Early in her life, Ward is said to have had a vision of spirits helping her find her way home after she had become lost. After that time she became known as “Nanye’hi,” which means “One who is with the Spirit People.” She subsequently married a Cherokee warrior by the name of Kinglisher, a member of the Deer Clan. Felton says they had two children, a boy named Fivekiller and a girl named Catharine.

Tribal Warfare

In the early 1760s, the Cherokee nation was committed to helping the American colonists in the French and Indian War in exchange for protection for their families from hostile Creeks and Choctaws. But, colonial assistance also brought interference with Cherokee affairs in the form of frontier posts and military garrisons. The frontier posts were soon accompanied by settlers hungry for Cherokee land.

An incident in West Virginia in which some Virginia frontiersmen robbed and killed a group of Cherokees on their way back from helping the British take Fort Duquesne resulted in the revenge killing of more than 20 settlers by the Native Americans. This was the beginning of a conflict that would last more than two years, in which the Cherokees, under Chief Oconostota, defeated the British forces and captured Fort Loudon.

Following a truce, an army of Carolina Rangers, British light infantry, Royal Scots, and Native American troops ravaged Cherokee territory, burning crops and towns. War-weary and hungry, the insurgent Cherokees agreed to give up large portions of their eastern lands.

Beloved Woman

In an intertribal conflict known as the Battle of Taliwa, which took place in 1775, the Creeks fought the Cherokees. According to Felton, Ward assisted her warrior husband during the battle by “chewing his bullets.” After her husband was mortally wounded, Ward reportedly took up his rifle and joined the fight. In recognition of her valor, the Cherokee Nation gave her the name “Ghihau,” meaning Beloved Woman or Mother. The title made Ward a member of the tribal council of chiefs.

Still in her teens, the widowed mother of two children was also made the leader of the Women’s Council of Clan Representatives. As a member of the tribal council of chiefs, she served as a peace negotiator and ambassador for the Cherokee people. Ward achieved a reputation as an unflinching advocate of human rights and peace.

Revolutionary War

During the Revolutionary War, the Cherokees were divided on the issues of helping the British and whether force should be used to expel American settlers on Cherokee land. Nancy’s cousin, Dragging Canoe, the son of Attakullaculla, wanted to side with the British against the
white settlers. Ward, however, spoke up in favor of supporting the American settlers.

In May 1775, a delegation of Shawnee, Delaware, and Mohawk emissaries traveled south to help the British win the support of the Cherokees and other tribes. That July, the Chickamauga Cherokee band of the Tennessee River Valley led by Dragging Canoe began attacking white settlements and forts in the Appalachians and in isolated areas of Virginia, the Carolinas, and Georgia. In retaliation, state militias destroyed Cherokee villages and crops. By 1777, the militias would force the Cherokee to give up some of their land.

In July 1776, Ward warned white settlers on the Holston River and on the Virginia border that the Cherokees were planning an attack. Later, she saved the life of a captured white woman who was about to be executed. The white woman’s husband was William Bean, reportedly a friend of Daniel Boone and a captain in the colonial militia. Ward and Mrs. Bean developed a friendship during the time that Mrs. Bean remained with the Cherokees, and Ward learned about dairy farming from her. Apparently out of gratitude, Ward’s village was spared from being razed when the frontier militia made its way through Cherokee lands.

Meanwhile, Dragging Canoe and his band continued to attack American settlements with arms supplied by the British. Finally, in 1778, Colonel Evan Shelby and 600 men invaded Dragging Canoe’s territory. The result was that Cherokee resistance from that point forward was limited to minor conflict.

In 1780, Ward provided American soldiers with advanced warning of a another Cherokee attack, and tried to prevent retribution against the Cherokees by the whites. According to Felton, Ward even arranged to have a herd of her own cattle sent to the hungry militia. Nevertheless, the North Carolina militia would again invade Cherokee territory, destroying villages and demanding further land cessions. In the ensuing battle, which Ward had tried in vain to stop, she and her family were captured by the Americans; she was eventually released and allowed to return to her home in Chota.

In July 1781, Ward helped negotiate a peace treaty between the Cherokees and the Americans. The signing of the treaty freed the Americans to move a detachment of troops to fight with George Washington’s army against the British General Cornwallis in the final battle of the American Revolution.

During the negotiation of the Treaty of Hopewell (1785), Ward attempted to promote mutual friendship between the whites and the Cherokees. She argued for the adoption of farming and dairy production by the Cherokees and became the first Cherokee dairy farmer. Much later, she urged her tribe not to sell tribal land to the whites, but she failed to exert influence on this score. When the Cherokee council met in 1817 to discuss the idea of moving west, Ward, too ill to attend, sent a letter in which she wrote, “[D]on’t part with any more of our lands but continue on it and enlarge your farms and cultivate and raise corn and cotton and we, your mothers and sisters, will make clothing for you. . . . It was our desire to forewarn you all not to part with our lands,” according to Felton. The tribal lands north of the Hiwassee River were sold in 1819, however, obliging Ward to relocate.

**Opened an Inn**

After the death of her husband Kingfisher, Ward had married her cousin Bryant Ward. Bryant Ward was the nephew of Francis Ward, Nancy’s father. The couple had a son, Little Fellow, and a daughter, Elizabeth, before Bryant Ward left the area.

As indicated by documentation on the RootsWeb website, Ward is said to have once written to the President of the United States, saying: “Our people would have more hoes, plows, seed, cotton carding and looms for weaving. They would learn your way of cultivation. If you would send these things we will put them to good use.” The president reportedly agreed to help and sent government agents to help the Cherokees.

Ward later opened an inn in southeastern Tennessee on the Ocoee River, at a place called Woman Killer Ford, near present-day Benton. She died in that place in 1822 (some sources say 1824). Over the years that followed, she became the subject of many tales and legends. She is reportedly mentioned in Teddy Roosevelt’s Book on The West, The Virginia State Papers, The South Carolina State Papers, Mooney’s Book, and The Draper Collection. A chapter of The American Daughters Of the Revolution in Tennessee has been named after her. There is also a Descendants of Nancy Ward Association in Oklahoma.

Near the end of her life, Nancy Ward reportedly had a vision in which she saw a “great line of our people marching on foot. Mothers with babies in their arms. Fathers with small children on their back. Grandmothers and Grandfathers with large bundles on their backs. They were marching West and the ‘Unaka’ (White Soldiers) were behind them. They left a trail of corpses the weak, the sick who could not survive the journey.” The vision was to prove prophetic.

**The Trail of Tears**

In the years following Ward’s death, the state of Georgia, with the support of President Andrew Jackson, began taking Cherokee lands for extremely low compensation and promises of land in the west. Cherokee property was also taken by greedy settlers. Using the Cherokees’ resistance as an excuse, the Georgia militia moved in to Chota and destroyed the printing press used there in the publication of the tribe’s newspaper.

Although a few Cherokees managed to escape the ensuing round-up of Native Americans by taking refuge in the mountains of North Carolina (where some of their descendants still live today), most of the members of the Cherokee nation were destined to enforced exile. Beginning in the spring of 1838, the dispossessed Native Americans were made to travel through rain and mud, and then snow and ice, to lands west of the Mississippi. About 4,000 Cherokees died during the 800-mile exodus that would eventually become known among them as the “Nunna-da-ult-sun-yi” (The Trail of Tears).
Ellen Gould Harmon White

When Ellen Gould Harmon White (1827–1915) was 17, she received a message from God in the form of a vision. It was the first of some 2,000 visions White experienced in her lifetime. The visions formed the basic teachings of the Seventh Day Adventist Church, which White and her husband co-founded in 1863. White served as the church’s spiritual leader throughout her life. She wrote 26 books based on her visions, led a health reform movement, and established schools and sanitariums.

White and her twin sister Elizabeth were the youngest of eight children born to Robert and Eunice Harmon. When the twins were born on November 26, 1827, the family lived on a farm near Gorham, Maine. A few years later, Robert Harmon gave up farming and moved the family to Portland, where he worked out of his home making hats. The whole family, including young Ellen, helped in the hat-making enterprise.

An unfortunate incident occurred when White was nine years old. While walking home from school, a classmate threw a rock at White, hitting her in the face and knocking her unconscious for three weeks. White was left disfigured and for the rest of her life she suffered from recurring health problems, including nervousness, tremors, and dizziness. The symptoms made it impossible for her to complete her schoolwork and she was forced to withdraw from school. White considered this incident to be a defining moment in her life; her ill health caused her to become withdrawn and she became deeply interested in religion.

The Harmons were Methodists and in 1840, when White was 12, she attended a church camp meeting where she devoted her life to God, received baptism, and became a member of the Methodist Church. White was devoted to the church, but she feared that she was not worthy of salvation.

During the early 1840s, the Harmon family attended Adventist meetings. The Adventist church was a Christian denomination that believed that the coming of Christ, or advent, was imminent. The Harmons were especially taken with the views of William Miller who predicted Christ’s return on October 22, 1844. The conflict between the Methodist and Millerite beliefs resulted in the Harmon family’s removal from the Methodist Church in 1843.

October 22, 1844, passed without Christ’s return. The event, called the Great Disappointment, caused many Adventists to waver in their faith. White remained earnest and tried to make sense of the failed prediction. In December 1844, while praying with four other women, White experienced the first of many visions she had during her life. The vision showed her that Adventists had misunderstood the significance of October 22. It was the beginning of a special time of preparation that would culminate in the coming of Christ.

When White revealed her vision to others, they accepted it as a gift from God. White had subsequent visions and she began to travel, sharing her visions with other Adventists. She believed that God had selected her as a prophet through whom God would communicate to the world and prepare for Christ’s second coming. She helped rally Adventists, who had become scattered after the Great Disappointment.

White was only 17 when she began her mission as God’s messenger. She experienced some 2,000 visions in her lifetime. Without warning, she would go into a trance, which began when she shouted “Glory!” three times. If no one caught her, she then swooned to the floor. The trances

Online

lasted from a few minutes to several hours, during which time her eyes were open and her heart and respiration rate slowed to an almost imperceptible level. Sometimes she exhibited extraordinary physical strength during the trance. When she came out of it, she sometimes remained blind for a few days. In later years, White's daytime trances stopped and her visions occurred in nighttime dreams.

Skeptics offered various explanations for White's visions. Some believed they were the result of hypnotism. Others thought she suffered from hysteria or other mental disorder. But most Adventist followers accepted her as a prophet who received messages from God. White believed it was her mission to relay the messages she received, although she was somewhat uncomfortable with the responsibility. Although she was young and frail, suffering from breathing difficulties, fatigue, and fainting spells, she traveled to churches and camp meetings, where she was accepted as a messenger of God.

Married James White

In her travels, White met James White, a Millerite minister, whom she married in 1846. Like his wife, James had lifelong health problems. The couple traveled throughout the eastern states preaching their message and living off the charity of Adventists they visited along the way. When their children, Henry and James Edson were born, the parents left them in the care of friends so they could continue their mission. Being separated from her children distressed White, but she felt God was calling her to preach.

James White encouraged his wife to write down the messages received in visions and in 1849 the couple began publishing her teachings. *The Present Truth* was an eight-page semimonthly newspaper containing Ellen White's prophetic views. Later, they published the *Review and Herald* and *Youth's Instructor*. White's first book, *A Sketch of the Christian Experience and Views of Ellen G. White*, was published in 1854. James White was the driving force behind his wife's publishing.

In 1852, the Whites stopped traveling and the impoverished family settled down in Rochester, New York. In 1854, their third child, Willie, was born. White gave birth to her fourth son, Herbert, in 1860. He died three months later.

In 1853, the family moved to Battle Creek, Michigan, where Adventist believers built them a headquarters for their Review and Herald Publishing Company. The following years were spent writing and publishing messages from White's visions, which became the basis of the church's teachings. In 1858, White wrote her most important book, *The Great Controversy Between Christ and His Angels and Satan and His Angels*. The book was based on a vision and described the war between good and evil and the second coming of Christ. It was the first of four volumes published under the title, *Spiritual Gifts*.

Up until this time, the Adventists were a scattered, unorganized group of believers. In 1863, the movement that White led was formally organized as the Seventh Day Adventist Church. The name came from the belief, from a vision, that the Sabbath should be observed on Saturday, the seventh day of the week. James White took on much of the church's administrative duties, although he turned down the opportunity to serve as president. Ellen White was the church's spiritual leader.

**Led Health Reform Movement**

Shortly after establishing the church, White had a vision that showed the connection between physical health and spirituality. She published a series of pamphlets titled *Health, or How to Live* that described her guidelines for healthy living. Thus began a lifelong crusade for health reform.

White advocated a strict vegetarian diet that included whole grains and only two meals a day. Butter, tea, and coffee were strictly forbidden as were medicine, tobacco, and alcohol. Hydratherapy, the use of water baths and wraps, was used as a treatment for disease. These were not unique ideas in the mid-nineteenth century. Before the Civil War, preachers and medical doctors advocated fresh air, vegetarianism, and abstinence from tobacco and alcohol as alternatives to traditional medical treatments such as blood letting, blistering, and purging. Medical clinics, called water cures, opened across the country before the Civil War. These health reform ideas were readily available in publications and some people suggested that White took her ideas from medical doctors who had previously published articles on the topic. White claimed that she never read their articles before writing down the ideas she received in visions.

In 1865, a vision inspired White to establish the church's first health institute to care for the sick and to teach preventive medicine in an atmosphere of Adventist spirituality. The Western Health Reform Institute (later the Battle Creek Sanitarium) was established in Battle Creek in 1866. It operated under the direction of John Harvey Kellogg, who later invented Cornflake breakfast cereal and founded the Kellogg Company. The institute attracted patients from around the world. The sanitarium left the control of the church in 1906 following a dispute between White and Kellogg.

**Continued Preaching and Publishing**

Despite the fact that health reform was a defining characteristic of the church, the White family continued to suffer health problems throughout their lives. Henry White died of pneumonia at the age of 16 in 1863.

During the 1870s, the Whites traveled extensively on behalf of the church. Much of their work was in the west, where they established Pacific Press Publishing Association. White spoke at camp meetings, churches, conferences, in town squares, and even prisons. Temperance was a frequent topic and in 1877 it was reported that White spoke on that topic to an audience of 20,000 people in Groveland, Massachusetts.

The Whites also established schools, beginning with Battle Creek College (later Andrews University) in 1874. The church's membership increased five-fold between 1863 and 1880.

James White's health deteriorated in the late 1870s and he died on August 6, 1881. White became even more in-
Black and White Headed a Reorganization of the Church in 1901. In 1903, she moved its headquarters from Battle Creek to suburban Washington, D.C. She also established medical schools to train doctors for the church’s health facilities. In 1909, she founded the College of Medical Evangelists at Loma Linda, California, which is now Loma Linda University and Medical Center. White continued writing, completing a number of books and articles between 1910 and 1915. In total, White wrote 26 books and numerous articles and pamphlets. Together with her diaries and other writings, she produced more than 100,000 pages in her lifetime.

In February 1915, White broke her hip in a fall. She was confined to a wheelchair and died five months later, on July 16, 1915, in Elmhaven, California, at the age of 87. She was buried beside her husband and sons in Battle Creek, Michigan.

After White’s death, the Seventh Day Adventist Church continued to grow and draw inspiration from her teachings. Church membership increased from 135,000 in 1915 to more than 12.3 million in 2001. The church’s network of schools and hospitals has also expanded.

White’s books are still considered a major source of inspiration in the church. They’ve been translated into 320 languages. All are still in print and are available and searchable on the official website of the Ellen G. White Estate, a corporation established in her will, at www.whiteestate.com.

Books

Online

Mary Watson Whitney
Astronomer and educator Mary Watson Whitney (1847–1921) is most noted as the successor to Maria Mitchell, professor and director of the Vassar College Observatory. Like Mitchell and other women professionals working in the academic fields of science and mathematics in the late 1800s, Whitney worked diligently on her own career and also fought to advance women’s educational and professional opportunities.

The daughter of Mary Watson Crehore and Samuel Buttrick Whitney, Mary Watson Whitney was born on September 11, 1847, in Walhath, Massachusetts. The family was among New England’s oldest settlers and were able to trace their roots to 1635. Whitney was the second of five children. Her father was a real estate broker, and his professional success and encouragement of intellectual pursuits enabled her and her four siblings access to a good education. This was unusual, for women were typically discouraged from attaining any education during this era.

Educated Despite Gender Obstacles
Whitney reportedly loved to study and excelled in mathematics. Graduating from high school in 1864, she became interested in a college for women that was to be opened in New York’s Hudson Valley by Matthew Vassar. Whitney spent a year waiting for the women’s college to open, during which time she attended a Swedenborgian school located in Walthath, registering there as a private student. When Vassar College opened its doors in Poughkeepsie, New York, in September of 1865, Whitney attended with her father’s blessing. She was given advanced standing upon her entrance to the college. Eager to embark on her education in astronomy, she studied with Maria Mitchell, the preeminent American woman astronomer of her day.

“Her superiority and interest endeared her to the older woman and she became one of her most cherished pupils,” explained Caroline E. Furness, Whitney’s eventual successor, in an essay published in the Dictionary of American Biography. “Whitney was much admired by her fellow students and recognized as a leader. Several times she served as president of their newly formed organizations. Her fine presence, good judgment and impartiality made her an excellent presiding officer, while her modesty and kindness of heart won their devoted affection.” Mitchell, as a perceptive judge of people, “must have recognized very quickly the superior ability and earnest purpose of this gifted young woman,” Furness added in Popular Astronomy, going on to note of Mitchell that, “In later years, she frequently said she did not know which was her greatest feat: to discover the comet which made her famous or to find Mary Whitney.”
Continued Studies in Astronomy, Mathematics

Whitney graduated from Vassar in 1868 after completing her astronomy degree in three years’ time. Second in her class, she graduated with distinction in the fields of both astronomy and physical science. Rather than continue her astronomy studies, she was forced to return home because, with the deaths of both her father and older brother, her mother now needed her. Whitney briefly taught school in Auburndale, Massachusetts, to help support her family and continued spending as much time as possible furthering her studies of mathematics and astronomy.

In August of 1869 Whitney was invited to join Mitchell and her students to view a total solar eclipse in Iowa. Whitney took with her on this trip a three-inch telescope which was reportedly made especially for this occasion. Observations she and Mitchell made appeared in the Nautical Almanac Office official report. She also worked with Mitchell in 1872 on a project designed to accurately determine the latitude of the Vassar College observatory.

Mitchell was able to convince noted Harvard mathematician Benjamin Peirce to allow Whitney to audit his course on quaternions. At that time the Harvard University campus was not open to women; Peirce had to physically escort Whitney between the classroom and the college gates for each and every lecture. She later was able to participate in a graduate-level astronomy course on celestial mechanics and began working with Truman H. Safford at the Dearborn Observatory of the University of Chicago in 1870.

Professor Ormand Stone was a private pupil studying with Safford when he met Whitney with Mitchell’s other charges in Safford’s home. “As a young woman Miss Whitney was attractive and handsome, gentle and refined, affable but dignified,” he was quoted as writing by Furness in Popular Astronomy. “In after life I had only glimpses of her at scientific gatherings, but she always seemed to retain the beauty of feature, manner and character that she had in those earlier days, the only difference being that beauty of maturity replaced beauty of youth.”

Whitney was awarded her master’s degree from Vassar in 1872. A year later, when her sister entered medical school in Zurich, Switzerland, the family accompanied her. Whitney was able to study mathematics and celestial mechanics at the University of Zurich for three years.

Frustrated by Search for Work

When she returned to the United States in 1876 Whitney was unable to find a job teaching university-level courses—or any job, for that matter, in which she could use her knowledge and advanced education. She was a woman, and women who taught were expected to do so in women’s colleges. Whitney opted to teach at her high school alma mater, a job broken by periodic requests by Mitchell to help perform various research tasks. According to Furness, these years of frustration were “perhaps the least satisfactory” to Whitney, as “Her forward looking student days were over.” With limited options, “she chafed at the blank wall of prejudice that faced her and came to use a homely expression which often fell from her lips in later years. ‘I hope that when I get to heaven I shall not find the women playing second fiddle.’”

Replaced Mitchell at Vassar

Whitney ultimately returned to Vassar as Mitchell’s private assistant in 1881, as Mitchell was in failing health. Whitney was initially responsible for establishing research programs, while Mitchell continued to teach and focused on getting additional equipment for the school. Whitney succeeded Mitchell as professor of astronomy and director of the observatory when Mitchell retired in 1888, having been specifically requested as Mitchell’s replacement.

Mitchey’s sister became an invalid just as Whitney took her post at Vassar, and Whitney cared for her in her new home at the observatory. Despite this, Whitney flourished in her position, developing a reputation as an excellent teacher as well as a patient and inspirational mentor. She was made a full professor of astronomy in 1889 and by 1906 there were 160 students enrolled in eight different astronomy courses. Vassar was one of the first institutions to teach subjects including astrophysics and variable stars to its undergraduate students, and Whitney also created a fine reputation for the school’s observatory, particularly for the caliber and accuracy of research conducted there. Although her sister and mother died during her tenure, she went on with her work.

Whitney employed her mathematics skills in her observations of comets and asteroids, then calculated their orbits, publishing her findings in the Astronomical Journal. With information from Vassar’s observatory as well as data from the newly opened Smith College Observatory, she was able to study double and variable stars, the latter being those stars whose brightness changes over a fixed period. Whitney was among the most important researchers on the topic at this time and her work was favorably and frequently acknowledged by her peers in the field.

Research Led to Numerous Published Papers

With the development of technology that enabled accurate measurements of stars to be recorded on photographic plates, Whitney was able to conduct research on plates from other observatories. She subsequently arranged with Columbia University to study and measure their photographic plates made by Lewis Rutherford of star clusters in 1896.

In 1894 Whitney hired Caroline Furness as her teaching and research assistant, paying the younger astronomer with her own money. Once students had completed their use of the equipment in the observatory, typically about 10 p.m., Whitney and Furness used the gear for their own work into the early morning hours. By 1905 she and Furness had published a catalog containing all stars located within two degrees of the North Pole. Whitney charted positions of comets and asteroids as well and eventually concentrated on studying variable stars, novae, and photometry. All together, Whitney published more than 70 papers on various
astronomy topics in journals in both the United States and Germany. “Her research work was marked by accuracy and thoroughness,” recalled Furness. “As a teacher she was noted for her clearness in explaining difficult mathematical points and for the vividness and elegance with which she presented the more descriptive topics. Many students elected her courses merely to come in contact with her personality. As a member of the faculty, she was highly esteemed for her soundness of judgment and her progressive ideas. As a scholar she was a constant stimulus to her younger colleagues. She read extensively on political and philosophical topics, and had highly developed tastes in literature and music.”

Varied Interests Outside Career

Throughout her life Whitney continually strove to better educational opportunities for women. One of her goals was to demonstrate women’s capabilities in the fields of scientific research, and at Vassar she cultivated those students with the potential to achieve professional success in positions at observatories throughout the United States. She was active in a variety of organizations, including the Vassar Alumnae Association and the Association for the Advancement of Women, and was a charter member of the American Astronomical Society and several other organizations devoted to science education. Whitney was also a fellow of the American Academy for the Advancement of Science and president of the Maria Mitchell Association of Nantucket.

Among her hobbies were nature study, especially bird watching. Whitney reportedly was also interested in poetry, particularly American poets. She also wrote verse for her own enjoyment or when pressed to do so by her companions. Not surprisingly, her favorite writers included Ralph Waldo Emerson, Henry David Thoreau, and William Wordsworth as well as Shakespeare. She reportedly liked to take turns reading aloud with friends while sewing. She also read philosophical and religious works such as sermons.

Whitney retired from her post at Vassar in 1910 following a stroke that spring that left her paralyzed and in a semi-invalid condition and died of pneumonia in her hometown of Waltham, Massachusetts, on January 21, 1921. Furness succeeded her in her position at Vassar.

Books


Periodicals

Popular Astronomy, January 1922; January 1923.

Online


Andrew J. Wiles

In 1993 Princeton University professor Andrew J. Wiles (born 1953) announced that he had solved one of the most legendary challenges in mathematics. Fermat’s Last Theorem was an elegantly simple problem in need of a proof, and it had confounded mathematicians both professional and amateur for some 350 years. Wiles’s successful cracking of the necessary code caused a stir in the math community and even landed him on the front page of the New York Times for solving what Science writer Barry Cipra asserted was “one of the unconquered peaks of mathematics.”

Andrew J. Wiles was born April 11, 1953, in Cambridge, England, where his father was professor of theology at the famed medieval university there. In the Cambridge library the ten-year-old Wiles first came across Fermat’s Last Theorem, and it intrigued him. He worked on it in his teens before realizing it was far more complex a challenge than he had originally assumed. After earning an undergraduate degree from Oxford University in 1974, Wiles went on to earn graduate degrees in math from Clare College, Cambridge, and specialized in elliptical curves, a relatively new field of higher math. In 1982, two years after he earned his Ph.D., he began teaching at Princeton University in New Jersey.

Boyhood Fascination Rekindled

Although Wiles was still intrigued by Fermat’s Last Theorem, he knew it would be foolish to devote time and energy to it. Many, many minds before him had failed. The most successful had been Ernst Eduard Kummer, whose development of algebraic number theory led to some notable advances in solving the puzzle in the 1870s. As Wiles told Sciences writer Peter G. Brown, he had given up on it himself by graduate school. “I think I also must have realized that it was not a good idea, for the reason that not much new theory had been developed to deal with the problem since Kummer. . . . You don’t want to waste your whole life as a mathematician trying to find some bizarre, ephemeral proof.”

The Missing Proof

Fermat’s Last Theorem dates back to 1637. “What makes the theorem so tantalizing is that for all its fiendish difficulty to prove, it is almost absurdly simple to state,” noted Time contributor Michael D. Lemonick. Pierre Fermat was a brilliant self-taught mathematician and lawyer living in France. Before his 1665 death he made several important advances in probability theory and analytic geometry theory. The theorem that bears his name had its origins in a note he scribbled, as was his habit, in the margin of a copy of Diophantus’s Arithmetic, a treatise dating from third-century Greece. In short, Fermat asserted that “a to the nth
power + b to the nth power = c to the nth power” can never be true when the exponent “n” is greater than two. In a way, it is similar to the well-known Pythagorean theorem, which holds that the square of the longest side of a right triangle is equal to the sum of the squares of the other two sides. Fermat, explained Guardian writer Simon Singh, “created the equation [x to the nth power + y to the nth power = z to the nth power], where “n” represents any number bigger than 2. Fermat came to the extraordinary conclusion that this new equation had no solutions—among the infinity of numbers, none existed that fitted his equation.”

Fermat did not leave behind a “proof,” or solution, proving his assertion, noting instead that he had found one that was very simple, but the margin of the book was too small for him to write it down. That boast incited a 350-year-quest to find it, which would end with Wiles’s historic solution. As Wiles explained to Singh: “Pure mathematicians just love a challenge. They love unsolved problems. Most deceptive are the problems which look easy, and yet they turn out to be extremely intricate. Fermat is the most beautiful example of this. It just looked as though it ought to have a simple proof and, of course, it’s very special because Fermat said that he had a proof.”

**Lured the Learned, the Daft**

Proving Fermat’s theorem had confounded generations of Wiles’s predecessors. In 1780 Leonhard Euler found that an exponent of three would not work, and others found that exponents of 5, 7, and 13 cannot be true either. The menacing problem so intrigued German industrialist Paul Wolfskehl that he offered a large cash prize to anyone who could solve it. His announcement in 1907 sent a flood of solutions to a special prize commission office established at the University of Göttingen, every single submission required being checked. There were a dwindling number of entries each decade, but a few still came in every month as the 100th-anniversary deadline to solve it—September 13, 2007—neared. In some cases the submissions were from qualified researchers, noted Singh, adding that, in other cases, “manuscripts bore clear signs of schizophrenia.” Some respected names in the field began to theorize that the proof Fermat mentioned never existed, or that he recognized its serious flaws and destroyed it. Writing in Sciences, Brown described Fermat’s Last Theorem as “a siren call for the unwary since the seventeenth century. Amateur and professional mathematicians alike have been lured into its quicksand, many to give up, after years of effort, in frustration and disgust.”

With the dawn of the computer age, programmers ran calculations in an attempt to solve Fermat’s Last Theorem up to the number 4,000,000, but little real advancement was made. In 1984 a panel of number theorists declared it would never be proved or disproved. Characteristically, the final solution was linked to Wiles’s chosen discipline. “One newish branch of algebraic geometry deals with a group of shapes known as elliptical curves, most of which look like a wiggly hump with an egg on top,” explained an Economist contributor. “It is by manipulating such curves that mathematicians now find they can infer various things about statements such as Fermat’s last theorem.”

**Solution Buried in Another Riddle**

In the mid-1950s Yutaka Taniyama, a Japanese mathematician, asserted that an elliptic curve has modular form; this idea was picked up in 1971 by another Japanese mathematician, Goro Shimura and came to be called the Taniyama-Shimura conjecture. A conjecture is an intriguing but unproven theory. Little else came out of this idea until the early 1980s, when an academic in Saarbrucken, Germany, named Gerhard Frey issued a paper asserting the key to proving Fermat’s Last Theorem was in the Taniyama-Shimura conjecture. Frey stated that an elliptical curve could represent all the solutions to Fermat’s equation; in other words, if Fermat’s Last Theorem were false, there would be elliptic curves that violated the Taniyama-Shimura conjecture. A University of California at Berkeley mathematician, Kenneth Ribet, agreed with this idea. In 1986 “Ribet showed that if Fermat’s theorem is wrong, then some elliptic curves should exist that could not be constructed according to Taniyama’s conjecture,” explained Discover writer Tim Folger.

Upon learning of Ribet’s announcement, Wiles set out to prove that such curves exist. He went back to work on solving Fermat’s Last Theorem that same day, telling no one save for his wife and one trusted colleague. He spent seven years working on it in the attic office of his home in Princeton, leaving only to spend time with his family, which includes two daughters, and to teach classes. He abandoned all of his other work to concentrate on it, and was rarely seen at professional conferences. In an interview with Science contributor Cipra, he likened the process to “entering a darkened mansion. You enter a room, and you stumble months, even years, bumping into the furniture. Slowly you learn where all the pieces of furniture are, and you’re looking for the light switch. You turn it on, and the whole room is illuminated. Then you go on to the next room and repeat the process.”

**Historic Announcement Made**

In 1991, after five years of concentrating how to find the solution, Wiles made the breakthrough that set him on the right path. He reduced the theorem to a calculation that had been used unsuccessfully by others and, as he told Cipra, became convinced that “the proof was just around the corner . . . but the corner was a bit longer than I anticipated.” In May of 1993 he felt that he had the proof nearly complete, save for one part. At that point he came across a paper from Harvard mathematician Barry Mazur that described one type of mathematical construction, and Wiles used it to get through the final roadblock. This last step took him just six weeks.

Wiles decided to announce his finding at a series of lectures held at Cambridge University. Their title, “Modular Forms, Elliptic Curves, and Galois Representations,” did not give any hint of the historic revelation he was about to make, but Wiles had been out of sight for so long that rumors abounded days before his lecture series. On the first
day Wiles recounted the first five years of his work on the Taniyama-Shimura conjecture. The second day he presented his findings from the 1991 to 1993 period. On the final day he summed up, with copious blackboard notations, his last six weeks of work. On that day, June 23, 1993, he concluded by telling the assembled mathematicians that he had proven the Taniyama-Shimura conjecture, and noted, in a casual aside, that it meant Fermat’s Last Theorem was also proven to be true. The audience burst into tremendous applause, and news quickly circulated throughout the scientific community.

Yet Wiles refused to immediately release his 200-page proof to his international colleagues for verification, and rumors arose that there was a flaw near the end of it. In December of 1993 he announced that there was indeed a problem, but that he planned to solve it himself. “The problem occurred in Wiles’s construction of a mathematical object known as an Euler system, which is a relatively new and largely unexplored idea,” explained Cipra. “Wiles’s Euler system was intended to prove a sizable chunk of the Taniyama-Shimura conjecture … but the system he had come up with turned out not to work in quite the right way.”

After 90 Years Prize Awarded

On September 19, 1994, Wiles had a eureka moment and closed the theoretical gap. “It was so simple and elegant that at first it seemed too good to be true,” he recalled to Science interviewer Cipra. A month later he finished and announced his corrections; the findings were published in the May 1995 issue of Annals of Mathematics. As befitting the historic nature of the proof, an entire issue was devoted to it, one part containing Wiles’s paper for the original 1993 theory and a shorter one written by his former student, Richard Taylor, explaining how the flaw was overcome. As Brown remarked in Sciences, “in Wiles’s proof Fermat’s last theorem is tumbled out of a massive and intricate mathematical machine as a mere corollary, the consequence of a result that lies at the confluence of virtually every major stream of modern mathematics.”

It took another two years to firmly double-check Wiles’s proof of Fermat’s Last Theorem—in part because there is a limited number of mathematicians who could grasp its complexities—before the Wolfskehl committee finally granted him the long-awaited prize. He received a number of other honors in his field and returned to Princeton where he continued teaching courses in number theory.

Books

Notable Mathematicians, Gale, 1998.

Periodicals


Mary Lou Williams

Pianist, composer, and arranger Mary Lou Williams (1910–1981) is often referred to as the First Lady of Jazz in the annals of American music history. Williams was a highly respected musician in her day whose repertoire spanned several seminal jazz styles, from boogie-woogie to bebop, and she was an integral member of what became known as the Kansas City big-band sound during the 1930s. In her later years she wrote jazz-inflected liturgical works for Roman Catholic masses and taught at Duke University. Williams, remarked Denver Post writer Glenn Giffin, “was the first, for a long time the only, and many claim the most significant, woman in jazz between the era of the ‘20s and her death in 1981.”

Learned at Mother’s Knee

W illiams was born on May 10, 1910, in Atlanta, Georgia, as Mary Elfreda Winn. She did not meet her biological father until she was in her twenties, and her early years were rough. Her mother was a drinker and took in laundry to support Williams and an older sister. Her mother also liked to play the reed organ and kept the infant Williams on her lap when she practiced. According to an unpublished biography, Williams recalled that one day, she reportedly reached out and picked out the notes her mother had just played. “I must have frightened her so that she dropped me then and there, and I started to cry,” she recalled, according to an article in World and I by David Conrad’s. “It must have really shaken my mother. She actually dropped me and ran out to get the neighbors to listen to me.”

Soon Williams was playing by ear the African American slave spirituals and ragtime that her mother knew, and her mother “wouldn’t consent to my having music lessons, for she feared I might end up as she had done”—unable to play except from paper.” Williams later recalled in a 1954 Melody Maker interview. Around 1914 or 1915, the family moved to Pittsburgh, which offered a thriving musical environment in its African American community. Around the East Liberty neighborhood where they lived, Williams soon emerged as a child musical prodigy, with perfect pitch and a remarkable musical memory. Her new stepfather, Fletcher Burley, bought a player piano for the home, and here Williams first learned the works of Jelly Roll Morton and other early jazz pioneers. “As a stepfather he was the greatest,” Williams later said of Burley in the Melody Maker interview, “and he loved the blues. Fletcher taught me the first blues I
ever knew by singing them over and over to me." Burley also smuggled the young Williams into the bars where he liked to gamble, and she sometimes earned $20 in tips by playing the piano there.

**Started in Black Vaudeville**

Williams was soon known around all of Pittsburgh as "The Little Piano Girl" and once even played for a party at the home of the city's leading family, the Mellons. She made her formal debut with a band in 1922 at the age of 12, when an African American vaudeville review came to town and one of its musicians fell ill. Managers learned of Williams's prowess, and impresario "Buzzin" Harris visited the home—Williams recalls that she was playing hopscotch outside that day—and convinced her parents to let her tour with them. Her mother found a friend to go along to chaperone her, and Williams earned a lucrative $30 a week for gigs that took her to Detroit, Chicago, Cincinnati, and as far west as St. Louis.

Williams left Pittsburgh's Westinghouse High School in 1926 at the age of 16 and joined the Seymour and Jeanette Show, another popular black vaudeville act. That same year she married its bandleader, John Williams, who was also a talented saxophone player. She made her first recordings accompanying him on the piano as part of the "John Williams Synco Jazzers" for the Paramount, Gennett, and Champion labels. A woman playing with a jazz act was a relative rarity at the time and word of Williams's talents soon spread to New York City. On tour stops there, she met and played for such greats as Morton and Fats Waller and once even sat in with Duke Ellington's Washingtonians at the Lincoln Theater for a week-long engagement.

**The Kansas City Sound**

For a time in the late 1920s Williams lived in Memphis, her husband's home town, but soon followed him out to Oklahoma City when he was offered a new gig. That band became Andy Kirk and the Twelve Clouds of Joy, and Williams soon joined it herself as its second pianist. Taking the act and settling in Kansas City, Kirk pioneered the new blues-based style of jazz that became synonymous with the booming and somewhat lawless Plains town, rich from newly discovered oil in the region. It was a lively scene, even when Prohibition was still in force. "Kansas City in the Thirties was jumping harder than ever," Williams recalled in the *Melody Maker* interview. "The 'Heart of America' was at that time one of the nerve centres of jazz, and I could write about it for a month and never do justice to the half of it... Of course, we didn't have any closing hours in these spots. We could play all morning and half through the day if we wished to, and in fact we often did. The music was so good that I seldom got to bed before midday."

It was Kirk who helped Williams with some of her first forays into formal musical notation when she began arranging songs for his band. She quickly grew tired of having Kirk transcribe what she wanted and began to learn to notate herself. In Kansas City, Kirk's Twelve Clouds enjoyed tremendous success, fueled in part by Williams's arrangements and her compelling piano solos. She was also somewhat of a novelty, she admitted in a 1979 interview with *Books & Arts* writer Catherine O'Neill, for there were few women in jazz in the day except for vocalists. "In St. Louis once, I was sitting on the stand waiting for the band to come in, and I heard someone say, 'Get that little girl off the stage so the band can start up.' But I just stayed there, and when the band came in and I started playing, the house went into an uproar, cheering and laughing."

**Gained Fame as Arranger**

Williams cut her first solo record in Chicago in 1930, with two of her own compositions, "Drag 'Em" and "Night Life." She was never paid for them, however, and later had to threaten a lawsuit to have them taken off the market. For the rest of the decade she attained widespread recognition and was in great demand as both a pianist and an arranger. She arranged songs for Ellington, Earl "Fatha" Hines, Louis Armstrong, Tommie Dorsey, Benny Goodman, and Cab Calloway, among others. Her best-known works remain "Camel Hop" and "Roll 'Em" for Goodman and "What's Your Story Morning Glory," a song that helped make her longtime friend Jimmie Lunceford's band a success.

Williams divorced her husband in 1940 and remained with the Kirk band until 1942. By then, a new style of jazz called bebop was emerging in New York City, and Williams headed there. She came to know its principals—Charlie "Bird" Parker, Dizzie Gillespie, Max Roach, Bud Powell, and Thelonious Monk—and many liked to gather in her Harlem apartment for impromptu sessions. Drummer Art
Blakey encouraged her to form her own combo, which she did with the man who would become her second husband, trumpeter Harold “Shorty” Baker. It was a short-lived union, however, and the combo was as well. She signed on with Ellington’s band as its arranger, and the highlight of this period of her career was her arrangement of “Blue Skies (Trumpet No End),” a classic Ellington song from 1946.

Dropped Out for a Time

In 1943, Williams began a regular engagement at the Café Society in Greenwich Village, New York City’s first racially integrated jazz club. The nightspot was such a success that a second venue soon opened uptown, and Williams played there after 1948, to crowds that often included prominent artists, writers, and film stars of the day. In 1946 her first large-scale composition, Zodiac Suite, made its debut with the New York Philharmonic Orchestra at Carnegie Hall. Each of its parts delivers a jazz piano interpretation of the 12 signs of the zodiac, with “’Leo’ a growling march,” noted Down Beat critic Jim Macnie of its recorded version some years later, while “the seesaw agitation of ‘Gemini’ comes neatly balanced.” Macnie asserted that “it’s hard to imagine Williams’ intricate miniatures not raising the eyebrows of all who heard them at the time. Almost instantly memorable, their clever construction beguiled listeners by revamping the functions of theme and variation.”

Around this time Williams began hosting her own radio show, the Mary Lou Williams Piano Workshop, but she was beginning to weary of the musician’s lifestyle. She moved to Europe in the early 1950s, where she enjoyed regular work as a jazz pianist at London and Paris nightclubs, but one day in 1954 walked off a Paris stage and went back to New York. She announced her official retirement from performing and delved into charity work in Harlem. She also underwent a religious awakening and converted from her Southern Baptist roots to Roman Catholicism. In 1957, she established the Bel Canto Foundation to help New York area musicians with substance abuse problems, and she personally ran the thrift shop that funded it.

Wrote Jazz Mass

Encouraged by others, Williams returned to stage in 1957 with Dizzy Gillespie at the Newport Jazz Festival. She founded a trio, as well as her own record company—the first established by a woman—called Mary Records, but she also began writing liturgical music. Her 1962 cantata, “Black Christ of the Andes,” honored Saint Martin de Porres, the first African-heritage saint in the Roman Catholic Church who had been canonized by Pope John XXIII that same year. Williams’s most famous work from this era, however, remains Music for Peace, commissioned by the Vatican in 1969 and sometimes referred to as “Mary Lou’s Mass.” It was adapted for ballet and staged by the Alvin Ailey American Dance Theater in 1971, and a performance of it was given at St. Patrick’s Cathedral in Manhattan in 1975, which made history as the first jazz Mass ever held there.

Williams made an important recording in 1970 titled The History of Jazz. A solo piano performance and lecture, Williams gave a first-person account of her years in jazz and demonstrated its changing rhythms and styles on the keyboard. She became a purist about jazz in her later years, voicing a strong dislike for modernist and rock influences on the form. She did, however, perform with avant-garde pianist Cecil Taylor in 1977 at Carnegie Hall. That same year she took a post as artist-in-residence at Duke University in North Carolina, where she taught a new generation of jazz and piano students. It was also the first regular paycheck of her life. She was diagnosed with cancer in 1979 and gave her last performance in Tallahassee, Florida, in 1980. Later that year she was also involved in a performance of one of her masses at Sacred Heart Cathedral in Raleigh, North Carolina, though she was by then debilitated from radiation treatments. She died just a few weeks after her 71st birthday on May 28, 1981, in Durham, North Carolina. She was inducted into Down Beat magazine’s Hall of Fame in 1990 as the first female instrumentalist ever to earn that honor. A “Mary Lou Williams Women in Jazz” festival at the John F. Kennedy Center for the Performing Arts in Washington, D.C. has been held annually since 1996.

Books


Periodicals

Denver Post, September 8, 2000.
Down Beat, April 1996.
Melody Maker, April-June 1954.
World and I, June 2000.

Kenneth Geddes Wilson

Kenneth Geddes Wilson (born 1936) won the Nobel Prize in physics in 1982 for his work applying renormalization group analysis to previously unsolved problem in theoretical physics concerning critical points and phase transitions. Affiliated with Cornell University for a number of years, Wilson was also involved with getting government support for supercomputers on campuses. He later was a physics professor at Ohio State University, again doing research in physics and becoming involved in education reform.

Wilson was born on June 8, 1936, in Waltham, Massachusetts. He was the first of six children born to Edgar Bright Wilson, Jr., and his wife
Emily Fisher (nee Buckingham). Wilson was born into an academic family. His father was a professor of chemistry at Harvard University and an expert on microwave spectroscopy. His maternal grandfather had taught mechanical engineering at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology. Wilson’s mother had done some graduate work in physics. All five of his siblings also became either academics or scientists.

Wilson himself was an exceptional student from an early age. His grandfather taught him how to do math in his head, and while waiting for the bus a young Wilson would do cube roots. He was given an education at private schools in his home state, in cities such as Wellesley and Woods Hole, Massachusetts, and the Shady Hill School in Cambridge, Massachusetts. While still a teenager, Wilson also attended Magdalen College School at Oxford University in Oxford, England, for a year.

**Entered Harvard University**

When Wilson graduated in 1952 from The George School (a Quaker school) in Pennsylvania, he was only 16 years old. He then entered Harvard University, where he studied mathematics and physics. Wilson was not, however, just an academic. He was also a member of the track team, where he won a varsity letter as a mile runner. He graduated from Harvard with his B.A. in physics in 1956.

After graduating from Harvard, Wilson entered graduate school at the California Institute of Technology. There he studied physics, primarily quantum field theory with Murray Gell-Mann as his advisor. Wilson’s thesis was entitled *An Investigation of the Low Equation and the Chew-Mandelstam Equations*. It concerned renormalization group analysis, an area of work that would eventually win Wilson the Nobel prize.

Renormalization group analysis was a mathematical process that was developed to address certain kinds of problems in the area of quantum electrodynamics, related to the mathematical representation of aspects of this theory when applied elsewhere. In his thesis, Wilson solved a problem dealing with $K$-mesons or kaons. Wilson used these mathematical methods to create a knowledge of the magnetic properties of atoms.

**Earned Ph.D.**

Wilson earned his Ph.D. from Cal Tech in 1961. In this time period, he was given two postdoctoral fellowships. The first was at Harvard, where he was a Junior Fellow at the Harvard Society of Fellows from 1959 to 1963. From 1962 to 1963, Wilson worked on a Ford Foundation Fellowship at the European Organization for Nuclear Research (CERN) in Geneva, Switzerland. After Wilson completed the fellowship at CERN, he was hired for a tenure track position in the physics department at Cornell University, where he would spend the next 25 years.

**Wilson’s Theory**

In Wilson’s early theoretical work at Cornell, he continued to study renormalization groups, but this time, he applied them to critical phenomena and phase changes and transitions such as when liquids change to gases and in alloys. With critical phenomena, materials behave differently under defined environmental conditions. They experience changes that are very different. The conditions under which these changes happen are known as the critical point. Near this point, the complexities of what happens with critical phenomena, in terms of short-range actions and bigger connection between the whole body of the material, including the various ranges and scales of interaction, were nearly unmanageable. Wilson was one of many scientists trying to address the problem by reducing the complexity while keeping the theory being addressed valid.

Wilson successfully solved this problem by applying renormalization group analysis to it. The way Wilson proposed using renormalization group analysis involved computers and using an averaging procedure on the broken-down parts of the system. Wilson applied the analysis to properties of the material near the critical point. He used a lattice-like network of first smaller blocks on a smaller scale, then with each step, larger-scale system fluctuations, before the entire system was addressed. These small blocks made the problems easier to solve and removed infinities from the equation.

During the course of his work, Wilson learned that near critical points, a number of systems could be universally defined by a limited number of parameters. His theory was later expanded and applied elsewhere. Thus Wilson’s method became a general theory which allowed observations about individual atoms to predict the properties of a systems of many interacting atoms.

Much of this work was published in two articles in *Physical Review* in 1971. Many scientists believed that Wilson’s work answered some of the biggest unsolved problem in theoretical physics. He later tried to apply his renormalization theory to quarks (that is, what makes up protons, neutrons, and other subatomic particles) in the mid-1970s.

**Won Nobel Prize**

In 1982, Wilson was awarded the Nobel Prize in Physics for this work, applying renormalization group analysis to previously unsolved problem in theoretical physics concerning critical points and phase transitions. The prize was not unexpected. Wilson’s father told Bayard Webster of *New York Times*, “Of course I’m very happy for him. People in physics have been telling me for a long time that it was going to happen. It is nice when it really does happen.”

In his acceptance speech, published at the Nobel e-museum, Wilson emphasized the importance of supporting science research. He said, “The scientist’s inquiry into the causes of things is providing an ever more extensive understanding of nature. In consequence, science is more important than ever for industrial technology. Industry now should become a full partner of government in supporting long-range basic research.”

While Wilson was working on his Nobel Prize-winning theory, he continued to have a strong academic career. In 1970, Wilson was given a full professorship at Cornell. Four years later, he was named to an endowed chair, the James
A. Weeks Chair. It was the combination of academics and research that influenced his next area of research.

**Promoted Building of Supercomputers**

After 1976, much of Wilson’s theoretical work was concerned with computer simulations and modeling. He promoted the idea of building supercomputer centers for scientists so they would have access to the greatest amount of technology because of the limits of computer technology of the time. His goal was to continue to improve the scientific community as well as the computer industry.

Beginning in 1981, he was part of a group of leading scientists that worked to get federal funding to get supercomputers on college campuses. Wilson did less research and honed his public speaking skills as he lobbied Congress, federal officials, and executives of corporations. Wilson gave about a speech a week to promote this cause. People would listen to him more than other scientists, it seemed, because he had won the Nobel Prize. In his speeches, Wilson claimed that without national supercomputers, the United States would not continue to be the leader in this technology.

In 1985, Wilson got his wish when the National Science Foundation gave $200 million over five years to four universities to create four supercomputer centers on their campuses, including Wilson’s home university of Cornell. (The other supercomputer centers were located at Princeton, University of Illinois, and University of California.) Later, the federal government via the National Science Foundation did not provide the funding at the rate promised. In 1985, before the funding failed to be delivered, he served as the director of the Center for Theory and Simulation in Science and Engineering.

**Moved to Ohio State University**

In 1988, Wilson left Cornell to become a professor at Ohio State University. He did this in part because of his wife, Alison Brown, whom he married in 1982. She was a computer specialist and had been the associate director for advanced computing and networking at Cornell’s Theory Center. She was hired to be the associate director of a new entity at Ohio State, the Ohio Supercomputer Center, as well as the associate director of research computing.

As for Wilson, he had reached his goal of getting the Theory Center off the ground and wanted to return to doing his own research. At Ohio State, he was named the Hazel C. Youngberg Trustees Distinguished Professor of Physics. His research continued to be related to computers, focusing on computer simulations and the modeling of physical phenomena.

Wilson also had interests outside of physics. He became especially concerned with education and education curriculum. After 1990, Wilson was involved in national policy for science. He was involved in the National Academy of Science’s Committee on Physical Science, Mathematics and Applications as well as Committee on the Federal Role in Educational Research. In 1992, he was named the co-leader in Project Discovery, a five-year project funded by the National Science Foundation. It was to develop new techniques of teaching science and math. By 1993, Wilson was the chair of Ohio Model Science Curriculum Advisory Committee for the Ohio Department of Education.


**Books**


**Periodicals**


*Plain Dealer*, February 21, 1993.


**Online**


Jeana Yeager

In December of 1986 Jeana Yeager (born 1952) became the first woman to fly an airplane nonstop around the world without refueling. She and fellow pilot Dick Rutan made history when their specially built aircraft, Voyager, became the first airplane to completely circle the globe on one load of fuel. The journey took nine days.

Jeana Yeager was born on May 18, 1952, in Fort Worth, Texas. Despite her last name, she bears no relation to fellow aviation pioneer Chuck Yeager, who was the first to fly faster than the speed of sound. She grew up in a small town near Dallas, Texas, where one of her parents worked as a school teacher. Early hobbies for Yeager included horseback riding and running track, but she also developed an early interest in helicopters. Yeager studied drafting in high school, a skill that would prove extremely valuable in her later project to design the first-round-the-world aircraft.

When Yeager was 19, she married a police officer, but the two were divorced after five years of marriage.

Retained Childhood Fascination with ‘Copters

In 1977 Yeager left her failing marriage and settled in Santa Rosa, California. There she worked as a draftsman and surveyor for an energy company specializing in geothermal energy. In 1978, at age 26, she earned her private pilot’s license, her ultimate goal being to learn to fly helicopters.

Yeager first became involved in the world of experimental aerospace design when she met Bob Truax at about the same time that she received her pilot’s license. Truax was a rocket scientist who was attempting to develop a fully reusable spacecraft—something that had never been accomplished—at a company called Project Private Enterprise. Truax hired Yeager to work at his company as a draftswoman.

Conceived of a Pioneering Voyage

While attending an air show in Chino, California, in 1980 Yeager met fellow pilot Dick Rutan along with Rutan’s brother, Burt Rutan, an aircraft designer. Dick Rutan, who had flown combat missions in the Vietnam war and was 14 years older than Yeager, was a featured acrobatic flyer at the show. At the time he held the title of chief test pilot for Burt Rutan’s aircraft company, based in California’s Mojave desert. Yeager and Dick Rutan fell in love, and in the early 1980s Yeager moved to the desert to work as a pilot for Burt Rutan’s company, Flying Rutan aircraft. There she set new speed records for a woman pilot.

One day while dining at a restaurant, Yeager and the Rutan brothers conceived a plan to make the first nonstop airplane flight around the world without refueling. Burt Rutan mentioned that the lightweight composite materials out of which he built his planes could easily break distance records. Yeager and Dick Rutan suggested that they try to break the then-current record, which stood at 12,500 miles and had been set by a B-52 bomber in the early 1960s. Burt Rutan said he was confident that he could build a plane that could cover twice that distance, which happened to be about the distance around the world.

Yeager and the Rutans began their project in earnest in 1981. Deciding to make the first-round-the-world, nonstop airplane flight was one thing; getting the funds with which to do it was another. Yeager and the Rutans formed the Voy-
Yeager project for this purpose, but it was not until Yeager started a fundraising program that money started to come in. In fact, that program was the major source of funding for Voyager. The project received no funding from the U.S. government, and Yeager, on speaking tours after her historic flight, cited the project as an example of what is possible with enough determination.

It was Yeager who named the project and the airplane that would result: Voyager. She also drafted the plane’s engineering drawings. She ran the business operation that kept the project afloat financially. Turning down sponsorship offered by a tobacco company—Yeager and Rutan are both opposed to smoking—and from a Japanese company because they felt the project should remain entirely American, Yeager and the Voyager team subsisted largely on donations from private individuals in the early days.

**Gave Birth to Voyager**

The project to design, fund, build, and test-fly the round-the-world aircraft Voyager took five years. Two of those years were required to build the craft after it had been designed. The project also required two million dollars in funding. The plane was hand-built by a team of volunteers, who collectively put in 22,000 hours of effort. Some materials and equipment were donated by various aircraft systems manufacturers.

At the end of it, the plane was built that could do the job. The experiment known as Voyager was able to carry several times its weight in fuel, had a wingspan of 110 feet—longer than that of a Boeing 727 airliner—and a cockpit no bigger than a telephone booth. Loaded with all the fuel needed to make the round-the-world flight, it was inherently unsafe, referred to even by its designers as a flying bomb. It was also extremely difficult to fly. Unstable in the air, it required constant attention to keep it aloft. It was powered by two engines, one in front to pull the aircraft forward in flight, and the other in the back to push. Built of a graphite composite known by the brand name Magnamite, the plane’s only metal was contained in its engines and a few nuts and bolts.

Before Voyager could take off, however, it had to be loaded with enough fuel to travel around the world nonstop: more than 1,200 gallons. This feat was made possible because of the advanced structural materials—very strong and very light—with which the plane had been built.

**Record-breaking Flight**

Voyager took off from Edwards Air Force base in California on December 14, 1986. The plane was so heavy on takeoff that its wings scraped the ground as it gathered sufficient speed for take-off. The wing tips were damaged, but not enough to abort the flight.

Yeager, then 34 years old, had undergone extensive training in ocean navigation and communications before the trip, and she acted as the copilot and main navigator, flying the plane while Dick Rutan slept. Other preparations Yeager made for the flight included taking an Air Force water-survival training course. She was one of the first civilians to complete this extremely difficult course. She also qualified for a commercial pilot’s license, as well as multi-engine and instrument ratings.

Voyager traveled at an average speed of 115.8 miles per hour. Its flight path took it from California across the Pacific and Indian oceans, across Africa, and on across the Atlantic before crossing the United States to its point of takeoff. The flight was not without its perils. At one point, storms became so severe that Yeager and Rutan seriously considered abandoning their round-the-world attempt and landing. Forced to run both engines to avoid a typhoon four days into the journey, the pilots feared they had used up too much fuel to make it all the way around the world.

Near the end of the flight, the rear engine suddenly quit. Because the front engine had been turned off to save fuel, the plane dropped quickly from 8,500 to 5,000 feet before the front engine could be restarted. The failure of the rear engine was later attributed to air pockets in the fuel lines that fed the engine from the plane’s 17 fuel tanks.

Loud engine noise was Yeager and Rutan’s constant companion, and Yeager ended the flight with permanent hearing damage. The pair slept very little, managing only 3 1/2 hours or so of sleep each night. Other dangers included oxygen deprivation and the constant battering the pilots took as the plane’s uneven flight tossed them against the sides of the cockpit.
Landed in History Books after Nine Days

Nine days after it had taken off—a total of 116 hours in the air—Voyager landed at Edwards Air Force base the morning of December 23, 1986. Yeager and Rutan had traveled 28,000 miles, landing them solidly in the record books with eight gallons of fuel to spare, enough to have taken them only another 100 miles. By flying around the world Voyager almost doubled the previous endurance record, which had been set in 1962. “It’s the last ‘first’ in aviation,” Rutan radioed as his and Yeager’s flight neared its end, according to Michael Specter in the Washington Post. “I have to admit there have been times during the flight when I didn’t think it was possible.”

After Voyager landed, the first person to approach the craft was a representative from the National Aeronautics Association (NAA). The representative checked seals and other devices on the cockpit and landing gear to verify that the plane had not touched down since its takeoff nine days earlier. The NAA subsequently certified that the plane had, in fact, broken the world record for a nonstop flight.

Thousands of spectators greeted Yeager and Rutan after they landed, and the two exhausted pilots sat atop the craft’s fuselage and answered questions. They then climbed into separate ambulances so that they could be taken to a hospital at the Air Force base for medical evaluation.

President Ronald Reagan reacted to news of the flight with enthusiasm and invited Yeager and Rutan to meet him in Los Angeles the following week. At their meeting, Reagan presented Yeager and Rutan with the Presidential Citizen’s Medal in recognition of their feat. Yeager and Rutan, along with their colleagues on the Voyager project, were later awarded the prestigious Collier Trophy for aviation.

Rebuilt Lives after Historic Flight

Voyager had reached the end of its own endurance; while the plane was being flown from the landing field at Edwards Air Force Base back to its hanger in Mojave, California, the seal for its coolant system became permanently damaged. The craft was eventually donated to the Smithsonian Air and Space Museum in Washington, D.C., where it was put on display along with other pioneering air and spacecraft, including Charles Lindbergh’s Spirit of St. Louis and the Apollo 11 command module that took the first astronauts to the moon.

Following their flight, Yeager and Rutan traveled around the world again, this time at a more leisurely pace as they spoke about their experience. These appearances helped them raise money to pay back the debts they had incurred in connection with their pioneering flight. These debts were estimated to be in the neighborhood of $250,000.

Yeager and Rutan’s relationship disintegrated in the aftermath of their historic flight. Yeager would later trace the erosion of their relationship to the very thing that had brought them together: their shared love of flight. Each intensely motivated and driven by their dreams, they competed for control not only of the aircraft they flew together, but of their relationship.

Speaking of life after Voyager to John May of the Guardian, Yeager said she was ready to take on new challenges, including developing a science museum and thriving “on doing things that are new and exciting for me. I enjoy learning and finding out, figuring out, planning, organizing. For me that is fun.”

Periodicals

St. Louis Post-Dispatch, April 11, 1991.

Online


Steve Yzerman

Longtime captain of the National Hockey League’s Detroit Red Wings, Steve Yzerman (born 1965) was the key player on three Stanley Cup champion teams and the linchpin of Detroit’s hockey dynasty in the late 1990s and early 2000s.

Young Hockey Sensation

Yzerman was born in Cranbrook, British Columbia, on May 9, 1965. By Canadian hockey standards, he was a bit of a late bloomer, not picking up the game until he was seven. But once bitten by the hockey bug, Yzerman spent all his free time on the ice. When he was nine, the family moved to Nepean, Ontario, a suburb of Ottawa. Yzerman became a member of the Nepean Raiders, the local peewee hockey team. Asked by Ottawa Sun reporter Bruce Garroch if Yzerman’s potential was evident at that early age, former Raiders coach Elwood Johnson replied: “Was he a great player? I’ll give you a hint: We had Dave Lowry [now with the Calgary Flames] playing left wing on a line with Steve Yzerman in 1978, and we finished with a 78-2 record, and we won nine straight tournaments. We won the Ontario peewee championship because we had Steve Yzerman. We had a lot of other great players, but he was the guy that everything was built around. He was a guy who could get the job done.”

In 1981, at the age of 16, Yzerman joined the Peterborough Petes of the Ontario Hockey League. In his debut 1981–1982 season with the Petes, he compiled 21 goals and 43 assists. The following season, Yzerman doubled his
total goals to 42 and posted 49 assists. After two years in the
juniors, he was selected by the Red Wings in the first round
of the 1983 National Hockey League entry draft.

On October 5, 1983, Yzerman made his NHL debut in
a game against the Winnipeg Jets, posting a goal and an
assist. For the season, he put up a total of 87 points and 48
assists, more than any other rookie that year. His 39 goals
for the season were second only to the 40 scored by Sylvain
Turgeon of the Hartford Whalers. At season’s end, Yzerman
was named Rookie of the Year by the Sporting News and
was runner-up for the Calder Trophy as Rookie of the Year.
Most significantly for the Red Wings, Yzerman’s dazzling
play propelled the team into the playoffs for the first time in
six years. In post-season play, the Red Wings center scored
three goals and six points.

Red Wings Stalwart

In 1984–1985, his second season with the Red Wings,
Yzerman played in all 80 games of the regular season and
finished tied with Ron Duguay with 89 points. He led the
Wings in assists with 59. Yzerman’s brilliant play once
again helped carry the Wings into the playoffs, where he
scored two goals in three games. Sideline with a broken
collarbone for the last third of the regular season in 1985–
1986, Yzerman nevertheless managed to score points in 27
of the 51 games he played. However, without its star center
at full strength, the Red Wings failed to make the playoffs.

In recognition of his leadership abilities, Yzerman in
1986 was named captain of the Red Wings, becoming at
age 21 the youngest captain in franchise history. Once
again back at full strength, he played in all 80 games of the
regular 1986–1987 season, posting points in 53 of those
games. For the season, Yzerman scored 31 goals and 59
assists. A knee injury on March 1, 1988, cut short Yzerman’s
season in 1987–1988. Although he played in only 64
games, he still managed to lead the team in goals (50),
assists (52), and points (102). He missed 16 regular season
games and 13 playoff games before returning on May 7,
1988, to play in the Campbell Conference Finals against
Edmonton.

During the 1988–1989 season Yzerman scored a career-
high 65 goals and 90 assists. He also led the Red Wings in
power play goals with 17. Yzerman scored points in 70 of
his 80 regular season games. In the playoffs, he led the Red
Wings in goals (5) and points (10). For his impressive per-
formance, Yzerman was rewarded with the Lester B. Pear-
son Award as the NHL’s top performer in balloting by the
National Hockey League Players Association. Also im-
pressed were hockey fans, who voted Yzerman Player of the
Year in a fan poll conducted by Hockey News.

Yzerman turned in an almost equally impressive per-
He was only the sixth NHL player in history to post succes-
sive 60-goal seasons. In 1990–1991, Yzerman managed 51
goals and 57 assists, posting his fourth consecutive season
with more than 100 points. He repeated this feat in 1991–
1992 with a total of 103 points and in 1992–1993 with 137
points, the second-highest point total of his career.

A herniated disk kept Yzerman out of action for 26
games during the early months of the 1993–1994 season,
but he nevertheless managed to score 24 goals and 58
assists for a total of 82 points. Between December 27, 1993,
and January 19, 1994, he scored in 11 straight games. In late
February 1994, Yzerman won Player of the Week honors
after scoring 10 points in only four games. By season’s end
the Red Wings, with 46 wins, had captured the NHL’s
Central Division title. Once again, Yzerman performed brilli-
antly in the playoffs, scoring four points in three games.
After the playoffs, he underwent surgery to remove the her-
niated disk from his neck.

In the 1994–1995 season, shortened to 48 games by a
lengthy lockout and strike, Yzerman scored 38 points in 47
games, leading Detroit to the President’s Trophy champi-
onship. Scoring 15 points in 12 playoff games, Yzerman
helped the Red Wings win the Clarence Campbell Bowl in
the Western Conference finals before falling to the New
Jersey Devils in the conference finals. The following season,
he captained the Red Wings to the team’s second straight
President’s Trophy championship with a league record of 62
wins. On January 1996, Yzerman reached a career land-
mark, scoring his 500th goal. In the playoffs, he scored 20
points in 18 games.

Stanley Cup Champions

One of the most important achievements of Yzerman’s
hockey career came in 1996–1997 when he led the Red
Wings to their first Stanley Cup championship in more than
four decades. In the 20 games he played during the post-
season, Yzerman scored 13 points. The following season, the Red Wings finished the regular season in second place in the Central Division but managed once again to fight their way to the Stanley Cup. In the regular season, Yzerman led the Red Wings with 45 assists and 69 points. He was selected the most valuable player in the playoffs, winning the coveted Conn Smythe Trophy.

With 74 points and 13 power play goals, Yzerman led Detroit to another Central Division title in 1998–1999. He was selected to start in the mid-season All-Star Game but was forced to miss the game because of an injury. Scoring nine goals in 10 games, he led his team into the second round of the playoffs. In 1999–2000 Yzerman once again led the Red Wings with 79 points and 15 power play goals. He scored his 600th career goal on November 26, 1999. In the post-season, Yzerman contributed four assists in eight playoff games. The following season, he led the Wings to their sixth division title in 10 years.

By far the most remarkable performance of Yzerman’s career came in 2001–2002, when he led the Red Wings to their third Stanley Cup championship during his tenure as captain. Over the years the veteran center’s knees had taken a beating, and an MRI taken after he played for Canada’s hockey team in the 2002 Winter Olympics revealed there was virtually no cartilage left in his right knee. For the remainder of the regular season and into the playoffs, Yzerman was forced to play with severe pain. Of Yzerman’s ability to play through that pain, Red Wings trainer John Wharton told ESPN magazine: “His pain tolerance—I cannot fathom it. I wonder if his nervous system is different than the rest of us.”

Never Considered Retirement

On August 2, 2002, less than two months after leading the Red Wings to their third Stanley Cup title in six years, Yzerman underwent an osteotomy, or realignment of the knee. The operation was designed to remedy the acute arthritic condition of his right knee, a condition rarely seen in someone so young. Even Yzerman’s knee surgeon, Pete Fowler of London, Ontario, was astounded at the hockey player’s rebound from surgery. “I don’t know of a pro athlete who has had an osteotomy,” Fowler told Ryan Pyette, sports reporter for the London Free Press. “I certainly don’t know of a pro athlete who has had an osteotomy while they were still a pro athlete. We didn’t do it (the surgery) so Steve could return to hockey. We did it so Steve could return to walking without pain and for day-to-day activities.”

But, amazingly, Yzerman came back. Although Yzerman limited his time on the ice after his return to the game in late February 2003, just having him back with the team lifted the morale of his Red Wings teammates. Most importantly, Yzerman’s comeback meant a return to the tough practice sessions he’d instituted as team captain. On February 20, 2003, Red Wings coach Dave Lewis handed the team over to Yzerman at the end of the Wings’ regular practice session. Although Yzerman could have let the team rest up for the next night’s game, he decided instead to subject his teammates to a sprint session. As Lewis told Jason La Canfora of the Washington Post, “We had already had a full practice, but Stevie skated them hard, and we ended up having pretty good success the next night. That’s just one little example of what Stevie Yzerman means to this team. He demands and commands as much of his team as he commands and demands of himself. And Stevie has pretty high standards.”

Yzerman never really considered retirement as an option. More than two decades in professional hockey had not dulled his enthusiasm for the game. He told La Canfora: “It never really occurred to me. . . . I’m just not ready to retire. Whether it’s due to my knee condition or one day I just lose the desire to play, I’ll know that then, but I don’t have that now. I definitely haven’t lost any desire to play. Until I get out there and know that I can’t play anymore, then I’ll stop.”

Yzerman’s unprecedented rebound from surgery confounded just about everybody around him, particularly the sports writers who were prepared to write the final chapter to his brilliant career.

Periodicals

ESPN, June 14, 2002.

Online

The Encyclopedia of World Biography Supplement (EWB) Index is designed to serve several purposes. First, it is a cumulative listing of biographies included in the entire second edition of EWB and its supplements (volumes 1–23). Second, it locates information on specific topics mentioned in volume 23 of the encyclopedia—persons, places, events, organizations, institutions, ideas, titles of works, inventions, as well as artistic schools, styles, and movements. Third, it classifies the subjects of Supplement articles according to shared characteristics. Vocational categories are the most numerous—for example, artists, authors, military leaders, philosophers, scientists, statesmen. Other groupings bring together disparate people who share a common characteristic.

The structure of the Supplement Index is quite simple. The biographical entries are cumulative and often provide enough information to meet immediate reference needs. Thus, people mentioned in the Supplement Index are identified and their life dates, when known, are given. Because this is an index to a biographical encyclopedia, every reference includes the name of the article to which the reader is directed as well as the volume and page numbers. Below are a few points that will make the Supplement Index easy to use.

Typography. All main entries are set in boldface type. Entries that are also the titles of articles in EWB are set entirely in capitals; other main entries are set in initial capitals and lowercase letters. Where a main entry is followed by a great many references, these are organized by subentries in alphabetical sequence. In certain cases—for example, the names of countries for which there are many references—a special class of subentries, set in small capitals and preceded by boldface dots, is used to mark significant divisions.

Alphabetization. The Index is alphabetized word by word. For example, all entries beginning with New as a separate word (New Jersey, New York) come before Newark. Commas in inverted entries are treated as full stops (Berlin; Berlin, Congress of; Berlin, University of; Berlin Academy of Sciences). Other commas are ignored in filing. When words are identical, persons come first and subsequent entries are alphabetized by their parenthetical qualifiers (such as book, city, painting).

Titled persons may be alphabetized by family name or by title. The more familiar form is used—for example, Disraeli, Benjamin rather than Beaconsfield, Earl of. Cross-references are provided from alternative forms and spellings of names. Identical names of the same nationality are filed chronologically.

Titles of books, plays, poems, paintings, and other works of art beginning with an article are filed on the following word (Bard, The). Titles beginning with a preposition are filed on the preposition (In Autumn). In subentries, however, prepositions are ignored; thus influenced by would precede the subentry in literature.

Literary characters are filed on the last name. Acronyms, such as UNESCO, are treated as single words. Abbreviations, such as Mr., Mrs., and St., are alphabetized as though they were spelled out.

Occupational categories are alphabetical by national qualifier. Thus, Authors, Scottish comes before Authors, Spanish, and the reader interested in Spanish poets will find the subentry poets under Authors, Spanish.

Cross-references. The term see is used in references throughout the Supplement Index. The see references appear both as main entries and as subentries. They most often direct the reader from an alternative name spelling or form to the main entry listing.

This introduction to the Supplement Index is necessarily brief. The reader will soon find, however, that the Supplement Index provides ready reference to both highly specific subjects and broad areas of information contained in volume 23 and a cumulative listing of those included in the entire set.
INDEX

A

AALTO, HUGO ALVAR HENRIK (born 1898), Finnish architect, designer, and town planner 1-2

AARON, HENRY LOUIS (Hank; born 1934), American baseball player 1 2-3

ABBA ARIKA (circa 175-circa 247), Babylonian rabbi 1 3-4

ABBAS I (1571-1629), Safavid shah of Persia 1588-1629 1 4-6

ABBAS, FERHAT (born 1899), Algerian statesman 1 6-7

ABBOTT, BERENICE (1898-1991), American artist and photographer 1 7-9

ABBOTT, GRACE (1878-1939), American social worker and agency administrator 1 9-10

ABBOTT, LYMAN (1835-1922), American Congregationalist clergyman, author, and editor 1 10-11

ABBoud, El Ferik Ibrahim (1900-1983), Sudanese general, prime minister, 1958-1964 1 11-12

ABD AL-MALIK (646-705), Umayyad caliph 685-705 1 12-13

ABD AL-MUMIN (circa 1437-1465), Moslem leader, first caliph of Islam 1 13-14

ABD AL-RAHMAN I (731-788), Umayyad emir in Spain 756-848 1 13-14

ABD AL-RAHMAN III (891-961), Umayyad caliph of Spain 1 14

ABD EL-KADIR (1807-1883), Algerian political and religious leader 1 15

ABD EL-KRIM EL-KHATABI, MOHAMED BEN (circa 1882-1963), Moroccan Berber leader 1 15-16

ABDUL IBN HASAN KHAYR ALLAH, MUHAMMAD (1849-1905), Egyptian nationalistic and theologian 1 16-17

ABDUL RAHMAN, TUNKU (1903-1990), Former prime minister of Malaysia 18 340-341

ABDUL-Baha (Abbas Effendi; 1844-1921), Persian leader of the Bahá’í movement sect 22 3-5

ABDUL-HAMID II (1842-1918), Ottoman sultan 1876-1909 1 17-18

ABDULLAH II (Abdulah bin al Hussein II; born 1942), king of Jordan 22 5-7

ABDULLAH AL-SALIM AL-SABAH, SHAYKH (1895-1963), Amir of Kuwait (1950-1965) 1 18-19

ABDULLAH IBN HUSEIN (1882-1951), king of Jordan 1949-1951, of Transjordan 1946-49 1 19-20

ABDULLAH IBN YASIN (died 1059), North African founder of the Almohad movement 1 20

ABDULLAH, MOHAMMAD (Lion of Kashmir; 1905-1982), Indian political leader who worked for an independent Kashmir 22 7-9

ABE, KOBO (born Kimifusa Abe; also transliterated as Abe Kobo; 1924-1993), Japanese writer, theater director, photographer 1 20-22

ABEL, IORWITH WILBER (1908-1987), United States labor organizer 1 22-23

ABEL, NIELS (1802-1829), Norwegian mathematician 20 1-2

ABELARD, PETER (1079-1142), French philosopher and theologian 1 23-25

ABERDEEN, 4TH EARL OF (George Hamilton Gordon; 1784-1860), British statesman, prime minister 1852-55 1 25-26

ABERHART, WILLIAM (1878-1943), Canadian statesman and educator 1 26-27

ABERNATHY, RALPH DAVID (born 1926), United States minister and civil rights leader 1 27-28

ABIOLE, MOSHOOD (1937-1998), Nigerian politician, philanthropist, and businessman 19 1-3

Abolitionists, English 22-23

ABRAMS, CREIGHTON W. (1914-1974), United States Army commander in World War II and Vietnam 1 29-31

ABRAVANEL, ISAAC BEN JUDAH (1437-1508), Jewish philosopher and statesman 1 31

ABU BAKR (circa 573-634), Moslem leader, first caliph of Islam 1 31-32

ABU MUSA (born Said Musa Maragha circa 1300), a leader of the Palestinian Liberation Organization 1 32-33

ABU NUWAS (circa 756-813), Arab poet 1 31-32

ACHÉBE, CHINUA (born 1930), Nigerian novelist 1 35-37
ACHESON, DEAN GOODERHAM (1893-1971), American statesman 1 37-38

Acquired immune deficiency syndrome (AIDS) 1

Ho, David Da-I 23 145-148

ACTION, JOHN EMERICH EDWARD DALBERG (1834-1902), English historian and philosopher 1 38

Activists
Who: Australian
Spence, Catherine Helen 23 374-375
British
Jex-Blake, Sophia 23 168-170
Chilean
Arrau, Claudio 23 17-18
 Cuban
Rodríguez de Tío, Lola 23 345-346
Puerto Rican
Rodríguez de Tío, Lola 23 345-346

Activists, American
civil rights
Height, Dorothy Irene 23 139-141
Murray, Pauli 23 253-256
Terrell, Mary Church 23 397-399
dress reform
Walker, Mary Edwards 23 432-434
education
Whitney, Mary Watson 23 440-442
environmental
Plotkin, Mark J. 23 308-310
Native American rights
Austin, Mary Hunter 23 23-25
Burlin, Natalie Curtis 23 50-52
peace
Samson, Edith 23 356-358
social reform
Height, Dorothy Irene 23 139-141
Paglia, Camille 23 286-288
women’s rights
Murray, Pauli 23 253-256
women’s suffrage
Terrell, Mary Church 23 397-399

Actors and entertainers, American
aerialists
Leitzel, Lillian 23 225-227
choreographers
Humphrey, Doris 23 157-159
Limón, José Arcadia 23 227-229
Tavir, Helen 23 390-392
dancers
Humphrey, Doris 23 157-159
Limón, José Arcadia 23 227-229
Tavir, Helen 23 390-392
filmmakers/directors
Brooks, Mel 23 48-50
Deren, Maya 23 95-97
Geffen, David Lawrence 23 119-122
Hanks, Tom 23 135-137
Polanski, Roman 23 310-312
film stars
Farrar, Geraldine 23 106-108
Hanks, Tom 23 135-137
Pacino, Al 23 284-286
Streep, Meryl Louise 23 384-387
film writers
Burnett, Carol 23 52-55

opera singers
Joyner, Matilda Sissieretta 23 179-181
singers
Bailey, Mildred 23 28-30
stage directors
Brooks, Mel 23 48-50
stage performers
Pacino, Al 23 284-286
Shange, Ntozake 23 367-369
television
Burnett, Carol 23 52-55

Actors and entertainers, Australian
Campion, Jane 23 58-60

Actors and entertainers, Canadian
band leaders
Lombardo, Guy 23 234-236

Actors and entertainers, European
• GREAT BRITAIN
filmmakers/directors
Glyn, Elinor 23 126-128
Leigh, Mike 23 222-225
stage directors
Leigh, Mike 23 222-225
• THE CONTINENT
aerialists
Leitzel, Lillian 23 225-227
band leaders
Cugat, Xavier 23 81-82
filmmakers/directors
Almodovar, Pedro 23 6-9
Deren, Maya 23 95-97
Ophuls, Max 23 275-277
Pabst, G. W. 23 282-284
Polanski, Roman 23 310-312
Resnais, Alain 23 333-335
Tarkovsky, Andrei 23 392-395
Vigo, Jean 23 429-431
stage directors
Ophuls, Max 23 275-277

Actors and entertainers, Japanese
Kobayashi, Masaki 23 199-201
Mizoguchi, Kenji 23 248-250
Ozu, Yasujiro 23 279-281

ADAMS, JAMES (1730-1794), British architect 1 38-40

ADAMS, ROBERT (1728-1792), British architect 1 38-40

ADAMS, ABIGAIL (Abigail Smith; 1744-1818), American first lady 1 37-38

ADAMS, ANSEL (1902-1984), landscape photographer and conservationist 1 40-41

ADAMS, CHARLES FRANCIS (1807-1886), American diplomat and politician 1 41-42

ADAMS, GERALD (born 1948), president of the Sinn Fein Irish political party 1 42-44

ADAMS, HANK (born 1944), Native American activist 1 45

ADAMS, HENRY BROOKS (1838-1918), American historian and author 1 45-47

ADAMS, HERBERT BAXTER (1850-1901), American historian and teacher 1 47

ADAMS, JAMES LUTHER (1901-1994), American social ethicist, theologian, and defender of religious and political liberalism 1 47-48

ADAMS, JOHN (1735-1826), American statesman and diplomat, president 1 1797-1801 1 48-51

ADAMS, JOHN COUCH (1819-1892), English mathematician astronomer 1 51-52

ADAMS, JOHN QUINCY (1767-1848), American statesman and diplomat, president 1 1825-29 1 52-54

ADAMS, SAMUEL (1722-1803), American colonial leader and propagandist 1 55-56

ADAMSON, JOY (Friederike Victoria Gessner; 1910-1980), Austrian naturalist and painter 18 7-9

ADDAMS, JANE (1860-1935), American social worker, reformer, and pacifist 1 56-57

ADDISON, JOSEPH (1672-1719), English essayist and politician 1 57-58

ADDISON, THOMAS (1793-1860), English physician 1 58-59

ADENAUER, KONRAD (1876-1967), German statesman, chancellor of the Federal Republic 1949-63 1 59-61

ADLER, ALFRED (1870-1937), Austrian psychiatrist 1 61-63

ADLER, FELIX (1851-1933), American educator and Ethical Culture leader 1 63-64

ADLER, MORTIMER JEROME (1902-2001), American philosopher and educator 22 9-11

ADONIS (‘Ali Ahmad Said; born 1930), Lebanese poet 1 64-65

ADORNO, THEODOR W. (1903-1969), German philosopher and leader of the Frankfurt School 1 65-67

ADRIAN, EDGAR DOUGLAS (1st Baron Adrian of Cambridge; 1889-1977), English neurophysiologist 1 67-69

ADVENTURES
Bird, Isabella 23 41-42

ADZHUBEI, ALEKSEI IVANOVICH (955-circa 1012), Anglo-Saxon monk, scholar, and writer 1 69-70
Aeschylus (524-456 B.C.), Greek playwright 170-72

Affonso I (1460?-1545), king of Kongo 172

Afinoegenov, Aleksandr Nikolaeевич (1904-1941), Russian dramatist 172-73

‘Aflaq, Michel (born 1910), Syrian founder and spiritual leader of the Ba’th party 173-74

African American art see African American history (United States)

African American history (United States)

• Politicians cabinet officials
  Rice, Condoleezza 23 335-338
• Society and Culture art
  Burlin, Natalie Curtis 23 50-52
  Fuller, Meta Warrick 23 112-114
  Thomas, Alma Woodsey 23 401-403
  Business leaders
  Graves, Earl Gilbert, Jr. 23 130-132
  Malone, Annie Tumbo 23 242-243
  Education
  Malone, Annie Tumbo 23 242-243
  Law
  Sampson, Edith 23 356-358
  Stout, Juanita Kidd 23 382-384
  Literature (20th century)
  Reed, Ishmael Scott 23 331-333
  Rollins, Charlemae Hill 23 346-348
  Shange, Ntozake 23 367-369
  Teumer, Jean 23 408-410
  Music
  Armstrong, Lillian Hardin 23 15-17
  Hooker, John Lee 23 155-157
  Hunter, Alberta 23 160-162
  Johnson, Robert 23 172-174
  Joyner, Matilda Sissieretta 23 179-181
  Leadbelly 23 208-211
  Pride, Charley Frank 23 317-319
  Williams, Mary Lou 23 444-446
  Photography
  Johnston, Frances Benjamin 23 174-177
  Publishing
  Graves, Earl Gilbert, Jr. 23 130-132

African Americans see African American history (United States)

Agassiz, Jean Louis Rodolphe (1807-1873), Swiss-American naturalist and anatomist 76-78

Agee, James (1909-1955), American poet, journalist, novelist, and screenwriter 78-79

Agésilaos II (circa 444-360 B.C.), king of Sparta circa 399-360 B.C. 79-80

Agha Mohammad Khan (circa 1742-1797), shah of Persia 80-81

Agis IV (circa 262-241 B.C.), king of Sparta 81-82

Agnellì, Giovanni (1920-2003), Italian industrialist 82-83

Agnesi, Maria (1718-1799), Italian mathematician, physicist, and philosopher 84-45

Agnew, Spiro Theodore (1918-1973), 125th emperor of Rome, and mother of Nero 1 85-86

Agrippina the Younger (Julia Agrippina; 15-59), wife of Claudius I, Emperor of Rome, and mother of Nero 20 5-8

Agualondo, Emilio (1869-1964), Philippine revolutionary leader 88

Ahad Haam (pseudonym of Asher T. Ginsberg, 1856-1927), Russian-born author 88-89

Ahern, Bertie (Bartholomew Ahern; born 1951), Irish Prime Minister 11 11-13

Ahijo, Ahmedou (1924-1989), first president of the Federal Republic of Cameroon 1 89-90

Aido, Ama Ata (Christina Ama Aidoo; born 1942), Ghanaian writer and educator 20 8-10

Aiken, Conrad (1889-1973), American poet, essayist, novelist, and critic 90-91

Aiken, Howard (1900-1973), American physicist, computer scientist, and inventor 20 10-12

Ailey, Alvin (1931-1989), African American dancer and choreographer 91-94

Ailly, Pierre D’ (1350-1420), French scholar and cardinal 94-96

Air pioneers see Aviators

Aircraft (aeronautics)
  Pilots
  Yeager, Jeana 23 449-451

Aitken, William Maxwell (Lord Beaverbrooke; 1879-1964), Canadian businessman and politician 94-96

Akbár, Jalal-ud-Din Mohammed (1542-1605), Mogul emperor of India 1556-1605 1 96

Akhmatova, Anna (pseudonym of Anna A. Gorenko, 1889-1966), Russian poet 96-97

Akiba Ben Joseph (circa 50-circa 135), Palestinian founder of rabbinic Judaism 97-98

Akihitō (born 1933), 125th emperor of Japan 1 98-99

Akutagawa, Ryunosuke (Ryunosuke Niihara; 1892-1927), Japanese author 22 13-14

Alamán, Lucas (1792-1853), Mexican statesman 1 99-100

Alarcón, Pedro Antonio de (1833-1891), Spanish writer and politician 1 100-101

Alarcón y Mendoza, Juan Ruiz de (1581-1639), Spanish playwright 1 101

Alaric (circa 370-410), Visigothic leader 1 101-102

Ala-ud-Din (died 1316), Khalji sultan of Delhi 1 102-103

Alaungpaya (1715-1760), king of Burma 1752-1760 1 103

Alba, Duke of (Fernando Álvarez de Toledo; 1507-1582), Spanish general and statesman 1 103-104

Albania (nation, Southeastern Europe) Kastrioti-Skanderbeg, Gjergj 23 187-189

Al-Banna, Hassan (1906-1949), Egyptian religious leader and founder of the Muslim Brotherhood 1 104-106

Albee, Edward Franklin, III (born 1928), American playwright 1 106-108

Albéniz, Isaac (1860-1909), Spanish composer and pianist 1 108-109

Alberdi, Juan Bautista (1810-1884), Argentine political theorist 1 109-110
ANAN BEN DAVID (flourished 8th century), Jewish Karaite leader in Babylonia 1 207-208

Anarchism (political philosophy)
Haymarket Riot
Parsons, Lucy Gonzalez 23 293-295

ANAXAGORAS (circa 500-circa 428 B.C.), Greek philosopher 1 208-209

ANAXIMANDER (circa 610-circa 546 B.C.), Greek philosopher and astronomer 1 209-210

ANAXIMENES (flourished 546 B.C.), Greek philosopher 1 210

ANCHIETA, JOSÉ DE (1534-1597), Portuguese Jesuit missionary 1 210-211

ANDERSEN, DOROTHY (1901-1963), American physician and pathologist 1 212

ANDERSEN, HANS CHRISTIAN (1805-1875), Danish author 1 212-214

ANDERSON, CARL DAVID (1905-1991), American physicist 1 214-215

ANDERSON, JUDITH (1898-1992), American stage and film actress 1 215-216

ANDERSON, JUNE (born 1953), American opera singer 1 216-218

ANDERSON, MARIAN (1902-1993), African American singer 1 218-219

ANDERSON, MAXWELL (1888-1959), American playwright 1 219-220

ANDERSON, SHERWOOD (1876-1941), American writer 1 220-221

ANDO, TADA O (born 1941), Japanese architect 18 17-19

ANDRADA E SILVA, JOSÉ BONIFÁCIO DE (1763-1838), Brazilian-born statesman and scientist 1 221-222

ANDRÁSSY, COUNT JULIUS (1823-1890), Hungarian statesman, prime minister 1867-1871 1 222-223

ANDREA DEL CASTAGNO (1421-1457), Italian painter 1 223-224

ANDREA DEL SARTO (1486-1530), Italian painter 1 224-225

ANDREA PISANO (circa 1290/95-1348), Italian sculptor and architect 1 225-226

ANDRÉE, SALOMON AUGUST (1854-1897), Swedish engineer and Arctic balloonist 1 226

ANDREESEN, MARC (born 1972), American computer programmer who developed Netscape Navigator 19 3-5

Andrei Rublev (film)
Tarkovsky, Andrei 23 392-395

ANDREOTTI, GIULIO (born 1919), leader of Italy’s Christian Democratic party 1 226-228

ANDRETTI, MARIO (born 1940), Italian/ American race car driver 1 228-230

ANDREW, JOHN ALBION (1818-1867), American politician 1 230-231

ANDREWS, CHARLES McLEAN (1863-1943), American historian 1 231

ANDREWS, FANNIE FERN PHILLIPS (1867-1950), American educator, reformer, pacifist 1 231-232

ANDREWS, ROY CHAPMAN (1884-1960), American naturalist and explorer 1 232-233


ANDROS, SIR EDMUND (1637-1714), English colonial governor in America 1 234-235

ANDRUS, ETHEL (1884-1976), American painter 1 235-236

ANGELOU, MAYA (born 1928), American author, poet, educator and founder of the American Association of Retired Persons 19 5-7

ANGELICO, FRA (circa 1400-1455), Italian painter 1 236-237

ANGELI C, FRANCO (circa 1400-1455), Italian painter 1 236-237

ANGELLL, JAMES ROWLAND (1869-1949), psychologist and leader in higher education 1 236-237

ANGELOU, MAYA (Marguerite Johnson; 1928-1992), American author, poet, playwright, stage and screen performer, and director 1 238-239

Angola (West Africa)
Nzinga, Anna 23 270-271

ANGUILLASA, SOFONISBA (Sofonisba Anguissola; c. 1535-1625), Italian artist 22 22-24

ANNA IVANOVNA (1693-1740), empress of Russia 1730-1740 1 240-241

ANNA, KOFI (born 1938), Ghanaian secretary-general of the United Nations 18 19-21

ANNE (1665-1714), queen of England 1702-1714 and of Great Britain 1707-1714 1 241-242

Annie Get Your Gun (musical)
Taminis, Helen 23 390-392

ANNING, MARY (1799-1847), British fossil collector 20 14-16

ANOYKIE, OKOMFO (Kwame Frimpong Anekye; flourished late 17th century), Ashanti priest and statesman 1 242-243

ANQUILH, JEAN (1910-1987), French playwright 1 243-244

ANSELM OF CANTERBURY, ST. (1033-1109), Italian archbishop and theologian 1 244-245

ANTHONY, ST. (ca. 250-356), Egyptian hermit and monastic founder 1 246-248

ANTHONY, SUSAN BROWNELL (1820-1906), American leader of suffrage movement 1 246-248

ANTHONY OF PADUA, SAINT (Fernando de Boullion; 1195-1231), Portuguese theologian and priest 21 7-9

ANTIGONUS I (382-301 B.C.), king of Macedon 306-301 B.C. 1 248-249

ANTIOCHUS III (241-187 B.C.), king of Syria 223-187 B.C. 1 249-250

ANTIOCHUS IV (circa 215-163 B.C.), king of Syria 175-163 B.C. 1 250

Antislavery movement (Great Britain)
Pringle, Thomas 23 319-320

ANTISTHENES (circa 450-360 B.C.), Greek philosopher 1 250-251

ANTONELLO DA MESSINA (circa 1430-1479), Italian painter 1 251-252

ANTONIONI, MICHELANGELO (born 1912), Italian film director 1 252-253

ANTONY, MARK (circa 82-30 B.C.), Roman politician and general 1 253-254

ANZA, JUAN BAUTISTA DE (1735-1788), Spanish explorer 1 254-255

AOUN, MICHEL (born 1935), Christian Lebanese military leader and prime minister 1 255-257

Apartheid (South Africa)
opponents
Robinson, Randall 23 342-345

APELLES (flourished after 350 B.C.), Greek painter 1 257

APES, WILLIAM (1798-1839), Native American religious leader, author, and activist 20 16-18

APGER, VIRGINIA (1909-1974), American medical educator, researcher 1 257-259

APITHY, SOUROU MIGAN (1913-1989), Dahomean political leader 1 259-260

APOLLINAIRE, GUILLAUME (1880-1918), French lyric poet 1 260

APOLLODORUS (flourished circa 408 B.C.), Greek painter 1 261
APOLLONIUS OF PERGA (flourished 210 B.C.), Greek mathematician 1 261-262

APPELFELD, AHARON (born 1932), Israeli who wrote about anti-Semitism and the Holocaust 1 262-263

APPERT, NICOLAS (1749-1941), French chef and inventor of canning of foods 20 18-19

APPIA, ADOLPHE (1862-1928), Swiss stage director 1 263-264

APPLEGATE, JESSE (1811-1888), American surveyor, pioneer, and rancher 1 264-265

APPLETON, SIR EDWARD VICTOR (1892-1965), British pioneer in radio physics 1 265-266

APPLETON, NATHAN (1779-1861), American merchant and manufacturer 1 266-267

APULEIUS, LUCIUS (c. 124-170), Roman author, philosopher, and orator 19 20-21

Aqua fuertes portenas (column) Arlt, Roberto 23 11-13

AQUINO, BENIGNO (“Nino”; 1933-1983), Filipino activist murdered upon his return from exile 1 267-268

AQUINO, CORAZON COJOANGCO (born 1933), first woman president of the Republic of the Philippines 1 268-270

ARAFA T, YASSER (also spelled Yaser; born 1929), chairman of the Palestinian Liberation Organization 1 270-271

ARAGON, LOUIS (1897-1982), French surrealist author 1 271-272

ARANHA, OSVALDO (1894-1960), Brazilian political leader 1 272-273

ARANTES, DESIDERIO ALBERTO ARNAZ Y DE ACHA; 1917-1986), American musician and actor 21 12-14

ARNIM, ACHIM VON (1560-1609), German poet and playwright 1 277-289

ARISTARCHUS OF SAMOS (circa 310-230 B.C.), Greek astronomer 1 286-287

ARISTIDE, JEAN-BERTRAND (1929), chairman of the National Autonomous Resistance of Haiti 1 290-291

ARISTIDES, JEAN-BERTRAND (born 1953), president of Haiti (1990-91 and 1994-95); deposed by a military coup in 1991; restored to power in 1994 1 291-293

ARISTOPHANES (450/455-after 385 B.C.), Greek playwright 1 293-294

ARISTOTLE (384-322 B.C.), Greek philosopher and scientist 1 295-296

ARIS (died circa 336), Libyan theologian and heresiarch 1 297-298

ARKA WRIGHT, SIR RICHARD (1732-1792), English inventor and industrialist 1 298

ARLEN, HAROLD (born Hyman Arluck; 1905-1986), American jazz pianist, composer, and arranger 19 7-9

ARLT, ROBERTO (Roberto Godofredo Christophersen Arlt; 1900-1942), Argentine author and journalist 23 11-13

ARMANI, GIORGIO (1935-1997), Italian fashion designer 1 299-301

ARMANUS, JACOBUS (1560-1609), Dutch theologian 1 301-302

ARMOUR, PHILIP DANFORTH (1832-1901), American industrialist 1 302

ARMSTRONG, EDWIN HOWARD (1890-1954), American electrical engineer and radio inventor 1 302-303

ARMSTRONG, HENRY (Henry Jackson, Jr.; 1912-1988), American boxer and minister 21 9-11

ARMSTRONG, LANCE (born 1971), American cyclist 23 13-15

ARMSTRONG, LILLIAN HARDIN (1898-1971), African American jazz musician 1 303-304

ARMSTRONG, NEIL ALDEN (born 1930), American astronaut 1 304-306

ARMSTRONG, SAMUEL CHAPMAN (1839-1893), American educator 1 306-307

ARNETZ, DESI (Desiderio Alberto Arnez y De Acha; 1917-1986), American musician and actor 21 12-14

ARNIM, ACHIM VON (Ludwig Joachim von Achim; 1781-1831), German writer 1 308-309

ARNOLD, GEN. BENEDICT (1741-1801), American general and traitor 1 309-310

ARNOLD, HENRY HARLEY (Hap; 1886-1950), American general 1 310-311

ARNOLD, MATTHEW (1822-1888), English poet and critic 1 311-313

ARNOLD, THOMAS (1795-1842), English educator 1 313-314

ARNOLD, THURMAN WESLEY (1891-1969), American statesman 1 314

ARNOLD OF BRESCIA (circa 1100-1155), Italian religious reformer 1 314-315

ARNOLFO DI CAMBIO (1245?-1302), Italian architect 1 315-316

ARNOLFO DI CAMBIO (1245?-1302), Italian sculptor and architect 1 315-316

ARRAU, CLAUDIO (1905-1993), Italian pianist and conductor 1 316-317

ARON, RAYMOND (1905-1983), academic scholar, teacher, and journalist 1 316-317

ARP, JEAN (Hans Arp; 1877-1966), French sculptor and painter 1 317-318

ARRAU, CLAUDIO (1903-1991), Chilean American pianist 23 17-18

ARRHENIUS, SVANTE AUGUST (1859-1927), Swedish chemist and physicist 1 318-320

Art of War, The (treatise) Jomini, Antoine Henri 23 177-179
ARTAUD, ANTONIN (1896-1948), developed the theory of the Theater of Cruelty 1 320-321

ARTHUR, CHESTER ALAN (1830-1886), American statesman, president 1881-1885 1 321-323

ARTIGAS, JOSÉ GERVASIO (1764-1850), Uruguayan patriot 1 323

Artists, American
  architects (19th-20th century)
    Guastavino, Rafael 23 132-134
  cartoonists
    Hokusai, Helen Elia 23 150-152
  fashion designers
    Herrera, Carolina 23 141-143
  painters (20th century)
    Gorman, R.C. 23 128-130
    Neel, Alice 23 261-263
    Thomas, Alma Woodsey 23 401-403
  photographers
    Johnston, Frances Benjamin 23 174-177
  printmakers
    Neel, Alice 23 261-263
  sculptors (19th-20th century)
    Hoffman, Malvina Cornell 23 148-150
  sculptors (20th century)
    Fuller, Meta Warrick 23 112-114
    Huntington, Anna Hyatt 23 162-164
    Nauman, Bruce 23 259-261

Artists, Canadian
  photographers
    Karsh, Yousuf 23 184-187
    Wall, Jeff 23 434-436

Artists, Colombian
  Vázquez Arce Y Ceballos, Gregorio 23 423-425

Artists, Danish
  Thorvaldsen, Bertel 23 403-406

Artists, English
  painters (19th century)
    North, Marianne 23 268-270

Artists, French
  painters (19th-20th century)
    Signac, Paul 23 369-372

Artists, German
  architects
    Maekawa, Kunio 23 239-242
  painters (17th-19th century)
    Okyo, Maruyama 23 272-274

Artists, Puerto Rican
  Oller, Francisco Manuel 23 274-275

Artists, Russian
  illustrators
    Kabakov, Ilya 23 182-184
  painters (20th century)
    Kabakov, Ilya 23 182-184

Artists, Venezuelan
  Herrera, Carolina 23 141-143

ASAM, COSMAS DAMIAN (1686-1739), German artist 1 323-324

ASAM, Egid Quirin (1692-1750), German artist 1 323-324

ASBURY, Francis (1745-1816), English-born American Methodist bishop 1 324-325

ASCH, Shalom (1880-1957), Polish-born playwright and novelist 1 325-326

ASH, Mary Kay Wagner (born circa 1916), cosmetics tycoon 1 326-327

ASHARI, Abu al-Hasan Ali al- (873/883-935), Moslem theologian 1 327-328

ASHCROFT, John (born 1942), American statesman and attorney general 23 18-21

Ashe, Arthur Robert, Jr. (1943-1993), world champion athlete, social activist, teacher, and charity worker 1 328-330

Ashikaga Takauji (1305-1358), Japanese shogun 1 330-332

Ashkenazy, Vladimir (born 1937), Russian musician 22 24-26

Ashley, Laura (Mountney; 1925-1985), first woman to serve as a congresswoman and secretary of defense 22 26-28

Ashley, William Henry (circa 1778-1838), American businessman, fur trader, and explorer 1 333-334

Ashmore, Harry Scott (1916-1998), American journalist 1 334-335

Ashmun, Jehudi (1794-1828), American governor of Liberia Colony 1 335-336

Ashrawi, Hanan Mikhail (born 1946), Palestinian spokesperson 1 336-338

Ashurbanipal (died circa 630 B.C.), Assyrian king 669-ca. 630 1 338

Asimov, Isaac (1920-1992), Russian mathematician 1 338-341

Asoka (ruled circa 273-232 B.C.), Indian emperor of the Maurya dynasty 1 341-342

Aspasia (ca. 470-410 BC), Milesian courtesan and rhetorician 22 26-28

Aspin, Les (1938-1995), United States congressman and secretary of defense 1 342-344

Asplund, Eric Gunnar (1885-1945), Swedish architect 1 344

Asquith, Herbert Henry (1st Earl of Oxford and Asquith; 1852-1928), English statesman, prime minister 1908-1916 1 344-346

Assad, Hafiz (born 1930), president of Syria 1 346-348

Astaire, Fred (Frederick Austerlitz; 1899-1987), dancer and choreographer 1 348-350

Aston, Francis William (1877-1945), English chemist and physicist 1 350-351

Astor, John Jacob (1763-1848), American fur trader, merchant, and capitalist 1 351-352

Astor, Nancy Langhorne (1879-1964), first woman to serve as a member of the British Parliament (1919-1945) 1 352-354

Astronauts
  McCandless, Bruce, II 23 243-246

Astronomy
  sunspots
    Harriot, Thomas 23 137-139

Astronomy (science)
  big bang theory
    Penzias, Arno Allen 23 301-304
  double stars
    Whitmy, Mary Watson 23 440-442

Atalante, L' (film)

Atahualpa (circa 1502-1533), Inca emperor of Peru 1532-1533 1 355-356

Atalante, L' (film)
  Vigo, Jean 23 429-431

Atanasoff, John (1903-1995), American physicist 20 21-22

Atatürk, GhaZi MUSTAPHA KEMAL (1881-1938), Turkish nationalist, president 1923-1938 1 356-357

Auchison, David Rice (1807-1886), American lawyer and politician 1 357-358

Athanasius, St. (circa 296-373), Christian theologian, bishop of Alexandria 1 358-359

Atheism
  Franklin Horn Atherton; 1857-1948, American author 23 21-23

Athletes
  Canadian
    Roy, Patrick 23 351-353
    Yzerman, Steve 23 451-453
Finnish
Kekkonen, Urho Kaleva 23 189-191

Athletes, American
cyclists
Armstrong, Lance 23 13-15
football players
Elway, John 23 98-100
race car drivers
Unser, Al, Sr. 23 415-417
skaters
Albright, Tenley Emma 23 3-6
Blair, Bonnie 23 42-44
Button, Dick 23 55-57
swimmers
Spitz, Mark 23 376-378

ATKINS, CHET (Chester Burton Atkins; 1924-2000), American musician 22 28-30

ATKINSON, LOUISA (Louisa Warning Atkinson; 1834-1872), Australian author 22 30-33

ATLASE, CHARLES (Angelo Siciliano; 1893-1972), American bodybuilder 21 14-15

Atomism (philosophy)
Cavendish, Margaret Lucas 23 66-67

ATTAR, FARID ED-DIN (circa 1140-circa 1234), Persian poet 1 359-360

ATTENBOROUGH, RICHARD SAMUEL
(born 1923), English actor and filmmaker 18 21-23

ATTILA (died 453), Hun chieftain 1 360

ATLEE, CLEMENT RICHARD (1st Earl Attlee; 1883-1967), English statesman, prime minister 1945-1951 1 361-362

Attorneys general
see statesmen, American

ATWOOD, MARGARET ELEANOR (born 1939), Canadian novelist, poet, critic, and politically committed cultural activist 1 362-364

AUBER DE GASPÉ, PHILIPPE (1786-1871), French-Canadian author 1 364

AUDEN, WYSTAN HUGH (1907-1973), English-born American poet 1 364-366

AUDUBON, JOHN JAMES (1785-1851), American artist and ornithologist 1 366-367

AuER, LEOPOLD (1845-1930), Hungarian violinist and conductor 20 22-24

AUGUSTINE, ST. (354-430), Christian philosopher and theologian 1 367-370

AUGUSTINE OF CANTERBURY, ST.
(died circa 606), Roman monk, archbishop of Canterbury 1 370-371

AUGUSTUS (Octavian; 63 B.C.-A.D. 14), Roman emperor 27 B.C.-A.D. 14 1 371-373

AUGUSTUS II (1670-1733), king of Poland and elector of Saxony 1 373-374

AULARD, ALPHONSE FRANÇOIS
VICTOR ALPHONSE (1849-1928), French historian 1 374

Auld Lang Syne
Lomardo, Guy 23 234-236

AUNG SAN (1915-1947), Burmese politician 1 374-375

AUNG SAN SUU KYI (born 1945), leader of movement toward democracy in Burma (Myanmar) and Nobel Peace Prize winner 1 375-376

AURANGZEB (1618-1707), Mogul emperor of India 1658-1707 1 377

AUSTEN, JANE (1775-1817), English novelist 1 377-379

AUSTIN, JOHN (1790-1859), English jurist and author 22 33-35

AUSTIN, JOHN LANGSHAW (1911-1960), English philosopher 1 379-380

AUSTIN, MARY HUNTER (1868-1934), American author 23 23-25

AUSTIN, STEPHEN FULLER (1793-1836), American pioneer 1 380-381

Australia, Commonwealth of (island continent)
social reforms
Spence, Catherine Helen 23 374-375

Australian literature
Campion, Jane 23 58-60
Kendall, Thomas Henry 23 191-194

Authors, American
novelists
Spence, Catherine Helen 23 374-375
Kendall, Thomas Henry 23 191-194

Austrians (17th century)
AUA, THEODOR (1618-1707), Mogul emperor of India 1658-1707 1 377

AUSTRIA, COUNT (1834-1872), Austro-Hungarian

AUTUMN (1618-1707), king of Poland and elector of Saxony 1 373-374

AULARD, ALPHONSE FRANÇOIS
VICTOR ALPHONSE (1849-1928), French historian 1 374

Auld Lang Syne
Lomardo, Guy 23 234-236

AUNG SAN (1915-1947), Burmese politician 1 374-375

AUNG SAN SUU KYI (born 1945), leader of movement toward democracy in Burma (Myanmar) and Nobel Peace Prize winner 1 375-376

AURANGZEB (1618-1707), Mogul emperor of India 1658-1707 1 377

AUSTEN, JANE (1775-1817), English novelist 1 377-379

AUSTIN, JOHN (1790-1859), English jurist and author 22 33-35

AUSTIN, JOHN LANGSHAW (1911-1960), English philosopher 1 379-380

AUSTIN, MARY HUNTER (1868-1934), American author 23 23-25

AUSTIN, STEPHEN FULLER (1793-1836), American pioneer 1 380-381

Australia, Commonwealth of (island continent)
social reforms
Spence, Catherine Helen 23 374-375

Australian literature
Campion, Jane 23 58-60
Kendall, Thomas Henry 23 191-194

Authors, American
novelists
Spence, Catherine Helen 23 374-375
Kendall, Thomas Henry 23 191-194

Austrians (17th century)
AUA, THEODOR (1618-1707), Mogul emperor of India 1658-1707 1 377

AUSTRIA, COUNT (1834-1872), Austro-Hungarian

AUTUMN (1618-1707), king of Poland and elector of Saxony 1 373-374

AULARD, ALPHONSE FRANÇOIS
VICTOR ALPHONSE (1849-1928), French historian 1 374

Auld Lang Syne
Lomardo, Guy 23 234-236

AUNG SAN (1915-1947), Burmese politician 1 374-375

AUNG SAN SUU KYI (born 1945), leader of movement toward democracy in Burma (Myanmar) and Nobel Peace Prize winner 1 375-376

AURANGZEB (1618-1707), Mogul emperor of India 1658-1707 1 377

AUSTEN, JANE (1775-1817), English novelist 1 377-379

AUSTIN, JOHN (1790-1859), English jurist and author 22 33-35

AUSTIN, JOHN LANGSHAW (1911-1960), English philosopher 1 379-380

AUSTIN, MARY HUNTER (1868-1934), American author 23 23-25

AUSTIN, STEPHEN FULLER (1793-1836), American pioneer 1 380-381

Australia, Commonwealth of (island continent)
social reforms
Spence, Catherine Helen 23 374-375

Australian literature
Campion, Jane 23 58-60
Kendall, Thomas Henry 23 191-194

Authors, American
novelists
Spence, Catherine Helen 23 374-375
Kendall, Thomas Henry 23 191-194

Austrians (17th century)
AUA, THEODOR (1618-1707), Mogul emperor of India 1658-1707 1 377

AUSTRIA, COUNT (1834-1872), Austro-Hungarian
screenwriters
Glyn, Elinor 23 126-128
Leigh, Mike 23 222-225
translators
Murray, Gilbert 23 250-253
travel writers
Bird, Isabella 23 41-42

Authors, French
biographers
Signac, Paul 23 369-372
essaysists (16th-18th century)
de Gourmay, Marie le Jars 23 88-90
playwrights (18th century)
de Gouges, Marie Olympe 23 85-88
poets (16th-17th century)
de Gourmay, Marie le Jars 23 88-90

Authors, Hungarian
Petöi, Sándor 23 306-308

Authors, Japanese
novelists
Enchi, Fumiko Ueda 23 100-102
playwrights
Chikamatsu, Monzaemon 23 70-72
translators
Enchi, Fumiko Ueda 23 100-102

Authors, Norwegian
Holberg, Ludvig 23 152-155

Authors, Puerto Rican
Rodríguez de Tío, Lola 23 345-346

Authors, Romanian
Caragiale, Ion Luca 23 62-64

Authors, Scottish
poets
Pringle, Thomas 23 319-320

Authors, South African
Pringle, Thomas 23 319-320
Schreiner, Olive 23 362-364
Smith, Pauline 23 372-373

Authors, Zimbabwean (expatriate)
Vera, Yvonne 23 425-427

Automobile racing
Unser, Al, Sr. 23 415-417

AVEDON, RICHARD (born 1923),
American fashion photographer 1 381-382

AVERROÉS (1126-1198),
Spanish-Arabian philosopher 1 382-383

AVERY, OSWALD THEODORE (1877-1955),
Canadian/American biologist and bacteriologist 1 384-386

Aviators
American
Yeager, Jeana 23 449-451

AVICENNA (circa 980-1037),
Arabian physician and philosopher 1 386-387

ÁVILA CAMACHO, GEN. MANUEL
(1897-1955), Mexican president 1940-1946 1 387-388

AVOGADRO, LORENZO ROMANO
AMEDO CARLO (Conte di Quaregua e
di Cereto; 1776-1865), Italian
physicist and chemist 1 388-389

AWOLOWO, CHIEF OBAFEMI (born
1909), Nigerian nationalist and
politician 1 389-390

AX, EMANUEL (born 1949),
American pianist 1 391

AYCKBOURN, ALAN (born 1939),
British playwright 18 23-25

AYER, ALFRED JULES (1910-1989),
English philosopher 1 391-393

AYLWIN AZÓCAR, PATRICIO (born
1918), leader of the Chilean Christian
Democratic party and president of
Chile 1 393-395

AYUB KHAN, MOHAMMED (1907-
1989), Pakistani statesman 1 395-396

AZÁÑA DIAZ, MANUEL (1880-1940),
Spanish statesman, president 1936-
1939 1 396-397

AZARA, FÉLIX DE (1746-1821),
Spanish explorer and naturalist 1 397-398

AZCONA HOYO, JOSÉ (born 1927),
president of Honduras (1986-1990) 1
398-399

AZHARI, SAYYID ISMAIL AL-
(1910-1989),
Arabic scholar 1 399-401

AZIKWE, Nnamdi (born 1930),
Nigerian nationalist and
diplomat 1 399-401

AZUELA, MARIANO (1873-1952),
Mexican novelist 1 402

B

BA MAW (1893-1977),
Burmeese statesman 1 480-481

BAADER and MEINHOF (1967-1976),
founders of the West German “Red
Army Faction” 1 403-404

BAAL SHEM TOV (c. 1700-circa
1760), founder of modern Hasidism 1
404-405

BABAR THE CONQUEROR (aka Zahir-
ud-din Muhammad Babur; 1483-
1530), Mogul emperor of India 1526-
1530 1 405-407

BABBAGE, CHARLES (1791-1871),
English inventor and mathematician 1
407-408

BABBITT, BRUCE EDWARD (born 1938),
governor of Arizona (1978-1987) and
United States secretary of the interior 1
408-410

BABBITT, IRVING (1865-1933),
American critic and educator 22 36-37

BABBITT, MILTON (born 1916),
American composer 1 410

BABCOCK, STEPHEN MOULTON (1843-
1931), American agricultural chemist 1
410-411

BABEL, ISAAC EMANUEL (1894-1941),
Russian writer 1 411-412

BADEUS, FRANÇOIS NOEL (“Caiaus
Gracchus”; 1760-1797), French
revolutionist and writer 1 412

BACA-BARRAGÁN, POLLY (born 1943),
Hispanic American politician 1
412-414

BACH, CARL PHILIPP EMANUEL (1714-
1780), German composer 1 414-415

BACH, JOHANN CHRISTIAN (1735-
1782), German composer 1 415-416

BACH, JOHANN SEBASTIAN (1685-
1750), German composer and organist
1 416-419

BACHARACH, BURT (born 1928),
American composer 22 38-39

BADE, ALEXANDER DALLAS (1806-
1867), American educator and scientist 1
420

BACKUS, ISAAC (1724-1806), American
Baptist leader 1 420-421

BACON, SIR FRANCIS (1561-1626),
English philosopher, statesman, and
author 1 422-424

BACON, FRANCIS (1909-1992), English
artist 1 421-422

BACON, NATHANIEL (1647-1676),
American colonial leader 1 424-425

BACON, ROGER (circa 1214-1294),
English philosopher 1 425-427

BAD HEART BULL, AMOS (1869-1913),
Oglala Lakota Sioux tribal historian and
artist 1 427-428

BADEN-POWELL, ROBERT (1857-1941),
English military officer and founder of
the Boy Scout Association 21 16-18

BADINGS, HENK (Hendrik Herman
Badings; 1907-1987), Dutch composer 23
25-26

BADOGLO, PIETRO (1871-1956),
Italian general and statesman 1
428-429

BAECK, LEO (1873-1956), rabbi,
teacher, hero of the concentration camps, and
Jewish leader 1 429-430

BAECKELAND, LEO HENDRIK (1863-
1944), American chemist 1
430-431

BAER, GEORGE FREDERICK (1842-
1914), American businessman 22
39-41
and biochemist who developed RU 486 2 63-66

BAUM, HERBERT (1912-1942), German human/civil rights activist 2 66-73

BAUM, L. FRANK (1856-1919), author of the Wizard of Oz books 2 73-74

BAUR, FERDINAND CHRISTIAN (1792-1860), German theologian 2 74-75

BAUSCH, PINA (born 1940), a controversial German dancer/choreographer 2 75-76

Bavarian art
see German art

BAXTER, RICHARD (1615-1691), English theologian 2 76-77

BAYLE, PIERRE (1647-1706), French philosopher 2 77-78

BAYLON, BARBARA (1857-1929), Australian author 22 46-48

BEA, AUGUSTINUS (1881-1968), German cardinal 2 79

BEACH, AMY (born Amy Marcy Cheney; 1867-1944), American musician 23 30-32

BEACH, MOSES YALE (1800-1868), American inventor and newspaperman 2 79-80

BEADLE, GEORGE WILLS (1903-1989), American scientist, educator, and administrator 2 80-81

BEALE, DOROTHEA (1831-1906), British educator 2 81-83

BEAN, ALAN (born 1932), American astronaut and artist 22 48-50

BEAN, LEON LIONWOOD (L.L. Bean; 1872-1967), American businessman 19 14-16

BEARD, CHARLES AUSTIN (1874-1948), American historian 2 84

BEARD, MARY RITTER (1876-1958), American author and activist 2 85-86

BEARDEN, ROMARE HOWARD (1914-1988), African American painter-collagist 2 86-88

BEARDSLEY, AUBREY VINCENT (1872-1898), English illustrator 2 88-89

BEATLES, THE (1957-1971), British rock and roll band 2 89-92

BEATRIX, WILHELMINA VON AMBERG, QUEEN (born 1938), queen of Netherlands (1980-) 2 92-93

BEAUCHAMPS, PIERRE (1636-1705), French dancer and choreographer 21 27-29

BEAUFORT, MARGARET (1443-1509), queen dowager of England 20 29-31

BEAJOYEUX, BALTHASAR DE (Balthasar de Beaujeux; Baldassare de Belgioioso; 1535-1587), Italian choreographer and composer 21 29-30

BEAUMARCHAIS, PIERRE AUGUST CARON DE (1732-1799), French playwright 2 93-94

BEAUMONT, FRANCIS (1584/1585-1616), English playwright 2 95

BEAUMONT, WILLIAM (1785-1853), American surgeon 2 95-96

BEAUREGARD, PIERRE GUSTAVE TOUTANT (1818-1893), Confederate general 2 96-97

RECARRIA, MARCHESI DI (1738-1794), Italian jurist and economist 2 97-98

BECHE, SIDNEY (1800-1889), American construction engineer and business executive 2 98-99

BECK, LUDWIG AUGUST THEODOR (1880-1944), German general 2 99-100

BECKER, CARL LOTUS (1873-1945), American historian 2 100-101

BECKET, ST. THOMAS (1128?-1170), English prelate 2 102

BECK, MAX (1884-1950), German painter 2 104-105

BECKNELL, WILLIAM (circa 1797-1865), American soldier and politician 2 105-106

BECKWORTH, JIM (James P. Beckwourth; c. 1800-1866), African American fur trader and explorer 2 106-107

BÉCQUER, GUSTAVO ADOLFO DOMINGUEZ (1836-1870), Spanish lyric poet 2 107-108

BECQUEREL, ANTOINE HENRI (1852-1908), French physicist 2 108-109

BEDA, ST. (672/673-735), English theologian 2 109-110

BEDD SMITH, WALTER (1895-1961), U.S. Army general, ambassador, and CIA director 18 30-33

BEEBE, WILLIAM (1877-1962), American naturalist, oceanographer, and ornithologist 22 52-54

BEECHER, CATHERINE (1800-1878), American author and educator 2 110-112

BEECHER, HENRY WARD (1813-1887), American Congregationalist clergyman 2 112-113

BEECHER, LYMAN (1775-1863), Presbyterian clergyman 2 113

BEERBOHM, MAX (Henry Maximilian Beerbohm; 1872-1956), English author and critic 19 16-18

BEETHOVEN, LUDWIG VAN (1770-1827), German composer 2 114-117

BEGAY, HARRISON (born 1917), Native American artist 2 117-118

BEGIN, MENACHEM (1913-1992), Israel’s first non-Socialist prime minister (1977-1983) 2 118-120

BEHAIM, MARTIN (Martinus de Bohemia; 1459?-1507), German cartographer 21 30-32

BEHN, APHRA (1640?-1689), British author 18 33-34

BEHRENS, HILDEGARD (born 1937), German soprano 2 120-121

BEHREN, PETER (1868-1940), German architect, painter, and designer 2 121-122

BEHRING, EMIL ADOLPH VON (1854-1917), German hygienist and physician 2 122-123

BEHZAD (died circa 1530), Persian painter 2 123

BEISEL, JOHANN CONRAD (1690-1768), German-American pietist 2 123-124

BELAFONTE, HARRY (Harold George Belafonte, Jr.; born 1927), American American singer and actor 20 31-32

BELASCO, DAVID (1853-1931), American playwright and director-producer 2 124-125


BELGRANO, MANUEL (1770-1852), Argentine general and politician 2 126-127

BELINSKY, GRIGORIEVICH (1811-1848), Russian literary critic 2 128

BELISARIUS (circa 506-565), Byzantine general 128-129

BELL, ALEXANDER GRAHAM (1847-1922), Scottish-born American inventor 2 129-131

BELL, ANDREW (1753-1832), Scottish educator 2 131-132
BELL, DANIEL (Bolotsky; born 1919), American sociologist 2 132-133

BELL, GERTRUDE (1868-1926), British archaeologist, traveler, and advisor on the Middle East 22 54-55

BELL BURNELL, SUSAN JOCELYN (born 1943), English radio astronomer 2 133-134

Bell Telephone Co. Vail, Theodore Newton 23 419-421

Bell Telephone Laboratories (research organization) Penzias, Arno Allen 23 301-304

BELLAMY, EDWARD (1882-1943), American inventor, engineer, and industrialist 19 18-20

BEN-GURION, DAVID (born 1886), Russian-born Israeli statesman 2 160-161

BEN-HAIM, PAUL (Frankenburger; 1897-1984), Israeli composer 2 161-162

BEN YEHUDA, ELIEZER (1858-1922), Hebrew lexicographer and editor 2 181-182

BENALCÁZAR, SEBASTIÁN DE (died 1551), Spanish conquistador 2 145-146

BENAVENTE Y MARTINEZ, JACINTO (1866-1954), Spanish dramatist 2 146-147

BENCHLEY, ROBERT (1889-1945), American humorist 2 150-151

BENDA, JULIEN (1867-1956), French cultural critic and novelist 2 151-152

BENEDICT XIV (Lambertini; 1675-1758), Italian pope 2 154-155

BENEDICT XV (Giacomo della Chiesa; 1854-1922), pope, 1914-1922 2 153-154

BENEDICT, RUTH FULTON (1887-1948), American cultural anthropologist 2 154-155

BENEFIT, STEPHEN VINCENT (1898-1943), American poet and novelist 2 157-158

BENETTON, Italian family (Luciano, Giuliana, Gilberto, Carlo and Mauro) who organized a world-wide chain of colorful knitwear stores 2 158-159

BENZ, CARL (1844-1929), German inventor 2 182-183

BERENSON, BERNARD (1865-1959), American art critic and historian 20 34-35

BENEDICT, ST. ROBERT (1542-1621), Italian theologian and cardinal 2 135-136

BELLOC, JOSEPH HAILENS PIERRE (1870-1953), French-born English author and historian 2 141

BELLOW, SAUL (born 1915), American novelist and Nobel Prize winner 2 141-143

BELLOWS, GEORGE WESLEY (1882-1925), American painter 2 143

BELLOWS, HENRY WHITNEY (1814-1882), American Unitarian minister 2 143-144

BELMONT, AUGUST (1816-1890), German-American banker, diplomat, and horse racer 22 56-57

BEMBO, PIETRO (1470-1547), Italian humanist, poet, and historian 2 144-145

BEN AND JERRY ice cream company founders 18 35-37

BEN BADIS, ABD AL-HAMID (1889-1940), leader of the Islamic Reform Movement in Algeria between the two world wars 2 147-148

BEN BELLA, AHMED (born 1918), first president of the Algerian Republic 2 148-149

BENNETT, ALAN (born 1934), British playwright 2 166-167

BENNETT, Enoch Arnold (1867-1931), English novelist and dramatist 2 167-168

BENNETT, JAMES GORDON (1795-1872), Scottish-born American journalist and publisher 2 168-169

BENNETT, JAMES GORDON, JR. (1841-1918), American newspaper owner and editor 2 169-170

BENNETT, JOHN COLEMAN (1902-1995), American theologian 2 170-171

BENNETT, RICHARD BEDFORD (1870-1947), Canadian statesman, prime minister 1930-1935 2 171-172

BENNETT, RICHARD RODNEY (born 1936), English composer 2 172

BENNETT, ROBERT RUSSELL (1894-1981), American arranger, composer, and conductor 21 32-34


BENNY, JACK (Benjamin Kubelsky; 1894-1974), American comedian and a star of radio, television, and stage 2 174-176

BENTHAM, JEREMY (1748-1832), English philosopher, political theorist, and jurist 2 176-178

BENTLEY, ARTHUR F. (1870-1957), American philosopher and political scientist 2 178

BENTON, SEN. THOMAS HART (1782-1858), American statesman 2 178-179

BENTON, THOMAS HART (1889-1975), American regionalist painter 2 178-179

BENTSEN, LLOYD MILLARD (born 1921), senior United States senator from Texas and Democratic vice-presidential candidate in 1988 2 180-181

BERDYAEV, NICHOLAS (1874-1948), Russian philosopher 2 184-185

BERCHTOLD, COUNT LEOPOLD VON (1863-1942), Austro-Hungarian statesman 2 183-184

BEN BELLA, AHMED (born 1918), first president of the Algerian Republic 2 148-149

BENNETT, ALAN (born 1934), British playwright 2 166-167

BENNETT, Enoch Arnold (1867-1931), English novelist and dramatist 2 167-168

BENNETT, James Gordon (1795-1872), Scottish-born American journalist and publisher 2 168-169

BENNETT, James Gordon, Jr. (1841-1918), American newspaper owner and editor 2 169-170

BENNETT, John Coleman (1902-1995), American theologian 2 170-171

BENNETT, Richard Bedford (1870-1947), Canadian statesman, prime minister 1930-1935 2 171-172

BENNETT, Richard Rodney (born 1936), English composer 2 172

BENNETT, Robert Russell (1894-1981), American arranger, composer, and conductor 21 32-34


BENNY, Jack (Benjamin Kubelsky; 1894-1974), American comedian and a star of radio, television, and stage 2 174-176

BENTHAM, Jeremy (1748-1832), English philosopher, political theorist, and jurist 2 176-178

BENTLEY, Arthur F. (1870-1957), American philosopher and political scientist 2 178

BENTON, Sen. Thomas Hart (1782-1858), American statesman 2 178-179

BENTON, Thomas Hart (1889-1975), American regionalist painter 2 178-179

BENTSEN, Lloyd Millard (born 1921), senior United States senator from Texas and Democratic vice-presidential candidate in 1988 2 180-181

BENZ, Carl (1844-1929), German inventor 2 182-183

BERCHTOLD, Count Leopold von (1863-1942), Austro-Hungarian statesman 2 183-184

BERDYAEV, Nicholas (1874-1948), Russian philosopher 2 184-185

BERELSON, Bernard (1912-1979), American behavioral scientist 2 185-186

BERENSON, Bernard (1865-1959), American art critic and historian 20 34-35
BERG, ALBAN (1885-1935), Austrian composer 2 186-187
BERG, PAUL (born 1926), American chemist 2 187-189
BERGER, VICTOR LOUIS (1860-1929), American politician 2 189-190
BERGMAN, ERNST INGMAR (born 1918; Swedish film and stage director 2 190-191
BERGMAN, INGRID (1917-1982), Swedish actress 20 35-37
BERGSON, HENRI (1859-1941), French philosopher 2 191-192
BERIA, LAURENTY PAVLOVICH (1899-1953), Soviet secret-police chief and politician 2 192-193
BERING, VITUS (1681-1741), Danish navigator in Russian employ 2 193-194
BERIO, UGO (1892-1953), Italian mathematician and physicist 2 197-198
BERKELEY, SIR WILLIAM (1666-1753), Anglo-Irish philosopher and Anglican bishop 2 197-198
BERKELEY, BUSBY (William Berkeley Enos; 1895-1976), American filmmaker 20 38-39
BERKELEY, GEORGE (1685-1753), Anglo-Irish philosopher and Anglican bishop 2 197-198
BERKLEY, LINCOLN (1895-1989), Comedian and educational psychologist 2 212-214
BERKNER, JOSEPH E. (Joseph-Elzean Berner; 1852-1934), American explorer 23 35-37
BERKNER, NIKLAS (1598-1680), Italian artist 2 214-216
BERDOULLE, DANIEL (1700-1782), Swiss mathematician and physicist 2 216
BERGSELLI, LUDOVICO (1891-1955), Italian surgeon 2 217-219
BERNHEIMER, HERMANN (1858-1941), German mathematician 2 220-222
BERNIGER, JACOB (Jacques or James Bernoulli; 1654-1705), Swiss mathematician 23 37-39
BERNSTEIN, DOROTHY LEWIS (born 1914), American mathematician 2 217
BERNARD, CLAUDE (1813-1878), French physiologist 2 208-210
BERNARD, CLAUDE MAURICE (1806-1878), French theologian, Doctor of the Church 2 207-208
BERNARDIN, CARDINAL JOSEPH (1851-1894), Roman Catholic Cardinal and American activist 2 210-211
BERNAYS, EDWARD L. (1891-1995), American public relations consultant 2 211-212
BERNBACH, WILLIAM (1911-1982), American advertising executive 19 20-22
BERNARDS-LEES, TIM (born 1955), English computer scientist and creator of the World Wide Web 20 41-43
BERNARDO, LAVRENTY PAVLOVICH (born 1940), Italian film director 18 39-41
BERZELIUS, JOHNS JACOB (1779-1848), Swedish chemist 2 231-233
BESANT, ANNIE WOOD (1847-1933), British social reformer and theosophist 2 233-234
BESSEL, FRIEDRICH WILHELM (1784-1846), German astronomer 234-235
BESSEMER, SIR HENRY (1813-1898), English inventor 235-236
BETHE, HANS ALBRECHT (1906-1984), American physicist 238-239
BETIANO, THEOBALDO VON (1856-1921), German statesman 239-240
BETHUNE, HENRY NORMAN (1890-1939), Canadian humanitarian physician 2 240-241
BETHUNE, MARY MCLEOD (1875-1955), African American educator 2 241-242
BETI, MONGO (Alexandre Biyidi; born 1932), Cameroonian novelist 2 242-243
BETJEMAN, JOHN (1906-1984), Poet Laureate of Britain 1972-1984 2 243-245
BETTELHEIM, BRUNO (1910-1990), Austrian-born American psychoanalyst 2 245-246
BETTI, UGO (1892-1953), Italian playwright 2 246
BEUYS, JOSEPH (1921-1986), German artist and sculptor 2 246-248
BEVAN, ANEURIN (1901-1960), Labour minister responsible for the creation of the British National Health Service 2 248-249
BEVEL, JAMES LUTHER (born 1936), American civil rights activist of the 1960s 2 250-251
Beveridge, Albert Jeremiah (1862-1927), American statesman 23 39-41
Borinquén
see Puerto Rico

BORJA CEVALLOS, RODRIGO (born 1935), a founder of Ecuador’s Democratic Left (Izquierda Democrática) party and president of Ecuador (1988-2 417-418

BORLAUG, NORMAN ERNEST (born 1914), American biochemist who developed high yield cereal grains 2 418-420

BORN, MAX (born 1905), German physicist 2 420-421

BORCHOV, DOV BER (1881-1917), early Zionist thinker who reconciled Judaism and Marxism 2 421-422

BORODIN, ALEKSANDR PROFIREVICH (1833-1891), Russian composer 2 422-423

BORROMEI, ST. CHARLES (1494-1527), French bishop and author 54-56

BOSWELL, JAMES (1740-1795), Scottish writer, president, 1963 2 428-429

BOSE, SIR JAGADIS CHANDRA (1858-1937), Indian physicist and plant physiologist 2 430-431

BOSE, SUBHAS CHANDRA (1897-1945), Indian nationalist 2 430-431

BOSWORTH, MARY MUSGROVE (Cousapoonakees,1700-1765), Native American/American interpreter, diplomat, and businessperson 20 54-56

BOSSUET, JACQUES BÉNIGNE (1627-1704), French bishop and author 2 431-432

BOSWELL, JAMES (1740-1795), Scottish biographer and diarist 2 432-434

BOTH, LOUIS (1862-1919), South African soldier and statesman 2 434-436

BOTH, PIETER WILLEM (born 1916), prime minister (1978-1984) and first executive state president of the Republic of South Africa 2 436-438

BOTHE, WALTER (1891-1957), German physicist 2 438-439

BOTTICELLI, SANDRO (1444-1510), Italian painter 2 439-440

BOUCHER, FRANÇOIS (1703-1770), French painter 2 440-442

BOUCICAULT, DION (1820-1890), Irish-American playwright and actor 2 442-443

BOUDICCA (Boadicea; died 61 A.D.), Iceni queen 18 56-58

BOUDINOT, ELIAS (Buck Watie; Galagina; 1803-1839), Cherokee leader and author 21 52-54

BOUGAINVILLE, LOUIS ANTOINE DE (1729-1811), French soldier and explorer 2 443-444

BOULANGER, NADIA (1887-1979), French pianist and music teacher 20 56-58

BOULEZ, PIERRE (born 1925), French composer, conductor, and teacher 2 444-445

BOULIENDE, HOUARI (born 1932), Algerian revolutionary, military leader, and president 2 445-446

BOURASSA, JOSEPH-HENRI-NAPOLEON (1866-1952), French-Canadian nationalist and editor 2 446-447

BOURASSA, ROBERT (born 1933), premier of the province of Quebec (1970-1976 and 1985-) 2 447-449

BOURDELLE, EMILE-ANTOINE (1861-1929), French sculptor 2 449-450

BOURGEOIS, LOUISE (1894-1971), American sculptor 2 451-452

BOURGEOYS, BLESSED MARGUERITE (1620-1700), French educator and religious founder 2 452-453

BOURGUIBA, HABIB (1903-2000), Tunisian statesman 2 453-455

BOURKE-WHITE, MARGARET (1904-1971), American photographer and photojournalist 2 455-456

BOURNE, RANDOLPH SILLIMAN (1886-1918), American pacifist and cultural critic 2 456-457

BOUTROS-GHALI, BOUTROS (born 1922), Egyptian diplomat and sixth secretary-general of the United Nations (1991-) 2 457-458

BOUTS, DIRK (1415/20-1475), Dutch painter 2 458-459

BOWDITCH, HENRY INGERSOLL (1808-1892), American physician 2 459-460

BOWDITCH, NATHANIEL (1773-1838), American navigator and mathematician 2 460-461

BOWDOIN, JAMES (1726-1790), American merchant and politician 2 461-462

BOWEN, ELIZABETH (1899-1973), British novelist 2 462-463

BOWERS, CLAUDE GERNADE (1878-1958), American journalist, historian, and diplomat 2 463

BOWIE, DAVID (David Robert Jones; born 1947), English singer, songwriter, and actor 18 58-60

BOWLES, PAUL (1910-1999), American author, musical composer, and translator 19 31-34

BOWLES, SAMUEL (1826-1878), American newspaper publisher 2 464

BOWMAN, ISAIAH (1878-1950), American geographer 2 464-465

BOXER, BARBARA (born 1940), U.S. Senator from California 2 465-468

BOYD, LOUISE ARNER (1887-1972), American explorer 22 73-74

BOYER, JEAN PIERRE (1776-1850), Haitian president 1818-1845 2 468-469

BOYLE, ROBERT (1627-1691), British chemist and physicist 2 469-471

BOYLSTON, ZABDIEL (1679-1766), American physician 2 471

BOZEMAN, JOHN M. (1837-1867), American pioneer 2 471-472

BRACKENRIDGE, HUGH HENRY (1749-1816), American lawyer and writer 2 472-473

BRACHTON, HUGH HENRY (1749-1816), American lawyer and writer 2 472-473

BRADLAUGH, CHARLES (1833-1891), English freethinker and political agitator 2 478
BRADLEY, ED (born 1941), African American broadcast journalist 2 478-481
BRADLEY, FRANCIS HERBERT (1846-1924), English philosopher 2 481-482
BRADLEY, JAMES (1693-1762), English astronomer 2 482-483
BRADLEY, JOSEPH P. (1813-1892), American Supreme Court justice 22 74-77
BRADLEY, MARION ZIMMER (born 1930), American author 18 60-62
BRADLEY, OMAR NELSON (1893-1981), American general 2 483-484
BRADLEY, TOM (1917-1998), first African American mayor of Los Angeles 2 484-485
BRADMAN, SIR DONALD GEORGE (1893-1981), Australian cricketer 2 485-486
BRADSTREET, ANNE DUDLEY (circa 1612-1672), English-born American poet 2 486-487
BRADY, MATHEW B. (circa 1823-1896), American photographer 2 487-488
BRAGG, SIR WILLIAM HENRY (1862-1942), English physicist 2 488-489
BRAHE, TYCHO (1546-1601), Danish astronomer 2 489-490
BRAHMS, JOHANNES (1833-1897), German composer 2 490-492
BRAILLE, LOUIS (1809-1852), French teacher and creator of braille system 2 492-493
BRAMAH, JOSEPH (Joe Bremner; 1749-1814), English engineer and inventor 20 58-59
BRAMANTE, DONATO (1444-1514), Italian architect and painter 2 493-494
BRANCUSI, CONSTANTIN (1876-1957), Romanian sculptor in France 2 494-496
BRANDES, GEORG (Georg Morris Cohen Brandes; 1842-1927), Danish literary critic 23 45-47
BRANDO, MARLON (born 1924), American actor 2 497-499
BRANDT, WILLY (Herbert Frahm Brandt; 1913-1992), German statesman, chancellor of West Germany 2 499-500
BRANSON, RICHARD (born 1950), British entrepreneur 19 34-36
BRANT, JOSEPH (1742-1807), Mohawk Indian chief 2 500-501
BRANT, MARY (1736-1796), Native American who guided the Iroquois to a British alliance 2 501-503
BRANT, SEBASTIAN (1457-1521), German author 2 503-504
BRASSEUR, GEORGES (1882-1967), French painter 2 504-505
BRACKETT, WALTER H. (1902-1987), American physicist and co-inventor of the transistor 2 505-507
BRADY, JOHN RANDOLPH (1879-1978), American animator and cartoonist 21 55-57
BRAX, PIERRE PAUL FRANÇOIS CAMILLE SAVORGNAH DE (1852-1905), Italian-born French explorer 2 509-510
BREASTED, JAMES HENRY (1865-1935), American Egyptologist and archeologist 2 510-511
BRÉBEUF, JEAN DE (1593-1649), French Jesuit missionary 2 511-512
BRECHT, BERTOLT (1898-1956), German playwright 2 512-514
BRECKINRIDGE, JOHN CABELL (1821-1875), American statesman and military leader 22 77-79
BRENDAK, SAINT (Breindam; Brandon; Brendan of Clonfert, c. 486- c. 578), Irish Abbott and explorer 22 79-80
BRENNAN, WILLIAM J., JR. (born 1906), United States Supreme Court justice 2 514-515
BRENTHALL, JOHN CLAYTON (1877-1942), English poet and novelist 2 515-516
BRENTANO, CLEMENS (1778-1842), German poet and novelist 2 516-517
BRENTANO, FRANZ CLEMENS (1838-1917), German philosopher 2 516-517
BREHNDKOVSKY, CATHERINE (1844-1934), Russian revolutionary 2 517-519
BRETON, ANDRE (1896-1966), French author 2 519-520
BREUER, MARCEL (1902-1981), Hungarian-born American architect 2 520-521
BREUIL, HENRI EDOUARD PROSPER (1877-1961), French archeologist 2 521-522
BREWSTER, WILLIAM (circa 1566-1644), English-born Pilgrim leader 2 523-524
BREYER, STEPHEN (born 1938), U.S. Supreme Court justice 2 524-527
BRIAN BORU (940-1014), Irish king 18 62-64
BRIAND, ARISTIDE (1862-1932), French statesman 2 528-529
BRICE, FANNY (1891-1951), vaudeville, Broadway, film, and radio singer and comedienne 3 1-2
BRIDGER, JAMES (1804-1881), American fur trader and scout 3 2-3
BRIDGES, HARRY A.R. (1901-1990), radical American labor leader 3 3-5
BRIDGMAN, PERCY WILLIAMS (1882-1961), American physicist 3 5-6
BRIGHT, JOHN (1811-1889), English politician 3 6-7
BRIGHT, RICHARD (1789-1858), English physician 3 7-8
BRIGHTMAN, EDMUND (1884-1953), philosoper of religion and exponent of American Personalism 3 8-9
BRIK, ANDRE PHILIPPIUS (born 1935), South African author 22 80-83
Brisbane, Albert (1809-1890), American social theorist 3 9
BRISTOW, BENJAMIN HELM (1832-1896), American lawyer and Federal official 3 9-10
BRITTEN, BENJAMIN (1913-1976), English composer 3 10-11
BROAD, CHARLIE DUNBAR (1887-1971), English philosopher 3 12
BROCK, SIR ISAAC (1769-1812), British general 3 12-13
BRODSKY, JOSEPH (Iosif Alexandrovich Brodsky, 1940-1996), Russian-born Nobel Prize winner and fifth United States poet laureate 3 13-15
BRONTÉ, CHARLOTTE (1816-1855), English novelist 3 17-18
BRONTÉ, EMILY (1818-1848), English novelist 3 18-19
BRONZINO (1503-1572), Italian painter 3 19

BROOK, PETER (born 1925), world-renowned theater director 3 19-21

BROOKE, ALAN FRANCIS (Viscount Alanbrooke; 1883-1963), Irish military leader 20 59-61

BROOKE, SIR JAMES (1803-1868), British governor in Borneo 3 21-22

BROOKE, RUPERT (1887-1915), English poet 3 22-23

BROOKNER, ANITA (born 1928), British art historian and novelist 3 23-24

BROOKS, GWENDOLYN (born 1926), British actor, playwright, and film and theatre producer/director 23 48-50

BROOKS, PHILLIPS (1835-1893), American Episcopalian bishop 3 26

BROTHERS, JOYCE (Joyce Diane Bauer; born 1928), African American author and editor 3 33

BROWN, GEORGE (1812-1889), American clergyman and humanitarian 3 34

BROWN, JOSEPH EMERSON (1821-1894), American lawyer and politician 3 41-42

BROWN, LES (Leslie Calvin Brown; born 1945), American motivational speaker, author, and television host 19 36-39

BROWN, LESLIE S. (Leslie Calvin Brown; born 1945), American psychologist 3 52-53

BROWN, RACHEL FULLER (1898-1980), American biochemist 3 43-44

BROWN, RICHARD (1773-1858), Scottish botanist 20 61-63

BROWN, RONALD H. (1941-1996), African American politician, cabinet official 3 44-47

BROWN, RUDOLPH (1941), American actor, playwright, and film and theatre producer/director 23 48-50

BROWNLOW, WILLIAM GANNAWAY (1812-1889), American journalist and editor 3 31-32

BROWN, BENJAMIN GRATZ (1829-1885), American politician 3 32-33

BROWN, CHARLES BROCKDEN (1771-1810), American novelist 3 33

BROWN, CHARLOTTE EUGENIA HAWKINS (born Lottie Hawkins; 1882-1961), American educator and humanitarian 3 34

BROWN, GEORGE (1818-1880), Canadian politician 3 35-36

BROWN, HELEN GURLEY (born 1922), American author and editor 3 36-37

BROWN, JAMES (born 1928), American American singer 3 37-39

BROWN, JOHN (1800-1859), American abolitionist 3 39-41

BROWN, JOSEPH EMERSON (1821-1894), American lawyer and politician 3 41-42

BROWN, LES (Leslie Calvin Brown; born 1945), American motivational speaker, author, and television host 19 36-39

BROWN, LESLIE S. (Leslie Calvin Brown; born 1945), American psychologist 3 52-53

BROWNLOW, WILLIAM GANNAWAY (1812-1889), American journalist and politician 3 55-56

BROWN, MARY (1785-1838), American abolitionist and politician 3 48-49


BROWN, RACHEL FULLER (1898-1980), American biochemist 3 43-44

BROWN, RICHARD (1773-1858), Scottish botanist 20 61-63

BROWN, RONALD H. (1941-1996), African American politician, cabinet official 3 44-47


BROWNLOW, WILLIAM GANNAWAY (1812-1889), American lawyer and politician 3 55-56

BROWNMILLER, SUSAN (born 1935), American feminist 3 61-63

BROWN, SIR THOMAS (1605-1682), English author 3 49-50

BROWN, SIR THOMAS (1605-1682), English author 3 49-50

BROWN, SIR THOMAS (1605-1682), English author 3 49-50

BROWNING, ELIZABETH BARRETT (1806-1861), English poet 3 52-53

BROWNING, ELIZABETH BARRETT (1806-1861), English poet 3 52-53

Browning, Elizabeth Barrett (1806-1861), English poet 3 52-53

Browning, Robert (1812-1889), English poet 3 53-55

BRUNEL, ISAMBARD KINGDOM (1806-1859), English civil engineer 3 69-70

BRUNELLESCHI, FILIPPO (1377-1446), Italian architect and sculptor 3 70-72

BRUNER, JEROME SEYMOUR (born 1915), American psychologist 3 72-73

BRUNHOFF, JEAN de (1921-1995), American editor and illustrator 3 73-74

BRUNNER, ALOIS (born 1912), Nazi German officer who helped engineer the destruction of European Jews 3 73-74

BRUNNER, EMIL (1889-1966), Swiss Reformed theologian 3 74-75

BRUNO, GIORDANO (1548-1600), Italian philosopher and poet 3 75-76

BRUTON, JOHN GERARD (born 1947), prime minister of Ireland 3 76-77

BRUTUS, DENNIS (born 1924), exiled South African poet and political activist opposed to apartheid 3 77-78

BRUTUS, MARCUS JUNIUS (c. 85-42 B.C.), Roman statesman 3 79-80

BRYAN, WILLIAM JENNINGS (1860-1925), American lawyer and politician 3 80-82

BRYANT, PAUL ("Bear;" 1919-1983), American college football coach 3 82-83

BRYANT, WILLIAM CULLEN (1794-1878), American poet and editor 3 83-85

BRYCE, JAMES (1838-1922), British historian, jurist, and statesman 3 85
Bryn Mawr College (Pennsylvania)
Scott, Charlotte Angas 23 364-367

BRZEZINSKI, ZBIGNIEW (1928-1980), assistant to President Carter for national security affairs (1977-1980) 3 85-87

BUBER, MARTIN (1878-1965), Austrian-born Jewish theologian and philosopher 3 87-89

BUCHALTER, LEPKE (Louis Bachalter; 1897-1944), American gangster 19 42-44

BUCAYAN, JAMES (1791-1868), American statesman, president 1857-1861 3 89-90

BUCAYAN, PATRICK JOSEPH (born 1938), commentator, journalist, and presidential candidate 3 90-91

Büchse der Pandora, Die (Pandora’s Box; film) Pabst, G. W. 23 282-284

BUCK, PEARL SYDENSTRICKER (1892-1973), American novelist 3 91-93

BUCKINGHAM, 1ST DUKE OF (George Villiers; 1592-1628), English courtier and military leader 3 93-94

BUCKINGHAM, 2D DUKE OF (George Villiers; 1628-1687), English statesman 3 94-95

Buckle, Henry Thomas (1821-1862), English historian 3 95-96

Buckley, William F., Jr. (born 1925), conservative American author, editor, and political activist 3 96-97

Buddha (circa 560-480 B.C.), Indian founder of Buddhism 3 97-101

BUDDHA, BHUKKHU Nguam Phanich; born 1906), founder of Wat Suan Mokkhabala¯rama in southern Thailand and interpreter of Theravāda Buddhism 3 101-102

Budé, Guillaume (1467-1540), French humanist 3 102-103

BUDGE, DON (J. Donald Budge; born 1915), American tennis player 21 57-59

Buchner, Frederick (born 1926), American novelist and theologian 3 103-105

Buell, Jesse (1778-1839), American agriculturalist and journalist 3 105

Buffalo Bill (William Frederick Cody; 1846-1917), American scout and publicist 3 105-106

Buffett, Warren (born 1930), American investment salesman 3 106-109

Buffon, Comte De (Georges Louis Leclerc; 1707-1788), French naturalist 3 109-111

Bugau德 de la Piconnerie, Thomas Robert (1784-1849), Duke of Isly and marshal of France 3 111

Buck, David (1854-1929), American inventor and businessman 19 44-45

Bukhari, Muhammad Ibn Ismail al- (810-870), Arab scholar and Moslem saint 3 111-112

Bukharin, Nikolai Ivanovich (1888-1938), Russian politician 3 112-113

Bukowski, Charles (1920-1994), American writer and poet 3 113-115

Bulatovic, Momir (1911-1956), Serbian poet and playwright 3 117

Bulgakov, Mikhail Afanasiyevich (1891-1940), Russian novelist and playwright 3 117

Bulgari, NikolaI (1885-1975), chairman of the Soviet Council of Ministers (1955-1958) 3 118-119

Bulosan, Carlos (1904-1953), British politician, naval architect, and politician 3 119-120

Bultmann, Rudolf Karl (1884-1976), German theologian 3 119-120

Bulwer-Lytton, Edward (1st Baron Lytton of Knebworth; 1803-1873), English novelist 22 87-88

Bunau-Varilla, Philippe Jean (1859-1940), French engineer and soldier 3 120-121

Bunch, Ralp Johnson (1904-1971), American African diplomat 3 121-122

Bundy, McGeorge (born 1919), national security adviser to two presidents 3 122-124

Bunin, Ivan Aleshovitch (1870-1953), Russian poet and novelist 3 124

Bunin, Robert Wilhelm (1811-1899), German chemist and physicist 3 124-125

Bunshaft, Gordon (1900-1990), American architect 3 125-127

Bunuel, Luis (1900-1983), Spanish film director 3 127-128

Bunyan, John (1628-1688), English author and Baptist preacher 3 128-129

Burbank, Luther (1849-1926), American plant breeder 3 129-131

Burfield, Charles (1893-1967), American painter 3 131-132

Burckhardt, Jacob ChristopH (1818-1897), Swiss historian 3 132-133

Burckhardt, Johann Ludwig (1784-1817), Swiss-born explorer 3 133


Burgess, Anthony (John Anthony Burgess Wilson; 1917-1993), English author 3 136-137

Burgoyne, John (1723-1792), British general and statesman 3 137-138

Burke, Edmund (1729-1797), British statesman, political theorist, and philosopher 3 138-141

Burke, Kenneth (born 1897), American literary theorist and critic 3 141-142

Burke, Robert O’Hara (1820-1861), Irish-born Australian policeman and explorer 3 142-143

Burke, Selma (1900-1995), African American sculptor 3 143-144

Burlin, Natalie Curtis (Natalie Curtis; 1875-1921), American ethnobotanist 23 50-52

Burlingame, Anson (1820-1870), American diplomat 3 144-145

Burne-Jones, Sir Edward Coley (1833-1898), English painter and designer 3 145-146

Burnet, Sir Frank Macfarlane (1899-1985), Australian virologist 3 146-147

Burnet, Gilbert (1643-1715), British bishop and historian 3 147

Burnett, Carol (born 1933), American television entertainer 23 52-55

Burnett, Frances Hodgson (Frances Eliza Hodgson Burnett; 1849-1924), English-born American author 18 64-67

Burnett, Leo (1891-1971), American advertising executive 19 45-47

Burney, Frances “Fanny” (1752-1840), English novelist and diarist 3 147-148

Burnham, Daniel Hudson (1824-1912), American architect and city planner 3 148-149

Burnham, Forbes (1923-1985), leader of the independence movement
Canadian music
Lombardo, Guy 234-236
Peterson, Oscar Emanuel 23 304-306

CANALETTO (1697-1768), Italian painter 3 257-258

Cancer victims
Armstrong, Lance 23 13-15

Cane (book)
Toomer, Jean 23 408-410

CANISIUS, ST. PETER (1521-1597), Dutch Jesuit 3 258

CANNING, GEORGE (1770-1827), English orator and statesman 3 258-260

CANNON, ANNIE JUMP (1863-1941), American astronomer 3 260-261

CANNON, JOSEPH GURNEY (1836-1926), American politician 3 261-262

Cannon law (Roman Catholic)
Benedict XIV 23 32-35

CANOT, THEODORE (1804-1860), French-Italian adventurer and slave trader 3 262-263

CANOVA, ANTONIO (1757-1822), Italian sculptor 3 263-264

CANTOR, EDDIE (Isador Iskowitz; 1892-1964), American singer and comedian 3 264-265

CANTOR, GEORG FERDINAND LUDWIG PHILIPP (1845-1918), German mathematician 3 265-266

CANTOR I THE GREAT (c. 995-1035), Viking king of England and Denmark 3 266-269

CANNUT, YAKIMA (Enos Edward Canutt; 1896-1986), American rodeo performer, actor, stuntman, and film director 21 71-72

CAPA, ROBERT (Endre Friedmann; 1913-1954), Hungarian-American war photographer and photojournalist 3 269-271

ČAPEK, KAREL (1890-1938), Czech novelist, playwright, and essayist 3 271-272

CAPETILLO, LUISA (1879-1922), Puerto Rican labor leader and activist 20 73-74

Capital punishment (criminology)
Romilly, Samuel 23 348-351

CAPONE, AL (Alphonso Caponi, a.k.a. “Scarface”; 1899-1947), American gangster 3 272-273

CAPOTE, TRUMAN (born Truman Streckfus Persons; 1924-1984), American author 3 273-275

CARR-SAUNDERS, SIR ALEXANDER MORRIS 481

CARPEANS, STEPHEN (1835-1921), American industrialist and philanthropist 3 308-309

CARNEADES (circa 213-circa 128 B.C.), Jewish Talmudic scholar 3 313-314

CARNEGIE, ANDREW (1835-1919), American industrialist and philanthropist 3 309-312

CARNEGIE, HATTIE (born Henrietta Kanengeiser; 1889-1956), American fashion designer 3 313

Carnegie Hall (New York City)
Guastavino, Rafael 23 132-134

CARNOT, LAZARE NICOLAS MARGUERITE (1753-1823), French engineer, general, and statesman 3 313-314

CARNOT, NICHOLAS LÉONARD SADI (1796-1832), French physicist 3 315

CARO, ANTHONY (born 1924), English sculptor 3 316

CARO, JOSEPH BEN EPHRAIM (1488-1575), Jewish Talmudic scholar 3 316-317

CAROTHERS, WALLACE HUME (1896-1937), American chemist 3 317-318

CARPEAUX, JEAN BAPTISTE (1827-1875), French painter and sculptor 3 318-319

CARR, EMILY (1871-1945), Canadian painter and writer 3 319

CARR, EMMA PERRY (1880-1972), American chemist and educator 22 89-91

CARR-Saunders, Sir Alexander Morris (1886-1966), English
demographer and sociologist 3
333-334
CARRANZA, VENUSTIANO (1859-1920),
Mexican revolutionary, president
1914-1920 3 321-322
CARREL, ALEXIS (1873-1944), French-
American surgeon 3 322-323
CARRERA, JOSE MIGUEL (1785-1821),
Chilean revolutionary 3 323-324
CARRERA, JOSE RAFAEL (1814-1865),
Guatemalan statesman, president
1851-1865 3 324-325
CARRERAS, JOSE´ RAFAEL
(1814-1898), baseball pioneer 22 91-93
CARRERAS, JOSE´ MIGUEL
(1874-1939),
Spanish cellist, conductor, and
composer 3 348-350
CASANOVA, GIACOMO JACOPO
GIROLAMO, CHEVALIER DE
SEINGLAT (1725-1798), Italian
adventurer 3 350-351
CASE, STEVE (born 1958), American
businessman 19 61-64
CASEMENT, ROGER (1864-1916), Irish
diplomat and nationalist 20 76-78
CASEY, WILLIAM J. (1913-1987),
American director of the Central
Intelligence Agency (CIA) 3 353-355
CASH, JOHNNY (1913-1987),
American singer and songwriter 3 353-355
CASS, LEWIS (1782-1866), American
statesman 3 355-356
CASSATT, MARY (1845-1926), American
painter 3 356-357
CASSAVETES, JOHN (1929-1989),
American filmmaker 22 96-98
CASSIODORUS, FLAVIUS MAGNUS
AURELIUS, SENATOR (circa 480-circa
575), Roman statesman and author 3 357-358
CASSIRER, ERNST (1874-1945), German
philosopher 3 358-359
CASTELO BRANCO, HUMBERTO
(1900-1967), Brazilian general, president
1964-1966 3 359-360
CASTIGLIONE, BALDASSARE (1478-
1529), Italian author and diplomat 3
360-361
CASTILLA, RAMON (1797-1867),
Peruvian military leader and president
3 361
CASTLE, IRENE and VERNON
(1910-1918), ballroom dancers 3 361-363
CASTLEBAGH, VISCOUNT (Robert
Stewart; 1769-1822), British statesman
3 363-364
CASTRO ALVES, ANTÔNIO DE (1847-
1871), Brazilian poet 3 364-365
CASTRO RUIZ, FIDEL (born 1926),
Cuban prime minister 3 365-368
CATHEDRAL, WILLA SIBERT (1873-1947),
American writer 3 368-369
CATHARINE OF ARAGON (1485-1536),
Spanish princess, first queen consort of
Henry VIII of England 18 85-88
CATHARINE OF SIENA, ST. (1347-1380),
Italian mystic 3 369-370
CATHARINE THE GREAT (1729-1796),
Russian empress 1762-1796 3 370-372
Catholic Church
see Roman Catholic Church
CATLINE (Lucius Sergius Catilina; circa
108-62 B.C.), Roman politician and revolutionary 3 372-373
CATLICK, GEORGE (1796-1872),
American painter 3 373-374
CATO, MARCUS PORCIUS, THE ELDER
(234-149 B.C.), Roman soldier,
statesman, and historian 3 375
CATO THE YOUNGER (Marcus Porcius
Cato Uticensis; 95-46 B.C.), Roman
politician 3 374-375
CATS, JACOB (1577-1660), Dutch poet,
moralist, and statesman 23 64-66
CATT, CARRIE CHAPMAN (1859-1947),
American reformer 3 375-376
CATT, MARIEE (1860-1944),
American painter and editor 3
376-377
CATULLUS (circa 84-circa 54 B.C.),
Roman poet 3 377-378
CAUCHY, AUGUSTIN LOUIS (1789-
1857), French mathematician 3
378-380
CAVAŽ, CONSTANTINE P. (Konstantinos P. Kabaphes; 1863-
1933), first modernist Greek poet 3 381-382
CAVALLI, PIETRO FRANCESCO (1602-
1676), Italian composer 3 382-383
CAVENDISH, HENRY (1731-1810),
English physicist and chemist 3
383-384
CAVENDISH, MARGARET LUCAS (1623-
1673), English natural philosopher 23
66-67
CAVOUR, CONTE DI (Camillo Benso;
1810-1861), Italian statesman 3
385-386
CAXIAS, DUQUE DE (Luiz Alves de Lima e Silva; 1803-1880), Brazilian general and statesman 3 386

CAXTON, WILLIAM (1422-1491), English printer 3 386-387

CEAUSESCU, NICOLAE (1918-1989), Romanian statesman 3 387-388

CECH, THOMAS ROBERT (born 1947), American biochemist 23 68-70 Altman, Sidney 23 9-11

CECIL OF CHELWOOD, VISCOUNT (Edgar Algernon Robert Cecil; c. 1874), English statesman 3 388-389

CELA Y TRULOCK, CAMILO JOSE´ (1916-2002), Spanish author 3 389-390

CÉLINE, LOUIS FERDINAND (pen name of Ferdinand Destouches; 1894-1961), French novelist 3 390-391

CELLINI, BENVENUTO (1500-1571), Italian goldsmith and sculptor 3 391-392

CELSIUS, ANDERS (1701-1744), Swedish astronomer 3 392

CELSUS, AULUS CORNELIUS (circa 25 B.C.-A.D. 45?), Roman medical author 3 393

CERÉZO AREVALO, MARCO VINICIO (born 1942), president of Guatemala (1986-1991) 3 393-395

CERF, BENNETT (1898-1971), American editor, publisher, author, and television performer 22 98-100 Liveright, Horace B. 23 229-231

CERNAN, GENE (Eugene Andrew Cernan; born 1934), American astronaut 22 100-102

CERVANTES, MIGUEL DE SAAVEDRA (1500-1571), Spanish novelist 3 395-397

CÉSPEDES, CARLOS MANUEL DE (1819-1874), Cuban lawyer and revolutionary 3 398-399

CESTI, PIETRO (Marc’Antonio Cesti; 1623-1669), Italian composer 3 399-400

CHADWICK, FLORENCE (1918-1995), American swimmer 19 64-66

CHADWICK, SIR EDWIN (1800-1890), English utilitarian reformer 3 404-405

CHADWICK, SIR JAMES (1891-1974), English physicist 3 405-406

CHADWICK, LYNN RUSSELL (1914-2003), English sculptor 18 88-90

CHAGALL, MARC (1887-1985), Russian painter 3 406-407

CHAI LING (born 1966), Chinese student protest leader 19 67-68

CHAIN, ERNST BORIS (1906-1979), German-born English biochemist 3 407-408

Chalcedon, Council of (451) Vigilius 23 427-429

CHAMBERS, THOMAS (1780-1847), Scottish reformer and theologian 3 408-409

CHAMBERLAIN, ARTHUR NEVILLE (1856-1931), English-born German writer 3 411

CHAMBERLAIN, JOSEPH (1836-1914), English politician 3 411-413

CHAMBERLAIN, WILT (born 1936), American basketball player 3 413-415

CHAMBERLIN, THOMAS CHROWDER (1843-1928), American geologist 3 415-416

CHAMBERS, WHITTAKER (Jay Vivian; 1901-1961), magazine editor who helped organize a Communist spy ring in the United States government 3 416-417

CHAMORRO, VIOLETA BARRIOS DE (born 1930), newspaper magnate, publicist, and first woman president of Nicaragua (1990) 3 417-419

CHAMPLAIN, THOMAS CHROWDER (1843-1928), American geologist 3 415-416

CHAMPI, GIACOMO (1571-1626), Italian goldsmith and sculptor 3 419-421

CHAMPI, JEAN FRANÇOIS (1790-1832), French Egyptologist 3 421

CHAN, CHING-LAM (born 1929, English utilitarian reformer 3 422

CHAN, CHING-LAM (born 1929), Chinese student 3 422

CHANDLER, ALFRED DU PONT, JR. (born 1918), American historian of American business 3 422-423

CHANDLER, RAYMOND, JR. (1888-1959), American author of crime fiction 3 423-425

CHANDLER, ZACHARIAH (1813-1879), American politician 3 425-426

CHANDRAGUPTA MAURYA (died circa 298 B.C.), emperor of India 3 426

CHANDRASEKHAR, SUBRAHMANYAN (1910-1995), Indian-born American physicist 3 426-429

CHANEL, COCO (born Gabrielle Chanel; 1883-1971), French fashion designer 3 429

CHANEY, LON (Alonzo Chaney; 1883-1930), American actor 19 68-70

CHANG CHEN (1853-1926), Chinese industrialist and social reformer 3 429-430

CHANG CHIH-TUNG (1837-1909), Chinese official and reformer 3 430-431

CHANG CHÜ-CHENG (1525-1582), Chinese statesman 3 431-432

CHANG HÜEH (died 184), Chinese religious and revolutionary leader 3 432-433

CHANG HSÜEH-CH'ENG (1738-1801), Chinese scholar and historian 3 433

CHANG PO-GO (died 846), Korean protest leader 3 433-434

CHANG TSO-LIN (1873-1928), Chinese warlord 3 434-435

CHANNING, EDWARD (1856-1931), American historian 3 435

CHANNING, WILLIAM ELLERY (1780-1842), Unitarian minister and theologian 3 435-436

CHAO MENG-FU (1780-1869), Chinese scholar and historian 3 436-437

CHAPIN, FRANCIS STUART (1888-1974), American sociologist 3 437-438

CHAPLIN, CHARLES SPENCER (1889-1977), American film actor, director, and writer 3 438-440

CHAPMAN, GEORGE (1559/60-1634), English poet, dramatist, and translator 3 440-441

CHAPMAN, JOHN (Johnny Appleseed; c. 1775-1847), American horticulturist and missionary 21 77-78

CHAPMAN, SYDNEY (1888-1970), English mastrophysicist 3 441

CHARDON, JEAN MARTIN (1785-1832), French Egyptologist 3 442-443

CHARCOT, JEAN MARTIN (1699-1779), French painter 3 442-443

CHARGAFF, ERWIN (1905-2002), American biochemist who worked with DNA 3 444-445
CHARLEMAGNE (742-814), king of the Franks, 768-814, and emperor of the West, 800-814
CHARLES (born 1948), Prince of Wales and heir apparent to the British throne
CHARLES I (1600-1649), king of England 1625-1649
CHARLES II (1630-1685), king of England, Scotland, and Ireland 1660-1685
CHARLES II (1661-1700), king of Spain 1665-1700
CHARLES III (1716-1788), king of Spain 1759-1788
CHARLES IV (1748-1819), king of Spain
CHARLES XV (1706-1718), king of Sweden 1718-1719
CHARLES XVI (1720-1745), king of Sweden 1737-1745
CHARLES ALBERT (1798-1849), king of Sardinia 1831-1849
CHARLES EDWARD LOUIS PHILIP CASIMIR STUART (1720-1788), Scottish claimant to English and Scottish thrones
CHARLES THE BOLD (1433-1477), duke of Burgundy 1467-1477
CHARNISAY, CHARLES DE MENOU (Seigneur d'Aulnay; circa 1604-1650), French governor of Acadia
CHARONTON, ENGUERRAND (circa 1410/15-after 1466), French painter
CHARPENTIER, MARC ANTOINE (1634-1704), French composer
CHARRON, PIERRE (1541-1603), French philosopher and theologian
CHASE, PHILANDER (1775-1852), American Episcopalian bishop and missionary
CHASE, SALMON PORTLAND (1808-1873), American statesman and jurist
CHASE, SAMUEL (1741-1811), American politician and jurist
CHASE, WILLIAM MERRITT (1849-1916), American painter
CHATEAUBRIAND, VICOMTE DE (1768-1848), French author
CHATELET, GABRIELLE-EMILIE (1706-1749), French physicist and chemist
CHATICHAI CHOONHAVAN (1706-1768), Thai playwright
CHAU, RAY (Robinson; born 1947), Hispanic American poet
CHAVIS, BENJAMIN (born 1948), African American religious leader, civil rights activist, labor organizer, and author
CHAVEZ, CARLOS (1899-1978), Mexican conductor and composer
CHAVEZ, CESAR (1927-1993), American labor leader
CHAVÉZ, DENNIS (1888-1962), Hispanic American politician
CHAVEZ, LINDA (born 1947), Hispanic American civil rights activist
CHIN, JOSEPH (born 1940), Chinese statesman and lawyer
CHICHÉRI, ROBERTO (1887-1975), Italian-born French composer
CHIHAYOFUJII, AKIRA (1941-2008), Japanese director
CHIHIL, ENGUERRAND DE (1418-1513), French poet
CHIKAIDO, Tadanori (1934-2003), Japanese painter
CHIANG KAI-SHEK (1887-1975), Chinese nationalist leader and president
CHIARI, ROBERTO (1887-1975), Italian-born French composer
CHIARI, ROBERTO (1887-1975), Italian-born French composer
CHIHARA, JUDY (Judith Cohen; born 1939), American artist and activist
CLODIUS PULCHER, PUBLIUS (died 52 B.C.), Roman politician

Clothing industry

Herrera, Carolina 23 141-143

CLOUET, FRANÇOIS (circa 1516-circa 1572), French portrait painter 4 122-123

CLOUET, JEAN (circa 1485-circa 1541), French portrait painter 4 122-123

CLOUGH, ARTHUR HUGH (1819-1861), English poet 4 123-124

CLOVIS I

COFFIN, WILLIAM SLOANE, JR. (1789-1877), American

COFFIN, LEVI

COETZEE, JOHN M. (born 1940), white South African novelist 4 133-135

COFFIN, LEVI (1789-1877), American antislavery reformer 4 135

COFFIN, WILLIAM SLOANE, JR. (born 1924), Yale University chaplain who spoke out against the Vietnam War 4 135-137

COHAN, GEORGE MICHAEL (1878-1942), American actor and playwright 4 137-138

COHEN, HERMANN (1842-1918), Jewish-German philosopher 4 138-139

COHEN, MORGAN RAPHAEL (1880-1947), American philosopher and teacher 4 139-140

COHEN, WILLIAM S. (born 1940), American secretary of defense 18 96-98

COHN, FERDINAND (1829-1898), German botanist 20 95-97

COHN-BENDIT, DANIEL (born 1946), led “new left” student protests in France in 1968 4 140-141

COKE, SIR EDWARD (1552-1634), English jurist and parliamentarian 4 141-142

COLBERT, JEAN BAPTISTE (1619-1683), French statesman 4 142-143

COLBY, WILLIAM E. (1920-1996), American secretary of defense 20 95-97

COLBY, WILLIAM E. (1920-1996), American statesman and politician 20 95-97

COLBY, WILLIAM E. (1920-1996), American historian and economist 4 146-147

COLE, GEORGE DOUGLAS HOWARD (1889-1959), American historian and economist 4 146-147

COLE, JOHN BAPTISTE (1619-1683), French statesman 4 142-143

COLE, JOHNNETTA (born 1936), African American statesman and educator 4 147-149


COLE, THOMAS (1801-1848), American painter 4 151-152

COLEMAN, BESIEE (1892-1926), first African American to earn an international pilot’s license 4 152-154

COLE, THOMAS (1881-1894), American statesman and educator 20 95-97

COLERIDGE, SAMUEL TAYLOR (1772-1834), English poet and critic 4 154-156

COLES, ROBERT MARTIN (born 1929), American social psychiatrist, social critic, and humanist 4 156-157

COLET, JOHN (circa 1446-1519), English theologian 4 157-158

COlette, Sidonie gabrielle (1873-1954), French author 4 158-159

COIGNY, GASPAR DE (1519-1572), French admiral and statesman 4 159-160

College Entrance Examination Board (established 1906)

Scott, Charlotte Angas 23 364-367

COLLIERS, JOHN (1884-1968), American proponent of Native American culture 4 160-162

COLLINS, ROBIN GEORGE (1889-1943), English historian and philosopher 4 162

COLLINS, EDWARD KNIGHT (1802-1878), American businessman and shipowner 4 162-163

COLLINS, EILEEN (born 1956), American astronaut 4 163-165

COLLINS, MARVA (born Marva Deloise Nettles; born 1936), African American educator 4 165-167

COLLINS, MICHAEL (1890-1922), Irish revolutionary leader and soldier 4 167-168

COLLINS, WILLIAM (1721-1759), English lyric poet 4 168-169

COLLINS, WILLIAM WILKIE (1824-1889), English novelist 4 169-170

COLLOR DE MELLO, FERNANDO (born 1949), businessman who became president of Brazil in 1990 4 170-172

Colombian art

Vázquez Arce Y Ceballos, Gregorio 23 423-425

Color vision (physiology)

Ladd-Franklin, Christine 23 202-204

COLT, SAMUEL (1814-1862), American inventor and manufacturer 4 172-173

COLTRANE, JOHN (1926-1967), African American jazz saxophonist 4 173-174

COLUM, PADRAIC (1881-1972), Irish-American poet and playwright 4 174-175

COLUMBA, ST. (circa 521-597), Irish monk and missionary 4 175-176

COLUMBAN, ST. (circa 543-615), Irish missionary 4 176

COLUMBUS, CHRISTOPHER (1451-1506), Italian navigator, discoverer of America 4 176-179

COWELL, RITA R. (born 1934), American marine microbiologist 4 179-180

Comanche Indians (North America)

Sanapia 23 358-360

COMANECI, NADIA (1961-1984), Romanian gymnast 18 98-100

COMAR, JOHN AMOS (1592-1670), Moravian theologian and educational reformer 4 180-181

COMINES, PHILIPPE DE (circa 1445-1511), French chronicler 4 181
COMMAGER, HENRY STEELE (1902-1998), American historian, textbook author, and editor 4 181-183
COMMONER, BARRY (born 1917), American biologist and environmental activist 4 183-185
COMMONS, JOHN ROGERS (1862-1945), American historian 4 185
COMNENA, ANNA (1083-1148), Byzantine princess and historian 4 185-186
COMPTON, ARTHUR HOLLY (1892-1962), American physicist 4 186-188
COMSTOCK, ANTHONY (1844-1915), American antivice crusader 4 188-189
COMSTOCK, ANNA BOTSFORD (1854-1930), American artist and natural science educator 4 190-197
COMSTOCK, ANTHONY (1844-1915), American antivice crusader 4 188-189
COMSTOCK, HENRY TOMPKINS PAIGE (1820-1870), American gold prospector 4 189
COMTE, AUGUSTE (1798-1857), French philosopher 4 189-191
CONANT, JAMES BRYANT (1893-1978), American chemist and educator 4 192-193
Concerto (musical form) for violin
Chung, Kyung Wha 23 74-76
CONDÉ, PRINCE DE (Louis II de Bourbon 1621-1686), French general 4 193-194
CONDILLAC, ÉTIENNE BONNOT DE (1715-1780), French philosopher and educator 4 194-195
CONDORCET, MARQUIS DE (Marie Jean Antoine Nicolas Caritat; 1743-1794), French philosopher and mathematician 4 195-196
CONÉ, JAMES HALL (born 1938), American theologian 4 196-197
CONFUCIUS (551-479 B.C.), Chinese teacher and philosopher 4 197-200
Congressional Medal of Honor (United States)
Walker, Mary Edwards 23 432-434
Congressmen see Statesmen, American–legislative
CONGREVE, WILLIAM (1670-1729), English dramatist 4 200-201
CONKLING, ROSCOE (1829-1888), American politician 4 201-202
CONNALLY, JOHN BOWDEN, JR. (born 1917), Texas governor, political adviser, and confidant to presidents 4 202-204
CONNERY, SEAN (Thomas Connery; born 1930), Scottish actor 18 100-102
CONNOLLY, CYRIL (1903-1974), British novelist and literary and social critic 4 204-205
CONNOLLY, MAUREEN (1934-1969), American tennis player 19 72-74
CONRAD, JOSEPH (1857-1924), Polish-born English novelist 4 205-207
CONRAD, PETE (Charles “Pete” Conrad, Jr.; 1930-1999), American astronaut and businessman 22 114-116
CONSTABLE, JOHN (1776-1837), English landscape painter 4 208-209
CONSTANTINE I (circa 274-337), Roman emperor 306-337 4 209-211
CONSTANTINE XI (Palaeologus; 1405-1453), Byzantine emperor 1448-1453 4 211-212
Constitution of the United States (1787) ratification (Middle Colonies; for)
Logan, George 23 213-234
CONTI, NICCÓLO DE’ (circa 1396-1469), Venetian merchant-adventurer 4 212-213
CONWAY, JILL KATHRYN KER (born 1934), historian interested in the role of women and president of Smith College 4 213-214
COOGAN, JACKIE (John Leslie Coogan, Jr.; 1914-1984), American actor 21 83-85
COOK, JAMES (1728-1779), English explorer, explorer, and cartographer 4 214-215
COOKE, JAY (1821-1905), American merchant banker 4 215-216
COOLEY, CHARLES HORTON (1864-1929), American social psychologist, sociologist, and educator 4 216-217
COOLEY, THOMAS MCINTYRE (1824-1898), American jurist and public servant 22 116-119
COOLIDGE, JOHN CALVIN (1872-1933), president of the United States 1923-1929 4 217-219
COOMBS, HERBERT COLE (Nugget; born 1906), Australian economist 4 219-220
COONEY, JOAN GANZ (born 1929), American television program producer and publicist 19 74-76
COOPER, ANNIE (Anna Julia Cooper; 1858-1964), African American educator, author, and activist 22 119-121
COOPER, GARY (Frank James Cooper; 1901-1961), American motion picture actor 21 85-87
COOPER, JAMES FENIMORE (1789-1851), American novelist and social critic 4 220-223
COOPER, PETER (1791-1883), American inventor and manufacturer 4 223-224
COOPER, THOMAS (1759-1839), English-born American scientist and educator 4 224
COORS, ADOLPH (Adolph Herman Kohrs; 1847-1929), American brewer and businessman 19 76-78
COPEAU, JACQUES (1879-1949), French dramatic theorist, director, and actor who established the Vieux Colombier 4 225
COPERNICUS, NICOLAUS (1473-1543), Polish astronomer 4 226-227
COPLAND, AARON (1900-1990), American composer 4 227-228
COPEY, JOHN SINGLETON (1738-1815), American portrait painter 4 228-230
COPPOLA, FRANCIS FORD (born 1939), American filmmaker and author 18 102-104
CORDOBA, GONZALO FERNANDEZ DE (1453-1515), Spanish military leader 20 99-100
CORELLI, ARCANGELO (1653-1713), Italian composer and violinist 4 230-231
CORI, GERTY T. (born Gerty Theresa Radnitz; 1896-1957), American biochemist 4 231-234
CORINTH, LOVIS (1838-1925), German artist 4 234
Corinthians, Letters to the (New Testament book)
Clement 1 (23 78-81
CORMAN, ROGER (born 1926), American film director and producer 21 87-89
CORNELL, EZRA (1807-1874), American financier and philanthropist 4 236-237
CORNELL, JOSEPH (1903-1972), American artist 4 237-238
DAVIS, BENJAMIN O., SR. (1877-1970), first African American general in the regular United States Armed Services 4 414-415

DAVIS, BETTE (1908-1989), American actress 18 119-121

DAVIS, COLIN REX (born 1927), British conductor 22 131-133

DAVIS, ELMER HOLMES (1890-1958), American journalist and radio commentator 22 133-136

DAVIS, GLENN (born 1925), American football player 21 101-103

DAVIS, HENRY WINTER (1817-1865), American lawyer and politician 4 415-416

DAVIS, JEFFERSON (1808-1889), American statesman, president of the Confederate 1862-1865 4 416-418

DAVIS, JOHN (circa 1550-1605), English navigator 4 419

DAVIS, MILES (1926-1991), jazz trumpeter, composer, and small-band leader 4 419-421

DAVIS, OSSIE (born 1917), African American playwright, actor, and director 4 421-422

DAVIS, RICHARD HARDING (1864-1916), American journalist, novelist, and dramatist 4 422-423

DAVIS, SAMMY, JR. (1925-1990), African American singer, dancer, and actor 4 423-424

DAVIS, STUART (1894-1964), American cubist painter 4 424-425

DAVIS, WILLIAM MORRIS (1850-1934), American geographer and geologist 4 425-426

DAVY, SIR HUMPHRY (1778-1829), English chemist and natural philosopher 4 426-427

DAWES, HENRY LAURENS (1816-1903), American politician 4 427

DAWSON, WILLIAM LEVI (1899-1990), African American composer, performer, and music educator 4 427-428

DAY, DOROTHY (1897-1980), a founder of the Catholic Worker Movement 4 428-429

DAYAN, MOSHE (1915-1981), Israeli general and statesman 4 429-431

DAYANANDA SARASWATI (1824-1883), Indian religious leader 4 431

DE ANDRADE, MARIO (Mario Coelho Pinto Andrade; born 1928), Angolan poet, critic, and political activist 4 434-435

DE BEAUVIOR, SIMONE (1908-1986), French writer and leader of the modern feminist movement 4 440-441

DE BOW, JAMES DUNWOODY BROWNSON (1820-1867), American editor and statistician 4 441-442

DE BROGLIE, LOUIS VICTOR PIERRE RAYMOND (1892-1987), French physicist 4 442-444

DE FOREST, LEE (1873-1961), American inventor 4 459-460

DE GASPERI, ALCIDE (1881-1954), Italian statesman, premier 1945-1953 4 462-463


DE GOUGES, MARIE OLYMPE (born Marie Gouzes; 1748-1793), French author 23 85-88

DE GOURNAY, MARIE LE JARS (1565-1645), French author 23 88-90

DE KLERK, FREDRIK WILLEM (born 1934), president of Mexico 4 466-468

DE KOONING, WILLEM (1904-1997), Dutch-born American painter 4 468-469

DE LA MADRID HURTADO, MIGUEL (born 1924), president of Mexico (1982-1988) 4 471-472

DE LA ROCHE, MAZO LOUISE (1879-1961), Canadian author 4 474-475

DE LEON, DANIEL (1852-1914), American Socialist theoretician and politician 4 479-480

DE L’ORME, PHILIBERT (1510-1570), French architect 9 519

DE MILLE, AGNES (1905-1993), American dancer, choreographer, and author 4 486-488

DE NIRO, ROBERT (born 1943), American actor and film producer 21 103-106

DE SANCTIS, FRANCESCO (1817-1883), Italian critic, educator, and legislator 4 505

DE SICA, VITTORIO (1901-1974), Italian filmmaker 21 106-108

DE SICOMOR, PIERRE JEAN (1801-1873), Belgian Jesuit missionary 4 509-510

DE SOTO, HERNANDO (1500-1542), Spanish conqueror and explorer 4 510-511

DE VALERA, EAMON (1882-1975), American-born Irish revolutionary leader and statesman 4 514-515

DE VRIES, HUGO (1848-1935), Belgian botanist in the fields of heredity and the origin of species 4 516-518

DE WOLFE, ELISIE (1865-1950), American interior decorator 20 107-108

DEÁK, FRANCIS (1803-1876), Hungarian statesman 4 431-432

DEAKIN, ALFRED (1856-1919), Australian statesman 4 432-433

DEAN, JAMES (James Byron Dean; 1931-1955), American actor and cult figure 4 433-434

DEANE, SILAS (1737-1789), American merchant lawyer and diplomat 4 435-437

DEB, RADHAKANT (1783-1867), Bengali reformer and cultural nationalist 4 437

DEBAKEY, MICHAEL ELLIS (born 1908), American surgeon 4 437-438

DEBARTOLO, EDWARD JOHN, SR. and JR., real estate developers who specialized in large regional malls 4 438-440

DEBS, EUGENE VICTOR (1855-1926), American union organizer 4 444-445

DEBUSSY, (ACHILLE) CLAUDE (1862-1918), French composer 4 445-447

DEBYE, PETER JOSEPH WILLIAM (1884-1966), Dutch-born American physical chemist 4 447-448

DECatur, Stephen (1779-1820), American naval officer 4 448-449

DEE, RUBY (born Ruby Ann Wallace; born 1924), African American actor 4 449-452

DEER, ADA E. (born 1935), Native American social worker, activist, and director of Bureau of Indian Affairs 4 452-454

Deer Hunter, The (film) Streep, Meryl Louise 23 384-387

DEERE, JOHN (1804-1886), American inventor and manufacturer 4 455

DEERING, WILLIAM (1826-1913), American manufacturer 4 455-456

DEES, MORRIS S., JR. (born 1936), American civil rights attorney 4 456-457

DEFOE, DANIEL (1660-1731), English novelist, journalist, and poet 4 457-459
DEGANAWIDA (also DeKanahwidah; c. 1550-c. 1600), Native American prophet, leader, and statesman. 

DEGAS, (HILORE GERMAIN) EDGAR (1834-1917), French painter and sculptor. 

DEISENHOFER, JOHANN (born 1943), German biochemist and biophysicist. 

DELLINGER, DAVID (born 1965), American pacifist and author. 

DELL, MICHAEL SAUL (born 1965), American businessman. 

DELLINGER, DAVID (born 1914), American pacifist. 

DELLA NOVAIS, BARTOLOMEU (died 1500), Portuguese explorer. 

DELMACE, THEOPHILE (1852-1923), French statesman. 

DELL Computer corporation. 

DELL, MICHAEL SAUL (born 1965), American businessman. 

DELLINGER, DAVID (born 1914), American pacifist. 

DELLA NOVAIS, BARTOLOMEU (died 1500), Portuguese explorer. 

DELMACE, THEOPHILE (1852-1923), French statesman. 

DELL Computer corporation. 

DELL, MICHAEL SAUL (born 1965), American businessman. 

DELLINGER, DAVID (born 1914), American pacifist. 

DELLA NOVAIS, BARTOLOMEU (died 1500), Portuguese explorer. 

DELMACE, THEOPHILE (1852-1923), French statesman. 

DELL Computer corporation. 

DELL, MICHAEL SAUL (born 1965), American businessman. 

DELLINGER, DAVID (born 1914), American pacifist. 

DELLA NOVAIS, BARTOLOMEU (died 1500), Portuguese explorer. 

DELMACE, THEOPHILE (1852-1923), French statesman. 

DELL Computer corporation. 

DELL, MICHAEL SAUL (born 1965), American businessman. 

DELLINGER, DAVID (born 1914), American pacifist. 

DELLA NOVAIS, BARTOLOMEU (died 1500), Portuguese explorer. 

DELMACE, THEOPHILE (1852-1923), French statesman. 

DELL Computer corporation. 

DELL, MICHAEL SAUL (born 1965), American businessman. 

DELLING, ALFRED THOMPSON (Tom Denning' 1899-1999), British judge and author. 

DEOORO DA FONSECA, MANOEL (1827-1892), Brazilian statesman, president 1890-1891. 

DERAIN, ANDRE (1880-1954), French painter. 

DEREN, MAYA (Eleanor Solomonovna Denerkovskaya; 1917-1961), Ukrainian American author and filmmaker. 

DERRICOTTE, JULIETTE ALINE (1897-1931), African American educator. 

DERRIDA, JACQUES (born 1930), French philosopher. 

DESMOULTS, RENÉ (1956-1650), French philosopher and mathematician. 

DESSAILLES, JEAN JACQUES (1758-1806), Haitian nationalist and politician. 

DETROIT RED WINGS (hockey team). 

DETT, ROBERT NATHANIEL (1882-1943), African American composer, conductor, and music educator. 

DEUTSCH, KARL WOLFGANG (1912-1992), American political scientist. 

DEVLIN, BERNADETTE (McAliskey; born 1947), youngest woman ever elected to the British Parliament. 

DEVRIES, WILLIAM CASTLE (born 1943), American heart surgeon. 

DEW, THOMAS RODERICK (1802-1846), American political economist. 

DEWEY, GEORGE (1837-1917), American naval officer. 

DEWEY, JOHN (1859-1952), American philosopher and educator. 

DEWEY, MELVIL (1851-1931), American Librarian and reformer. 


DEWSON, MARY WILLIAMS (Molly; 1874-1962), American reformer, government official, and organizer of women for the Democratic party. 

DIAGHILEV, SERGEI (1872-1929), Russian who inspired artists, musicians, and dancers to take ballet to new heights of public enjoyment. 

DIAGNE, BLAISE (1872-1934), Senegalese political leader. 

DIAMOND, DAVID (born 1915), American composer and teacher. 

DIANA, PRINCESS OF WALES (born Diana Frances Spencer; 1961-1997), member of British royal family. 

DIAS DE NOVAIS, BARTOLOMEU (1496-circa 1584), Spanish soldier and adventurer. 

DÍAZ ORDAZ, GUSTAVO (1911-1979), President of Mexico (1964-1970). 

DIAS DE NOVAIS, BARTOLOMEU (1496-circa 1584), Spanish soldier and adventurer. 

DÍAZ ORDAZ, GUSTAVO (1911-1979), President of Mexico (1964-1970). 

DICKENS, CHARLES JOHN HUFFAM (1812-1870), English author. 

DICKEY, JAMES (1923-1997), American poet. 

DICKINSON, EMILY (1830-1886), American poet.
DOOLITTLE, HILDA (1886-1961), American poet and novelist 5 65-66
DOOLITTLE, JAMES HAROLD (1896-1993), American transcontinental pilot 5 66-68
DORIA, ANDREA (1466-1560), Italian admiral and politician 18 123-125
DORR, RHETA CHILDE (1868-1948), American journalist 5 68-69
DORSEY, JIMMY (James Dorsey; 1904-1957), American musician and bandleader 19 93-95
DORSEY, THOMAS ANDREW (1900-1993), African American gospel singer and composer 22 149-151
DOS PASSOS, RODERIGO (1896-1970), American novelist 5 69-71
DOS SANTOS, JOSE´ EDUARDO (circa 1817-1895), Mozambican nationalist insurgent, statesman, and intellectual 5 72-74
DOSTOEVSKY, FYODOR (1821-1881), Russian novelist 5 74-77
DOUGLAS, DONALD WILLS (1892-1981), American aeronautical engineer 5 77
DOUGLAS, GAVIN (circa 1475-1522), Scottish poet, prelate, and courtier 5 77-78
DOUGLAS, SIR JAMES (12867-1330), Scottish patriot 5 80-82
DOUGLAS, MARY TEW (born 1921), British anthropologist and social thinker 5 79-80
DOUGLAS, STEPHEN ARNOLD (1813-1861), American politician 5 80-82
DOUGLAS, THOMAS CLEMENT (1904-1986), Canadian clergyman and politician, premier of Saskatchewan (1944-1961), and member of Parliament (1962-1979) 5 82-83
DOUGLAS, WILLIAM ORVILLE (1898-1980), American jurist 5 83-85
DOUGLAS-HOME, ALEC (Alexander Frederick Home; 1903-1995), Scottish politician 20 117-119
DOUGLASS, FREDERICK (circa 1817-1895), African American leader and abolitionist 5 85-86
DOUHET, GIULIO (1869-1930), Italian military leader 22 151-152
DOVE, ARTHUR GARFIELD (1880-1946), American painter 5 86-87
DOVE, RITA FRANCES (born 1952), United States poet laureate 5 87-89
DOW, CHARLES (1851-1902), American journalist 19 95-97
DOW, NEAL (1804-1897), American temperance reformer 5 89-90
DOWLAND, JOHN (1562-1626), British composer and lutenist 5 90
DOWNING, ANDREW JACKSON (1815-1852), American horticulturist and landscape architect 5 90-91
DOYLE, SIR ARTHUR CONAN (1859-1930), British author and detective story writer 5 91-92
DRAKO, LUIS MARÍA (1859-1921), Argentine international jurist and diplomat 5 92-93
DRAKE, DANIEL (1785-1852), American physician 5 93-94
DRAKE, EDWIN (1819-1880), American oil well driller and speculator 21 108-110
DRAKE, SIR FRANCIS (circa 1541-1596), English navigator 5 94-96
DRAUPER, JOHN WILLIAM (1811-1882), Anglo-American scientist and historian 5 96-97
DRAVTON, MICHAEL (1563-1631), English poet 5 97-98
DreamWorks (movie studio) 5
DREISER, HERMAN (1871-1945), American novelist 5 98-100
DREES, HERMAN THEODORE (1871-1945), American novelist 5 98-100
DREW, CHARLES RICHARD (1904-1950), African American surgeon 5 100-101
DREW, DANIEL (1797-1879), American stock manipulator 5 101-102
DREXEL, KATHERINE (1858-1955), founded a Catholic order, the Sisters of the Blessed Sacrament 5 102-103
DREXLER, KIM ERIC (born 1955), American scientist and author 20 119-121
DREYER, CARL THEODOR (1889-1968), Danish film director 22 152-155
DREYFUSS, ALFRED (1859-1935), French army officer 5 103-105
DRIESCH, HANS ADOLF EDUARD (1867-1941), German biologist and philosopher 5 105
DRUCKER, RITA FRANCES (born 1952), United States poet laureate 5 87-89
DRYDEN, JOHN (1631-1700), English poet, critic, and dramatist 5 106-107
DUDGEON, ARTHUR CONAN (1859-1930), British author and detective story writer 5 91-92
DUB, JOHN LANGALIBALELE (1870-1949), South African writer and Zulu propagandist 5 113
DUBIN, EMMETT (1892-1982), American trade union official 5 114-115
DUBNOV, SIMON (1860-1941), Jewish historian, journalist, and political activist 5 115-116
DUBOIS, WILLIAM EDWARD (1868-1963), African American educator, pan-Africanist, and protest leader 5 116-118
DUBOIS-REYMOND, EMIL (1858-1955), American aeronautical engineer 5 119
DUBUFFET, MARCEL (1898-1985), French painter 5 122-123
DUCHAMP, MARCEL (1887-1968), French painter 5 122-123
DUCHAMP-VILLON, RAYMOND (1876-1945), American novelist 5 122-123
DUDLEY, BARBARA (born 1947), American director of Greenpeace 5 123-124
DUDLEY, THOMAS (1576-1653), American colonial governor and Puritan leader 5 124-125
DUFAY, GUILLAUME (circa 1400-1474), French painter 5 125-126
DUFF, ALFRED (1806-1878), Scottish lawyer and politician 5 126-127
DUGAN, ALAN (born 1923), American poet 5 127-128
DUGDALE, RICHARD LOUIS (1841-1883), English-born American sociologist 5 128-129
ETRELD THE UNREADY (968?-1016), Anglo-Saxon king of England 978-1016 5 327

ETICS (philosophy) values
Cats, Jacob 23 64-66

EUCLID (flourished 300 B.C.), Greek mathematician 5 327-329

EUODUXUS OF CNIDUS (circa 408-circa 355 B.C.), Greek astronomer, mathematician, and physician 5 329-330

EUGENE OF SAVOY (1663-1736), French-born Austrian general and diplomat 5 330-331

EUER, LEONARD (1707-1783), Swiss mathematician 5 331-332

EUPIDES (480-406 B.C.), Greek playwright 5 332-334

EUTOPIUS (fl. 4th century), Roman historian and official 20 128-130

EUTYCHES (circa 380-455), Byzantine monk 5 335

Evangelism (religion) missionaries
Palmer, Phoebe Worrall 23 288-290

pentecostal
Panham, Charles Fox 23 291-293

EVANS, ALICE (1881-1975), American bacteriologist 19 104-106

EVANS, SIR ARTHUR JOHN (1851-1941), English archeologist 5 333-336

EVANS, EDITH (1888-1976), English actress who portrayed comic characters 5 336-337

EVANS, GEORGE HENRY (1805-1856), American labor and agrarian reformer 5 337-338

EVANS, OLIVER (1755-1819), American inventor 5 338

EVANS, WALKER (1903-1975), American photographer of American life between the world wars 5 339

EVANS-PRITCHARD, SIR EDWARD EVAN (1902-1973), English social anthropologist 5 340

EVARTS, WILLIAM MAXWELL (1818-1901), American lawyer and statesman 5 340-341

EVATT, HERBERT VERE (1894-1965), Australian statesman and jurist 5 341-343

EVELYN, JOHN (1620-1706), English author 5 343-344

EVERETT, EDWARD (1794-1865), American statesman and orator 5 344

EVERGOOD, PHILIP (1901-1973), American painter 5 345

EVERS, MEDGAR (1925-1963), African American civil rights leader 5 345-348

EVERS-WILLIAMS, MYRLE (born Myrle Louise Beasley; born 1933), civil rights leader, lecturer, and writer 5 348-350

EWING, WILLIAM MAURICE (1906-1974), American oceanographer 5 350-351

EWONWU, BENEDICT CHUKA (born 1921), Nigerian sculptor and painter 5 351-352

Explorers, American of space
McCandless, Bruce, II 23 243-246

Explorers, Canadian
Bernier, Joseph E. 23 35-37

Tyrrell, Joseph Burr 23 410-412

Explorers, English of North America
Harriot, Thomas 23 137-139

EYCK, HUBERT VAN (died 1426), Flemish painter 5 352-354

EYCK, JAN VAN (circa 1390-1441), Flemish painter 5 352-354

EYRE, EDWARD JOHN (1815-1901), English explorer of Australia 5 354

EZANA (flourished 6th century B.C.), Ethiopian king 5 354-355

EZKIEL (flourished 5th century B.C.), Hebrew priest and prophet 5 355-356

EZRA (flourished 5th century B.C.), Hebrew priest, scribe, and reformer 5 356-357
FAHD IBN ABDUL AZIZ AL-SAUD (born 1920), son of the founder of modern Saudi Arabia and king 5 364-366

FAHRENHEIT, GABRIEL DANIEL (1686-1736), German physicist 5 366

FAIDHERBE, LOUIS LÉON CÉSAR (1818-1889), French colonial governor 5 366-367

Fair, A. A. see Gardner, Erle Stanley

FAIR, JAMES RUTHERFORD, JR. (born 1920), American chemical engineer and educator 20 131-131

FAIRBANKS, DOUGLAS (Douglas Elton Ulman; 1883-1939), American actor and producer 19 107-108

FAIRCLOUGH, ELLEN LOUKS (born 1905), Canadian Cabinet minister 5 367-368

FAIRUZ (née Nuhad Haddad; born 1933), Arabic singer 5 368-369

FAISAL I (1883-1933), king of Iraq 1921-33 5 370-371


FAISAL IBN ABD AL AZIZ IBN SAUD (1904-1975), Saudi Arabian king and prominent Arab leader 5 371-372

Khalid Bin Abdul Aziz Al-Saud 23 194-196

FALCONET, ÉTIENNE MAURICE (1716-1791), French sculptor 5 372

FALLA, MANUEL DE (1876-1946), Spanish composer 5 372-373

FALLETTA, JOANN (born 1954), American opera singer 5 388-389

FARRAKHAN, LOUIS (Louis Eugene Walcott, born 1933), a leader of one branch of the Nation of Islam popularly known as Black Muslims and militant spokesman for Black Nationalism 5 389-390

FARRAKHAN, LOUIS (Louis Eugène Walcott, born 1933), a leader of one branch of the Nation of Islam popularly known as Black Muslims and militant spokesman for Black Nationalism 5 389-390

FAROUK I (1920-1965), king of Egypt 1937-1952 5 387-388

FARAGUT, DAVID GLASSOW (1801-1870), American naval officer 5 388-389

FARRAHAN, LOUIS (Louis Eugene Walcott, born 1933), a leader of one branch of the Nation of Islam popularly known as Black Muslims and militant spokesman for Black Nationalism 5 389-390

FARRAGUT, DAVID GLASSOW (1801-1870), American naval officer 5 388-389

“Father of . . .” see Nicknames

Fathers of the Church see Religious leaders, Christian—Fathers

FAULKNER, BRIAN (1921-1977), prime minister of Northern Ireland (1971-1972) 5 393-395

FAULKNER, WILLIAM (1897-1962), American novelist 5 395-397

Fauquember 1923 229-231

FAURÉ, GABRIEL URBAIN (1845-1924), French composer 5 397-398

FAUSSET, JESSIE REDMON (1882-1961), American writer and editor 20 135-138

FAWCETT, MILICENT GARRETT (1847-1929), British feminist 5 398-400

FEAY, SAFI (born 1943), Senegalese filmmaker and ethnologist 5 400-401

FECHNER, GUSTAV THEODOR (1801-1887), German experimental psychologist 5 401-402

FEE, JOHN GREG (1816-1901), American abolitionist and clergyman 5 402-403

FEIFFER, JULES RALPH (born 1929), American satirical cartoonist and playwright and novelist 5 403-404

FEIGENBAUM, MITCHELL JAY (born 1944), American physicist 5 404-405

FEIGL, HERBERT (born 1902), American philosopher 18 135-137

FEIJO, DIOGO ANTÔNIO (1784-1843), Brazilian priest and statesman 5 405-406

FEININGER, LYONEL (1871-1956), American painter 5 406-407

FEINSTEIN, DIANNE (Goldman; born 1933), politician, public official, and San Francisco's first female mayor 5 407-408

FELA (Fela Anikulapo Kuti; 1938-1997), Nigerian musician and activist 21 127-129

FELICIANO, JOSÉ (born 1945), Hispanic American singer and guitarist 19 109-110

FELLER, BOB (Robert William Andrew Feller; born 1918), American baseball player 21 129-131

FELLINI, FEDERICO (1920-1993), Italian film director 5 408-409

FELTRE, VITTORINO DA (1378-1446), Italian humanist and teacher 5 409-410

Feminist movement see Women’s rights

Feminists see Women’s rights

American

Johnston, Frances Benjamin 23 174-177

Shange, Ntozake 23 367-369

Walker, Mary Edwards 23 432-434

Australian

Spence, Catherine Helen 23 374-375

French

de Gournay, Marie Olympe 85-88

de Gouraud, Marie le Jars 23 88-90

Japanese

Enchi, Fumiko Ueda 23 100-102

Latin American

Rodriguez de Tio, Lola 23 345-346

South African

Schreiner, Olive 23 362-364

Zimbabwean

Vera, Yvonne 23 425-427
FORD, PAUL LEICESTER (1865-1902),
American bibliographer and novelist 6
9-10
FORMAN, JAMES (born 1928), writer,
journalist, political philosopher, and
leader of the Student Nonviolent
Coordinating Committee 6 10-11
FORMAN, MILOS (Tomas Jan Forman,
born 1932), American screenwriter
and film director 20 143-145
FORREST, EDWIN (1806-1872),
American actor 6 11-12
Forrest Gump (film)
Hanks, Tom 23 135-137
FORREST, JOHN (1st Baron Forrest of
Bunbury; 1847-1918), Australian
explorer and politician 6 12-13
FORREST, NATHAN BEDFORD (1821-
1877), American Confederate general
6 13-14
FORRESTAL, JAMES VINCENT (1892-
1949), American Presbyterian minister
6 14-16
FORRSSMANN, WERNER (1904-1979),
German physician 21 140-141
FORSTER, EDWARD MORGAN (1879-
1970), English novelist and essayist 6
14-16
FORTAS, ABE (1892-1969), American
lawyer, Supreme Court (1965-1969)
6 16-17
FORTEN, JAMES (1766-1842), African
American abolitionist and inventor 6
17-18
FORTUNE, DION (Violet Mary Firth;
1890-1946), British author and
occultist 22 180-182
FORTUNE, TIMOTHY THOMAS (1856-
1928), African American journalist 6
18-21
FOSCOLO, UGO (1778-1827), Italian
author, poet, and patriot 6 21
FOSDICK, HARRY EMERSON (1878-
1969), American Presbyterian minister
6 21-22
FOSSE, BOB (1927-1987), American
director, choreographer, and dancer 6
22-23
FOSSEY, DIAN (1932-1985), world’s
leading authority on the mountain
gorilla 6 23-24
FOSTER, ABIGAIL KELLEY (1810-1887),
American reformer 6 25
FOSTER, NORMAN (born 1935), British
architect 19 115-117
FOSTER, STEPHEN COLLINS (1826-
1864), American composer 6 25-27
FOSTER, WILLIAM ZEBULON (1881-
1961), American Communist party
leader 6 27-28
FOUCAULT, JEAN BERNARD LÉON
(1819-1868), French physicist 6 28-29
FOUCAULT, MICHEL (1926-1984),
French philosopher, critic, and
historian 6 29-30
FOUCHÉ, JOSEPH (1759-1820), French
statesman 6 30-31
FOUQUET, JEAN (ca. 1420- ca. 1480),
French painter 6 31
FOURIER, FRANCIS CHARLES MARIE
(1772-1837), French socialistic writer 6
31-32
FOURIER, BARON JEAN BAPTISTE
JOSEPH (1768-1830), French
mathematical physicist 6 32-33
FOWLES, JOHN (born 1926), English
novelist 6 33-35
FOX, CHARLES JAMES (1749-1806),
English parliamentarian 6 35-37
FOX, GEORGE (1624-1691), English
spiritual reformer 6 37-38
FOX, VICENTE (born 1942), Mexican
president 21 142-143
FOX, WILLIAM (1879-1952), American
film producer 21 143-144
FRACASTORO, GIROLAMO
(Hieronymus Fracastorius; c. 1478-
1553), Italian physician, poet,
astronomer, and logician 21 144-147
FRAENKEL, ABRAHAM ADOLF
(Abraham Halevi Fraenkel; 1891-
1965), Israeli mathematician 23
109-111
Fragonard, Jean Honore
(1732-1806), French painter 6 38-39
FRANCE, ANTOLE (1844-1924), French
novelist 6 39-40
FRANCIS I (1494-1547), king of France
1515-1547 6 40-43
FRANCIS II (1768-1835), Holy Roman
emperor 1792-1806 and emperor of
Austria 1804-1835 6 43-44
FRANCIS FERDINAND (1863-1914),
archduke of Austria 6 44
FRANCIS JOSEPH (1830-1916), emperor
of Austria 1868-1916 and king of
Hungary 1867-1916 6 45-46
FRANCIS OF ASSISI, SAINT
(1182-1226), Italian mystic and religious
founder 6 46-47
Clare of Assisi, Saint 23 76-78
FRANCIS OF SALES, SAINT
(1567-1622), French bishop 6 47
FRANCIS XAVIER, SAINT
(1506-1552), Spanish Jesuit missionary 6
48
FRANCK, CESAR (1822-1890), French
composer 6 48-49
FRANCK, JAMES (1882-1964), German
physicist 6 49-52
FRANCO OF COLOGNE (Franco of
Paris; flourished circa 1250-1260),
French music theorist 6 52
FRANK, ANNE (1929-1945), 16-year-old
holocaust victim who kept a famous
diary 6 54-56
FRANKENHEIMER, JOHN (1930-2002),
American filmmaker 22 182-185
FRANKENHAUSER, HELEN (born 1928),
American painter 6 56-57
FRANKFURTER, FELIX (1882-1965),
American jurist 6 57
FRANKLIN, ARETHA (born 1942),
African American singer and
songwriter 6 58-60
FRANKLIN, BENJAMIN (1706-1790),
American statesman, diplomat, and
inventor 6 60-64
FRANKLIN, SIR JOHN (1786-1847),
English explorer 6 68-69
FRANKLIN, JOHN HOPE (born 1915),
pioneer African American historian 6
65-67
FRANKLIN, MILES (1879-1954),
African American artist 6 68-69
FRANKLIN, ROSALIND ELISE (1920-
1958), British physical chemist and
molecular biologist 6 67-68
FRANKLIN, WILLIAM (circa 1731-1813),
American colonial administrator 6
69-70
FRASER (PINTER), LADY ANTONIA
(born 1932), popular British
biographer, historian, and mystery
novelist 6 70-71
FRASER, MALCOLM (born 1930), prime
minister of Australia (1975-1983) 6
71-73
FRASER, PETER (1884-1950), New
Zealand prime minister 1940-49 6
73-74
FRASER, SIMON (1776-1862), Canadian
explorer and fur trader 6 74-75
FRASER-REID, BERT (born 1934),
Canadian writer 6 75-76
FRAZER, SIR JAMES GEORGE (1854-1941), Scottish classicist and anthropologist 77

FRAZIER, EDWARD FRANKLIN (1894-1962), African American sociologist 77

FRÉCHETTE, LOUIS-HONORÉ (1839-1908), French-Canadian poet 77-78

FREDERICK (Frederick I, Frederick II, Frederick III, Frederick IV, Frederick V, Frederick VI, Frederick VII), German king 6

FREDERICK WILLIAM (1620-1688), Elector of Brandenburg 6

FREDERICK WILLIAM I (1640-1688), Elector of Brandenburg 6

FREDERICK WILLIAM II (1688-1740), King of Prussia 6

FREDERICK WILLIAM III (1770-1840), King of Prussia 6

FREDERICK WILLIAM IV (1795-1861), King of Prussia 6

FREDERICK, CHARLES (1774-1819), German romantic painter 6

FREDERICK, ALBERT (1763-1837), German Emperor 6

FREDERICK, EMPEROR (1123-1190), Holy Roman emperor 6

FREDRIK, CHARLES (1660-1718), King of Sweden 6

FREED, JAMES INGO (1923-2001), American sculptor 6

FREEDMAN, LEON (1924-2001), American sociologist 6

FRESHFIELD, BENJAMIN (1814-1864), English lawyer 6

FREICHEN, GUSTAV (1849-1914), German general 6

FREICKER, BENJAMIN (1843-1918), American poet 6

FRELINGHUYSEN, THEODORE AUGUSTUS (1813-1890), American lawyer 6

FRELINGHUYSEN, THEODORE AUGUSTUS (1813-1890), American lawyer 6

FRENCH, DANIEL CHESTER (1850-1931), American sculptor 6

FRENCH, JACQUES EMILE (1844-1920), French writer 6

FRENCH, LUCIAN (1863-1925), French poet 6

FRENOIS, FREDERICK (1794-1837), French mathematician 6

FRENS, JACOB M. DE (1588-1660), Dutch philosopher 6

FRESCO, MARCO (1419-2020), Italian painter 6

FRESNO, ALVARO (1540-1617), Spanish painter 6

FRESNEL, AUGUSTIN JEAN (1788-1827), French physicist 6

FREUD, SIGMUND (1856-1939), Viennese psychiatrist 6

FREYTAG, GUSTAV (1816-1895), German novelist, dramatist, and critic 6

FRIED, HENRY CLAY (1793-1877), American politician 6

FRIEDBERG, ALFRED (1910-1971), American architect 6

FRIEDBERG, ARTHUR (1900-1983), American philosopher 6

FRIEDBERG, NORMAN (1900-1974), American sociologist 6

FRIEDERICH, CARL JOACHIM (1901-1984), German-born educator who became a leading American political theorist 6

FRIEDRICH, ANNA (1895-1982), American psychoanalyst 6

FRIEDRICH, EMIL (1841-1918), German humanitarian 6

FRIEDRICH, KARL (1770-1814), German philosopher 6

FRIEDRICH, MAX (1891-1967), Austrian psychoanalyst 6

FRIEDRICH, OTTO ROBERT (1904-1979), Austrian-British nuclear physicist 6

FROEBEL, FRIEDRICH WILHELM (1782-1852), German educator and psychologist 6

FROEBEL, JAKOB FRITZ (1783-1852), German educator and psychologist 6

FROEBEL, JOHANN (1783-1852), German educator and psychologist 6

FROEBEL, JOHANN (1783-1852), German educator and psychologist 6

FRÖHLICH, MAX (1894-1982), German psychiatrist 6

FROISSART, JEAN (1337-1403), French chronicler 6

FROST, ROBERT (1874-1963), American poet 6

FROUDE, JAMES ANTHONY (1818-1894), English historian 6

FRUNZE, MIKHAIL VASILIEVICH (1885-1925), Soviet military leader 6

FRUTTERO, MARCO (1940-2005), American sculptor 6

FUCHS, BRUNO (1913-1940), Swiss mathematician 6

FUCHS, LEONHARD (1501-1566), German botanist 6

FUCHS, LEONHARD (1501-1566), German botanist 6

FUCHS, LEONHARD (1501-1566), German botanist 6
GARBO, GRETA (1905-1990), Swedish-born American film star 6 205-207

GARCIA, CARLOS P. (1896-1971), Philippine statesman, president 1957-61 6 207-208

GARCIA, JERRY (Jerome John García; 1942-1995), American musician 21 150-152

GARCÍA MÁRQUEZ, GABRIEL (born 1928), Colombian author 6 208-209

GARCÍA MORENO, GABRIEL (1821-1875), Ecuadorian politician, president 1861-1865 and 1869-1875 6 209-210

GARCÍA ROBLES, ALFONSO (1911-1991), Mexican diplomat 23 117-119

GARCIÁS DE LA VEGA, INCA (1539-1616), Peruvian chronicler 6 210-211

GARDINER, SAMUEL RAWSON (1829-1902), English historian 6 211

GARDNER, ERLE STANLEY (1889-1970), American mystery writer 22 193-195

GARDNER, ISABELLA STEWART (1840-1924), American art patron and socialite 21 152-155

GARDNER, JOHN W. (1912-2002), American educator, public official, and political reformer 6 211-213

GARFIELD, JAMES ABRAM (1831-1881), American general, president 1881 6 213-214

GARIBALDI, GIUSEPPE (1807-1882), Italian patriot 6 215-217

GARLAND, HANNIBAL HAMLIN (1860-1940), American author 6 217-218

GARLAND, JUDY (1922-1969), super star of films, musicals, and concert stage 6 218-219

GARNEAU, FRANC¸OIS-XAVIER (1807-1882), French-Canadian historian 6 219-220

GARNER, JOHN NANCE (“Cactus Jack” Garner; 1868-1967), American vice president (1933-1941) 21 155-157

GARNIER, FRANCIS (Marie Joseph François Garnier; 1839-1873), French naval officer 6 220-221

GARNIER, JEAN LOUIS CHARLES (1825-1898), French architect 6 221-222

GARRETT, JOHN WORK (1820-1884), American railroad magnate 6 225

GARRETT, THOMAS (1789-1871), American abolitionist 6 225-226

GARRETT (ANDERSON), ELIZABETH (1836-1917), English physician and women’s rights advocate 6 222-225

GARRISON, WILLIAM LLOYD (1805-1879), American editor and abolitionist 6 226-228

GARVEY, MARCUS MOSIAH (1887-1940), Jamaican leader and African nationalist 6 228-229

GARY, ELBERT HENRY (1846-1927), American lawyer and industrialist 6 229-230

GASCA, PEDRO DE LA (circa 1496-1567), Spanish priest and statesman 6 230-231

GASKELL, ELIZABETH (1810-1865), English novelist 6 231-232

GATES, WILLIAM HENRY, III (“Bill”; born 1955), software company co-founder and executive 6 232-234

GATING, RICHARD JORDAN (1818-1903), American inventor of multiple-firing guns 6 234-235

GAUDI I CORNET, ANTONI (1852-1926), Catalan architect and designer 6 235-236

GAUGUIN, PAUL (1848-1903), French painter and sculptor 6 236-238

GAULLI, GIOVANNI BATTISTA (1639-1709), Italian painter 6 238-239

GAULTIER, JEAN PAUL (born 1952), French avant-garde designer 6 239-240

GAUSS, KARL FRIEDRICH (1777-1855), German mathematician and astronomer 6 240-242

GAVIRIA TRUIJILLO, CESAR AUGUSTO (born 1947), president of Colombia 6 242-243

GAY, JOHN (1685-1732), English playwright and poet 6 243-244

GAYLE, HELENE DORIS (born 1955), African American epidemiologist and pediatrician 6 244-245

GAUYSSAC, JOSEPH LOUIS (1778-1850), French chemist and physicist 6 245-246

GEDDES, SIR PATRICK (1854-1932), Scottish sociologist and biologist 6 246-247

GEERTGEN TOT SINT JANS (Geertgen van Haarlem; circa 1460/65-1490/95), Netherlands painter 6 248

GEERTZ, CLIFFORD (born 1926), American cultural anthropologist 6 248-249

GEFFEN, DAVID LAWRENCE (born 1943), American record and film producer 23 119-122

GEHRIG, LOU (Henry Louis Gehrig; 1903-1941), American baseball player 19 119-121

GEHRY, FRANK O. (née Goldberg; born 1929), American architect 6 250-251

GEIGER, HANS (born Johannes Wilhelm Geiger; 1882-1945), German physicist 6 251-253

GEISEL, ERNESTO (1908-1996), Brazilian army general, president of Brazil’s national oil company (Petrobras), and president of the republic (1974-1979) 6 253-255

GEISEL, THEODOR (a.k.a. Dr. Seuss; 1904-1991), American author of children’s books 6 255-256

GELLER, MARGARET JOAN (born 1947), American astronomer 6 256-257

GELL-MANN, MURRAY (born 1929), American physicist 6 257-258

GEMAYEL, AMIN (born 1942), Lebanese nationalist and Christian political leader; president of the Republic of Lebanon (1982-1988) 6 258-259

GEMAYEL, PIERRE (1905-1984), leader of the Lebanese Phalangist Party 6 259-261

Gene (biology) see Genetics

GENET, EDMOND CHARLES (1763-1834), French diplomat 6 261-262

GENET, JEAN (1910-1986), French novelist and playwright 6 262-263

Genetics (biology) DNA
Altmann, Sidney 23 9-11
Cech, Thomas Robert 23 68-70
engineering
Gilbert, Walter 23 122-124

gene mapping
Gilbert, Walter 23 122-124

GENGHIS KHAN (1167-1227), Mongol chief, creator of the Mongol empire 6 263-265

GENSCHER, HANS-DIETRICH (born 1927), leader of West Germany’s liberal party (the FDP) and foreign minister 6 265-266

GENTILE, GIOVANNI (1875-1944), Italian philosopher and politician 6 267

GENTILE DA FABRIO (Gentile di Niccolò di Giovanni di Massio; circa 1370-1427), Italian painter 6 266-267

GENTILESCHI, ARTEMISIA (1593-1652), Italian painter 22 195-196

GEOFFREY OF MONMOUTH (circa 1100-1155), English pseudohistorian 6 268
Geological Survey (Canada)

Tyrrell, Joseph Burr 23 410-412

Geometry (mathematics)
golden mean
Theano 23 399-401
plane
Scott, Charlotte Angas 23 364-367
projective
Steiner, Jakob 23 380-382

GEORGE I (1660-1727), king of Great Britain and Ireland 1714-1727 6 268-269

GEORGE II (1683-1760), king of Great Britain and Ireland and elector of Hanover 1727-1760 6 269-270

GEORGE III (1738-1820), king of Great Britain and Ireland 1760-1820 6 270-272

GEORGE IV (1762-1830), king of Great Britain and Ireland 1820-1830 6 272-273

GEORGE V (1865-1936), king of Great Britain and Northern Ireland and emperor of India 1910-1936 6 273-275

GEORGE VI (1895-1952), king of Great Britain and Northern Ireland 1936-1952 6 275

GEORGE, DAN (1899-1981), Native American actor 22 196-198

GEORGE, HENRY (1839-1897), American economist and social reformer 6 276

GEORGE, JAMES ZACHARIAH (1826-1897), American politician and jurist 6 276-277

GEORGE, STEFAN (1868-1933), German symbolist poet 6 277-278

Georgia (ancient Iberia; now Georgian Soviet Socialist Republic)
Tamara 23 388-390

GEPHARDT, RICHARD ANDREW (born 1941), Democratic majority leader in the House of Representatives 6 278-280

GERICAULT, JEAN LOIS ANDRE´ THEODORE (1791-1824), French painter 6 280-281

GERMAIN, SOPHIE (Marie-Sophie Germain; 1776-1831), French mathematician 21 157-158

German art
capitalist realism
Polke, Sigmar 23 312-315
photography
Polke, Sigmar 23 312-315
photorealism
Richter, Gerhard 23 338-340
social realism
Richter, Gerhard 23 338-340

GERONIMO (1829-1909), American Apache Indian warrior 6 281-282

GERRY, ELBRIDGE (1744-1814), American patriot and statesman 6 282-283

GERSHOM BEN JUDAH (circa 950-1028), German rabbi, scholar, and poet 6 283-284

GERSHWIN, GEORGE (1898-1937), American composer 6 284-285

GERSHWIN, IRA (Israel Gershvin; 1896-1983), American lyricist 20 153-155

GERSON, JOHN (1363-1429), French theologian 6 285-286

GERSTNER, LOU (Louis Vincent Gerstner, Jr.; born 1942), American businessman 19 121-124

GESSELL, ARNOLD LUCIUS (1880-1961), American psychologist and pediatrician 6 286-287

GESNER, KONRAD VON (1516-1565), Swiss naturalist 6 287

GESUALDO, DON CARLO (Prince of Venosa; circa 1560-1613), Italian composer 6 287-288

GETTY, JEAN PAUL (1892-1976), billionaire independent oil producer 6 288-289

GHAZALI, ABU HAMID MUHAMMAD AL- (1058-1111), Arab philosopher and Islamic theologian 6 290-291

GHIBERTI, LORENZO (circa 1381-1455), Italian sculptor, goldsmith, and painter 6 291-292

GHIRLANDAIO, DOMENICO (1449-1494), Italian painter 6 292-293

GHOSE, AUROBINDO (1872-1950), Indian nationalist and philosopher 6 293-294

GIACOMETTI, ALBERTO (1901-1966), Swiss sculptor and painter 6 294-295

GIANNINI, A. P. (Amadeo Peter; 1870-1950), American banker 6 296-297

GIAP, VO NGUYEN (1911-1990), Vietnamese Communist general and statesman 6 297-299

GIAP, VO NGUYEN (born 1912), Vietnamese Communist general and statesman 6 297-299

GIBBON, EDWARD (1737-1794), English historian 6 299-300

GIBBON, GEORGE (1834-1921), American Roman Catholic cardinal 6 300-301

GIBBS, JAMES (1682-1754), British architect 6 301-302

GIBBS, JOSIAH WILLARD (1839-1903), American mathematical physicist 6 302-303

GIBRAN, KAHIL (1883-1931), Lebanese writer and artist 6 303-305

GIBSON, ALTHEA (born 1917), African American tennis player 6 305-306

GIBSON, BOB (Robert Gibson; born 1935), American baseball player 21 159-162

GIBSON, WILLIAM (born 1914), American author 6 306-307

GIDDINGS, FRANKLIN HENRY (1855-1931), American sociologist 6 307-308

GIDE, ANDRE´ (1869-1951), French author 6 308-309

GIELGUD, JOHN (born 1894), English Shakespearean actor 6 310-311

GIERKE, OTTO VON (1841-1921), German jurist 6 311-312

GIGLI, ROMEO (born 1949), Italian designer 6 312

GILBERT, SIR HUMPHREY (circa 1537-1583), English soldier and colonizer 6 313

GILBERT, WALTER (born 1932), American molecular biologist 23 122-124

GILBERT, WILLIAM (1544-1603), English physician and physicist 6 313-314

GILBERT, SIR WILLIAM SCHWENCK (1836-1911), English playwright and poet 6 314-315

GILBRETH, FRANK (1868-1924), American engineer and management expert 21 162-163

GILBRETH, LILLIAN (born Lillian Evelyn Moller; 1878-1972), American psychologist and industrial management consultant 6 315-317

GILES, ERNEST (1835-1897), Australian explorer 6 317-318

GILKEY, LANGDON BROWN (born 1919), American ecumenical Protestant theologian 6 318-319

GILLESPIE, DIZZY (born John Birks Gillespie; 1917-1993), African American jazz trumpeter, composer, and band leader 6 320-322

GILLETTE, KING CAMP (1855-1932), American businessman and inventor 21 163-166

GILLIAM, SAM (born 1933), American artist 6 322-323

GILMAN, CHARLOTTE ANNA PERKINS (1860-1935), American writer and lecturer 6 323-325
GILMAN, DANIEL COIT (1831-1908), educator and pioneer in the American university movement 6 325-326
GILPIN, LAURA (1891-1979), American photographer 6 326-327
GILSON, ÉTIENNE HENRY (1884-1978), French Catholic philosopher 6 327-328
GINASTERA, ALBERTO EVARISTO (1916-1983), Argentine composer 6 328-329
GINCHER, NEWT (born 1943), Republican congressman from Georgia 6 329-332
GINSBERG, ALLEN (1926-1997), American poet 6 332-333
GINSBURG, RUTH BADER (born 1933), second woman appointed to the United States Supreme Court 6 333-336
GINSBURG, ASHER (Ahad Ha-Am; means “one of the people:’” 1856-1927), Jewish intellectual leader 6 336-337
GINSBURG, LOUIS (1873-1953), Lithuanian-American Talmudic scholar 6 337-338
GINSBURG, NATALIA LEVI (1916-1991), Italian novelist, essayist, playwright, and translator 6 338-339
GIOLITTI, GIOVANNI (1842-1928), Italian statesman 6 339-340
GIORGIONE (1477-1510), Italian painter 6 340-341
GIOTTO (circa 1267-1337), Italian painter, architect, and sculptor 6 342-345
GIOVANNI, YOLANDE CORNELIA, JR. (born 1943), African American poet 6 346-347
GIOVANNA DA BOLOGNA (1529-1608), Italian sculptor 6 345-346
GIPP, GEORGE (1895-1920), American football player 9 124-126
GIRARDON, FRANÇOIS (1628-1715), French sculptor 6 348-349
GIRAUDOUX, JEAN (1895-1920), French author, playwright, and diplomat 6 349-350
GITY, SIMON (1741-1818), American frontiersman 6 350
GISCARD D’ESTAING, VALÉRY (born 1926), third president of the French Fifth Republic 6 350-352
GISH, LILLIAN (1896-1993), American actress 20 155-158
GIST, CHRISTOPHER (circa 1706-1759), American frontiersman 6 352-353
GIULIANI, RUDOLPH WILLIAM (born 1944), mayor of New York City 6 353-355
GLACKENS, WILLIAM (1870-1938), American painter 6 355-356
GLADDEN, WASHINGTON (1836-1918), American clergyman 6 356-357
GLADSTONE, WILLIAM Ewart (1809-1898), English statesman 6 357-360
GLASS, PHILIP (born 1937), American composer of minimalist music 6 362-364
GLASS, HANNAH (Hannah Allgood; 1708-1770), English cookbook author 21 166-167
GLEDITSCH, ELLEN (1879-1968), Norwegian chemist 23 124-126
GLENDOWER, OWEN (1359?-1415?), English political theorist and writer 23 1708-1770
GLENN, JOHN HERSCHEL, JR. (born 1921), military test pilot, astronaut, businessman, and United States senator from Ohio 6 365-367
GLIDDEN, JOSEPH (1813-1906), American businessman and inventor 21 167-170
GLIGOROV, KIRO (born 1917), first president of the Republic of Macedonia 6 367-369
GLINKA, MIKHAIL IVANOVICH (1804-1857), Russian composer 6 369-370
GLOUCESTER, DUKE OF (1391-1447), English statesman 6 370-371
GLUBB, SIR JOHN BAGOT (1897-1943), British military officer, and United States ambassador to the United Nations 6 371-372
GLUCK, CHRISTOPH WILIBALD (1714-1787), Austrian composer and opera reformer 6 372-374
GLUCKMAN, MAX (1911-1975), British anthropologist 6 374-375
GLYN, ELINOR (born Elinor Sutherland; 1864-1943), British author and filmmaker 23 126-128
GOBINEAU, COMTE DE (Joseph Arthur Gobineau; 1816-1882), French diplomat 6 375-376
GODARD, JEAN-LUC (born 1930), French actor, film director, and screenwriter 19 126-128
GODDARD, ROBERT HUTCHINGS (1882-1945), American pioneer in rocketry 6 376-377
GÖDEL, KURT (1906-1978), Austrian-American mathematician 6 377-379
GODFREY OF BOUILLON (1100-1106), French lay leader of First Crusade 6 379
GODKIN, EDWIN LAWRENCE (1831-1902), British-born American journalist 6 380
GODOLPHIN, SIDNEY (1st Earl of Godolphin; 1645-1712), English statesman 6 380-381
GODOY Y ÁLVAREZ DE FARA, MANUEL DE (1767-1851), Spanish statesman 6 381-382
GODUNOV, BORIS FEDOROVICH (1515-1605), czar of Russia 6 382-383
GODWIN, WILLIAM (1756-1836), English political theorist and writer 6 383-384
GOEBBELS, JOSEPH PAUL (1897-1945), German politician and Nazi propagandist 6 384-385
GOEPFERT-MAYER, MARIA (1906-1972), American physicist 6 385-387
GOETHALS, GEORGE WASHINGTON (1858-1928), American Army officer and engineer 6 387-388
GOETHE, JOHANN WOLFGANG VON (1749-1832), German poet and writer 6 388-391
GOGOL, NIKOLAI (1809-1852), Russian author 6 391-393
GOH CHOK TONG (born 1941), leader of the People’s Action Party and Singapore’s prime minister 6 393-395
GOIZUETA, ROBERTO (1906-1978), Mexican-American businessman and philanthropist 18 160-162
GÖKALP, MEHMET ZIYA (1875-1924), Turkish publicist and sociologist 6 395-396
GOKHANE, GOPAL KRISHNA (1866-1915), Indian nationalist leader 6 396
GOLD, THOMAS (born 1890), American astronomer and physicist 18 162-164
GOLDBERG, ARTHUR JOSEPH (1908-1990), U.S. secretary of labor, ambassador to the United Nations, and activist justice of the U.S. Supreme Court 6 397-398
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Years</th>
<th>Occupation/Role</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>GOTTWALD, KLEMENT</td>
<td>(1896-1953)</td>
<td>first Communist president of Czechoslovakia (1948-1953)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GOUDIMEL, CLAUDE</td>
<td>(circa 1514-1572)</td>
<td>French composer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GOIJON, JEAN</td>
<td>(circa 1510-1568)</td>
<td>French sculptor</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GOULART, JOÃO</td>
<td>(1918-1976)</td>
<td>Brazilian statesman</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GOULD, GLENN</td>
<td>(1932-1982)</td>
<td>Canadian musician</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GOULD, JAY</td>
<td>(1836-1892)</td>
<td>American financier and railroad builder</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GOULD, STEPHEN JAY</td>
<td>(1941-2002)</td>
<td>American paleontologist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GOUNOD, CHARLES FRANÇOIS</td>
<td>(1818-1893)</td>
<td>French composer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GOURLAY, ROBERT</td>
<td>(1778-1863)</td>
<td>British reformer in Canada</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GOURMONT, REMY DE</td>
<td>(1858-1915)</td>
<td>French author, critic, and essayist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GOWER, JOHN</td>
<td>(circa 1330-1408)</td>
<td>English poet</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GOYA Y LUCIENTES, FRANCISCO DE PAULA JOSÉ DE</td>
<td>(1746-1828)</td>
<td>Spanish painter and printmaker</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GOYEN, JAN VAN</td>
<td>(1596-1656)</td>
<td>Dutch painter</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GRACCHUS, GAULUS SEMPRONIUS</td>
<td>(ca. 154-121 B.C.)</td>
<td>member of a Roman plebeian family referred to as the Gracchi; flourished 3rd-2nd century B.C.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GRACCHUS, TIBERIUS SEMPRONIUS</td>
<td>(ca. 163-133 B.C.)</td>
<td>member of a Roman plebeian family referred to as the Gracchi; flourished 3rd-2nd century B.C.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GRACE, WILLIAM RUSSELL</td>
<td>(1832-1904)</td>
<td>Irish-born American entrepreneur and politician</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GRACIÁN Y MORALES, BALTASAR JERÓNIMO</td>
<td>(1601-1658)</td>
<td>Spanish writer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GRADY, HENRY WOODFIN</td>
<td>(1850-1889)</td>
<td>American editor and orator</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GRAETZ, HEINRICH HIRSCH</td>
<td>(1817-1891)</td>
<td>German historian and biblical exegete</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GRAHAM, KATHARINE MEYER</td>
<td>(1917-2001)</td>
<td>Publisher who managed The Washington Post</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GRAHAM, MARTHA</td>
<td>(1894-1991)</td>
<td>American dancer and choreographer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GRAHAM, OTTO</td>
<td>(born 1921)</td>
<td>American football player and coach</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GRAHAM, SYLVESTER</td>
<td>(1794-1851)</td>
<td>American reformer and temperament minister</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GRAHAM, WILLIAM FRANKLIN, JR.</td>
<td>(&quot;Billy&quot;); born 1918)</td>
<td>American evangelist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GRAMSCI, ANTONIO</td>
<td>(1891-1937)</td>
<td>Italian writer and Communist leader</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GRANADOS, ENRIQUE</td>
<td>(1867-1916)</td>
<td>Spanish composer and pianist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GRANGE, RED</td>
<td>(Harold Edward Grange; 1903-1991)</td>
<td>American football player</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GRANT, CARY</td>
<td>(born Archibald Alexander Leach; 1904-1986)</td>
<td>English actor</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GRANT, ULYSSES SIMPSON</td>
<td>(1822-1885)</td>
<td>American general, president</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GRANVILLE, EVELYN BOYD</td>
<td>(born 1924)</td>
<td>African American mathematician</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GRASS, GÜNTER</td>
<td>(born 1927)</td>
<td>German novelist, playwright, and poet</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GRASSELLI, CESAR AUGUSTIN</td>
<td>(1850-1927)</td>
<td>Third generation to head the Grasselli Chemical Company</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GRATIAN</td>
<td>(died circa 1155)</td>
<td>Italian scholar, father of canon law</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GRATTON, HENRY</td>
<td>(1746-1820)</td>
<td>Irish statesman and orator</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GRAU SAN MARTIN, RAMÓN</td>
<td>(1887-1969)</td>
<td>Cuban statesman and physician</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GRAUNT, JOHN</td>
<td>(1620-1674)</td>
<td>English merchant and civil servant</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GRAVES, EARL GILBERT, JR.</td>
<td>(born 1935)</td>
<td>African American publisher</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GRAVES, MICHAEL</td>
<td>(born 1934)</td>
<td>American Post-Modernist architect</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GRAVES, NANCY STEVENSON</td>
<td>(1940-1995)</td>
<td>American sculptor</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GRAVES, ROBERT RANKE</td>
<td>(1895-1985)</td>
<td>English author</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GRAY, ASA</td>
<td>(1810-1888)</td>
<td>American botanist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GRAY, HANNAH HOLBORN</td>
<td>(born 1930)</td>
<td>University administrator</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GRAY, ROBERT</td>
<td>(1755-1806)</td>
<td>American explorer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GRAY, THOMAS</td>
<td>(1716-1771)</td>
<td>English poet</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GRAY, WILLIAM H., III</td>
<td>(born 1941)</td>
<td>First African American to be elected House Whip for the U.S. House of Representatives</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GRECO, EL</td>
<td>(1541-1614)</td>
<td>Greek-born Spanish painter</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GREELEY, ANDREW M.</td>
<td>(born 1928)</td>
<td>American Catholic priest, sociologist, and author</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GREELEY, HORACE</td>
<td>(1811-1872)</td>
<td>American editor and reformer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GREELEY, ADOLPHUS WASHINGTON</td>
<td>(1844-1935)</td>
<td>American soldier, explorer, and writer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GREEN, CONSTANCE MCLaughlin</td>
<td>(1897-1975)</td>
<td>American author and historian</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GREEN, EDITH STARRETT</td>
<td>(1910-1987)</td>
<td>United States congresswoman from Oregon</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GREEN, THOMAS HILL</td>
<td>(1836-1882)</td>
<td>British philosopher</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GREEN, WILLIAM R.</td>
<td>(1872-1952)</td>
<td>American labor union leader</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GREENAWAY, KATE</td>
<td>(Catherine; 1846-1901)</td>
<td>English author and illustrator</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GREENBERG, CLEMENT</td>
<td>(1909-1994)</td>
<td>American art critic</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GREENE, CATHERINE LITTLEFIELD</td>
<td>(1755-1814)</td>
<td>American inventor</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GREENE, GRAHAM</td>
<td>(born 1904)</td>
<td>English novelist and dramatist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GREENE, GRAHAM</td>
<td>(born ca. 1952)</td>
<td>Canadian-Native American actor</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GREENE, NATHANAEL</td>
<td>(1742-1786)</td>
<td>American Revolutionary War general</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
GREENSPAN, ALAN (born 1926), American economist 6 526-528
GREER, GERMAINE (born 1939), author and authoritative commentator on women's liberation and sexuality 6 528-530
GREGG, JOHN ROBERT (1867-1948), American inventor of system of shorthand writing 21 178-180
GREGG, WILLIAM (1800-1867), American manufacturer 6 530-531
GREGORY I, SAINT (circa 540-604), pope 590-604 6 531-532
GREGORY VII (circa 1073-85) pope 1073-85 6 532-534
GREGORY IX (Ugo [Ugolino] di Segni; 1145-1241), Roman Catholic pope 1145-1241 21 180-183
GREGORY XII (Angelo Corrario; c. 1327-1417), pope 1327-1417 6 169-171
GREGORY XIII (1502-1585), pope 1502-1585 6 534
GREGORY, LADY AUGUSTA (1852-1932), Irish dramatist 6 535-536
GREGORY, DICK (Richard Claxton Gregory; born 1932), comedian and civil rights and world peace activist 6 536-537
GREGORY OF TOURS, SAINT (538-594), Frankish bishop and historian 6 534-535
GRETZKY, WAYNE (born 1961), Canadian hockey star 6 537-539
GREUZE, JEAN BAPTISTE (1725-1805), French painter 6 539
GREY, CHARLES (2nd Earl Grey; 1764-1845), English statesman, prime minister 1764-1845 6 539-540
GREY, SIR GEORGE (1812-1898), English explorer and colonial governor 6 540-541
GREY, ZANE (Pearl Zane Gray; 1872-1939), American author 20 160-162
GRIBEAUVAL, JEAN BAPTISTE VAQUETTE DE (1715-1789), French army officer 20 162-163
GRIEG, EDVARD HAGERUP (1843-1907), Norwegian composer 6 541-542
GRIERSON, JOHN (1898-1972), Canadian and British filmmaker 6 542-543
GRIFFES, CHARLES TOMLINSON (1884-1920), American composer 6 543-544
GRIFTH, DAVID WARK (1875-1948), American film maker 6 544-545
GRIFTH, SIR SAMUEL WALKER (1845-1920), Australian statesman and jurist 6 545-546
GRIFITH, JOYNER, FLORENCE (1959-1998), American athlete 19 130-133
GRILLPARZER, FRANZ (1791-1872), Austrian playwright 6 546-547
GRIMKE, ANGELINA EMILY (1805-1879) and SARAH MOORE (1792-1873), American abolitionists and women’s rights agitators 7 1-2
GRIMKE, ARCHIBALD HENRY (1849-1930), American editor, author, and diplomat 7 1-2
GRIMM, JAKOB KARL (1785-1863) and WILHELM KARL (1786-1859), German scholars, linguists, and authors 7 3-4
GRIMMELSHAUSEN, HANS JAKOB CHRISTOFFEL VON (1621/22-1676), German author 7 4-5
GRIS, JUAN (1887-1927), Spanish painter 7 5-6
GRISHAM, JOHN (born 1955), American author and attorney 7 6-8
GROMYKO, ANDREI ANDREEVICH (1909-1986), Soviet foreign minister 1909-1986 7 9-11
GROOMES, BARON (1786-1859), French artist 6 24-25
GROGUEN, JENNIE (1932-1972), American hotel executive and philanthropist 6 25-26
GROVES, LESLIE (1896-1970), military director of the Manhattan Project 6 27
GROVER, AUGUSTA (1764-1835), British statesman, prime minister 1764-1835 7 17-18
GROZ, GEORGE (1893-1959), German-American painter and graphic artist 7 17-18
GROTIEUS, HUGO (1583-1645), Dutch jurist, statesman, and historian 7 18-19
GROTOWSKI, JERZY (born 1933), founder of the experimental Laboratory Theatre in Wroclaw, Poland 7 19-20
GROVE, ANDREW (András Gróf; born 1936), American businessman 18 171-174
GROVE, FREDERICK PHILIP (circa 1871-1948), Canadian novelist and essayist 7 20-21
GROVES, LESLIE (1896-1970), military director of the Manhattan Project (atom bomb) during World War II 7 21-22
GRÜNWALD, MATTHIAS (circa 1475-1528), German painter 7 23-24
GUARDI, FRANCESCO (1722-1793), Italian painter 7 24-25
GUARINI, GUARINO (1624-1683), Italian architect, priest, and philosopher 7 25-26
GUASTAVINO, RAFAEL (Rafael Guastavino Morano; 1842-1908), Spanish-American architect 23 132-134
GUCCIONE, BOB, JR. (born ca. 1956), American publisher 7 26
GUDEHAN, HEINZ (1888-1953), German military leader 20 163-165
GUÉMES, MARTÍN (1785-1821), Argentine independence fighter 7 26-27
GUERCINO (Giovanni Francesco Barbieri; 1591-1666), Italian painter 7 27
GUERICE, OTTO VON (1602-1686), German physicist 7 27-28
GUERIN, VERONICA (1959-1996), Irish investigative reporter and journalist 18 174-176
GUERRERO, VICENTE (1783-1831), Mexican independence fighter, president 1783-1831 7 28-30
GUEVARA, ERNESTO (“Che”; 1924-1967) Argentine revolutionary and guerrilla theoretician 7 30-31
GUEYE, LAMINE (1891-1968), Senegalese statesman 7 31
GUERRA DE RIVAS, BLANCA (1896-1975), Spanish author and journalist 7 32-33
GUEVARA, ERNESTO (“Che”; 1924-1967) Argentine revolutionary and guerrilla theoretician 7 30-31
GUEYE, LAMINE (1891-1968), Senegalese statesman 7 31
GUIGGHEIM, DANIEL (1856-1930), American industrialist and philanthropist 21 185-187
GUIGGHEIM, MARY (1828-1905), Swiss-born American industrialist 7 31-32
GUICCIARDINI, FRANCESCO (1483-1544), Italian historian and statesman 7 32-33
GUIDO D’AREZZO (c. 950-c. 1050), Italian music theorist 7 33
GUILLAUME DE LORRIS (circa 1210-1237), French poet 7 33-34
GUILLÉN, NICOLÁS (born 1902), Cuban author 7 34-35

GUILLÉN Y ALVAREZ, JORGE (1893-1984), Spanish poet 7 35-36

GUINIZZELLI, GUIDO (1230/40-1276), Italian poet 7 36-37

GUINNESS, ALEC (born 1914), British actor of the stage, films, and television 7 37-38

GUÍRALDÉZ, RICARDO (1886-1927), Argentine poet and novelist 7 38-39

GUISCARD, ROBERT (1016-1085), Italian poet 7 39-40

GUÍSEWITE, CATHY (born 1950), American cartoonist and author 18 176-177

GUNN, THOM (born 1929), English poet 18 177-178

GÜNTHER, IGNAZ (1725-1775), German sculptor 7 41-42

GUSTAVUS I (Gustavus Eriksson; 1496-1560), king of Sweden 1523-1560 7 42-43

GUSTAVUS II (Gustavus Adolphus; 1594-1632), king of Sweden 1611-1632 7 43-45

GUSTAVUS III (1746-1792), king of Sweden 1771-1792 7 45-46

GUSTON, PHILIP (1913-1980), American painter and a key member of the New York School 7 47-48

GUTENBERG, JOHANN (circa 1398-1468), German inventor and printer 7 48-49

GUTHRIE, EDWIN RAY (1886-1959), American psychologist 7 49-50

GUTHRIE, TYRONE (1900-1971), English theater director 7 50-51

GUTHRIE, WOODROW WILSON (“Woody”; 1912-1967), writer and performer of folk songs 7 51-52

GUTIÉRREZ, GUSTAVO (born 1928), Peruvian who was the father of liberation theology 7 52-53

GUY DE CHAULLAC (circa 1295-1368), French surgeon 7 54

H

HABASH, GEORGE (born 1926), founder of the Arab Nationalists’ Movement (1952) and of the Popular Front for the Liberation of Palestine (PFLP; 1967) 7 55-56

HABER, FRITZ (1868-1934), German chemist 7 56-58

HABERMAS, JÜRGEN (born 1929), German philosopher and sociologist 7 58-60

HABIBIE, BACHARUDDIN JUSUF (born 1936), president of Indonesia 19 134-136

HADRIAN (76-138), Roman emperor 117-138 7 60-61

HAECKEL, ERNST HEINRICH PHILIPP AUGUST (1834-1919), German biologist and natural philosopher 7 61-62

HAFIZ, SHAMS AL-DIN (c. 1320-1390), Persian mystical poet and Koranic exegete 7 63

HAGEN, UTA THYRA (born 1919), American actress 18 179-180

HAGEN, WALTER (1892-1969), American golfer 21 188-190

HAGUE, FRANK (1876-1956), American politician 7 63-64

HALL, ASAPH (1858-1936), American astronomer 7 64-65

HAMILTON, THEODORE (1755-1804), American lawyer 7 66-67

HANEMANN, SAMUEL (Christian Friedrich Samuel Hahnemann; 1755-1843), German physician and chemist 21 190-193

HAIDAR ALI (1721/22-1782), Indian prince, ruler of Mysore 1759-1782 7 65-66

HAIG, ALEXANDER M., JR. (1866-1926), British field marshal 7 67-68

HAIG, GEORGE EVERETT (1822-1909), American Unitarian minister and author 7 71-72

HALDANE, JOHN BURDON (1886-1938), British zoologist and natural philosopher 7 72-74

HALLECK, HENRY WAGER (1815-1872), American military strategist 7 85-86

HALLEN, LEWIS, SR. AND JR. (Lewis Sr. ca. 1705-1755; Lewis Jr. 1740-1808), American actors and theatrical managers 7 87

HALLECK, HENRY WAGER (1815-1872), American military strategist 7 85-86

HALLE, EDMUND (1656-1742), English astronomer 7 88-89

HALLE, EDWARD EVERETT (1822-1909), American Unitarian minister and author 7 71-72

HALLE, GEORGE EVERETT (1868-1938), American astronomer 7 72-74

HALLE, SARAH JOSEPHA (née Buell; 1788-1879), American editor 7 74-75

HALÉVY, ÉLIE (1870-1937), French philosopher and historian 7 75

HALEY, ALLEN (1921-1992), African American journalist and author 7 76-78

Haley, AMOS DE WITT (1745-1816), American military leader, diplomat, and Pennsylvania governor 7 80-82

HALIFAX, 1ST EARL OF (Edward Haldane, 1st Earl Haig; 1861-1959), British commander 7 82-83

HALIDE EDIP ADVAR (1884-1964), Turkish woman writer, scholar, and public figure 7 80-82

HALIFAX, THOMAS CHANDLER (1796-1865), Canadian judge and author 7 80

HALL, ASAPH (1829-1907), American astronomer 7 83-84

HALL, DONALD (born 1898), New York City lawyer, essayist, dramatist, critic, and novelist 7 84-85

HALL, EDWARD MARSHALL (1858-1927), British attorney 22 204-205

HALL, GRANVILLE STANLEY (1844-1924), American psychologist and educator 7 85-86

HALL, RADCLIFFE (Marguerite Radclyffe Hall; 1880-1943), British author 20 168-170

HALLAJ, AL-HUSAYN IBN MANSUR AL (857-922), Persian Moslem mystic and martyr 7 86-87

HALLAM, LEWIS, SR. AND JR. (Lewis Sr. ca. 1705-1755; Lewis Jr. 1740-1808), American actors and theatrical managers 7 87

HALLAN, LEWIS, SR. AND JR. (Lewis Sr. ca. 1705-1755; Lewis Jr. 1740-1808), American actors and theatrical managers 7 87

HALLECK, HENRY WAGER (1815-1872), American military strategist 7 85-86

HALL, PALMER (1844-1906), American actor and theatrical manager 7 88-89
HALS, FRANS (1581/85-1666), Dutch painter 7 89-91
HALSEY, WILLIAM FREDERICK (1882-1959), American admiral 7 91-92
HALSTED, WILLIAM STEWART (1852-1922), American surgeon 22 207-209
HAMANN, JOHANN GEORG (1730-1788), German philosopher 7 92
HAMER, FANNIE LOU (born Townsend; 1917-1977), American civil rights activist 7 93-94
HAMICAR BARCA (circa 285-229/228 B.C.), Carthaginian general and statesman 7 94-95
HAMILTON, ALEXANDER (1755-1804), American statesman 7 95-98
HAMILTON, ALICE (1869-1970), American physician 7 98-99
HAMILTON, EDITH (1867-1963), American educator and author 22 209-211
HAMILTON, SIR WILLIAM ROWAN (1805-1865), Irish mathematical physicist 7 99-100
HAMMARSJÖLD, DAG (1905-1961), Swedish diplomat 7 100-101
HAMM-BRÜCHER, HILDEGARD (born 1921), Free Democratic Party’s candidate for the German presidency in 1994 7 101-103
HAMMER, ARMAND (1898-1990), American entrepreneur and art collector 7 103-104
HAMMERSTEIN, OSCAR CLENDENNING II (1895-1960), lyricist and librettist of the American theater 7 104-106
HAMMETT, (SAMUEL) DASHIELL (1894-1961), American author 7 106-108
HAMMOND, JAMES HENRY (1807-1864), American statesman 7 108-109
HAMMOND, JOHN LAWRENCE LE BRETON (1872-1952), English historian 7 108-109
HAMMOND, LUCY BARBARA (1873-1961), English historian 7 109
HAMMURABI (1792-1750 B.C.), king of Babylonia 7 109-110
HAMPDEN, JOHN (1594-1643), English statesman 7 110-111
HAMPION, LIONEL (1908-2002), African American jazz musician 22 211-213
HAMPION, WADE (circa 1751-1835), American planter 7 111-112
HAMPION, WADE III (1818-1902), American statesman and Confederate general 7 112
Hampton Institute (Virginia) Johnston, Frances Benjamin 23 174-177
Hampton Normal and Industrial Institution see Hampton Institute
HAMSUN, KNUT (1859-1952), Norwegian novelist 7 113-114
HAN FEI TZU (circa 280-233 B.C.), Chinese statesman and philosopher 7 124-125
HAN WU-TI (157-87 B.C.), Chinese emperor 7 136
HAN YU (768-824), Chinese author 7 136-137
HANAFI, HASSAN (born 1935), Egyptian philosopher 7 114
HANCOCK, JOHN (1737-1793), American statesman 7 114-116
HAND, BILLINGS LEARNED (1872-1961), American jurist 7 116
HANDEL, GEORGE FREDERICK (1685-1759), German-born English composer and organist 7 116-119
HANDKE, PETER (born 1942), Austrian playwright, novelist, screenwriter, essayist, and poet 7 119-121
HANDELIN, OSCAR (born 1915), American historian 7 121-122
HANDSOME LAKE (a.k.a. Hadawa’ Ko; ca. 1735-1815), Seneca spiritual leader 7 122-123
HANDY, WILLIAM CHRISTOPHER (1873-1958), African American songwriter 7 123-124
HANKS, NANCY (1927-1983), called the “mother of a million artists” for her work in building federal financial support for the arts and artists 7 126-127
HANKS, TOM (Thomas Jeffrey Hanks; born 1956), American actor 23 135-137
HANNA, MARCUS ALONZO (1837-1904), American businessman and politician 7 127-128
HANNIBAL BARCA (247-183 B.C.), Carthaginian general 7 128-130
Hanover dynasty (Great Britain) see Great Britain—1714-1901 (Hanover)
HANSBERRY, LORRAINE VIVIAN (1930-1965), American writer and a major figure on American theater 7 130-131
HANSEN, ALVIN (1887-1975), American economist 7 131-132
HANSEN, JULIA BUTLER (1907-1988), American politician 7 132-133
HANSON, DUANE (1925-1990), American superrealist sculptor 7 133-135
HANSON, HOWARD (1896-1981), American composer and educator 7 135-136
HAPGOOD, NORMAN (1868-1937), American author and editor 7 137-138
HARA, KEI (1856-1921), Japanese statesman and prime minister 1918-1921 7 138
HARAND, IRENE (born Irene Wedel; 1900-1975), Austrian political and human rights activist 7 139-145
HARAWI, ILYAS AL- (Elias Harawi; born 1930), president of Lebanon 7 145-146
HARDBERG, PRINCE KARL AUGUST VON (1750-1822), Prussian statesman 7 146-147
HARDIE, JAMES KEIR (1856-1915), Scottish politician 7 147-148
HARDING, WARREN GAMALIEL (1865-1923), American statesman, president 1921-1923 7 148-149
HARDY, HARRIET (1905-1993), American pathologist 7 150
HARDY, THOMAS (1840-1928), English novelist, poet, and dramatist 7 150-152
HARE, ROBERT (1781-1858), American chemist 7 152-153
HARGRAVES, EDWARD HAMMOND (1816-1891), Australian publicist 7 153-154
HARING, KEITH (1958-1990), American artist tied to New York graffiti art of the 1980s 7 154-155
HARINGTON, JOHN (1560-1612), English author and courtier 21 193-195
HARJO, SUZAN SHOWN (born 1945), Native American activist 18 183-185
HARKNESS, GEORGIA (1891-1974), American Methodist and ecumenical theologian 7 155-156
HARLAN, JOHN MARSHALL (1833-1911), American jurist 7 156-157
HARLAN, JOHN MARSHALL (1899-1971), U.S. Supreme Court justice 7 157-159
Harlem renaissance (American literature) Hunter, Alberta 23 160-162
Toomer, Jean 23 408-410
HARLEY, ROBERT (1st Earl of Oxford and Earl Mortimer; 1661-1724), English statesman
HARNACK, ADOLF VON (1851-1930), German theologian
HARNETT, WILLIAM MICHAEL (1848-1892), American painter
HAROLD I (circa 840-933), king of Norway 860-930
HAROLD II (Harold Godwinson; died 1066), Anglo-Saxon king of England of 1066
HAROLD III (1015-1066), king of Norway 1047-1066
HARPER, FRANCES (Frances Ellen Watkins Harper; 1825-1911), African American abolitionist and women’s rights activist
HARRIMAN, W. AVERELL (1876-1969), American industrialist, financier, and diplomat
HARRINGTON, MICHAEL (1891-1986), American theologian
HARRIS, ROY (1898-1979), American composer
HARRIS, TOWNSEND (1804-1878), American merchant and diplomat
HARRIS, WILLIAM TORREY (1835-1909), American educator and philosopher
HARRISON, BENJAMIN (1833-1901), American statesman, president 1889-1893
HARRISON, PETER (1716-1775), American architect and merchant
HARRISON, WILLIAM HENRY (1773-1841), American statesman, president 1841
HARSHA (Harshavardhana; circa 590-647), king of Northern India 606-612
HART, GARY W. (born 1936), American political campaign organizer, U.S. senator, and presidential candidate
HART, HERBERT LIONEL ADOLPHUS (1907-1992), British legal philosopher
HARTE, FRANCIS BRETT (1837-1902), American poet and fiction writer
HARTE, FRANCIS BRETT (1805-1877), British physician and philosopher
HARTLEY, MARSDEN (1877-1943), American painter
HARTSHORNE, CHARLES (born 1897), American theologian
HARUN AL-RASHID (766-809), Abbasid caliph of Baghdad 786-809
HARUNOBU, SUZUKI (ca. 1725-1770), Japanese painter and printmaker
HARVARD, JOHN (1607-1638), English philanthropist
Harvard College
Harvard University (Cambridge, Massachusetts)
HARVEY, WILLIAM (1578-1657), English physician
HASAN, IBN AL-HAYTHAM (ca. 966-1039), Arab physicist, astronomer, and mathematician
HASKINS, CHARLES HOMER (1870-1937), American historian
HASSAM, FREDERICK CHILDE (1859-1935), American impressionist painter
HASSAN, MOULEY (King Hassan II; 1929-1999), inherited the throne of Morocco in 1961
HASSAN, MUHAMMAD ABDILLE (1864-1920), Somali politico-religious leader and poet
HASTINGS, PATRICK GARDINER (1880-1952), British lawyer and politician
HASTINGS, WARREN (1732-1818), English statesman
HATCH, WILLIAM HENRY (1833-1896), American reformer and politician
HAUSSMANN, BARON GEORGES (1809-1891), French prefect of the Seine
HAVEMEYER, HENRY OSBORNE (1847-1907), American businessman
HAWEL, VACLAV (born 1936), playwright and human rights activist who became the president of Czechoslovakia
HAYEMEYER, HENRY OSBORNE (1847-1907), American businessman
HAWES, HARRIET ANNE BOYD (1871-1945), American archeologist
HAWKE, ROBERT JAMES LEE (born 1929), Australian Labor prime minister
HAWKING, STEPHEN WILLIAM (born 1942), British physicist and mathematician
HAWKSMOOR, NICHOLAS (1592-1661), English architect
HAWKS, HOWARD WINCHESTER (1886-1977), American film director
HAWKSMOOR, NICHOLAS (1661-1736), English architect
HAWKSMOOR, NICHOLAS (1592-1661), English architect
HERZOG, CHAIM (1918-1997), president of the State of Israel 7 354-355

HERZOG, ROMAN (born 1934), president of the German Federal Constitutional Court (1987-1994) and president of Germany 7 355-357

HESBURGH, THEODORE MARTIN (born 1917), activist American Catholic priest who was president of Notre Dame (1952-1987) 7 357-358

HESCHEL, ABRAHAM JOSHUA (1907-1972), Polish-American Jewish theologian 7 358-359

HESELTINE, MICHAEL (born 1933), British Conservative politician 7 359-361

HESIOD (flourished circa 700 B.C.), Greek poet 7 361-362

HESSE, HERMANN (1877-1962), German novelist 7 367-369

HESSE, EVA (1881-1973), Norwegian explorer, anthropologist 7 370-372

HESSE, MARY B. (born 1924), American folk painter 7 375-377

HIDAYAT, SADIQ (1903-1951), Persian author 7 377-378

HIGGINS, MARGUERITE (1920-1966), American journalist 7 378-380

HIGGINSON, THOMAS WENTWORTH (1823-1911), American reformer and editor 7 380-381

HILDEBRANDT, JOHANN LUCAS VON (1663-1745), Austrian architect 7 380-381

HILDRETH, RICHARD (1807-1865), American historian and political theorist 7 382

HILFIGER, TOMMY (born 1952), American fashion designer 19 144-146

HILL, ANITA (born 1956), African American lawyer and professor 7 382-383

HILL, ARCHIBALD VIVIAN (1886-1977), English physiologist 7 385-386

HILL, BENJAMIN HARVEY (1823-1882), American politician 7 386-387

HILL, HERBERT (born 1924), American scholar and civil rights activist 7 387-388

HILL, JAMES JEROME (1838-1916), American railroad builder 7 388-389

HILL, ROWLAND (1795-1879), British educator, postal reformer, and administrator 21 202-204

HILLARY, ED MUND (born 1919), New Zealander explorer and mountaineer 7 389-390

HILLER, FRANZ (1906-1982), German comic book artist 7 390-391

HILLIGER, NICHOLAS (circa 1547-1619), English painter 7 391-392

HILLMAN, SIDNEY (1887-1946), Lithuanian-born American labor leader 7 392-393

HILLQUIT, MORRIS (1869-1933), Russian-born American lawyer and author 7 393-394

HILLS, CARLA ANDERSON (born 1934), Republican who served three presidents as lawyer, cabinet member, and U.S. trade representative 7 394-396

HILTON, BARRON (William Barron Hilton; born 1927), American businessman 19 146-148

HILTON, CONRAD (1887-1979), American hotelier 20 178-180

HIM, ANOTHER (1903-1945), Polish-American Jewish theologian 7 397-399

HIMMER, HEINRICH (1900-1945), German Nazi leader 7 398-399

HINDEMITH, PAUL (1895-1963), German composer 7 399-400

HINDENBACH, PAUL LUDWIG HANS VON BENECKENDORFF UND VON (1847-1934), German field marshal, president 1925-1934 7 400-401

HINES, GREGORY OLIVER (born 1946), American dancer and actor 7 401-403

HINOJOSA, ROLANDO (born 1929), Hispanic-American author 7 403-405

HINSHIELD, SIR CYRIL NORMAN (1897-1967), English chemist 7 405-406

HINTON, SUSAN ELOISE (born 1950), American novelist and screenwriter 7 406-407

HIPPARCHUS (flourished circa 162-166 B.C.), Greek astronomer 7 407-408

HIPPOCRATES (circa 460-circa 377 B.C.), Greek physiologist 7 408-410

HIROSHIGE, ANDO (1797-1858), Japanese painter and printmaker 7 412-413

Hirosima, Mon Amour (film) Resnais, Alain 23 333-335

HISS, ALGER (1904-1996), U.S. State Department official convicted of having provided classified documents to an admitted Communist 7 413-415

HITCHCOCK, ALFRED (1899-1980), English-born film director 7 415-416

HITCHCOCK, GILBERT MONELL (1859-1934), American publisher and politician 7 416-417

HITLER, ADOLF (1889-1945), German dictator, chancellor-president 1933-1945 7 417-420

HO, DAVID DA-I (born 1952), American AIDS researcher 23 145-148

HO CHI MINH (1890-1969), Vietnamese revolutionary and statesman 7 426-428

HOBART, JOHN HENRY (1775-1830), American Episcopal bishop 7 420-421

HOBBS, THOMAS (1588-1679), English philosopher and political theorist 7 421-423

HOBBY, OVETA CULP (1905-1995), American government official and businesswoman 7 423-425
HUYSMANS, JORIS KARL (1848-1907), French novelist 881-82

HYDE, DOUGLAS (1860-1949), Irish author, president 1938-45 22252-254

HYDE, IDA HENRIETTA (1888-1969), American zoologist 883-84

HYPATIA OF ALEXANDRIA (370-415), Greek mathematician and philosopher 885

Hyundai Group
Chung, Ju Yung 2372-74

IAACOCCA, LIDO (LEE) ANTHONY (born 1924), American automobile magnate 886-88

IBÁÑEZ DEL CAMPO, CARLOS (1877-1960), Chilean general and president 888

IBARRURI GO´MEZ, DOLORES (1895-1989), voice of the Republican cause 1989, president of the National Organization for Women (NOW) 134-135

IBN AL-ARABI, MUHYI AL-DIN (1100-1165?), Arab theologian and jurist 890-91

IBN BATTUTA, MUHAMMAD (1348-1381), Arab traveler and author 891-92

IBN GABIROL, SOLOMON BEN JUDAH (circa 1021-circa 1058), Spanish Hebrew poet and philosopher 892

IBN HAZM, ABU MUHAMMAD ALI (994-1064), Spanish-born Arab theologian and jurist 893

IBN KHALDUN, ABD AL-RAHMAN IBN MUHAMMAD (1332-1406), Arab historian, philosopher, and statesman 893-94

IBN SAUD, ABD AL-AZIZ (1880-1953), Arab politician, founder of Saudi Arabia 894-95

IBN TUMART, MUHAMMAD (circa 1080-1130), North African Islamic theologian 896-97

IBRAHIM PASHA (1789-1848), Turkish military and administrative leader 897-98

IBSEN, HENRIK (1828-1906), Norwegian playwright 898-100

ICKES, HAROLD LECLAIRE (1874-1952), American statesman 8100-101

ICTINUS (flourished 2nd half of 5th century B.C.), Greek architect 8101

IDRIS I (1889-1983), king of Libya 1950-698102

IDRISI, MUHAMMAD IBN MUHAMMAD AL- (1100-1165?), Arab geographer 8102-103

IGLESIAS, ENRIQUE V. (born 1930), Uruguayan economist, banker, and public official 8106-107

IGNATIUS OF ANTIOCH, SAINT (died circa 115), Early Christian bishop and theologian 8107-108

IGNATIUS OF LOYOLA, SAINT (1491-1556), Spanish soldier, founder of the Jesuits 8108-109

IKEDA, DAISAKU (born 1928), Japanese Buddhist writer and religious leader 8109-110

IKHNATON (ruled 1379-1362 B.C.), pharaoh of Egypt 8110-111

ILIESCU, ION (born 1930), president of Romania (1990-) 8111-112

ILITCH, MIKE (born 1930), president of the Industrial Workers of the World (establishe 1905) 8127-129

INCHUKI, TSUYOSHI (1855-1932), Japanese journalist and statesman 8130-131

INIESCO, EUGÈNE (1912-1994), Franco-Romanian author 8131-132

IQBAL, MUHAMMAD (1877-1938), Indian Moslem poet and philosopher 8132-133

IRELAND, JOHN (1838-1918), American Catholic archbishop 8133-134

IRELAND, PATRICIA (born 1945), president of the National Organization for Women (NOW) 8134-135

IRENE OF ATHENS (ca. 752-803), Byzantine empress 797-802 8135-138

IRIGOYEN, HIPÓLITO (circa 1850-1933), Argentine statesman, twice president 8139-140

Irish literature
ghost stories
Le Fanu, Joseph Sheridan 23206-208
IRONS, Ralph
see Schreiner, Olive

IRVING, JOHN WINSLOW (John Wallace Blunt Jr.; born 1942), American author 22 257-259

IRVING, KENNETH COLIN ("K. C."); 1899-1992), Canadian industrialist, the "Paul Bunyan of New Brunswick" 8 140-141

IRVING, WASHINGTON (1783-1859), American author and journalist 8 141-143

IRWIN, JAMES BENSON (1930-1991), American astronaut 22 259-261

ISAAC, HEINRICH (circa 1450-1517), Flemish composer 8 143-144

ISAACS, JORGE (1837-1895), Colombian novelist 8 144

ISABELLA I (1451-1504), queen of Castile 1474-1504 8 144-145

ISABELLA II (1830-1904), queen of Spain 1833-1868 8 145-146

ISAIAH (flourished circa 740-701 B.C.), Hebrew prophet 8 146-147

ISHERWOOD, CHRISTOPHER (1904-1983), American author, poet, and playwright 8 147-149

ITAMI, JUZO (Ichizo Itami; Ichizo Atami; born Ikeuchi Yoshihiro; 1933-1997), Japanese film director, actor and author 22 263-265

ITO, HIROBUMI (1841-1909), Japanese statesman 8 153-155

ITURBIDE, AGUSTÍN DE (1783-1824), Mexican military leader 8 155-156

IVAN III (1440-1505), grand duke of Moscow 1462-1505 8 156-157

IVAN IV (1530-1584), grand duke of Moscow, czar of Russia 1547-1584 8 157-159

IVES, CHARLES EDWARD (1874-1954), American composer 8 159-160

IVORY, JAMES (born 1928), American film director and producer 20 186-188

IWAKURA, TOMOMI (1825-1883), Japanese statesman 8 160-161

IWW see Industrial Workers of the World

IZETbegovic, Alija (born 1926), president of the eight-member presidency of the Republic of Bosnia-Herzegovina 8 161-163

J

JA JA OF OPOBO (ca. 1820-1891), Nigerian politician 8 201-204

JABBAR, KAREEM ABDUL (Ferdinand Lewis Alcindor, Junior; born 1947), American basketball player 8 164-165

JABER AL-SABAH, JABER AL-AHMAD AL- (born 1929), South African politician 8 166-167

JABIR IBN HAYYAN (flourished circa 740-701 B.C.), Arab scholar and alchemist 8 167

JABOTINSKY, VLADIMIR EVGENIEVICH (1880-1940), Russian Zionist 8 167-168

JACKSON, ANDREW (1767-1845), American president 1829-1837 8 168-172

JACKSON, HELEN HUNT (1830-1885), American novelist 8 172

JACKSON, HENRY MARTIN (Scoop; born 1929), South African author 22 266-268

JACOBSEN, JENS PETER (1847-1885), Danish author 8 193-194

JACOBS, JACOB (1892-1954), American jurist 8 189-190

JACOBS, JACOB, (born 1929), South African author 22 266-268

JACOPONE DA Todi (circa 1236-1306), Italian poet and mystic 8 194

JACQUARD, JOSEPH MARIE (1752-1834), French inventor 21 216-218

JAGGER, MICHAEL PHILIP ("Mick"; born 1944), lead singer for the Rolling Stones 8 194-196

JAHANGIR (1556-1627), fourth Mughal emperor of India 8 196-199

JAHN, HELMUT (1959-2004), German politician 8 199-201

JAMES III (1394-1437), king of Scotland 1406-1437 8 206-207

JAMES IV (1463-1513), king of Scotland 1514-1513 8 207-208

JAMES III (1451-1488), king of Scotland 1460-1488 8 208-209

JAMES, DANIEL, JR. ("Chappie"); 1920-1978), first African American man in the U.S. to become a four star general 8 209-211

JAMES, JESSE LOUIS (born 1941), American author and journalist 8 211-212

JAMES, JESSE WOODSON (1847-1882), American outlaw 8 212-213
JAMES, P. D. (born 1920), British crime novelist 8 213-215

JAMES, WILLIAM (1842-1910), American philosopher and psychologist 8 215-217

JAMESON, SIR LEANDER STARR (1853-1917), British colonial administrator 8 218

JAMI (Maulana Nur al-Din Abd al-Rahman; 1414-1492), Persian poet 8 218-219

JANÁČEK, LEOŠ (1854-1928), Czech composer 8 219

Mackerras, Alan Charles 23 237-239

JANET, PIERRE MARIE FÉLIX (1859-1947), French psychologist 8 220

JANSEN, CORNELIS (1854-1928), Dutch naturalist 8 220-221

JAPANESE ARCHITECTURE
Maekawa, Kunio 23 239-242

JAPANESE ART
Maruyama school
Okyo, Maruyama 23 272-274

naturalists
Okyo, Maruyama 23 272-274

JAQUES-DALCROZE, EMILE (1865-1950), Swiss teacher and composer who developed eurhythmics 8 221-222

JARELL, RANDALL (1914-1965), American poet and critic 8 222-223

JARUZELSKI, WOJCIECH WITOLD (1923), career soldier who became Poland’s head of state (1981-1990) 8 223-225

JASPERS, KARL (1883-1969), German philosopher 8 225-226

JAUÈRS, JEAN (1859-1914), French Socialist and politician 8 226-227

JAWARA, SIR DAUDA KAIRABA (born 1924), Gambian statesman 8 227-228

JAWLENSKY, ALEXEJ VON (1864-1941), Russian Expressionist painter 8 228-229

JAWORSKI, LEON (1905-1982), American lawyer and independent prosecutor of Watergate 8 229-230

JAY, JOHN (1745-1829), American diplomat and jurist 8 230-232

JAY, WILLIAM (1789-1858), American reformer 8 232-233

JAYEWARDENE, JUNIUS RICHARD (JR; 1906-1996), leader of the nationalist movement in Ceylon and president of Sri Lanka 8 233-234

JAZZ (music)
Armstrong, Lillian Hardin 23 15-17

Bailey, Mildred 23 28-30

Peterson, Oscar Emanuel 23 304-306

Williams, Mary Lou 23 444-446

JEAN DE MEUL (circa 1240-1305), French author 8 234-235

JEANS, SIR JAMES HOPWOOD (1887-1946), English mathematician, physicist, and astronomer 8 235-236

JEFFERS, JOHN ROBINSON (1887-1962), American poet 8 236-237

JEFFERSON, JOSEPH (1829-1905), American actor 8 237

JEFFERSON, THOMAS (1743-1826), American philosopher and statesman, president 1801-1809 8 238-241

JEFFREYS, SIR HAROLD (1854-1928), English mathematician, astronomer, and philosopher 8 241-242

JELLINEK, JOHN RUSHWORTH (1859-1935), English admiral 8 242-243

JEMISON, MAE C. (born 1956), African American physician and astronaut 8 243-244

JENKINS, ROY HARRIS (born 1920), British Labour politician and author 8 244-245

JENNER, BRUCE (born 1949), American track and field athlete and motivational speaker 21 218-221

JENNER, EDWARD (1749-1823), English physician 8 245-246

JENNEY, WILLIAM LE BARON (1832-1907), American architect and engineer 21 221-223

JENNINGS, ROBERT YEWDALL (born 1913), British judge who was president of the International Court of Justice 8 246-247

JEREMIAH (flourished late 7th-early 6th century B.C.), Hebrew priest and prophet 8 247-248

JEROBOAM I (ruled circa 931-circa 910 B.C.), king of the northern kingdom of Israel 8 248-249

JEROME, ST. (circa 345-420), Early Christian biblical scholar 8 249

JESSE, GEORGE (1898-1981), American screen, stage, radio, and television actor and comedian and film director, composer, and screenwriter 8 249-251

JESUS BEN SIRA (Sirach; flourished circa 170 B.C.), Jewish sage and author 8 251

JESUS OF NAZARETH (circa 4 B.C. - 29/30 A.D.), founder of the Christian faith 8 251-255

JEVONS, WILLIAM STANLEY (1835-1882), English economist, logician, and statistician 8 255-256

JEWETT, SARAH ORNE (1849-1909), American novelist 8 256

JEX-BLAKE, SOPHIA (1840-1912), British physician and women’s rights advocate 8 256-260

JHABVALA, RUTH PRAWER (born 1927), English screenwriter and novelist 8 260-261

Jiang Qing (Madame Mao Zedong; 1914-1991), Chinese revolutionary and leader of the Great Proletarian Cultural Revolution 8 256-260

Jiang Zemin (born 1927), general secretary of the Chinese Communist Party Central Committee 8 260-261

JIMÉNEZ, JUAN RAMÓN (1881-1958), Spanish symbolist poet 8 261-262

JIMÉNEZ DE QUESADA, GONZALO (1509-1579), Spanish conquistador 8 509-510

JINNAH, MOHAMMAD ALI (1876-1948), Pakistani governor general 1947-1948 8 262-263

JOACHIM OF FIORE (circa 1132-1202), Italian mystic 8 263-264

JOAN OF ARC (1412-1431), French national heroine 8 264-265

JOBS, STEVEN (born 1955), American computer designer and co-founder of Apple Computers 8 265-267

JODL, ALFRED (1892-1946), German general 18 210-212

JOFFRE, JOSEPH JACQUES CÉSaire (1852-1931), French marshal 8 267-268

JOFFREY, ROBERT (born Abdullah Jaffa Anver Bey Khan; 1930-1988), American dancer and choreographer 8 268-270

JOGUES, ST. ISAAC (1607-1646), French Jesuit missionary and martyr 8 270-271

JOHANAN BEN ZAKKAI (flourished circa 70 A.D.), Jewish teacher 8 271-272

JOHANNES IV (1836-1889), Ethiopian emperor 1872-1889 8 272-273

JOHN II (1319-1364), king of France 1350-1364 8 273-276

JOHN II (1455-1495), king of Portugal 1481-1495 21 223-225

JOHN III (John Sobieski; 1629-1696), king of Poland 8 276-277
Jones, John Paul (John Baldwin; born 1946), British musician
Led Zeppelin 23 216-218

JONES, LOIS MAILOU (1905-1998), African American artist 20 194-196

JONES, MARY HARRIS (“Mother”; 1830-1930), Irish immigrant who devoted her life to improving conditions of the working class 8 338-339

JONES, QUINCY DELIGHT, JR. (born 1936-1954), African American designer of scenes for the theater 8 342-343

JONES, ROBERT EDMOND (1887-1954), American designer of scenes for the theater 8 341-342

JONES, ROBERT TYRE (Bobby; 1902-1971), American golf great 8 342

JONES, SAMUEL MILTON (1846-1904), American lawyer and political reformer 8 342-343

JONG, ERICA (born 1942), American author 18 216-219

JONSON, BEN (1572-1637), English playwright and poet 8 343-345

JOPLIN, SCOTT (1868-1917), African American composer and instrumental musician 8 345-347

JORDAENS, JACOB (1593-1678), Flemish painter 8 347-349

JORDAN, BARBARA CHARLINE (1936-1996), attorney and U.S. congresswoman from Texas 8 349-350

JORDAN, DAVID STARR (1851-1931), American scientist and educator 8 350-351

JORDAN, JUNE (1936-2002), Jamaican American poet and activist 8 351-353

JORDAN, LOUIS (1908-1975), African American bandleader, singer, and instrumentalist 8 353-355

JORDAN, MICHAEL (born 1963), African American basketball superstar of the Chicago Bulls 8 355-357

JORDAN, VERNON (1936-2002), Jamaican American poet and activist 8 351-353

JOSEPH (circa 1840-1904), American Nez Perce Indian chief 8 358-359

JOSEPH II (1741-1790), Holy Roman emperor 1765-1790 8 359-360

JOSEPHUS FLAVIUS (circa 37-100), Jewish historian, diplomat, and military leader 8 360-361

JOSEPHUS OF EREITUS (circa 140-1521), Franco-Flemish composer 8 361-363

JOULE, JAMES PRESCOTT (1818-1889), English physicist 8 363-364

JOURNALISTS

Argentine

Arlt, Roberto 23 11-13
Valenzuela, Luisa 23 421-423

JOWETT, BENJAMIN (1817-1893), English educator and Greek scholar 8 364-365

JOYCE, JAMES (1882-1941), Irish author 8 365-367

JOYNER, MALIDA SISSIERETTA (Sissieretta Jones; 1869-1933), African American singer 23 179-181

JOYNER-KERSEE, JACKIE (born 1962), American track and field athlete 19 170-173

JUAN CARLOS I (born 1938), king of Spain 8 368-369

JUANA INÉS DE LA CRUZ, SISTER (Julia y Arcelay, Raul; 1788-1850), Spanish Hebraic poet 8 370-372

JUÁREZ, BENITO (1806-1872), Mexican statesman, president 1857-1872 8 369-372

JUDAEUS, PHILO (circa 20 B.C. - circa 60 A.D.), Hellenistic Jewish philosopher 12 282-283

JUDAH, THEODORE DEHONE (1826-1863), American engineer and railroad promoter 8 373-374

JUDAH HALEVI (circa 1085-circa 1150), Spanish Hebrew poet 8 373

JUDAS MACCABEUS (died 160 B.C.), Jewish patriot and revolutionary 8 374-375

JUDEAN, ADONIRAM (1778-1850), American Baptist missionary in Burma 8 377-378

JULIAN, PERCY LAVON (1899-1975), African American chemist and civil rights activist 18 219-221

JULIAN OF NORWICH (1342-after 1416), English mystic 8 381

JULIANA (born 1909), queen of the Netherlands (1948-1980) 8 379-380

JULIUS OF ROME, THE (Julia Domna, ca. 169-ca. 217; Julia Maesa, ca. 164-225; Julia Soamias, died 222; and Julia Mamaea, died 234), empresses of the so-called Severan Dynasty of Rome 8 381-384

JULIUS II (Giuliano della Rovere; 1443-1513), pope 1503-1513 8 384-386

JUMBLATT, KAMAL (1917-1977), Lebanese ideologue and Druze leader 8 386-387

JUNAYD, ABU AL-QASIM IBN MUHAMMAD AL (circa 830-910), Islamic mystic 8 388

JUNG, CARL GUSTAV (1875-1961), Swiss psychologist and psychiatrist 8 388-389

JUNG, LEO (1892-1987), American Orthodox Jewish Rabbi 8 390-391

JÜNGER, ERNST (1895-1998), German author 8 391-392

Jurists

English
Romilly, Samuel 23 348-351
Scottish
Murray, William 23 256-258

Jurists, American
- JUDGES
  - county courts
    - Sampson, Edith 23 356-358
  - state courts
    - Stout, Juanita Kidd 23 382-384
- LAWYERS
  - 19th century
    - Landgell, Christopher Columbus 23 204-206

JUST, ERNEST (1883-1941), American marine biologist 8 392-393

JUSTIN MARTYR, (circa 100-circa 165), Early Christian apologist 8 395-396

JUSTINIAN I (circa 482-565), Byzantine emperor 527-565 8 393-395

and the Catholic church
Viglius 23 427-429

JUSTO, AGUSTIN PEDRO (1876-1943), Argentine general, president 1932-1938 8 396

JUVARA, FILIPPO (1678-1736), Italian architect and designer 8 396-397

JUVENAL (Decimus Junius Juvenalis; died after 127), Roman satirist 8 397-399
Juvenile literature
see Literature for children

K

KABAKOV, ILYA (born 1933), Russian artist 23 182-184

KABALEVSKY, DMITRI (1904-1987), Soviet composer, pianist, and conductor 8 400-401

KABILA, LAURENT (born 1939), Congolese revolutionary and president 18 222-224

KADALIE, CLEMENTS (circa 1896-1951), statesman 1883-1924, Czech-born

KAHN, ALBERT (1869-1942), American statesman 1889-1922, American

KAHN, LOUIS I. (1901-1974), American architect 8 407-408


KAISER, GEORG (1878-1945), German playwright 8 411-412

KAISER, HENRY JOHN (1882-1967), American industrialist 8 412-413

KALAKAUA, DAVID (1836-1891), king of Hawaiian Islands 1874-1891 8 413-414

KALIDASA (flourished 4th-5th century), Indian poet and dramatist 8 414-415

KALMUS, NATALIE (Natalie Mabelle Dunfee; 1883?-1965), American inventor and cinematographer 21 233-235

KAMARAJ, KUMARASWAMI (1903-1975), Indian political leader 8 415

KAMEHAMEHA I (circa 1758-1819), king of the Hawaiian Islands 1795-1819 8 416

KAMEHAMEHA III (circa 1814-1854), king of the Hawaiian Islands 1825-1854 8 416-417

KAMENEV, LEV BORISOVICH (1883-1936), Russian politician 8 417-418

KAMERLINGH ONNES, HEIKE (1853-1926), Dutch physicist 8 418-420

KAMMU (737-806), Japanese emperor 781-806 8 420

KANDER, JOHN (born 1927), American composer and lyricist 21 235-237

KANDINSKY, WASSILY (1866-1944), Russian painter 8 420-422

KANE, JOHN (1860-1934), Scottish-born American primitive painter 8 422

KANE, PAUL (1810-1871), Canadian painter and writer 8 422-423

K'ANG YU-WEI (1894), Soviet physicist 8 433-435

KAPLAN, MORDECAI MENAHEM (1881-1983), American Jewish theologian and educator 8 435-436

KAPP, WOLFGANG (1858-1922), German nationalist politician 8 436

KAPTEYN, JACOBUS CORNELIS (1851-1922), Dutch astronomer 8 436-437

KARADZIC, RADOVAN (born 1945), leader of the Serbian Republic 8 437-440

KARAMANLIS, CONSTANTINE (1907-1998), Greek member of parliament, prime minister (1955-1963; 1974-1980), and president (1980-1985) 8 440-441

KARAMZIN, NIKOLAI MIKHAILOVICH (1724-1804), Russian statesman and author 8 441-442

KARAN, DONNA (born 1948), American fashion designer and businesswoman 8 442-444

KARENKA, MAULANA (born Ronald McKinley Everett; born 1941), African American author, educator, and proponent of black culturalism 8 444-447

KARIM KHAN ZAND (circa 1814-1854), Iranian ruler, founder of Zand dynasty 8 447

KARLE, ISABELLA (born 1921), American chemist and physicist 8 447-449

KARLSTADT, ANDREAS BODENHEIM VON (circa 1480-1541), German Protestant reformer 8 449


KARMAN, THEODORE VON (1881-1963), Hungarian-born American physicist 8 451-452

KARSH, YOUSUF (1908-2002), Canadian photographer 23 184-187

KARUME, SHEIKH ABEID AMANI (1905-1972), Tanzanian political leader 8 452-453

KASAVUBU, JOSEPH (circa 1913-1969), Congolese statesman 8 453-455

KASSEBAUM, NANCY (born 1932), Republican senator from Kansas 8 455-457

KASTRIOTI-SKANDERBEG, GJERGI (1405-1468), Albanian military leader 23 187-189

KATAYAMA, SEN (1860-1933), Japanese labor and Socialist leader 8 457

KAUFMAN, GEORGE S. (1889-1961), American playwright 8 457-458

KAUFMAN, GERALD BERNARD (born 1930), foreign policy spokesman of the British Labour Party 8 458-460

KAUFMANN, EZEKIEL (1889-1963), Jewish philosopher and scholar 8 460

KAUDA, KENNETH DAVID (born 1924), Zambian statesman 8 460-461

KAUTILYA (4th century B.C.), Indian statesman and author 8 462

KAUTSKY, KARL JOHANN (1854-1938), German Austrian Socialist 8 462-463

KAWABATA, YASUNARI (1899-1972), Japanese novelist 8 463-464

KAWAWA, RASHIDI MFAUME (born 1929), Tanzanian political leader 8 464-465

KAZAN, ELIA (born 1909), American film and stage director 8 465-466

KAZANTZAKIS, NIKOS (1883-1957), Greek author, journalist, and statesman 8 466-468

KEAN, EDMUND (1789-1833), English actor 21 237-239

KEERNEY, DENIS (1847-1907), Irish-born American labor agitator 8 468

KEARNY, STEPHEN WATTS (1883-1957), American general 8 468-469

KEATING, PAUL JOHN (born 1944), federal treasurer of Australia (1983-1991) 8 469-470
KEATON, BUSTER (Joseph Frank Keaton; 1895-1966), American comedian 20
199-201
KEATS, JOHN (1795-1821), English poet 8...

KEITH, MODIBO (1915-1977), Malian statesman 8 474-475
KEITEL, WILHELM (1882-1946), German general 8 224-226
KEITH, SIR ARTHUR (1866-1955), British anatomist and physical anthropologist 8 475-476
KEITH, MINOR COOPER (1848-1929), American entrepreneur 8 476-477
KEKkonen, Urho Kaleva (1900-1986), Finnish athlete and politician 23 189-191
Kellé, Friedrich August (1829-1896), German chemist 8 477-478
Keller, Gottfried (1819-1890), Swiss short-story writer, novelist, and poet 8 478-479
Keller, Helen Adams (1880-1968), American lecturer and author 8 479-480
Kelley, Florence (1859-1932), American social worker and reformer 8 483-484
Kelley, Hall Jackson (1790-1874), American promoter 8 480
Kelley, Oliver Hudson (1826-1913), American agriculturalist 8 480-481
Kellogg, Frank Billings (1856-1937), American statesman 8 481
Kellogg, John Harvey (1852-1943), American health propagandist and cereal manufacturer 8 239-242
White, Ellen Gould 23 438-440
Kelló, Francis (1873-1952), American activist and politician 8 481-482
Kelly, Ellsworth (born 1923), American artist 8 482-483
Kelly, Gene (born Eugene Curran Kelly; 1912-1996), American actor, dancer, and choreographer 8 484-486
Kelly, Grace (Grace, Princess; 1929-1982), princess of Monaco 19 174-176
Kelly, Patrick (1954-1990), African American fashion designer 22 273-275
Kelly, Petra (born 1947), West German pacifist and politician 8 486-487
Kelly, Walt (Walter Crawford Kelly; 1913-1973), American Cartoonist 22 275-278
Kelly, William (1811-1888), American iron manufacturer 8 487-488
Kelsey, Henry (circa 1667-1724), English-born Canadian explorer 8 488
Kelfvin of largs, Baron (William Thomson; 1824-1907), Scottish physicist 8 488-489
Kemal, Yashar (born 1922), Turkish novelist 8 489-491
Kemble, Frances Anne (Fanny Kemble; 1809-1893), English actress 8 491
Kemp, Jack French, Jr. (born 1935), Republican congressman from New York and secretary of housing and urban development 8 491-493
Kemps, Thomas a (circa 1380-1471), German monk and spiritual writer 8 493-494
Kendall, Amos (1789-1869), American journalist 8 494
Kendall, Edward Calvin (1886-1972), American biochemist 8 495
Kendall, Thomas Henry (Henry Clarence Kendall; 1839-1882), American poet 23 191-194
Kendrake, Carleton see Gardner, Erle Stanley
Kendrew, John C. (1917-1997), English chemist and Nobel Prize winner 8 495-496
Keneally, Thomas Michael (born 1935), Australian author 8 226-228
Kennan, George F. (born 1904), American diplomat, author, and scholar 8 496-498
Kennedy, Anthony M. (born 1936), United States Supreme Court justice 8 498-500
Kennedy, Edward M. (Ted; born 1932), U.S. senator from Massachusetts 8 500-502
Kennedy, John Fitzgerald (1917-1963), American statesman, president 1960-1963 8 502-506
Kennedy, John Pendleton (1795-1870), American author and politician 8 506-507
Kennedy, John Stewart (1830-1909), American financier and philanthropist 8 507-508
Kennedy, Joseph (1888-1969), American financier, ambassador, and movie producer 19 176-178
Kennedy, Robert Francis (1925-1968), American statesman 8 508-509
Kennedy, William (born 1928), American author 19 178-180
Kenny, Charles J. see Gardner, Erle Stanley
Kenny, Elizabeth (Sister Kenny; 1886-1952), Australian nursing sister 8 509-510
Kent, James (1763-1847), American jurist 8 510-511
Kent, Rockwell (1882-1971), American painter and illustrator 8 511
KenyaYa, Jomo (circa 1890-1978), Kenyan statesman 8 512-514
Keohane,ナンナーリンホルスラー (born 1940), American feminist activist and university chancellor 18 229-230
Kepler, Johannes (1571-1630), German astronomer 8 514-516
KerensKy, Aleksandr Fedorovich (1881-1970), Russian revolutionary and politician 8 516-517
Kern, Jerome David (1900-1945), American composer 8 517-518
Kerouac, Jean-Louis Lebras de (Jack; 1922-69), American writer of autobiographical fiction 8 518-519
Kerr, Clark (born 1911), American economist, labor-management expert, and university president 8 519-521
Kerrey, J. Robert (born 1943), Democratic senator from Nebraska and 1992 presidential candidate 8 521-522
Keselring, Albert (1885-1960), German field marshal 8 522-523
Kessler, David A. (born 1951), commissioner of the Food and Drug Administration 8 523-524
Kettering, Charles F. (1876-1958), American engineer, industrial pioneer, and apostle of progress 8 524-525
Kevorkian, Jack (born 1928), American pathologist who practiced assisted suicide 19 180-182
Kew Gardens see Royal Botanical Gardens
Key, Francis Scott (1779-1843), American poet and attorney 8 525-527
Key, Vladimir Orlando, Jr. (1908-1963), American political scientist 8 527-528
KEYNES, JOHN MAYNARD (1st Baron Keynes of Tilton; 1883-1946), English economist 8 528-530

KHACHATURIAN, ARAM ILICH (or Khachaturov; 1903-1978), Russian composer 8 530-531

KHALID BIN ABDUL AZIZ AL-SAUD (1912-1982), Saudi king and prime minister 23 194-196

KHALLIL, SAYYID ABDULLAH (1892-1970), Sudanese general, prime minister 1956-1958 8 531-532

KHAMAMA, SIR SERETSE M. (born 1921), Botswana political leader 8 532-533

KHANESE, AYATOLLAH SAYYID ALI (born 1925), worked for KILPATRICK, WILLIAM H. (1871-1965), American educator, college president, and philosopher of education 8 1-3

KIM DAE-JUNG (born 1925), worked for the restoration of democracy and human rights in South Korea after 1971 9 3-4

KIM IL-SUNG (born 1912), North Korean political leader 9 4-6

KIM JONG IL (born 1941), heir-apparent of Kim Il-sung, the founder and leader of the Democratic People's Republic of Korea 9 6-7

KIM OK-KYUN (1851-1894), Korean politician 9 7-8

KIM PUSIK (1075-1151), Korean statesman, historian, and general 9 8-9

KIM YOUNG SAM (born 1927), South Korean statesman 9 9-10

KINCAID, JAMAICA (Elaine Potter Richardson; born 1949), African American writer 23 196-199

KINDI, ABI-YUSUF YAQUB IBN-ISHAQ AL- (died 873), Arab philosopher 10 1-10

KING, B. B. (born Riley B. King; born 1925), African American blues musician, singer, and songwriter 9 11-14

KING, BILLIE JEAN (born 1943), international tennis star 9 14-15

KING, CLARENCE (1842-1901), American geologist and mining engineer 9 15-16

KING, CORETTA SCOTT (born 1929), American advocate of civil rights, nonviolence, international peace, full employment, and equal rights for women 9 16-17

KING, ERNEST JOSEPH (1878-1956), American admiral 9 17-18

KING, FREDERIC TRUBY (1858-1938), New Zealand doctor and founder of the Plunket Society 9 18-19

KING, MARY-CLAIRE (born 1946), American geneticist 9 182-183

KING, RUFUS (1755-1827), American statesman and diplomat 9 22-23

KING, STEPHEN (a.k.a. Richard Bachman and John Swithen; born 1947), American horror novelist 9 23-25

KING, WILLIAM LYON MACKENZIE (1819-1875), English author and Anglican clergyman 9 28

KINGSTON, MAXINE HONG (Maxine Prew; born 1943), American short-story writer 9 32-33

KIRCH, MARIA WINCKELMANN (1670-1720), German astronomer 20 204-205

KIRKLAND, JOSEPH LANE (1922-1999), American labor union movement leader 9 35-37

KIRKLAND, SAMUEL (1741-1808), American Congregationalist missionary 9 37

KIPKATRICK, JEANE J. (born 1926), professor and first woman U.S. ambassador to the United Nations 9 37-39

KIRKSTEIN, LINCOLN (1906-1996), a founder and director of the New York City Ballet 9 39-41

KISHI, NOBUSHKE (1896-1987), Japanese politician 9 41-43

Kiss an Angel Good Morning (song) Pride, Charley Frank 23 317-319

KISSINGER, HENRY ALFRED (born 1923), U.S. secretary of state and co-winner of the Nobel Peace prize 9 43-45

KITCHENER, HORATIO HERBERT (1850-1916), British field marshal and statesman 9 45-46

KIVANUKA, BENEDICTO KAGIMA MUGUMBA (1922-1972), Ugandan politician 9 46-47

KLE, PAUL (1879-1940), Swiss painter and graphic artist 9 47-49

KLEIN, A. M. (1909-1972), Canadian journalist, lawyer, novelist, and poet 9 49-50
KUANG-WU-TI (6 B.C. - 57 A.D.), Chinese emperor ca. 25-57

KUBITSCHEK DE OLIVEIRA, JUSCELINO (1902-1976), president of Brazil 1956-1961

KUBLAI KHAN (1215-1294), Mongol emperor 9 113-115

KÜBLER-ROSS, ELISABETH (born 1926), Swiss-born American psychiatrist 9 118-120

K梾brahim Isaac (1892), Chinese emperor ca. 25-57

KUANG-WU-TI

KUANG-WU-TI ENCYCLOPEDIA OF WORLD BIOGRAPHY

KUANG-WU-TI

KUANG-GAET’O (375-413), Korean statesman, king of Koguryo 9 139-140

KUANGJONG (925-975), Korean statesman, king of Koryo 9 140

KYD, THOMAS (1558-1594), English dramatist 9 140-141

KYPRIANOU, SPYROS (born 1932), president of the Republic of Cyprus 9 141-143

LA BRUYÈRE, JEAN DE (1645-1696), French man of letters and moralist 9 145

LA FARGE, JOHN (1835-1910), American artist and writer 9 149-150

LA FAYETTE, COMTesse DE (Marie Madeleine Pioche de la Vergne; 1634-93), French novelist 9 150-151

LA FLESCHE, FRANCIS (1857-1932), Native American ethnologist 9 152-154

LA FLESCHE, SUSETTE (1854-1903), Native American activist and reformer 9 152-154

LA FOLLETTE, ROBERT MARION (1855-1925), American statesman 9 155-156

LA FONTAINE, JEAN DE (1621-1695), French poet 9 156-157

LA GUARDIA, FIORELLO HENRY (1882-1947), American politician, New York City mayor 9 166-167

LA METTRIE, JULIEN OFFRAY DE (1709-1751), French physician and philosopher 9 179-180

LA ROCHEFOUCAULD, FRANÇOIS DUC DE (1613-1680), French moralist 9 208-209

LA SALLE, SIEUR DE (René Robert Cavelier; 1643-1687), French explorer and colonizer 9 210-211

LA TOUR, GEORGE DE (1593-1652), French painter 9 222

LA VERENDRE, SIEUR DE (Pierre Gaultier de Varennes; 1685-1749), French-Canadian soldier, explorer, and fur trader 9 239-240

LACAN, JACQUES (1901-1981), French psychoanalyst 9 145-147

LACHAISE, GASTON (1882-1935), French-born American sculptor 9 147

LACAPPELLE, MARIE (1769-1821), French obstetrician and teacher 21 245-247

LACOMBE, ALBERT (1827-1906), French physician and inventor 21 247-249

LACORDAIRE, JEAN BAPTISTE HENRI (1802-1861), French Dominican preacher 9 148

LADD, WILLIAM (1778-1841), American pacifist 9 149

LADD-FRANKLIN, CHRISTINE (1847-1930), American logician and psychologist 23 202-204

LAENNEC, RENÉ (René-Théophile-Hyacinthe Laennec; 1781-1826), French physician and inventor 21 247-249

LAFAYETTE, MARQUIS DE (Marie Joseph Paul Yves Roch Gilbert du Motier; 1757-1834), French general and statesman 9 151-152

LAFONTAINE, SIR LOUIS-HIPPOLYTE (1807-1864), Canadian politician 9 157-158

LAFONTAINE, OSKAR (born 1943), German politician 9 158-160

LAFORGE, JULES (1860-1887), French poet 9 160-161

LAGERFIELD, KARL (born 1938), German-French designer of high fashion 9 161-162

LAGERKVIST, PÅR FABIAN (born 1891), Swedish author 9 162-163

LAGERLÖF, SELMA OTTILIANA LOVISA (1858-1940), Swedish author 9 163-164

LAGRANGE, JOSEPH LOUIS (1736-1813), Italian-born French mathematician 9 164-166

LAHR, BERT (Irving Lahrheim; 1895-1967), performer and comedian in burlesque, vaudeville, musical comedy, film, and television 9 167-168

LAIRD, MELVIN R. (born 1922), U.S. congressman and secretary of defense 9 168-170

LAKSHMIBAI (1858-1940), Indian queen and national hero 22 41-42

LALIBELA (ruled circa 1181-circa 1221), Ethiopian king and saint 9 170

LAMAR, LUCIUS QUINTUS CINCINNATUS (1825-1893), American politician and jurist 9 170-171

LAMARCK, CHEVALIER DE (Jean Baptiste Pierre Antoine de Monet;
LANE, FITZ HUGH (1804-1865),
American marine painter 9 189
LANFRANC (circa 1010-1089), Italian
theologian, archbishop of Canterbury 9 189
LANG, FRITZ (1890-1976), film director
9 190-192
LANG, JOHN THOMAS (1876-1975),
Australian politician 9 192-193
LANGDELL, CHRISTOPHER COLUMBUS
(1826-1906), American lawyer 23
204-206
LANGE, DOROTHEA (1895-1965),
American photographer 9 193-194
LANGLAND, WILLIAM (circa 1330-
1400), English poet 9 194-195
LANGLEY, SAMUEL PIERPONT
(1834-1906), American scientist 9 195-196
LANGMUIR, IRVING (1881-1957),
American chemist 9 196-197
LANGSTON, JOHN MERCER (1829-
1897), American educator and
diplomat 9 197
LÁSZLÓ I, KING OF HUNGARY
(1040-1095), king of Hungary and saint
9 198-200
LANIER, SIDNEY (1842-1881), American
poet, critic, and musician 9 199-200
LANSING, ROBERT (1864-1928),
American lawyer and statesman 9 200
LAO SHÉ (1899-1966), Chinese novelist
9 200-201
LAO TZU (loumourn 6th century B.C.),
Chinese philosopher 9 201-202
LAPLACE, MARQUIS DE
(Pierre Simon; 1749-1827), French mathematician 9
202-204
LARDNER, RINGGOLD WILMER
(1885-1939), American author 9
204-205
LARIONOV, MIKHAIL (1881-1964),
Russian artist 9 205-206
LARKIN, PHILIP (1922-1986), English
poet 9 206-207
LARKIN, THOMAS OLIVER (1802-1858),
American merchant and diplomat 9 208
LARSEN, NELLA (1893-1963), Harlem
Renaissance writer 9 209-210
LARSON, JONATHAN (1961-1996),
American playwright, composer, and
lyricist 18 243-145
LAS CASAS, BARTOLOMÉ DE (1474-
1566), Spanish Dominican missionary
and historian 9 211-212
LASCH, CHRISTOPHER (1932-1994),
American historian and social critic 9
212-214
LASHLEY, KARL SPENCER (1890-1958),
American neuropsychologist 9
214-215
LASER, ALBERT (1880-1952), American
advertising executive 21 251-254
LASER, EMANUEL (1868-1941),
German chess grandmaster 20
218-220
LASKI, HAROLD J. (1893-1950), English
political scientist and Labour party
leader 9 215-216
LASKY, JESSE (1880-1958), American
film producer 21 254-256
LASSALLE, FERDINAND (1825-1864),
German socialist leader 9 216
LASSUS, ROLAND DE (1532-1594),
Franco-Flemish composer 9 216-218
LASSWELL, HAROLD DWIGHT (born
1902), American political scientist 9
218-219
Last Year at Marienbad (film)
23
LÁSZLÓ I, KING OF HUNGARY
(1040-1095), king of Hungary and saint
9 219-221
LATIMER, HUGH (circa 1492-1555),
English Protestant bishop, reformer,
and martyr 9 221
LATIMER, LEWIS (1848-1928), American
inventor and electrical engineer 9
191-193
LATROBE, BENJAMIN HENRY (1764-
1820), English-born American architect
9 222-224
LAUD, WILLIAM (1573-1645), English
archbishop of Canterbury 9 224-225
LAUDER, ESTEE (née Josephine Esthe
Wemyss; born ca. 1908), founder of an
international cosmetics empire 9
225-226
LAURE, SALVADOR H. (Doy; born
1928), member of the Philippine
Congress and vice-president 9 226-227
LAUREN, RALPH (Ralph Lipschitz; born
1939), American fashion designer 9
228-229
LAURANCE, MARGARET (Jean Margaret
Wemyss; 1926-1987), Canadian writer
9 229-230
LAURENS, HENRI (1885-1954), French
sculptor 9 230-231
LAURENS, HENRY (1724-1792),
American merchant and Revolutionary statesman 9 232

LAURIE, SIR WILFRID (1841-1919),
 Canadian statesman, prime minister 1896-1911 9 232-234

LAURO, ACHILLE (1887-1984), Italian business and political leader 9 234-235

LAUTARO (circa 1535-1557),
Araucanian Indian chieftain in Chile 9 235

LAVALLÉE, JUAN ANTONIO (1778-1853),
Uruguayan independence leader 9 238-239

LAVIGERIE, CHARLES MARTEL ALLEMAND (1825-1892), French cardinal 9 240

LA VISON, ERNEST (1842-1922), French historian 9 241

LAVOISIER,antoine laurent (1742-1806),
French chemist 9 241-244

LAVOISIER, MARIE PAULZE (1798-1836),
French chemist 22 292-294

LAW, WILLIAM (1686-1761), English devotional writer 9 245-246

ELA, HENRY CHARLES (1825-1909),
American historian 9 261-262

LEADBELLY (Huddie William Leadbetter; 1885-1949),
African American folk singer 23 208-211

League of Nations (1919-1946)
supporters (Europe)
Murray, Gilbert 23 250-253

LEAKEY, LOUIS SEYMOUR BAZETT
(1903-1972), British anthropologist 9 262

LEAKEY, MARY DOUGLAS (1913-1996),
English archaeologist 9 263-264

LEAKEY, RICHARD ERSKINE FREERE
(born 1944), Kenyan researcher in human prehistory and wildlife conservationist 9 264-265

LEAR, EDWARD (1812-1888),
English writer and artist 9 265-266

LEAR, NORMAN (born 1922),
American author and television director and producer 19 193-195

LEYA, TIMOTHY (1920-1996),
American psychologist, author, lecturer, and cult figure 9 266-267

LEASE, MARY ELIZABETH CLYENS
(1853-1933), American writer and politician 9 268

LEAVITT, HENRIETTA SWAN
(1868-1921), American astronomer 23 211-213

LEBED, ALEXANDER IVANOVICH
(1950-2002), Russian general and politician 18 245-247

LEBLANC, NICOLAS (1742-1806),
French industrial chemist 21 256-258

LECKY, WILLIAM EDWARD HARTPOLE
(1838-1903), Anglo-Saxonist historian and essayist 9 271-272

LECLERC, JACQUES PHILIPPE
(1806-1887), Irish author 23 206-208

LECONTE DE LISLE, CHARLES MARIE RENÉ
(1818-1894), French poet 9 273-274

LECUONA, ERNESTO (Ernesto Sixto de la Asunción Leuquina y Casado; 1896-1963),
Cuban musician 23 213-216

LEDZEPPELIN (1968-1980), British "Heavy Metal" band 23 216-218

LEDGERBERG, JOSHUA (born 1925),
Nobel Prize winning geneticist 9 275-277

LEDoux, clauDE NICOLAS (1736-1806),
French architect 9 277-278

LEE, MOTHER ANN (1736-1784),
religious and social reformer and founder of the Shakers 9 289-290

LAURENS, HENRY (1724-1792),
American merchant and Revolutionary statesman 9 232

LAURIE, SIR WILFRID (1841-1919),
Canadian statesman, prime minister 1896-1911 9 232-234

LAURO, ACHILLE (1887-1984), Italian business and political leader 9 234-235

LAUTARO (circa 1535-1557),
Araucanian Indian chieftain in Chile 9 235

LAVALLÉE, JUAN ANTONIO (1778-1853),
Uruguayan independence leader 9 238-239

LAVIGERIE, CHARLES MARTEL ALLEMAND (1825-1892), French cardinal 9 240

LA VISON, ERNEST (1842-1922), French historian 9 241

LAVOISIER,antoine laurent (1742-1806),
French chemist 9 241-244

LAVOISIER, MARIE PAULZE (1798-1836),
French chemist 22 292-294

LAW, WILLIAM (1686-1761), English devotional writer 9 245-246

ELA, HENRY CHARLES (1825-1909),
American historian 9 261-262

LEADBELLY (Huddie William Leadbetter; 1885-1949),
African American folk singer 23 208-211

League of Nations (1919-1946)
supporters (Europe)
Murray, Gilbert 23 250-253

LEAKEY, LOUIS SEYMOUR BAZETT
(1903-1972), British anthropologist 9 262

LEAKEY, MARY DOUGLAS (1913-1996),
English archaeologist 9 263-264

LEAKEY, RICHARD ERSKINE FREERE
(born 1944), Kenyan researcher in human prehistory and wildlife conservationist 9 264-265

LEAR, EDWARD (1812-1888),
English writer and artist 9 265-266

LEAR, NORMAN (born 1922),
American author and television director and producer 19 193-195

LEYA, TIMOTHY (1920-1996),
American psychologist, author, lecturer, and cult figure 9 266-267

LEASE, MARY ELIZABETH CLYENS
(1853-1933), American writer and politician 9 268

LEAVITT, HENRIETTA SWAN
(1868-1921), American astronomer 23 211-213

LEBED, ALEXANDER IVANOVICH
(1950-2002), Russian general and politician 18 245-247

LEBLANC, NICOLAS (1742-1806),
French industrial chemist 21 256-258

LECKY, WILLIAM EDWARD HARTPOLE
(1838-1903), Anglo-Saxonist historian and essayist 9 271-272

LECLERC, JACQUES PHILIPPE
(1806-1887), Irish author 23 206-208

LECONTE DE LISLE, CHARLES MARIE RENÉ
(1818-1894), French poet 9 273-274

LECUONA, ERNESTO (Ernesto Sixto de la Asunción Leuquina y Casado; 1896-1963),
Cuban musician 23 213-216

LEDZEPPELIN (1968-1980), British "Heavy Metal" band 23 216-218

LEDGERBERG, JOSHUA (born 1925),
Nobel Prize winning geneticist 9 275-277

LEDoux, clauDE NICOLAS (1736-1806),
French architect 9 277-278

LEE, MOTHER ANN (1736-1784),
religious and social reformer and founder of the Shakers 9 289-290
LEE, ARTHUR (1740-1792), American statesman and diplomat 9 288-289
LEE, BRUCE (1940-1973), Asian American actor and 9 283-285
actor 20 220-222
LEE, CHARLES (1731-1782), American general 22 294-297
LEE, HARPER (Nelle Harper Lee; born 1926), American author 20 220-222
LEE, MING CHO (born 1930), Asian American scientist and 9 289-290
educator 20
LEE, ROBERT EDWARD (1807-1870), American soldier and Confederate general in chief 9 292-294
LEE, ROSE (Rose Hum; 1904-1964), Chinese- 9 299-300
American writer 21
LEE, TENG-HUI (born 1923), president of the Republic of China (1988-). 9 301-302
LEE, YUAN TSEH (born 1936), Taiwanese American scientist and educator 23 218-220
LEE HSIEH LOONG (born 1952), Singaporean soldier and deputy prime minister 9 280-281
LEE KUAN YEW (born 1923), prime minister of Singapore (1959-1998) 9 281-283
LEEUWENHOEK, ANTON VAN (1632-1723), Dutch naturalist and 9 300-301
microscopist
LEFEVRE, GEORGES (1874-1959), French historian 9 301-302
Legal reform 9 see Law—legal reform
LÉGER, FERNAND (1881-1955), French painter 9 302-303
LEGHARI, SARDAR FAROOQ AHMED KAHN (born 1940), president of the Islamic Republic of Pakistan 9 303-305
LEGINSKA, ETHEL (Ethel Liggins; 1886-1970), English American musician 23 220-222
LEGUÍA Y SALCEDO, AUGUSTO BERNARDINO (1863-1932), Peruvian president 1908-12 and 1919-30 9 305-306
LEHMANN, HERBERT HENRY (1878-1963), American banker and statesman 9 306-307
LEHRMANN, WILHELM (1881-1919), German sculptor 9 307
LEIBNIZ, GOTTFRIED WILHELM VON (1646-1716), German mathematician and philosopher 9 307-310
LEIBOVITZ, ANNIE (born 1949), American photographer 9 310-312
LEICESTER, EARL OF (Robert Dudley; 1532-1588), English politician 9 312-313
LEIGH, MIKE (born 1943), British director and screenwriter 23 222-225
LEIGH, VIVIEN (Vivian Mary Hartley; 1913-1967), British actress 18 251-253
LEISLER, JACOB (1640-1691), American colonial leader 9 313-314
LEITZEN, LILLIAN (born Leopoldina Altitza Pelikan; 1892-1931), German aerialist 23 225-227
Leland Stanford Junior University see Stanford University
LEY, SIR PETER (1618-1680), German-born painter active in England 9 315
LEMAÎTRE, ABBÉ GEORGES ÉDOUARD (1894-1966), Belgian astronomer 9 315-316
LEMAÎTRE, LILIAN (born Leopoldina Altitza Pelikan; 1892-1931), German aerialist 23 225-227
LEMMON, JACK (John Uhler Lemmon; 1925-2001), American actor 22 297-299
LEMMITZER, LYMAN LOUIS (Lem; 1899-1988), American soldier, statesman and strategist and NATO architect 9 319-320
L’ENNIS, PIERRE CHARLES (1754-1825), French-born American architect 9 322-323
L’ENGLE, MADELEINE (born 1918), American author 18 253-255
LENGLEN, SUZANNE (1899-1938), French tennis player 19 195-197
LENIN, VLADIMIR ILICH (1870-1924), Russian statesman 9 323-326
LEO I (circa 400-461), saint and pope 9 329-330
LEO III (the Isaurian; circa 680-741), Byzantine emperor 717-741 9 330-332
LEO IX, SAINT (Bruno of Egsheim; 1002-1054), pope 1049-1054 9 332
LEO X (Giovanni de’ Medici; 1475-1521), pope 1513-1521 9 332-334
LEO XII (Vincenzo Gioacchino Pecci; 1810-1903), pope 1878-1903 9 334-336
Leon-Castilla (kingdom, Northern Spain) 23 417-418
LEON, MOSES DE (circa 1250-1305), Jewish mystic 9 336
LEONARD, DANIEL (1740-1829), American loyalist lawyer and essayist 9 336-337
LEONARDO DA VINCI (1452-1519), Italian painter, sculptor, architect, and scientist 9 337-340
LEONIDAS I (ca. 530 B.C. - 480 B.C.), Spartan king 9 340-343
LÉONIN (Leoninus; flourished circa 1165-1185), French composer 9 343-344
LEOPARDI, CONTE GIACOMO (1798-1837), Italian poet 9 344-345
LEOPOLD I (1790-1865), king of Belgium 1831-1865 9 345-346
LEOPOLD II (1747-1792), Holy Roman emperor 1790-1792 9 346
LEOPOLD II (1835-1909), king of Belgium 1865-1909 9 346-347
LEOPOLD III (1901-1983), king of Belgium 1934-1951 9 347-348
LERDO DE TEJADA, MIGUEL (1812-1861), Mexican liberal politician 9 351-352
LERMONTOV, MIKHAIL YURIJEVICH (1814-1841), Russian poet and prose writer 9 352-353
LERNER, ALAN JAY (1918-1986), American lyricist/librettist 20 224-226
LESAGE, ALAIN RENÉ (1668-1747), French novelist and playwright 9 353-354
LESCOT, PIERRE (1500/1515-1578), French architect 9 354
LESSEPS, VICOMTE DE (Ferdinand Marie; 1805-1894), French diplomat 9 354-355
LESSING, DORIS (Doris May Taylor; born 1919), South African expatriate writer 9 355-357
LESSING, GOTTHOLD EPHRAIM (1729-1781), German philosopher, dramatist, and critic 9 357-359
LOMBARDO, GUY (Gaetano Alberto Lombardo; 1902-1977), Canadian band leader 23 234-236

LOMBROSO, CESARE (1835-1909), Italian criminologist 9 493

LOMONOSOV, MIKHAIL VASILEVICH (1711-1765), Russian chemist and physicist 9 494

LONDON, JACK (1876-1916), American author 9 494-495

LONG, CRAWFORD WILLIAMSON (1815-1878), American physician 9 495-496

LONG, HUEY PIERCE (1893-1935), American politician 9 496-497

LONG, IRENE D. (born 1951), African American aerospace medicine physician 9 497-498

LONGFELLOW, HENRY WADSWORTH (1807-1882), American poet 9 499-500

LONGINUS (flourished 1st or 3rd century), Latin author and rhetorician 9 500-501

LONGSTREET, JAMES (1821-1904), American army officer 22 301-305

LONGUS (flourished 3rd century), Greek author 20 229-230

LONSDALE, KATHLEEN (born Kathleen Yardley; 1903-1971), Irish crystallographer 9 501-502

LOOS, ADOLF (1870-1933), Viennese architect 9 502-503

LOOS, ANITA (1893-1981), American actress and writer 21 262-265

LOPE FÉLIX DE VEGA CARPIO (1562-1635), Spanish dramatist 9 503-506

LÓPEZ, CARLOS ANTONIO (1792-1862), Paraguayan president-dictator 1844-1862 9 506-507

LÓPEZ, FRANCISCO SOLANO (1826-1870), Paraguayan president-dictator 9 507-508

LÓPEZ, NARCISO (1798-1851), Venezuelan military leader 9 508

LOPEZ ARELLANO, OSWALDO (born 1921), Honduran military officer and president 20 230-231

LÓPEZ DE AYALA, PEDRO (1332-1407), Spanish statesman, historian, and poet 9 508-509

LÓPEZ MATEOS, ADOLFO (1910-1970), president of Mexico (1958-1964) 9 509-510

LÓPEZ PORTILLO, JOSÉ (born 1920), president of Mexico (1976-1982) 9 510-511

LORCA, FEDERICO GARCÍA (1898-1936), Spanish poet and playwright 9 511-513

LORDE, AUDRE (1934-1992), African American poet 9 513-515

LOREN, SOPHIA (Sophia Villani Scicolone; born 1936), Italian actress and author 18 259-261

LORENTZ, HENDRIK ANTOON (1853-1928), Dutch physicist 9 515-516

LORENZ, KONRAD Z. (1903-1989), animal psychologist 9 516-517

LORENZETTI, PIERRE AND AMBROGIO (flourished 14th century), Italian painters 9 517-518

LOTI, PIERRE (1850-1923), French novelist 9 519-520

LOTT, TREV (Chester Trelle Lott; born 1941), American congressman 18 262-264

LOTTO, LORENZO (circa 1480-1556), Italian painter 9 520-521

LOTZE, RUDOLF HERMANN (1817-1886), German zoologist 9 522-523

LOUIS I (778-840), Holy Roman emperor and king of France and Germany 814-840 9 522-523

LOUIS VI (1081-1137), king of France 1108-1137 9 523-524

LOUIS VII (circa 1120-1180), king of France 1137-1180 9 524-525

LOUIS IX (1214-1270), king of France 1226-1270 9 525-526

LOUIS XI (1423-1483), king of France 1461-1483 9 526-528

LOUIS XII (1462-1515), king of France 1498-1515 9 528-529

LOUIS XIII (1601-1643), king of France 1610-1643 9 529-531

LOUIS XIV (1638-1715), king of France 1643-1715 9 531-533

LOUIS XV (1710-1774), king of France 1715-1774 9 533-534

LOUIS XVI (1754-1793), king of France 1774-1792 9 534-535

LOUIS XVII (1755-1824), king of France 1814-1824 9 535-536

LOUIS, JOE (Joe Louis Barrow; 1914-1981), American boxer 9 537-538

LOUIS, MORRIS (Bernstein; 1912-1962), American painter 9 538-539

LOUIS, PIERRE CHARLES ALEXANDRE (1787-1872), French physician 9 540

LOUIS PHILIPPE (1773-1850), king of the French 1830-1848 9 536-537

LOVE, NAT (1854-1921), African American champion cowboy 10 1-2

LOVE, SUSAN M. (born 1948), American surgeon and medical researcher 10 2-3

LOVECRAFT, H. P. (1890-1937), American author 10 3-6

LOVEJOY, ARTHUR ONICKEN (1873-1962), American philosopher 10 6

LOVEJOY, ELIJAH PARISH (1802-1837), American newspaper editor and abolitionist 10 6-7

LOVELACE, ADA BYRON (Countess of Lovelace, Augusta Ada King Byron; 1815-1852), English mathematician and author 18 264-266

LOVELACE, RICHARD (circa 1618–circa 1657), English Cavalier poet 10 7-8

LOVELL, SIR ALFRED CHARLES BERNARD (born 1913), English astronomer 10 8-9

LOW, JULIETTE GORDON (born Juliette Magill Kinzie Gordon; 1860-1927), American reformer and founder of the Girl Scouts 10 10-11

LOW, SETH (1850-1916), American politician and college president 10 11-12

LOWELL, ABBOTT LAWRENCE (1856-1943), American educator and political scientist 10 12-13

LOWELL, AMY (1874-1925), American poet, critic, and biographer 10 13

LOWELL, FRANCIS CABOT (1775-1817), American merchant and manufacturer 10 13-14

LOWELL, JAMES RUSSELL (1854-1921), American poet and diplomat 10 14-15

LOWELL, JOSEPHINE SHAW (1843-1905), American social reformer and philanthropist 10 15-16

LOWELL, ROBERT TRAIL SPENCE, JR. (1917-1977), American poet 10 16-17

LOWIE, ROBERT HARRY (1883-1957), Austrian-born American anthropologist 10 18

LOWRY, MALCOLM (1909-1957), English author 19 209-211

LU CHI (261-303), Chinese poet and critic 10 24

LU CHU-YUAN (Lu Hsiang-shan; 1139-1193), Chinese philosopher 10 24-25

LU HSÜN (pen name of Chou Shu-jen; 1881-1936), Chinese author and social critic 10 35-37
Lubitsch, Ernst (1892-1947),
German-American film director  
10  
18-19
Lucaris, Cyril (1572-1637), Greek Orthodox patriarch and theologian  
10  
20
Lucas, George (born 1944), American filmmaker  
19  
21-213
Lucas Van Leyden (1494-1533), Dutch engraver and painter  
10  
20-21
Lucie, Claire Booth (1903-1987), playwright and U.S. congresswoman  
10  
21-23
Lucie, Henry Robinson (1898-1967), American magazine editor and publisher  
10  
23-24
Lucian (circa 120-circa 200), Greek satirist  
10  
25-26
Luciano, Lucky (Charles Luciano, Salvatore Lucania; 1897-1962), Italian American mobster  
10  
21-23
Lucid, Shannon (born 1943), American astronaut  
19  
215-217
Lucretius (Titus Lucretius Carus; circa 94-circa 55 B.C.), Latin poet and philosopher  
10  
26-27
Ludendorff, Erich Friedrich Wilhelm (1865-1937), German general  
10  
27-28
Ludlum, Robert (a.k.a. Jonathan Ryder and Michael Shepherd; born 1927), American suspense novelist  
10  
28-29
Ludwig, Daniel Keith (1897-1992), American shipping magnate  
10  
29-31
Ludwig, Karl Friedrich Wilhelm (1816-1895), German physiologist  
10  
31
Lugard, Frederick John Daltry (1st Baron Lugard; 1858-1945), British soldier and colonial administrator in Africa  
10  
31-32
Luhan, Mabel Dodge (1879-1962), American writer, salon hostess, and patron of artists, writers, and political radicals  
10  
32-34
Luhmann, Niklas (born 1927), German sociologist who developed a general sociological systems theory  
10  
34-35
Lukacs, Gyorgy (1885-1971), Hungarian literary critic and philosopher  
10  
37-38
Luke, Saint (Illuminated A.D. 50), Evangelist and biblical author  
10  
38
Luks, George Benjamin (1867-1933), American painter  
10  
38-39

Lynd, Helen Merrell (1896-1982), American sociologist and educator  
10  
63-64
Lynd, Robert Staughton (1892-1970), American sociologist  
10  
64-65
Lynd, Staughton (born 1929), historian and peace militant  
10  
65-66
Lyndsay, Sir David (circa 1485-1555), Scottish poet and courtier  
10  
66-67
Lyons, Joseph Aloysius (1879-1939), Australian statesman, prime minister  
1932-1939  
10  
69-70
Lyandaer, Trofim Denisovich (1898-1976), Soviet agronomist and geneticist  
10  
71

Ma, Yo-Yo (born 1955), American cellist  
20  
232-234
Maathai, Wangari Mutu (born 1940), Kenyan environmental activist  
18  
269-271
Mabillon, Jean (1632-1707), French monk and historian  
10  
72
Mabini, Apolinario (1864-1903), Filipino political philosopher  
10  
72-73
Mabuchi, Kamo (1697-1769), Japanese writer and scholar  
10  
73-74
Macapagal, Diosdado P. (born 1910), Filipino statesman  
10  
74-76
Macarthur, Douglas (1880-1964), American general  
10  
76-78
Macarthur, John (circa 1767-1834), Australian merchant, sheep breeder, and politician  
10  
78
Macaulay, Herbert (1864-1945), Nigerian politician  
10  
78-79
Macaulay, Thomas Babington (1st Baron Macaulay of Rothley; 1800-1859), English essayist, historian, and politician  
10  
79-80
Macbeth (died 1057), king of Scotland  
1040-1057  
10  
81
Macbride, Sean (1904-1988), Irish statesman  
19  
218-220
Macready, Paul (born 1925), American aeronautical engineer  
20  
234-237
MANSUR, ABU JAFAR IBN MUHAMMAD AL (712-775), Abbasid caliph 10 214-215

MANTENGA, ANDREA (circa 1430-1506), Italian painter and engraver 10 215-216

MANTLE, MICKEY (1931-1995), American baseball player 10 216-218

MANUEL I (1469-1521), king of Portugal 1495-1521 10 219-220

MANUEL I COMNENUS (circa 1123-1180), Byzantine emperor 1143-1180 10 218-219

MANUELITO (1818-1894), Navajo tribal leader 10 220-222

Manzù, Giacomo (born 1908), Italian sculptor 10 222-225

Mao Zedong (1893-1976), Chinese statesman 10 225-227

Mapplethorpe, Robert (1946-1989), controversial American photographer 10 227-228

Maradona, Diego (born 1961), Argentine soccer player 20 239-241

Maraghi, Al-Mustafa¯ (1785-1873), Holy jurist and educator 10 230-231

Marat, Jean Paul (1743-1793), French journalist and political leader 10 230-231

Marble, Alice (1913-1990), American tennis player 21 271-273

Marc, Franz (1880-1916), German painter 10 231

Marceau, Marcel (born 1923), world’s greatest practitioner of pantomime 10 231-233

Marcel, Gabriel (1889-1973), French philosopher 10 233-234

Marchand, Jean-Baptiste (1863-1934), French explorer and soldier 10 234-237

Marciano, Rocky (1923-1969), American boxer 10 237-238

Marcion (flourished mid-2nd century), Christian theologian 10 238-239

Marconi, Guglielmo (1874-1937), Italian inventor 10 239-240

Marcos, Ferdinand (1917-1989), president of the Republic of the Philippines (1965-1986) 10 240-242

Marcos, Imelda Romualdez (born 1930), wife of Philippine President Ferdinand Marcos and governor of Metro Manila 10 242-243

Marcos de Niza, Friar (circa 1500-1558), Franciscan missionary in Spanish America 10 240

Marcus Aurelius Antoninus (121-180), Roman emperor 161-180 10 243-245

Marcus, Stanley (1905-2002), American businessman 19 222-224

Marcus, Herbert (1898-1979), German-American philosopher 10 245-247

Marcy, William Learned (1786-1857), American statesman 10 247-248

Marenzio, Luca (1553/54-1599), Italian composer 10 248

Margai, Sir Milton Augustus Striery (1895-1964), Sierra Leonean physician and statesman 10 248-249

Margaret of Anjou (1430-1482), queen consort of Henry VI of England 10 249-250

Margaret of Denmark (born Margaret Valdemarsdottir; 1353-1412), queen of Denmark 10 250-252

Margaret of Scotland, Saint (1045-1093), wife of Malcolm III of Scotland 10 252-253

Marggraf, Andreas (1709-1782), German chemist 21 273-275

Margulis, Lynn (born 1938), American biologist 10 253-254

Maria Theresa (1717-1780), Holy Roman empress 1740-1780 10 256-258

Mariana, Juan de (1536-1624), Spanish Jesuit historian 10 254-255

Mariategui, José Carlos (1895-1930), Peruvian writer 10 255-256

Marie Antoinette (1755-1793), queen of France 1774-1793 10 258-259

Marie de France (flourished late 12th century), French poet 10 259

Marin, John, III (1870-1953), American painter 10 259-260

Marini, Marino (1901-1980), Italian sculptor 10 260-262

Marion, Francis (1732-1795), American Revolutionary War leader 10 262-263

Maritain, Jacques (1882-1973), French Catholic philosopher 10 263

Marius, Gaius (circa 157-86 B.C.), Roman general and politician 10 264-265

Marivaux, Pierre Carlet de Chamblain de (1688-1763), French novelist and dramatist 10 265-266

Mark, Saint (flourished 1st century), Apostle of Jesus 10 266-267

Markham, Beryl (1902-1986), British aviator, author, and horse trainer 20 241-243

Markham, Edwin (1852-1940), American poet 10 267

Markievicz, Constance (1868-1927), Irish nationalist, labor activist, and feminist 10 267-271

Marlborough, 1st Duke of (John Churchill; 1650-1722), English general and statesman 10 271-272

Marlowe, Christopher (1564-1593), English dramatist 10 272-274

Marmol, José (1817-1871), Argentine writer and intellectual 10 274

Marquette, Jacques (1637-1675), French Jesuit, missionary and explorer 10 274-275

Marsalis, Wynton (born 1961), American trumpeter and bandleader 19 224-226

Marsh, George Perkins (1801-1882), American diplomat, philanthropist, and conservationist 21 275-277

Marsh, Ngaio (Edith Ngaio Marsh; 1899-1982), New Zealander author and playwright 19 226-228

Marsh, Othniel Charles (1831-1899), American paleontologist 10 275-276

Marsh, Reginald (1898-1954), American painter and printmaker 10 276-277

Marshall, Alfred (1842-1924), English economist 10 277-278

Marshall, George Catlett (1880-1959), American soldier and statesman 10 278-279

Marshall, John (1755-1835), American jurist, chief justice of United States. Supreme Court 1801-1835 10 279-281

Beveridge, Albert Jeremiah 23 39-41

Marshall, Paul Burke (born 1929), American author 10 281-282

Marshall, Thurgood (1908-1993), African American jurist 10 282-284

Marsilius of Padua (1275/80-1342), Italian political philosopher 10 284
MCCOSH, JAMES (1811-1894), Scottish-American minister, philosopher, and college president 10 402-403
MCCOOY, ELIJAH (1843-1929), American engineer and inventor 19 239-241
MCCOOY, ISAAC (1784-1846), American Indian agent and missionary 10 403
MCCOOY, JOSEPH GEITING (1837-1915), American cattlemann 10 403-404
MCCULLERS, CARSON (Lula Carson Smith; 1917-1967), American novelist and playwright 18 281-283
MCCULLOCH, HUGH (1808-1895), American banker and lawyer 10 404-405
MCDANIEL, HATTIE (1898-1952), African American actress 10 405-408
MCDUFFIE, GEORGE (1790-1851), American statesman 10 408
MCENROE, JOHN PATRICK, JR. (born 1951), African American tennis player 10 408-411
MCGILL, RALPH EMERSON (1898-1969), American journalist 10 411-412
MCGILLIVRAY, ALEXANDER (circa 1759-1793), American Creek Indian chief 10 412
MCGOVERN, GEORGE STANLEY (born 1939), Native American businessman 10 415
MCKAY, DONALD (1922), American statesman 10 412-414
MCKAY, CLAude (1890-1948), African American poet and novelist 10 416
MCKAY, DONALD (1810-1880), American shipbuilder 10 416-417
MCKIM, CHARLES FOLLEN (1847-1909), American architect 10 417-418
MCKINLEY, WILLIAM (1843-1901), American statesman, president 1897-1901 10 418-420
MCKISSICK, FLOYD B., (1922-1991), African American civil rights leader 10 420-422
MCELAN, JOHN (1785-1861), American jurist and politician 10 422-423
MCLougLIN, JOHN (1784-1857), Canadian pioneer and trader 10 423-424
MCLuhan, MARSHALL (Herbert Marshall McLuhan; 1911-1980), Canadian professor of literature and culture 10 424-426
MCMASTER, JOHN BACH (1852-1932), American historian 10 426-427
MCMILLAN, TERRY (born 1951), African American novelist and short story writer 10 427-428
MCMURRAY, BETTE CLAIR (1924-1980), American inventor and businesswoman 10 429
MCNAMARA, ROBERT S. (born 1916), U.S. secretary of defense and president of the World Bank 10 429-431
MCNAUGHTON, ANDREW (1887-1966), Canadian soldier and diplomat 10 431-432
MCNEALY, SCOTT (born 1954), American businessman 10 241-243
MCNICKLE, D’ARCY (born William D’Arcy McNickle; 1904-1977), Native American author, historian, and activist 10 433
MCFERSON, AIMEE SEMPLE (1890-1944), American evangelist 10 434
MCQUEEN, BUTTERFLY (born Thelma McQueen; 1911-1995), African American actress 10 434-437
MEAD, GEORGE HERBERT (1863-1931), American philosopher and social psychologist 10 437-438
MEAD, MARGARET (1901-1978), American anthropologist 10 438-440
MEADE, GEORGE GORDON (1815-1872), American general 10 440-441
MEANS, RUSSELL (born 1939), Native American activist 10 441-444
MEANY, GEORGE (1894-1980), American labor leader 10 444
MECIAR, VLADIMIR (born 1934), Slovak prime minister 18 283-285
Mehmed the Conqueror (a.k.a. Mehmed II and Mehmed Celebi; ca. 1432-1481), Turkish sultan 10 452-454
MEHTA, PHEROZESHAH MEHTA, (1845-1927), Indian statesman 10 455
MEHTA, ZUBIN (born 1936), India born American conductor 10 455-456
MEIER, RICHARD (born 1934), New York architect 10 456-458
MEIGGS, HENRY (1811-1877), American railroad builder 10 458-459
MEILING, HANS (circa 1440-1494), German-born painter active in Flanders 10 459
MENANDER (342-291 B.C.), Athenian comic playwright 10 477-478
MENANDER (1803-1888), American politician 10 476-477
MENANDER, HENRY LOUIS (1880-1956), American journalist, editor, critic, and philologist 10 481-483
MENANDER, MARIO GARCIA (1866-1941), Cuban statesman, president 1913-1921 10 506-507
MENCHU, ROBERT (a.k.a. King Philip; 1640-1676), Wampanoag chieftain 10 266-268
MEREDITH, GEORGE (1828-1909), American and British violinist and conductor 10 266-268
MEREDITH, WILLIAM CAMERON (1896-1957), American film director, producer, and set designer 10 291-293
MERRIAM, CHARLES EDWARD (1874-1953), American political scientist 10 518-519
MERRILL, CHARLES E. (1885-1956), founder of the world’s largest brokerage firm 10 519-520
MERRILL, JAMES (1926-1995), American novelist, poet, and playwright 10 521-522
MERTON, ROBERT K. (1910-2003), American sociologist and educator 10 522-523
MERTON, THOMAS (1915-1968), Roman Catholic writer, social critic, and spiritual guide 10 523-525
MERULO, CLAUDIO (1533-1604), Italian composer, organist, and teacher 10 525-526
MESMER, FRANZ ANTON (1734-1815), German physician 10 526-527
MESSALI HADJ (1898-1974), founder of the Algerian nationalist movement 10 527-528
MESSIAEN, OLIVIER (1908-1992), French composer and teacher 10 528-529
MESSNER, REINHOLD (1944), Austrian mountain climber and author 10 316-318
METACOM (a.k.a. King Philip; 1640-1676), Wampanoag cheftain 10 529-531
METCALFE, CHARLES THEOPHILUS (1st Baron Metcalfe; 1785-1846), British colonial administrator 10 531-532
METCHNIKOFF, ELIE (1845-1916), Russian physiologist and bacteriologist 10 532-533
METHODUS, SAINT (825-885), Greek missionary and bishop 4 362-363
Metropolitan Opera Co. (New York City) Bori, Lucrezia 23 44-45
METTERNICH, KLEMENS VON (1773-1859), Austrian politician and diplomat 10 533-536
Meyerbeer, Giacomo (1791-1864), German composer 10 536-537
MEYERHOF, OTTO FRITZ (1884-1951), German biochemist 5 537-539
MEYERHOLD, VSEVOLOD EMILIEVICH (1874-1942), Russian director 10 539-542
MEYERHOLD, VSEVOLOD EMILIEVICH (1874-1942), Russian director 10 539-542
MFOUME, KWESI (born Frizzell Gray; born 1948), African American civil rights activist and congressman 10 539-542
MI FEI (1051-1107), Chinese painter, calligrapher, and critic 11 12-13
MICAH (flourished 8th century B.C.), prophet of ancient Israel 10 542-543

MICHAEL VIII (Palaeologus; 1224/25-1282), Byzantine emperor 1259-1282 11 1-2

MICHELANGelo BUOArroti (1475-1564), Italian sculptor, painter, and architect 11 2-5

Michelet, Jules (1798-1874), French historian 11 5-6

MicheLozzo (circa 1396-1472), Italian architect and sculptor 11 6-7

Michelson, Albert Abraham (circa 1396-after 1472), Italian architector and sculptor 11 6-7

Michelangelo Buonarroti (flourished 8th century B.C.), 10 542-543

Michael VIII Palaeologus (1224/25-1282), Byzantine emperor 1259-1282 11 1-2

Military leaders, Albanian Kaстроioti-Skanderbeg, Gjergj 23 187-189

Military leaders, Angolan Nzanga, Anna 23 270-271

Military leaders, Georgian Tamara 23 388-390

Military leaders, Indian (Asian) Razia 23 326-329

Military leaders, Swiss Jomini, Antoine Henri 23 177-179

Military strategy treatises Jomini, Antoine Henri 23 177-179

Miliukov, Pavel Nikolayevich (1859-1943), Russian historian and statesman 11 18-19

Milk, Harvey Bernard (1930-1978), American politician and gay rights activist 11 19-21

Milken, Michael (born 1946), American businessman 19 247-249

Mill, James (1773-1836), Scottish philosopher and historian 11 21

Mill, John Stuart (1806-1873), English philosopher and economist 11 21-23

Millais, Sir John Everett (1829-1896), English painter 11 23-24

Millay, Edna St. Vincent (1892-1950), American lyric poet 11 24-25

Miller, Arthur (born 1915), American playwright, novelist, and film writer 11 25-26

Miller, Glenn (Alton Glenn Miller; 1904-1944), American musician 19 250-251

Miller, Henry (born 1891), American author 11 26-27

Miller, Joaquin (1837-1913), American writer 11 27-28

Miller, Perry (1905-1963), American musician 11 28-29

Miller, Samuel Freeman (1816-1890), American jurist 11 29-30

Miller, William (1782-1849), American clergyman 11 30-31

Millet, Jean François (1814-1875), French painter 11 31

Millet, Kate (born 1934), American feminist author and sculptor 11 31

Milikan, Robert Andrews (1868-1953), American physicist 11 33-35

Mills, Billy (Makata Taka Hela; born 1938), Native American runner and businessman 19 251-253

Mills, C. Wright (1916-1962), American sociologist and political polemicist 11 35-36

Mills, Robert (1781-1855), American architector 11 36-37

Milne, Alan Alexander (A.A. Milne; 1882-1956), British author 19 253-254

Milne, David Brown (1882-1953), Canadian painter and etcher 11 37-38

Milner, Alfred (1st Viscount Milner; 1854-1925), British statesman 11 38-39

MiLOSEvic, Slobodan (born 1941), president of Serbia 11 39-40

MiLosz, Czeslaw (born 1911), Nobel Prize winning Polish author and poet 11 40-42

Miltiades (circa 549-488 B.C.), Athenian military strategist and statesman 11 42-43

Milton, John (1608-1674), English poet and controversialist 11 43-46

Min (1851-1895), Korean queen 11 46-47

Mindon Min (ruled 1852-1878), Burmese king 11 47

Mindszenty, Cardinal József (1892-1975), Roman Catholic primate of Hungary 11 47-49

Mining (metallurgy) industry

Tyrrell, Joseph Burr 23 410-412

Mink, Patsy Takemoto (1927-2003), Asian American congresswoman 18 287-289

Mintz, Beatrice (born 1921), American embryologist 11 49-50

Minuit, Peter (1580-1638), Dutch colonizer 11 50

Mirabeau, Comte de (Honore Gabriel Victor de Riqueti; 1749-1791), French statesman and author 11 51-52

Miranda, Francisco de (1750-1816), Latin American patriot 11 52-53

Miró, Joan (1893-1983), Spanish painter 11 53-54

Mishima, Yukio (1925-1970), Japanese novelist and playwright 11 54-55

Mistral, Gabriela (1889-1957), Chilean poet and educator 11 55-56

Mitchell, Billy (1879-1936), American military officer and aviator 20 269-272

Mitchell, Edgar Dean (born 1930), American astronaut 22 318-320

Mitchell, George John (born 1933), Maine Democrat and majority leader in the United States Senate 11 56-58

Mitchell, John (1870-1919), American labor leader 11 58-59

Mitchell, Joni (Roberta Joan Anderson; born 1943), Canadian American singer 23 246-248

Mitchell, Margaret (Munnerlyn; 1900-1949), American author of Gone With the Wind 11 59-60

Mitchell, Maria (1818-1889), American astronomer and educator 11 61

Whitney, Mary Watson 23 440-442
MITCHELL, WESLEY CLAIR (1874-1948), American economist 11 61-62
MITRE, BARTOLOME´ (1821-1906), Argentine historian and statesman, president 1862-1868 11 62-63
MIZOGUCHI, KENJI (1898-1956), Japanese film director 23 248-250
MIZRAHI, ISAAC (born 1961), American designer 11 66-67
MLADIC, RATKO (born 1943), Bosnian Serb military leader 11 68-69
MOBUTU SESE SEKO (Joseph Désiré Mobutu; 1930-1997), Congolese president 11 69-71
MODEL, LISETTE (nee Lisette Seyberg; 1906-1983), American photographer 11 114-116
MODIGLIANI, AMEDEO (1884-1920), Italian painter and sculptor 11 122-123
MOFFETT, WILLIAM ADGER (1869-1933), American naval officer 21 299-301
MOFOLO, THOMAS (1876-1948), Lesothoan author 11 74
MOGILA, PETER (1596/1597-1646), Russian Orthodox churchman and theologian 11 74-75
Mogul empire
see India--1000-1600
MOHAMMAD REZA SHAH PAHLAVI (1919-1980), king of Iran 11 75-76
MOHAMMED (circ. 570-632), founder of Islam 11 76-78
MOHAMMED V (Mohammed Ben Youssef; 1911-1961), king of Morocco 11 79-81
MOHAMMED ALI (1769-1849), Ottoman pasha of Egypt 1805-1848 11 81-82
MOHOLY-NAGY, LÁSZLÓ (1895-1946), Hungarian painter and designer 11 82-83
MOI, DANIEL ARAP (born Daniel Toroitich arap Moi; born 1924), president of Kenya 11 83-86
Molecular biology
see Biology, molecular
MOLIÈRE (1622-1673), French dramatist 11 86-88
MOLINARI, SUSAN K. (born 1958), American newscaster 18 289-291
MOLINOS, MIGUEL DE (1628-1696), Spanish priest 11 88-89
MOLOTOV, VYACHESLAV MIKHAILOVICH (1890-1986), Soviet statesman 11 89-90
MOLTKOL, JÖRGEN (born 1926), German Protestant theologian 11 91-92
MOMADAY, N. SCOTT (born 1934), Native American author 11 92-94
MOMMSEN, THEODOR (1817-1903), German historian and philologist 11 94-95
MONAGHAN, ASHLEY (born 1956), American actress and former model 20 272-274
MONDALE, WALTER F. (Fritz; born 1928), United States senator and vice president 11 97-99
MONDAVI, ROBERT (born 1913), American winemaker 19 258-260
MONDIANE, EDUARDO CHIVAMBO (1920-1969), Mozambican educator and nationalist 11 100-101
MONDIAN, PIET (1872-1944), Dutch painter 11 101-102
MONET, CLAUDE (1840-1926), French painter 11 102-104
MONGKUT (Rama IV; 1804-1868), king of Thailand 1851-1868 11 104
MONK, THELONIOUS (1917-1982), African American jazz musician 11 104-108
MONMOUTH AND BUCKLEIGH, DUKE OF (James Scott; 1649-1685), English claimant to the throne 11 108-109
MONNET, JEAN (1888-1979), French economist and diplomat 11 109-110
MONOD, JACQUES (1910-1976), French biologist who discovered messenger RNA 11 110-111
MONROE, JAMES (1758-1831), American diplomat and statesman, president 1817-1825 11 111-113
MONROE, MARILYN (Norma Jean Baker; 1926-1962), film actress 11 113-114
MONTAGNER, LUC (born 1932), French virologist 11 114-116
MONTAGU, ASHLEY (1915-2003), English biologist and first lord of the admiralty 21 301-303
MONTAGU, MARY WORTLEY (1689-1762), English poet 18 291-293
MONTAIGNE, MICHEL EYQUEM DE (1533-1592), French essayist 11 116-117
MONTALE, EUGENIO (1896-1981), Italian poet and critic 11 117-118
MONTALEMBERT, COMTE DE (Charles Forbes; 1810-1870), French politician and statesman 11 118-119
MONTALVO, JOAN MARÍA (1832-1889), Ecuadorian writer 11 119-120
MONTANA, JOE (born 1956), American football player 11 120-121
MONTANUS (flourished 2nd century), Early Christian founder of schismatic sect 11 122
MONTCALM DE SAINT-VÉRAN, MARQUIS DE (1712-1759), French general in Canada 11 122-123
MONTFIORE, MOSES (1784-1885), English Zionist and philanthropist 20 272-274
MONTESQUIEU, BARON DE (Charles Louis de Secondat; 1689-1755), French man of letters 11 123-125
MONTESSORI, MARIA (1870-1952), Italian educator and physician 11 125-126
MONTEVERDI, CLAUDIO GIOVANNI ANTONIO (1567-1643), Italian composer 11 126-128
MONTEZUMA I (Moctezuma I; Moceztuma I; 1397-1469), Aztec ruler 22 322-324
MONTEZUMA II (1466?-1520), Aztec emperor 1502-1520 11 128-129
MONTZUMA, CARLOS (born Wassaja; ca. 1865-1923), Native American
physician and political leader

MONTFORT, SIMON DE (6th Earl of Leicester; 1208-1265), English statesman and soldier

MONTGOFFIER, JACQUES ÉTIENNE (1745-1799), French inventor and industrialist

MONTGOFFIER, JOSEPH MICHEL (1740-1810), French inventor and industrialist

MONTGOMERY, BERNARD LAW (1st Viscount Montgomery of Alamein; born 1887), English field marshal

MONTGOMERY, LUCY MAUD (1874-1942), Canadian author

MONTGOMERY, RICHARD (1736-1775), colonial American general

Montreal Canadiens (hockey team)

MOODY, DWIGHT L. (1837-1899), American evangelist

MOON, SUN MYUNG (born 1920), founder of the Unification Church

MOORE, CHARLES WILLARD (1925-1993), American architect and educator

MOORE, CHARLOTTE E. (1898-1990), American astrophysicist

MOORE, GEORGE EDWARD (1873-1958), English philosopher

MOORE, HENRY (1898-1986), English sculptor

MOORE, MARIANNE (1887-1972), American poet and translator

MORALÉS, LUIS DE (circa 1519-1586), Spanish painter

MORALÉS-BERMÚDEZ CERRUTI, FRANCISCO (born 1921), president of Peru (1975-1980)

MORAN, THOMAS (1837-1926), American painter and graphic artist

MORANDI, GIORGIO (1890-1964), Italian painter of still lifes

MORAVIA, ALBERTO (1907-1990), Italian author

MORAZÁN, JOSÉ FRANCISCO (1792-1842), Central American general and statesman

MORE, SIR THOMAS (1478-1535), English humanist and statesman

MOREAU, GUSTAVE (1826-1898), French artist and professor

MORELOS, JOSÉ MARÍA (1765-1815), Mexican priest and revolutionary leader

MORENO, MARIANO (1778-1811), Argentine revolutionary

MORGAGNI, GIOVANNI BATTISTA (1682-1771), Italian anatomist

MORGAN, CONWAY LLOYD (1820-1893), English psychologist

MORGAN, DANIEL (circa 1735-1802), American soldier and tactician

MORGAN, GARRETT A. (1877-1963), African American inventor and publisher

MORGAN, JOHN (1735-1789), American physician

MORGAN, JOHN PIERPONT (1837-1913), American banker

MORGAN, JOHN PIERPONT, II (1877-1963), American industrialist

MORGAN, JULIA (1872-1957), American architect

MORGAN, JUNIUS SPENCER (1813-1890), American banker

MORGAN, LEWIS HENRY (1818-1881), American anthropologist

MORGAN, ROBIN (born 1941), feminist writer, editor, poet, and political activist

MORGAN, THOMAS HUNT (1866-1945), American zoologist and geneticist

MORGENTHAU, HANS J. (1904-1979), American political scientist

MORGENTHAU, HENRY, JR. (1891-1967), American statesman

MORIN, PAUL (1889-1963), French-Canadian poet
MORTON, NELLE KATHERINE (1905-1987), activist for racial justice, teacher of Christian educators, and proponent of feminist theology 11 195-197

MORTON, OLIVER HAZARD PERRY THROCK (1823-1877), American politician 11 197-198

MORTON, WILLIAM THOMAS GREEN (1819-1868), American diplomat 11 198-199

MOSELEY-BRAUN, CAROL (born 1947), African American Democratic senator from Illinois 11 199-200

MOSES (circa 1392-circa 1272 B.C.), Hebrew prophet and lawgiver 11 200-201

MOSES, EDWIN (born 1955), African American track and field star 20 275-277

MOSES, GRANDMA (Anna Mary Robertson; 1860-1961), American painter 11 201-202

MOSES, ROBERT (1888-1981), New York City’s builder of public works 11 202-203

MOSHESWIVE (Moshesh; circa 1787-1868), South African king 11 203-205

MOSQUERA, TOMÁS CIPRIANO DE (1798-1878), Colombian statesman 11 205-206

MOSSADEGH, MOHAMMAD (Musaddiq; 1882-1967), Iranian nationalist politician and prime minister (1951-1953) 11 206-207

MÖSSBAUER, RUDOLF (born 1929), German physicist 11 208-209

MOTHERWELL, ROBERT (1915-1991), American painter 11 210-211

Motion pictures (Asia) Kojyō, Masaki 23 199-201 Mizoguchi, Kenji 23 248-250 Ozu, Yasujirō 23 279-281

Motion pictures (Australia) Campion, Jane 23 38-60


Motion pictures (Russia) Tarkovsky, Andrei 23 392-395

Motion pictures (United States) directors Brooks, Mel 23 48-50 Polanski, Roman 23 310-312

experimental Nauman, Bruce 23 259-261
musicals Brooks, Mel 23 48-50 “talkies” and after Peterson, Oscar 23 304-306 theater chains Redstone, Sumner 23 329-331

MOTLEY, CONSTANCE BAKER (born 1921), African American judge and attorney 18 295-297

MOTLEY, JOHN THORP (1814-1877), American historian and diplomat 11 211-212

MOTLEY, WILLARD FRANCIS (1909-1965), African American author 22 326-328

MOTT, JOHN R. (1865-1955), American Protestant leader 11 212

MOTT, LUcretia COffin (1793-1880), American feminist and abolitionist 11 212-213

MOUNT, WILLIAM SIDNEY (1807-1868), American painter 11 213-214

MOUNTBATTEN, LOUIS FRANCIS ALBERT VICTOR NICHOLAS (1900-1979), English Navy officer and viceroy of India 18 297-299

MOYERS, BILLY DON (“Bill”; born 1934), television journalist, author, and press secretary to president Lyndon B. Johnson 11 214-216

MOYNIHAN, DANIEL FRANCIS (“Pat”; 1927-2003), United States senator from New York 11 216-218

MOZART, WOLFGANG AMADEUS (1756-1791), Austrian composer 11 218-221
interpretations Uchida, Mitsuko 23 413-415

MPHAHLELE, EZEKIEL (a.k.a. Bruno Eseki; born 1919), South African author and scholar 11 221-223

MQHAYI, SAMUEL EDWARD KRUNE (1875-1945), South African novelist and poet 11 223

MUAWIYA IBN ABU SUGI (died 680), Umayyad caliph 11 223-224

MUBARAK, HOSNI (born 1928), president of Egypt 11 225-226

MEUller, Otto (1874-1930), German expressionist painter 11 226-227

MUGABE, ROBERT GODFREY (born 1924), Zimbabwe’s first elected black prime minister 11 227-229

MUHAMMAD, ELHAY (Poole; 1897-1975), leader of the Nation of Islam (“Black Muslims”) 11 230-231

MUHAMMAD BIN TUGHOLUQ (ruled 1325-1351), Moslem sultan of Delhi 11 229

MUHAMMAD TURE, ASKIA (circa 1443-1538), ruler of the West African Songhay empire 11 231-232

MÜHLENBERG, HEINRICH MELCHIOR (1711-1787), German-born American Lutheran clergyman 11 232-233

MÜHLENBERG, WILLIAM AUGUSTUS (1796-1877), American Episcopal clergyman 11 233-234

MUIR, JOHN (1838-1914), American naturalist 11 234

MUJIBUR RAHMAN, SHEIK (1920-1975), Bengali leader who helped found Bangladesh 11 234-236

MUKERJI, DHAN Gopal (1890-1936), Indian author and Hindu priest 22 328-330

MULDOWNLEY, SHIRLEY (born ca. 1940), American race car driver 11 236-238

MULLER, HERMANN JOSEPH (1890-1967), American geneticist 11 238-239

MÜLLER, JOHANNES PETER (1801-1858), German physician and anatomist 11 239-240

MÜLLER, KARL ALEXANDER (born 1927), Swiss-born solid-state physicist 11 240-241

MÜLLER, PAUL HERMANN (1899-1965), Swiss chemist 11 241-242

MULRONEY, MARTIN BRIAN (born 1939), prime minister of Canada 11 242-246

MUMFORD, LEWIS (1895-1990), American social philosopher and architectural critic 11 246-247

MUNCH, EDVARD (1863-1944), Norwegian painter and graphic artist 11 247-248

MUNDELEIN, GEORGE WILLIAM (1872-1939), American Roman Catholic cardinal 11 248-249

MUÑOZ MARÍN, JOSÉ LUIS ALBERTO (1898-1980), Puerto Rican political leader 11 249-250

MUÑOZ RIVERA, LUIS (1859-1916), Puerto Rican political leader 11 250

MUNSEY, FRANK ANDREW (1854-1925), American publisher 11 251

MÜNŽER, THOMAS (1487-1525), German Protestant reformer 11 251-252
MURAD II (1403?-1451), Ottoman sultan 1421-1451
Kastrioti-Skanderbeg, Gjergj 23 187-189

MURASAKI SHIKIBU (circa 976-circa 1031), Japanese writer 11 252-253

MURAT, JOACHIM (1767-1815), French marshal, king of Naples 1808-1815 11 253-254

MURATORI, LODOVICO ANTONIO (1672-1750), Italian historian and antiquary 11 254-255

MURCHISON, SIR RODERICK IMPEY (1792-1871), British geologist 11 255-256

MURRAY, WILLIAM (Lord Mansfield; 1705-1793), English judge 23 260-261

MURPHY, AUDIE (1924-1971), American civil right activist and priest 11 299-301

MURPHY, CHARLES FRANCIS (1858-1924), American politician 11 259-260

MURPHY, FRANK (1890-1949), American jurist and diplomat 11 260-261

MURRAY, GILBERT (George Gilbert Aime Murray; 1886-1957), English scholar 23 250-253

MURRAY, JAMES (1721-1794), British general 11 261-262

MURRAY, JOSEPH (born 1919), American physician 18 301-303

MURRAY, LESLIE ALLAN (born 1938), Australian poet and literary critic 11 262-263

MURRAY, PAULI (Anna Pauline Murray; 1910-1985), African American/Native American civil right activist and priest 23 253-256

MURRAY, PHILIP (1886-1952), American labor leader 11 264-265

MURRAY, WILLIAM (Lord Mansfield; 1705-1793), English judge 23 256-258

MURROW, EDWARD ROSCOE (1908-1965), American radio and television news broadcaster 11 265-266

MUSA MANSA (died 1337), king of the Mali empire in West Africa ca. 1312-1337 11 266

MUSGRAVE, THEA (born 1928), Scottish-born composer 11 266-268

MUSGRAVE, THEA (born 1928), Scottish-born composer 11 266-268

MUSGRAVE, THEA (born 1928), Scottish-born composer 11 266-268

Musician (United States) experimental forms Badings, Henk 23 26-28 recording of Burlin, Natalie Curtis 23 50-52

Musicals (United States) choreographers Tamiris, Helen 23 390-392 directors Brooks, Mel 23 48-50


Musicians, Australian Mackerras, Alan Charles 23 237-239

Musicians, Canadian Lombardo, Guy 23 234-236 Mitchell, Joni 23 246-248 Peterson, Oscar Emanuel 23 304-306

Musicians, Chinese Arrau, Claudio 23 17-18

Musicians, Cuban Lecuona, Ernesto 23 213-216

Musicians, Danish Nørgråd, Per 23 265-267

Musicians, English composers (19th-20th century) Leginska, Ethel 23 220-222 conductors Leginska, Ethel 23 220-222

Musicians, Estonian

Heavy Metal
Led Zeppelin 23 216-218 pianists Leginska, Ethel 23 220-222

Musicians, Estonian Part, Arvo 23 295-297

Musicians, Japanese

Uchida, Mitsuko 23 413-415

Musicians, Spanish

Bort, Lucrezia 23 44-45

Music, Heavy Metal

Heavy Metal
Led Zeppelin 23 216-218
N

NAACP
see National Association for the Advancement of Colored People

NABOKOV, VLADIMIR (1899-1977), Russian-born American writer, critic, and lepidopterist  11  287-288

NABUCO DE ARAUJO, JOAQUIM AURELIO (1849-1910), Brazilian abolitionist, statesman, and author  11  288-289

NADELMAN, ELIE (1882-1946), Polish-American sculptor and graphic artist  11  289-290

NADER, RALPH (born 1934), American lawyer and social crusader  11  290-291

NADIR SHAH (born Nadir Kouli; 1685-1747), Emperor of Persia  20  278-281

NAGEL, ERNEST (1901-1985), American philosopher of science  11  291-292

NAGUMO, CHUICHI (1887-1944), Japanese admiral  19  263-266

NAGURSKI, BRONKO (Bronislaw Nagurski; 1908-1990), Canadian football player  21  309-311


NAIMANIDES (1194-1270), Spanish Talmudist  11  293-294

NAIDU, SAROJINI (1879-1949), Indian poet and nationalist  11  294-295


NAISMITH, JAMES (1861-1939), Canadian inventor of basketball  21  311-313

NAJIBULLAH, MOHAMMAD (born 1947), Soviet-selected ruler of the Republic of Afghanistan  11  296-298

NAKASONE, YASUHIRO (born 1918), prime minister of Japan (1982-1987)  11  298-300

NAMATJIRA, ALBERT (1902-1959), Australian Aboriginal artist  11  300-301

NAMEIER, SIR LEWIS BEAERNSTEIN (1888-1960), English historian  11  301-303

NANAK (1469-1538), Indian reformer, founder of Sikhism  11  303

NAKED (film) Leigh, Mike  23  222-225

NANSEN, FRIDTIJOF (1861-1930), Norwegian polar explorer, scientist, and statesman  11  304-305

NAOROJI, DADABHAI (1825-1917), Indian nationalist leader  11  305

NAPIER, JOHN (1550-1617), Scottish mathematician  11  306

NAPOLEON I (1769-1821), emperor of the French 1804-1815  11  306-310

military strategy Jomini, Antoine Henri, Baron  23  177-179

NAPOLEON III (Louis Napoleon; 1808-1873), emperor of the French 1852-1870  11  310-312

NARAYAN, JAYAPRAKASH (1902-1979), Indian nationalist and social reformer  11  312-313

NARAYAN, R. K. (Narayanswami; born 1906), Indian author  11  313-314

NARIÑO, ANTONIO (1765-1823), Colombian patriot  11  314-315

NARVÁEZ, PÁNFILO DE (1478?-1528), Spanish soldier and explorer  11  315

NASH, JOHN (1752-1835), English architect and town planner  11  316

NASH, JOHN FORBS, JR. (born 1928), American mathematician  22  336-338

NASH, OGDEN (Fredric Ogden Nash; 1902-1971), American poet  18  304-306

NASMYTH, JAMES (1808-1890), Scottish engineer and inventor  11  316-317


NAST, CONDÉ (1873-1942), American publisher  19  266-268

NAST, THOMAS (1840-1902), American caricaturist and painter  11  318-319

NATHAN, GEORGE JEAN (1882-1958), American author, editor, and critic  11  319-321

NATION, CARRY AMELIA MOORE (1846-1911), American temperance reformer  11  321-322

National American Woman Suffrage Association (NAWSA) Terrell, Mary Church  23  397-399

National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (inc. 1910) formation Terrell, Mary Church  23  397-399

National Association of Colored Women (United States) Terrell, Mary Church  23  397-399

National Organization for Women (United States, established 1966) Murray, Paul  23  253-256

National Socialism see Nazism

Native Americans and the American Revolution Ward, Nancy  23  436-438

medicine Sanapia  23  358-360

society and culture Tekakwitha, Kateri  23  395-397

tribal leaders Ward, Nancy  23  436-438

NATIVITY, IRENE (born 1948), Asian American activist and women’s rights advocate  11  322-324

NATSUME, SOSEKI (or Kinosuke; 1867-1916), Japanese novelist and essayist  11  324-325

Naturalism (art) Asia Okyo, Maruyama  23  272-274

Europe North, Marianne  23  268-270

NAUMAN, BRUCE (born 1941), American artist  23  259-261

NAVRATILOVA, MARTINA (born 1956), American tennis player  11  325-327

NAYLOR, GLORIA (born 1950), African American novelist  11  328-329

Nazi party see Nazism

Nazism (National Socialism) Films relating to Pabst, G. W.  23  282-284

NAZZAM, Ibrahim Ibn Sayyar Al- (died circa 840), Moslem thinker and theologian  11  329

N’DOUR, YOUSHOU (born 1959), Senegalese musician  22  338-340

NE WIN (1911-2002), Burmese political leader  11  364-365

NEAL, PATRICIA (Patsy Louise Neal; born 1926), American actress  19  268-270

NEBUCHADNEZZAR (ruled 605-562 B.C.), king of Babylon  11  330

NECKER, JACQUES (1732-1804), French financier and statesman  11  330-331

NEEL, ALICE (Alice Hartley Neel; 1900-1984), American artist  23  261-263

NEFERTITI (flourished first half 14th century B.C.), Egyptian queen  11  331-332

Negro Spirituals (dances) Tamiris, Helen  23  390-392

NEHRU, JAWAHARLAL (1889-1964), Indian nationalist, prime minister 1947-1964  11  332-334
Niebuhr, Helmuth Richard (1894-1962), American Protestant theologian

Niebuhr, Reinhold (1892-1971), American Protestant theologian

Niezen, Carl August (1865-1931), Danish composer

Nieyé Soares Filho, Oscar (born 1907), Brazilian architect

Nietzsche, Friedrich (1844-1900), German philosopher and poet

Nightingale, Florence (1820-1910), English nurse

Nixon, Richard Milhous (1913-1994), president of the United States

Nobel, Alfred Bernhard (1833-1896), Swedish chemist

Nobel Prize winners

- Chemistry
  - Altman, Sidney
  - Lee, Yuan Tseh
- Medicine and Physiology
  - Prusiner, Stanley Ben
- Physics
  - Leavitt, Henrietta Swan
- Nobunaga, Oda (1534-1582), Japanese general and statesman

Nobles, Umberto (1885-1978), Italian explorer and airship designer

Noether, Emmy (born Amalie Emmy Noether; 1882-1935), German American mathematician

Noguchi, Isamu (1904-1988), American sculptor and designer

Nolan, Sidney Robert (1917-1992), Australian expressionist painter

Noland, Kenneth (born 1924), American color-field painter

Nolde, Emil (1867-1956), German expressionist painter

Nono, Luigi (1924-1990), Italian composer

Nordenskjöld, Baron Nils Adolf Erik (1832-1901), Finnish-Swedish polar explorer and mineralogist

Nordenskold, Nils Otto Gustaf (1869-1928), Swedish polar explorer and geologist

Nordstrom, John (Johann Evangelist Nordstrom; 1871-1963), American shoe retailer

Norfolk, 3D Duke of (Thomas Howard; 1473-1554), English soldier and councillor

Norgård, Per (born 1932), Danish composer

Noriega, Manuel A. (born 1934), strongman of Panama (1980s) forced out in 1989 by the United States

Norman, Jessye (born 1945), American singer

Norris, Benjamin Franklin, Jr. (1870-1902), American novelist and critic

Norris, George William (1861-1944), American statesman

North, Frederick (2nd Earl of Guilford; 1732-1792), English statesman

North, Marianne (1830-1890), English naturalist and painter

North Pole

see Arctic exploration

Northrop, John Howard (1891-1987), American biological chemist

Northumberland, Duke of (John Dudley; circa 1502-1553), English soldier and statesman

Nostalgia (film)

Noury, Robert (1927-1990), American physicist and inventor

Novalis, Antonia (Antonia Coello; born 1944), Puerto Rican American pediatrician

Novello, Antonia (1811-1886), American founder of the Oneida Community

Nozick, Robert (1938-2002), American philosopher and political advocate of radical libertarianism

Nuclear physics (science)

- Elementary particles
  - Ting, Samuel Chao Chung
  - Subatomic particles
    - Ting, Samuel Chao Chung

Nujama, Shafiuhuna ("Sam"); born 1929, first president of independent Namibia

Nuñez, Sam (born 1938), United States senator from Georgia

Nuruddin (Malik al-Adil Nur-al-Din Mahmud; 1118-1174), sultan of Syria and Egypt

Nureyev, Rudolph (born 1938), Russian-born dancer and choreographer

Nuri al-Sa’idi (1888-1958), Iraqi army officer, statesman, and nationalist
NURMI, PAAVO (1897-1973), Finnish runner 19 272-274
NYE, GERALD (1892-1971), American senator 21 320-323
NYERERE, JULIUS KAMBERAGE (born 1922), Tanzanian statesman 11 447-449
NYGREN, ANDERS (1890-1978), Lutheran bishop of Lund and representative of the so-called Lundensian school of theology 11 449-451
NZINGA, ANNA (Pande Dona Ana Souza; 1582-1663), queen of Angola 23 270-271
NZINGA NKUWU (died 1506), king of Kongo 11 451-452

O

OAKLEY, ANNIE (1860-1926), American marksman and Wild West star 11 453-454
OATES, JOYCE CAROL (born 1938), American author 11 454-456
OATES, TITUS (1649-1705), English leader of the Popish Plot 11 456
OBOE, APOLO MILTON (born 1925), Ugandan politician 11 457
OBERCHT, JACOB (1450-1505), Dutch composer 11 457-458
OBERGON, ÁLVARO (1880-1928), Mexican revolutionary general and president 11 458-459
OBRIEN, WILLIS (1886-1962), American film special effects pioneer 21 324-326
O’CASEY, SEAN (1880-1964), Irish dramatist 11 459-460
OCHOA, ELLEN (born 1958), Hispanic American electrical engineer and astronaut 11 460-461
OCHOA, SEVERO (1905-1993), Spanish biochemist 11 461-464
OCHS, ADOLPH SIMON (1858-1935), American publisher and philanthropist 11 464
OCEGHMEM, JOHANNES (circa 1425-1495), Netherlandish composer 11 464-465
O’CONNELL, DANIEL (1775-1847), Irish statesman 11 465-467
O’CONNOR, CARROLL (1924-2001), American actor 22 343-345
O’CONNOR, JOHN JOSEPH (1920-2000), American Roman Catholic cardinal and archbishop 22 345-347
O’CONNOR, (MARY) FLANNERY (1925-1964), American author of short stories and novels 11 467-468
O’CONNOR, SANDRA DAY (born 1930), United States Supreme Court justice 11 468-470
ODETS, CLIFFORD (1906-1963), American playwright and film director 11 470-471
ODINGA, AJUMA JARAMOGI OGINA (born 1912), Kenyan politician 11 471-473
ODOUATOR, (433-493), Germanic chief 11 473
ODRIÁ AMORETTI, MANUEL APOLOMINAR (1897-1974), Peruvian army officer, dictator-president, and politician 11 473-474
ODUM, HOWARD WASHINGTON (1884-1954), American sociologist, educator, and academic administrator 11 474-476
ODUMEGWU OJUKWU, CHUKWUEMEKA (born 1933), Nigerian army general and rebel 18 311-313
OERSTED, HANS CHRISTIAN (1777-1851), Danish physicist 11 476-478
OERTER, AL (Alfred Adolph Oerter Jr.; born 1936), American discus thrower 21 326-328
OFFENBACH, JACQUES (1819-1880), German-French composer 11 478-479
OGATA, SADAKO (born 1927), United Nations High Commissioner for Refugees 11 479-480
Ogburn, William Fielding (1886-1959), American sociologist 11 480
Ogdens, Peter Skene (1794-1854), Canadian fur trader and explorer 11 480-481
Ogilvy, David Mackenzie (1911-1999), British-American advertising executive 11 481-482
Ogletorre, James Edward (1696-1785), English general and colonizer 11 482-483
OGOT, GRACE EMILY AKINYI (born 1930), Kenyan author and politician 11 483-484
O’HAGEN, MADALYN MURRAY (born 1919), American atheist author and radio commentator 11 484-485
O’HARA, JOHN (1905-1970), American novelist 11 485
O’HIGGINS, BERNARDO (1778-1842), Chilean soldier and statesman 11 486
OHM, GEORG SIMON (1789-1854), German physicist 11 486-487
O’KEEFE, GEORGIA (1887-1986), American painter 11 487-489
OKUBO, TOSHIMICHI (1830-1878), Japanese statesman 11 489-490
OKUMA, SHIGENOBU (1838-1922), Japanese statesman 11 490
OKYO, MARUYAMA (1733-1795), Japanese artist 23 272-274
OLAF I TRYGGVASON (968-1000), Viking warrior and king of Norway 11 490-493
OLAF II (circa 990-1030), king of Norway 11 493-494
OLBRICH, JOSEF MARIA (1867-1908), Austrian Art Nouveau architect and founder of the Vienna Secession 11 494-495
Old Testament see Bible
OLDENBARNEVELT, JOHAN VAN (1547-1619), Dutch statesman 11 495-496
OLDENBURG, CLAES (born 1827), American artist 11 496-498
OLDS, RANSOM ELI (1864-1950), American inventor and automobile manufacturer 18 313-315
OLIPHANT, PATRICK BRUCE (born 1935), American newspaper editorial cartoonist 11 498-500
OLIVER, JAMES (1823-1908), American inventor and manufacturer 11 500-501
OLIVETTI, ADRIANO (1901-1960), Italian manufacturer of typewriters, calculators, and computers 11 501-502
OLIVIER, LAURENCE (1907-1989), English actor and director 11 502-503
OLLER, FRANCISCO MANUEL (1833-1917), Puerto Rican artist 23 274-275
OLMSTED, FREDERICK LAW (1822-1903), American landscape architect 11 503-504
OLNEY, RICHARD (1835-1917), American statesman 11 504-505
OLSEN, TILLIE (nee Tillie Lerner; born 1913), American author 20 289-291
OLSON, CHARLES (1910-1970), American poet 11 505-506
Olympic Games
athletes
Albright, Tenley Emma 23 3-6
Blair, Bonnie 23 42-44
Button, Dick 23 55-57
Kekkonen, Urho Kaleva 23 189-191
Spitz, Mark 23 376-378
OLYMPIO, SYLVANUS E. (1902-1963), first president of the Republic of Togo

OMAR AL-MUKHTAR (circa 1860-1931), national hero of Libya and member of the Senusy

OMAR IBN AL-KHATTAB (died 644); second caliph of the Moslems

OMAR IBN SAID TAL, AL-HAJ (circa 1797-1864), West African Moslem leader

OMAR KHAYYAM (1048-circa 1132), Persian astronomer, mathematician, and poet

ONASSIS, JACQUELINE LEE BOUVIER KENNEDY (1929-1994), American First Lady

ÖNATE, JUAN DE (circa 1549-circa 1624), Spanish explorer

ONDAATJE, MICHAEL (1929-1994), Canadian playwright

ONORES, SERGIO (1878-1961), American statesman

ORELLANA, FRANCISCO DE (circa 1511-1546), Spanish explorer

ORIGEN (Origenes Adamantius; circa 185-circa 254), Early Christian theologian

ORLANDO, VITTORIO EMANUELE (1860-1952), Italian statesman

ORLÉANS, CHARLES (1394-1465), French prince and poet

ORLÉANS, PHILIPPE II (1674-1723), French statesman, regent 1715-23

ORZOCO, JOSÉ CLEMENTE (1883-1949), Mexican painter

Orr, BOBBY (Robert Gordon Orr; born 1948), Canadian hockey player

Orr, JOHN BOYD (1st Baron Orr of Brechin; 1880-1971), Scottish nutritionist and UN official

Ortega, Daniel (born 1945), leader of the Sandinista National Liberation Front and president of Nicaragua

Ortega y Gasset, José (1883-1955), Spanish philosopher and essayist

Ortelius, Abraham (Abraham, Ortelis; 1527-1598), Flemish cartographer

Oritz, Simon J. (born 1923), American dramatist

Orson, John Kingsley ("Joe;" 1933-1967), British playwright

Orrwell, George (1903-1950), British novelist and essayist

Osborne, John (1929-1994), English playwright

Osborne, Thomas Mott (1859-1926), American reformer

Osceola (circa 1800-1838), Seminole Indian war chief

Osgood, Herbert Levi (1855-1918), American historian

Osler, Sir william (1849-1919), Canadian physician

Osman I (Othman; 1259-1326), Turkish warrior-leader who established the Ottoman state as an independent entity

Osmena, Sergio (1878-1961), Philippine lawyer and statesman

Oswald, Lee Harvey (1939-1963), presumed assassin of John F. Kennedy

Otis, Elisa Graves (1811-1861), American manufacturer and inventor

Otis, Harrison Gray (1765-1848), American statesman

Otis, James, Jr. (1725-1783), American Revolutionary statesman

Otterbein, Philip William (1726-1813), American clergyman

Otto I (912-973), Holy Roman emperor

Otto II (983-1002), Holy Roman emperor

Otto III (983-1002), Holy Roman emperor

Otto, NicolauS August (1832-1891), German engineer and inventor

Otto of Freising (circa 1114-1158), German historiographer and philosopher of history

Oud, Jacobus Johannes Pieter (1890-1963), Dutch architect

Oughtred, William (1574-1660), English mathematician

Ousmane, Sembene (born 1923), Senegalese novelist and film maker

Owens, David Anthony Llewellyn (born 1938), English peace envoy in former Yugoslavia for the European Community

Owen, Ruth Bryan (1885-1954), American congresswoman, diplomat, and author
Owen, Wilfred (1893-1918), English poet 20 291-293

Owens, Jesse (1913-1980), African American track star 12 43-44

Oxenstierna, Count Axel Gustafsson (1583-1654), Swedish statesman 12 44-45

Oxford Committee for Famine Relief (Oxfam) Murray, Gilbert 23 250-253

Oz, Amos (born 1939), Israeli author 12 45-47

Ozal, Turgut (born 1927), Turkish prime minister and president 12 47-49

Ozawa, Seiji (born 1935), Japanese musician and conductor 12 49-51

Ozu, Yasujirō (1903-1963), Japanese film director 23 279-281

Page, Walter Hines (1855-1918), American journalist and diplomat 12 60-61

PAGELS, ELAINE HIESEY (born 1943), historian of religion 12 61-62

Paglia, Camille (born 1947), American author and social critic 23 286-288

Paige, Satchel (Leroy Robert Paige; 1906-1982), African American baseball player 12 62-65

Paine, John Knowles (1839-1905), American composer 12 65

Paine, Thomas (1737-1809), English-born American journalist and Revolutionary propagandist 12 66-67

Paisley, Ian K. (born 1926), political leader and minister of religion in Northern Ireland 12 67-69

Palacký, František (1798-1876), Czech historian and statesman 12 69-70

Palamas, Kostes (1859-1943), Greek poet 12 70

Palestrina, Giovanni Pierluigi da (circa 1525-94), Italian composer 12 70-72

Paley, Grace (born, 1922), American author and activist 22 348-350

Paley, William (1743-1805), English theologian and moral philosopher 12 72

Paley, William S. (1901-1990), founder and chairman of the Columbia Broadcasting System 12 72-75

Palladio, Andrea (1508-1580), Italian architect 12 75-77

Palma, Ricardo (1833-1919), Peruvian poet, essayist, and short-story writer 12 77

Palmer, Alexander Mitchell (1872-1936), American politician and jurist 12 77-78

Palmer, Arnold Daniel (born 1929), American golfer 12 78-80

Palmer, Nathaniel Brown (1799-1877), American sea captain 12 80-81

Palmer, Phoebe Worrall (1807-1847), American evangelist 23 288-290

Palmerston, 3D Viscount (Henry John Temple; 1784-1865), English prime minister 1855-65 12 81-83

Pan Ku (32-92), Chinese historian and man of letters 12 86-87

Pandit, Vijaya Lakshmi (1900-1990), Indian diplomat and politician 12 83-84

Pandora’s Box (film) Pabst, G. W. 23 282-284

Panetta, Leon E. (born 1938), Democratic congressman from California and chief of staff to President Clinton 12 84-85

Pankhurst, Christabel Harriette (1880-1948), English reformer and suffragette 22 350-352

Pankhurst, Emmeline (1858-1928), English reformer 12 85-86

Pannenberg, Wolfhart (born 1928), German Protestant theologian 12 87-88

Papacy Papacy of Paul V 23 297-299

Papandreou, Andreas (1919-1996), Greek scholar and statesman and prime minister 12 88-91

Papineau, Louis-Joseph (1786-1871), French-Canadian radical political leader 12 91

Paracelsus, Philippus Aureolus (1493-1541), Swiss physician and alchemist 12 91-93

Parbo, Arvi (born 1926), Australian industrial giant 12 93-94

Pare, Ambrose (1510-1590), French military surgeon 12 94-95

Pareto, Vilfredo (1848-1923), Italian sociologist, political theorist, and economist 12 95-96

Parham, Charles Fox (1873-1929), American evangelist 23 291-293

Parizeau, Jacques (born 1930), Canadian politician and premier of Quebec 12 96-99

Park, Chung Hee (1917-1979), Korean soldier and statesman 12 99-102

Park, Robert E. (1864-1944), American sociologist 12 102-104

Park, William Hallock (1863-1939), American physician 12 104-105

Parker, Charles Christopher, Jr. (Charlie Parker; 1920-55), American jazz musician 12 105-106

Parker, Dorothy Rothschild (1893-1967), American writer 12 106
PARKER, ELY SAMUEL (Ha-sa-no-an-da; 1828-1895), Native American tribal leader 12 106-108
PARKER, HORATIO WILLIAM (1863-1919), American composer 12 109
PARKER, QUANAH (c. 1845-1911), Native American religious leader 12 109-112
PARKER, THEODORE (1810-1860), American Unitarian clergyman 12 112-113
PARKES, ALEXANDER (1813-1890), British metallurgist and inventor of plastic 21 334-336
PARKES, SIR HENRY (1815-1896), Australian statesman 12 113
PARKMAN, FRANCIS (1823-1893), American historian 12 113-115
PARKS, HORATIO WILLIAM (1863-1919), American composer 12 109
PASCAL, BLAISE (1623-1662), French scientist and philosopher 12 122-124
PASHA, ENVYER (1881-1922), Turkish soldier and Young Turk leader 5 290-291
PASHA, TEFIK (1852-1892), khedive of Egypt 1879-92 15 157-158
PASTERNAK, BORIS LEONIDOVICH (1890-1960), Russian poet, novelist, and translator 12 124-125
PASTEUR, LOUIS (1822-1895), French chemist and biologist 12 125-127
PATCHEN, KENNETH (1911-1972), American experimental poet and novelist 12 128-129
PATEL, VALLABHBHAI (1875-1950), Indian political leader 12 129-130
PATER, WALTER HORATIO (1839-1894), English author 12 130-131
PATERSON, ANDREW BARTON (1864-1941), Australian folk poet 12 131-132
PATERSON, WILLIAM (1745-1806), American jurist 12 132-133
PATINO, SIMÓN ITURRI (1862-1947), Bolivian industrialist and entrepreneur 12 133-134
PATON, ALAN STEWART (1903-1988), South African writer and liberal leader 12 134-135
PATTERSON, FREDERICK DOUGLAS (1901-1988), African American educator 12 136-137
PATRICK, JENNIE R. (born 1949), African American chemical engineer 12 136-137
PATRICK, RUTH (born 1907), American limnologist 12 137-138
PATRICK, SAINT (died circa 460), British missionary bishop to Ireland 12 135-136
PATTEN, SIMON NELSON (1852-1922), American economist 12 138-139
PATTERSON, CHARLES A. (1890-1931), British engineer 12 120-121
PATTERSON, FRANK (1854-1908), American educator and reformer 12 121-122
PATTERSON, LOUella (Louella Oetlinger; 1881-1972), American gossip columnist 21 336-338
PATTERSON, LUCY GONZÁLEZ (1853-1942), Mexican American activist and author 23 293-295
PATTERSON, TALcott (1902-1979), American sociologist 12 122
PÄRT, ARVO (born 1935), Estonian musician 23 293-297
PASCAL, BLAISE (1623-1662), French scientist and philosopher 12 122-124
PAUL, BERNARD (1907-1945), American Army officer 12 140-141
PAUL I (754-801), Russian czar 1796-1801 12 143-144
PAUL II (Alessandro Farnese; 1468-1549), pope 1534-49 12 144-145
PAUL IV (Giampietro Carafa; 1476-1559), pope 1555-59 12 145-146
PAUL V (Camillo Borghese; 1550-1621), Italian pope 23 297-299
PAUL VI (Giovanni Battista Montini; 1897-1978), pope 12 146-148
PAUL, ALICE (1885-1977), American feminist and women's rights activist 19 277-280
PAUL, SAINT (died 66/67), Christian theologian and Apostle 12 141-143
PAULI, WOLFGANG ERNST (1900-1958), Austrian theoretical physicist 12 149
PAULING, LINUS CARL (born 1901), American chemist 12 150-152
PAVAROTTI, LUCIANO (born 1935), Italian tenor 12 152-154
PAVESE, CESARE (1908-1950), Italian novelist, poet, and critic 12 154-155
PAVLOV, IVAN PETROVICH (1849-1936), Russian physiologist 12 155-157
PAVLova, ANNA (1881-1931), Russian ballet dancer 12 157-159
PAYNE, JOHN HOWARD (1791-1852), American actor, playwright, and songwriter 12 159
PAYNE-GAPOSCHKIN, CECILIA (1900-1979), American astronomer 12 159-161
PAYTON, WALTER (1954-1999), American football player 20 294-296
PAZ, OCAvIO (1914-1998), Mexican diplomat, critic, editor, translator, poet, and essayist 12 161-162
PAZ ESTENSSORO, VICTOR (1907-2001), Bolivian statesman and reformer 12 163-164
PAZ ZAMORA, JAIME (born 1939), president of Bolivia (1989-) 12 165-167
PAZ ZAMORA, JAIME (born 1939), president of Bolivia (1989-) 12 165-167
PázmánY, PÉTER (1570-1637), Hungarian archbishop 12 164-165
PEABODY, ELIZABETH PALMER (1804-1894), American educator and author 12 167-168
PEABODY, GEORGE (1795-1869), American merchant, financier, and philanthropist 12 168
PEACOCK, THOMAS LOVE (1785-1866), English novelist and satirist 12 169
PEAL, CHARLES WILLSON (1741-1827), American painter and printer 12 169-171
PEAL, NORMAN VINCENT (1898-1993), American religious leader who blended psychotherapy and religion 12 171-172
PEAL, REMBRANDT (1778-1860), American painter 12 172-173
PEARSE, PATRICK HENRY (1879-1916), Irish poet, educator, and revolutionary 12 173-174
PEARSON, LESTER BOWLES (1897-1972), Canadian statesman and diplomat, prime minister 12 174-175
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Birth-Death</th>
<th>Occupation/Title</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>PICKERING, EDWARD CHARLES</td>
<td>(1846-1919)</td>
<td>American astronomer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PICKERING, TIMOTHY</td>
<td>(1745-1829)</td>
<td>American Revolutionary soldier and statesman</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pickett, Bill</td>
<td>(1870-1932)</td>
<td>American rodeo cowboy</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pickford, Mary</td>
<td>(Gladys Louise Smith; 1893-1979)</td>
<td>Canadian-American actress, screenwriter, and film producer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pico della Mirandola, Conte</td>
<td>(1463-1494)</td>
<td>Italian philosopher and human scholar</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pierce, Franklin</td>
<td>(1804-1869)</td>
<td>American statesman, president 1853-57</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pierce, John Robinson</td>
<td>(born 1910)</td>
<td>American electronics engineer and author</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Piero della Francesca</td>
<td>(circa 1415/20-92)</td>
<td>Italian painter</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pigou, Arthur Cecil</td>
<td>(1877-1959)</td>
<td>English economist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pike, Zebulon</td>
<td>(1779-1813)</td>
<td>American soldier and explorer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pillsbury, Charles Alfred</td>
<td>(1842-1899)</td>
<td>American businessman</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pilon, Germain</td>
<td>(circa 1535-90)</td>
<td>French sculptor</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pilusdski, Joseph</td>
<td>(1867-1935)</td>
<td>Polish general, president 1918-21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pinchback, Pinckney Benton</td>
<td>(1837-1921)</td>
<td>African American politician and public official</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pinchot, Gifford</td>
<td>(1865-1946)</td>
<td>American conservationist and public official</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pinckney, Charles</td>
<td>(1757-1824)</td>
<td>American politician and diplomat</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pinckney, Charles Cotesworth</td>
<td>(1745-1825)</td>
<td>American statesman</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pinicus, Gregory Goodwin</td>
<td>(1903-1967)</td>
<td>American biologist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pindar</td>
<td>(552/518-438 B.C.)</td>
<td>Greek lyric poet</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pinel, Philippe</td>
<td>(1745-1826)</td>
<td>French physician</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pinero, Arthur Wing</td>
<td>(1855-1934)</td>
<td>English playwright</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pinkerton, Allen</td>
<td>(1819-1884)</td>
<td>American detective</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pinkham, Lydia Estes</td>
<td>(1819-1883)</td>
<td>American patent medicine manufacturer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pinkney, William</td>
<td>(1764-1822)</td>
<td>American attorney, diplomat, and statesman</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pinochet Ugarite, Augusto</td>
<td>(born 1915)</td>
<td>Chilean military leader and dictator</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pinter, Harold</td>
<td>(born 1930)</td>
<td>English playwright</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pinto, Isaac</td>
<td>(1720-1791)</td>
<td>Jewish merchant and scholar</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pinzón, Martin Alonso</td>
<td>(1440?-1493)</td>
<td>Spanish navigator</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pinzón, Vicente Yáñez</td>
<td>(1460?-1524)</td>
<td>Spanish navigator</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pirandello, Luigi</td>
<td>(1867-1936)</td>
<td>Italian playwright, novelist, and critic</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Piranesi, Giovanni Battista</td>
<td>(1720-1778)</td>
<td>Italian engraver and architect</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pirenne, Jean Henri</td>
<td>(Jean Henri Otto Lucien Marie Pirenne; 1862-1935)</td>
<td>Italian engraver and architect</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pippin, Horace</td>
<td>(1888-1946)</td>
<td>African American painter</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pirandelto, Luigi</td>
<td>(1867-1936)</td>
<td>Italian playwright, novelist, and critic</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pisanello</td>
<td>(Antonio Pisano; before 1395-1455)</td>
<td>Italian painter and medalist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pisanò, Giovanni</td>
<td>(circa 1250-1314/17)</td>
<td>Italian engraver and architect</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pisanò, Nicole</td>
<td>(Nicola d’Apulia; circa 1220/25-1278/84)</td>
<td>Italian sculptor</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pissaro, Camille</td>
<td>(1830-1903)</td>
<td>French painter</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Piston, Walter</td>
<td>(born 1894)</td>
<td>American composer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pitt, William, the Elder</td>
<td>(1708-1778)</td>
<td>English statesman</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pitt, William, the Younger</td>
<td>(1759-1806)</td>
<td>English statesman</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pius II</td>
<td>(Enea Silvio de’Piccolomini; 1405-64)</td>
<td>pope 1458-64</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pius IV</td>
<td>(Giovanni Angelo de’ Medici; 1499-1565)</td>
<td>pope 1559-65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pius V</td>
<td>(Antonio Ghislieri; 1504-72)</td>
<td>pope 1566-72</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pius VI</td>
<td>(Gianangelo Braschi; 1717-99)</td>
<td>pope 1775-99</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pius VII</td>
<td>(Luigi Barnabà Chiaramonti; 1740-1823)</td>
<td>pope 1880-23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pius IX</td>
<td>(Giovanni Maria Mastai-Ferreti; 1792-1878)</td>
<td>pope 1846-78</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pius X</td>
<td>(Giuseppe Melchiorre Sarto; 1835-1914)</td>
<td>pope 1903-1921</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pius XI</td>
<td>(Ambrogio Damiano Achille Ratti; 1857-1893)</td>
<td>pope 1922-1939</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pius XII</td>
<td>(Eugenio Maria Giuseppe Pacelli; 1876-1958)</td>
<td>pope 1939-1958</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pizarro, Francisco</td>
<td>(circa 1474-1541)</td>
<td>Spanish conquistador in Peru</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Plaatje, Solomon Theshikho</td>
<td>(1878-1932)</td>
<td>South African writer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Planck, Max Karl Ernst Ludwig</td>
<td>(1858-1947)</td>
<td>German physicist</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Plane geometry
- see Geometry–plane

### Plants, medicinal
- Plant, Robert (born 1948), British singer
- Led Zeppelin
- Plants, medicinal
- Plotkin, Mark J. (1923) 308-310

### Plants
- Thalh, Sylvia (1932-1963), American poet and novelist
- Plato (428-347 B.C.), Greek philosopher
- Plautus (c. 254-circa 184 B.C.), Roman writer
- Plata, Galo (1906-1987), Ecuadorian statesman

### Plekhanov, Georgi
- ValentinoVich (1856-1918), Russian revolutionist and social philosopher

### Plenty Coups
- (c. 1848-1932), Native American tribal leader and Crow chief

### Pline The Elder
- (23/24-79), Roman encyclopedist

### Pline The Younger
- (circa 61-circa 113), Roman author and administrator

### Plisetskaya, Maya Mikhailovna
- (born 1925), Russian ballet dancer
Puerto Rico (United States commonwealth; island, Greater Antilles)
Rodríguez de Tío, Lola 23 345-346
PUFENDORF, BARON SAMUEL VON (1632-1694), German jurist and historian 12 477-478
PUGACHEV, EMELIAN IVANOYICH (1742-1775), Russian Cossack soldier 12 48-479
PUGIN, AUGUSTUS WELBY NORTHMORE (1812-1852), English architect 12 479-480
PULASKI, CASIMIR (1747/48-79), Polish patriot 12 480-481
PULCI, LUIGI (1432-1484), Italian poet 12 481
PULITZER, JOSEPH (1847-1911), American editor and publisher 12 481-482
Pulitzer Prize winners
Beveridge, Albert Jeremiah 23 39-41
PULLMAN, GEORGE MORTIMER (1831-1897), American industrial innovator 12 482-483
PUPIN, MICHAEL IDVORSKY (1858-1935), Serbo-American physicist and inventor 12 483-484
PURCELL, HENRY (1659-1695), English composer and organist 12 484-485
PURVIS, ROBERT (1810-1898), African American abolitionist 12 485-486
PURVEAR, MARTIN (born 1941), African American artist 12 486-487
PUSEY, EDWARD BOUVERIE (1800-1882), English clergyman and scholar 12 488-489
PUSHKIN, ALEKSANDR SERGEYEVICH (1799-1837), Russian poet and prose writer 12 489-491
PUTIN, VLADIMIR (born 1952), Russian president 21 353-358
PUTNAM, ISRAEL (1718-1790), American Revolutionary War general 12 491-492
PUVIS DE CHAVANNES, PIERRE (1824-1898), French painter 12 492-493
PYL, ERNIE (Earl Ernest Taylor Pyle; 1900-1945), American war correspondent during World War II 12 493-494
PYM, FRANCIS (Francis Leslie Pym; born 1922), British statesman 12 494-495
PYM, JOHN (1584-1643), English statesman 12 495-496
PYCHON, THOMAS (Thomas Ruggles Pynchon, Jr.; born 1937), American writer 12 496-498
PYTHAGORAS (circa 575-circa 495 B.C.), Greek philosopher, scientist, and religious teacher 12 498-499
PYTHIAS (c. 380 B.C.-c. 300 B.C.), Greek explorer 12 499-500
QABOOS IBN SA‘ID (born 1940), ruler of the Sultanate of Oman 12 501-502
QIANLONG (Ch‘ien-lung and Hung-li; 1711-1799), Chinese emperor 12 502-505
QUANT, MARY (born 1934), British fashion designer and businesswoman 19 303-305
Quantum theory (physics) and chemical reactions
Fukui, Kenichi 23 111-112
quantum electrodynamics
Wilson, Kenneth Geddies 23 446-448
Quark (hypothetical particle)
Ting, Samuel Chao Chung 23 406-408
QUASIMODO, SALVATORE (1901-1968), Italian poet, translator, and critic 12 506
QUAYLE, JAMES DANFORTH (born 1947), vice president under George Bush 12 507-509
 QUERIA, JACOPO DELLA (1374?-1438), Italian sculptor and architect 12 509
 QUÉTELET, LAMBERT ADOLPHE (1796-1874), Belgian statistician and astronomer 12 510-511
 QUEVEDO Y VILLEGAS, FRANCISCO GÓMEZ DE (1580-1645), Spanish poet, satirist, and novelist 12 511
 Quezon, Manuel Luis (1878-1944), Philippine statesman 12 511-513
 Quill, Willard van Orman (born 1908), American philosopher 12 514-515
 Quinn, Anthony (Antonio Rudolph Oaxaca Quinn; born 1915), Hispanic American actor and artist 20 302-304
QUINTILIAN (circa 35-circa 99), Roman rhetorician and literary critic 12 518-519
QUIRINO, ELPIDIO (1890-1956), Philippine statesman 12 519-520
QUIROGA, HORTACIO (1878-1937), Uruguayan writer 12 520-521
QUIROGA, JUAN FACUNDO (1788/1790-1835), Argentine caudillo 12 521-522
QUISLING, VIDKIN (1887-1945), Norwegian traitor 20 304-306
R
Rabbin
see Religious leaders, Jewish
RABEARIVELO, JEAN JOSEPH (1901-1937), Malagasy poet 12 523-524
RABELAIS, FRANÇOIS (circa 1494-circa 1553), French humanist, doctor, and writer 12 524-526
RABI, ISidor ISAAC (1898-1988), American physicist 12 526-527
RABIN, YITZHAK (1922-1995), Israeli statesman 12 527-529
RACHMANINOV, SERGEI VASILIEVICH (1873-1943), Russian composer, pianist, and conductor 12 531-532
RACINE, JEAN BAPTISTE (1639-1699), French dramatist 12 532-535
RADCLIFFE-BROWN, ALFRED (1881-1955), English anthropologist 12 535-536
RADEK, KARL BERNARDOVICH (1885-1939), Russian Communist leader 12 536-537
RADHAKRISHNAN, SARVEPALLI (1888-1995), Indian philosopher and statesman 12 537-538
Radiation
see Radioactivity
RADIN, PAUL (1883-1959), American anthropologist and ethnographer 12 538-539
Radio (communications)
see Radioactivity
Radioactivity (physics)
see Radioactivity
Radiochemistry (science)
see Radiochemistry
Radium (element–chemistry)
see Radium
RAFFLES, SIR THOMAS STAMFORD (1781-1826), English colonial administrator 13 1-2
RAFINESQUE, CONSTANTINE SAMUEL (1783-1840), French naturalist 21 359-361
RAFSANJANI, AKBAR HASHEMI (born 1934), president of Iran 13 3-4
RAHNER, KARL (1904-1984), German Catholic theologian 13 4-5
RAI, LALA LAJPAT (1865-1928), Indian nationalist leader 13 5-6
RAINERY, MA (Gertrude Pridgett; 1886-1939), American singer 19 306-308
RAINIER III, PRINCE OF MONACO (born 1923), ruler of the principality of Monaco 18 335-337
RAJAGOPALACHARI, CHAKRAVARTI (1879-1972), Indian nationalist leader 13 6-7
RAJARAJA I (985-1014), king of Sukhothai in Thailand 13 11
RAJAKRISHNA, SRI (1833-1886), Indian mystic, reformer, and saint 13 11-13
RAMAN, SIR CHANDRASEKHAR (1887-1970), Indian mathematician and physicist 13 13-14
RAMANUJA (Ramanujacarya; c. 1017-circa 1237), Indian theologian and philosopher 21 361-362
RAMANUJAN AIYANGAR, SRINIVASA (1887-1920), India mathematician 13 14-15
RAMAPHOSA, MATHEMELA CYRIL (born 1952), general secretary of the National Union of Mineworkers (NUM) in South Africa and secretary general of the African National Congress 13 15-16
RAMAZZINI, BERNARDINO (1683-1764), Italian physician 21 362-364
RAMEAU, JEAN PHILIPPE (1757-1847), French courtier, explorer, and poet 13 9-11
RANHART, Thomas (1552-1618), English statesman, soldier, and architect 13 137-139
RAMA KHAMHAENG (circa 1239-circa 1299), king of Sukhothai in Thailand 13 11
RAMPAL, JEAN-PIERRE LOUIS (1922-2000), French flutist 22 362-364
RAMPAL, SHRIDATH SURENDRANATH (born 1928), Guyanese barrister, politician, and international civil servant 13 19-20
RAMSAE II (ruled 1304-1237 B.C.), pharaoh of Egypt 13 22-23
RAMSEY, FRANK PLUMPTON (1903-1930), English mathematician and philosopher 13 25
RAMSEY, NORMAN FOSTER, JR. (born 1915), American physicist 13 25-27
RAMUS, PETRUS (1515-1572), French humanist, logician and mathematician 13 27-28
RAND, AYN (1905-1982), American author and philosopher 20 307-309
RANDOLPH, A. PHILIP (1889-1979), African American labor and civil rights leader 13 28-29
RANDOLPH, EDMUND (1753-1813), American statesman 13 29-30
RANDOLPH, JOHN (1773-1833), American statesman 13 30
RANDOLPH, PEYTON (1721-1775), American statesman 18 337-339
RANDS, BERNARD (born 1930), American musician 23 324-326
RANCEL, CHARLES B. (born 1930), Democratic U.S. representative from New York City 13 31-32
RANJIT SINGH (1780-1839), ruler of the Punjab 13 32-33
RANK, OTTO (1884-1939), Austrian psychotherapist 13 33
RANKIN, JEANNETTE PICKERING (1879-1988), German historian 13 33-35
RANKOV, VENKO (1922-1992), first prime minister of Cambodia 13 37-39
RANRANIDH, PRINCE NORODOM (born 1944), first prime minister of Cambodia 13 37-39
RANSOM, JOHN CROWE (1888-1974), American poet and critic 13 39-40
RAPHAEL (1483-1520), Italian painter and architect 13 40-42
RAPP, GEORGE (1757-1847), German-American religious leader 13 42-43
RASHI (1040-1105), French Jewish scholar and commentator 13 43
RASMUSSEN, KNUD JOHAN VICTOR (1879-1933), Danish Arctic explorer and ethnologist 13 44
RASPUTIN, GRIGORI EFIMOVICH (1872-1916), Russian monk 13 44-45
RATAN, TAUPOTIKI WIREMU (1870-1939), spiritual and political leader of the New Zealand Maori people 13 46
RATHBONE, ELEANOR (Florence Rathbone; 1872-1946), British politician and social reformer 13 47-48
RATHENAU, WALTER (1867-1922), German industrialist and statesman 13 48-49
RATTLE, SIMON DENIS (born 1955), conductor of England’s City of Birmingham Symphony Orchestra 13 49-50
RATZEL, FRIEDRICH (1844-1904), German geographer 13 50-51
RAU, JOHANNES (born 1931), German Social Democrat politician 13 51-52
RAUSCHENBERG, ROBERT (born 1925), American painter and printmaker 13 52-53
RAUSCHENBUSCH, WALTER (1861-1918), American Baptist clergyman 13 53-54
RAVEL, MAURICE JOSEPH (1875-1937), French composer 13 54-55
RAWLS, JOHN (1921-2002), American political philosopher 13 55-56
RAY, DIXY LEE (1915-1979), marine biologist and governor of Washington 13 56-57
RAY, JOHN (1627-1705), English naturalist 13 57-59
RAY, MAN (1890-1976), American painter, photographer, and object maker 13 59-60
RAY, NICHOLAS (Raymond Nicholas Kienzle; 1911-1978), American film director 22 364-366
RAY, SATYAJIT (1921-1992), Indian film director 13 60-61
RAYBURN, SAMUEL TALIAFERRO (1882-1961), American statesman 13 61-62
RAYBURN, 3D BARON (John William Strutt; 1842-1919), English physicist 13 62
RAZI (Abu Bakr Muhammad ibn Zakariya al-Razi; circa 865-925), Persian physician 13 63-64
RAZIA (Raziya; c. 1210-1240), sultana of Delhi 23 326-329

READING, 1ST MARQUESS OF (Rufus Daniel Isaacs; 1860-1935), English lawyer and statesman 13 64


REBER, GROTE (1911-2002), American radio astronomer 21 364-366

Reconquista
see Spain–Islamic

RECORDE, ROBERT (1510-1558), English mathematician 13 68-69

RECTO, CLARO M. (1890-1960), Philippine nationalist and statesman 13 69-70

RED CLOUD (1822-1909), American Oglala Sioux Indian chief 13 70-71

RED JACKET (1758-1830), Seneca tribal leader

Red scare
see U.S. history

REED, ISHMAEL (Emmett Coleman; born 1938), African American author 23 331-333

REED, JOHN SILAS (1887-1920), American revolutionist, poet, and journalis 13 76-77

REED, THOMAS BRACKETT (1839-1902), American statesman and parliamentarian 13 77

REED, WALTER (1851-1902), American military surgeon 13 78

REES, LLOYD FREDERIC (1895-1988), Australian artist 13 78-79

REEVE, CHRISTOPHER (born 1952), American actor and activist 18 342-344

REEVE, TAPPING (1744-1823), American jurist 13 79-80

Reform, social
see Social reform

Reformers, educational
see also Social scientists–educators

White, Ellen Gould 23 438-440

Reformers, legal
see U.S. judges

Reformers, social
American (19th-20th century)
Walker, Mary Edwards 23 432-434
Australian
Spence, Catherine Helen 23 374-375

REGAN, DONALD (Donald Thomas Regan; born 1918), American secretary of the treasury and White House chief of staff under Reagan 13 80-81

REGIONMONTANUS (1436-1476), German astronomer and mathematician 13 81-82

Regionalism and local color
(American literature)
West
Atherton, Gertrude 23 21-23
Austin, Mary Hunter 23 23-25

REHNQUIST, WILLIAM HUBBS (born 1924), U.S. Supreme Court chief justice 13 82-84

REICH, STEVE (born 1936), American composer 13 84-85

RECHSTEIN, TADEUS (1897-1996), Polish-Swiss chemist

REDFORD, ROBERT (Charles Robert Redford, Jr.; born 1937), American actor, producer, and director 18 339-342

REDGRAVE, VANESSA (born 1937), British actress and political activist 13 74-75

REDON, ODILON (1840-1916), French painter and graphic artist 13 75-76

REDSMITH, SUMNER MURRAY (born 1932), American businessman 23 329-331

REED, ISHAM (Emmett Coleman; born 1938), African American author 23 331-333

REED, JOHN SILAS (1887-1920), American revolutionist, poet, and journalist 13 76-77

REED, THOMAS BRACKETT (1839-1902), American statesman and parliamentarian 13 77

REED, WALTER (1851-1902), American military surgeon 13 78

REEN, LLOYD FREDERIC (1895-1988), Australian artist 13 78-79

REEVE, CHRISTOPHER (born 1952), American actor and activist 18 342-344

REEVE, TAPPING (1744-1823), American jurist 13 79-80

Religious leaders, Jewish
rabbis
Schindler, Alexander Moshe 23 360-362

Religious leaders, Protestant
Adventists
White, Ellen Gould 23 438-440
evangelists (Great Awakening)
Palmer, Phoebe Worrall 23 288-290
Parham, Charles Fox 23 291-293
Methodist ministers
Parham, Charles Fox 23 291-293
Methodist missionaries
Palmer, Phoebe Worrall 23 288-290
Seventh-Day Adventists
White, Ellen Gould 23 438-440

REMAQUE, ERICH MARIA (Erich Paul Remarq; 1898-1970), German novelist 13 91

REMBRANDT HARMENSZ VAN RIJN (1606-1669), Dutch painter and etcher 13 91-95

REMINGTON, FREDERIC (1861-1909), American sculptor and illustrator 18 344-346 91-95

REMOND, CHARLES LENNOX (1810-1873), American black abolitionist 13 95

RENAN, ERNEST (1823-1892), French author and philologist 13 95-96

RENDELL, RUTH (Ruth Grasemann Rendell; born 1930), English writer of mysteries and suspense thrillers 13 96-97

RENI, GUIDO (1575-1642), Italian painter 13 97-98

RENNER, KARL (1870-1950), Austrian statesman, president 1945-50 13 98-99

RENO, JANET (born 1938), U.S. attorney general (1993-13 99-101

RENOIR, JEAN (1894-1979), French-American film director, producer, and screenwriter 22 366-369

RENOIR, PIERRE AUGUSTE (1841-1919), French impressionist painter 13 101-102

RENWICK, JAMES (1819-1895), American architect 13 102-103

Republican party
(United States)
leaders
Ashcroft, John 23 18-21

RESNAIS, ALAIN (born 1922), French filmmaker 23 333-335

RESNIK, JUDITH ARLENE (Judy Resnik; 1949-1986), American astronaut 22 369-371

RESPIGHI, OTTORINO (1879-1936), Italian composer 13 103-104
RESTON, JAMES BARRETT ("Scotty"); born 1909, American journalist and political commentator 13 104-105

RETIEF, PIETER (1780-1838), South African Boer leader 13 105-106

REUCHLIN, JOHANN (1455-1522), German humanist and jurist 13 106-107

REUTER, PAUL JULIUS VON (Israel Beer Josaphat; 1816-1899), French journalist 21 366-367

REUTHER, WALTER PHILIP (1907-1970), American labor leader 13 107-108

REVEL, BERNARD (1885-1940), Talmudic scholar and educator 13 108-109

REVELS, HIRAM RHOADES (1822-1901), African American clergyman, statesman, and educator 13 109-110

REVERE, PAUL (1735-1818), American patriot, silversmith, and engraver 13 110-111

REVILLAGIGEDO, CONDE DE (Juan Vicente Gumes Pacheco y Padilla; 1740-1799), Spanish colonial administrator, viceroy of New Spain 13 111-112

Revolution of 1848 (Europe) Hungary Petofi, Sandor 23 306-308

REYES, ALFONSO (1889-1959), Mexican author and diplomat 13 112-113

REYES, RAFAEL (1850-1920), Colombian military leader, president 1904-09 13 113

REYNOLDS, ALBERT (born 1932), prime minister of Ireland 13 113-115

REYNOLDS, SIR JOSHUA (1723-1792), English portrait painter 13 115-116

REYNOLDS, RICHARD JOSHUA JR. (R.J. Reynolds; 1906-1964), American businessman and philanthropist 19 308-310

REZA SHAH PAHLAVI (Reza Khan; 1878-1944), Shah of Iran 1925-41 13 116-117

RHEE, SYNGMAN (1875-1965), Korean independence leader, South Korean president 1948-60 13 117-120

RHETT, ROBERT BARNWELL (1800-1876), American statesman 13 120

RHODES, CECIL JOHN (1853-1902), English imperialist and financier 13 120-122

RHODES, JAMES FORD (1848-1927), American historian 13 122

RHYS, JEAN (Ella Gwendolen Rees Williams; 1890-1979), English author 19 310-312

RIBERA, JUSEPE DE (1591-1652), Spanish painter 13 122-123

RICARDO, DAVID (1772-1823), English economist 13 123-124

RICCI, MATTEO (1552-1610), Italian Jesuit missionary 13 124-125

RICE, ANNE (born 1941), American author 13 125-126

RICE, CONDOLEZZA (born 1954), African American national security advisor 23 335-338

RICE, ELMER (1892-1967), American playwright and novelist 13 126-127

RICE, JOSEPH MAYER (1857-1934), American education reformer 13 127-128

RICH, ADRIENNE (born 1929), American poet 13 128-130

RICHARD I (1157-1199), king of England 1189-99 13 130

RICHARD II (1367-1400), king of England 1377-99 13 130-131

RICHARD III (1452-1485), king of England 1463-85 13 132-133

RICHARD, MAURICE ("Rocket" Richard; born 1921), Canadian hockey player 19 312-313

RICHARDS, ANN WILLIS (born 1933), Democratic governor of Texas 13 133-134

RICHARDS, ELLEN H. (born Ellen Henrietta Swallow; 1842-1911), American chemist and educator 13 134-136

RICHARDS, IVOR ARMSTRONG (1893-1979), English-born American semanticist and literary critic 13 137

RICHARDS, THEODORE WILLIAM (1868-1928), American chemist 13 137-138

RICHARDSON, HENRY HANDEL (born Ellen Henrietta Swallow; 1842-1911), American chemist and educator 13 139-141

RICHARDSON, HENRY HOBSON (1838-1886), American architect 13 139-141

RICHARDSON, SAMUEL (1689-1761), English novelist 13 141-142

RICHIEU, ARMAND JEAN DU PLESSIS DE (1585-1642), French statesman and cardinal 13 142-144

RICHER, CHARLES ROBERT (1850-1935), French physiologist 13 144-145

RICHER, GERMAINE (1904-1959), French sculptor 13 145-146

RICHLER, MORDECAI (1931-2001), Canadian author 22 371-373

RICHTER, CHARLES F. (1900-1985), American seismologist 13 146-148

RICHTER, CONRAD MICHAEL (1890-1968), American novelist and short-story writer 13 148-149

RICHTER, GERHARD (born 1932), German artist 23 338-340

RICHTER, HANS (Johann Siegried Richter; 1888-1976), German-born film director 13 149-150

RICHTER, JOHANN PAUL FRIEDRICH (1763-1825), German humorist and prose writer 13 150-151

RICICMER, FLAVIUS (died 472), Germanic Roman political chief 13 151-152

RICKENBACHER, EDWARD VERNON (1890-1973), World War I fighter pilot and airline president 13 152-153

RICKEY, WESLEY BRANCH (1881-1965), innovative baseball executive 13 153-155

RICKOVER, HYMAN GEORGE (1900-1986), U.S. Navy officer 13 155-157

RICOEUR, PAUL (born 1913), French exponent of hermeneutical philosophy 13 157-158

RIDE, SALLY (born 1951), American astronaut and physicist 13 158-160

RIDGE, JOHN ROLLIN (Yellow Bird; 1827-1867), Native American author 22 373-375

RIDGEWAY, MATTHEW BUNKER (1895-1993), American general 13 160-161

RIEFENSTAHL, LENI (born 1902), German film director 13 161-163

RIEL, LOUIS (1844-1885), Canadian rebel 13 163-164

RIEMANN, GEORG FRIEDRICH BERNARD (1826-1866), German mathematician 13 164-165

RICHTER, RICHLER, (1788-1849), Dutch architect and furniture designer 13 169
ROCK, ARTHUR (born 1926), American businessman 19 316-317
ROCK, JOHN (1825-1866), American physician, lawyer, and abolitionist 21 370-372
Rock and Roll Hall of Fame
Leadbelly 23 208-211
Led Zeppelin 23 216-218
ROCKEFELLER, DAVID (born 1915), chairman of the Chase Manhattan Bank 13 224-225
ROCKEFELLER, JOHN D., JR. (1874-1969), American industrialist and manufacturer 13 225-226
ROCKEFELLER, JOHN DAVIDSON (1839-1937), American industrialist and philanthropist 13 226-228
ROCKEFELLER, NELSON ALDRICH (1902-1979), four-term governor of New York and vice-president of the United States 13 229-230
ROCKINGHAM, 2d MARQUESS OF (Charles Watson-Wentworth; 1730-82), English statesman 13 230-231
ROCKNE, KNUTE (1888-1931), American football coach 13 231
ROCKWELL, NORMAN PERCEVAL (1894-1965), American illustrator 13 231-233
RODENKO, ALEXANDER MIKHAILOVICH (1891-1956), Russian abstract painter, sculptor, photographer, and industrial designer 13 233-234
RODGERS, JIMMIE (James Charles Rodgers; 1897-1933), American musician 19 317-319
RODGERS, RICHARD CHARLES (1902-1972), American composer 13 234-236
RODIN, AUGUSTE (1840-1917), French sculptor 13 236-238 influence of Hoffman, Malvina Cornell 23 148-150 students of Fuller, Meta Warrick 23 112-114
RODINO, PETER WALLACE, JR. (born 1909), Democratic U.S. representative from New Jersey 13 238-239
RODNEY, GEORGE BRYDGES (1st Baron Rodney; 1718-92), British admiral 13 239-240
RODÓ, JOSÉ ENRIQUE (1872-1917), Uruguayan essayist and literary critic 13 240-241
RODÍGUEZ DE TÍO, LOLA (1834-1924), Puerto Rican/Cuban poet and nationalist 23 345-346
ROEBLING, JOHN AUGUSTUS (1806-1869), German-born American engineer 13 241-242
ROEBLING, WASHINGTON AUGUSTUS (1837-1926), American engineer and manufacturer 13 243
ROETHKE, THEODORE (1908-1963), American poet and teacher 13 243-244
ROGER II (1095-1154), king of Sicily 1130-54 13 244-245
ROGERS, CARL RANSON (1902-1987), U.S. congresswoman from Massachusetts 13 247-248
ROGERS, EDITH NOURSE (1881-1960), first lady 1933-45
ROGERS, EDITH NOURSE (1881-1960), first lady 1933-45
ROGERS, EDITH NOURSE (1881-1960), first lady 1933-45
ROGERS, EDITH NOURSE (1881-1960), first lady 1933-45
ROGERS, EDITH NOURSE (1881-1960), first lady 1933-45
ROGERS, EDMUND MYERS (1811-1873), American frontiersman and army officer 13 250-251
ROGERS, JOHN (1829-1904), American sculptor 13 248
ROGERS, RICHARD (born 1933), British architect 13 248-250
ROGERS, ROBERT (1731-1795), American frontiersman and army officer 13 251-252
ROH TAE WOO (born 1932), president of the Republic of Korea 13 253-255
ROHDE, RUTH BRYAN O'WEN (1885-1954), U.S. congresswoman 13 252-253
ROJAS PINILLA, GUSTAVO (1899-1985), Filipino journalist and diplomat 13 270-271
RONDON, CANDIDO MARIANO DA SILVA (1865-1958), Brazilian militarist 13 271
RONSARD, PIERRE DE (1524-1585), French poet 13 271-273
RÖNTGEN, WILHELM CONRAD (1845-1923), German physicist 13 273-275
ROOSEVELT, ANNA ELEANOR (1884-1962), American lecturer and author, first lady 1933-45 13 275-277
ROOSEVELT, FRANKLIN DELANO (1882-1945), American statesman, president 1933-45 13 277-280
ROOSEVELT, THEODORE (1858-1919), American statesman, president 1901-09 13 280-283
ROOT, ELIHU (1845-1937), American statesman 13 283-284
ROOT, JOHN WELLBORN (1850-1891), American architect 21 372-374
ROREM, NED (born 1923), American composer of art songs 13 284-286
Roman Catholic Church
Latvia
Benedict XIV 23 32-35
monophysite dispute
Vigilius 23 427-429
political role
Innocent IV 23 165-167
Spain
Benedict XIV 23 32-35
Roman Catholic Church (United States)
17th century
Tekakwitha, Kateri 23 395-397
Romanian literature
Caragiale, Ion Luca 23 62-64
ROMANOV, ANASTASIA NICHOLAIEVNA (1901-1918), Russian grand duchess 18 354-357
ROMERO, ARCHBISHOP OSCAR (1917-1980), archbishop of San Salvador 13 265-267
ROMERO BARCELÓ, CARLOS (born 1932), Puerto Rican political leader and governor 13 267-268
ROMILLY, SAMUEL (1757-1818), English legal reformer 23 348-351
ROMMEL, ERWIN (1891-1944), German field marshal 13 268-269
ROMNEY, GEORGE (1734-1802), English painter 13 269-270
ROMNEY, GEORGE (1907-1995), American businessman and politician 20 313-316
ROLINO, CARLOS P. (1899-1985), Filipino journalist and diplomat 13 270-271
ROMÁN, CARLOS P. (1899-1985), Filipino journalist and diplomat 13 270-271
ROMER, CANDIDO MARIANO DA SILVA (1865-1958), Brazilian militarist 13 271
RONSARD, PIERRE DE (1524-1585), French poet 13 271-273
RÖNTGEN, WILHELM CONRAD (1845-1923), German physicist 13 273-275
ROOSEVELT, ANNA ELEANOR (1884-1962), American lecturer and author, first lady 1933-45 13 275-277
ROOSEVELT, FRANKLIN DELANO (1882-1945), American statesman, president 1933-45 13 277-280
ROOSEVELT, THEODORE (1858-1919), American statesman, president 1901-09 13 280-283
ROOT, ELIHU (1845-1937), American statesman 13 283-284
ROOT, JOHN WELLBORN (1850-1891), American architect 21 372-374
ROREM, NED (born 1923), American composer of art songs 13 284-286
ST. CLAIR, ARTHUR (1736-1818), Scottish-born American soldier and politician 13 429-430
ST. DENIS, RUTH (1878-1968), American dancer and choreographer 13 430-431
ST. LAURENT, LOUIS STEPHEN (born 1882), Canadian statesman 13 434
SAINT-BEUVE, CHARLES AUGUSTIN (1804-1869), French literary critic 13 438
SAINT-EXUPÉRY, ANTOINE DE (1900-1944), French novelist, essayist, and pilot 13 431-432
SAINT-GAUDENS, AUGUSTUS (1848-1907), American sculptor 13 432
SAINT-JUST, LOUIS ANTOINE LÉON DE (1789-1794), French radical political leader 13 433
ST. LAURENT, YVES (born 1936), French fashion designer 20 327-329
SAINT-PIERRE, ABBÉ DE (Charles Irénée Castel; 1658-1743), French political and economic theorist 13 434-435
SAINT-SAËNS, CHARLES CAMILLE (1835-1921), French composer 13 435-436
SAINT-SIMON, COMTE DE (Claude Henri de Rouvroy; 1767-1825), French social philosopher and reformer 13 436-437
SAINT-SIMON, DUC DE (Louis de Rouvroy; 1675-1755), French writer 13 436
SAINT-SIMON, MARQUES DE OLIVEIRA (1889-1970), Portuguese statesman 13 442-443
SAKAROV, ANDREI (1921-1989), Russian theoretical physicist and “father of the Soviet atomic bomb” 13 439-441
SALADIN (Salah-ad-Din Yusuf ibn Aiyub; 1138-93), Kurdish ruler of Egypt and Syria 13 441-442
SALAZAR, ANTONIO DE OLEIREIRA (1889-1970), Portuguese statesman 13 442-443
SALIH, ALI’ABDALLAH (born 1942), president of the Yemeni Arab Republic (North Yemen) and first president of the United Republic of Yemen 13 443-445
SALINAS DE GORTARI, CARLOS (born 1948), president of Mexico (1988-) 13 445-447
SALINGER, J. D. (born 1919), American author 13 447-448
SALISBURY, HARRISON EVANS (born 1908), American journalist 13 449-451
SALISBURY, 3D MARQUES OF (Robert Arthur Talbot Gascoyne-Cecil; 1830-1903), English statesman and diplomat 13 448-449
SALK, JONAS EDWARD (1914-1995), American physician, virologist, and immunologist 13 451-452
SALLE, DAVID (born 1952), American artist 13 452-453
SALLUST (Gaius Sallustius Crispus; 86-circa 35 B.C.), Roman statesman and historian 13 454
SALOMON, CHARLOTTE (1817-1943), German artist 13 454-455
SALOMON, HAYM (c. 1740-1785), American financier 20 329-331
SALOME, GAETANO (1873-1957), Italian historian 13 455-456
SAMPSON, EDITH (nee Edith Spurlock; circa 1901-1979), Comanche medicine woman 23 358-360
SANDELL, ALLAN REX (born 1926), American astronaut 21
SANCTORIUS (1561-1636), Italian physician and physiologist 13 459
SAND, GEORGE (1804-1876), French novelist 13 459-461
SANDBURG, CARL (1878-1967), American poet, anthropologist, and biographer 13 461-462
SANDERS, COLONEL (Harland David Sanders; 1890-1980), American businessman 19 323-325
SANDINO, AUGUSTO C. (1894-1934), Nicaraguan guerilla leader 13 462-463
SANDYS, SIR EDWIN (1561-1629), English statesman and colonizer in America 13 463-464
SANGAR, ANTOINE DE (1932), Brazilian inventor 20 329-331
SANTANDER, FRANCISCO DE PAULA (1792-1840), Colombian general and statesman 13 473
SANTAYANA, GEORGE (Jorge Agustin de Santayana; 1863-1952), Spanish-American philosopher 13 475-477
SAPRU, SIR TEJ BAHADUR (1891-1971), Indian lawyer and statesman 13 480-481
SARGENT, JOHN SINGER (1856-1925), American portrait painter 13 481-482
SARGON II (ruled 722-705 B.C.), king of Assyria 13 482
SARGON OF AGADE (circa 2340-2284 B.C.), first Semitic king of Mesopotamia 13 483
SARIT THANARAT (1908-1963), Thai army officer, prime minister 1957-63 13 483-484
SARMIENTO, DOMINGO FAUSTINO (1811-1888), Argentine statesman, president 1868-74 13 484-485
SARNOFF, DAVID (1891-1971), American television and radio broadcasting executive 13 485-486
Scientists, Swiss
mathematicians
Bernoulli, Jakob 23 37-39
Steiner, Jakob 23 380-382

Scientists, Taiwanese
Lee, Yuan...OF WORLD BIOGRAPHY — Volume 23 July 24, 2003 / 16:07:27 Formatting: RGH&kmw

Volume 23
SETON, ERNEST THOMPSON 573

SEATTLE (c. 1788-1866), Native
American tribal chief 14 80-81

SECRETS AND LIES (film)
Leigh, Mike 23 222-225

SEDDON, RICHARD JOHN (1845-
1906), New Zealand politician 14
81-82

SEDGWICK, ADAM (1785-1873), English
geologist 14 82-83

SEEGER, PETE (born 1919), American
folksinger and activist 14 83-84

SEEFERIS, GEORGE (Georgios Seferiades;
1900-71), Greek poet and statesman 14
86-87

SEGAL, GEORGE (born 1924), American
sculptor 14 85-87

SEGOVIA, ANDRES (1902-1965), Spanish
guitarist 14 87-88

Segregation (racial, United States)
see African American history (United
States)

SEIBERT, FLORENCE B. (1897-1991),
American biochemist 14 89-90

SEJO (1417-1468), king of Korea 1453-
68 14 90-91

SEJONG (1397-1450), king of Korea
1418-50 14 91-92

SELENA (Selena Quintanilla-Perez; 1971-
1995), Hispanic-American singer 18
365-367

SELEUCUS I (circa 358-281 B.C.),
Macedonian general, king of Babylonia
and Syria 14 92-93

SELEUCUS II (circa 281-246 B.C.),
Seleucid king of Babylonia and Syria
14 92-93

SELEUCUS III (1761-1808), Ottoman
sultan 1789-1807 14 95-96

SELKIRK, 5TH EARL OF (Thomas
Douglas; 1771-1820), Scottish colonizer
in Canada 14 96

SELLARS, WILFRED (1912-1989),
American philosopher 14 96-98

SELLERS, PETER RICHARD HENRY
(1925-1980), British comedy genius of
theater, radio, television, and movies
14 98-99

SELZNICK, DAVID OLIVER (1902-1965),
American filmmaker 20 333-335

SEMMELWEIS, IGNAZ PHILIPP (1818-
1865), Hungarian physician 14
101-102

SEMMES, RAPHAEL (1809-1877),
American Confederate naval officer 14
102-103

SEN, RAM CAMUL (1783-1844), Bengali
intellectual and entrepreneur 13 16-17

SENDAK, MAURICE (born 1928),
American author, artist, and illustrator
19 329-331

SENECA THE YOUNGER, LUCIUS
ANNAEUS (circa 4 B.C.-A.D. 65),
Roman philosopher 14 103-105

SENFEL, LUDWIG (circa 1486-circa
1543), Swiss-born German composer
14 105-106

SENGHOR, LEOPOLD SE´DAR (born
1906), Senegalese poet, philosopher,
and statesman 14 106-107

SENNACHERIB (ruled 705-681 B.C.),
king of Assyria 14 108

SENNITT, MACK (1884-1960), American
film producer and director 14 108-109

SEQUOYAH (circa 1770-1843),
American Cherokee Indian scholar 14
110-111

SERRA, JUNIPERO (Miguel Jose´ Serra;
1713-84), Spanish Franciscan
missionary, founder of California
missions 14 111-112

SERRANO ELI´AS, JORGE ANTONIO
(born 1945), president of Guatemala
(1991-1993) 14 112-113

SERTURNER, FRIEDRICH (Friedrich
Wilhelm Adam Ferdinand Serturner;
1783-1841), Prussian pharmacist 14
379-381

SERVAN-SCHREIBER, JACQUES-
JEAN (born 1924), French journalist and
writer on public affairs 14 113-115

SERVETUS, MICHAEL (circa 1511-1553),
Spanish religious philosopher 14
115-116

SETON, ERNEST THOMPSON (1860-
1946), Canadian author and co-
founder of the Boy Scouts of America
14 119-120
SETTIGNANO, DESIDERIO DA (1428/31-1464), Italian sculptor 4 509
SEURAT, GEORGES PIERRE (1859-1891), French painter 14 120-122
SEVAREID, ERIC (Arnold Eric Sevareid 1912-1992), American broadcast journalist and author 22 395-397
Seventh-Day Adventist Church
White, Ellen Gould 23 348-440
SEVERINI, GINO (1883-1966), Italian painter 14 122
SEVERUS, LUCIUS SEPTIMIUS (146-211), Roman emperor 193-211 14 109-110
SEVIER, JOHN (1745-1815), American frontiersman, soldier, and politician 14 122-123
SEWALL, SAMUEL (1652-1730), American jurist and diarist 14 123-124
SEWARD, WILLIAM HENRY (1801-1872), American statesman 14 124-125
SEXTON, ANNE (Anne Gray Harvey; born 1926), American poet 14 125-126
SEYMOUR, HENRY (Anthony Ashley Cooper; 1781-1861), British editor 14 122-123
SEYMOUR, JANE (1509-1537), third wife and queen consort of Henry VIII of England 18 367-368
SFORZA, LODOVICO (1452-1508), duke of Milan 14 127-128
SHAHAKA (ruled circa 712-696 B.C.), Nubian king, pharaoh of Egypt 14 130
SHABBAZZ, BETTY (1936-1997), African American educator, activist, and health administrator 14 130-132
SHACKLETON, SIR ERNEST HENRY (1874-1922), British explorer 14 132-133
SHAFFER, PETER LEVIN (born 1926), English/American playwright 14 133-135
SHAFTESBURY, 1ST EARL OF (Anthony Ashley Cooper; 1621-83), English statesman 14 135-136
SHAFTESBURY, 3RD EARL OF (Anthony Ashley Cooper; 1671-1713), English moral philosopher 14 136-137
SHAFTESBURY, 7TH EARL OF (Anthony Ashley Cooper; 1801-85), English social reformer 14 137-138
SHAH JAHAN (1592-1666), Mogul emperor of India 1628-58 14 138-139
SHAHN, BEN (1898-1969), American painter, graphic artist, and photographer 14 139-140
SHAHPUR II (310-379), king of Persia 14 140-141
SHAKA (circa 1787-1828), African Zulu military monarch 14 141-142
SHAKESPEARE, WILLIAM (1564-1616), English playwright, poet, and actor 14 142-145
SHALIKASHVILI, JOHN MALCHASE DAVID (born 1936), chairman of the U.S. Joint Chiefs of Staff 14 145-147
SHAMIR, YITZCHAK (Yizhak; born 1914), Israeli prime minister and leader of the Likud Party 14 147-149
SHAMMAI (flourished 1st century B.C.), Jewish sage 14 149
SHANG YANG (circa 390-338 B.C.), Chinese statesman and political philosopher 14 149-150
SHANGE, NTOZAKE (Paulette Linda Williams; born 1948), African American author 14 174-176
SHARIF, NAWAZ (born 1949), Pakistani prime minister 14 180-181
SHAVIL, WILLIAM (1907-1992), American editor 14 181-182
SHAW, GEORGE BERNARD (1856-1950), British playwright, critic, and pamphleteer 14 183-184
SHAW, LEMUEL (1781-1861), American jurist 14 184-185
SHAW, MARY (born 1943), American computer science professor 14 185-186
SHAW, RICHARD NORMAN (1931-1972), British architect 14 186-187
SHAW, WILLIAM (1683-1765), American poet 14 170-171
SHEDD, CHARLES (1857-1946), American social reformer who also wrote In His Steps 14 172-174
SHELLEY, MARY WOLLSTONECRAFT (1797-1851), English author 14 174-176
SHELLEY, PERCY BYSSHE (1792-1822), English romantic poet 14 176-178
SHERIDAN, PHILIP HENRY (1831-1898), American astronaut 14 182-183
SHERIDAN, RICHARD BRINSLEY (1751-1816), British playwright and orator 14 183-184
SHERMAN, CINDY (Cynthia Morris Sherman; born 1954), American photographer 14 335-337
SHERMAN, JOHN (1823-1900), American politician 14 184-185
SHERMAN, ROGER (1721-1793), American patriot 14 185-186
SHERMAN, WILLIAM TECUMSEH (1820-1891), American general 14 186-187
SHERRINGTON, SIR CHARLES SCOTT (1857-1952), English physiologist 14 187-189

SHERWOOD, ROBERT EMMET (1896-1955), American playwright 14 189-190

SHETSTOV, LEV (Lev Isaakovich Schwarzmann; 1866-1938), Russian Jewish thinker and literary critic 14 190-191


SHIH KO-FA (died 1644), Chinese scholar-soldier 14 194-195

SHIH LE (274-333), Chinese emperor 300-333 14 195

SHIHAB, FU'AD (1903-1975), Father of the Lebanese Army and president of Lebanon (1958-1964) 14 193-194

SHILS, EDWARD ALBERT (born 1911), American sociologist 14 195-197

SHINBUN (1173-1262), Japanese Buddhist monk 14 197

SHIPPE, EDWARD (1728-1806), American jurist 14 197-198

SHIRER, WILLIAM L. (born 1904), American journalist and historian who wrote on the history of Nazi Germany 14 198-199

Shochiku Motion Picture Company Ozu, Yasujiro 23 279-281

SHOCKLEY, WILLIAM (1910-1989), American physicist 14 200-202

SHOEMAKER, GENE (Eugene Merle Shoemaker; 1928-1997), American geologist and planetary scientist 20 335-338

SHOEMAKER, WILLIE (Billy Lee Shoemaker; born 1931), American jockey and horse trainer 21 381-383

SHOLEM ALEICHEM (Sholem Rabinowitz; 1859-1916), Russian-born American author 14 202-203

SHOLES, CHRISTOPHER LATHAM (1819-1890), American publisher, inventor, and social reformer 21 383-385

SHOLKHOV, MIKHAIL ALEKSANDROVICH (1905-1984), Russian novelist 14 203-204

SHORT, WALTER (1880-1949), American army officer 19 337-339

SHOSTAKOVICH, DMITRI DMITRIEVICH (1906-1975), Russian composer 14 204-205

SHOTOKU TAISHI (573-621), Japanese regent, statesman, and scholar 14 205-207

Show Boat (musical) Tamiris, Helen 23 390-392

SHREVE, HENRY MILLER (1785-1851), American steamboat designer and builder 14 207

SHRIVER, EUNICE KENNEDY (born 1921), American activist 19 339-341

SHUBERT BROTHERS (1883-1963), theatrical managers 14 207-209

SIBELIUS, JEAN JULIUS CHRISTIAN (1865-1957), Finnish composer 14 211-212

SICKERT, WALTER RICHARD (1860-1942), English painter 14 216-217

SIDGWICK, HENRY (1838-1900), English philosopher and moralist 14 213

SIDDYANT, SIR PHILIP (1554-1586), English poet, courtier, diplomat, and soldier 14 214-215

SIEBERT, MURIEL (1899-1984), American aeronautical engineer, aircraft manufacturer, and inventor 14 223-224

SIKORSKI, IGOR (1889-1972), Russian-American aeronautical engineer, political leader, and U.S. citizen 14 223-224

SILBER, JOHN (born 1926), American philosopher and educator 14 224-226

SILES ZUAZO, HERNAN (1914-1996), Bolivian politician 18 370-373

SILKO, LESLIE (Leslie Marmon Silko; born 1948), Native American author and poet 14 226-227

SILKWOOD, KAREN (1946-1974), American antigovernment activist 14 227-229

SILLIMAN, BENJAMIN (1779-1864), American chemist, naturalist, and editor 14 229-230

SILLS, BEVERLY (Belle Miriam Silverman; born 1929), American child performer, coloratura soprano, and operatic superstar 14 230-231

SILONE, IGNAZIO (1900-1978), Italian novelist and essayist 14 231-232

SILVER, ABBA HILLEL (1893-1963), American rabbi and Zionist leader 14 232-233

SILVERSTEIN, SHEL (1932-1999), American author and poet 19 341-343

SIMENON, GEORGES (1903-1989), Belgian novelist 14 233-234

SIMMLE, GEORG (1858-1918), German sociologist and philosopher 14 234-235

SIMMS, WILLIAM GILMORE (1806-1870), American author 14 235-236

SIMON, HERBERT ALEXANDER (born 1916), American Nobelist in economics 14 236-237

SIMON, JULES FRANCOIS (1814-1896), French philosopher, writer, and statesman 14 237-238

SIMON, NEIL (Marvin Neil Simon; born 1927), American playwright 18 373-374

SIMON, PAUL (born 1928), newspaper publisher, Illinois state legislator, lieutenant governor, and U.S. senator 14 238-239

SIMONOV, KONSTANTIN MIKHAILOVICH (1915-1979), Soviet poet and novelist 14 239-240

SIMPSON, GEORGE GAYLORD (1902-1984), American paleontologist 14 240-242
SIMPSON, LOUIS ASTON MARANTZ (born 1923), American poet, critic, and educator 14 243-244

SIMPSON, WALLIS (Bessie Wallis Warfield Simpson, Duchess of Windsor; 1896-1986), American socialite and wife of Edward VIII, King of England 19 343-345

SIMS, WILLIAM SOWDEN (1858-1936), American admiral 14 244

SIN, JAIME L. (born 1928), Filipino cardinal of the Roman Catholic Church 14 244-245

SINAN, KODJA MIMAR (1489-1578), Ottoman architect 14 257-258

SING, HANS KARL (1906-1991), Czech composer 14 266-267

SINGHE, SITARAM (1875-1954), Indian writer 14 268-269

SINGH, BISHAN SINGH (1928-2000), Prime minister of India (1971-1975) 14 270-272

SINGER, MAXINE (1916-1992), American photojournalist 14 273-275

SINGER, ISAAC M. (1811-1875), American inventor of the sewing machine 14 250-251

SINGER, PAULINE (1918-1978), American educator and churchman 14 275-277

SINCLAIR, UPTON BEALE, JR. (1878-1963), American novelist and political writer 14 248-249

SINCLAIR, ULRYCH (1770-1835), English politician 14 251-252

SINEWESKI, ETHEL (1894-1968), American painter 14 256-257

SINGH, VISHWANATH PRATAP (born 1931), prime minister of India (1989-1990) 14 254-255

SIPINDER, KEN (1906-1973), American writer 14 258-259

SIPMANN, MANFRED (1906-1970), German poet and publisher 14 260-261

SIPMAN, WILHELM (1847-1908), German writer 14 262-263

SITTING BULL (circa 1834-90), American Indian leader and medicine man 14 264-265

SITWELL, DAME EDITH (1887-1964), English poet and critic 14 265-266

SIVAJT (1627-1680), Indian warrior and leader of a Hindu nation 14 266-267

SIXTUS V (Felice Peretti; 1520-90), pope 1585-90 14 267-268

SIZA, ALVARO (Alvaro Joaquin Melo Siza Vieria; born 1933), Portuguese architect 18 375-376

SKEWES, HERB 14 277-278

SKINNER, CORNELIA OTIS (1901-1979), American actress and author 19 346-348

SLÁNSKY´, RUDOLF SALZMANN (1903-1950), Czech communist 14 269-270

SLAPPY, PAUL (1902-1974), American entertainer 14 271-273

SLATER, SAMUEL (1768-1835), English-bom American manufacturer 14 272-273

SLIDELL, JOHN (1793-1871), American politician 14 273-275

SLIM, WILLIAM JOSEPH (1878-1943), American college basketball coach 18 293-295

SLIM, WILLIAM (1897-1978), American philanthropist and reformer 14 290-291

SMALLS, ROBERT (1839-1916), African American politician 14 297-298

SMITH, ADAM (1723-1790), Scottish economist and moral philosopher 14 283-284

SMITH, ALFRED EMMANUEL (1873-1944), American politician 14 284-285

SMITH, BESIE (1894-1937), African American blues singer 14 285-287

SMITH, DAVID (1906-1965), American sculptor 14 287-288

SMITH, DEAN EDWARDS (born 1931), American college basketball coach 18 378-380

SMITH, DONALD ALEXANDER (1st Baron Strathcona and Mount Royal; 1820-1914), Canadian politician and philanthropist 14 288-289

SMITH, GERRIT (1797-1874), American philanthropist and reformer 14 290-291

SMITH, IAN DOUGLAS (born 1919), African prime minister 14 291-293

SMITH, JAMES MCCUNE (1813-1865), American politician and author 14 293-294

SMITH, JEDIDIAH S. (1799-1831), American trapper, fur trader, and explorer 14 294-295

SMITH, JOSEPH (1805-1844), American Mormon leader 14 297-298

SMITH, JOHN (circa 1580-1631), English colonist in America 14 295-297

SMITH, JOHN (1938-1973), American photojournalist 19 348-350

SMITH, PAULINE (Pauline Janet Urmson Smith; Janet Tamson; 1882-1959), South African author 23 372-373

SMITH, WILLIAM (1727-1803), American educator and churchman 14 301

SMITH, WILLIAM EUGENE (1938-1973), American sculptor, essayist, and filmmaker 14 301-303

SMETANA, BÉRICH (1824-1884), Czech composer 14 281-282
SOYINKA, WOLE (Oluwole Akinwande Soyinka; born 1934), first African to win the Nobel Prize for Literature (1986) 14 358-359

SPAARK, PAUL HENRI (1899-1972), Belgian statesman and diplomat 14 359-360

SPAATZ, CARL (1891-1974), American army and air force officer 19 352-355

Space exploration
manned flights
McCandless, Bruce, II 23 243-246

Spain (Spanish State; nation, Europe)
• ISLAMIC (756-1492)
  Castile and Leon
Urraca 23 417-418

SPALANZANI, LAZZARO (Abbé Spallanzani; 1729-99) Italian naturalist 14 360-361

Spanish literature
modern
Almodovar, Pedro 23 6-9

Spanish music
Cugat, Xavier 23 81-82

SPARK, MURIEL SARAH (born 1918), British author 14 361-362

SPARUS, JARED (1789-1866), American historian 14 363

SPARTACUS (died 71 B.C.), Thracian galdiator 14 363-364

SPAUDING, CHARLES CLINTON (1874-1952), African American business executive 14 364-365

Speakers of the House
see Statesmen, American

SPEER, ALBERT (1905-1981), German architect and Nazi 19 355-356

SPEKE, JOHN HANNING (1827-1864), English explorer 14 366-367

SPELLMAN, CARDINAL FRANCIS JOSEPH (1889-1967), Roman Catholic archbishop 14 367

SPEMANN, HANS (1869-1941), German experimental embryologist 14 368-369

SPENCE, CATHERINE HELEN (1825-1910), Australian author and activist 23 374-375

SPENCER, HERBERT (1820-1903), English philosopher 14 369-370

SPENDER, STEPHEN HAROLD (born 1909), English poet and critic 14 370-371

SPENER, PHILIPP JAKOB (1635-1705), German theologian 14 372

SPENGLER, OSWALD (1880-1936), German philosopher 14 372-373

SPENSER, EDMUND (circa 1552-99), English poet 14 373-376

SPERANSKI, COUNT MIKHAIL MIKHAILOVICH (1772-1839), Russian statesman and reformer 14 376-377

SPERRY, ELMER A. (1860-1930), American inventor 14 377-379

SPILERG, STEVEN (born 1947), American filmmaker 14 379-381

SPINOZA, BARUCH (Benedict Spinoza; 1632-77), Dutch philosopher 14 381-383

SPITZ, MARK (born 1950), American swimmer 23 376-378

SPOCK, BENJAMIN McLane (1903-1998), American pediatrician and political activist and author of Baby and Child Care 14 383-385

Sports
see Athletes, American

SPOTSWOOD, ALEXANDER (1676-1740), British general and colonial governor 14 385

SPRAGUE, FRANK JULIAN (1819-1902), American inventor and businessman 21 385-386

SQUIBB, EDWARD ROBINSON (1819-1900), American physician and pharmacist 21 390-392

SQUIM, EDWARD ROBINSON (1819-1900), American physician and pharmacist 21 390-392

SU-MA CH’IEN (145-circa 90 B.C.), Chinese historian 14 388-389

SU-MA HSIANG-JU (circa 179-117 B.C.), Chinese poet 14 389-390

SU-MA KANG (1019-1086), Chinese statesman 14 390-391

STAËL, GERMAINE DE (1766-1817), French-Swiss novelist and woman of letters 14 391-392

STAËL, NICOLAS DE (1914-1955), French painter 14 392

STAHL, GEORG ERNST (1660-1734), German chemist and medical theorist 14 392-393

Stairway to Heaven (song)
Led Zeppelin 23 216-218

STALIN, JOSEPH (1879-1953), Soviet statesman 14 393-396

STANDISH, MYLES (circa 1584-1656), English military adviser to the Pilgrims 14 396-397

STANFORD, LELAND (1824-1893), American railroad builder and politician 14 397-398

Stanford University
(Palo Alto, California)
Rice, Condoleezza 23 335-338

STANISLAVSKY, CONSTANTIN (1863-1938), Russian actor and director 14 398-399

STANLEY, SIR HENRY MORTON (1841-1904), British explorer and journalist 14 399-400

STANLEY, WENDELL MEREDITH (1904-1971), American virologist 14 400-401

STANTON, EDWIN McMASTERS (1814-1869), American statesman 14 401-402

STANTON, ELIZABETH Cady (1815-1902), American feminist and reformer 14 402-403

STARHAWK (Miriam Simos; born 1951), theoretician and practitioner of feminist Wicca (witchcraft) in the United States 14 403-404

STARLEY, JAMES (1831-1881), British statesman 21 392-395

STARZL, THOMAS (born 1926), American surgeon 21 393-395

State, U.S. Secretaries of
see Statesmen, American–Executive (secretaries of state)

Statesmen, American
• EXECUTIVE (CABINET) attorneys general
  Ashcroft, John 23 18-21
national security advisors
  Rice, Condoleezza 23 335-338
senators (19th century)
  Bush, Ronald 23 404-408
secretaries of defense
  Rumsfeld, Donald Harold 23 353-355
• LEGISLATIVE senators (19th century)
  Logan, George 23 231-234
senators (20th century)
  Ashcroft, John 23 18-21
  Beveridge, Albert Jeremiah 23 39-41
• STATE and LOCAL state representatives
  Logan, George 23 231-234

Statesmen, Angolan
Nzinga, Anna 23 270-271

Statesmen, Cherokee
Ward, Nancy 23 436-438

Statesmen, Dutch
pensionaries
  Cats, Jacob 23 64-66
members of Parliament
  Romilly, Samuel 23 348-351

Statesmen, Georgian (Asia Minor)
Tamara 23 388-390

Statesmen, Indian (Asian)
UN officials
  Razia 23 326-329
Statesmen, Israelite
see Bible—Old Testament; Jewish
history

Statesmen, Saudi Arabian
Khalid Bin Abdul Aziz Al-Saud

Statesmen, Spanish
queens
Urraca 23 417-418

STEWARDE, CHRISTINA ELLEN (1902-1983), Australian author 23 378-380

STEEL, DANIELLE (born 1947), American author and poet 14 404-406

STEEL, DAVID MARTIN SCOTT (born 1938), Scottish member of Parliament and leader of the Liberal Party 14 406-407

STEEL, DAWN (1946-1997), American movie producer and studio executive 18 383-384

STEELE, SIR RICHARD (1672-1729), British essayist, dramatist, and politician 14 407-409

STEIN, EDITH (1879-1973), German-born American mathematician 14 410-411

STEPHEN, ALFRED (1864-1946), American photographer, painter, and museum curator 14 411-412

STEIN, EDITH (1891-1942), German philosopher 14 412-414

STEIN, GERTRUDE (1874-1946), American writer 14 414-415

STEIN, BARON HEINRICH FRIEDRICH KARL VON UND ZUM (1757-1831), Prussian statesman 14 415-416

STEINBECK, JOHN ERNST (1902-1968), American author 14 416-417

STEINEM, GLORIA (1934), American feminist and journalist 14 418-419

STEINER, JAKOB (1796-1863), Swiss mathematician 23 380-382

STEINMETZ, CHARLES PROTEUS (Karl August Rudolf Steinmetz; 1865-1923), German-born American mathematician and electrical engineer 14 419-420

STEIN, STEPHEN HARDING, ST. (died 1134), English abbot and monastic reformer 14 419-422

STEPHENSON, GEORGE (1781-1848), English railway engineer 14 423-424

STEPHENSON, ROBERT (1803-1859), English railway engineer 14 424-425

STEPHENSON, WALTER (James Maitland; 1855-1920), British statesman and diplomat 14 425-426

STERN, ISAAC (1913-1988), British physician 14 426-427

STERN, OTTO (1888-1969), German-born American physicist 14 427-428

STERLING, JOSEPH (1812-1883), American statesman 14 429-430

STEVENS, JOHN PAUL (born 1920), U.S. Supreme Court justice 14 440-441

STEVENS, NELLY MARIA (1861-1912), American biologist and geneticist 14 442-443

STEVENS, THADDEUS (1792-1868), American politician 14 444-445

STEVENS, WALLACE (1879-1955), American poet 14 445-446

STEVENS, ROBERT LOUIS (1850-1894), Scottish novelist, essayist and poet 14 446-448

STEVEIN, SIMON (Simon Stevinus; 1548-1620), Dutch mathematician 21 395-398

STEWART, ALEXANDER TURNER (1803-1876), American dry-goods merchant 14 448-449

STEWART, DUGALD (1753-1828), Scottish philosopher 14 449

STEWART, ELLEN (born 1920), African-American theater founder and director 20 348-352

STEWART, JIMMY (James Maitland Stewart; 1908-1997), American actor 18 385-386

STEWART, MARTHA (nee Martha Kostyra; born 1941), American author, entertainer, and businesswoman 19 367-369

STEWART, POTTER (1913-1985), liberal U.S. Supreme Court justice 14 449-451

STIEGLITZ, ALFRED (1864-1946), American photographer, editor, and art gallery director 14 451-452

STILICHIO, FLAVIUS (died 408), Roman general 14 452-453

STILL, CLYFFORD (1904-1980), American Abstract Expressionist artist 14 453-454

STILL, WILLIAM (1821-1902), African Americanabolitionist, philanthropist, and businessman 14 454-455

STILL, WILLIAM GRANT (born 1895), African American composer 14 455-456

STILWELL, JOSEPH WARREN (1883-1946), American general 14 456-457
STYRON, WILLIAM (born 1925),
American southern writer of novels
and articles 15 6-8

SUAßE, FRANCISCO (1548-1617),
Spanish philosopher and theologian 15 8

SUAZO CÓRDOVA, ROBERTO (born 1927),
physician and president of
Honduras (1982-1986) 15 8-10

SUCKLING, SIR JOHN (1609-1642),
English poet and playwright 15 10-11

SUCRE, ANTONIO JOSÉ DE (1787-
1830), Venezuelan general, Bolivian
president 1826-28 15 11-12

SUDERMANN, HERMANN (born 1926),
German dramatist and novelist 15 12-13

SUETONIUS TRANQUILLUS, GAIUS
(circa 70-circa 135), Roman
administrator and writer 15 13

SUHARTO (born 1921), second president
after Indonesia’s independence 15 14-15

SUI WEN-TI (541-604) Chinese emperor
15 16-18

SUKARNO (1901-1970), Indonesian
statesman, president 1945-66 15 18-20

SULEMAN (the Magnificent; 1494-
1566), Ottoman sultan 1520-66 15
20-21

SULLA, LUCIUS CORNELIUS I (138-78
B.C.), Roman general, dictator 82-79
B.C. 15 21-22

SULLIVAN, SIR ARTHUR SEYMOUR
(1842-1900), English composer 15 23

SULLIVAN, ED (Edward Vincent Sullivan;
1902-1974), American television
emcee, screenwriter, and author 19
374-376

SULLIVAN, HARRY STACK (1892-1949),
American psychiatrist 15 23-24

SULLIVAN, JOHN LAWRENCE (1858-
1918), American boxer 15 24-25

SULLIVAN, LEON HOWARD (1922-
2001), African American civil rights
leader and minister 15 25-27

SULLIVAN, LOUIS HENRI (1856-1924),
American architect 15 27-28

SULLY, THOMAS (1783-1872), English-
born American painter 22 403-404

SULZBERGER, ARTHUR OCHS JR. (born
1926), publisher of the New York
Times 15 28-30

SULZBERGER, ARTHUR OCHS JR. (born
1951), American newspaper publisher
19 376-378

SUMNER, CHARLES (1811-1874),
American statesman 15 30-31

SUMNER, WILLIAM GRAHAM (1840-
1910), American sociologist and
educator 15 32

SUN YAT-SEN (1866-1925), Chinese
statesman, leader of republican
revolution 15 35-39

SUNDAY, WILLIAM ASHLEY (“Billy”;
1862-1935), American evangelist 15
32-33

SUNDIATA KEITA (circa 1210-circa
1260), founder of Mali empire in West
Africa 15 33-34

SU-SHIH (Su Tung-p’o; 1037-1101),
Chinese author and artist 15 39-40

SUTHERLAND, GRAHAM (1903-1980),
English painter 15 40-41

SUTHERLAND, JOHN (born 1926),
Australian opera singer 22 404-407

SUTTER, JOHN AUGUSTUS (1842-
1880), German-born American
adventurer and colonizer 15 41-42

SUTTNER, BERTHA VON (born Countess
Bertha Kinsky; 1843-1914), Austrian
author and activist 15 42-44

SUVOROV, ALEKSANDR VASILIEVICH
(1730-1800), Russian general 15
44-45

SUZMAN, HELEN (born 1926),
member of the South African House of
Assembly for the Progressive Party
15 45-21

SZEVE, DAJSETZ TEITARO (1870-
1966), Japanese translator, teacher,
and interpreter of Zen Buddhist
thought 15 46-47

SZENT-GYÖRGYI, ALBERT VON
(1893-1976), Hungarian-American biochemist
15 47-48

SWAMMERDAM, JAN (1637-1680),
Dutch naturalist 15 48-49

SWEDENBORG, EMMANUEL (1688-1772),
Swedish scientist, theologian, and
mystic 15 49-50

SWELINCK, JAN PIETERSZOON (1562-
1621), Dutch composer, organist, and
teacher 15 50-51

SWIFT, GUSTAVUS FRANKLIN (1839-
1903), American businessman 22
407-409

SWIFT, JONATHAN (1667-1745),
English-Irish poet, political writer, and
clergyman 15 51-54

Swimming (sport)
Spitz, Mark 23 376-378

SWINBURN, ALGERNON CHARLES
(1837-1909), English poet, dramatist,
and critic 15 54-55

SWITZER, MARY E. (1900-1971),
American champion of rehabilitation
15 55-56

SWOPE, GERARD (1872-1957), president of
General Electric 15 56-58

SYDENHAM, BARON (Charles Edward
Poulett Thomson; 1799-1841), English
merchant and politician 15 59-60

SYDENHAM, THOMAS (1624-1689),
English physician 15 59-60

SYED AHMED KHAN (1817-1898),
Moslem religious leader,
educationalist, and politician 15 60

SYLVIS, WILLIAM (1828-1869),
American labor leader 15 60-61

Symphony (music)
Denmark 23 265-267

SYNGE, EDMUND JOHN MILLINGTON
(1871-1909), Irish dramatist 15 61-62

SZENT-GYÖRGYI, ALBERT VON
(1893-1986), Hungarian-American biochemist
15 62-64

SZILARD, LEO (1898-1964), Hungarian-
born nuclear physicist 15 64-66

SZOLD, HENRIETTA (1860-1945),
American Jewish leader 15 66-67

SZYMANOWSKI, KAROL (1882-1937),
Polish composer 15 67-68

TABARI, MUHAMMAD IBN JARIR AL-
(839-923), Moslem and religious scholar 15 69-70

TABOR, HORACE AUSTIN WARNER
(1830-1899), American mining
magnate and politician 15 70

TACITUS (56/57-circa 125), Roman
orator and historian 15 70-72

TAEUBER-ARP, SOPHIE (1889-1943),
Swiss-born painter, designer, and
dancer 15 73-74

TAEGWON-GUN, HÜNGSON (1820-
1898), Korean imperial regent 15
74-75

TAFAWA BALEWA, SIR ABUBAKAR
(1912-1966), Nigerian statesman,
prime minister 15 75-76

TAFT, LORADO (1860-1936), American
sculptor 15 75-76
TERRELL, MARY CHURCH (Mary Eliza Church Terrell; 1863-1954), African American activist and feminist 23 397-399

Terror, Reign of see French Revolution—1792-95 (Reign of Terror)

TERTULLIAN (Quintus Septimius Florens Tertullianus; circa 160-circa 220), North African theologian and apologist 15 135-156

TESLA, NIKOLA (1856-1943), Croatian-American inventor and electrical engineer 15 136-157

TEWODROS II (1820-1868), emperor of Ethiopia 15 158-159

THACKERAY, WILLIAM MAKEPEACE (1811-1863), British novelist 15 159-161

THALBERG, IRVING (1899-1936), American filmmaker 20 366-368

THALES (circa 624-circa 545 B.C.), Greek natural philosopher 15 161

THANT, U (1909-1974), Burmese statesman and UN secretary general 15 161-162

THARP, MARIE (born 1920), American dancer and choreographer 15 162-164

THARP, TWYLA (born 1941), American dancer and choreographer 15 164-165

THATCHER, MARGARET HILDA (born 1925), prime minister of Great Britain (1979-1990) 15 165-168

THAYER, ELI (1819-1899), American reformer, agitator, and promoter 15 168

THAYER, SYLVANUS (1785-1872), American educator and engineer 15 168-169

THEANO (born c. 546 BC), Greek mathematician and physician 23 399-401

THEILER, MAX (1899-1972), American epidemiologist and microbiologist 15 169-170

THEMISTOCLES (circa 528-462 B.C.), Athenian politician 15 170-171

THEOCRITUS (circa 310-circa 245 B.C.), Greek poet 15 171-172

THEODIC THE GREAT (453/454-526), king of the Ostrogoths 15 175-176

THEODOSIUS (circa 346-395), Roman emperor 379-395 15 176

THEORELL, AXEL HUGO THEODOR (born 1903), Swedish biochemist 15 176-177

THERESE, SAINT (Theresa of Ávila; 1515-1582), Spanish nun 15 178-179

THEREUX, PAUL (born 1941), expatriate American writer of fiction and of chronicles of train travels 15 179-180

THIBAUT IV (Thibaut I of Navarre; 1201-53), Count of Champagne and Brie 15 180-181

THIERS, LOUIS ADOLPHE (1797-1877), French journalist, historian, and statesman 15 181-182

THIEU, NGUYEN VAN (1923-2001), South Vietnamese president 15 182-183

THOMAS, ALMA WOODSEY (1891-1978), African American artist 23 401-403

THOMAS, CLARENCE (born 1948), U.S. Supreme Court justice 15 186-188

THOMAS, DAVE (R. David Thomas; 1932-2002), American businessman 18 389-397

THOMAS, DYLAN MARLAIS (1914-1953), British poet 15 188-190

THOMAS, GEORGE HENRY (1816-1870), American general 15 190-191

THOMAS, HELEN (born 1920), American journalist 19 381-384

THOMAS, NORMAN MATTOON (1884-1968), American Socialist politician, author, and lecturer 15 191-192

THOMAS, THEODORE (1835-1905), American orchestral conductor 15 192-193

THOMAS, WILLIAM ISAAC (1863-1947), American sociologist and educator 15 193

THOMAS AQUINAS, SAINT (circa 1224-74), Italian philosopher and theologian 15 183-186

THOMASIUS (1655-1728), German philosopher and jurist 15 193-194

THOMPSON, DALEY (Francis Ayodele Thompson; born 1958), English track and field athlete 20 368-370

THOMPSON, DAVID (1770-1857), Canadian explorer, cartographer, and surveyor 15 194-195

THOMPSON, DOROTHY (1894-1961), conservative American journalist 15 195-196

THOMPSON, HUNTER STOCKTON (born 1939), American journalist 15 196-198
United Kingdom
see Great Britain; Northern Ireland

United Nations
supporters
Murray, Gilbert 23 250-253

U.S. House of Representatives
House Committee on Un-American Activities (HUAC)
Robeson, Islanda Goode 23 340-342

UNSER, AL, SR. (born 1939), American race car driver 23 415-417

UPDIKE, JOHN (born 1932), American author of poems, short stories, essays, and novels 15 390-392

UPJOHN, RICHARD (Bartolomeo Prignano; 1318-82), English-born American architect 15 392

URBAN II (Otto de Lagery; 1040-99), pope 1088-99 15 393

URBAN VI (Bartolomeo Prignano; 1318-89), pope 1378-89 15 394

URBAN, MATT (1919-1995), American soldier 19 391-392

UREY, HAROLD CLAYTON (1893-1981), American chemical physicist and geochemist 15 394-396

URQUiza, JUSTO JOSÉ (1801-1870), Argentine dictator, general, and statesman 15 396-397

URRACA (c. 1078-1126), Queen of Leon-Castilla 23 417-418

UTAMARO, KITAGAWA (1501-1610), Japanese printmaker 15 397

UTHMAN DON FODIO (1755-1816), Moslem teacher and theologian 15 397-398

V

VADIM, ROGER (Roger Vadim Plemiannikov; 1928-2000), Russian/French filmaker and author 22 413-415

VAIL, THEODORE NEWTON (1845-1920), American businessman 23 419-421

VAIPAYEE, ATAL BEHARI (born 1926), prime minister of India 19 393-395

VALDEZ, Luis (born 1940), Hispanic American playwright and filmmaker 15 399-400

VALDIVIA, PEDRO DE (circa 1502-53), Spanish conquistador and professional soldier 15 400-401

VALENS, RITCHIE (Richard Steven Valenzuela; 1941-1959), Hispanic American musician 22 415-417

VALENTI, JACK JOSEPH (born 1921), presidential adviser and czar of the American film industry 15 401-403

VALENTINO, RUDOLPH (Rodolfo Alfonso Rafaelle Pierre Filibert de Valentina d’Antoguolla Guglielmii; 1895-1926), Italian/American actor 20 388-390

VALENZUELA, LUISA (born 1938), Argentine author 23 421-423

VALERA Y ALCALÁ GALLIANO, JUAN (1824-1905), Spanish novelist and diplomat 15 403

VALERIAN (circa 200-circa 260), Roman emperor 410-411

VALÉRY, PAUL AMBROISE (1871-1945), French poet, philosopher, and critic 15 405-406

VALLA, LORENZO (circa 1407-57), Italian humanist 15 406

VALLANDIGHAM, CLEMENT LAIRD (1820-1871), American politician 15 406-407

VALLE INCLÁN, RAMÓN MARÍA DEL (1882-1938), Spanish novelist, playwright, and poet 15 407-408

VALLEJO, CÉSAR ABRAHAM (1892-1938), Peruvian poet 15 408-409

VAN BUREN, MARTIN (1782-1862), American statesman, president 1837-41 15 410-411

VAN DER GOES, HUGO (flourished 1467-82), Flemish painter 15 416-417

VAN DIEMEN, ANTHONY MEUZA (flourished circa 200-circa 260), Roman emperor 411-413

VAN DIJK, ANTON VAN (1599-1641), Dutch painter 413-414

VAN DOESBURG, THEO (1883-1931), Dutch painter 15 421

VAN DUYN, MONA (born 1921), first woman to be appointed poet laureate of the United States 15 422-423

VAN DYCK, ANTHONY (1599-1641), Flemish painter 15 423-425

VAN EEKENEN, WILLEM FREDERIK (born 1931), Dutch secretary-general of the Western European Union 15 426-427

VAN GOGH, VINCENT (1853-1890), Dutch painter 15 427-429

VAN HORN, SIR WILLIAM (1582-1641), English-born American architect 15 429-430

VAN PEEBLES, MELVIN (Melvin Peabees; born 1932), American film director and producer, actor, author, and musician 21 414-416

VAN RENSELAER, KILIAEN (circa 1580-circa 1643), Dutch merchant and colonial official in America 15 430-431

VAN VECHTEN, CARL (1880-1964), American writer and photographer 18 400-402

VANBRUGH, SIR JOHN (1664-1726), English architect and dramatist 15 469-410

VANCE, CYRUS R. (1917-2002), American secretary of the army and secretary of state 15 411-413

VANCE, ZEBULON BAIRO (1830-1894), American politician 15 413-414

VANCOUVER, GEORGE (1758-1798), English explorer and navigator 15 414-415

VANDERLYN, JOHN (1775-1852), American painter 15 417

VANE, SIR HENRY (1613-1662), English statesman 15 423-426

VANN'T HOFF, JACOBUS HENDRICUS (1852-1911), Dutch physical chemist 15 431-432

VARDHAMANA MAHAVIRA (circa 540-470 B.C.), Indian ascetic philosopher 10 135-137

VARÉSE, EDMUND (1883-1965), French-American composer 15 432-433

VARGAS, GETULIO DORNELLES (1883-1954), Brazilian political leader 15 433-434

VARGAS LLOSA, MARIO (1936-), Peruvian novelist, critic, journalist, screenwriter, and essayist 15 434-436

VARMUS, HAROLD ELIOT (born 1939), medical research expert and director of the National Institutes of Health (1993-) 15 436-437

VARNHAGEN, FRANCISCO ADOLFO DE (1816-1878), Brazilian historian 15 437-438

VARRO, MARCUS TERENTIUS (116-27 B.C.), Roman scholar and writer 15 438-439
VARTHEMA, LUDOVICO DI (circa 1470-circa 1517), Italian traveler and adventurer 15 439-440

VASARELY, VICTOR (1908-1997), Hungarian-French artist 15 440-442

VASARI, GIORGIO (1511-1570), Italian painter, architect, and author 15 442-443

VASCONCELOS, JOSÉ (1882-1959), Mexican educator and author 15 443-444

Vassar College (Poughkeepsie, New York State) — Whitney, Mary Watson 23 440-442

VAUBAN, SEBASTIEN LE PRESTRE DE (1633-1707), French military engineer 18 402-404

VAUDREUIL-CAVAGNAL, MARQUIS DE (Pierre François de Regaud; 1698-1778), Canadian-born governor of New France 15 444

VAUGHAN, HENRY (1621/22-95), British poet 15 444-445

VAUGHAN, SARAH LOIS (1924-1990), jazz singer 15 445-446

VAUGHAN, WILLIAMS, RALPH (1872-1958), English composer 15 446-447

VAVILOV, NIKOLAI IVANOVICH (1887-1943), Russian botanist and geneticist 15 447-448

VÁZQUEZ, HORACIO (1860-1936), president of the Dominican Republic 1903-04 and 1924-30 15 448-449

VÁZQUEZ ARCE Y CEBALLOS, GREGORIO (1638-1711), Colombian artist 23 423-425

VEBLEN, THORSTEIN BUNDE (1857-1929), American political economist and sociologist 15 449-450

VELASCO, JOSÉ MARÍA (1840-1912), Mexican painter 15 450-451

VELASCO, LUIS DE (1511-1564), Spanish colonial administrator 15 450-451

VELASCO ALVARADO, JUAN (1910-1977), Peruvian army officer who seized power in 1968 15 451-452

VELASCO IBARRA, JOSÉ MARÍA (1893-1979), Ecuadorian statesman, five time president 15 452-454

VELÁZQUEZ, DIEGO RODRÍGUEZ DE SILVA Y (1599-1660), Spanish painter 15 454-456

VELÁZQUEZ, NYDIA MARGARITA (born 1953), Hispanic American politician 15 456-459

VELÁZQUEZ DE CUÉLLAR, DIEGO (circa 1465-1523), Spanish conqueror, founder of Cuba 15 459

VELDE, HENRY VAN DE (1863-1957), Belgian painter, designer, and architect 15 419-420

Venezia, Domenico di Bartolomeo da see Veneziano, Domenico

VENEZIANO, DOMENICO (Domenico di Bartolomeo da Venezia; 1410?-1461), Italian painter 15 459-460

VENIZELOS, ELEUTHERIOS (1864-1936), Greek statesman 15 460-461

VENTURI, ROBERT (born 1925), American architect 15 461-463

VERA, YVONNE (born 1925), Zimbabwean author 23 425-427

VERGINGETORIX (circa 75-circa 46 B.C.), Celtic chieftain and military leader 19 397-399

VERDI, GIUSEPPE FORTUNINO FRANCESCO (1813-1901), Italian composer 15 463-465

VERLAINE, PAUL MARIE (1844-1896), French poet 15 465-466

VERMEER, JAN (1632-1675), Dutch painter 15 466-467

VERNE, JULIE (1828-1905), French novelist 15 467-469

VERONESE, PAOLO (1528-1588), Italian painter 15 469-470

VERRAZANO, GIOVANNI DA (1485-circa 1528), Italian explorer 15 470-471

VERRUZZANO, ANDREA DEL (1435-1488), Italian sculptor and painter 15 471-472

VERSEY, DIANE (1949-1997), American fashion designer 15 490-491

VERHAEREN, PAUL (1855-1916), Belgian poet and essayist 15 491-492

VERHAEREN, PAUL (1855-1916), Belgian poet and essayist 15 491-492

VIEIRA, ANTONIO (1608-1697), Portuguese orator and Jesuit missionary 15 492

VIGEE LEBRUN, ELISABETH (1755-1842), French painter 15 498-499

VILLALOBOS, HEITOR (1946-1997), Brazilian composer 15 498-499

VILLANO, GIACOMO DA (1507-1573), Italian architect 15 493-494

VIGNY, COMTE DE (Alfred Victor Vigny; 1797-1863), French poet 15 494-495

VIGOR, JEAN (Jean Bonaventure de Vigo; 1405-1934), French filmmaker 23 429-431

VILLA, PANCHO (Francisco Villa; 1878-1923), Mexican revolutionary 15 495-496

VILLA-LOBOS, HEITOR (1946-1997), Brazilian composer 15 496-497

VILLANUEVA, GIOVANNI (circa 1270-1308), Italian chronicler 15 497-498

VILLARD, OSCAR GARRISON (1872-1949), American journalist 15 498-499

VILLEGARDOUIN, GEFFROI DE (circa 1150-1213), French historian and soldier 15 499
VILLEDA MORALES, RAMON (1909-1971), Honduran president, 1957-1963

VILLON, FRANÇOIS (1431-after 1463), French poet 15 499-501

VINCENZO, JOHN HEYL (1832-1920), American educator and religious leader 15 502-503

VINCENZO DE PAUL, ST. (1581-1660), French priest 15 501-502

VINCENZO OF BEAUVAIS (circa 1190-1264), French writer and theologian 21 416-418

VINOCADOFF, SIR PAUL GAVRILOVITCH (1854-1925), Russian educator and historian 15 503

VINSON, FRED (Frederic Moore Vinson; 1890-1953), chief justice of the U.S. Supreme Court 15 503-505

Violin (musical instrument)
Chung, Kyung Wha 23 74-76
Cugat, Xavier 23 81-82

VIOLET-LE-DUC, EUGÈNE EMMANUEL (1814-1879), French architect and theologian 15 505-506

VIRCHOW, RUDOLF LUDWIG CARL (1821-1902), German medical scientist, anthropologist, and politician 15 506-507

VIRGIL (Publius Vergilius Maro; 70-19 B.C.), Roman poet 15 507-510

Virus (medical)
Ho, David Da-I 23 145-148

VISCONTI, GIAN GALEAZZO (Duke of Milan; 1351-1402), Italian despot 15 510-511

VISSE' T HOOFT, WILLEM ADOLF (1900-1985), Reformed churchman and ecumenist who was the first general secretary of the World Council of Churches 15 511-512

VITAMIN, FRANCISCO DE (circa 1483-1546), Spanish theologian and political theorist 16 1-2

VITRY, PHILIPPE DE (1291-1360), French poet, composer, and churchman-statesman 16 2

VITTORIANI, Elio (1908-1966), Italian novelist, editor, and journalist 16 2-3

VIVALDI, ANTONIO (1678-1741), Italian violinist and composer 16 3-4

VIVEKANANDA (1863-1902), Indian reformer, missionary, and spiritual leader 16 4-5

VLADIMIR I (died 1015), grand prince of Kievan Russia 980-1015 16 5-6

VLAMINCK, MAURICE (1876-1958), French painter 16 6

VOEGELIN, ERIC (1901-1985), German-Austrian political theorist 16 6-8

VOGEL, HANS-JOCHEN (born 1926), West German political leader 16 8-9

VOGEL, SIR JULIUS (1835-1899), New Zealand statesman, twice prime minister 16 9-10

VOGELWEIDE, WALTHER VON DER (circa 1170-1229), German poet, composer, and singer 16 10-11

VOLKER, PAUL (born 1927), chairman of the U.S. Federal Reserve Board (1979-1987) 16 11-12

VOLTA, ALESSANDRO (1745-1827), Italian physicist 16 12-14

VOLTAIRE (1694-1778), French poet, dramatist, historian, and philosopher 16 14-16

VON AUER, HARTMANN (Aue von Hartmann; c.1160 - c.1250), German poet and troubadour 22 417-419

VON BERING, HILDEGARD (Hildegard of Bingen; 1098-1179), German composer, scientist, and theologian 22 240-242

VON BRAUN, WERNHER (1912-1977), German-born American space scientist 16 17-18

VON FURSTENBERG, DIANE (Diane von Furstenberg; born 1946), American fashion designer and businesswoman 16 20-21

VON HÜGEL, BARON FRIDRIK (1852-1925), philosopher of Christianity 16 21-22

VON LAUE, MAX (1879-1960), German physicist 16 23-24

VON MEYER, ROBERT BRANDT (born 1922), American lawyer and legislator 16 29-30

VON STROHEIM, ERICH (Erich Oswald Stroheim; 1885-1957), Austrian actor and director 21 418-420

VON VRAI KEN, WERDIE (1903-1957), Hungarian-born American mathematician 16 27-28

VON MISES, LUDWIG (born 1881), Austrian economist and social philosopher 16 25

VON NEUMANN, JOHN (1903-1957), Hungarian-born American mathematician 16 27-28

VON PAPEN, FRANZ (1879-1969), conservative German politician who helped prepare the way for the Third Reich 16 28-29

VON RAD, GERHARD (1901-1971), German theologian 16 29-30

VON VRAI KEN, WERDIE (1903-1957), Hungarian-born American mathematician 16 27-28

VON STROHEIM, ERICH (Erich Oswald Stroheim; 1885-1957), Austrian actor and director 21 418-420

VON VRAI KEN, WERDIE (1903-1957), Hungarian-born American mathematician 16 27-28

VON STROHEIM, ERICH (Erich Oswald Stroheim; 1885-1957), Austrian actor and director 21 418-420

VON VRAI KEN, WERDIE (1903-1957), Hungarian-born American mathematician 16 27-28

VON STROHEIM, ERICH (Erich Oswald Stroheim; 1885-1957), Austrian actor and director 21 418-420

VON VRAI KEN, WERDIE (1903-1957), Hungarian-born American mathematician 16 27-28

VON STROHEIM, ERICH (Erich Oswald Stroheim; 1885-1957), Austrian actor and director 21 418-420

VON VRAI KEN, WERDIE (1903-1957), Hungarian-born American mathematician 16 27-28

VON STROHEIM, ERICH (Erich Oswald Stroheim; 1885-1957), Austrian actor and director 21 418-420

VON VRAI KEN, WERDIE (1903-1957), Hungarian-born American mathematician 16 27-28

VON STROHEIM, ERICH (Erich Oswald Stroheim; 1885-1957), Austrian actor and director 21 418-420

VON VRAI KEN, WERDIE (1903-1957), Hungarian-born American mathematician 16 27-28

VON STROHEIM, ERICH (Erich Oswald Stroheim; 1885-1957), Austrian actor and director 21 418-420

VON VRAI KEN, WERDIE (1903-1957), Hungarian-born American mathematician 16 27-28

VON STROHEIM, ERICH (Erich Oswald Stroheim; 1885-1957), Austrian actor and director 21 418-420

VON VRAI KEN, WERDIE (1903-1957), Hungarian-born American mathematician 16 27-28

VON STROHEIM, ERICH (Erich Oswald Stroheim; 1885-1957), Austrian actor and director 21 418-420

VON VRAI KEN, WERDIE (1903-1957), Hungarian-born American mathematician 16 27-28

VON STROHEIM, ERICH (Erich Oswald Stroheim; 1885-1957), Austrian actor and director 21 418-420

VON VRAI KEN, WERDIE (1903-1957), Hungarian-born American mathematician 16 27-28

VON STROHEIM, ERICH (Erich Oswald Stroheim; 1885-1957), Austrian actor and director 21 418-420

VON VRAI KEN, WERDIE (1903-1957), Hungarian-born American mathematician 16 27-28

VON STROHEIM, ERICH (Erich Oswald Stroheim; 1885-1957), Austrian actor and director 21 418-420

VON VRAI KEN, WERDIE (1903-1957), Hungarian-born American mathematician 16 27-28

VON STROHEIM, ERICH (Erich Oswald Stroheim; 1885-1957), Austrian actor and director 21 418-420

VON VRAI KEN, WERDIE (1903-1957), Hungarian-born American mathematician 16 27-28

VON STROHEIM, ERICH (Erich Oswald Stroheim; 1885-1957), Austrian actor and director 21 418-420

VON VRAI KEN, WERDIE (1903-1957), Hungarian-born American mathematician 16 27-28

VON STROHEIM, ERICH (Erich Oswald Stroheim; 1885-1957), Austrian actor and director 21 418-420

VON VRAI KEN, WERDIE (1903-1957), Hungarian-born American mathematician 16 27-28

VON STROHEIM, ERICH (Erich Oswald Stroheim; 1885-1957), Austrian actor and director 21 418-420

WALCOTT, DEREK ALTON (born 1930), West Indian poet and dramatist 16 50-51
WARNOCK, HELEN MARY WILSON (born 1924), British philosopher 16 115-117

WARREN, EARL (1891-1974), American jurist, chief justice of U.S. Supreme Court 1953-69 16 117-120

WARREN, MERCY OTIS (1728-1814), American writer 16 120-121

WARREN, ROBERT PENN (1905-1989), American man of letters 16 121-122

WARWICK AND SALISBURY, EARL OF (Richard Neville; 1428-71), English military and political leader 16 122-123

WASHAKIE (circa 1804-1900), Native American Shoshoni tribal leader 16 123-125

WASHINGTON, BOOKER TALIAFERRO (1856-1915), African American educator and racial leader 16 125-126

Washington, D.C. (federal city) cultural programs
Thomas, Alma Woodsey 23 401-403 integration
Terrell, Mary Church 23 397-399

WASHINGTON, GEORGE (1732-1799), American Revolutionary commander in chief, president 1789-97 16 126-129

WASIZATION, JUAN CARLOS (born 1939), president of Paraguay (1993- ) 16 129-130

WASSERMANN, JAKOB (1873-1934), German author 16 130-131

WATERHOUSE, BENJAMIN (1754-1846), American physician 16 131-132

WATTS, MAXINE (born 1939), African American congresswoman 16 132-134

WATTS, MUDY (born Mckinley Morganfield; 1915-1983), African American blues musician 16 134-136

WATSON, ELKANAH (1758-1842), American merchant and banker 16 136

WATSON, JAMES DEWEY (born 1928), American biologist 16 137-138

WATSON, JOHN BROADUS (1878-1958), American psychologist 16 138-139

WATSON, THOMAS EDWARD (1856-1922), American lawyer and politician 16 139

WATSON, THOMAS J. (1874-1956), American business executive 16 140

WATSON, THOMAS J. JR. (1914-1993), American businessman 19 408-410

WATSON-WATT, SIR ROBERT ALEXANDER (1892-1973), British scientific civil servant 16 140-141

WATT, JAMES (1736-1819), British instrument maker and engineer 16 141-143

WATTEAU, ANTOINE (1684-1721), French painter 16 143-144

WATTLETON, FAYE (Alcyce Faye Wattleton, born 1943), African American women’s rights activist 18 405-407

WATTS, ALAN WILSON (1915-1973), naturalized American author and lecturer 16 144-145

WATTS, J.C. (Julius Caesar Watts, Jr.; born 1937), African American politician 18 407-409


WAYLAND, FRANCIS (1796-1865), American educator and clergyman 16 148-149

WAYNE, ANTHONY (1745-1796), American soldier 16 149-150

WAYNE, JOHN (Marion Mitchell Morrison; 1907-79), American actor 16 150-151

WEAVER, JAMES BAIRD (1833-1912), American political leader 16 151-152

WEAVER, PAT (Sylvester Laflin Weaver, Jr.; 1908-2002), American television executive 19 410-413

WEAVER, ROBERT C. (1907-1997), first African American U.S. cabinet officer 16 152-153

WEBB, BEATRICE POTTER (1858-1943), English social reformer 16 153-154

WEBB, SIDNEY JAMES (Baron Passfield; 1859-1947), English social reformer, historian, and statesman 16 154-155

WEBBER, ANDREW LLOYD (born 1948), British composer 16 155-156

WEBBER, CARL MARIA FRIEDRICH ERNST VON (1786-1826), German composer and conductor 16 156-157

WEBER, MAX (1864-1920), German social scientist 16 157-160

WEBER, MAX (1881-1961), American painter 16 160

WEBER, ANTON (1883-1945), Austrian composer 16 160-162

WEBER, DANIEL (1782-1852), American lawyer, orator, and statesman 16 162-164

WEBER, JOHN (circa 1580-circa 1634), English dramatist 16 164

WEBER, NOAH (1758-1843), American lexicographer 16 164-166

WEDEKIND, FRANK (Benjamin Franklin Wedekind; 1864-1918), German dramatist, cosmopolite, and libertarian 16 166-167

WEDGWOOD, CICELY VERONICA (1910-1997), British writer and historian 16 167-168

WEDGWOOD, JOSIAH (1730-1795), English potter 16 168-169

WEE, THURLOW (1797-1882), American politician 16 169-170

WEEMS, MASON LOCKE (1759-1825), American Episcopal minister and popular writer 16 170

WEGENER, ALFRED LOTHAR (1880-1930), German meteorologist, Arctic explorer, and geophysicist 16 170-171

WEI HSIAO-WEN-TI (467-499), Chinese emperor 8 5

WEI JINGSHE_ (born 1950), Chinese human rights activist 18 410-412

WEI YUAN (1794-1856), Chinese historian and geographer 16 180-181

WEIDENREICH, FRANZ (1873-1948), German anatomist and physical anthropologist 16 171-172

WEIL, SIMONE (1909-1943), French thinker, political activist, and religious mystic 16 172-174

WEILL, TURT (1900-1950), German-American composer 16 174-175

WEINBERG, STEVEN (born 1933), Nobel Prize-winning physicist 16 175-177

WEINBERGER, CASPER WILLARD (born 1917), U.S. public official under three presidents 16 177-178

WEIMANN, AUGUST FREDRICH LEOPOLD (1834-1914), German biologist 16 178-180

WEISSMULLER, JOHNNY (born 1924), Israeli air force commander and president of Israel (1993-) 16 181-182
WILLIAMS, ROGER (circa 1603-83), Puritan clergyman in colonial America

WILLIAMS, SHIRLEY VIVIEN TERESA BRITTAIN (born 1930), British politician

WILLIAMS, TED (Theodore Samuel Williams; 1918-2002), American baseball player

WILLIAMS, TENNESSEE (Thomas Lanier Williams; born 1914), American dramatist and fiction writer

WILLIAMS, WILLIAM CARLOS (1883-1963), American poet and pediatrian

WILLS, HELEN (1905-1998), American tennis player

WILLYS, JOHN (1873-1935), American businessman

WILMOT, DAVID (1814-1868), American politician

WILMUT, DAVID (1814-1868), British politician

WILSON, EDWARD OSBORNE (born 1929), American biologist

WILSON, HARRIET E. (circa 1827-circa 1863), African American author

WILSON, HARRY AUSTRYN (1887-1974), American scholar and educator

WILSON, ISAAC MAYER (circa 1475-1530), Jewish religious leader

WILSON, ISRAEL (1812-1875), American politician

WILSON, ISAAC MAYER (1856-1924), American statesman, president

WILSON, ISAAC MAYER (1856-1924), American statesman, president

WILSON, ISAAC MAYER (1856-1924), American statesman, president

WILSON, JAMES (1717-1759), English general

WILSON, JAMES (1717-1759), English general

WILSON, JAMES (1717-1759), English general

WILSON, JAMES (1717-1759), English general

WILSON, JAMES (1717-1759), English general

WILSON, JAMES (1717-1759), English general

WILSON, JAMES (1717-1759), English general

WILSON, RICHARD (1713/14-82), British painter

WILSON, ROGER (1804-1871), Chinese official

WOLFE, THOMAS KENNERLY, JR. (1727-1759), English general

WOLFF, HUGH (born 1953), American mathematician

Women athletes

Women and the Vege of a Nervous Breakdown (film)

Women's rights

Women's suffrage (Australia)

Women's rights
Women's suffrage (United States)  
leaders  
Terrell, Mary Church 23 397-399

WONDER, STEVIE (Stevland Judkins Morris; born 1950), American singer, songwriter, and musician 19 428-430

WONG, ANNA MAY (born Wong Lih Tsong; 1905-1961), Asian American actress 16 366-367

WOOD, FERNANDO (1812-1881), American politician 16 367-368

WOOD, GRANT (1891-1942), American painter 16 368-369

WOOD, LEONARD (1860-1927), American Army officer and colonial administrator 16 369-370

WOOD, ROBERT ELKINGTON (1879-1969), American Army officer and business executive 16 370-371

WOODHULL, VICTORIA C. (1838-1927), American women's rights activist 16 371-372

WOODRUFF, ROBERT W. (1889-1985), American businessman and philanthropist 16 372-374

WOODS, ROBERT ARCHEY (1865-1925), American social worker 16 374

WOODS, TIGER (born 1975), African American/Asian American golfer 18 416-418

WOODSON, CARTER GODWIN (1875-1950), African American historian 16 374-376

WOODSWORTH, JAMES SHAVER (1874-1942), Canadian humanitarian, reformer, and political leader 16 376

WOODWARD, COMER VANN (born 1908), American historian 16 378-379

WOODWARD, ELLEN S. (1887-1971), director of work relief programs for women during the New Deal 16 379-381

WOODWARD AND BERNSTEIN, investigative reporting team of Woodward, Robert Upshur (born 1943), and Bernstein, Carl (born 1944) 16 376-378

WOOLF, VIRGINIA STEPHEN (1882-1941), English novelist, critic, and essayist 16 381-382

WOOLMAN, JOHN (1720-1772), American Quaker merchant and minister 16 382-383

WOOLWORTH, FRANK WINFIELD (1852-1919), American merchant 16 383-384

WOOTTON, BARBARA ADAM (1897-1988), British social scientist and member of Parliament 16 384-385

WORDSWORTH, WILLIAM (1770-1850), English poet 16 385-388

WORK, MONROE (1866-1945), American sociologist and publisher 16 388-389

Workingmen's party (U.S. politics)  
Parsons, Lucy Gonzalez 23 293-295

WORNER, MANFRED (born 1934), West German statesman 16 389-390

WORTH, CHARLES FREDERICK (1825-1895), English-born French fashion designer 21 436-438

WOVOKA (a.k.a. Jack Wilson; circa 1856-1932), Native American religious leader and mystic 16 390-393

WOZNIAK, STEVE (Stephen Gary Wozniak; born 1950), American inventor and computer designer 19 430-432

WREN, SIR CHRISTOPHER (1632-1723), English architect 16 393-394

WRIGHT, CARROLL DAVIDSON (1840-1909), American statistician and social economist 16 396

WRIGHT, ELIZUR (1804-1885), American reformer 16 396-397

WRIGHT, FRANCES (1795-1852), Scottish-American socialist, feminist, and reformer 16 397-398

WRIGHT, FRANK LLOYD (1869-1959), American architect 16 398-401

WRIGHT, RICHARD (1908-1960), African American author 16 401-402

WRIGHT, WILBUR (1867-1919) AND ORVILLE (1871-1948), American aviation pioneers 16 394-396

WRIGHTLEY, WILLIAM, JR. (1861-1932), American businessman and baseball team owner 20 413-415

WU CHAO (Wu Hou/Wu Tse-Tien; 625-705), Empress of China, 690-705 20 415-417

WU CHIEN-SHIUNG (1912-1997), American physicist 19 432-434

WU PEI-FU (1874-1939), Chinese warlord 16 404-405

WU TAO-TZU (circa 689-after 758), Chinese painter 16 405-406

WU TSE-TIEN (623-705), Empress of China 16 408

WU WANG (died circa 1116 B.C.), first ruler of the Chou dynasty of China 1122-1116 B.C. 16 408-409

WUNDT, WILHELM MAX (1832-1920), German psychologist and philosopher 16 402-403

WUORINEN, CHARLES (born 1938), American composer, conductor, and pianist 16 404

WU-TI (a.k.a. Han Wuti; 156 B.C.-circa 87 B.C.), Chinese emperor 16 406-408

WYANT, ALEXANDER HELWIG (1836-1892), American painter 16 409-410

WYATT, SIR THOMAS (1503-1542), English poet and diplomat 16 410-411

WYCHERLEY, WILLIAM (circa 1640-1716), English dramatist 16 411-412

WYCILF, JOHN (1330/32-84), English theologian and reformer 16 412-413

WYETH, ANDREW NEWELL (born 1917), American painter 16 413-415

WYLER, WILLIAM (1902-1981), American film director 22 424-426

WYNN, EARLY (Gus Wynn; 1920-1999), American baseball player 20 417-419

WYTHE, GEORGE (1726-1806), American jurist 16 415

X

XENAKIS, IANNIS (born 1922), Greek-French composer and architect 16 416-418

XENOPHON (circa 430-circa 355 B.C.), Greek historian, essayist, and military expert 16 418-420

XERES (ruled 486-465 B.C.), king of Persia 16 420

XIANG JINGYU (born Xiang Qunxian; 1895-1928), Chinese feminist 16 421-422

XU GUANGQI (a.k.a. Kuang-ch'i Hsiü; 1562-1633), Chinese politician 16 422-425

Y

YAKUB AL-MANSUR, ABU YUSUF (ruled 1184-99), Almohad caliph in Spain 16 426

YALOW, ROSALYN S. (Sussman; born 1921), American physicist who developed radioimmunoassay 16 427-428

YAMAGATA, ARITOMO (1838-1922), Japanese general 16 428-429

YAMAMOTO, ISOROKU (born Takano Isoroku; 1884-1943), Japanese admiral 16 429-433
YAMANI, AHMED ZAKI (born 1930), Saudi Arabian lawyer and minister of petroleum and mineral resources (1962-1986) 16 433-435

YAMASHITA, TOMOYUKI (1885-1946), Japanese general 16 435-436

YANCEY, WILLIAM LOWNDES (1814-1863), American politician 16 436-437

YANG, CHEN NING (born 1922), Chinese-born American physicist 16 437-438

YARD, MARY ALEXANDER (“Molly”; born 1912), American feminist, political organizer, and social activist 16 438-439

YASUI, MINORU (1917-1987), Asian American attorney 16 440-444

YEAGER, CHUCK (born 1923), American pilot 16 444-445

YEAGER, JEANA (born 1952), American pilot 23 449-451

YEATS, WILLIAM BUTLER (1865-1939), Irish poet and dramatist 16 445-447

YEH-LU CH’U-TS’AI (1189-1243), Mongol administrator 16 447-449

YIKUNO AMLAK (ruled circa 1268-1283), Ethiopian king 16 449

YELTSIN, BORIS NIKOLAEVICH (born 1931), president of the Russian Republic (1990-) 16 449-452

YEN FU (1853-1921), Chinese translator and scholar 16 452

YEN HSI-SHAN (1883-1960), Chinese warlord 16 452-453

YEN LI-PEN (died 673), Chinese painter 16 453-454

YERKES, ROBERT MEARNS (1876-1956), American psychologist 16 454-455

YEVTUŞENKO, YEVTGENY ALEKSANDROVICH (born 1933), Soviet poet 16 455-456

YI HWANG (1501-1570), Korean philosopher, poet, scholar, and educator 16 457

YI NONG-YE (1335-1408), Korean military leader, founder of the Yi dynasty 16 458-459

YI SUNSIN (1501-1598), Korean military strategist and naval hero 16 459-461

YOLOU, FULBERT (1917-1972), Congolese president 16 466-467

YOUNG, ANDREW JACKSON JR. (born 1932), African American preacher, civil rights activist, and politician 16 467-469

YOUNG, BRIGHAM (1801-1877), American Mormon leader and colonizer 16 469-470

YOUNG, COLEMAN ALEXANDER (1918-1997), first African American mayor of Detroit 16 470-471

YOUNG, LESTER WILLIS (“Prez”; 1909-59), American jazz musician 16 471-473

YOUNG, LORETTA (Gretchen Michaela Young; 1913-2000), American Actress 22 427-430

YOUNG, OWEN D. (1874-1962), American industrialist and monetary authority 16 473-474

YOUNG, STARK (1881-1963), drama critic, editor, translator, painter, playwright, and novelist 16 474-475

YOUNG, THOMAS (1773-1829), English physicist 16 475-476

YOUNGHUSBAND, SIR FRANCIS EDWARD (1863-1942), English soldier and explorer 16 477

YOU'REN, MARCOURTE (Marguerite Antoinette Ghislaine; 1903-87), French novelist, poet, essayist, dramatist, world traveler, and novelist 16 477-479

YOUEN, MA (flourished circa 1190-circa 1229), Chinese painter 16 379

YOUEN MEI (1716-1798), Chinese author 16 479-480

YOU SAIH-KAI (1859-1916), Chinese military leader 16 480-481

YUKAWA, HIDEKI (1907-1981), Japanese physicist 16 481-482

YUN SONDAL (1587-1671), Korean sijo poet 16 483

YUNG-LO (1360-1424), Chinese emperor 16 482-483

YUWA, see Young Women’s Christian Association

YZERMAN, STEVE (born 1965), Canadian hockey player 23 451-453

Z

ZADKINE, OSSIP JOSELYN (1890-1967), Russian sculptor 16 484

ZAGHLUL PASHA, SAAD (1859-1927), Egyptian political leader 16 485-486

ZAH, PETERSON (born 1937), Native American leader and activist 16 486-487

ZAHARIAS, MILLER DIDRIKSON (“Babe”; 1913-56), Olympic athlete and golfer 16 487-488

ZAHIR SHAH, MUHAMMAD (born 1914), Afghan King 22 431-433

ZANGWILL, ISAAC (1864-1926), Jewish author and philosopher 16 488-489

ZANUCK, DARRYL F. (1902-1979), American film producer and executive 19 435-437

ZAPATA, EMILIANO (circa 1879-1919), Mexican agrarian leader and guerrilla fighter 16 489-490

ZARLINO, GIOSEFFO (1517-1590), Italian music theorist and composer 16 490-491

ZATOPEK, EMIL (born 1922), Czechoslovakian runner 20 420-422

ZAYID BIN SULTAN AL-NAHYAN (1923), president of the United Arab Emirates (1971-) 16 491-492

ZEAMI, KANZE (1364-1444), Japanese actor, playwright, and critic 16 492-493

ZEDILLO PONCE DE LEON, ERNESTO (born 1951), president of Mexico 16 493-495

ZEFFIRELLI, FRANCO (born 1923), Italian stage, opera, and film director, set designer, and politician 18 419-421

ZELAYA, JOSE´ SANTOS (1877-1919), Nicaraguan statesman, three-time president 16 495-496

ZEMURRAYS, SAMUEL (1877-1961), Russian-born U.S. fruit importer 16 496-497

ZENGER, JOHN PETER (1697-1746), American printer 16 497-498
ZENO OF CITIUM (335-263 B.C.),
Greek philosopher 16 499-500

ZENO OF ELEA (born circa 490 B.C.),
Greek philosopher and logician 16 500

ZENOBOIA (died 273), queen of Palmyra 16 500-503

Zero for Conduct (film)
Vigo, Jean 23 429-431

ZETKIN, CLARA (1857-1933), German political activist 16 504-505

ZHAO KUANG-YIN (a.k.a. Song Tai Zu
or Sung T’ai Tsu; 927-976), Chinese emperor 16 505-508

ZHAO ZIYANG (Zhao Xiusheng; born 1919), Chinese statesman 16 508-509

ZHIRINOVSKY, VLADIMIR VLOFOVICH (born 1946), Russian politician 16 509-510

ZHIVKOV, TODOR (1911-1998), leader of the Bulgarian Communist Party and head of the Bulgarian government (1962-) 16 510-512

ZHUKOV, GEORGI KONSTANTINOVICH (1896-1974), Russian general 16 512-513

ZIA, HELEN (born 1952), Asian American activist and journalist 18 421-423


ZIAUR RAHMAN (1936-1981),
Bangladesh president (1975-1981) 16 515-516

ZIEGFELD, FLORENZ (1869-1932),
American musical producer 16 516-517

ZIMMERMAN, BERND ALOIS (1918-1970), German composer 16 517-518

ZIMMERMANN BROTHERS, German artists 16 518

ZINDEL, PAUL (1936-2003), American children’s author and playwright 18 423-425

ZINE EL ABIDINE BEN ALI (born 1936),
president of Tunisia 16 518-520

ZINN, HOWARD (born 1922), American political scientist and historian 16 520-521

ZINOVIEV, GRIGORI EVSEEVICH (1883-1936), Soviet politician 16 521-522

ZINZENDORF, COUNT NIKOLAUS LUDWIG VON (1700-1760), German-born Moravian clergyman 16 522-523

ZNANIECKI, FLORIAN (1882-1958), Polish-American sociologist and educator 16 523-524

ZOÉ (circa 978-1050), Byzantine empress 1028-34 16 524-525

ZOG I (Ahmed Bey Zog; 1895–1961), Albanian king 16 525-526

ZOLA, ÉMILE (1840-1902), French novelist 16 526-528

ZORACH, WILLIAM (1887-1966),
American sculptor and painter 16 528

ZOROASTER (flourished 1st millennium B.C.), prophet and founder of Iranian national religion 16 528-530

ZORRILLA DE SAN MARTIN, JUAN (1855-1931), Uruguayan poet and newspaperman 16 530-531

ZUKERMAN, PINCHAS (born 1948), Israeli musician 22 433-435

ZUKOR, ADOLPH (1873-1976),
American film producer and executive 19 437-439

ZUMÁRRAGA, JUAN DE (circa 1468-1548), Spanish churchman, first archbishop of Mexico 16 531-532


ZUNZ, LEOPOLD (1794-1886), German-born Jewish scholar 16 534

ZURBARÁN, FRANCISCO DE (1598-1644), Spanish painter 16 534-535

ZWILICH, ELLEN TAAFFE (born 1939),
American composer 16 536-537

ZWINGLI, HULDREICH (1484-1531),
Swiss Protestant reformer 16 537-538

ZWORYKIN, VLADIMIR KOSMA (1889-1982), Russian-American physicist and radio engineer 16 539-540